

DRAGON MARTIAL EMPEROR

by Feng Yin Zi Chen

Dragon Martial Emperor

Author : Feng Yin Zi Chen

Genres : Reincarnation, Weak to Strong; strong, smart and cool MC.

Synopsis:

In the foreign world, the martial artists dominate the world and the sword of the emperor controls the fate of hundreds of millions of lives! Long Yu, the number one killer on Earth, after dying, takes rebirth in this new world in an aristocratic family of martial artists but faces rejection because he is unable to practice martial arts.

Note:

Dragon Martial Emperor is an ongoing Xianxia with over 700 chapters.

It's about the rebirth of the strongest Hitman from Earth in a world of 'martial arts'.

Info :

<http://www.novelupdates.com/series/dragon-martial-emperor/>

Raws:

<http://www.17k.com/book/1049455.html>

Translator:

Translator: Mystique

Editor: NoviceTranslator

<https://mystiquetranslations.wordpress.com/dragon-martial-emperor/>

Changed to

<http://novelsnao.com/category/dme/>

Changed to

<http://www.novelsaga.com/category/dme/>



DME-Toc

[Dragon Martial Emperor](#)

[DME-C01](#)

[DME-C02](#)

[DME-C03](#)

[DME-C04](#)

[DME-C05](#)

[DME-C06](#)

[DME-C07](#)

[DME-C08](#)

[DME-C09](#)

[DME-C010](#)

[DME-C011](#)

[DME-C012](#)

[DME-C013](#)

[DME-C014](#)

[DME-C015](#)

[DME-C016](#)

[DME-C017](#)

[DME-C018](#)

[DME-C019](#)

[DME-C020](#)

[DME-C021](#)

[DME-C022](#)

[DME-C023](#)

[DME-C024](#)

[DME-C025](#)

[DME-C026](#)

[DME-C027](#)

[DME-C028](#)

[DME-C029](#)

[DME-C030](#)

[Message](#)

[DME-C031](#)

[DME-C032](#)

[DME-C033](#)

[DME-C034](#)

[DME-C035](#)

[DME-C036](#)

[DME-C037](#)

[DME-C038](#)

[DME-C039](#)

[DME-C040](#)

[DME-C041](#)

[DME-C042](#)

[DME-C043](#)

[DME-C044](#)

[DME-C045](#)

[DME-C046](#)

[DME-C047](#)

[DME-C048](#)

[DME-C049](#)

[DME-C050](#)

[DME-C051](#)

[DME-C052](#)

[DME-C053](#)

[DME-C054](#)

[DME-C055](#)

[DME-C056](#)

[DME-C057](#)

[DME-C058](#)

[DME-C059](#)

[DME-C060](#)

[DME-C061](#)

[DME-C062](#)

[DME-C063](#)

[DME-C064](#)

[DME-C065](#)

[DME-C066](#)

[DME-C067](#)

[DME-C068](#)

[DME-C069](#)

[DME-C070](#)

[DME-C071](#)

[DME-C072](#)

[DME-C073](#)

[DME-C074](#)

[DME-C075](#)

[DME-C076](#)

[DME-C077](#)

[DME-C078](#)

[DME-C079](#)

[DME-C080](#)

[DME-C081](#)

[DME-C082](#)

[DME-C083](#)

[DME-C084](#)

[DME-C085](#)

[DME-C086](#)

[DME-C087](#)

[DME-C088](#)

[DME-C089](#)

[DME-C090](#)

[DME-C091](#)

[DME-C092](#)

[DME-C093](#)

[DME-C094](#)

[DME-C095](#)

[DME-C096](#)

[DME-C097](#)

[DME-C098](#)

[DME-C099](#)

[DME-C0100](#)

[DME-C0101](#)

[DME-C0102](#)

[DME-C0103](#)

[DME-C0104](#)

[DME-C0105](#)

[DME-C0106](#)

[DME-C0107](#)

[DME-C0108](#)

[DME-C0109](#)

[DME-C0110](#)

[DME-C0111](#)

[DME-C0112](#)

[DME-C0113](#)

[DME-C0114](#)

[DME-C0115](#)

[DME-C0116](#)

[DME-C0117](#)

[DME-C0118](#)

[DME-C0119](#)

[DME-C0120](#)

[DME-C0121](#)

[DME-C0122](#)

[DME-C0123](#)

[DME-C0124](#)

[DME-C0125](#)

[DME-C0126](#)

[DME-C0127](#)

[DME-C0128](#)

[DME-C0129](#)

[DME-C0130](#)

[DME-C0131](#)

[DME-C0132](#)

[DME-C0133](#)

[DME-C0134](#)

[DME-C0135](#)

[DME-C0136](#)

[DME-C0137](#)

[DME-C0138](#)

[DME-C0139](#)

[DME-C0140](#)

[DME-C0141](#)

[DME-C0142](#)

[DME-C0143](#)

[DME-C0144](#)

[DME-C0145](#)

[DME-C0146](#)

[DME-C0147](#)

[DME-C0148](#)

[DME-C0149](#)

[DME-C0150](#)

[DME-C0151](#)

[DME-C0152](#)

[DME-C0153](#)

[DME-C0154](#)

[DME-C0155](#)

[DME-C0156](#)

[DME-C0157](#)

[DME-C0158](#)

[DME-C0159](#)

[DME-C0160](#)

[DME-C0161](#)

[DME-C0162](#)

[DME-C0163](#)

[DME-C0164](#)

[DME-C0165](#)

[DME-C0166](#)

[DME-C0167](#)

[DME-C0168](#)

[DME-C0169](#)

[DME-C0170](#)

[DME-C0171](#)

[DME-C0172](#)

[DME-C0173](#)

[DME-C0174](#)

[DME-C0175](#)

[DME-C0176](#)

[DME-C0177](#)

[DME-C0178](#)

[DME-C0179](#)

[DME-C0180](#)

[DME-C0181](#)

[DME-C0182](#)

[DME-C0183](#)

[DME-C0184](#)

[DME-C0185](#)

[DME-C0186](#)

[DME-C0187](#)

[wink](#)

Chapter 1 – Azure Dragon Mark

Outside the Yu Guan city, the morning sun was rising.

A handsome juvenile youth with delicate features, clad in black clothes, was treading fast and arrived at the river bank of a fast-flowing river then turned back and said: “You can say it now, what do you want to ask me about?”

Behind him, two men in gray clothes had followed behind him all the way to the river bank.

These two were the fat and thin servants, who were running with ease without losing their breaths, and apparently had some martial cultivation. They came rushing over to the riverside which was surrounded by desolate and uninhabited areas and suddenly a vicious and ruthless look emerged in their eyes.

“A waste like you should just go and repent in hell! You are just a handicapped kid but you still dare to drool over our young Miss Feng Yao, die!”

The fat man cursed and surrounded the black-clothed youngster together with the thin man.

Black-clothed youth’s complexion changed.

They had been sent to take his life?

The youth was named Long Yu and since his childhood, he had lived in the city with the ‘Feng clan’ as the adopted son of Feng clan’s head, Feng Longsong.

However, in this world of martial arts, from an early age, he grew up with blocked meridians and because of that, he was incapable of practicing and even if he was the adopted son of head of the clan, he could never earn anyone's respect.

(Note: Long Yu = Royal Dragon)

But, Feng Yao was the biological daughter of Feng Longsong and had turned sixteen years old this year. She not only was born with an unparalleled beauty and a delicate seductive physique, but she had also entered the Wudao seventh layer and was also the genius disciple of the 'Hanbing' sect.

(Note: Hanbing sect can also be called as "trembling ice" sect; "Wudao" can be called Martial Way)

"Who ordered you to kill me?"

Long Yu calmly asked, in fact, the truth was that he didn't have the slightest interest in the so-called beauty of the Feng clan.

"Since you asked, I will be merciful to tell you. Young Miss personally wants you dead and you have nowhere to escape, so die!"

The fat man shouted loudly then suddenly rushed forward and threw a heavy punch towards Long Yu.

Long Yu was unable to practice and because of that, he couldn't even see when the fat man's punch had already reached him. He received a heavy punch on the shoulder with a great strength of 1000 Jin which directly shattered his

bones into fragments and instantly destroyed his whole hand and he fell down on the riverside.

(Note: 1 Jin= 0.5 Kg)

“Cough!”

Long Yu coughed out a mouthful of blood and tightly clenched his teeth but didn't utter a single groan.

He was tenacious and was not willing to resign so easily!

In this world, strength represented everything and that fat servant was just the weakest and only at the Wudao first layer, however his single punch contained strength of 1000 Jin and with a single punch, he had seriously injured Long Yu to the point of approaching death.

“I cannot die.”

Long Yu revealed his bloodshot eyes, looking at the fat and the thin servants walking towards him. He exhausted all his body strength and quickly rolled towards the fast-flowing river.

With a “Plop” sound, he fell into the river!

The river flow was too fast and he had fallen into the river with a severely injured body, but whatever may be the outcome, there was still a chance of survival.

On the shore, the two servants gawked at this scene.

“Should we jump into the river and follow him?”

The fat man somewhat hesitated.

Although both were servants, but the thin man was at the second layer of Wudao and held higher status than the fat man in Feng clan.

The thin servant’s eyes flashed: “No need, the river flow is too fast, if we go into the river then we won’t be able to find him so it’s better to go all the way downstream. Your punch must have seriously injured him and would even have broken his meridians. He rolled into the river in order to have a narrow escape so we should go downstream and I am sure, we will be able to intercept him and kill him if he is still alive! “

“Good.”

The fat man nodded then immediately, both of them quickly walked along the river downstream.

.....

In the rapid flow of river, Long Yu’s whole body was exhausted and being washed down the downstream with multiple broken bones, ruptured internal organs and his whole body was covered in severe pain.

Death was slowly approaching him.

“How can I die like this.....”

Long Yu clenched his teeth but the severe pain had made both his mind and body go numb. While his body was being washed down the river, it severely rammed into a giant rock and his blood sprayed out and stained the rock.

In a while, his consciousness had slowly started to get fuzzy.

Just then, a loud and vigorous roar suddenly resounded in his mind and awakened his consciousness!

Long Yu suddenly sobered up and was totally bewildered to see a burst of mysterious bluish green light emitting out from his chest and actually congealed into ghostly shadow of a long Azure Dragon, and it separated the mighty current of the river away from his body and covered his whole body while protecting him at the center.

“This is

Long Yu glanced around and actually saw a ghostly figure of an Azure Dragon carrying his body forward at a very high speed through the wind and waves.

This Azure Dragon’s divine power seemed vast and immeasurable!

Immediately, a mysterious power rushed inside his body and his serious injuries gradually healed, and all of a sudden, it also broke through the passages

of his blocked meridians.

And with this, he actually stepped into the world of Wudao!

“This is Azure Dragon mark!”

Long Yu couldn't understand what just happened?

Ten years ago, he was still on the Earth and was considered the King of Killers, but after an accidental death, he crossed through to this different world and took rebirth in the juvenile Long Yu's body.

After that, a mysterious Azure Dragon mark had appeared on his chest and he did not know what its effects were until now.

At that time, when he had received a severe punch from that fat servant, it certainly would have jolted and snapped his meridians and that must have induced a reaction from the Azure Dragon mark in his Dantian.

In this way, this proved to be a blessing in disguise for Long Yu because when the Azure Dragon mark changed into a phantom Azure Dragon, it not only healed his injuries but it also had made it possible for him to step into the world of Wudao.

In the Wudao first layer, the body could connect with the 'world divine Lingqi' to temper and refine the body and the meridians would produce traces of mysterious qi which would also increase the strength to reach 1000 Jin!

A sharp piercing look flashed in Long Yu's eyes.

For a long time, he had been trying a variety of methods, hoping to step into the world of Wudao, but they all had failed him, but now, it was actually a punch from that fat man, which shook and severed some of his meridians, thereby activating the Azure Dragon mark.

“Although I do not know what this Azure Dragon mark is, but now that I have stepped into the world of Wudao, they can only dream about killing me.”

Long Yu had finally gained his previous life's mighty self-confidence.

In the past life, he had become the King of Killers and had attained the title of the strongest Hitman, only by relying on his malicious nature and vigorous strength, put together with his extremely strong and matchless willpower.

And if anyone wanted to be successful in the way of martial arts, strong willpower was similarly very essential.

The Azure Dragon's phantom gradually dissipated.

And now that Long Yu had finally stepped into the world of martial arts, he had reached the first later of Wudao with his strength reaching 1000 Jin, and not only that, his perception and reaction abilities had also greatly enhanced.

In this turbulent water, he could distinctly hear the sound of bugs on the riverside. He could even clearly see the plants at the bottom of the river, gently rippling along the direction of river flow.

This was because now he had entered into the world of martial arts.

Wudao was divided into nine layers, and with each promotion in layer, the cultivation would also increase while increasing the strength significantly. If the cultivation reached the ninth layer of Wudao, one punch would be enough to collapse the mountains, one stomp would crack open the earth and the strength would reach a tyrannical level.

“What?”

Long Yu noticed that after the Azure Dragon phantom disappeared, it returned to his chest and turned back into the Azure Dragon mark.

But, his consciousness could actually communicate with this Azure Dragon mark.

“Activate!”

Long Yu said aloud his intention in his mind and felt that the Azure Dragon mark had begun to heat up, and the strength instantly spread to all of his limbs and bones, making him exclaim in surprise.

“Strength of 2000 Jin!”

At the moment, if Long Yu threw his punch, then it would wield a terrifying strength of 2000 Jin which was equivalent to the strength possessed by martial artists of Wudao second layer.

Once activated, Azure Dragon mark could actually enhance his strength by 1000 Jin, making his total might very terrifying for someone at the first layer of Wudao.

But soon, he felt a trace of fatigue and it seemed that he would be unable to sustain the heat released by the Azure Dragon mark. Certainly he was already very satisfied with this much because being a former Hitman, he could use this as a sure-kill hidden shot in the future.

“The ‘previous me’ can be considered as a Descendant of the Dragons, maybe this Azure Dragon mark has something to do with that anyways first I need to reach the river shore.”

(Note: MC is referring to this world’s Long Yu as ‘previous me’)

Long Yu was familiar with his own strength and felt that the water current had begun to slow down and he should have arrived at the downstream.

Crash!

His whole body jumped up and landed on the shore. He didn’t stop but started trotting on the grass with a sense of power surging throughout his body.

Near the shore, both fat and thin servants were stunned when they saw him.

This kid did not die?

They had waited for an hour and were expecting to see Long Yu's body flowing downstream, but they never thought that the boy would still be alive and kicking.

“This waste was actually able to jump out of the river?”

The fat man couldn't believe his eyes because he had clearly used his full strength of 1000 Jin while punching Long Yu then how could he possibly withstand it?

“Fatty, it seems that your punch is so useless that it couldn't even finish one kid?”

The thin man stared at the drenched figure of Long Yu and motioned with his eyes to the fat man to attack.

“Well, it seems that I was careless, but this time, I will definitely finish him in one shot.”

The fat man rushed towards Long Yu with a killing intent in his eyes.

But what the fat man did not know that at present, Long Yu had already entered the world of Wudao and possessed the strength of 2000 Jin, which was two times his own strength!

Chapter 2 – Strong anti-kill

Long Yu stood up and glanced at the fat servant.

He did not expect the fat and thin servants waiting for him on the river bank, but this time he was not afraid of them as he had entered into the world of Wudao and could display double the strength of the Wudao first layer if needed.

“This time, I will return the favor for that punch.”

Long Yu looked at the pacing fat man coming towards him but this time, his mind was tranquil and undisturbed.

Although in this world, he had no fighting experience, but as the King of Killers from the previous world, he had perfected the killing techniques to a high degree of proficiency, so undoubtedly, he wouldn't have any problem in dealing with the martial arts of the fat servant.

“Brat, last time you were lucky, but now, you won't be able to escape this time.”

When the fat man arrived near Long Yu, he laughed loudly and ridiculed him and said: “But, if you are willing to call me grandpa, I may give you an easy death.”

He also thought that he might as well just humiliate Long Yu before killing him, but unfortunately, Long Yu did not listen to his long-winded bullshit.

While the fat man was busy in ridiculing him, Long Yu took advantage of this and suddenly darted forward and swept his leg on the ankle of the fat man. The fat man lost his balance and staggered backwards.

Before the fat man could react, Long Yu used his right fist with a condensed strength of 1000 Jin and heavily hit on the side of the fat man's brain!

With a bang, fat man's heavy body fell on the ground and there was an incredible look in his eyes.

Until he died, he could not even scream out. He did not think that he would actually die here and that too at the hands of a waste who couldn't practice.

One shot kill!

"What?"

Thin servant frowned at the dead fat man. How could he die at the hands of a waste?

Long Yu was standing firmly and looked up at the thin servant.

Since the other party wanted to kill him, so he would naturally not be lenient.

"Ha ha."

At this time, the thin servant chuckled loudly and said: “Who would have imagined that one day, a waste like you will enter into the world of Wudao. It’s really rare, but if you think that you can deal with that dead fatty then you can also escape from my hands, then you are too naive.”

“Escape?”

Long Yu’s slightly tilted the corner of his mouth and said: “Why should I run away?”

“What?”

Thin servant couldn’t believe what he just heard and immediately responded with a laugh: “Anyway, you cannot escape from me even if you want to, so it’s better to die an easy death with less pain!”

The thin servant had not thought of other possibilities because his own cultivation was at the Wudao second layer and could display twice the power of a Wudao first layer martial artist with the strength of 2000 Jin. Long Yu, earlier a waste, had just now just entered the world of Wudao so his strength could never be comparable to his own strength.

Thin servant dashed forward with a fierce look on his face: “Well, I neglected before and fatty lost his life in vain, but now you do not have any chance, so die!”

As his voice fell, the thin man’s figure quickly rushed towards Long Yu producing a gust of wind.

Facing the thin man, Long Yu had a slightly dignified look on his face.

“Azure Dragon mark, activate!”

He used his thoughts to communicate with the Azure Dragon mark on his chest which began to secretly heat up and right then, a surge of tyrannical strength flooded into his body and bones and he temporarily gained the strength of Wudao second layer.

In his previous life, he was an expert at killing people.

And even now, this fact had remained the same.

Thin servant arrived in front of Long Yu and smashed his fist.

Long Yu’s figure flashed and instantly ducked to dodge the fist.

After entering the Wudao, his speed had become a lot faster however the fist still grazed his cheek and it could have almost cracked his head.

The strength granted by the Wudao second layer was too strong and he didn’t dare to take it head-on.

The next moment, he suddenly shot his hand and grasped the wrist of the thin servant.

“What?”

Thin servant scowled and immediately screamed: “Ah -“

His wrist had been broken.

“You, you, you – Wudao second layer?”

Thin servant was alarmed because he never imagined that this waste had not only entered the Wudao, but had also reached the Wudao second layer in one swoop. How was this possible?

However, Long Yu had twisted his wrist and it was clear that his strength had absolutely reached 2000 Jin!

Long Yu snorted and without wasting time on bullshitting with the thin man, he raised his foot and heavily kicked at a place three inches under his navel.

This place was the most fundamental part of a martial artist’s cultivation, called Dantian.

The kick was so fierce that it left him tragically screaming. It was over for him as his cultivation had been destroyed, and in an instant, he had become a waste!

Both of them were at the Wudao second layer and possessed the strength of 2000 Jin, but when it came to the utilization of this strength, Long Yu was clearly more skilled than the thin servant.

Kacha.

Like a professional killer, Long Yu twisted the neck of that thin man. He was still new in the world of martial arts but he had already killed two servants and one of them was at the Wudao second stage. If others heard about this, they probably wouldn't believe it.

The thin servant's lifeless body fell to the ground but Long Yu's heart was totally calm.

Since the other party wanted to kill him, he must do a good job of preparing a perfect kill for them, as he was definitely not a good or merciful person.

"After coming to this world, I have been careful and have tried my best to not offend anyone. But now, someone actually wants to kill me."

Long Yu closed his eyes and rested for a moment then opened his eyes and stood up.

After giving it a thought, he concluded that in this world of martial arts, it was absolutely impossible to not provoke anyone and the only way to deal with this was to become stronger.

"In this world of Wudao, martial artists practice various powerful martial arts, but fortunately they do not understand the right way of using these martial arts for killing, like that thin servant, otherwise it wouldn't be that easy to kill him."

He arbitrarily threw the corpses of the two servants into the river and then walked in the direction of Yu Guan City.

He would like to confirm whether Feng Yao had really sent the servants to kill him!

.....

Yu Guan City, at noon!

Long Yu returned alone to the city and walked towards the Feng clan's mansion.

As a large city of Tang State, Yu Guan city was bustling with numerous martial artists. Especially in a major city like this, there were many respected clans that would continue to supply fresh martial artists to the various large Sects, located throughout the Tang state.

This was a bustling city with a population of millions of people. Feng clan was one of the four large clans in the city and none of the other three was weaker than the Feng clan.

Long Yu walked towards the western parts of city and arrived at the entrance of the Feng clan's mansion and after seeing him, suddenly, the servants rushed out to welcome him.

"Young master Long, you have finally come back. Clan Lord is looking for you, so please quickly go to the palace hall!"

Inside the mansion, Long Yu saw that many servants were searching around, looking for something, and it seemed that they were looking for him.

When servants saw that he had come back, they were all very relieved.

“They certainly do not think that I was out killing the witnesses, right? But it’s a pity that I have turned misfortune into blessing and in just one swoop, I entered into the world of Wudao and also came back alive!”

Long Yu sneered and walked towards the palace hall.

Dragon Martial Emperor Chapter 3 - Dept of gratitude coupled with duty to avenge

Three members of the Feng clan were sitting in the Palace Hall and one of them was the clan head, Feng Longsong.

Feng Longsong was a former great battlefield soldier. He was tall, strong, brave, incredibly bold, very experienced and took every move with calm and chill mood, but at this moment, there was a look of anxiety and concern on his face.

His adopted son Long Yu was actually missing since early in the morning!

Long Yu was son of Feng Longsong's old friend. Feng Longsong loved him very much and he always treated him better in comparison to his daughter. But Long Yu was now missing, so he would naturally be upset!

In addition to Feng Longsong, in the Palace Hall, a beautiful girl clad in light green dress was also sitting. It was Feng Yao, the biological daughter of Feng Longsong and was considered as a genius martial artist.

Long ago, she had joined the Hanbing sect of Tang State and was considered an outstanding disciple there. This time when she returned back from the Hanbing Sect, everyone was surprised to find out that she had actually entered into the seventh layer of Wudao.

At the moment, there was no expression on the face of this beautiful young girl, just an indifferent look in her eyes.

Regarding Long Yu's disappearance, she seemed indifferent.

In addition to Feng Longsong and Feng Yao, inside the hall, there was also sitting a middle-aged lady dressed in luxurious clothes. She was Feng Yao's mother and Feng Longsong's wife, named Liu Yu.

"Feng Longsong, why have you called us here?"

Li Yu, with an indifferent look on her face, said to Feng Longsong: "Feng Yao must hurry back to resume her martial arts practice, she has no time to waste here accompanying you."

Although, one could easily see that Li Yu and Feng Longsong were wife and husband, but their relationship was not very good.

When Feng Longsong heard her words, he suddenly stared at her and angrily said: "Do you even dare to say that? Last night, I proposed the marriage of Feng Yao with Long Yu, and this morning, he goes missing, how will you explain that?"

Li Yu looked at him with disdain and said: "What is there to explain? How can we allow a waste to join our family? Long Yu is not worthy of our family or Feng Yao, he is just a waste child, and being so weak and insignificant, even if he gets killed by someone, then he really deserves it!"

Feng Longsong suddenly became angry and thundered: "Will you just shut up!"

After his voice thundered, for a moment, a silence spread in the hall, but the anger in the heart was quickly replaced by anxious concerns.

As Li Yu just said, Long Yu could not practice and he was missing since early morning, so he could easily fall prey to any mishap.

After a while, the indifferent looking Feng Yao suddenly stood up, turned around and started walking towards the door, while her crisp voice resounded in the hall: "I have something to do at the Sect so I will go first."

Feng Longsong scowled and looked at his daughter and while restraining his temper, he asked: "You came back two days ago and you are already in a hurry to go back?"

Feng Yao didn't turn back to face her father and lightly said: "I came back just to pick some good war soldiers, but now that I have your saber, I don't need to stay here any longer, I will go back to the Sect and start practicing as soon as possible."

Then she walked with light footsteps towards the entrance of the Palace hall.

At that moment, she looked up and saw a boy clad in black clothes pacing towards the hall entrance with a smile on his face. It was Long Yu who had returned!

Feng Yao could not help but wrinkled her delicate eyebrows a bit.

"Little Yao, why are you going back so soon?"

Long Yu said while the corners of the mouth slightly curled upwards.

Feng Yao was his younger stepsister.

When the three members of the Feng family were talking to each other within the hall, Long Yu had heard a little of their conversations, that his foster father, Feng Longsong, wanted to betrothed Feng Yao to him. He could not help but secretly shook his head.

Long Yu's foster father had always been good to him, but this time, he was being far too good to be actually thinking of marrying his daughter to Long Yu!

From the inside of the hall, when Feng Longsong saw Long Yu, he suddenly stood up, his face lighted up, and was relieved to see that he was okay!

However, Li Yu looked unhappy from the return of Long Yu.

"Ah."

Feng Yao knitted her eyebrows and nodded her head.

She seemed to be very much puzzled to see Long Yu here.

But then she started to walk in a relaxed manner, her slender and beautiful figure was slowly approaching the hall entrance and while she was passing Long Yu, she did not even look at him.

Long Yu did not say anything as well, and walked inside the hall, but while she was passing him, he suddenly said a few words.

And hearing these words, Feng Yao suddenly stopped.

“Foster father, early in the morning, two servants took me to the river outside the city and they wanted to kill me, but at the key moment, suddenly an unexpected person appeared from nowhere and rescued me.....”

Long Yu deliberately said this sentence to Feng Longsong so that Feng Yao could listen to it. He actually wanted to see her reaction.

Wanted to kill!

Feng Longsong was in a good mood after the safe return of Long Yu but when he heard these words, his good mood suddenly vanished, and all of a sudden, his face turned gloomy. The servants of the Feng clan actually planned to go out with Long Yu, to kill him? How audacious!

In the Palace Hall, there was a shocked expression on Li Yu’s face.

Feng Yao, who had abruptly stopped after hearing his words, subconsciously asked: “Who was the person that saved you?”

Although she had asked in a flat tone, but Long Yu was an experienced man from different world and in his previous life, he had dealt with many life and death situations. With his vast experience dealing with people, he had mastered the skill of reading the reactions of people long ago. From that deep dull tone, with a trace of trembling, it was clear that at this time, she wasn’t really calm!

No doubt about it, she was the one....

Now, Long Yu was sure that Feng Yao was the one who had instructed the fat and thin servants to kill him!

“Little Yao, aren’t you hurrying back to Hanbing Sect? You should ignore such irrelevant things.”

Long Yu chuckled then walked into the hall!

Although he wanted to take revenge, but at present, his strength was far less than Feng Yao, and most importantly, Feng Yao was his foster father’s biological daughter!

“Hmm.”

Feng Yao also realized that her reaction was a bit too excessive, and with a light humph, she turned back and walked away without looking back.

Of course, Feng Longsong had also seen her reaction and frowned. Could it be that Feng Yao was the one who instructed the two servants to kill Long Yu?

From Feng Longsong’s understanding of his daughter, it was possible for her to do such a thing!

Since her childhood Feng Yao did not like ordinary persons who were inferior to her in strength. To her, strength was everything and she would not hesitate to eradicate any obstruction which could be a hindrance in the promotion of her

strength.

Feng Longsong suddenly realized that just because he wanted to marry Feng Yao with Long Yu, it had put him in danger. Feng Yao was a genius at Wudao and Long Yu was a waste. If Feng Yao did not care about Long Yu, then this marriage would never bring good results for both of them.

“Hmm.”

Li Yu groaned loudly.

She didn't like Long Yu and as she was about to say something to him, Feng Longsong scolded her: “Li Yu, you go out.”

Li Yu looked straight at Feng Longsong. She knew that her husband was really angry.

“I tell you Long Yu, you are a lucky kid. You ran into such a dangerous situation and unexpectedly someone saved you. You better listen to me, you are just a waste, don't dream of eating swan meat from head to toe all day long. You are not fit to join our Feng clan and you will never be.”

Li Yu said with a look of disdain in her eyes then she turned around and left the hall.

All day thinking of eating swan meat?

Long Yu was stunned, she was such a bitch!

Of course, whether Li Yu was right or wrong, she was still the wife of the clan head and so Long Yu did not bother to say anything to her.

Now only two persons were left inside the hall.

Feng Longsong sat down first and called Long Yu: "Little Yu, don't worry, come and sit down and tell me about the incident in detail."

"Yes foster father."

Long Yu came over and sat next to him. A little bit of discretion was present in his heart but he quickly decided how to explain things to his foster father.

Feng Longsong was a good friend of his father and he had brought him up since his childhood and he had always been very generous to him. If Feng Longsong had not been there for him, then it would have been difficult for a waste like Long Yu to live peacefully.

But now, it was clear that the biological daughter of Feng Longsong had instructed the servants to kill him and he believed in the theory of return hatred for hatred and consistently adhered to this faith!

However Feng Yao was biological daughter of Feng Longsong and Long Yu had an intense feeling of debt of gratitude towards him, at the same time he had waves of hatred in his heart for Feng Yao. He found himself in a precarious situation. Overwhelmed with mixed emotions he was really confused and did not know how to do deal with it.

“Gratitude comes first, hatred should be the second and revenge comes in the end.”

Long Yu quickly made his final decision. There was a clear hatred in his heart, but he set his mind to throw this hatred out because this time, the debt of gratitude was greater than the duty to revenge.

If Long Yu really wanted to take revenge, he would have to kill Feng Yao and it would definitely hurt Feng Longsong, and it would make Long Yu to suffer from guilt feeling. Now he had entered into the world of Wudao and didn't want to harbor feelings of guilt or hatred in his heart which could prove to be a hindrance in practicing martial arts.

Of course, to have both gratitude and revenge, he must have a robust cultivation, otherwise both would prove to be nothing more than just empty talks.

Long Yu thought it clearly and began to explain: “This morning, two servants came to me, saying that clan head wants to buy some debris .I was actually in doubt, but they followed me to the outside of the town and when we reached on the bank of the river they suddenly tried to kill me.....as I said that at that critical juncture an unexpected person suddenly appeared from nowhere, and saved me, in reality, the person was simply nonexistent .I was able to come back alive because this incident was actually a blessing in disguise for me, as in the nick of time, I finally entered into the world of Wudao!”

He entered into the world of Wudao!

These words came to Feng Longsong like the sound of thunder from the top of the sky and an excited look immediately emerged on his face.

“Little Yu, now you can practice?”

Feng Longsong was extremely excited and stood up!

Dragon Martial Emperor Chapter 4 - Feng clan's young master

Long Yu could practice? It was definitely big and good news for Feng Longsong.

It had become a heart-knot for Feng Longsong when Long Yu was unable to practice. In this world filled with martial artists, one who couldn't practice was actually considered a waste!

“Now, I can practice, and I have also entered the first layer of Wudao.”

Long Yu laughed and nodded.

“Yes, yes! It really is a blessing in disguise. You are really lucky!”

There was a joyful color on the firm and resolute face of Feng Longsong. He put out his hand and grabbed Long Yu's wrist to check whether the Xuan qi was circulating in his meridians and he found out that it was actually circulating in his previously blocked meridians. He found out that the blockage in his meridians was gone and he had really entered the first layer of Wudao.

Feng Longsong was very glad in his heart that nothing happened to Long Yu otherwise he would regret this for a lifetime.

“Foster father, I had to kill those two servants to protect my life.....”

Long Yu was a little embarrassed, because the two servants belonged to Feng Longsong and Feng clan.

“No harm, they wanted to kill you, so they were courting death.”

Feng Longsong smiled and waved his hand: “You just entered into the world of Wudao and defeated two servants. It’s apparent that your fighting talent is very good. Later, you must practice diligently and work hard, and then only you can grasp the future in your own hands!”

Grasp the future in one’s own hands!

Long Yu nodded seriously because he certainly understood that it was the truth.

In the world of martial arts, even if one had high potential and latent talent, but it might not come out in the end. This road was extremely hard, and one needed to have a stubborn nature, firm and resolute character, and absolute determination to rise through the challenges to arrive at the pinnacle.

“Well, don’t think about it too much.”

Feng Longsong saw Long Yu’s dignified look, and with a gentle smile on his face, he patted his shoulder and said: “I had prepared a Ling Xuan Pellet for Feng Yao, but she went back in a hurry and I couldn’t get a chance to give it to her. Since, now that you have stepped into the world of Wudao, I will give this to you.”

Then he pulled out a fine small porcelain bottle from his clothes and gave it to Long Yu.

“Ling Xuan Pellet!”

Long Yu was surprised as it was actually a medicinal pill!

Medicinal pills helped significantly in the growth of a martial artist. In some large clans, since childhood, they would consume various medicinal pills and that would help in their cultivation growing faster and greater than an average warrior.

“Ling Xuan Pellet is a low grade medicinal pill, and although it is the lowest ranked medicine, but, it would be very useful for you.”

Feng Longsong said with a smile: “Go and absorb it right now and start practicing, don’t dawdle.”

“Yes!”

Long Yu did not shirk, after all, he was really in the need of a medicinal pill.

As Feng Longsong said earlier, although this Ling Xuan Pellet was a low ranked medicinal pill, but even for Feng Longsong, getting this pill wouldn’t have been so easy.

The inherent value of Ling Xuan Pellet was so much that it could meet the cost of living of an ordinary family of three for at least ten years

He took the small porcelain bottle containing the Ling Xuan Pellet then left for the small courtyard where he lived.

Feng Longsong stood at the hall entrance looking at the gradually disappearing back profile of Long Yu and nodded with a quite pleased look in his eyes.

“General, now your son has finally stepped into the world of Wudao. Even I never thought that there would come such a day.....”

A trace of tears flashed in the eyes of Fen Longsong!

In the past, the General had galloped great distances to rush into the area of enemies to kill them, but he never returned. Now, if Long Yu could have high achievements in the field of martial arts then Feng Longsong would be satisfied for his whole life.

.....

Long Yu was pacing towards his small courtyard. When he had reached halfway, he sensed that a person had suddenly emerged from the side

“Waste boy, do you remember what day is it today?”

An arrogant youth, clad in brocade dress, suddenly came in front of Long Yu and blocked his way. He was also accompanied by the two Feng clan servants and not just that haughty boy, even the two Feng servants were giving contempt looks to Long Yu.

Feng Luo!

Long Yu lightly smiled: “So it is the young master Feng Luo, how can I possibly forget about what day it is today?”

Formerly when Long Yu couldn't practice, young master Feng Luo relied on his young master's status to always beat him up and grab his monthly expenses given by the Palace hall.

“Oh, don't try to feign ignorance.”

Feng Luo looked disdainfully and groaned: “Little guy, hand over the monthly expenses, anyway you cannot practice because you are a waste. What will you do with so much money, it will all go to waste, so you might as well just give it to me so I can raise my strength!”

In front of Long Yu, a waste, the arrogance of this young master had fully boosted up, after all, he was at the third layer of Wudao.

Although the Wudao third layer was nothing for others, but for a waste like Long Yu, it was extremely powerful!

“The money I take from you, you definitely don't use it for practicing right? I bet you will use it for seeking pleasure!”

Long Yu contemptuously smiled: “Really? But I think that giving my monthly expenses to you would actually be a waste of resources.”

“Waste, are you really in a mood of getting beaten?”

Feng Luo never thought that today's Long Yu would not be docile like always.

He certainly did not know that now Long Yu had stepped into the world of Wudao and there was not much gap left between their strengths. Since Long Yu had been humiliated by him many times so now that he had gained strength, he would naturally not suffer in silence!

“Do you think you can fight me, a master of Wudao third stage.....”

Long Yu thought, although his strength was lower than that of Feng Luo, but he had a vast experience in killing from his past life, and by activating the Azure Dragon mark and gaining Wudao second layer's strength of 1000 Jin, he might be able to utilize his killing skills properly and wouldn't necessarily lose to Feng Luo.

However, at that moment, a loud shout arrived from far away.

“Stop! Feng Luo, what are you doing?”

Feng Longsong's figure appeared in the distance!

“Feng Longsong?”

The complexion on Feng Longsong's face suddenly changed and he clenched his teeth then said: “We leave, as for you waste boy, you are in luck today.”

Then, with the two servants, he walked away.

I was in luck?

Long Yu watched the leaving figure of Feng Luo, and with a faint smile, he thought to himself, as who exactly was in luck today!

Feng Longsong saw the retreating figure of Feng Luo, but he didn't come, he just smiled towards Long Yu and then turned around and went back.

Long Yu gave a side glance at the leaving figure of Feng Longsong, then turned around and left.

“Feng Luo has a big brother named Feng Yun, and long ago, he joined one of the seven large Sects of Tang State, the famous Zhentian Sect, and now, he is already a core disciple.....”

In his own small courtyard, Long Yu thought to himself: “As he has been able to become a core disciple then his cultivation would have already surpassed that of the foster father, but the most important thing is that he is still young, and in the future, I am afraid, he might replace foster father and become the head of the clan.”

Feng Luo was so arrogant and would blatantly challenge and abuse Long Yu, but even after knowing all that, Feng Longsong never interfered because of his strong big brother, Feng Yun.

Every year at the annual competition of the Feng clan, Feng Yao would always lose to Feng Yun, which clearly showed how strong he really was.

“If I can quickly raise my cultivation then I may be able to help foster father.”

Long Yu had firmly determined in his heart to return the favor for the mountain of favors he had received from Feng Longsong. How could Long Yu not do anything to help his foster father when the position of the head of the clan would be snatched by someone else?

Tightly holding the small porcelain bottle in his hand, he continued to walk, but this time, his steps were more firm and resolute than before!

Dragon Martial Emperor Chapter 5 - Wudao second layer

Long Yu was sitting cross-legged inside the room. He had closed his eyes and was trying to control his breath.

He had just consumed the Ling Xuan Pellet and it was helping him in slowly absorbing the divine Lingqi. It melted down inside his body and started refining his body enhancing his cultivation.

This pellet was actually a kind of immortality pill and was refined from various medicinal ingredients which when consumed could refine the body of the practitioner and could also maximize the effects of medicinal herbs and other raw materials.

For example, although, Ling Xuan Pellet was a low-grade medicine, but once consumed and assimilated, it could provide results equivalent to the six months of rigorous cultivation for a warrior!

It was clear that if a warrior had enough money, then he could purchase a variety of immortality pills which could help his cultivation to grow quickly than others, but there was flaw in this. After a warrior had consumed an immortality pill, his body would produce antibodies for the same immortality pill, and if he would try to consume the same pill later then the effects would be greatly reduced.

“Cultivation talent and immortality pill absorption capacity differs from warrior to warrior. I do not know what my absorption capacity is.”

Long Yu was thinking while the Ling Xuan Pellet had started to circulate the

Xuan qi in his meridians.

An extremely rich Lingqi began to emanate from the Ling Xuan Pellet in his body and started getting absorbed by his meridians while the Xuan qi was also rapidly circulating in the meridians of his body. He could clearly feel that the Lingqi released from the immortality pills was being converted into his own Xuan qi.

He originally had a very less amount of Xuan qi in his body but it had started to expand gradually.

His strength of 1000 Jin had also started to increase gradually.

1100 Jin.....

1200 Jin.....

Soon, the Ling Xuan Pellet had completely melted in his body and had changed into divine Lingqi, however he had been unable to completely absorb the generated divine Lingqi.

“So, I can only absorb 30% Lingqi from the immortality pills.”

Long Yu was soon disappointed as 30% absorption capacity of immortality pills was at the same level as Feng Yao.

In fact, the absorption capacity of 30% of Lingqi generated from the immortality pills was considered very good for the warriors in the Tianyu

Continent, and with an absorption capacity of 30%, if one entered into the seven large Sects of the Tang State, he would be counted among the top disciples, because the average absorption capacity for the warriors was generally in the range of 10% to 20%.

However, in the previous life, Long Yu was the King of Killers, and had always been quite strict with himself. Since now he had entered into world of Wudao then he wouldn't stop until he would reach the pinnacle of the martial arts.

“A mere 30% absorption capacity of Lingqi from the immortality pills is not enough!”

Long Yu tightly clenched his fists, but suddenly, at this very moment, he felt that Azure Dragon Mark on his chest was heating up.

“What?”

Long Yu scowled and wrinkled his eyebrows. Could it be that this Azure Dragon mark had some other mysterious abilities as well?

While he was still thinking, a mysterious power emerged out of the mark and began to circulate in his meridians.

Long Yu made a shocking discovery that the Lingqi, generated from the Ling Xuan Pellet, which he couldn't absorb and should have been wasted, had actually been absorbed by his body under the effect of this mysterious power.

“This is so against the heaven's will!”

Long Yu's heart thumped heavily and he had an incredible feeling throughout his body.

With the help of the mysterious power generated by the Azure Dragon Mark, Long Yu's body had been able to fully absorb the Lingqi present in the Ling Xuan Pellet and his cultivation had also broken through to the Wudao second layer.

After reaching the second layer of Wudao, he had also gained the massive strength of 2000 Jin.

After breaking through to the Wudao second layer, the Lingqi generated from the Ling Xuan Pellet, which couldn't be consumed by the body of Long Yu, had actually been stored up in his Dantian.

Although Azure Dragon mark had made it possible for him to absorb 100% Lingqi from the Ling Xuan Pellet but he couldn't assimilate this surplus Lingqi as he had just experienced a breakthrough into the Wudao second layer, so his cultivate state had not yet consolidated, so it would be better to absorb the surplus Lingqi, currently stored in his Dantian, after fully consolidating his state in the Wudao second layer.

At the same time, he also found out that when he entered into the Wudao second layer, the Azure Dragon Mark on his chest had changed a bit and he didn't know what this change signified.

"Just what is this Azure Dragon Mark....."

With the help of the mysterious ability of Azure Dragon Mark, now, he could

fully absorb and assimilate the immortality pills which would greatly help him in increasing his power giving him an edge over his opponents.

In other words, under the same practice conditions and practice resources, his practice speed would be three times more than a genius like Feng Yao!

It seemed that relying on this Azure Dragon Mark, he would be able to quickly catch up with other peers reducing the gap between him and others, and soon, he might be able to surpass them.

Azure Dragon Mark had become his biggest secret, and he had not even told Feng Longsong about it, because the abilities of this mysterious mark were extremely shocking for anyone.

For the next few days, Long Yu concentrated on consolidating his cultivation in his room. Except Feng Longsong, nobody in the Feng clan knew that now he could practice.

On that day, Feng Longsong went to investigate the assassination attempt on his foster son. He wanted to know the identity of the two servants who had been assigned to assassinate Long Yu. After searching for a while, he found their dead bodies in the river and was greatly startled.

Out of the two dead servants, one was actually at the second layer of Wudao.

In other words, Long Yu had just entered into the world of Wudao, and he was able to kill a servant of Wudao second layer? This was truly incredible.

Feng Longsong would not disclose this matter to anyone because he knew that

there were many in the Feng clan who despised Long Yu and if they came to know that now he could practice then they would definitely try to eliminate him before he would grow stronger and might turn into a possible threat to them.

After three days.

Long Yu had fully consolidated his cultivation at the Wudao second layer and now he could display the strength of 2000 Jin. He was satisfied with his progress and left his small courtyard.

Next, he wanted to visit the Feng clan's Martial Court to pick twelve feats of martial arts practice.

Although, in the previous life, he was extremely skilled in assassinations and killing techniques which had also made him famous as the King of Killers, but in the Tianyu Continent, those techniques alone couldn't guarantee his safety. In this world, there were various types of martial arts techniques used by the martial artists, and what was most troublesome that they could use the incredible might of Xuan qi in those techniques, making them even harder to deal with. Long Yu still didn't know how to actually use the Xuan qi in martial arts and he needed to learn all these things.

Feng Clan, Martial Court....

When Long Yu arrived at the entrance of Martial Court, many juniors of the Feng Clan began to look at him with curious looks in their eyes.

Why would a waste like him who couldn't practice come to the Martial Court?

The Feng Clan was one of the four major clans in the Yu Guan city, so it was natural that it had hundreds of descendants, with many branch families. That's why there were a lot of people present there.

Feng Clan juniors would generally visit the Martial Court to choose martial art techniques for practicing.

When Long Yu was about to enter into the entrance of the Martial Court, suddenly a haughty voice came from the front: "Oh it's you, ha ha, everyone, look who has come, isn't it that waste boy who can't practice?"

When people heard these words, the surroundings immediately resounded with a loud chorus sound of laughter.

Long Yu raised his head to take a look and saw that it was Feng Luo, the young master of the Feng Clan, who had come to take his money three days ago, and there was a also condescending look in his eyes!

"Feng Luo, what do you want?"

Long Yu said lightly.

"Waste, you even dare to come to the Marital Court. Don't tell me you have come to choose a martial arts technique for practicing?"

Feng Luo tried to act high and mighty and looked at Long Yu with contempt: "Everyone knows that Xuan qi is necessary to practice martial arts techniques, so how can you even think about practicing when your body cannot produce Xuan qi?"

“What if I insist to go inside?”

Long Yu said in cold voice.....

Feng Luo had repeatedly bullied him again and again and had also snatched his money many times. Now, he was trying to prevent him from entering the Martial Court! If Long Yu stayed silent now then that would really be an insult to his previous status of the King of Killers.

“Do you think you can go inside?”

Feng Luo was looking at Long Yu with a look of disdain in his eyes: “If you sincerely want to go inside and have a look at the incredible martial arts techniques present in the Feng Clan’s Martial Court, then first you will have to demonstrate your sincerity. All you need to do is take three punches and ten slaps on the face from me, and then you get on your knees and go inside while crawling. I am a very generous person right?”

Three punches, ten slaps on the face then crawl inside?

Many juniors of Feng Clan present in the surroundings were watching this scene with great interest, although Feng Luo was only at the third layer of Wudao, but in comparison to a waste like Long Yu, he was still strong enough.

A waste like Long Yu, who even dared to come to Feng clan martial Court, really deserved to be humiliated.

They'd like to see what would happen to him in the end.

Dragon Martial Emperor Chapter 6 - Feng Clan will not welcome

With a look of disdain in his eyes Feng Luo was standing in front of Long Yu at the Martial Court.

“Three punches, ten slaps on the face then crawl inside?”

Long Yu asked in a calm demeanor.

Even the servants of the Feng Clan were allowed to enter the Martial Court without any problem, but at present, Long Yu, the adopted son of the Feng clan's head wanted to enter the Martial Court, then he would have to kowtow to others? This was simply ridiculous.

Long Yu was being bullied because the influence of Feng Longsong as Feng clan's head had watered away. He was soon going to be substituted from his position as the clan head.

“Well, young master Feng Luo is generous, if not so, then a waste like him should be kicked out of the Feng clan.”

Feng Luo's eyes squinted disdainfully as he was looking at Long Yu.

“Is that so?”

Long Yu sneered. He was not anxious to get involved and shifted his vision towards the side of the entrance of the Martial Court.

The Martial Court used to have guards near its entrance and today's guard was an elder from a collateral branch of the Feng Clan, named Feng Tianxiang.

Long Yu looked at Feng Tianxiang. He looked like an old senile man, his beard and hair were all white, but his cultivation could not be underestimated. The cultivation of Feng Luo could not be compared to his cultivation.

When he discovered that Long Yu was looking at him, he slightly opened his eyes, waved his hand and languidly said: "Just as the young master Feng Luo said, unless you take three punches and ten slaps on the face from him then get on your knees and crawl, you will not be allowed to enter the Martial Court."

As the juniors of the Feng Clan heard these words, they laughed loudly with a look of ridicule on their faces.

"This Long Yu is really a waste, and doesn't he know that elder Tianxiang is also a person of our Feng Clan. He actually tried to ask him for help!"

"Ridiculous, this waste should be ousted from the Feng Clan. His living here is simply a waste of food for the Feng Clan."

"It is said that this waste was expelled from an influential aristocratic clan of Imperial City, and now, he shamelessly came to freeloader in our Feng Clan."

Long Yu was listening to these junior's taunts but there was a faint smile on his face and this was a smile of indifference.

It seemed like this Feng Clan would never accept him!

In the entire Feng Clan, it was only Feng Longsong who had always been generous to him. Earlier, when he couldn't practice and stayed at home all the time, then he would be humiliated by these people who would call him a waste. But now that he wanted to enter the Martial Court to choose a martial arts technique then he had actually encountered so many obstacles.

“If Feng Clan doesn't want to accept me then I don't need to tolerate anymore!”

Long Yu was tenacious and a person of tough character, so naturally he wouldn't suffer anymore humiliation.

Now he had entered into the world of Wudao and if he stayed with the Feng Clan then that would cause problems for Feng Longsong. Right now he was weak, so he decided that it was better to leave Feng Clan and go out to have experiences in life, and after getting stronger, he would come back to help his foster father.

But before leaving, he would definitely teach this arrogant bully, Feng Luo, a lesson he would never forget in his life.

“Feng Luo!”

Long Yu stepped forward and his eyes revealed indifference when he looked at Feng Luo: “You keep on saying that I am a waste, but if one day, this waste steps on you and puts you under his foot, then what would that make you?”

Bang!

These words were like a thunderclap and shocked everyone who was present there.

How could this waste even dare to say such a thing? A waste, who could not practice, actually dared to say that he would bring a Wudao third layer master, Feng Luo, under his foot!

A warrior at Wudao third layer possessed the strength of 4000 Jin. Even a punch with such strength could turn Long Yu into meat paste!

In the Martial Court, everyone was staring at Long Yu. They thought that this waste had turned crazy. He actually dared to say such provocative words to the young master Feng Luo. Young master Feng Luo came in the direct line of descendants of the Feng Clan and was the younger brother of Feng Yun, so even if he killed Long Yu, nothing would happen to him.

Everyone thought that this waste was courting death. Perhaps he was insulted to such an extent that he had gone crazy?

“What did you say?”

The triumphant look on his face instantly changed to a cold one.

When it came to strength, he indeed didn't hold a good position in the Feng Clan. Feng Yao had the same age as him, but she had already entered the Wudao seventh layer and had also become a disciple of Hanbing Sect. But he had never been able to break through from the bottleneck of Wudao third layer into the

Wudao fourth layer, so he was not qualified to join any major Sects.

He would always brood in his heart, but now this waste Long Yu actually said that he would step on him and put him underfoot? This was simply outrageous!

“Waste, you are courting death! I will waste your leg and let you know the consequences of thoughtlessly saying those words to me!”

Feng Luo looked extremely furious. He dashed forward and condensed the strength of Wudao third layer in his hands.

Wudao third layer granted the strength of 4000 Jin. Three days ago, Long Yu would not have necessarily been his match.

But three days ago, he had consumed Ling Xuan Pellet and had also stepped into the second layer of Wudao and had gained the strength of 2000 Jin. After the activation of Azure Dragon Mark, he would also get an additional strength of 1000 Jin.

With the strength of 3000 Jin coupled with the accumulated experience of killing from his past life, Long Yu would have no difficulty to deal with Feng Luo.

Feng Luo had been unable to breakthrough from the bottleneck of Wudao third layer and he certainly could not comprehend any profound martial arts so his battle efficiency was considered quite weak.

“Die!”

With a fierce look in his eyes, Feng Luo condensed the strength of 4000 Jin in his right fist, and released a dark aura, as if coming straight from the netherworld itself. His appearance resembled that of an Asura while he brandished his fist towards the chest of Long Yu.

“Asura hand, it is one of the martial arts technique of Martial Court. This Feng Luo has already comprehended it to the Xiao Cheng level!”

“This waste is doomed! Earlier, he had not been able to practice but after this fight, he will lose a leg and become crippled!”

“Asura hand, if practiced to the Da Cheng level then just the aura released by the practitioner can scare the people, but what a pity that even after practicing for so many years, Feng Luo has only comprehended it to Xiao Cheng level.”

“Feng Luo doesn’t need Asura hand to deal with a waste like Long Yu. In fact, he doesn’t need a martial arts technique against a waste.”

Juniors of the Feng Clan were talking among themselves while pointing towards the two.

No one thought that Long Yu would be able to escape from such an attack.

In fact, Long Yu did not want to escape. He communicated with the Azure Dragon Mark through his thoughts and activated it. Immediately a mysterious strength flooded in his limbs and bones.

Strength of 3000 Jin!

Except the strength, Long Yu was better than Feng Luo when it came to fighting skill and battle experience.

While facing Feng Luo's punch, Long Yu quickly came into action, and tilted his body sideways to dodge the punch, and instantly swept his leg towards the front.

“What!”

With a force 3000 Jin, Long Yu's leg heavily kicked on the knee of Feng Luo. He could not bear the intense pain from the force present in the kick and fell down with a “bang” on the ground while screaming loudly.

Smack!

Long Yu lifted his foot and stepped on the back of Feng Luo, lying on the ground, with a faint smile on his face: “This guy is really so weak, I thought he would be stronger.”

A pin drop silence spread in the Martial Court.

Just one move and Long Yu had brought down Feng Luo underfoot!

Everyone was dumbstruck as they could not believe their own eyes. What just happened? A waste who could not practice had used one move to push down the young master on the ground and had put him underfoot.

“This, this, how is this possible?”

“Isn’t he a waste? But that kick just now seemed to contain strength of 2000 or maybe 3000 Jin!”

“It’s impossible, I must have dazzled.”

Many people rubbed their eyes, but when they opened their eyes, they saw the same scene once again. They were now totally speechless because Long Yu’s foot was still on the back of young master Feng Luo.

In their minds, for a moment, the provocative words of Long Yu resounded – “If one day, a waste like me steps on you and puts you under his foot, then what would that make you?”

What would that make him?

Of course, worse than a waste!

On the ground, with Long Yu’s foot on his back, Feng Luo felt as if the whole sky had fallen down upon him. He had actually been defeated by a waste and that too in one move!

“How is this possible, you are obviously just a waste.....”

Feng Luo clenched his teeth and his eyes had become blood shot.

“Yes, I am a waste, but you are worse than a waste.”

Long Yu said lightly: “I think you said that you will waste my leg? If that’s the case then I should do the same to you right!”

“Stop!”

Feng Tianxiang, who was sitting near the entrance Martial Court, finally reacted!

He was quick similar to the gust of wind and there was a stern countenance flashing in his eyes: “Violence is not allowed near the Martial Court and those who resort to violence here will court death.”

Long Yu stood calmly and sneered: “Are you blind or what?”

When Feng Luo had arrogantly said to break his leg and attacked him, then this Feng Tianxiang did not bother about it. But, now that Long Yu wanted to retaliate then he finally decided to come out and preach the principle of non-violence in the Martial Court. It was simply ridiculous!

Although Feng Tianxiang was fast, but after all, there was still a long distance between him and Long Yu.

His speed was fast but was inferior to Long Yu’s quick action!

Long Yu raised his foot and heavily stepped down.

Kacha!

Everyone heard a clear sound of breaking bone and looks on their faces immediately change.

“A waste like you actually dared to cripple young master!”

A furious look flashed in the eyes of Feng Tianxiang and his stature fierce sped in the direction of Long Yu!

Today, he was on the guard duty of Martial Court, but Feng Luo's leg was wasted right in front of him which was simply a great insult, moreover this had put him in a very bad situation.

He knew very well that Feng Luo was the younger brother of Feng Yun who was going to be the future head of the Feng Clan!

“Waste, since you have courted your own death, you cannot complain about anything. Even if you have somehow entered into the world of Wudao, but I will cripple you, just to let you know that a waste will always be a waste!”

Feng Tianxiang was extremely angry. He instantly used the technique Asura hand which was actually at the Da Cheng level.

If this was to hit Long Yu, then rather than just getting crippled, he would instantly die!

“What's going on here?”

Just when Feng Tianxiang was going to approach Long Yu, a deep voice resounded, and only after an instant, a tall figure arrived right in front of Long Yu.

Feng clan's head, Feng Longsong had finally arrived at the scene.

Chapter-7 Maiden in red

Bang!

After a loud noise, the two figures quickly separated.

Feng Longsong firmly stood in front of Long Yu, and didn't retreat even half a step, steady as a rock!

But, the elder Feng Tianxiang withdrew several steps after the collision and his complexion immediately paled and started to gasp. It was obvious that he had lost to Feng Longsong in terms of strength.

"Feng Longsong, you are the head of Feng Clan then how can you tolerate when an outsider actually dares to enter the Martial Court?"

Feng Tianxiang stared at Feng Longsong and said in a stern voice.

"Well, that's what you think, but in my eyes, Long Yu is a member of Feng Clan."

Feng Longsong indifferently said: "So that being the case, I will give my final judgment being the head of the clan. For no reason, Feng Luo initiated a fight in front of the Martial Court and even attacked first on Long Yu, so now that his leg is wasted, it will be considered as his punishment for starting violence in front of Martial Court! Hence, Long Yu is not guilty."

“You are going too far!”

Feng Tianxiang was so furious that it seemed as if his eyes were emitting fire.

“Don’t pretend, you know very well who is right and who is wrong.”

As stern countenance flashed in the eyes of Feng Longsong: “Since you cannot differentiate right from wrong, let me enlighten you. As the Head of the Feng Clan, I ask of you, Feng Tianxiang, the elder who is on guard duty today at the Martial Court. How did you tolerate when the children of our Feng Clan were resorting to violence in front the Martial Court, which is strictly prohibited by the rules of the clan. Following the Feng Clan’s code of conduct, as an elder, you have tried to overlook the violation of the rule, so I deprive you of your elder’s status, and from now on, you do not need to guard the Martial Court anymore.”

“You!”

Feng Tianxiang looked at Feng Longsong with a killing intent flashing in his eyes: “Feng Longsong, how can you deprive me of my elder’s status?”

“Using the authority of the head of Feng Clan, I can.”

Feng Longsong said in a dignified manner suiting his status as the head of the clan.

At this moment, Feng Tianxiang’s complexion completely turned ashen.

This time, it was over for him!

Not only was he deprived of his elder's status, Feng Luo was also crippled right in front of him and he couldn't stop it, later when Feng Yun and the father of the two brothers came to know about this incident, he would face severe consequences.....

When Feng Tianxiang thought of this, his vision blurred with hatred and anger as he stared at Long Yu.

He thought that this ill fate had befallen him just because of this waste. If only this waste didn't exist then he would not be facing this tragic situation!

But, not once did he realize that he himself was the reason that his ill fate had befallen him.

"Little Yu, are you alright?"

Feng Longsong turned towards Long Yu and asked in a soft tone with a smile on his face.

"I am alright, many thanks to foster father for looking out for me."

Long Yu shook his head.

"Such being the case, why don't you hurry up and pick some martial art technique from the Martial Court."

Feng Longsong said while smiling.

“No need for that, foster father, I want to go out and wander the world and have my own adventures.”

Long Yu shook his head, since he had already decided to leave the Feng Clan, then he wouldn't touch the martial arts techniques of Feng Clan.

“Wander the world?”

Feng Longsong couldn't help but gawked for a moment, but he immediately smiled in a gratified manner and whispered in his ears: “Good, good, now that you are capable enough to have beaten Feng Luo in just one move, I think you can protect yourself in the outside world. Your father has an old friend in Zhentian Sect, so why don't you go there and have a look?”

“Zhentian Sect, good.”

Long Yu nodded.

His father had an old friend in Zhentian Sect, who could that be?

At present, he certainly did not know, so first he would need to go to Zhentian Sect to find out.

Since he had already decided to go, certainly, the sooner the better, and both Feng Longsong and Long Yu immediately left the Martial Court to help Long Yu prepare for the journey.

Long Yu followed Feng Longsong and left the Martial Court, and the news about what happened outside the Martial Court soon spread throughout the Feng Clan. The rumor spread like forest fire that Long Yu, who was supposed to be a waste, could practice now and was no longer a waste.

He was not a waste, and not just that, he actually wasted a leg of Feng Luo, so he was quite ruthless as well!

Then the news spread that Long Yu would soon leave to join Hanbing Sect, one of seven large Sects of Tang State.

“That waste is going to join one of the seven large Sects? That’s just wishful thinking!”

“Just because he defeated Feng Luo, that idiot thinks he is talented enough to dream about joining one of the large Sects, how ridiculous.”

“No one can say for sure, the daughter of the Clan head is a disciple of the Hanbing Sect, maybe that waste Long Yu joins the Hanbing Sect based on his relationship with her? Ha ha!”

A group of Feng Clan members were talking about, but they did not know that they had actually obtained false news.

Long Yu was going to the Zhentian Sect instead of Hanbing Sect. The Hanbing Sect was located towards the north of the Yu Guan city and Zhentian Sect was located in the southern direction of Yu Guan city. Both these Sects were located in the opposite directions and were separated by several thousand miles from each other!

This was the plan of Long Yu all along because he knew that now that he had crippled Feng Luo, some people wouldn't give up and come after him for sure.

For the next two days, Feng Luo's father and Feng Longsong's brother, Feng Longtian brought up the matter about his son and caused havoc several times.

Once Long Yu would leave the Yu Guan City, the opposite party would most likely pursue him!

Now that the false news had spread, even if the other side wanted to pursue him, it would be impossible for them to find the trail of Long Yu.

Three days later at night, a horse had been arranged for Long Yu. Feng Longsong had also prepared some money for Long Yu's journey and gave it to him and secretly saw him off on the southern side of Yu Guan City.

Zhentian Sect was thousands of miles away from the Yu Guan City and even if he was riding a horse, it would take him several days to reach there.

"Foster father must have put a lot of effort in obtaining a Ling Xuan Pellet and I still haven't finished assimilating all of the Lingqi generated from it. Its complete absorption should be my top priority."

When he was leaving, he looked back and gazed upon the Yu Guan city that was currently bathed in moonlight. This was the city where lived the one and only person who was concerned about him, Feng Longsong.

“Rest assured foster father, I will grow stronger as soon as possible. In the Feng Clan competition three months later, I will come back to become your helping hand!”

Long Yu firmly resolved in his heart and accelerated in the direction of his goal, Zhentian Sect.

After Long Yu suddenly vanished, in the Yu Guan City, the movements could be seen among the members of Feng Clan in the Yu Guan City.

Many martial artists secretly rushed towards the north, in order to kill Long Yu on the way, but they never found any trace of him, of course, they soon realized that they had been fooled!

“Little Yu, now Feng Clan will no longer be peaceful. If you can enter into the Zhentian Sect, then I would want you to stay there. It would be much better for your safety to stay away from the Feng Clan.”

Standing at the top of the Feng Clan’s mansion, Feng Longsong continued to look into the distance for a long time then finally sighed.

The current Feng Clan is in a precarious situation. Perhaps, at the Feng Clan’s competition three months later, the new Clan head will be decided!

.....

For the next three days, Long Yu enjoyed riding a horse and rushed in the direction of Zhentian Sect.

During these three days, he had started to slowly absorb the surplus Lingqi accumulated in his Dantian, and by the time he would arrive at the Zhentian Sect, he would already have broken through to the Wudao third layer.

Wudao third layer granted the strength of 4000 Jin, and after activating the Azure Dragon Mark, he could gain an additional strength of 1000 Jin and could become stronger than any other martial artist of Wudao third layer.

After he stepped into the third layer of Wudao, he noticed that the Azure Dragon Mark changed once again, but Long Yu still couldn't figure out what this change actually represented and gave up.

Early in the morning, Long Yu finally saw endless towering mountain range from afar.

He knew that Zhentian Sect was located somewhere on these mountain ranges!

“Zhentian Sect, one of the seven large Sects of Tang State, just like Feng Yao's Hanbing Sect. I wonder how it would be to join such a large Sect.”

Long Yu rode forward and looking at the mountain ranges, he remembered the records he had read at the Feng Clan: “Wudao ninth layer is not the final layer, and above Wudao ninth layer, there is another stronger martial realm. But martial artists of this realm can only be found in large Sects like Zhentian Sect I must hurry up and gain great strength!”

In less than half an hour, Long Yu stopped not far away from the mountain

range, and in front of him, there was a canyon. It was called Zhentian canyon and was the only way through which one could enter the Zhentian Sect.

Many martial cultivators had come to join the Zhentian Sect, and as long as one could pass through the Zhentian canyon, they would pass the assessment, but if they couldn't cross the Zhentian canyon then they won't be accepted.

Near the entrance of Zhentian canyon, a group of hundreds of martial cultivators, who had come from the nearby regions, were discussing the countermeasures for dealing with this test.

All of these martial cultivators wanted to join the Zhentian Sect, and according to the rules, only young cultivators with their ages not over 18 years old could participate in the assessment.

Long Yu was exactly eighteen years old and he didn't have an option to wait for one more year.

"Hey you over there, the one riding the horse, quickly come over here and attend to the Xiaojie!" (Mystique-She is referring to herself as Xiaojie which means young lady or young miss; it's a princess like way of referring to herself as Xiaojie)

Suddenly an incomparably arrogant female voice passed over and Long Yu slightly frowned.

He tilted his head to look in the direction of that female voice and saw an arrogant looking girl wearing a red dress and was proudly walking towards him while being escorted by a group of servants.

“I am talking to you, what do you look so puzzled?”

When the arrogant young girl looked at the frowning face of Long Yu, an impatient color flashed in her eyes and said: “Since you are riding a horse then you should know how to take care of a horse right? Xiaojie wants to enter the Zhentian canyon, so during this time, you will take care of Xiaojie’s horse. She is called white snow. But if something happened to her then you would be held responsible for that and face consequences!”

The maiden spoke while pointing her finger to a pure-white horse that she just referred to as “white snow”.

After saying, she gave a condescending look to Long Yu, as if letting him to take care of her horse was a big honor for him.

Seeing this scene, many people surrounded and suddenly began to murmur.

“It is Tan Yue, so she had also come to join the Zhentian Sect. It seems that today, at least one person will certainly climb the Zhentian canyon.”

“Tan Yue, who is she? She seems like an unruly girl to me, what is her background?”

“Hush, if she heard you then you will suffer a miserable fate! She belongs to one of four respected clans of Yu Guan city, Tan Clan, and it is said that head of the Tan Clan is at the ninth layer of Wudao and in the entire Yu Guan City, no one is his match!”

“Not only that, long ago, her elder brother had joined the Zhentian Sect and is ranked among the top three inner disciples!”

Listening to the discussions of the crowd, the pretty girl proudly puffed her chest, and a complacent look emerged in her eyes, as if she was this world’s most noble peacock princess.

However, in the eyes of Long Yu, this young girl was nothing more than a fool.

This arrogant girl actually thought that she would just catch a man on horseback at the entrance of Zhentian canyon and he would politely agree to become her servant. Did she actually think that she could just dictate anyone and make them to take care of her horse?

From his previous life’s experience, Long Yu knew the exact word to describe the condition of such a girl, and that was “princess disease!”

Long Yu did not pay attention to that arrogant Tan Yue and turned around to go straight towards the Zhentian canyon.

He didn’t want to waste time and wanted to join the Zhentian Sect as soon as possible to get stronger. He directly rushed into the Zhentian canyon, why would he waste his time outside? And as far as the matter of taking care of Tan Yue’s silly looking white horse was concerned, it was naturally impossible.

Looking at this action of Long Yu, everyone was stunned.

This black-clothed kid actually dared to defy the words of Tan Yue? He was really asking for death!

Sure enough, when she saw that Long Yu ignored her and turned to leave, the arrogant look on her face immediately changed to a cold one.

She never thought that in these regions, there would be a young guy who could actually dare to ignore her!

.....

Chapter-8 into the canyon

All of a sudden, Tan Yue's proud face darkened.

Long Yu turned to leave and did not even look at her. It was clear that she had lost face and considering her spoiled nature, how could she bear such an insult?

“Bring him back, I want to give a slap on his face!”

Tan Yue said in a cold voice to the followers who, at the moment, were standing behind her. They had followed her straight from the Tan Clan to accompany her all the way to the Zhentian Sect.

“Young Miss, he has already entered the Zhentian canyon, I am afraid now it will be difficult to lay our hands on him.”

An older warrior said with a look of embarrassment on his face.

If only they had caught him outside the Zhentian canyon then no one would have bothered, but now that he had already entered the Zhentian canyon, if they tried to put their hands on him, then it would undoubtedly violate the rules of Zhentian Sect.

Even the most influential Tan clan of Yu Guan city wouldn't dare to offend the Zhentian Sect, one of the seven large sects of Tang State. The common people could not imagine the rich resources and heritage held by the Zhentian Sect, compared to which, the resources of the Tan clan were close to being called trivial.

“Hmph, you all are just a bunch of losers.”

Tan Yue grunted and walked towards the Zhentian canyon: “From today onwards, I am going to be an outer disciple of the Zhentian Sect. As for that insolent boy who acts blindly, you all wait here, and when he comes out of the canyon, break both his hands and legs.”

“Yes, Miss!”

Those followers agreed and watched the figure of Tan Yue disappearing into the entrance of Zhentian canyon and felt a chill in their hearts.

They knew very well about this Xiaojie’s hot temperament.

This black-clothed boy offended our clan’s young miss, now, whether he would become the Zhentian Sect’s disciple or not, but his fate was going to be very miserable!

.....

Long Yu stepped into the Zhentian canyon, and completely concentrated his mind on climbing up this canyon.

Regarding Tan Yue, the so-called princess disease, he did not bother to think about her.

Long Yu looked up and saw that this Zhentian canyon was a long and narrow

valley, and there were steep cliffs on its both sides, and there was a long strip of steps present in the middle, leading to the entrance of the Zhentian Sect located at the top.

There were a total of 300 stone steps in this long strip of steps. It was said that if someone tried to climb it up, he would have to face heavy pressure descending from the heaven, and it would prevent him from stepping up further. It was quite impossible to climb these three hundred stone steps for someone without enough strength, perception and comprehension.

Only those who could successfully climb up these three hundred stone steps would be able to join the Zhentian Sect and would become the outer disciples.

“First, I will try it out and see how it turns out for me.”

Long Yu thought to himself, and stepped out to step up these three hundred stone steps.

As he embarked on the first step, he suddenly felt a heavy pressure descending from the heaven. If his cultivation was not strong enough, perhaps, he would have immediately met a cruel death.

Now, Long Yu was at the Wudao third layer with strength of 4000 Jin so he could resist this pressure and wouldn't have any issues temporarily.

As Long Yu started stepping out on the stone steps, he faced more and more pressure, and with climbing up every step on the stone steps, the heavy pressure descending from the heaven increased incredibly. With each breath, Long Yu slowly climbed up one step at a time and finally reached the 100th step.

Here, Long Yu felt an incredibly heavy pressure!

Burst of heavy pressure continued to surge one after another from both sides and Long Yu felt as if he was walking under a waterfall, and now it had become extremely difficult for him to climb even a single step.

He gritted his teeth and put an effort to withstand the extremely heavy pressure that had enveloped his whole body, but, his back was still straight and his whole body was covered with beads of sweat, but, it seemed as if both his legs would simply bend down.

“Here, the pressure is too large, to the extent that it’s almost unbearable for me to withstand it. I think it’s impossible to climb all the 300 steps even with the strength of Wudao third layer!”

He looked up and saw that he had yet to cover two-third of the distance!

Sure enough, it was said that the entrance examinations held by the seven large Sects of the Tang State were quite tough and the entrance requirements were quite strict. If someone wanted to join one of these large Sects, their age needed to be not more than 18 years and they must also be at least at the Wudao fourth layer.

But, Long Yu was not willing to give up, because he had come here with great difficulty and if he wouldn’t give his best now, then after going back, how would he show his face to his foster father?

“Zhentian Sect’s assessment exam seems impossible to clear for most of the

examinees. But, I don't think that Zhentian Sect just wants to accept disciples with high cultivation level, they certainly also want talented individuals, in that case, there must be other ways.....”

Long Yu clenched his teeth and started thinking, and at this moment, he discovered that there were blade-like sharp giant stones present on the cliffs on both sides of the Zhentian canyon and they seemed to be arranged in a special combination.

The special arrangement of these sharp edged giant stones seemed to have Lingqi and it revealed a burst of mysterious breath that moved Long Yu's heart.

Initially, he was facing a heavy pressure on his body, making him unable to withstand the weight on his body, but suddenly, he entered into quite a marvelous state, and in his eyes, those sharp giant stones and the surrounding world seemed to melt and blend in, as if expressing some idea to him.

The reason was that Long Yu had observed the giant stones on the both sides and had begun to comprehend something!

At that time, that arrogant girl, Tan Yue, also entered the Zhentian canyon and saw Long Yu's figure at the 100th stone step and a disdainful smile appeared on her face.

“I thought that he would be much skilled, but he is only a waste at Wudao third layer.”

Tan Yue lifted her head in a haughty manner and started climbing up the stone steps. Clad in red dress, she looked graceful and very exquisite.

Earlier, her brother Tan Jian, an inner disciple of the Zhentian Sect, had told her that one must have the strength of Wudao fourth layer to successfully climb up all the 300 stone steps of the Zhentian canyon and someone with the strength of Wudao third layer could only climb 100 stone steps.

She stopped at the 100th stone step where Long Yu was still standing and guessed that his cultivation was only at the Wudao third layer.

But, she was the treasured granddaughter of Tan Clan's head so she was naturally at the fourth layer of Wudao, and it was going to be quite easy for her to climb up all the 300 stone steps and pass the assessment examination.

Wudao third layer was called a bottleneck and if practitioners could not break through this bottleneck, then no matter how long they would practice, they wouldn't be able to reach the Wudao fourth layer, just like the young master of Feng Clan, Feng Luo.

But if he broke through the bottleneck, then he would be able to fully utilize the mysterious qi present inside his body which would not only increase his interior strength but his attacking or defensive capabilities would enhance as well, granting him a terrifying strength of 8000 Jin.

Tan Yue was at fourth layer of Wudao with strength of 8000 Jin, so withstanding the heavy pressure was quite easy for her and she quickly arrived at the 100th step next to Long Yu and glanced at him contemptuously.

"Waste, just a master at Wudao third layer and dares to disgrace me, you are quite insolent aren't you?"

Tan Yue sneered with a look of disdain in her eyes: “You have just made this lady to lose her face, and since this lady doesn’t want to hit you and dirty her own hands, wait until you go out of the canyon, then my followers will naturally make you understand the importance of hierarchy!”

She finished the sentence and thought that it would scare Long Yu and she would get to see a panicked look in his eyes, but, she was totally disappointed.

At that time, Long Yu was in one kind of profound mysterious mood, with his eyes closed and comprehending. He simply did not hear the words of Tan Yue and was unaware that she was standing next to him.

Just like at the entrance of the canyon, she had been ignored yet again by Long Yu!

“Well, now you have done it.”

Tan Yue scowled and looked bitterly at Long Yu, whose eyes were closed at the moment, then continued to climb the steps.

In this Zhentian Canyon, she did not dare to hit Long Yu, but she was convinced that being only at Wudao third layer, he would not be able to join the Zhentian Sect, so once he would come out of the canyon, he would surely meet death.

The first time Long Yu ignored her, she had decided to cripple him.

But, now, he had dared to ignore her the second time, so she decided to kill him!

Long Yu knew nothing about all this as he was still immersed in that profound mysterious mood.

Not long after, having two times the strength of Long Yu, Tan Yue had easily climbed all the way to the top and had finally set foot on the 300th step. In accordance with the rules, she would now be regarded as the outer disciple of the Zhentian sect.

Two Zhentian Sect's outer disciples came to welcome the new disciples and had been ordered to make arrangements for the new disciples of the Zhentian Sect.

"Junior sister apprentice Tan Yue, congratulations on becoming an outer disciple."

A thin man with small eyes said in an extremely flattering manner: "My name is Wu Qing. Brother Tan Jian has made me responsible for arranging things for Sister Tan Yue. On your brother's command, I have been waiting here for a long time for your arrival."

"Wu Qing."

Tan Yue looked at the thin-looking Wu Qing and nodded with satisfaction because the look of flattery on his face had obviously made her enjoy making her feel like she was truly a superior princess.

“I am called Han Jian, it’s a pleasure to meet Sister Tan Yue.”

The other disciple looked upright and there was a firm and resolute look present on his square shaped face, but when he looked at Tan Yue, his eyes glowed with a red-hot touch in them.

Tan Yue possessed a good status, and was very beautiful, and with just a sight of her, Han Jian had become very much attracted towards her. If he could just get her favor, then won’t he gain some status in the eyes of Brother Tan Jian?

“Good, what are your cultivation levels?”

Tan Yue nodded and arrogantly asked in a commanding voice.

“I’m at Wudao fourth layer and Brother Han Jian is at fifth layer.”

Wu Qing immediately answered in a flattering tone.

“Fourth layer and fifth layer, good.”

Tan Yue nodded but suddenly, a fierce look appeared in her eyes: “You two wait here for a moment and accompany me. There is a waste standing at the 100th stone step of the canyon and I would like to see how he gives up on the assessment and goes back.”

“Oh? Someone has actually dared to offend Sister Tan Yue, well, when he comes up, I will surely teach him a lesson and let him know whom he shouldn’t offend and what can be its consequences!”

At present, Wu Qing's eyes shone brightly as he had just find another way to flatter Tan Yue. He didn't expect that someone would bring him a good opportunity to get close to her heart!

"You overestimate him because he is just a waste at the Wudao third layer so how can he possibly come up?"

Tan Yue said with a disdain look in her eyes.

"He is just at Wudao third layer? I'll accompany Sister Tan in watching a good show."

Nearby Han Jian said with a faint smile: "I heard that the heavy pressure of the Zhentian canyon has killed many overconfident people who could not comprehend the immensity of its pressure. Those who tried to climb up the stone steps without enough strength ultimately met their cruel ends."

When Tan Yue heard this, her face immediately shone brightly.

If this was the case, then she should rather verbally stimulate that waste kid and make him rush up, and then, she would get a chance to look how he would get crushed under the heavy pressure. Wouldn't that be very entertaining?

The three soon came close to 300th step and looked down to see the black-clothed Long Yu still parked at the 100th stone step of the canyon.

"So he really he is a Wudao third layer waste."

Wu Qing said contemptuously, though, he himself was only one layer above the third layer but this one layer difference was still very large!

At this moment, Long Yu, who was delved deep into the profound mysterious mood, finally opened his eyes and felt as if he had gained the enlightenment.

“So this is called the feeling of getting one with the world!”

And now that he had woken up from the comprehension of the mysterious mood, he again started to climb up the steps!

Chapter – 9 Zhentian Mysterious Mood

Above the Zhentian canyon, there was a peak always crowned with clouds, and at the summit of this peak, the Zhentian Sect had constructed a peaceful and elegant pavilion.

In the pavilion, at this time, two old men, clad in black and white colored Chinese robes, were sitting facing each other before a checkerboard and playing chess.

Suddenly, a surprised look appeared on the faces of the two elders. They had just perceived the waves of the profound Mysterious mood coming from the bottom of the Zhentian canyon.

“Elder black, you also felt.”

The elder wearing white robe said in a moderate voice.

“Mysterious mood.”

The black robed elder said in a faint voice.

“So young but has comprehended the mysterious mood, although only a trace, but it is still very commendable.”

The white robed elder said with a smile on his face.

Two elders continued to play chess again. Outwardly, they did not seem to care about the things going on at the bottom of the Zhentian canyon, but in reality, their attention had been concentrated on the young man present on the stairs who had been able to comprehend the mysterious mood.

This terrifying young man, who had comprehended the Mysterious mood, was none other than Long Yu!

.....

When Long Yu opened his eyes and felt that heavy pressure of the Zhentian canyon had instantly weakened.

“Now it should not be a problem.”

A confident look flashed in the eyes of Long Yu. Now, he could embark on the 300 stone steps of the Zhentian canyon with just the strength of Wudao third layer!

Even if he had just got the slightest grasp of the Mysterious mood, but he was sure that it would greatly help him in his future cultivation.

Long Yu felt that unexpectedly the Azure Dragon Mark on his chest had been quietly giving off heat all this time. He knew well that he could comprehend this Mysterious mood thanks to his inescapable relationship with the Azure Dragon Mark. He would never forget how the Azure Dragon Mark greatly helped him when he was in need.

Gradually, step by step, his climbing pace increased more and more, and he

realized that his comprehension of the mysterious mood was also progressing as he continued to climb up.

On the 300th stone step, Tan Yue, Wu Qing and Han Jian stood together, and all of them were looking at Long Yu with a contemptuous look in their eyes.

“Tell me, how far can he climb at his current cultivation level?”

Tan Yue asked with interest, as if playing a fun game.

“In my opinion, depending on his Wudao third layer strength, he can arrive at most at the 150th step, that should be his limit.”

Wu Qing said in a very affirmative way but his voice revealed a deep disdain.

As soon as he finished the sentence, they saw that Long Yu was climbing the stone steps with a good pace and he unexpectedly crossed the 150th stone steps and continued to gradually climb up.

Wu Qing’s complexion immediately became unsightly. Wasn’t this like a direct slap on his face?

“Maybe 200 stone steps is his limit.”

Han Jian said in a relaxed tone. He did not seem to be too much concerned about someone at the Wudao third layer, because there was a two layers difference in strength between him and the masters of Wudao third layer and their strength was really too weak in comparison to his own strength.

But, as he just said these words, the unceasingly climbing figure of Long Yu easily reached 200th stone step and continued to climb further!

At this time, Tan Yue and the other two disciples felt that they had gone wrong in estimating the strength of Long Yu.

“Did he break through?”

Tan Yue was a little bit surprised.

“How can anyone have a breakthrough in such a situation? This guy is certainly cheating and even if he successfully climbs up all the 300 steps, I will make him know that cheaters are not allowed to join the Zhentian Sect!”

Wu Qing said and a dark look appeared on his face.

Tan Yue nodded at these words in somewhat satisfied manner. It seemed that Wu Qing was very intelligent and he knew that if they would not find an excuse then they would not be able to put their hands on this waste.

Even if that waste boy had a temporary breakthrough into the Wudao fourth layer but they wouldn't allow him to join the Zhentian Sect!

Soon, Long Yu stepped over the 250th stone step and continued to climb up towards his goal.

280 steps.

290 steps.

300 steps!

Long Yu finally reached the 300th stone step and after crossing further, he felt that the heavy pressure of the canyon had immediately swept away. He succeeded in passing the assessment exam of the Zhentian Sect by climbing up the Zhentian canyon, and according to the rule, now he could become an outer disciple of the Zhentian Sect!

Moreover, Long Yu also had the biggest harvest because he gained an insight about the mysterious mood of Zhentian canyon and he was able to comprehend some of it which would benefit in his future developments.

After comprehending the mysterious mood, Long Yu felt as if he had become one with the world, and now, even his random punch could display a greater strength than before.

However, before he had enough time to familiarize himself with the just comprehended mysterious mood, three figures came in his sight.

“Is that Tan Yue?”

Long Yu’s brow wrinkled slightly. He looked up and saw Tan Yue and two disciples of the Zhentian Sect walking towards him with evil intentions apparent in their eyes.

Long Yu looked at two young men. Their appearance looked as arrogant as the general appearance of Tan Yue, and it was absolutely impossible that they were coming to congratulate him on passing the assessment test.

One of them had small eyes, thin physique like a monkey, who jumped to arrive in front of Long Yu. It was Wu Qing.

With a teasing expression on his face, Wu Qing shouted loudly: “You are a waste and still want to join the Zhentian Sect?”

By directly calling him “waste”, he was precisely aiming to enrage Long Yu. If Long Yu became furious and attacked first then he would easily teach this guy a lesson and he would also get a chance to show off in front of Tan Yue and win her heart.

“Waste?”

Long Yu was calm as usual and looked at Wu Qing with a piercing gaze.

“Yes, although you passed the Zhentian canyon test, but it does not represent that you have the qualifications to join our Zhentian Sect.”

With a look of contempt on his face, Wu Qing said: “My present cultivation is Wudao fourth layer, and if you cannot beat me then you can just get the hell out of here as soon as possible, otherwise you will just lose your face here!”

Long Yu wrinkled his eyebrows and said in a calm voice: “Do you have the qualification to decide whether I can join the Zhentian Sect or not?”

“What did you say?”

As soon as these words fell into Wu Qing’s ears, a wave of anger swept his heart. How did this body dare to not show any respect for him and talk in a haughty manner.

His cultivation was really at the bottom in the Zhentian Sect, but he had spent some time on learning some of the martial art techniques of the Zhentian Sect. This boy, who had just stepped up the Zhentian canyon, what qualifications did this guy have to disrespect him?

“I mean that you do not have the qualifications to decide whether I can join the Zhentian Sect right?”

Long Yu took a step forward without fearing Wu Qing.

Although Wu Qing was an inner disciple of the Zhentian Sect, perhaps he had practiced the Zhentian Sect’s martial art techniques, but Long Yu wasn’t scared of him, rather, there was a smile on his face, however, behind his smiling face, a killing intent was actually hidden.

From the previous life, Long Yu had been an expert at observing the surrounding environment, and presently, just from the manner of their footsteps and movements, he had clearly guessed the cultivation levels of those three.

Tan Yue and Wu Qing should be at Wudao fourth layer, and the other person’s cultivation should be one step higher than the other two, perhaps, at the Wudao fifth layer.

Now this Wu Qing was rushing to give a performance so Long Yu did not mind giving him a little disgrace.

At this time Long Yu was at Wudao third layer with the strength of 4000 Jin, and with the activation of the Azure Dragon Mark, he could gain an extra strength of 1000 Jin, thus, in total he had the strength of 5000 Jin. Although, he didn't have the strength of 8000 Jin like Wu Qing, but just a moment ago, he had comprehended the Mysterious mood and it was going to help him a lot in the fight.

Moreover, in his previous life, Long Yu had innumerable experiences of life and death situations, and he was expert in psychological handling of his opponents, and considering all this, Wu Qing was like a newborn baby in front of a veteran.

“Waste, you are courting death!”

Wu Qing's small eyes were full of anger: “Today I must teach you a lesson and make you know that no acts unruly inside the Zhentian Sect!”

As his voice fell, Wu Qing didn't wait any longer. He condensed the Xuan qi in his body and swiftly stepped forward.

The formidable Xuan qi began to surge inside his body and condensed on his two fists!

Only after reaching the Wudao fourth layer, a martial artist could condense the Xuan qi in his body, and it not only increased their attacking capability but also their defense capability.

Wudao fourth layer was considered the first major step in the growth of a martial artist's cultivation.

There was a disdainful smile on the face of Wu Qing. He had condensed his fists with the Xuan qi and quickly moved his steps forward, and like a gust of wind rushing over, in no time, he came before Long Yu!

"Speed is quite fast!"

Long Yu's heart jumped, and a strong fighting instinct let him get back quickly, then he lowered his head and managed to dodge Wu Qing's fist.

"Waste, just now you were playing cool, what happened, why are you escaping now?"

Wu Qing said these words in an ironic tone: "This is a martial arts technique of our Zhentian Sect, flickering wind step. When I fully display its might, I'll see how you escape then!"

As he finished these words, Wu Qing moved forward with a great speed, and in the very next moment, his thin and small figure arrived in front of Long Yu once again. He condensed the inner strength of the technique in his fist and punched towards Long Yu.

Considering the current cultivation of Long Yu, if this fist would hit him, he would probably die or would definitely be crippled!

However, at this moment, Wu Qing suddenly felt the powerful force of the mysterious mood coming from the side of Long Yu, making his whole body's Xuan qi circulation to stagnate.

Wu Qing was instantly shocked at the moment. What was this strange force coming from this waste and how could he have such a powerful aura?

“Flickering wind step's speed is indeed really fast, but in the face of absolute strength, what's the use of fast speed?”

Long Yu's calm voice resounded and he immediately rushed forward towards the Wu Qing's thin and small body, currently enveloped in a formidable mysterious mood.

A while ago, Long Yu had comprehended the profound mysterious mood of the Zhentian canyon, and just now, he displayed it in a fight, but he didn't expect that it would actually produce such wonders and would actually suppress Wu Qing, a martial cultivator at Wudao fourth layer.

Long Yu activated the Azure Dragon mark, and condensed the strength of 5000 Jin in his whole body, then punched and kicked towards Wu Qing respectively, in a pre-planned and skillful manner.

Although Wu Qing was shrouded in the force of mysterious mood so his movement had somewhat slowed down but he still had the strength of 8000 Jin granted by the Wudao fourth layer.

Facing Long Yu's attack, Wu Qing reacted quickly and condensed the Xuan qi in his fist and punched towards Long Yu's fist and repelled it instantly, and at the

same time, a loud sound of fist bone shattering resounded.

Although when it came to punching strength, Long Yu lost to Wu Qing and his fist bone shattered, but this was nothing for a killer like Long Yu because his killer move was yet to come!

From the pre-planned combo of punch and kick, the very next instant, the kick arrived and landed on the waist of Wu Qing's waist and the tyrannical strength present in that kick actually kicked Wu Qing directly more than a dozen meters away and he heavily fell down after rolling twice on the ground, and his whole body got completely soiled.

This kick was the doom of Wu Qing and once he fell down on the ground, he didn't get up and continued to wail in pain.

"Wu Qing!"

Han Jian originally planned to watch from the sidelines and enjoy the show but he was shocked. He couldn't understand that how could Long Yu be so strong that Wu Qing lost in just one kick.

"What a waste."

Tan Yue clad in a beautiful red skirt looked gloomy and scolded Wu Qing. Looking at the arrogant demeanor of Wu Qing, she thought that she would enjoy the show while he would teach this insolent black-clothed boy a lesson, but she didn't expect this sudden turn of events, which was a big disgrace for her!

"Now, do you think I am qualified enough to join the Zhentian Sect?"

Long Yu endured the pain of his broken fist bone and calmly looked at Tan Yue and Han Jian.

“Don’t think too highly of yourself! Han Jian, go and punish him, make him regret that he offended this Xiaojie!”

Tan Yue snorted and immediately instigated Han Jian.

.....

Chapter-10 Unfair treatment

Hearing the words of Tan Yue, a fierce smile appeared on the face of Han Jian with a killing intent apparent in his eyes.

Wu Qing was eager to show off and ended up in a miserable state, but now that Han Jian was going into action, one could expect the excellent display of martial arts.

“Tan Yue junior sister apprentice, you don’t need to worry, no matter who it is, as long as someone dares to offend junior sister apprentice, he is bound to obtain a bloody lesson from me!”

Han Jian looked at Long Yu with a disdainful expression on his face then took a step forward.

He could see, although Long Yu had won against Wu Qing, but in doing so, he also got his fist bone shattered, so he definitely would not be able to fight with him, a master at Wudao fifth layer.

Once he would win this fight, at that time, he would be able to become more intimate with Tan Yue, and maybe he even.....

However, just when Han Jian was cherishing his fond desires, suddenly, a hoarse voice came from the clouds and was clearly heard by all ears present on the scene.

“Why don’t you halt your hands right this instant? Above the Zhentian Sect

canyon, how can you dare to act so presumptuously! Those who are 18 years old or younger and successfully climb the Zhentian canyon will become the disciples of the Zhentian Sect, this is the rule and no one can disobey it!”

This hoarse voice was gentle but contained a stern tone. Han Jian instantly pulled his hands back, his complexion suddenly changed and his whole body was covered in cold sweat.

It was an elder of the Zhentian Sect!

Han Jian had been a disciple of Zhentian Sect for a long time and had naturally heard rumors that above the Zhentian Sect canyon, two elders perennially guard the Zhentian Sect’s entrance, but rumors were just rumors, and no one had actually seen them.

He just wanted to please Tan Yue, although it involved violation of the rules of the Zhentian Sect, but when the guard elders interfered and ordered him to stop, he was suddenly shocked and scared.

“Respected elder, disciple Han Jian admits his mistake, please punish me!”

Han Jian immediately knelt down and bowed his head respectfully while admitting his mistake.

Punishment for the violation of rules of the Zhentian sect was very severe, so Han Jian was trying to act humble, expecting that the elders might mitigate his punishment and this matter would end right there without reaching the higher authorities.

What was the use of flattering Tan Yue if he got expelled from the Sect? After all, she was just a junior sister disciple, and her existence was nothing compared to that of the Sect elders.

“Your punishment is considered as finished already. You lead these two new disciples inside the Zhentian Sect and make arrangements for them.”

The hoarse voice continued to come, but the sky was clear and they couldn’t see anyone and no one could make out what just happened.

But these words made Han Jian to slightly gawk. He responded immediately and happily knocked his head twice on the ground: “Thank you elders, disciple Han Jian will happily take care of this matter!”

Han Jian was very much scared and the situation of Tan Yue standing nearby was not much better either. Although, she was arrogant and brutal, haughty and despotic, but she still wouldn’t dare to oppose the elders of Zhentian Sect.

At that time, as usual, Long Yu was relaxed and was moving his sight on both sides of the canyon while looking towards the sky. There was a vague smile on his face!

“These elders, they must have known that I was in trouble, but they were silent until now and were apparently trying to see my strength or rather, my level of comprehension of the Zhentian canyon mysterious mood.....”

“Just now, they did not punish Han Jian and Tan Yue, because they must have thought that it will cause more problems for me once I enter the Sect. This is their own way of urging me to practice so that I get prepared for any future

troubles, quite a good plan they have made in such a short time!”

Although Long Yu had completely seen through the intentions of the elders, but anyways, by interfering, they solved a bigger trouble for him, after all, he knew that he was not a match of Han Jian.

Certainly, Long Yu believed that he would have to improve his strength quickly to be able to face Han Jian in the near future.

“Sister Tan Yue, come with me, I will arrange a residence for you.”

Han Jian respectfully smiled at Tan Yue, then gave a sideway glance to Long Yu and turned around to walk.

After the appearance of the elders, Tan Yue’s haughty demeanor subsided and she did not dare to stay and hastily followed Han Jian, but her eyes viciously swept towards Long Yu.

It was obvious that so long as she had the opportunity, she would never let off Long Yu so easily.

Long Yu lightly looked at Tan Yue. He could clearly feel the killing intent present in her eyes though it was not visible on her plain face at the moment. He thought that he would have to quickly absorb the immortality pill, Yuyao Dan, given to him by Feng Longsong while he was leaving Yu Guan City, as it could help him in stepping into the Wudao fourth layer.

Only after reaching the Wudao fourth layer, it was possible for a martial artist to condense the Xuan qi inside his body, and then, it would not only increase his

attacking capabilities but also his defense capabilities. Though, inside the Zhentian Sect, this would guarantee only a little bit of safety to him.

Han Jian led the way with the other two following him and walked on the mountain road along the canyon and soon came to the place where disciples of Zhentian Sect lived.

“Sister Tan Yue, this is your residence, Brother Tan Jian has already arranged this for you.”

Han Jian led her inside an elegant looking courtyard with a pleasing environment and a beautiful garden.

“Ah, this is good.”

Tan Yue glanced towards the courtyard and saw the garden rockeries, pavilion and other things and looked very satisfied.

“Sister Tan Yue, you wait a moment, I’ll arrange things for him first.”

Han Jian pointed towards Long Yu and said.

“Go.”

Tan Yue turned her head and contemptuously looked at Long Yu then stepped into her elegant courtyard.

“Hurry up and come quickly!”

Han Jian turned around to leave and did not forget to scold Long Yu while he had the chance to, but the elder’s voice still reverberated in his mind so he did not dare to use the term “waste” while referring him.

Long Yu didn’t say anything and continued to follow him all the way to the residential area of the outer disciples and found out that the environment of these courtyards were not good and his residence in the Feng Clan was far better than this. This was the reality of the Sect where outer disciples were the lowest of the bunch!

However Long Yu discovered quickly that Han Jian was unexpectedly taking him towards an extremely remote corner, and in a while, they arrived at a somewhat tattered courtyard.

“You will live here! Someone will deliver your outer disciple’s clothing and identity token.”

Han Jian said in a cold voice and immediately turned around to leave. It was obvious that he could not bear the environment around this courtyard.

Long Yu looked around and randomly walked a few steps, and finally discovered that not far behind the dilapidated courtyard, there was a huge pit, and it was exuding a pungent stench!

“This treatment is so unfair!”

A cold look flashed in his eyes as he never thought that the place where he was

going to live would turn out to be such an unlivable environment. It was clear that Han Jian had settled his personal scores with him and hastily returned back to please Tan Yue.

“I am not going to settle this score with you for the time being but I am still going to write it down.”

Long Yu thought to himself and walked into the courtyard.

Right now, his top priority was not to bother with Han Jian, but to absorb the Yuyao Dan and break through from his current state, otherwise his coming to the Zhentian Sect would go in vain if he continued to get insulted like earlier. After having a breakthrough, he would be prepared to finally settle his score with Han Jian!

“Yuyao Dan, foster father said that this immortality pill is far more precious than the Ling Xuan Dan.”

In his courtyard room, Long Yu first cleaned it then sat cross-legged on a haystack and took out the immortality pill that Feng Longsong had prepared for him.

It was a crystal clear immortality pill and was exuding a mouth-watering herbal fragrance, truly priceless.

Last time, he had consumed a Ling Xuan Dan, a low-grade immortality pill, and the results it granted were comparable to half-year rigorous cultivation of an average person, but in Long Yu’s case, with the help of the Azure Dragon mark, he had successfully broken through to the Wudao second layer and by gradual

absorption of the surplus Lingqi stored in his Dantian, he was able to step into the Wudao third layer.

But, compared to the Ling Xuan Dan, Yuyao Dan granted the results equivalent to the one year rigorous cultivation of an average person, so for Long Yu, the absorption effects would naturally be stronger and more rewarding!

“I hope that now I can have a breakthrough and reach the Wudao fourth layer!”

Long Yu calmed his mind and directly swallowed down the fragrant Yuyao Dan.

.....

Chapter-11 Nine Hidden Dragons mark

Yuyao Dan sank into his stomach, and immediately, the Lingqi disseminated into the limbs of Long Yu.

“Absorb!”

Long Yu’s heart started beating vigorously, and gradually, the Lingqi contained in the Yuyao Dan began to transform into his inner Xuan qi and also began to circulate through the meridians in his body.

Wudao third layer granted him the strength of 4000 Jin, however right now, under the effects of consuming the Yuyao Dan, his strength began to grow slowly.

4100 Jin, 4200 Jin

The Azure Dragon mark present on the chest of Long Yu began to give off heat and started to absorb the drug that his own body couldn’t absorb as he only had the absorption capacity of 30%.

When Long Yu saw that the excess Lingqi was getting stored in the Azure Dragon mark, his heart calmed down, and he sped up the absorption speed of the Yuyao Dan. In a while, 30% of the Lingqi released by the Yuyao Dan was transformed into his inner Xuan qi and began to surge up through the meridians in his body.

The Xuan qi running through the meridians within him began to expand

rapidly, but because he had not yet broken through so his strength was unable to exceed 5000 Jin, and only after breaking through to the Wudao fourth layer, his strength would instantly increase and reach up to 8000 Jin.

He opened his eyes and discovered that it was already dark outside. He stopped practicing, because anyway the unabsorbed remaining portion of the drug had been stored in the Azure Dragon mark, so he might as well go outside and check whether his things had arrived or not.

Feng Longsong had told him that in the Zhentian Sect, if a disciple wanted to enter the Martial Court to select a martial arts technique, the identity token was a must and acted as the identity proof for that disciple.

As far as the outer disciples clothing was concerned, Long Yu was not at all bothered about it, but the disciple's identity token was something very important for him.

When he opened the door, he saw that something was lying on the ground, in front of the courtyard. Apparently, someone sent over his things while he was practicing.

With a closer look, he noticed that it turned out to be a blue robe, presumably a uniform for the outer disciples, but this blue robe was arbitrarily thrown on the ground, full of mud and footprints, apparently someone must have trampled it several times.

Next to that filthy blue robe, there was a plate with leftover food, and was supposedly meant to be his dinner for tonight.

“Where’s the identity token?”

Long Yu thought, then opened the dirty rotten blue robe, and flipped it over and over, but failed to find the so-called identity token for Zhentian Sect’s outer disciples.

They sent only the leftover food and a filthy uniform but didn’t send the most important thing, his identity token, and it was obvious that this was done just to make things difficult for him!

“Well, on this account, I have added a few strokes for this as well.”

A cold look flashed in his eyes then he suddenly turned his sight outside the courtyard.

Not far away from his courtyard, there was a forest, and anyway he was not going to eat the leftover dinner, so he decided to first catch his dinner in the forest, and after having dinner, he would start practicing again and gradually enter into the Wudao fourth layer.

.....

As night fell, Long Yu was enjoying a roasted rabbit captured from the patch of woods, and after eating his full, he continued to start practicing.

The essence of the Yuyao pill, stored in the Azure Dragon Mark, came into play, and began to transform into Xuan qi. The transformed Xuan qi started getting absorbed by Long Yu and his strength continued to rise simultaneously.

“The effects of Azure Dragon Mark truly go against the heavens.”

Long Yu thought to himself, and in the midnight, the Xuan qi began to overflow in his meridians, and he sensed that his inner strength had reached the limit of Wudao third layer, 5000 Jin, and the very next step was going to be the breakthrough into the realm of Wudao fourth layer!

In the Tianyu continent, anyone who wanted to step into the Wudao fourth layer was bound to face a bottleneck and it was necessary for them to condense the Xuan qi and turn it into their interior strength. For example, the young master of Feng Clan, Feng Luo, was at the third layer and just because he couldn't condense the Xuan qi into his own inner strength, he had been unable to break through to the Wudao fourth layer.

But this wasn't going to be a problem for Long Yu.

“Breakthrough!”

Long Yu's forehead became red with rage, the Xuan qi started to surge violently and rapidly absorbed and penetrated deep into every part of his body. It seemed like a rebirth in general, and his strength abruptly jumped up by 3000 Jin!

8000 Jin!

Wudao fourth layer!

Relying solely on his own talent and perception, Long Yu finally reached the Wudao fourth layer. He was truly a genius like Feng Yao who was currently at the Wudao seventh layer and was only 16 years old. If his meridians were not blocked since his childhood then he would naturally have shown a similar growth like her.

This bottleneck of Wudao fourth was simply nonexistent in front of Long Yu's talent.

Long Yu opened his eyes, stood up, and was very excited in his heart because he finally reached the Wudao fourth layer and attained the strength of 8000 Jin. This was a feeling of getting stronger!

In this world, strength was the ultimate justice, and right now, Long Yu took the first major step on his path to become the strongest, and he only needed to go step by step forward.

"Tomorrow morning, I will go ask for my identity token."

Long Yu thought in mind, but at this moment, he suddenly felt a burst of hot feeling on his chest, and it seemed that there was a change taking place in the Azure Dragon mark.

"Well, earlier when I broke through to the Wudao second layer and third layer, it seemed that the Azure Dragon mark had slightly changed both times, but I couldn't notice these changes clearly back then, but now that I have broken through to the Wudao fourth layer, it feels even more strongly....."

Thinking of this, he quickly tore the cloth from his upper body and what he saw

left him stunned.

“This is?”

On his chest, he saw that on the place where the Azure Dragon mark originally was, the figure of the coiling dragon had changed greatly!

Previously, this Azure Dragon mark was still somewhat vague and fuzzy, and didn't fit his body, but now, the Azure dragon had become incomparably clear, and it seemed like he was born with this mark.

Moreover, the color of the dragon had also changed and the previous azure color of its body had actually become very deep. One could see a faint trace of black lines on the mark that looked truly mysterious and profound.

Just now, Long Yu felt dryness and heat that was being transmitting from those black lines, making him feel astonished and shocked.

“Nine, Nine hidden dragons.....”

Suddenly, an inexplicable term flashed in his mind, and he finally realized, that the mark on his chest was not Azure Dragon mark, but ‘Nine hidden dragons mark’!

Then, perhaps, Azure dragon mark should not be called the Azure Dragon mark, but it should be called ‘Nine hidden dragons mark’.

“Activate!”

Long Yu did not wait to think and quickly activated the ‘Nine hidden dragons mark’ and found out that the faint black lines suddenly began to emit black rays of light! At the same time, an extremely terrifying strength rushed into his body from those black lines.

“It actually has a force of 10,000 Jin?”

Long Yu was instantly shocked.

After he activated the ‘Nine hidden dragons mark’, the black rays of light emitted from those black lines instantly granted him the strength of 10,000 Jin, which was more than the strength of 8000 Jin, granted by his current cultivation level of Wudao fourth layer!

In other words, now, after the activation of the ‘Nine hidden dragons mark’, his overall strength would be a total of 18000 Jin, which was stronger than the strength of 16000 Jin, granted by the Wudao fifth layer!

In the Tianyu continent, the strength of 1000 Jin was called “the strength of a fierce horse,” because in the Tianyu continent, even the most ordinary fierce horse possessed the strength of at least 1000 Jin.

So now, after activating the mark, it could be said that Long Yu possessed the strength of 18 fierce horses, which was clearly very large compared to the strengths of other warriors at Wudao fourth layer.

In the Tianyu continent, for all the nine layers of the Wudao, with each layer rise in the cultivation of a warrior, the strength would directly double, so it was

very difficult for the warriors at a lower layer to challenge someone at a higher layer.

However at this point, to the current Long Yu, this didn't seem like a major problem.

Only after a burning time of half stick of an incense, Long Yu felt that his limbs began to become sore, although after activating the 'Nine hidden dragons mark', he got a formidable surplus strength of 10,000 Jin, but its side effects were not small.

"So, the final analysis is that my body is not strong enough and it will be difficult for me at the Wudao fourth layer to accommodate the strength of 18,000 Jin which is far more than the strength granted by the Wudao fifth layer. I guess long time activation can even cause damage to the body....."

Long Yu immediately deactivated the 'Nine hidden dragons mark' and sat down on the grass bed to rest.

Right now, his limbs were sore as the side effect of activating the 'Nine hidden dragons mark', but he should be able to recover after a night's rest.

.....

Next morning, Long Yu went out to gather information.

With his rich experience at information gathering, in a while, he learnt about the situation from several outer disciples.

The issuance of clothing and identity token for the outer disciples was managed by the director of outer disciples and this director was chosen from among them and also was replaced every month.

This month's director outer disciple was named Feng Yang!

"Feng Yang is actually a member of Yu Guan City's Feng Clan. So it seems like he is the one who didn't send my identity token."

A sharp piercing gaze appeared in the eyes of Long Yu when he arrived in front of residence arranged for Tan Yue.

This residence had graceful pavilions, garden rockery, and all its aspects, regardless of where one looked, were far superior compared with the residence arranged for him.

At that time, the sound of footsteps transmitted from the front. Long Yu looked up and saw Tan Yue, clad in beautiful red skirt, proud bulging chest, walking elegantly like a princess toward her own residence.

And the square faced upright Han Jian was walking right behind her.

Han Jian glanced at Long Yu and loudly said to Tan Yue: "Sister Tan Yue, our luck seems to be very good today. Just came back from the Martial Court and encountered an 'old friend'!"

Long Yu's identity token was not provided, but Tan Yue naturally got hers, and

it seemed that just now, Han Jian led Tan Yue to the Zhentian Sect's Martial Court and she seemed to have learned a martial art technique as well!

Tan Yue suddenly stopped then contemptuously looked at Long Yu and said: "I have inquired, this waste is called Long Yu, resides temporarily in Yu Guan City's Feng Clan, and since childhood, he has been unable to practice. I never thought that Zhentian Sect would actually accept such a waste as a disciple. "

The loud conversation of Han Jian and Tan Yue suddenly attracted the attention of a lot of outer disciples present in the surroundings.

Originally, Tan Yue, because of her beautiful appearance and proud temperament, just after arriving yesterday, had attracted the attention of a lot of people, and now, when they saw that she was aiming at an ordinary looking new disciple, they all stopped their matters at hand, and gathered around to watch the show, meanwhile also pointing towards Long Yu and talking among themselves.

"Who is this guy, Yu Guan city's waste, how did he enter the Zhentian Sect?"

"Who doesn't know about this guy, he has dared to offend junior sister apprentice Tan Yue, this waste will not have a good end so just wait and enjoy the show."

"Want to guess how Sister Tan Yue would punish him?"

"How else do you think? Certainly, by destroying his Dantian, so that he really becomes a waste!"

A series of loud laughter spread all around, while everyone was watching Long Yu like watching a joke!

No one knew that at present, Long Yu was also looking at Tan Yue and Han Jian like they were a joke to him!

Once he stepped into the Wudao fourth layer, his Azure Dragon mark transformed into ‘Nine hidden dragons mark’, which tremendously enhanced his strength. Forget about Tan Yue, who was not even worth mentioning in front of current Long Yu, even Han Jian, the warrior at Wudao fifth layer was not a match for him!

.....

Chapter-12 Tan Yue trampled

Seeing that several outer disciples came to surround them to see what was going on, a proud look appeared on the face of Tan Yue and she gave a satisfied smile.

She looked disdainfully at Long Yu and arrogantly said: “Waste, you should have known that offending this lady would lead you to a very bad end. Now, do you regret it?”

With a composed look on his face, Long Yu was standing firmly and aimed his sight at Tan Yue and said: “What do I need to regret? If I am a waste then why don’t you personally come and fight me and see how this waste takes you down.”

As he said these words, the crowd went in uproar, and a vicious look appeared on Tan Yue’s pretty face.

“What did you say?”

As she was caught off-guard by the sudden provocation of Long Yu, a dumbfounded look instantly appeared on her face, but then she stepped towards him and seemed to have taken his bait.

Han Jian was standing behind her, but he didn’t come into action, because it was apparent that considering the strength of Tan Yue, defeating Long Yu would not be a problem.

He was watching this scene, and suddenly, with a teasing look on his face, he loudly said to Tan Yue: “Sister Tan Yue, just now, Brother Tan Jian has sent you a battle weapon right, why don’t you test its might and see whether it’s to your liking or not?”

Tan Yue frowned and replied in a loud voice: “Who needs a battle weapon to deal with a waste!”

The people surrounding them exclaimed in surprise when they heard this.

Battle weapon, she actually had a battle weapon!

For martial cultivators, if cultivation was the foundation of their inner states, then martial arts techniques and battle weapons were the important factors that helped in enhancing their battle efficiency and were considered two indispensable attributes.

As long as someone stepped into the world of Wudao and condensed Xuan qi inside his body then he would be able to cultivate and practice martial arts techniques as well. But, more sophisticated martial arts techniques required the use of battle weapons because it helped in displaying the true might of the techniques through the use of battle weapons.

Battle weapons were forged by the forging division, and its major benefit was that it allowed the Xuan qi present in the body of a martial artist to display a stronger strength than their original strength granted by their cultivation level. Battle weapons could be weapons, armors, and could also be some special fighting equipments and similarly, the higher the grade of these battle weapons was, the more it could enhance the strength.

In the Zhentian Sect, only after getting promoted and becoming an inner disciple, one would be able to obtain a battle weapon as the reward, in addition to that, very few people possessed battle weapons, so no one expected that an outer disciple like Tan Yue would actually have one.

However, even at the mention of battle weapons, Long Yu still had a calm and dignified appearance and didn't look the slightest bothered, of course, he already knew about battle weapons.

Earlier, Feng Yao came back home from the Hanbing Sect to take Feng Longsong's saber, which was actually a battle weapon. In the entire Feng Clan, less than ten people possessed battle weapons and it obviously showed their scarcity.

"But, after all, a battle weapon is still a foreign object controlled by a martial artist, and in the end, the display of strength depends on the martial artist's own strength and skill. The bottom line is that this Tan Yue cannot beat me even if she has a battle weapon."

Long Yu thought to himself then looked at Tan Yue who was calmly stepping towards him.

Long Yu's observant eyes noticed that Tan Yue's footsteps were profound and contained some sort of law, and it was evident that she was secretly using some kind of footwork martial skill.

Like Long Yu, Tan Yue had also joined Zhentian Sect one day ago, so it was impossible for her to comprehend a Zhentian Sect's martial skill, then this footwork martial skill definitely belonged to Yu Guan City's Tan Clan.

“From what I heard from the members of the Feng Clan, Tan Clan has inherited three major martial skills, one of which is a footwork martial skill, Mizong Step, and when used by a member of Tan Clan, their speed becomes extremely fast!”

Long Yu was completely wary, although both of them were at the Wudao fourth layer, but she had actually practiced a martial skill of Tan Clan, so her combat strength couldn't be underestimated!

“Hmph.”

Seeing the careful look on Long Yu's face, Tan Yue chuckled loudly with a look of disdain in her eyes. Her footsteps were light, and while using the Mizong Step, her slender red figure arrived in front of Long Yu in a flash.

“Suikong palm!” (Mystique-Sky breaking palm)

Tan Yue shouted loudly then shot her swift and fierce palm towards the shoulder of Long Yu!

The might of Suikong palm, one of three major inherited martial skills of the Tan Clan, was simply peerless.

When she shot her palm, it actually contained the strength of 10,000 Jin, which was far more than the strength of 8000 Jin granted by the Wudao fourth layer. It was obvious that the surplus rise in her strength was the effect of using a martial skill!

While facing the extremely quick palm of Tan Yue, Long Yu, although was well prepared, but he did not expect her speed to be so fast!

Fortunately, his combat experience was very rich and he immediately responded.

“Xuan qi interior strength, condense!”

Inside his body, the Xuan qi quickly condensed in his shoulder area, and then, he prepared himself to take on Tan Yue’s palm coming right at him.

Meanwhile, he quietly released the Zhentian canyon mysterious mood, and just when her palm was about to come in contact with his shoulder, Long Yu took advantage of this opportunity and immediately enveloped her in the mysterious mood.

Bang!

Long Yu’s shoulder was hit by her palm, but since he was well prepared for this attack and had already condensed the Xuan qi and turned it into his inner defensive strength, he only got minor injuries, unlike before when his fist bone was shattered by Wu Qing.

When her strike did not work, she immediately decided to withdraw, and using the martial skill, Mizong Step, she lightly and swiftly retreated, as she certainly would not be reckless in front of Long Yu.

But, when she again tried to cast out the Mizong Step, she discovered that her body was enveloped in some kind of force, a pressure descending from the heaven, just like she had felt in the Zhentian canyon and it made her speed to slightly decrease.

This was the rare opportunity Long Yu was aiming for!

He shouted and suddenly threw out a punch towards her which went scratching her cheek, containing the strength of 8000 Jin and this punch was so fast that it carried a burst of wind along with it and drew a rough trail of blood on her delicate cheek.

Deng deng deng! (Mystique-sound of footsteps when she retreated)

Tan Yue's figure anxiously drew back, then stopped, stood still, then raised her head and looked viciously at Long Yu: "You actually dared to hurt me!"

"You are the one who attacked first with your ruthless palm skill. Are you implying that I shouldn't defend myself?"

Long Yu indifferently said: "Moreover, you said that I am a waste, but just now, you are one who withdrew instead. Why don't you admit that you are worse than a waste?"

As these words came out of Long Yu's mouth, everyone present on the scene could not help but suddenly held their breaths.

Just now, the battle between Long Yu and Tan Yue was as quick as the lightning, and the outer disciples couldn't respond in time, in fact, they couldn't even track the movements of these two, and only saw the trace of blood on Tan Yue's face when she retreated.

It was obvious to everyone that in this round of the battle, Tan Yue actually suffered a loss!

After calling Long Yu a waste and openly insulting him in front of the crowd, Tan Yue's had been forced into a very embarrassing position!

A cold look appeared on her face and one could sense that her killing intent was spreading a chill in the air while she was coldly staring at Long Yu, who looked calm and composed at the moment: "This time, your luck was good, but this lady will not give you another chance."

As her voice fell, a seven-inches-long dagger appeared in her hand. The silver dagger was flashing brightly in her hand reflecting her cold sinister facial expression.

She finally took out her battle weapon!

"I think you said that you don't need a battle weapon to deal with a waste."

Long Yu taunted her.

"Don't tell me you are scared now?"

Tan Yue snorted and while clasping seven-inch-long silver dagger in her hand, she proudly said: "If you have a battle weapon then you are free to use it, but you are just a waste, so how can you possibly have a battle weapon. You can just dream of having one!"

She had to rely on her elder brother, Tan Jian, to obtain a battle weapon and she was very proud of this!

“Today, you have dared to hurt me, so I will break your Dantian into pieces and completely destroy it, so that you know the fate of those who disrespect this lady!”

Tan Yue’s footsteps continued to fluctuate and her red figure swiftly moved around Long Yu. Her speed was so fast that it seemed like her shadow-like figure was flickering at moments, and sometimes, it would completely disappear.

“Not practicing a martial skill is truly disadvantageous.....”

Long Yu was thinking, and simultaneously, his sharp eagle-like eyes were fully focused on tracking the movements of Tan Yue, closely observing and anticipating her next move, ready to react at any time.

“Die!”

Silver light flashed, and a dagger came in his sight that had already arrived in front of him and was only at a hand’s distance away!

“Mysterious mood suppression!”

Long Yu immediately released the mysterious mood, which instantly stagnated the speed of the dagger then he threw a sideways punch that severely bombed at the back edge of the dagger.

Only due to his extremely rich combat experience, in an instant, he was able to make such a perfect hit with his punch!

With the strength of 8000 Jin present in his punch, it immediately deflected the dagger to the other direction, but this dagger was a battle weapon and the Ru qi present in it injured his fist once again and scraped off a layer of the skin.

Long Yu did not care, and taking advantage of Tan Yue's deflected dagger by his punch that had also caused her to lose her balance, he quickly shot his punch.

Bang!

After receiving a punch, Tan Yue heavily fell on the ground, and Long Yu heavily stepped on her wrist holding the silver dagger.

"A waste defeated you."

After stepping on her wrist, a killing intent flashed in his eyes, but he quickly restrained it, because now was not the time to kill Tan Yue!

When Long Yu stepped on her wrist, she suddenly got furious, and it seemed like her eyes were spraying fire at him, with anger and hatred apparent in them.

However, when this scene uncovered in front of the eyes of the crowd of outer disciples, it made them to open their mouths in bewilderment, they were totally stunned and just couldn't believe their eyes!

Tan Yue, even with her battle weapon and using the formidable martial skills of the Tan Clan, was actually defeated by the person whom she had called a “waste”!

.....

Chapter-13 Defeats Han Jian

Everyone was stunned when Long Yu stepped on the wrist of Tan Yue. Nearby standing Han Jian's complexion also changed immediately.

"Waste, let her go right this instant!"

Han Jian shouted loudly, and his figure swiftly dashed forward towards Long Yu, and with a long gallop, in no time, he reached near Long Yu.

Han Jian had still not digested the fact that Tan Yue was defeated by Long Yu, but he knew that it could be an exceedingly good opportunity for him.

By defeating Long Yu, he would be able to win Tan Yue's heart and would also get an oppurtuinty to become good friends with a talented inner disciple like Tan Jian.

At that time, the personal appearance of Han Jian looked like a double-edged sword!

"If you want me to release her then why don't you make me do that?"

Long Yu saw Han Jian speeding away towards him. A flash of coldness appeared in his eyes. Both of his hands were behind his back, and his one foot was on the wrist of Tan Yue.

Han Jian wanted him to release her but he didn't and continued to keep his

foot on her wrist.....

If Long Yu didn't beat Han Jian, and released her as well, then he might have to fight their combo and he didn't want such type of situation to arise.

“Get lost.”

Long Yu suddenly lifted his foot, and gave a severe kick on the side of Tan Yue, and prepared himself to face the approaching Han Jian.

Tan Yue, clad in red dress, rolled on the ground several times, and immediately, her body was covered with mud, and some of it also went into her mouth and she accidentally swallowed a lot of dust.

At this time, her beautiful long hair was scattered on her shoulder and face. She seemed incomparably embarrassed and distressed, and from the gaps of the locks of hair on her face, one could see her malevolent eyes peeking at Long Yu.

“Brother Han Jian, kill him!”

Tan Yue had never received such an insult in her whole life. When Long Yu had stepped on her wrist, right then, she decided in her heart to kill him.

Today this waste must die at any cost!

Although the rules of the Zhentian Sect did not allow anyone to kill, but if someone accidentally died during a fight, then the Sect would not be too harsh with them and wouldn't blame them too much.

Tan Yue believed that she had a strong backing of her brother, Tan Jian, and even if they killed Long Yu now, with her brother's support, this matter would be suppressed easily.

When Han Jian heard her voice, a cold feeling suddenly emerged in his heart. He immediately sped towards Long Yu with a long double-edged sword in his hand.

The sword in his hand was not a battle weapon, but was some kind of common weapon used in martial arts, so it didn't give the increased battle strength to Han Jian, like the dagger did for Tan Yue.

But he had entered into the Zhentian Sect a long time ago, and since then, he had been practicing the sword martial skills of the Zhentian Sect, moreover, he was also at the Wudao fifth layer, and his strength was certainly stronger than Tan Yue's.

After kicking Tan Yue to one side, Long Yu focused his full attention to deal with Han Jian. At that time, when Han Jian raided on him with a long double-edged sword in his hand, in a blink of an eye, Long Yu once again unleashed the mysterious mood, which completely shrouded the body of Han Jian.

“What force is this?”

Han Jian initially thought that he would finish Long Yu with a single blow of his long double-edged sword, but it was all in vain. Enveloped in Long Yu's mysterious mood, he instantaneously felt a heavy pressure dropping on him from the heaven. It affected his speed greatly and his complexion slightly changed.

Each time Long Yu unleashed the mysterious mood against his opponent, it only affected that person and no one else, so until now, Han Jian had no idea that Long Yu had such a trick up his sleeves.

Han Jian was really not prepared for this heavy pressure generated by the mysterious mood and as a result of it, his vanguard speed suddenly slowed down.

“It doesn’t matter if you have this strange strength, my sword will surely snatch your life!”

Han Jian’s sword went against the mysterious mood’s heavy pressure, and with a ferocious look in his eyes, the sword danced in his hand, producing swift and fierce gusts of wind that violently raided towards Long Yu!

“So this is the twisting storm sword attack! A top grade sword martial skill which grants incredible might and speed to the practitioner!”

“I didn’t expect that Han Jian has already grasped the twisting storm sword martial skill to the Da Cheng realm. The twisting storm that came out from his sword is so formidable!”

“That waste boy really has a bad luck. By bullying Sister Tan Yue, he has enraged Han Jian.”

All of the people were extremely surprised to see Han Jian using a high level sword martial skill and that too comprehended to the Da Cheng realm, which was a difficult feat to achieve, especially for the outer disciples.

At that time when people thought that Long Yu would be easily defeated by Han Jian, Long Yu was actually calm and collected while looking at the twisting storm coming towards him at a great speed.

Generally speaking, only a martial artist at the Wudao seventh layer could display such type of high level of swordsmanship, but by using certain marital skills, one could achieve the same effect like Han Jian did just now when he attacked his enemy, Long Yu, by congealing a twisting storm and sending towards him at a tremendous speed.

Long Yu thought that if he would go forward to face the twisting storm head-on then he might lose, so it was better to win this battle by using brute force. He made a quick decision and instantly activated the ‘Nine hidden Dragons mark’.

“Nine hidden Dragons mark!”

Using just his thoughts, he instantly activated the ‘Nine hidden Dragons marks’. Other people could not see the trace of black lines appearing under his black clothes, and the rays of black light released from these lines and instantly condensed the great strength of 10,000 Jin in his limbs.

Along with the sudden drastic increase in his strength, his speed also improved all of a sudden.

“Xuan qi interior strength, defense!”

Long Yu thought that he must fight a battle of brute strength to quickly end it, and after planning to take Han Jian’s attack head-on using his own toughness

and defensive strength, he condensed the Xuan qi in his whole body, and shot a punch towards the twisting storm that had already approached him by now.

Boom!

As the twisting storm dashed against Long Yu's fist, a huge collision took place, and with a loud sound, the mighty twisting storm was scattered towards the four directions.

However, the twisting storm also blasted against the body of Long Yu, and tore out countless wounds on his whole body, but he did not care, and leapt forward and swiftly pounded a heavy kick towards Han Jian.

Shrouded in Long Yu's mysterious mood, Han Jian's speed had already slowed down, and in a confused state, he raised his arm and hastily condensed the Xuan qi in it to block Long Yu's kick.

Kacha!

Long Yu's kick pounded heavily on Han Jian's arm with the strength of 18 fierce horses and broke his arm in one fell swoop!

Though, while facing the strong twisting storm, Long Yu sustained several injuries, but, he unexpectedly succeeded in defeating Han Jian, even faster than Tan Yue, and in just a single move, he broke his arm!

Peng!

Han Jian heavily fell on the ground, and with a “Clang” sound, his sword also fell on the ground. The arm bone fracture put him in severe pain, which was clearly visible in the form of blue veins revealed on his face. There was a look of disbelief mixed with pain in his eyes.

He never expected that Long Yu actually possessed such a tyrannical strength. He had condensed the Xuan qi in his arms to defend against Long Yu’s kick, but it was all in vain. With just one kick, Long Yu powdered the bones in his arm.

Obviously, Long Yu’s kick had the strength of 18000 Jin, and Han Jian was surprised to think that how this kid, who was only at the Wudao fourth layer, could have such strength?

Was that a super kick type martial skill?

The pain on the arm was rapidly transmitting throughout his body making him to completely lose his fighting spirit. Han Jian had never received such a heavy injury in his entire life.

Although, Long Yu’s body was covered in blood with more than a dozen of wounds on his body, but there was an indifferent look on his face, and it seemed that he was not even feeling the pain.

After kicking Han Jian, Long Yu had retreated several steps to plan another attack, but, he quickly discovered that his kick had actually broken the arm of Han Jian, and he was lying on the ground, yelling with pain. In just one kick, he had completely lost his fighting spirit, which clearly showed that he was a weak-willed guy.

“Die!”

Right at the moment, Long Yu heard a loud shout, which was filled with killing intent and ruthlessness like that of a viper!

Tan Yue!

Earlier, Tan Yue was defeated by Long Yu, and in that fight, he had not received any serious injuries, but now, his body was covered in blood with numerous wounds caused by the formidable twisting storm of that Han Jian’s sword attack, and considering the weakened state of Long Yu, she actually planned a sneak attack!

Clad in a red dress and a silver dagger in her hand, Tan Yue instantly came right behind Long Yu!

“You are courting death.”

A quick instinct flashed in the mind of Long Yu, as the activation of the ‘Nine hidden Dragons mark’ had yet not retreated. It had increased the speed of Long Yu. Instantly, he moved his footsteps using the tyrannical strength with a speed faster than before, and evaded the silver dagger’s sneak attack.

Then immediately, he turned and gave a heavy kick right on Tan Yue’s thigh!

“What!”

Tan Yue fell down on the ground and began to scream in pain. The kick had the

strength of 18000 Jin and seriously injured her by instantly breaking her thigh bone. Now, she was not even able to crawl on the ground and was screaming incessantly.

“Deactivate!”

After kicking Tan Yue, he immediately deactivated the ‘Nine hidden Dragons mark’. His body meridians had started to ache due to the crazy circulation of energy, and if he had continued like this, then it would have hurt his body.

Long Yu stood firmly, and after his brief battle with those two, he had become an extraordinary figure in everybody’s eyes.

He single-handedly trampled Tan Yue along with her battle weapon and broke her thigh bone, and defeated Han Jian, who was at Wudao fifth layer, and broke his arm. Although, he received injuries while facing the twisting storm, but it just made him even more terrible in everybody’s eyes because he just stood there firmly, as if, he was not feeling the pain at all, which was simply insane!

This guy was crazy.

In the field, at this moment, many of the outdoor disciples of the Zhentian Sect thought that if they were in place of Long Yu then they would never have dared to face Han Jian’s twisting storm attack head-on like Long Yu did just now.

Long Yu quietly felt his body, and noticed that it had a total of more than twenty large and small wounds, mostly injured by the blast of Han Jian’s double-edged sword, in addition to yesterday’s shattered fist bone. No one knew how much pain he was enduring right now.

However, these injuries were painful, but he did not consider them as heavy injuries, because he had received worse injuries in his previous life compared to these.

“Take me to Feng Yang, the governor of outer disciples.”

Long Yu adjusted his breathing then casually selected a nearby black-faced short disciple.

“Go, go, go to Feng Yang?”

There was a scared look in the eyes of that Shorty. He was shocked and completely puzzled but he clearly remembered the fight of Long Yu with those two and he had also seen the incredible display of strength by Long Yu and somewhat guessed what Long Yu intended to do.

Was this boy's identity token detained?

It was not the first time that a thing like this had happened.

Black-faced Shorty was at the Wudao fifth layer, but his strength was less than Han Jian, and when he heard Long Yu, he quickly turned around to lead the way.

When Long Yu left the place, the onlookers finally dispersed, but there was one disciple who had a shrewd look in his eyes. He hurried towards the disciple's practicing area.

Tan Yue was seriously injured, and it was necessary to immediately inform Tan Jian about this matter!

At the same time, many people followed Long Yu. They were just shocked by his performance and couldn't help but wanted to see, in the end, why was Long Yu looking for Feng Yang?

One must know that Feng Yang was the governor of the outer disciples. Although, he was also a martial artist at the Wudao fifth layer, but he had practiced strong martial skills, and hence was stronger than Han Jian!

.....

Chapter-14 Meets Feng Yang

Long Yu certainly knew the strength of Feng Yang.

From an ordinary person's point of view, he had suffered heavy injuries, and under such physical conditions, it was impossible to defeat Feng Yang, after all, he was considered stronger than Han Jian. Moreover, when Long Yu was still in the Feng Clan, he heard that Feng Yang was at the Wudao sixth layer at the time of joining the Zhentian Sect and became an outer disciple.

But right now, Long Yu had a plan in his mind, so he, with some disciples following him, set out to see Feng Yang.

“Junior, you are called Long Yu right?”

That black faced Shorty leading the way eagerly accosted: “Listen, Tan Yue said that you are from the Yu Guan city, and you left Feng Clan to come here to join the Zhentian Sect. And what a coincidence that Feng Yang, a member of Feng Clan, has been made the outer disciple's governor this month. Do you have some enmity with him? Because if there's no enmity between you two then why would he detain your identity token.”

Long Yu heard this but did not answer anything. He didn't have a habit to disclose information to a stranger.

The black faced Shorty did not mind, just kept on smiling, and said: “Junior Brother, listen to your senior's advice. Feng Yang is a strong man, and soon, he will become a high ranked disciple, but at present, you are just getting started, so do not butt heads with him, otherwise the one who will suffer a great loss will definitely be you.”

“Now, even if you find him, he won’t give you the identity token, instead, he will severely humiliate you. Moreover, you just bullied Tan Yue, and her elder brother, Tan Jian, will certainly not let you off, and being one of the top three inner disciples, his influence is enormous. You are no match for Tan Jian, so listen to me and do as I say, you must hurry up and leave Zhentian Sect as soon as possible, so as to avoid getting humiliated or face something even worse!”

He tried every means to persuade Long Yu but he didn’t say anything. The black faced Shorty noticed this and stopped nagging Long Yu.

Both of them walked for sometime along the mountain road and soon arrived at a graceful courtyard with an elegant environment. One could easily see a plaque hung on the courtyard’s entrance with four words printed on it “Outer Disciples Governor’s Courtyard”.

Many people also followed these two into the courtyard just to watch the scene that was soon going to unfold.

Long Yu was not too much concerned about them, because he had an idea and he was to do something that required some people as spectators, and the more the merrier.

“Brother Long Yu, this is the courtyard where the outer disciple’s governor lives. You can meet him and ask him to hand over your identity token, but this is none of my business.”

The black faced Shorty said then moved to one side, and there was a teasing look on his face with a tinct of ridicule. He was apparently waiting to see how Long Yu would become a joke in front of everyone.

Long Yu glanced at the black faced Shorty, but did not say anything to him. He immediately walked towards the room where the outer disciple's governor lived.

"Feng Yang, come out!"

Long Yu bellowed in an overbearing tone.

The crowd behind him was in a commotion and a scared look appeared on their faces. The people, gathered there, were shocked at the recklessness of Long Yu. Could it be that he was actually prepared to die?

"Who dares to be so insolent?"

A more overbearing voice came from inside the courtyard. A tall and burly young man came out from the room. With just one look at his appearance, one could see that he looked quite similar to Feng Luo, the young master of the Feng Clan of Yu Guan City.

This tall person was Feng Yang. He had a sturdy body, and huge face, and at the moment, there was an angry look on his face. He was clad in a blue outer disciple's clothes and jade tablets were hanging around his waist. These tablets were supposedly the identity tokens of the outer disciples of the Zhentian Sect.

When Feng Yang came out and saw Long Yu, his pupils shrank and he said in a loud voice: "So it's you! Just a waste but suddenly got courageous enough to act wildly in front of the courtyard of outer disciple's governor? I think you want to be humiliated or I should just teach you some manners right here!"

When Feng Yang entered the scene, the people standing on the rear in abundance thought that this was going to get very interesting and they might get a chance to enjoy the show, because they knew very well that Feng Yang was a hot tempered man and Long Yu had dared to call him out, which was a disgrace to him, and he would definitely not let off Long Yu so easily!

Long Yu stared at the grandiose statured Feng Yang and with a disdainful look on his face, he sneered and said: “Feng Yang, you have seized my identity token, because deep down in your heart, you are frightened right?”

Long Yu directly came to the point. His words immediately angered Feng Yang and he said in a loud voice: “Why would I be afraid of anything?”

“Then tell me, why you have detained my identity token?”

Long Yu went one step forward and sneered loudly.

“This.....”

As Feng Yang heard this, the beads of cold sweat suddenly emerged on his forehead. Just now, he replied in a hurry that he was not afraid of anything, but he forgot to deny the fact that he had taken the identity token of Long Yu, what a blunder!

One must know that the Zhentian Sect appointed Feng Yang as the governor of outer disciples, but detention of identity token was strictly banned, and if this matter was discovered by the Sect’s elders, then he would be severely punished and even less practice resources would be granted to him.

“I know you are afraid.”

Long Yu didn't grab this point and said with a contemptuous smile on his face: “After all, once I get my identity token, I will go to the Martial Court to pick up a martial arts skill and after practicing it, you will no longer be my match! Tell me, whether it is true or not?”

“What utter nonsense!”

Feng Yang responded with a fierce look in his eyes and said: “Who do you think you are, even if you have somehow managed to enter into the Zhentian Sect, but you are still a waste. How can you even claim to be this Feng Yang's opponent?”

“Then we have a deal, you give me my identity token so that I go to the Martial Court, and when I return from there, I will fight with you. Feng Yang, tell me, do you dare to accept my challenge?”

Long Yu's eyes glued to Feng Yang with a look of contempt on his face.

And, this despising look on Long Yu's face made Feng Yang even more furious. Long Yu, who was called a waste in the Feng Clan for several years, came to the Zhentian Sect and was actually being so arrogant in front of him, how audacious!

Feng Yang's eyes glanced swept towards the large crowd of disciples gathered outside his courtyard and thought, right now, if he didn't accept Long Yu's challenge then he would certainly lose face in front of so many disciples, because, everyone would think that he got scared of a waste.

Therefore, even if Feng Yan knew that Long Yu had done all this just to

blackmail him to get his identity token back, he still didn't have any other choice but to comply!

“Why wouldn't I dare? You are digging your own grave, here, take your identity token. When you come out from the Martial Court, then I will make you know that a waste like you is nothing more than a bug in my eyes!”

Feng Yang took out an outer disciple identity token from his waist and threw it directly towards Long Yu.

Long Yu caught the identity token with one hand, and the corners of his mouth curled up, and thought that his plan ultimately succeeded.

The black faced Shorty was left stunned watching this scene. Originally, he thought that he would definitely get a chance to enjoy a fight between Feng Yang and Long Yu, but he never expected that Long Yu would be able to get his identity token merely by playing with words!

Moreover, earlier, looking at the confident demeanor of Long Yu, Shorty was sure that Long Yu was going to fight Feng Yang, and he was also surprised, thinking that didn't Long Yu know that Feng Yang was much stronger than Han Jian?

Also, even after getting his identity token, Long Yu would indeed be able to enter the Martial Court, but even so, it was not necessary that his strength would increase in such a short time, after all, it was not easy to comprehend the martial skills of the Zhentian Sect.

Long Yu wanted to beat Feng Yang, and at present, it could only be said to be a

wishful thinking.

These thoughts appeared in the heart of the black faced Shorty and other onlookers. But, right in front of their eyes, Long Yu had trampled Tan Yue, and also defeated Han Jian, and now, he also aggressively challenged Feng Yang. After witnessing these things, these outer disciples had come to think that nothing was impossible for this Long Yu, and he could do just anything.

“Hold on, hold on, wait a minute!”

At that time, when Long Yu wanted to leave, a crisp voice of a girl, like the chirp of a canary, suddenly attracted the attention of everyone.

Wearing the blue outer disciple's clothes, a figure hurriedly came out from the crowd. Long Yu looked towards the figure and saw that it was actually a pretty young girl, clad in blue clothes covered in mud, and her cheeks were also covered in dust and from her appearance, one could say that she was quite distressed.

Who was this person?

This question flashed in almost everybody's mind.

“It's you, so, have you changed your mind and finally come to become my follower?”

Feng Yang looked at the girl, who had just appeared, and he could not help but squinted and immediately said in a contemptuous manner.

“Bah, who wants to be your follower!”

The pretty girl said “Bah” in a disgusted manner then suddenly shouted: “Since this fellow has made a bet with you, I will also make a bet, what do you say?”

Feng Yang heard her words and his facial expression immediately changed to a teasing one and said in a joking tone: “Don’t make me repeat the same old stuff again and again. I have already told you, there’s no other way for you.”

“So you really have no guts, huh?”

The pretty girl said in a despising tone: “The truth is you are afraid of losing to this fellow. The dignified governor of outer disciples actually turned out to be a coward, how laughable, simply ridiculous!”

When Feng Yang heard this, his complexion suddenly changed: “Utter rubbish! You think you can beat me in a bet? Go ahead and mention it, don’t even think that I am afraid of a little girl like you!”

“My bet is related to the bet you just made with this young fellow.”

The pretty girl laughed and carelessly pointed at Long Yu and said: “When this young fellow will return from the Martial Court to fight with you, if he loses to you, then I am willing to follow you, but if you lost, then you will not only hand over my identity token to me, but you will also have to give your Qing Hua Dan. Say, do you agree?”

“Hmph, you are actually good at planning, but this bet is very unfair!”

Feng Yang sneered because few days ago, the Sect had granted him a precious compounded drug called Qing Hua Dan. So how could he put such a precious drug on a bet over such a trifling matter?

“Oh, it seems that you are really afraid of this young fellow. Fine, forget it then.”

An obvious despising look appeared on the pretty girl’s face and she turned around to leave.

“Wait a minute.”

Feng Yang’s complexion suddenly changed when he glanced towards the crowd and saw many people pointing at him, and suddenly felt ashamed, and shouted in a cold voice: “I comply with the terms of this bet, but when the time comes, you absolutely cannot go back on your words!”

“Hee hee, you don’t go back on your words because I have full confidence in this young fellow!”

A bright smile appeared on her face when she turned towards Long Yu and smiled at him.

“Him? You have got the wrong guy to put your confidence on.”

Feng Yang shot a glance at Long Yu with a look of disdain in his eyes and said: “This kid is known as the waste of Feng Clan, and even after coming to the

Zhentian Sect, he is still a waste. You expect him to defeat me? How ridiculous!”

“Really? It seems that I should tell you that on the very next day of entering into the Zhentian Sect, he single-handedly defeated both Tan Yue and Han Jian. And now that he is going to enter the Martial court to comprehend martial art techniques, do you think you will be his opponent after he comes out!”

The pretty girl said while laughing playfully, but at that time, Feng Yang’s complexion suddenly changed.

Did he really defeat Tan Yue and Han Jian?

How was this possible? That Long Yu obviously was a waste, how could he possibly beat Tan Yue? Even if he could win against Tan Yue by luck, but, it was absolutely impossible for him to defeat an opponent like Han Jian!

There was a clouded look on his Feng Yang’s face, but at this time, Long Yu had already achieved his goal and would certainly not waste anymore time, so he turned around to leave.

Upon seeing his departing figure, the pretty girl hurriedly rushed after him.

“Young fellow, wait for me!”

Within two or three steps, that adorable girl overtook Long Yu and lifted her hand to pat on his shoulder.

Long Yu moved sideways to dodge her and gave an alerted look to her.

“Take it easy, don’t be so anxious. I’m with you, we are a team now and we must stand together on the battle line! You are called Long Yu right? My name is Liao Lele, I joined the Zhentian Sect three days earlier than you.”

The pretty girl said grinningly and it seemed that she wanted to become friends with Long Yu.

.....

Chapter-15 Cultivation core law

Long Yu listened to the words of that tender girl, Liao Lele, and was extremely surprised.

“Have you joined only three days earlier?”

Long Yu asked.

“Yes, but like you, that fatty Feng Yang has not only detained my identity token, but has also suppressed all of my options, so now, I can only rely on you to stand up once again...”

Liao Lele happily said with a somewhat distressed look on her face.

Long Yu gave a quick look at her dirty blue outer disciple's clothes and immediately understood that she must have encountered some embarrassing situation, so he asked: “Why does he want from you?”

“When I passed the assessment test and joined the Zhentian Sect, that fat pig had just become the governor of the outer door disciples for this month, and took a liking to me and wanted me to become his woman. But, how can I, Liao Lele, be blind enough to become that fat pig's woman right?”

Liao Lele said with a disgusted look on her face.

Long Yu listened to her words and thought that Feng Yang was not really fat,

rather he had a strong and robust build. He couldn't understand how Feng Yang became a fat pig in the eyes of Liao Lele.

“Come on, I am sure that you have a good potential, so first, I will take you to the Martial Court to have a look at the marital skills. Then you can enhance your skills, so don't you fail to live up to my expectations okay? If you manage to defeat that fat pig then Qing Hua Dan will be yours.”

Liao Lele's facial expression instantly changed and she grinningly said to Long Yu.

Long Yu wrinkled his eyebrows and said: “Qing Hua Dan, haven't you tricked him into betting it along with your identity token, why give it to me?”

“Good, your reply indicates that you are very confident of yourself, I feel relieved now.”

Liao Lele smiled and said: “If there is no Qing Hua Dan then what advantage do you have even if you win the fight?”

“Anyway I want to deal with him and since he is willing to present his Qing Hua Dan as a gift, why should I refuse?”

Long Yu smiled faintly and said.

Qing Hua Dan was an immortality drug and its grade was at the same level as the Yuyao Dan that had helped him in reaching the Wudao fourth layer. The role of an immortal drug like Qing Hua Dan was to quickly enhance the cultivation. If he really won a Qing Hua Dan, then by consuming it, he might be able to reach

the Wudao fifth layer!

His absorbing capacity of an immortality drug was at least three times the absorbing capacity of other martial cultivators, who could absorb at most thirty percent of the immortality drugs like Feng Lao, who was also considered a genius.

So, this implied that his cultivation growth was going to be quicker than others.

Liao Lele was leading the way, and along with Long Yu, they were advancing in the direction of the Martial Court of Zhentian Sect, and at that time, a crowd of onlookers gathered outside the Outer disciple governor's courtyard slowly dispersed in abundance.

But, there were a lot of people who did not go back to practice, but keeping some distance, they started to follow Liao Lele and Long Yu who were advancing towards the Martial Court. They were quite curious how things would turn out to be and were looking forward to enjoy a good show.

For them, practicing all day was very boring. But now they could have so much fun, looking forward to the fight between Feng Yang and Long Yu, once he would come out of the Martial Court.

But, at that time, Feng Yang stood inside the outer disciple governor's courtyard, looking at the departing figures of Liao Lele and Long Yu. There was a gloomy look on his square-shaped face. When their figures slowly started to disappear from his eyes, he frowned and soon went after them towards the Martial Court.

He wanted to wait at the entrance of the Martial Court and once Long Yu would come, without wasting any time, he would immediately start the fight.

“Waste Long Yu, even if you can beat a master like Han Jian, don’t you even think that I am also a weakling like him. I will wait for you to come out of the Marital Court! Then, no matter if it’s you or Liao Lele, both of you must submit before me.”

There was an ominous piercing gaze in his blinking eyes, and this was not because he was scared of the fact that Long Yu had defeated Han Jian.

Instead, Feng Yang was certain that Long Yu was going to die. Even if he failed to defeat Long Yu, he would still die, because he hurt Tan Yue, and her elder brother, Tan Jian, would not let him off so easily!

However at present, he naturally must personally deal with Long Yu, otherwise he would become a laughingstock in the eyes of everyone, inviting shame for him, the governor of outer disciples.

.....

The Martial Court, Zhentian Sect.

Strictly speaking, the strongest martial art skills of the Zhentian Sect were not present in the Martial Court of Zhentian Sect but in a mountain stream located right behind the Martial Court, carved out on both sides of the mountain walls of the mountain stream.

However, even the inner disciples did not have the qualifications to step into

that mountain stream, and since Long Yu was an outer disciple, so how could he have the qualifications to enter the mountain stream?

At this moment, what appeared in front of Long Yu were 10 exquisite tile-material garrets and each of them were ten feet tall, divided into three floors, and an outer disciple could only step into the first two floors.

“Good, the Martial Court has arrived, you quickly go in, look, that pig is right behind us, do not waste any time.”

Liao Lele turned behind to give several glances then waved towards Long Yu, urging him to hurry up and enter the Martial Court.

Long Yu looked at Liao Lele, nodded, as this pretty girl had not succeeded in obtaining her identity token, so she could naturally not enter the Martial Court together with him. Long Yu thought that if she stayed outside the Martial Court, then won't she be bullied once again by Feng Yang?

He soon found himself worrying about her.

When he walked towards the Martial Court, Liao Lele's pretty personal appearance flashed and rushed along another mountain road and directly disappeared!

This young girl was really a clever person and it seemed that there was no need for him to worry about her.

“Even if I lose to Feng Yang, this girl would certainly not entrust her body to Feng Yang, but would rather run away. In the worst case scenario, she will not be

able to practice in the Zhentian Sect but she can still go to other six large sects of the Tang State, so it's the same.....”

Long Yu thought then immediately pulled back the train of thoughts and finally entered the Martial Court!

“Show me your identity token. “

Just as he entered the Martial Court, an old, spiritual and energetic voice fell into his ears.

Long Yu took out his identity token, with “Long Yu” engraved on it. These identity tokens were made by the elders and engraving of names was also done by them and then these tokens were given to the outer disciple's governor to distribute them among the new outer disciples. These tokens were made in such a way that it was impossible for someone to copy them.

“Enter, since this is your first time, you must practice the Zhentian tactics present on the first floor, then only you can go up to the second floor. On the second floor, you will find various martial art fighting techniques.”

That old and vigorous voice continued to convey but Long Yu could not see the owner of the voice, but this voice was so deep that it seemed to be profound and unfathomable.

“However, young disciple, you need to practice with calm and concentrated mind, don't be belligerent, because if you received injuries while practicing then it might affect your future practice”.

There was a severity present in these words, but the original intention of this voice's owner was good. Long Yu felt grateful in his heart, and he held his fist in the other hand on his chest, turned towards the empty place from where the voice was coming, and said: "Thank you senior, this young disciple will advance now."

Facing the elder of the Zhentian Sect, Long Yu showed proper courtesy, and he didn't feel that there was anything improper about it.

After saying that, he went straight into the first floor of the Martial Court.

The Martial Court occupied a large land area and the first floor was altogether branched out into 108 rooms and walls of each of these rooms were engraved with parts of Zhentian tactics.

Zhentian tactics was a cultivation core law and was also the heritage of Zhentian Sect. A martial cultivator required a cultivation core law to build the foundation of his cultivation!

Unlike practicing the martial art techniques, practicing a cultivation core law did not help much in enhancing the fighting strength or battle efficiency of martial cultivators, but it greatly helped the cultivators in increasing the speed of absorbing the Lingqi, thus helping them in quickly increasing their cultivation level.

In addition to that, it could also enhance the circulation speed of Xuan qi through the meridians inside the body, which in turn would increase the regeneration speed of Xuan qi. In fact, by practicing a good cultivation core law, a cultivator could attain enough stamina by the large amounts of Xuan qi present inside his body and he wouldn't feel exhausted during a dragged on

fight.

Zhentian tactics was a cultivation core law of Zhentian Sect and all the disciples practiced it.

Long Yu was also looking forward to practice such a type of cultivation core law. He was aware of the fact that top clans of Yu Guan City like Tan Clan and Feng Clan didn't possess any cultivation core laws and that was the biggest reason why they had to send their children like Feng Yao, Tan Jian and others to join one of the seven large sects of Tang State.

Long Yu chose an idle room on the first floor of Martial Court and lifted the door lock to enter.

After entering, he glanced around in all directions, and saw that everywhere in the room, mysterious, hard to understand and profound scriptures and drawings were carved out on all the walls.

“So this is the Zhentian tactics of Zhentian Sect.”

Long Yu carefully observed the scriptures and drawings carved out on the walls and suddenly found out that these things seemed to already exist in his mind. This was like a déjà vu!

“This aura contained inherently in the Zhentian tactics is unexpectedly coinciding with the aura present in the Zhentian canyon mysterious mood!”

Long Yu soon discovered this fact and an astonished expression suddenly appeared on his face.

The Zhentian tactics was the one and only cultivation core law present in the Zhentian Sect and it was absolutely prohibited for the disciples to leak it to the outsiders to ensure that it didn't spread out. Then the Sect wouldn't possibly carve out the Zhentian tactics in the Zhentian canyon for the outsiders to see.

So, what exactly was carved out on both faces of the cliffs in the Zhentian canyon? Why was Long Yu's comprehension of the Zhentian mysterious mood coinciding with the Zhentian tactics?

"Well it doesn't matter now, that Feng Yang is still waiting outside, and I cannot disappoint him right."

Long Yu's eyes flashed like a sharp sword: "First I will comprehend the Zhentian tactics, and then I will go up to the second floor and choose two martial arts techniques, only then I am going to gain confidence to defeat Feng Yang!"

After planning his course of action, he sat cross-legged on the side of the room, and released the mysterious mood from his body, and it began to gradually integrate with the profound scriptures and mysterious drawings carved out on the walls.

In a while, the Xuan qi inside Long Yu's body began to slowly follow a specific circulation route, and as he began to operate the Zhentian tactics in his mind, all of a sudden, he unexpectedly succeeded in comprehending it in one go.

"It seems like that the mysterious mood just now helped me in comprehending the Zhentian tactics....."

Long Yu opened his eyes, with obvious doubts floating in his eyes. He really wanted to find out what this mysterious mood actually was. If all of the disciples of the Zhentian Sect practiced Zhentian tactics then weren't they able to comprehend the mysterious mood as well?

Currently he was still trying to figure out this puzzle when suddenly, the old and vigorous voice once again resounded in his ears!

"You have so quickly comprehended the Zhentian tactics. So you are that kid, who comprehended the Zhentian mysterious mood in the Zhentian Canyon during the assessment test, just as the old white talked about ha ha!"

The old voice said in a satisfied and happy tone: "Young man, very good, you must know that Zhentian mood is not so easy to comprehend, and you were able to comprehend it during the assessment exam, which is very commendable! Right now in the Zhentian Sect, besides the core disciples, none of the disciples have been able to comprehend even a trace of Zhentian mysterious mood."

When Long Yu listened to this voice, his heart was still full of doubts, so he couldn't bear anymore and asked that old voice: "Senior, just what kind of existence is this Zhentian mysterious mood?"

"Every Sect has a cultivation core law, like our Zhentian Sect has Zhentian tactics, and Hanbing Sect has Hanbing heart sutra and so on. All of these core laws contain the unique insights of their respective creators. These insights coincide with the comprehension of the world principles, and the mysterious mood you comprehended is just the tip of the iceberg of Zhentian core law."

The old voice said in a laughing manner: "When a martial cultivator practices

cultivation core law, and if he is very talented, then he may be able to begin to sense the mysterious mood, and as a result, he can use the world principles, increasing his might extraordinarily. Since you have already comprehended the Zhentian mysterious mood, you should be able to feel its extraordinary strength right?”

“Yes, Zhentian mysterious mood contains a very strong suppression force, and it gives the best results during the fights.”

Long Yu nodded and said.

“Exactly, the suppression, and the Zhentian tactics contain the world principles.”

The old voice said in a satisfied manner: “However, the mysterious mood is one of the most basic levels, and as you continue to comprehend deeper, and feel the charm and grace of the world principles, then your strength will become more formidable, but it is still too far away for you, now, you first familiarize yourself with the Zhentian tactics core law.”

“Yes, senior.”

Long Yu nodded and after the puzzle in his heart was finally solved, he felt relaxed.

Originally, the mysterious mood was just an initial stage of comprehension of cultivation core law, and next step was feeling the charm and grace. Moreover, in the Zhentian Sect, he was not the only disciple who had comprehended the mysterious mood, but there were many core disciples who had also

comprehended the mysterious mood, and it was apparent that Feng Yun was also one of them!

“It seems like my practice has just started and I must work a lot harder and diligently. Now that I have comprehended the Zhentian tactics, I should be able to go to the second floor to choose the martial art techniques.”

Long Yu eyes revealed a color of anticipation.

.....

Chapter-16 Demon tyrant form

When Long Yu finished the Zhentian tactics, he entered the second floor of the Martial Court. At that time, a lot of people had started gathering in the open space outside the Martial Court

In a while, a burly man clad in black clothes arrived at the gate of the Martial Court, and soon a group of people gathered around him.

This burly man had an angular face as sharp as a knife, a pair of exceptionally sharp eyes, making him so fearful that people wanted to avoid looking at him. Obviously, he was a man of extraordinary strength.

He came to the Martial Court leading a group people, and glanced around, then fiercely said: "Go and inquire, where is that brat right now."

"Elder brother, look, that Feng Yang of Feng Clan is still waiting for Long Yu to come out. It seems like that waste is definitely inside the Martial Court."

The burly man had a scary look on his face, while at the same time, a girl clad in a red dress walked slowly towards that burly man, and her face revealed a sinister and evil look. It was none other than Tan Yue, who earlier wanted to teach Long Yue a Lesson.

Obviously, this burly man was Tan Jian, one of the top inner disciples of the Zhentian Sect

Tan Jian turned his head to look at Tan Yue, a doting look appeared on his face

and said: “Relax Yue, that waste dared to injure you, I will never forgive him so easily, but nowadays, your elder brother is very busy preparing to obtain the first seat of inner disciple, so, I do not have the time to wait for him here.”

“That’s natural, elder brother’s time is very precious, as for that waste, the elder brother can casually send a capable person to annihilate him completely.”

Although she looked very beautiful clad in a beautiful red dress, but her eyes were filled with hatred when she said these words.

That waste Long Yu, unexpectedly not only scratched her cheek before a large crowd of people, but also kicked her to roll on the ground, and finally broke her leg with a kick, letting her now to unable to walk. Now she wanted him to pay the price for this disgrace with his life!

At this time Tan Yue, was lifted by two personal servants of Tan Jian on a wooden stretcher. Tan Jian wanted to let Tan Yue heal from her wounds, relieved from all these fights and hatred, but Tan Yue was determined to look at the miserable state of Long Yu with her own eyes at any cost, which made the two attendants to lift her to follow all the way to the Martial Court.

“Fang Kang, come out.”

As Tan Jian shouted loudly, a thin man wearing a blue dress immediately came out from the group of people behind him. It was one of his personal attendants, Fang Kang.

“Brother Tan, feel free to order me anything!”

Fang Kang had a pitch-black face and his eyes were shining with determination. His muscles were sticking out of his body, and he seemed to possess extraordinary strength.

“You have recently entered the Wudao sixth layer, so dealing with that Wudao fourth layer waste should not be a problem for you , right?”

Tan Jian said in an indifferent manner.

“Brother Tan, rest assured, this Fang Kang will beat that guy!”

Fang Kang said with a confident look on his face. He was at the Wudao sixth layer and to deal with a strong Wudao fourth layer was simply a piece of cake, in fact, it was overkill for him!

“However, you don’t need to worry about it right now, first and let Feng Yang to deal with that waste”

Tan Jian swept his eyes towards Feng Yang, who was sitting on one side in repose with his eyes closed, and said to Fang Kang.

“Yes.”

Fang Kang nodded and said.

Tan Jian arbitrarily said some words to Tan Yue and then turned around to leave, apparently he didn’t have much time to spare, because he wanted to obtain the first seat of inner disciples, which was not a simple thing, and if

someone wanted to achieve this feat, then he would have to put two times more effort than the others.

Outside the Martial Court, Feng Yang was quietly waiting for Long Yu in order to prove his strength, while at same time, Tan Yue, Fang Kang and other group of people was also waiting for Long Yu to come out.

At this time, outside the Martial Court, a large number of famous outer disciples of the Zhentian Sect had also gathered to watch the show which was going to unfold soon in front of their eyes!

.....

The Martial Court, second floor.

Long Yu finally stepped up, and focused his attention to the selection of martial art techniques.

He had just comprehended the Zhentian Tactics and once succeeded in the comprehension, he could voluntarily absorb the Lingqi present in the environment, and the absorption speed would also speed up considerably. Therefore he did not need to put too much thought in Lingqi absorption and he must put all his attention on comprehending the mysterious mood.

But now, Long Yu could quickly enhance his combat efficiency by learning the martial skills of the Zhentian Sect.

On the second floor of Martial Court, many outer disciples were present, choosing martial skills for practicing. They noticed Long Yu coming inside but

nobody cared about him.

“Body refining type, agility type, defense type, fencing, spear play type.....”

Long Yu started to roam about on the second floor, taking a look at the martial skills, and quickly understood the classification of these martial skills. And he was well aware of the fact that on the second floor of Martial Court, the outer disciples could choose the martial skills for practicing at will.

Soon, he stopped in front of a bookshelf containing body refining type martial skills, but in Zhentian Sect, almost no one wanted to practice body refining type martial skills and reasons for that were quite understandable.

First, body refining type martial skills were hard to practice and very intensive as well, and even if successfully practiced, they would not enhance the attacking ability of the practitioners. Hence most people did not choose this technique and those who chose would always be unhappy.

Second, it was better to practice defense type martial skills because they were easier to practice than refining body type martial skills and the defensive effects granted by them were much better.

Because of this, other than Long Yu, no one was standing near the bookshelf of body refining type martial skills. But as far as Long Yu was concerned, right now, he was in an urgent need to practice a body refining type martial skill.

Because, if he would practice a body refining type martial skill then his own body and spirit would be strengthened, increasing his defense and stamina as well, and then it would be easier for him to withstand the burden and strenuous

pressure on his body, brought by the activation of the 'Nine Dragons hidden Mark'.

At present, the 'Nine hidden Dragons Mark' granted him the strength enhancement of 10,000 Jin, and the effect was better than most high-grade attack type martial skills, not to mention, looking at the trend of continuously increasing strength enhancements from the 'Nine hidden Dragons Mark', there was a possibility of further transformation in the mark and then the strength enhancement might be even more than 10,000 Jin.

Since there were not many people who chose to practice body refining type martial skills, so there weren't many body refining martial skills on the bookshelf. Long Yu swept through the few martial skills kept on the bookshelf and noticed that most of them were high-grade body refining martial skills.

Like immortality drugs, martial skills were also divided into low-grade skills, high-grade skills and top-grade skills. On the second floor of Zhentian Sect's Martial Court, most of the martial skills present were high-grade skills and a few top-grade skills.

"Demon tyrant form."

Long Yu looked at the top grade body refining martial skills, and even if there were top grade skills available, no one would practice them. They would simply lay aside on the second floor of Martial Court.

The most popular ones were fencing and agility type marital skills, and only after practicing top grade martial skills, one could be promoted to become an inner disciple in the Zhentian Sect.

“Demon tyrant form uses the Xuan qi to refine the body, enhances the physique and stature, and after practicing to Xiao Cheng realm, one can double their own anti-strike force, and once practiced to Dacheng realm, it will double again! At the same time, it can also enhance one’s own certain basic strength, enabling the other martial skills to display a stronger might.”

Long Yu looked at the introduction of “Demon tyrant form”, and thought in his heart, then finally decided to choose this body refining type martial skill.

Although, practicing time of the Demon tyrants body technique was exceptionally painful. During its practice Xuan qi began to circulate in the entire body of the cultivator hardening his body and reorganization of the body on a very minute level, causing an unbearable pain, and Long Yu was confident that he would certainly be able to withstand the pain.

After picking up the “Demon tyrant form” martial skill’s book, Long Yu turned around and came to the other side of the floor where the bookshelf for the popular agility type martial skill was present.

Agility type martial skill was frequently chosen by many outer disciples, because during combat, speed was considered to be very important, and no one would ignore this fact

“Flickering wind step, isn’t this the same agility type martial skill practiced by that Wu Qing?”

Long Yu soon saw the words “Flickering wind step” on a book, and thought of the time when Wu Qing had used this technique to move with great speed using this. He immediately decided to select this martial skill.

Two martial skills were enough for now, because more skills were suddenly impossible to practice. As for the attack methods, Long Yu had 'Nine hidden Dragons Mark' to increase his overall offense and defense strength, so he didn't need a martial skill to increase his strength. Thinking logically, it was enough for him to comprehend the 'Demon tyrant form' to increase his stamina and 'instantaneous wind step' to increase his speed, coupled with the surplus strength of 10,000 Jin.

Long Yu picked up the two martial skills and registered them at the second floor, then immediately returned to the first floor and looked for the same room where he had comprehended the Zhentian tactics awhile ago and started to practice.

"Demon tyrant form, you have actually selected a body refining martial skill?"

After Long Yu came to the first floor, that old voice conveyed once more, and there was an unexpected surprised expression in the voice, as if it never expected that Long Yu would select a body refining type martial skill to practice.

"This is also good if you can practice a body refining martial skill to the Da Cheng realm then the effect is obviously going to be very good. The practice of a martial skill is divided into beginner level, Xiao Cheng, Da Cheng, the peak and so on stages. If today, you succeed in practicing the Demon tyrant form to the beginner realm then it will be regarded as excellent!"

"Demon tyrant form only to the beginner level....."

Long Yu thought to himself and was naturally not satisfied with this result.

The Martial Court was closed every day at midnight, and before that, Long Yu must comprehend the Demon tyrant form and Flickering wind steps to a certain extent, otherwise, once he would go out of the Marital Court and face Feng Yang, he would probably have low chances of winning.

Right after entering the room, Long Yu felt the Zhentian tactics engraved on the walls. He immediately released the mysterious mood and without wasting any time, he started to browse through the book of Demon tyrant form.

“Transformation of the Lingqi into the Xuan qi inside the body of the martial cultivators is the basis of any marital skills. If one wants to practice and master the Demon tyrant form, one must fill and circulate each and every inch of the meridians present in his body with the Xuan qi, so that it greatly increased the bearing capacity of the meridians which in turn will also increase the amount of Xuan qi circulating through the meridians.”

Long Yu thought to himself, and started to practice the Demon tyrant form in accordance with the method described in the book, and soon, the Xuan qi began to quickly circulate into his meridians, and after some time, he realized that his body meridians were having a painful itching feeling, as if there were countless insects biting on his meridians!

Long Yu didn't utter a single word, he was silent, because he knew that this was the feeling of intense pain was actually the refinement of his meridians growing under the forceful effects of the Demon tyrant form, and until the end of this refinement, the circulation of the Xuan qi in his meridians would be more vigorous and tenacious than before. After that, he would be able to withstand the burden of activation of 'Nine hidden Dragons Mark'.

As the time passed, the painful itching feeling in the meridians gradually increased and slowly strengthened, and beads of sweat appeared on Long Yu's

forehead, while his body started to shiver. Even if he was strong man with a strong willpower but he almost could not withstand the beginner level of the Demon tyrant form!

If there was someone else in his shoes, for example that Tan Yue girl, it was impossible to constantly bear the continuous flow of the Xuan qi through the meridians. The key was the proliferation of the whole body and circulation of Xuan qi everywhere, and once started to practice, one couldn't voluntarily stop it, but could only withstand the intense pain with sheer determination and strong willpower.

Such practice methods were discarded by a large number of disciples in the Zhentian, moreover after successfully practicing Demon tyrant form, one could strengthen the meridians through which could also increase the amount of Xuan qi circulation, but one could not have a significant improvement in the battle efficiency and strength, which was the main reason why most disciples denounced body refining martial skills.

Only Long Yu had such special circumstances so he wanted to practice a body refining type martial skill.

An hour, two hour, Long Yu withstood the pain and continued to endure while the Xuan qi was unceasingly circulating through the meridians in his body and when it was finally close to the evening, he had successfully completed soaking up and refining each and every inch of his meridians with Xuan qi.

“Finished.”

Long Yu's whole body relaxed, sweat had already drenched his body, and at this time, he discovered that in the process of refinement of the meridians, the

‘Nine hidden Dragons Mark’ was giving off heat.

“It seems like that ‘Nine hidden Dragons Mark’ also has a promotion effect on the speed of practicing the martial skills

Long Yu thought to himself, opened his eyes, stood up, clenched his fists, and discovered that now that he had practiced the Demon tyrant form to the beginner level, his initial strength of 8000 Jin had impressively increased by 800 Jin. It seemed like practicing a body refining type martial skill was still somewhat useful to him.

Then, he activated the ‘Nine hidden Dragons Mark’ and an instant influx of strength 10,000 Jin spread through his refined meridians, and this time, he noticed that it was very easy for him to bear the burden and he felt more relaxed than before.

“Now, after activating the ‘Nine hidden Dragons Mark’, I obtain strength of 10,000 Jin, and it won’t be a problem to maintain this state for the burning time of two sticks of incense.”

Long Yu’s heart calmed down, because burning time of two sticks of incense was two times the earlier time, and this way, he would have better chances to win in his fight with Feng Yang.

However the day had not yet ended. The closing time for Martial Court was at midnight, and there was still half the evening’s time before that, so Long Yu decided to use this time to completely comprehend “Flickering wind step”!

.....

Chapter-17 Agility Xiao Cheng

While Long Yu was busy in practicing martial skills inside the Martial Court, and the crowd, who had been waiting outside the Martial Court, now became a bit impatient.

“How long the boy wants to remain inside the Martial Court, does he think that Feng brother and Tan junior sister apprentice will give up?”

“Well, I think he is attempting to comprehend the martial skills, but, he has merely one day of time and even if he is talented, he will not be able to comprehend any formidable martial art skills!”

“Well, when the moment arrives and he comes out, it will be impossible for him to escape from Feng Yang and Fang Kang.”

Everyone was talking about, even someone deliberately let Feng Yang and Tan Yue to hear and in turn provoked them, and this was simply to prevent them from getting impatient and leave, otherwise would they not miss a chance to enjoy the show?

Feng Yang looked up, glanced around and lightly snorted.

The people thought that Feng Yang was good in his patience but his temperament was hot, but at this crucial moment, he would obviously not lose his cool.

However, from the depth of her heart, Tan Yue hated Long Yu, so there was

less chance that she would leave the place without dealing with Long Yu and giving him a miserable fate.

“Fang Kang, while I watch the whole thing, you make sure that this waste kid ends up in such a miserable state that he cannot even beg for his own death!”

Lying on a stretcher, Tan Yue said while clenching her teeth in anger.

On one side, Feng Yang was sitting cross-legged, in meditation and controlling his breath. When he heard her words, he said with a disdainful smile: “Sister Tan, be at ease, what that Wudao fourth layer brat can possibly do against me?”

“You better take care of him or you won’t be able to show your face to my brother.”

Tan Yue said it bitterly. She remembered that how in the morning, Han Jian was defeated by Long Yu, and at that time, she and Han Jian also thought that Long Yu was a waste, who would have imagined that this waste fellow would unexpectedly defeat her and Han Jian?

However, at present, Feng Kang was at the Wudao sixth layer, so how would that waste go against heaven’s will this time. It would be impossible for him to surmount two layers gap to defeat Fang Kang, only one thing worried her that he might resort to some other method, or he might seek help from the Sect elders.

Of course, as long as deaths were not involved in the fights between these delinquent outer disciples, Sect elders generally didn’t have anything to do with these matters, so even if an outer disciples like Long Yu went to seek help from Sect elders that should not cause a serious obstruction to their plans.

The sun was setting in the western sky, the curtain of night soon fell, but the enthusiasm of the hundreds of people gathered outside the Martial Court had not dwindled, rather it was growing more and more with the passage of time.

.....

Inside the Martial court, Long Yu started practicing "Flickering wind steps".

When he had just set foot on the Zhentian Canyon, his first opponent was Wu Qing who had displayed the 'Flickering wind step'. Now Long Yu saw the introduction of the Flickering wind step and came to know that Wu Qing had just practiced it to the Xiao Cheng level, and so back then, when he attacked Long Yu, his weight would become light like the wind and his forward speed was also very commendable.

If Flickering wind step was practiced to the Da Cheng level, then it would provide to the cultivator such a power that he could step a distance of three to ten feet in a blink of an eye, and then, he would be able to perform sneak attack on his enemies and these attack would be so swift that his opponents would have no chance to guard against them.

However right now, only half an evening's time was remaining for him and it was impossible to practice the Flickering wind step to the Da Cheng level in such a short time.

"So long as I can practice the Flickering wind step to the Xiao Cheng level then like Wu Qing, I will be able to lighten my weigh and move like the wind with my running speed increasing by at least 50% and this much is enough to deal with Feng Yang."

Long Yu thought and started to carefully read Flickering wind step agility type martial skill.

Soon, he followed the secret methods present in the records. Xuan qi began to circulate in a definite route in the meridians of his body, and in a while, he really felt as if his body seemed to have become lighter.

“The key next step is

Long Yu thought to himself. He felt that Xuan Qi was circulating in a systematic way in his body, and he could not help but notice the mysterious feeling of this systematic circulation of Xuan qi guided by the agility type martial skill.

The different circulation routes of Xuan qi would produce totally different results, thus made thousands of formidable martial skills to be formed in this world and even made it possible to control the world principles depending on this.

After understanding this feeling that he got just now, Long Yu calmed his mind and focused on practicing. The Nine hidden Dragon Mark on his chest began to release heat slowly and it secretly coordinated with the flickering wind step speeding up the systematic circulation of the Xuan qi in his meridians, suddenly making him to comprehend the flickering wind step very fast.

After two hours passed, Long Yu opened his eyes, and stood up.

“It is finished, Flickering wind step beginner level!”

Long Yu used his thoughts to and started to circulate the Xuan qi in his meridians making his body to become light al of a sudden but when he tried his new speed in the room, he sensed that his speed had increased only by 20-30%!

“It’s not enough, in case of Flickering wind step marital skill, only after achieving the Xiao Cheng level, I can have qualitative increase in the speed which will enable me to have advantage in the fight.”

After running two laps in the room and testing his new speed, Long Yu stopped, sat down cross legged in the mediation pose, and continued the comprehension.

But his speed of comprehension startled the Martial Court elder who was secretly observing him!

“This child is so extraordinary perceptive? He just comprehended Demon tyrant form to the beginner level, and right after that, he also comprehended Flickering wind step to the beginner level and that too in just two hours time. This comprehension speed is simply unheard of, and I have never heard about something like this in the history of Zhentian Sect! And looking at his current determination, it seems that he would comprehend even further by tonight..... “

The Marital Court elder continued to secretly observe Long Yu, but he was not aware of this and continued to calmly practice until nearly midnight.

Flickering wind step was considered as very basic martial skill in the Zhentian Sect, so the comprehension difficulty was not too high and many outer disciples could easily practice to the Xiao Cheng level.

However, for someone to comprehend 'Flickering wind step' to the Xiao Cheng level, and that too in just one night, had never happened in the history of the Zhentian Sect.

After reaching the Wudao fourth layer, the 'Nine hidden Dragons Mark' had changed on his chest, and after that, it started to help Long Yu in comprehending the martial skills at an incredibly faster rate because this mark could actually increase the circulation speed of Xuan qi in his meridians, thereby increasing the comprehension rate of the martial skill.

Depending on this point alone, he was destined to surprise the elder of the Martial Court.

"Flickering wind step, Xiao Cheng!"

Long Yu again stood up, and felt that his body had become very light like the wind itself, and while circulating the Xuan qi in his meridians, so long as he condensed the Xuan qi in his legs, his speed would increase by 50 % than before.

Moreover, the Flickering wind step, when displayed, didn't consume too much Xuan qi, so one could maintain this marital skill for a long time in battle.

"No wonder agility class martial skills are more popular than the attack and defense type martial skills, because either chase or escape, agility class martial skills are very essential."

For the marital cultivators of the Tian Yu continent, what was the most important thing?

Of course, their lives!

Compared to the attack or defense type martial skills, the agility type martial skill was better because it gave better results in terms of saving life.

Now Long Yu had comprehended the body refining type marital skill, Demon tyrant form, to the beginner level. He had also comprehended an agility type marital skill, Flickering wind step, to the Xiao Cheng level, and it was already midnight and closing time for the Martial Court. When Long Yu felt about it, he got up and left the room, and proceeded to exit the Marital Court.

Long Yu knew that Feng Yang must be waiting for him outside the Martial Court, and there was every possibility that other people would also be present there, but he did not fear, because he had already anticipated this a long time ago, and at this moment, he himself was waiting for this and was also well prepared.

“Feng Yang, you seized my identity token, treated me like a waste, so let me have a look at your strength and see just how much strong you really are!”

Long Yu thought and quickly stepped outside the Martial Court!

Right when Long Yu stepped out of the Martial Court, he did not hear a satisfied whisper in the Marital Court saying: “This child really gave me a pleasant surprise today, it seems that soon, my Zhentian Sect will have a formidable individual, more talented than several geniuses throughout the Tang State.....”

.....

The moonlight such as a silver gauze, the tree's shadows were spread everywhere, and in the open space outside the Martial Court, hundreds of outer disciples of the Zhentian Sect were gathered, each ready to find a good location to watch the show.

In the midnight, most of the outer disciples practicing in the Martial Court had already departed, and when Long Yu came out, he was alone and his form appeared bleak, especially under the moonlight.

As soon as he appeared, the atmosphere outside the Martial Court suddenly changed.

“Look, that guy finally came out, wait, why does his footsteps appear so lithe and graceful, as if he has comprehended some agility type martial skill!”

“It's good that he finally came out, so let us hope that he doesn't get scared and kneels down to beg for mercy otherwise our wait would be totally in vain if that happens.”

“Hmph, even if he kneels down to beg for mercy, it doesn't mean that Sister Tan Yue will let him off right?”

Everyone was talking about it, and was looking towards Long Yu mostly with looks of contempt and disdain in their eyes. They felt that this boy didn't know the immensity of heaven and earth, just joined the Zhentian Sect, and was behaving so rampantly. It was necessary to teach him a lesson.

They never thought that Long Yu was going to shock them with a complete

turn of event, exactly opposite of what they had originally expected.

And now, he was going to teach lesson to those who had came to teach him a lesson!

“Feng Yang, I came out.”

Long Yu stepped out of the Martial Court, located the tall Feng Yang in the crowd and said with an indifferent look in his eyes.

“Waste, you really dared to come out.”

Feng Yang looked at Long Yu said in a despised manner: “Now I’ll let you know that a waste like you made a wrong decision to challenge me to a fight.”

“Mistake, it is not wrong. Well forget that and tell me, have you brought the Qing Hua Dan with you?”

Long Yu waved his hand and changed the subject while simultaneously threw a provoking question at him.

“Qing Hua Dan, hmph are you stupid enough to be really dreaming of the Qing Hua Dan?”

Feng Yang gave a contemptuous smile, his square shaped face revealed disdain and thought, did Long Yu really want to win against him? It was simply a wishful thinking!

“Hello, hello, hello, you must follow the agreement, and you are real man, so how you can possibly go back on your words!”

Just then, a tender figure jumped out from the side, it was none other than Liao Lele who had run away earlier!

But at this time, Liao Lele was dressed in a gray clothes which was definitely not a uniform issued by the Zhentian Sect, and she carried a bag on her back, and from her appearance, it was apparent that she was well prepared to run away.

Long Yu looked at her and the corners of his mouth slightly curled upward then said: “Liao Lele, it seems that you are prepared for my defeat and plan to flee from the Zhentian Sect the second I lose aren’t you?”

Liao Lele turned, a pair of eyes stared at him: “Nonsense, do you think I, Liao Lele, looks like a person who would go back on her words? This is my plan and if you accidentally lose in the fight, I brought the luggage to live together with that fat pig!”

Fat Pig!

When Feng Yang heard this, his face directly turned green, this stinky girl actually called him a “fat pig”, how outrageous!

But when he saw Liao Lele’s appearance, how could he not know the plan of this stinky girl?

“Hmph, waste Long Yu, when you lose, I will not let that stinky girl to run away.

And I don't go back on my words so about what you asked just now, the Qing Hua Dan is tied to my belt and if you think that you have the ability then come and take it!"

Feng Yang lightly snorted then his grandiose stature marched forward towards Long Yu to confront him!

.....

Chapter – 18 Play staged

When Long Yu came out from the Martial Court, the stage was finally set for the show.

Liao Lele withdrew a few steps towards the crowd while firmly staring and keeping a close eye on the two contenders and shouted loudly: “Long Yu, go for it!”

“Junior sister apprentice, I think you are wasting your time.”

After Liao Lele shouted and cheered for Long Yu, and right after that, an outer disciple standing behind her said with a contemptuous smile on his face: “Everyone knows that the governor of the outer disciples for each month ultimately becomes an inner disciple, that is to say, Feng Yang is on the line to become an inner disciple, so how can Long Yu possibly be his opponent.”

“What utter nonsense.”

Liao Lele snorted loudly and said: “Some people said that he was definitely not the opponent of Han Jian and Tan Yue, you do know what happened next?

When that outer disciple heard her words, he immediately gave a cold humph and looked contemptuously at Liao Lele, who was still cheerfully looking at Long Yu, and didn’t speak any more.

On the side, Tan Yue was lying on a wooden stretcher, and when she heard these words, it seemed as if fire would burst out from her eyes. Her knife like

gaze swept towards Liao Lele.

“This woman is so dead, actually dares to despise this lady. This lady will make her pay the price.”

Tan Yue said in a vicious tone.

Fang Kang was sitting beside her, and when he heard these words, he said: “Sister Tan, let me first deal with that waste Long Yu, then later we will deal with that insolent woman.”

“Humph.”

Tan Yue bitterly snorted but didn’t say anything else because the words of Fang Kang acted like a deterrent to her anger, after all, Fang Kang was about to become an inner disciple and he was capable of doing what just he said.

There was an open field outside the Martial Court.

At that time, Feng Yang was calm and composed and was looking at Long Yu with a touch of sarcastic color in his eyes: “Waste, what super martial skill have you comprehended in the Martial Court that makes you so confident in front of me?”

“Why don’t you try and see it for yourself? Come.”

Long Yu contemptuously smiled and gestured with his fingers telling Feng Yang to come forward. (Mystique-Bruce lee style J)

There was an obvious scornful meaning hidden in this gesture and Feng Yang's face immediately turned dark and gloomy. He immediately stepped forward towards Long Yu and fiercely said: "Waste, tonight you won't depart from here on your own legs."

As he stepped forward, the air in the surroundings began to vibrate, and produced ripple of shock waves in the air, which rushed towards Long Yu, standing several feet away from Feng Yang, and reached him in a blink of an eye.

"It's the Shaking air law!"

Long Yu looked at it and immediately understood what Feng Yang just used was actually an agility type martial skill known as 'The Shaking air law' that he had also seen in the Martial Court. 'Flickering wind step' was also an agility type martial skill, but these two martial skills were actually not based on the same principle.

'Flickering wind step' made the weight of the body of the practitioner very light like the wind, thus speeding up his pace, while 'The Shaking air law' actually vibrated the air and produced ripples of shock waves in the air to push the body forward with great speed.

From the beginner level till Xiao Cheng level, there was not much difference between the effects of these two agility type martial skills, but at the Da Cheng level, they were entirely different from each other.

In the Da Cheng realm of 'Flickering wind step' one could cover thirty feet distance in just one step, in a blink of an eye, thus it provided a tremendous speed to its practitioner.

At the Da Cheng level of 'The shaking air law', it was possible to greatly vibrate the air to produce mighty ripples in the air to boost the blasting speed of cultivator, and these ripples could also suppress the motion of the surrounding enemy.

As Feng Yang was soon going to be promoted to the rank of inner disciples, so it was certain that he would have definitely practiced 'The Shaking air law' to the Da Cheng level. As Feng Yang moved forward, the air ripples proliferated through the air and instantly enveloped Long Yu.

Shrouded completely with these air ripples, Long Yu immediately felt some difficulty in breathing. After practicing a martial skill to the Da Cheng level, its might also increased incredibly in comparison to its might at Xiao Cheng level.

"Nine hidden Dragons Mark, activate!"

Long Yu's used his intention to immediately activate the 'Nine hidden Dragons Mark' which then began to give off heat on his chest. The black lines on his chest began to release black traces of light that immediately spread throughout his body and granted him the strength of 10,000 Jin.

In order to confront Feng Yang, a master of Wudao fifth layer, who had also comprehended an agility type martial skill to the Da Cheng level, it was absolutely necessary for Long Yu to keep the 'Nine hidden Dragons Mark' activated at all times otherwise it would be impossible for him to face this opponent.

The next moment, the vibrating air ripples drew close to Long Yu while carrying the body of Feng Yang.

“Coiling Dragon legs!”

Feng Yang’s eyes exposed fiery look and his two legs appeared similar to two big coiling dragons. He had condensed his own tyrannical Xuan qi in his legs to congeal two coiling dragons around his legs and blasted them against Long Yu from both sides.

This was the might of the Da Cheng level of a martial skill named Coiling Dragon legs!

“Zhentian Mysterious Mood, suppression!”

Long Yu clenched his teeth. The mysterious mood immediately suppressed Feng Yang along with his turbulent strength, and then right at this instant, Long Yu blasted his fists to resist Feng Yang’s legs.

Demon tyrant form had increased his basic strength, and at this time, his fists contained the strength of about 20,000 Jin, that was equal to the strength of 20 fierce horses!

Long Yu’s fists collided fiercely with the legs of Feng Yang, the vigorous power present their formidable Xuan qi caused a cyclone and it proliferated everywhere in the surroundings, and immediately sent dust flying upwards and scattered everywhere blocking the sights of everyone under this moonlit night.

Long Yu felt a violent pain in his fist because he just bumped his fists against the legs covered in a martial skill, Coiling Dragon legs, practiced to the Da Cheng by Feng Yang, granting an incredible strength and toughness to his legs.

However, due the condensation of Xuan qi on his fists, the strength level of the two sides was almost the same, so in this round of battle, he actually did not get any serious injuries.

Long Yu's punch had pushed Feng Yang two steps back and his face suddenly turned green. How could this waste actually possess the strength to repel him?

And what was that strange force that came out of nowhere and suddenly suppressed his strength. It made him feel like the imposing aura of the world itself was suppressing him, just as he had felt in the Zhentian Canyon?

He was still thinking, when suddenly, Long Yu's figure rushed through the flying dust like an incarnation of wind itself and vanished from the eyes of Feng Yang.

“What! He is at the Xiao Cheng level of ‘Flickering wind step’?”

Feng Yang was not prepared when he suddenly lost his target in all of the dust flying in the air and barring the visibility. There was an expression of surprise on his face. He didn't think that in just one day's time, this waste could actually comprehend ‘Flickering wind step’ to the Xiao Cheng level!

Deng Deng Deng! (Mystique-Sound of footsteps)

A series of sounds made from several footsteps came from his left side that made him vigilant and he congealed Coiling dragons on his both legs and swept them towards his left direction!

However the next moment, he found out that his legs unexpectedly kicked nothing. Long Yu had intentionally produced sound of footsteps on his left side and then immediately fled from there to another direction.

“Ha!”

A heavy punch came from the right side of Feng Yang, but both his legs were swept towards his right side and were still in the air, so there was no way for him to dodge it.

Bang!

Feng Yang’s shoulder was severely hit by Long Yu’s heavy punch making him to lose his balance and his whole large stature staggered and was pushed back several steps.

Fortunately, at the critical moment, Feng Yang had condensed Xuan qi in his shoulder otherwise this malicious punch would have discarded his arm right from the shoulder.

Feng Yang’s shoulder numbed and a tingling sensation spread in it which left him completely puzzled. This waste Long Yu was obviously at the Wudao fourth layer then how could he possibly have higher might than him?

Feng Yang was at the Wudao fifth layer, and he possessed the strength of 16000 Jin, and Long Yu actually possessed the strength of almost 20000 Jin after activating ‘Nine Hidden Dragons mark’ so when it came to strength level, Long Yu had already surpassed Feng Yang!

The difference of strength between the two was more than 3000 Jin, giving an advantage to Long Yu, but Feng Yang had comprehended both his attack type and agility type martial skills to the Da Cheng level which could easily change the flow of this battle.

“Let’s end this.”

Long Yu’s mouth slightly curled up, he didn’t stop, and the next instant, he threw a severe kick at the back of Feng Yang.

“Just you wait and I will show you how to end a fight!”

Feng Yang was not a fool and was already prepared. Once again, he congealed coiling dragons on his legs and also used ‘The Shaking air law’ at the same time, turned around and swept both his legs, one leg blocked Long Yu’s attack and another leg kicked towards his head.

“Dodge!”

Long Yu’s figure was moving around so fast, it seemed as if he was floating in the wind itself, and that was because his body was light as the wind. He was continuously changing directions and also continued his attacks stochastically.

Although, Feng Yang had practiced ‘The Shaking air law’ to the Da Cheng level and could use the air ripples to hinder Long Yu’s movements, but the suppressive effect of the Zhentian mysterious mood was causing much stronger hindrance effect compared to the hindrance caused by the air ripples of Feng Yang’s agility type martial skill!

Due to this, Feng Yang gradually fell into a disadvantageous situation because he was now inferior to Long Yu in both speed and strength.

“Ah, see, an elder!”

When there was a deadlock between the two, a crisp and clear voice of a female surprisingly came from the side of the crowd.

This female voice suddenly attracted everyone’s attention when they were originally concentrating on the fierce battle going on between Long Yu and Feng Yang. They immediately started looking in all directions in order to locate where this so-called elder actually appeared from.

When Feng Yang heard this, it totally distracted him, and his mind began to tremble.

“It’s not good, I have withheld the identity tokens of some outer disciples. If the elder came to know about this then what would happen to me?”

Feng Yang was somewhat panicking and his eyes were sweeping all around to locate the elder.

However at that time, only Long Yu was completely undistracted, and at present, his eyes were fully focused on his opponent, Feng Yang. Seeing the distracted Feng Yang, who had even begun to look all around, Long Yu immediately understood that his victory was not far away from him.

“Zhentian mysterious mood! Kill.”

The imposing aura of mysterious mood instantly spread and completely enveloped Feng Yang, then Long Yu used flickering wind step and went towards Feng Yang at a very high speed and launched several punches and kicks at him using his full strength.

Each of his attacks was planned to hit an extremely tricky angle, not to mention Feng Yang's mind had been chaotic and distracted, so it became very difficult for him to resist!

It happened so fast that Feng Yang did not know how to resist against so many punches and kicks rained at different angles on his body by Long Yu.

Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang!

Under successive and countless bombardments of attacks condensed with the strength of 20,000 Jin, it was obvious that Feng Yang was completely unable to resist for too long. He spouted blood from his mouth and his body flew upside down and fell heavily on the ground!

Feng Yang fell down, the onlookers were silent, all of them had unbelievable looks in their eyes while their gazes were shifting back and forth between Long Yu and Feng Yang's body on the ground.

Long Yu actually won and that too in such a short time?

Feng Yang was actually a master of Wudao fifth layer, but was so easily defeated by a boy who was only at the Wudao fourth layer, and not just defeated, he was severely injured and fell unconscious as well. This was

completely contrary to everyone's expectations!

"Great, you really won!"

The same voice of a female, who shouted "See, an elder" a moment ago, shouted again followed by a lively figure wearing a gray robe coming out of the crowd and suddenly jumped into the field and went towards the injured body of Feng Yang lying on the ground.

It was none other than Liao Lele!

Just now, she played this trick to distract Feng Yang and threw his concentration into chaos. Long Yu seized this opportunity to defeat him in one fell swoop!

At this time, Liao Lele came at the side of the fainted Feng Yang, searched his clothes for some time and took out her identity token and an exquisite small jade bottle.

When Liao Lele saw these two things, her face reflected a smile of satisfaction.

"Qing Hua Dan, here, take it Long Yu!"

After Liao Lele kept her identity token, she threw the exquisite jade bottle towards Long Yu standing not far from her.

Long Yu caught it with one hand and opened it, and just then, a burst of intoxicating smell filled the air. It was undoubtedly the immortality pill, Qing Hua

Dan!

But before he could relax, a figure standing aside sneered and said in a loud voice: “Villains collude together, what’s the point of such a victory, truly inelegant, tonight this Fang Kang would reveal the true identity of this waste and take revenge for Feng Yang junior disciple!”

Everyone looked towards the source of sound and saw a slim man clad in blue dress and was stepping on the field from the side of Tan Yue’s stretcher.

This young, dark-skinned, muscular and brave looking man was Tian Jian’s personal attendant, Fang Kang, who had recently stepped into the Wudao sixth layer!

Chapter 19 Wudao fifth layer

When Long Yu defeated Fang Yang, all of the people surrounding the field were stunned at the scene that unfolded in front of their eyes. They never thought that Long Yu would actually be more powerful than Feng Yang.

But, at that time when Fang Kang came out and moved towards the field, the people again concentrated on the show which was soon to unfold.

Feng Yang's defeat could be called an accident because of Liao Lele's interference and its impact was not small on the outcome of the entire fight.

But, now the people would like to see that what Long Yu would do while facing Fang Kang!

Long Yu looked at the black-faced youth and could not help but revealed a smile on his face and said: "So you are Brother Fang Kang, greetings on our first meeting, I have already heard of your name, but now I am able to see you in person. It is really an honor for a new disciple like me."

Wen Fang Kang heard these words, although he very much disdained Long Yu, but also could not help but revealed a self-satisfied smile on his face.

Long Yu had come to Zhentian Sect only two days ago and still heard about his name. Didn't this imply that he was actually a very famous disciple that even new comers knew about him?

Fang Kang was only twenty years old this year and was still able to step into

the Wudao sixth layer, and after one month, he was going to be one of the representatives of Zhentian Sect to enter into the 'Royal Ancient Senate Forest'. These achievements were enough to make him proud of himself.

"Ahem, whatever you say today is going to be futile, Brother Tan Jian has entrusted me to teach you a lesson, so you cannot run away."

Fang Kang's face reflected a color of self satisfaction, and with some complacency, he glanced at Long Yu and said, "I must teach you a lesson."

Long Yu, following the meaning in these words, smiled and said: "Of course, after all, Brother Fang Kang is a liberal and honest senior, the epitome of righteousness and also the role model for us new disciples!"

"Well."

Fang Kang started to take great pleasure from Long Yu's words.

"So, I believe that the righteous Brother Fang Kang will not take advantage of a petty new disciple, right?"

Long Yu immediately caught the flow of conversation and said: "Now I am at Wudao fourth layer, but senior brother is actually at Wudao sixth layer, although senior brother has decided to teach me a lesson, but I'm afraid people will gossip, which I think senior brother certainly does not want to happen. Let me absorb the Qing Hua Dan and then teach me a lesson. Then even if people gossip, won't they say that senior brother is so kind and righteous?"

Hearing these words, Liao Lele, who was standing nearby, finally relaxed.

She initially thought that Long Yu praised Fang Kang because perhaps he wanted to ask for mercy, she did not expect that he was actually playing with Fang Kang's mind in order to gain time to absorb the Qing Hua Dan.

As for the other people standing in the surroundings, they were simply astonished as they never expected that Long Yu would make such a remark.

Both Long Yu and Fang Kang knew that Long Yu was not his opponent!

But even if he absorbed the Qing Hua Dan, it was not necessary that he would have a breakthrough to reach Wudao fifth layer. Even after absorbing the Qing Hua Dan, he would still be taught a brutal lesson by Fang Kang!

Fang Kang also had the same view on this matter. He listened to Long Yu's words, and said with a contemptuous look on his face: "Qing Hua Dan, it is awarded to the governor of the outer disciples, and its effects are good, but it is impossible to advance to Wudao fifth layer with just its help. Anyway, I will only wait for an hour got it?

Since Long Yu said so many words in his compliments, in order to maintain his "liberal, tolerant, honest and righteous" image in front of everyone, he thought to act accordingly and show off, anyway it was not good to act with undue haste, because in any case, Long Yu was not his match so what was to fear?

Aside on the wooden stretcher, a color of bitterness appeared on Tan Yue's beautiful face with hatred apparent in her eyes, but since this matter was now concerning Fang Kang, so long as he could teach that Long Yu a lesson, she didn't mind how he would do that!

“Tonight, this Tan Yue must step on the face of that waste, then I will make you call me your great-grandmother!”

Tan Yue eyes sparkled with hatred, keeping a close eye on Long Yu in the field.

Long Yu did not care about Tan Yu, because in his eyes, the defeated were not worthy of his attention.

After hearing Fang Kang’s consent, Long Yu was secretly relieved, he immediately sat down cross-legged on the scene, took out Qing Hua Dan, which was exuding fragrance in his hand and swallowed it down.

Qing Hua Dan was an extremely rare immortality pill, and it would be false to say that after seeing the Qing Hua Dan in Long Yu’s hand, the outer disciples were not excited in their hearts.

However, in the Zhentian Sect, no one could dare to rob immortality pills, and it would be a different matter if one managed to win the bet. Long Yu had obtained it in accordance with an agreement, and if anybody tried to snatch it from him, then such behavior would not be tolerated by the Sect

When the people looked at Long Yu grasping Qing Hua Dan in his hand then swallowing it down his mouth, their faces suddenly became gloomy. They just couldn’t accept the fact that an immortality pill was going to be wasted on such a new disciple.

This Long Yu offended Tan Jian, even if he could really advance to the Wudao fifth layer and somehow managed to beat Fang Kang, so what, would he not be

killed by Tan Jian in the end? Then this Qing Hua Dan would simply go to waste.

Moreover, there was no chance for Long Yu to defeat Fang Kang!

The pretty Liao Lele stood in front of Long Yu. She was vigilant and keeping a close eye on the surrounding people, to ensure that during the time allotted for the absorption of the immortality pill, he would not get attacked or disturbed by others.

Actually, Liao Lele had succeeded in obtaining her identity token according to the terms of the bet with Feng Yang, and after obtaining her identity token, she didn't have anything to do with Long Yu's matters, but she just couldn't leave him alone like this.

Even if he had an enemy like Tan Jian, she did not have the slightest flinch!

As Qing Hua Dan went inside his stomach, Long Yu immediately felt that the drug began to scatter in his body. He did not hesitate to activate the 'Nine hidden Dragons Mark' in order to help him in absorbing the drug with greater speed.

After all, the situation was urgent and Fang Kang had given him only an hour's time, he must absorb Qing Hua Dan completely within this time limit.

"Fortunately, the remnants of previously absorbed Yuyao Dan are still well preserved inside the 'Nine hidden Dragons Mark' and now after absorbing Qing Hua Dan, I will definitely be able to step into the Wudao fifth layer"

Long Yu thought to himself then the Lingqi contained in Qing Hua Dan started

to gradually transform into Xuan qi and began to get absorbed by his meridians.

At this time, he found out that after achieving the beginner level of Demon tyrant form, now he could absorb immortality drug at a much faster speed. The fundamental reason behind it was his sturdier meridians that could now encounter much resistance when Xuan qi expanded throughout his body meridians.

After half an hour, Long Yu's whole body's strength suddenly increased, and finally reached the limiting strength of 10,000 Jin of Wudao fourth layer and by this time, he had only absorbed 30 % Lingqi from the Qing Hua Dan.

Then, the drug preserved in 'Nine hidden Dragon Mark' began to spread throughout his body, allowing the Xuan qi to surge and circulate rapidly inside his body meridians, causing an invisible whirlpool of airflow around his body.

When people heard the sound of movements around Long Yu's body, a surprised look appeared in their eyes and they started to discuss among themselves.

Could it be that this kid would manage to have a breakthrough after absorbing a Qing Hua Dan?

If these people got to know that Long Yu recently stepped into the Wudao fourth layer then they would be extremely surprised.

An hour's time quickly passed in the process of waiting.

At the last minute, the Long Yu managed to completely absorb the drug

essence preserved in 'Nine hidden Dragons Mark' and his imposing aura suddenly changed. With a "bo bo" sound like an explosion, it seemed like he was just reborn as a new person in front of everyone but much more stronger than before.

"Wudao fifth layer finally achieved."

Long Yu opened his eyes that were shining like the knife's edge. He finally reached the Wudao fifth layer that bestowed upon him the strength of 16000 Jin, and now his arbitrary punch could blow up a giant boulder and with just a grasp, he would be able to pull up ten feet high trees with ease!

"What? You actually managed to break through."

At that time, Fang Kang was sitting in a meditating pose at the side, and when he opened his eyes he saw Long Yu covered in a different imposing aura than earlier. Fang Kang certainly understood that Long Yu was now at the Wudao fifth layer.

But even so, Fang Kang was not worried about anything as he was at Wudao sixth layer and possessed the strength of 32000 Jin, which was still two times than the strength of Long Yu, and moreover, he had practiced his martial skills to the Da Cheng realm, so there was no chance for Long Yu to be his match.

Unfortunately, Feng Yang was unconscious at the moment otherwise he would have told Fang Kang that Long Yu's true strength was definitely not what it seemed on the surface.....

"You broke through?"

Liao Lele looked back and saw the change in the imposing aura of Long Yu, and was extremely happy, then jumped to the side and said: "Show them what you got, don't lose."

Long Yu heard this and nodded, he certainly knew that this pretty girl had been guarding him for an hour when he was absorbing the Qing Hua Dan, and it somewhat touched his heart.

After coming to this world, besides Feng Longsong, no one else had made him feel so good in his heart, but today, Liao Lele's concern for his safety truly touched his heart.

"Now, you cannot make any other excuses to escape from me."

Fang Kang got up and walked towards Long Yu and with a teasing look on his face, he said: "But as a senior, I will allow you to try three moves on me, otherwise people will say that I am bullying a junior."

"Thank you senior brother."

Long Yu lightly smiled, but did not say anything, he was allowed to use three moves, so he would use only three moves to finish this battle. He just hoped that Fang Kang would not come to regret this later!

The next instant, Long Yu's figure appeared to have changed into a light breeze, and in a flash, he arrived in front of Fang Kang.

“The first move!”

Long Yu quickly condensed the strength of 16000 Jin in his fist and threw it towards Fang Kang’s head!

“Hmph.”

Fang Kang saw this and sneered then raised his hand, condensed with the strength of 30,000 Jin, and immediately stopped Long Yu’s fist.

Long Yu’s inner strength was too less compared to his strength and it was obvious that a master at Wudao fourth layer wouldn’t last 30 seconds in a battle against a master of Wudao sixth layer!

“The second move, Nine hidden Dragons Mark, activate!”

Long Yu withdrew two steps back, a firm and resolute look appeared in his eyes, and once again rushed towards Fang Kang, with a strength of 26,000 Jin condensed in his fist, though still less than Fang Kang’s strength, but was much stronger than the first punch!

Using the ‘Flickering wind step’, Long Yu suddenly arrived near Fang Kang with an unparallel wind surrounding his fist, which clearly showed the tremendous strength present in his fist.

“What? Which martial skill can enhance your strength so much?”

Fang Kang sensed the strength present in Long Yu’s fist and was surprised, but

still did not care.

The muscles trembled and bulged out on his body and strength of 32,000 Jin condensed in his palm and shot out. With a “pop” sound, Long Yu’s fist was deflected.

Their bodies brushed against each other and Fang Kang drew back few steps, but he was still unharmed.

“Next, the third move!”

Long Yu’s knife like cold gaze fell upon Fang Kang and his figure flashed then suddenly disappeared from where he was standing.

This time, it was not because he was fast, but because he had already comprehended the flickering wind step to the Da Cheng level, and now, he could cross thirty feet in a blink of an eye!

“Zhentian Mysterious mood!”

The mysterious mood’s force completely enveloped Fang Kang, although he reacted timely, but his body could not keep up with the speed of the mysterious mood.

Long Yu’s fist appeared to the lateral side of Fang Kang, on his blind spot, and with all of the strength present in his body, he suddenly punched on the side of the Fang Kang’s fragile waist.

Fang Kang did not expect to be attacked from his blind spot and didn't get enough time to condense Xuan qi in his waist, and as Long Yu's fist rumbled and blasted on his waist, he suddenly screamed and flew up like a broken kite then fell down on the ground upside down.

During the time Long Yu started to make his three moves one after another, he accurately observed and grasped the psychology of Fang Kang, and waited until the last move to suddenly use the Da Cheng level 'flickering wind step' to instantly approach Fang Kang from his blind spot for a sneak attack.

Bang.

Fang Kang's body fell on the ground and immediately lost consciousness. Long Yu punched on his defenseless waist, giving him heavier injuries compared to Feng Yang, and now he would have to lie in bed for several months.

"Da Cheng, Da Cheng Long Yu, how can you so quickly comprehend the flickering wind step to Da Cheng level?"

Liao Lele was completely shocked and could not help but asked aloud.

Long Yu heard this, gently smiled, but did not explain.

In fact, he absorbed Qing Hua Dan long before the allotted one hour time and used the time left to comprehend the flickering wind step to Da Cheng level.

During his fight with Feng Yang, he used flickering wind step in actual combat, plus he also got an insight into the Feng Yang's agility skill, 'The Shaking air law' practiced to the Da Cheng level, so he was able to comprehend the Xuan qi

circulation pattern for agility type martial skills and this helped him in quickly comprehending his own agility skill to Da Cheng level.

With the effect of the 'Nine hidden Dragons Mark', he could finally comprehend the flickers wind step to the Da Cheng level!

The spectating disciples were silent and totally dumb stricken and staring towards the field where an inconceivable scene had unfolded itself.

Fang Kang, a master at Wudao sixth layer master, who recently became an inner disciple, was beaten by a junior disciple who just joined the Sect two days ago. If they hadn't witnessed this with their own eyes, they would never believe it.

But now, this fact was placed right in front of them, so they had no other choice but to believe it.

Now, no one was looking at Long Yu with the same contemptuous disdain in their eyes, but it was rather a shocked look with a touch of admiration. In this world, people worshipped the strong, and Long Yu proved his strength through his own efforts. After he defeated Fang Kang, everyone started to look at him with admiration.

Under the curtain of night, a silence was spread, and only the sound of the wind and dancing leaves was present in the surroundings.

Until –

Clap! Clap! Clap!

Suddenly, a series of claps came from the darkness and broke the silence under the dim lit curtain of night.

Everyone, including Long Yu, looked towards the source of these claps.

It turned out to be him?

Feng Yun, the most talented and strongest member of the Feng Clan of Yu Guan City, a core disciple of Zhentian Sect, wearing white clothes and looked like an elegant gentleman, emerged from the darkness with a smile on his face and slowly walked towards Long Yu!

Chapter – 20 Tyrannical Feng Yun

When that gentleman, dressed in white and with a smile on his handsome face, came into the field step by step, everyone was attracted to his elegant demeanor.

Feng Yun was a core disciple of Zhentian Sect and almost everyone present there immediately recognized him.

No one expected that Feng Yun had already been informed about this matter and they quickly realized that Long Yu was doomed tonight, because they knew about Feng Yun and Feng Yang being the members of the same clan.

Long Yu had severely injured Feng Yang and now that Feng Yun had arrived on the scene, he would certainly not forgive Long Yu!

In the crowd, Tan Yue, lying on the stretcher, was carefully staring at Feng Yun and could not help but somewhat blushed.

She certainly knew the status of Feng Yun. Tan Jian had told her that Feng Yun was one of the top ten core disciples of the Zhentian Sect. Moreover, he was quite handsome and was definitely going to be the head of Yu Guan City's Feng Clan someday.

Now when she saw him in person, she immediately felt that what her brother said was not empty talk. Feng Yun was incredibly handsome and if she could somehow hook up with him then Tan Clan would certainly benefit from this.....

Tan Yue started cherishing her fond desires when a clear female voice suddenly interrupted her thoughts.

“This man is really handsome! Hey, Long Yu, do you know him? Does he applaud for your win?”

Liao Lele said while keeping a close eye on the handsome face of Feng Yun: “You should introduce me to him got it, after all, I got you a Qing Hua Dan you know. You can at least do this much for me!”

“I’d gladly introduce you to him, but it’s a pity that I’m not familiar with him.”

Long Yu faintly said and looked towards Feng Yun.

Feng Yun had maintained a smile on his face throughout the time he walking towards Long Yu but when he heard these words, he chuckled loudly: “Younger cousin, you actually say that we are not familiar with each other? Now don’t you treat me like a stranger, and the way your cultivation grows so fast, it’s an added surprise for your elder cousin.”

He said and stood at least thirty feet away from Long Yu. He leaned his face to look at Feng Yang lying unconscious on the ground, and the smile gradually faded from his face.

“However, younger cousin, you have so severely beaten a brother from the same clan. Didn’t you once think that we are members of the same clan and must lookout for each other?

This sentence was full of killing intent and revealed the anger building up inside

Feng Yun. He then gave a fierce look to Long Yu and the atmosphere in the field suddenly tensed up.

“This guyhis complexion changes so fast, sometimes it’s friendly then it becomes hostile, like flipping the pages of a book”

Liao Lele naturally also felt the ill intent from this guy and her heart sank.

Although, she did not know who Feng Yun was but listening to his words, she sensed the surrounding atmosphere suddenly tensing up, she immediately understood that this guy was related to Feng Yang and was also much stronger than Fang Kang.

At present, she only knew that this man was from Feng Clan and also seemed to be Long Yu’s cousin.

Regarding Long Yu’s identity, it was crystal clear to everyone that he was the adopted son of the Lord of Feng Clan, so spectators didn’t feel strange after hearing Feng Yun’s words.

They knew that right now, Long Yu was really in big trouble!

“Feng Clan?”

Long Yu faced Feng Yun and while still maintaining his own imposing aura, he sneered and said: “Give me one reason why I should lookout for the members of Feng Clan. Has Feng Clan ever paid attention to my problems except always looking down on me and calling me a waste?”

“You wasted one leg of my younger brother.”

Feng Yun looked at him and faintly said.

“Changing the topic?”

Long Yu smiled with a disdainful look in his eyes.

Feng Yun entered the Zhentian Sect long ago and now he was already 24 or 25 years old, also, during the last year’s competition held at the Feng Clan, he was at the Wudao seventh layer. Now that he had become one of the top 10 core disciples of the Zhentian Sect, he must have become a lot stronger than Feng Longsong!

Long Yu tried to devise various strategies to tackle Feng Yun but he concluded that he absolutely had no chance of winning against Feng Yun, so he could only try to use words to get out of this mess.

However, it didn’t seem like Feng Yun was in a mood to listen anything.

His white clothing lightly moved in the flowing breeze, and all of a sudden, he widened his eyes and said: “who is right, who is wrong, I don’t plan to investigate about all that. However, you wasted a leg of my younger brother, so tonight I will take revenge for him.”

As his voice fell, Long Yu suddenly felt a tyrannical aura along with a heavy pressure coming down from the heaven and enveloped him completely. This

imposing aura, it was exactly the same as the Zhentian mysterious mood, and much stronger than his own comprehension of the mysterious mood, closer to the world principle of true suppression!

Under the impact of this tyrannical aura, Long Yu's whole body was completely unable to move and could only wait to be trampled upon!

"Is this the extent of comprehension of mysterious mood achieved by formidable core disciples? This is a kind of artificial knife like feeling which seems to be chopping down from above and I feel like a fish waiting to be chopped down by it."

Long Yu clenched his teeth but he quickly understood that this time, he had no room to resist!

The condition of Liao Lele was also the same, and only in a moment, the beads of sweat appeared on both of their faces, obviously because of the terrifying heavy pressure.

And at that time, standing thirty feet away from Long Yu, an overbearing smile appeared on Feng Yun's face and he raised his right hand and a heavy wave came out of it.

"Sky wave crosses."

As he said those words, a white light wave made up of Xuan qi came out of his right hand.

Xuan qi external control!

Long Yu's eyes were wide open and were staring at the white light coming towards him. It instantly crossed the distance of thirty feet and penetrated into his right leg.

Boom!

Blood spattered and Long Yu tightly clenched his teeth. He felt an intense pain transmitting from his right leg, and it seemed like he would faint from the pain.

Feng Yun's strength was too terrifying. He just used his imposing aura and Long Yu was unable to move under its impact. And now, he used a martial skill that allowed him to shoot his Xuan qi and directly penetrated Long Yu's leg!

But even so, Long Yu did not fall and kept his back straight while standing on his left leg.

Looking at this scene, Liao Lele was visibly moved because Xuan qi had penetrated his right leg which must be causing an intense and unbearable pain in his right leg, but he was able to hold back this pain without uttering a single sound from his mouth, and the most important thing was that this guy's right leg had been wasted but he was still standing and didn't fall!

Not just Liao Lele, even the other disciples looking at this scene, as well as Feng Yun was somewhat surprised.

"Your willpower and perseverance are good."

Feng Yun's whole body released out an overbearing imposing aura while he walked towards Long Yu: "Next will be the revenge for my younger cousin, Feng Yang!"

His vision shifted towards Long Yu's chest, and it was obvious that this was the place where he was going to attack first.

Perhaps he was not good at the external control of Xuan qi, so he walked towards Long Yu and came right in front him.

"Are you ready?"

Feng Yun's eyes revealed a teasing look.

Long Yu clenched his teeth, but didn't say a word and was actually thinking quickly in his heart.

"What are my options, excluding the sudden interference from the Martial Court elder, my only hope is this mysterious 'Nine hidden Dragons Mark' printed on my chest. This Feng Yun seems to be eyeing my chest so he would most probably start from the chest. I'd like to see which one of them is stronger, Feng Yun or the 'Nine hidden Dragons Mark'!"

Long Yu was facing a hopeless situation but was still keeping his calm and thinking.

The Zhentian Sect didn't allow its disciples to kill each other in a fight, especially when a higher level disciple was fighting against a junior disciple, and in the current situation, Feng Yun certainly wouldn't dare to kill him in front of

the Martial Court, due to the presence of Martial Court elder. However looking at the arrogant demeanor of Feng Yun, Long Yu was naturally not willing to give in.

Long Yu puffed out his chest and stood proudly and unyielding in front of Feng Yun!

“Very interesting.”

Feng Yun smiled with a look of disdain in eyes: “You will forever remember the lesson you are going to receive from me tonight!”

After saying these words, he finally prepared to begin and condensed the strength of 30,000 Jin on his palm and directly shot on Long Yu’s chest.

Bang!

Accompanied with a heavy thundering sound, when Feng Yun’s palm shot on Long Yu’s chest, a formidable Xuan qi immediately invaded his body!

But right at this time, the ‘Nine hidden Dragons Mark’ on Long Yu’s chest sensed the invasion of an external force and instantaneously activated.

An ancient mystical force suddenly erupted from the ‘Nine hidden Dragons Mark’ and blasted Feng Yun, whose body flew up like a ball.

Hundreds of famous disciples of the Zhentian Sect suddenly widened their eyes in disbelief. They just could not believe what they saw.

Feng Yun was one of the top ten core disciples of Zhentian Sect and his palm dashed against the so called “waste”, Long Yun’s chest, but it was him who was actually blasted away! How was this possible?

This was just like the story in which a pig ate the tiger. But if Long Yu was capable of such a feat then why didn’t he use this secret move before his right leg was wasted by Feng Yun?

The next moment, Feng Yang’s body heavily fell on the ground and rolled on several times before stopping near the same spot where Feng Yang was lying unconscious. His white clothes were completely soiled and he seemed in a miserable state.

“Keke

Feng Yun coughed and looked towards Long Yu with his bloodshot eyes.

He could not believe that Long Yu, the waste of his clan, could actually blast him away, although he didn’t suffer any serious injuries, but he still lost face in front of everyone, and the most important thing was that he didn’t know what actually happened to cause this!

But he looked up and saw that Long Yu had already fallen down on the ground, and seemed to be in a comatose state, and the girl clad in grey clothes was anxiously shouting his name.

“Long Yu, Long Yu, are you okay?”

Liao Lele was lying her head on Long Yu's chest and there was a panicked expression on her face.

But, Long Yu was actually shut in his own mind and his whole body was motionless. It looked like he was in a deep sleep and both his breathing and heartbeat had stopped. Liao Lele thought that he was already dead.

After all, the power of Feng Yun was too strong, and although she didn't know about the force that blasted him away, but Long Yu was so heavily beaten up by his palm attack that severe injuries were inevitable.

"Give up Feng Yun!"

At this time, everyone heard a hoarse voice and an old man dressed in black robe appeared next to Long Yu.

"Elder Yu."

Seeing the elder, Feng Yun certainly knew that now he won't get an opportunity to finish Long Yu, but today, didn't he lose face in front of so many people?

Also, how could Long Yu blast him away, just what was the secret behind this?

Unfortunately, the Martial Court elder appeared so now it would be impossible to find about this secret from Long Yu. He decided to put this plan in motion at a later date.

“Feng Yun, even if you are a core disciple of my Zhentian Sect, but you cannot act without the regard for authority. Wudao doesn’t have a peak, and looking at your talent, you must struggle and try to climb as far as you can, instead of clinging to personal enmity!”

Elder Yu’s hoarse voice was not loud, but it spread throughout the area and everyone heard it, making them realize of their true goal, reaching the peak of Wudao.

Right, Wudao practice, a martial way without end, they just spent a whole day just to have a little fun, such a waste of time!

“The disciple understands his mistake so I will take my leave now.”

Feng Yun said but was slightly unwilling to leave, looked deeply towards the unconscious Long Yu, then turned around to leave.

At the instant he turned around, Feng Yun suddenly felt a burst of strange force emerging inside his body, and could not help but felt like throwing up blood, but in order to maintain his face, he restrained himself from throwing up.

“That is that strange force transferred from the body of that waste....”

Feng Yun’s face sank and didn’t dare to stay there for a long time and hastily left at a fast speed.

When Feng Yun left in a hurry, the other people knew that the show was finally over and Elder Yu’s words had also made them somewhat regret their action, so they soon went back to practice.

“Take him and come with me.”

The hoarse voice of the black robed elder entered Liao Lele’s ears and she hastily nodded.

“Yes elder.”

Although, Liao Lele was a girl, but she was at Wudao fourth layer and possessed the strength of 8000 Jin, so it was not a problem for her to carry Long Yu’s body.

The dim light of night filled the air, the stars shone in the sky.

Elder Yu wearing a black robe led the two towards the entrance of the Zhentian Sect, close to the Zhentian canyon.

A good show seemed to have finally ended.

However, no one actually knew that at present, Long Yu had fallen into the chaos of ancient memories.

When the mysterious force of ‘Nine hidden Dragons Mark’ suddenly erupted a moment ago, Long Yu finally got to know some of the secrets about it!

Chapter – 21 Dragon Mark's secrets

There was a stretch of vast desolate and chaotic world, the ground was burning continuously and a major section of earth had already collapsed. The destructive forces were flooding throughout the entire space.

During the ancient ages, flames of war were spread throughout the 'Divine Martial world'.

Long Yu felt that right now, he was inside this ancient and boundless world.

"Divine Martial world, this is actually the Divine Martial world, how in the hell did I end up here, this world should have existed in the ancient ages....."

Long Yu opened his eyes but regardless of that, he felt that he couldn't clearly see the scene present in front his eyes. He quickly realized that it was only a memory, and perhaps, a section of memories stored in 'Nine hidden Dragon Mark' had transferred into his mind.

This world was extremely broad, and initially, Long Yu only got to see all kinds of destructive forces raging the whole world into ruins and discovered that living creatures didn't exist in this world at this point of time.

He didn't know for how long he continued to look at the same desolate and ruined world, when suddenly in the distant sky, a black ripple gradually spread out, and quickly enlarged in front of his eyes. It was actually a black colossus flying in his direction from the horizon.

Although he couldn't clearly see its whole body, but he clearly knew what this thing actually was.

“Nine hidden Dragon!”

Long Yu was anxiously looking and only saw the shadow of that gigantic ‘Nine hidden Dragon’ blotting the sky. Wherever the dragon was flying over to, the black ripples coming out of its body were proliferating through the space and causing massive destruction. The destructive level of its formidable strength present in these black ripples was so high that the space wasn't able to maintain itself and was torn apart wherever the black ripples appeared.

It was obvious that he was the only supreme ruler of this world!

Like an emperor watching over the world from above, the ‘Nine hidden Dragon’ would fly all over, while igniting the space with its black flames which looked like blossoming black lotuses and continued to burn in this world without extinguishing.

‘Nine hidden Dragon’ was hovering high in the sky, and it seemed as if the entire world was enveloped with dark clouds, but suddenly, a divine light descended from heaven and with a loud bang, it fell on top of ‘Nine hidden Dragon’!

As the divine light descended from heaven, it seemed as if both time and space had come to a standstill, not even the formidable ‘Nine hidden Dragon’ was able to resist it!

Finally, Nine hidden Dragon, who was the Emperor Dragon of this world,

suffered the punishment from divine light and plunged into the depths of 'Divine Martial world' and was permanently sealed.....

.....

Long Yu didn't know how many years passed before the vitality came into existence in this 'Divine Martial world'.

All this time, Long Yu had always been floating above the place where the 'Nine hidden Dragon' fell and was sealed, and after experiencing innumerable years, a towering mountain formed at the same place. The remnants of the power of 'Nine hidden Dragon' were spread on this mountain in the form of mysterious black lines printed all over the mountain.

The habitation gradually began on the mountain and a tribe finally formed and started living on it.

The people of this tribe referred to themselves as "Descendants of the Dragon"!

Because, those black dragon lines granted formidable strength to the members of this tribe, and so long as the 'Nine hidden Dragon Mark' was carved on the chest, they were able to borrow the mysterious strength of ancient 'Nine hidden Dragon' sealed under the mountain.

The people of this tribe didn't know why they could borrow the strength of 'Nine hidden Dragon', but they lived in martial world where only those with formidable strength could survive and establish themselves.

So, gradually, nobody in the whole tribe tried to explore the reasons and continued to carve the 'Nine hidden Dragon Mark' on their chests and it became their most ancient traditional custom.

Gradually, 'Nine hidden Dragon Mark' became just an ordinary dragon-shaped mark carved on the chests of the members of this tribe.

This dragon-shaped mark had nine major layer changes and with each major change, it could enhance the might ten times.

During its first layer change, the dragon-shaped mark awakened the strength of 'Nine hidden Dragon Mark'!

"So that's how it is, at the Wudao fourth layer, the mark shows a significant change and once activated, it will be able to enhance the strength by 10,000 Jin..... But the next major change will occur at the Wudao eighth layer, and with the activation of mark, it will be able to enhance my strength by 100,000 Jin, and then, I will also be able to use the martial skills of 'Nine hidden Dragon Mark', it's really so incredible!"

Long Yu carefully observed the everyday life of the members of that tribe, and quickly figured out some of the growth patterns of 'Nine hidden Dragon Mark'.

However any memories related to the Wudao eight layer or above were still blurred and Long Yu couldn't see them clearly, and this was apparently because his current cultivation was low and he couldn't look into the depths of memories related to higher levels.

After looking at these memories, Long Yu understood that his decision to

choose a body refining type martial skill was correct.

Because the people in this tribe, in order to allow the body to withstand the formidable strength granted by the mark, grew up practicing body refining type martial skills, making their bodies tough like steel, so tough that even water and fire couldn't invade their bodies!

After arriving far inside the memories, they gradually blurred at this point.

Long Yu took a peek into some of the secrets of the mark, however, even bigger doubts took birth in his heart.

The tribal people called themselves “descendents of the Dragon”, but was this somehow related to his past life?

The ‘Nine hidden Dragon Mark’ was carved on the other Long Yu’s body only after dying, when he came to this world?

There were many questions but he was far from obtaining any explanation from these memories!

The fuzzy memories gradually started to fade, but at the last moment, Long Yu saw a beautiful woman, clad in white elegant clothes, but her noble figure seemed unreal and fuzzy.

This beautiful woman was looking at him from a very distant place, but he couldn't see her body clearly, he just saw a pair of beautiful and mirror-like eyes, while her two white hands seemed to be gradually withdrawing from Long Yu's chest

“Yu Fei, Yu Fei

These words suddenly appeared in his heart as if coming straight from the ‘Nine hidden Dragon Mark’.

“Did this woman named Yu Fei engrave ‘Nine hidden Dragon Mark’ on my chest? But, who is she? Why must she carve the mark on my chest.....”

The scene gradually blurred in front of his eyes and a complete darkness spread everywhere.

Whether it was the ‘Nine hidden Dragon Mark’, the tribe of ‘descendants of the Dragon’ or that beautiful woman named Yu Fei, all vanished without a trace as if they never appeared in front of his eyes.

Suddenly, Long Yu opened his eyes.

“You are awake!”

A crisp female voice suddenly resounded as if startled by Long Yu.

Long Yu listened to this voice and quickly remembered that the voice belonged to the pretty Liao Lele. He gave a closer look and found himself lying on a bamboo bed, while Liao Lele was twisting a towel and seemed to be wiping his body.

“What are you doing?”

Long Yu gave a wary look to Liao Lele.

“You say what I’m doing?”

Liao Lele saw the vigilant look in Long Yu’s eyes and stared at him and said: “Your right leg was seriously injured by Feng Yun’s move, and we used the wonderful medicine of old white to cure your injuries and I was attending to you day and night, otherwise you would have lost your this leg!”

Long Yu discovered that she was wiping the wounds on his knee area and also noticed that those wounds had almost healed.

He raised his head and looked around and found that he was in a bamboo room with a quiet and beautiful environment, but he didn’t know where exactly he was at the moment.

“Where am I?”

Long Yu asked aloud.

“This is the dwelling place of old white and old black, located at the top of Zhentian canyon.” Liao Lele replied in a casual manner.

“Old white and old black?”

Long Yu had some doubts. He clearly remembered that when he fainted near the entrance of Martial Court, he vaguely heard Feng Yun calling the name of

“Elder Yu”, so why was he now at the dwelling place of old white and old black?

“The guardian elders of Zhentian Sect are good friends with the Martial Court’s Elder Yu.”

Liao Lele explained to him.

Long Yu heard this and nodded then he seemed to have remembered something and asked: “How long was I unconscious for?”

“Two weeks and I even thought that you are dead.”

Liao Lele snorted loudly.

Although, her tone was rough, but Long Yu actually felt a sense of care and worry in her voice, which arose a warm feeling in his heart, he smiled but did not say anything.

He sat up and found that his body had no discomfort, but since he was unconscious and lying down in bed for two weeks, he felt slightly weak.

The deep injury caused in his right leg by Feng Yun’s attack had almost healed and there should be no impediment to his movements.

“I must inform the elders that you woke up.”

Liao Lele said to Long Yu, then stood up, turned around, and walked out of the

bamboo room.

At that time, Long Yu slightly moved his body and wanted to stretch his body, but suddenly discovered that the clothes on his body had been changed, and froze on the spot.

“Who changed my clothes? Old white and old black? There’s a high possibility that they changed my clothes, or perhaps.....”

Liao Lele?

Not good, he must find out who changed his clothes!

However, no matter who changed his clothes, didn’t it mean that his ‘Nine hidden Dragon Mark’ had been discovered?

While he was still thinking, the bamboo door was pushed open, and an old man dressed in white came inside the room. Liao Lele followed behind the old man, but she didn’t enter the room, just made faces at Long Yu then shut the door.

Now, only Long Yu and the old man in white were present inside the room.

“Long Yu, you finally woke up.”

The old man walked towards Long Yu without making a sound. There was a kind smile on his face when looking at Long Yu as if he was looking at a good friend, and there wasn’t the slightest hesitation in his attitude towards Long Yu.

“You can call me old white.”

The old man in white said and stood firmly beside Long Yu and suddenly looked at his chest area.

Long Yu was startled and thought that the secret of his ‘Nine hidden Dragon Mark’ was really discovered by old white.

However, the old man didn’t inquire about it and said with a kind smile on his face: “In order to cure your leg, I used a reincarnation pill, it’s a top grade immortality drug, and besides me, no one else inside the Zhentian Sect has the authority to access it.”

“Thank you elder.”

Long Yu was undoubtedly very grateful to him, but he still wondered, why this old man would be willing to spend a precious immortality drug to save his leg, was it because old white discovered his talent or did he want to accept Long Yu as his direct disciple?

While he was still thinking, old white said with a calm smile on his face: “Boy, you don’t misunderstand my actions. I saved you not because of any selfish motive, in fact it has nothing to do with you, I did it because of your father.”

“My father?”

Long Yu heard it and was surprised for a moment. So old white saved him just

because he knew his father?

No, it could not be just that, there was definitely a deeper relationship between his father and old white otherwise it was impossible for old white to spend a top grade immortality drug for an ordinary friend's son.

Top grade immortality drug, it was almost much precious than a high grade immortality drug, no need to say how precious it actually was!

Long Yu suddenly remembered that before coming to Zhentian Sect, his foster father, Feng Longsong, said to him that there was an old friend of his father in Zhentian Sect. Could it be that old white was that friend?

“But about your father, I do not have much to say.”

Old white glanced at Long Yu's chest and said: “The dragon-shaped mark on your chest, I think it should be your father who carved it on your chest. Although I do not know what it actually is but I must say that your future achievements will not be small. When you become strong enough, you will naturally come to know about your father.”

Long Yu nodded and mused in his heart, although he never got to know his father but he was sure that his father was definitely not the one who imprinted the ‘Nine hidden Dragon Mark’ on his chest.

Because, he clearly remembered that this dragon-shaped mark was not on his chest before crossing over to this world, so it was obvious that he got this mark after coming to this world and could be the result produced during his crossing.

Moreover, in the fuzzy ancient memories of ‘Nine hidden Dragon Mark’, he saw that it was actually a beautiful woman who carved the mark on his chest whose name seemed to be “Yu Fei”, and he didn’t know why, but he seemed to have an intuition that this Yu Fei was absolutely not one of his relatives from this lifetime.

Certainly, old white made an assumption and automatically linked his ‘Nine hidden Dragon Mark’ with his father. But it was actually good that he made an assumption, because now, Long Yu could avoid telling him about the bigger secrets of ‘Nine hidden Dragon Mark’.

Long Yu was sure that old white actually didn’t know about Yu Fei, descendants of dragon tribe and the ‘Nine hidden Dragon’.

“But kid, you really had it rough this time.”

Old White changed the subject, suddenly smiled and said: “Do you know the present condition of Feng Yun?”

“What happened to him?”

Long Yu said in a surprised manner because he really did not know what happened to Feng Yun. Just because of this Feng Yun, he was unconscious for two weeks and almost lost his leg, so when old white mentioned about his present condition, he got curious and really wanted to know what happened to Feng Yun after he was blasted away, because Long Yu had fainted right at that very instant!

Chapter – 22 Abyss of Teng snakes

Looking at the curious look on Long Yu's face, old white chuckled, and stroked his white beard and said: "Feng Yun is a genius of our Zhentian Sect, and is also one of the top ten core disciples, currently at Wudao eighth layer, but thanks to your father's blessings, now he would have to spend two months in rest to recuperate."

Old white still attributed Long Yu's dragon mark's power by linking it to his father, but Long Yu didn't argue with him, only felt somewhat strange and said: "Recuperate?"

"Yes."

Old white faintly smiled and said: "He would have to take rest for two months to heal his injuries. I think that when he shot his palm on your chest, he received a tremendous vibrating shock instead from your inner strength. We were shocked because you are at only at the trivial Wudao fifth layer, so how could your body produce such a powerful shaking force to be able to blast him away, but after knowing your father's identity, it's understandable and it surely was not accidental. Next morning, that fellow finally realized the inner injuries he got from the strange force which transferred from your body to his."

Long Yu finally knew that when Feng Yun's palm fiercely pounded on his chest, the 'Nine hidden Dragons Mark' must have automatically activated and the mysterious force must have given him internal injuries when he was blasted away and now he would have to rest and recuperate for two months. It seemed that he was heavily injured!

"Later if I encounter a dangerous situation, then I can attract the opposite

party to attack the ‘Nine hidden Dragon Mark’, but the news about my fight with Feng Yun must have spread, so it would be tough to swindle my opponents who are already aware of this.....”

Long Yu thought to himself then felt his own strength and discovered that he was still at the Wudao fifth layer with strength of 16,000 Jin, and the ‘Nine hidden Dragon Mark’ could still enhance his strength by 10,000 Jin. So, basically nothing had actually changed in his body during the time he was unconscious.

“Kid, right now you are at the Wudao fifth layer, there’s half a month’s time left for the start of the competition at Royal Ancient Ginseng forest. If you can step into Wudao sixth layer during this time, then you can qualify to represent our Zhentian Sect in this competition.”

Old white suddenly said and looked at Long Yu with a look of anticipation in his eyes.

“Royal Ancient Ginseng forest?”

Long Yu had certain doubts because he never heard about this matter before.

“There are seven major sects in the Tang State, but all of these seven sects come under the jurisdiction of the Tang Emperor’s royal clan.”

Old white explained: “Royal Ancient Ginseng forest was actually prepared by the royal clan of Tang State where many wild ancient ginsengs grow in abundance. When consumed, it can enhance the cultivation level of the practitioner and since ancient ginseng is of high quality, its effects can be compared to some high grade immortality drugs! Every year, Tang State’s royal

clan invites the seven large Sects to participate in the competition, and this year, it's the turn of the disciples of our Zhentian Sect, Hanbing Sect, Qiansi Sect and some other small clans to participate in the competition.”

Hanbing Sect!

Long Yu heard and a cold look flashed in his eyes. Wasn't that Feng Yao a disciple of Hanbing Sect?

Of course, Feng Yao was at the Wudao seventh level, but at the current strength of Long Yu, she was no longer as unattainable as she used to be!

“Feng Yao, you wanted to kill me, I will settle the account with you sooner or later!”

After knowing about this, he certainly would not miss this opportunity to participate in the competition.

Then old white explained about the matters related to the Royal Ancient Ginseng forest.

Each time, only three major sects and some other clans participated in the competition and the participants must be below 20 years old and must also have the cultivation of at least Wudao sixth layer in order to be eligible to participate in this competition.

This year, Zhentian Sect would be participating and there were originally 16 people who were eligible to participate in the competition. Fang Kang was one of the eligible disciples but since he was severely injured, now only 15 disciples

were going to represent Zhentian Sect in the competition.

If Long Yu could reach the Wudao sixth layer within two weeks, then he would be able to take Fang Kang's place and participate in the competition.

Moreover, a total of fifty disciples were going to participate adding all the participants from Zhentian Sect, Hanbing Sect and Qiansi Sect.

In the Royal Ancient Ginseng forest, the ancient ginsengs were divided into three grades namely high grade, middle grade and low grade. Every year only three high grade ancient ginsengs were prepared as reward and fifty geniuses competed for them!

In addition, every few years, the Royal Ancient Ginseng forest might present some top grade ancient ginsengs, and their effects were better than high-grade ancient ginsengs. If a martial cultivator absorbed the Lingqi present in a top grade ancient ginseng then the result would easily be comparable to two or three years of torturous cultivation.

If a top grade ancient ginseng appeared as the reward in the competition then the winner would get his cultivation level increased directly to the next layer!

Certainly, if the cultivator was at a bottleneck then it would not be easy to have a breakthrough, for example while stepping from Wudao sixth layer to Wudao seventh layer which needed to bring out Xuan qi out of the body, making it a major bottleneck, and ordinary warriors needed to spend a lot of time to achieve this.

As for the top grade ancient ginseng, it was the best quality ancient ginseng,

but it rarely grew in the Royal Ancient Ginseng forest, and if appeared, then each time, it was generally taken by the people of Tang royal clan, and not once was it obtained by the disciples of seven large Sects or other clans.

“Kid, you need to reach the Wudao sixth layer, I may not be able to help you with this but I can give you a clue.”

After the old white finished explaining about the Royal Ancient Ginseng forest, he immediately said: “Many Teng snake demon beasts dwell in the abyss of Zhentian mountain forest. The experienced outer disciples go to the abyss to hunt Teng snakes, and the effect is good, if you are able to kill a Teng snake and obtain its neidan, then after consuming it, the enhancement in cultivation will not be inferior to the enhancement gained from a middle grade immortality drug. Even if you manage to collect some spirit grass, you can directly consume it or make immortality drug out of it which can also help in considerably increasing your cultivation level.”

Spirit grass, immortality drug or demon beast neidan could enhance the cultivation of the martial cultivator but it gave the best results only for the first time. If the same thing was consumed again then it won't have much enhancement effect on the cultivation.

So, the outer disciples would go to the abyss of Teng snakes in order to find and behead at least one Teng snake and obtain its neidan.

“I know, thank you senior.” Long Yu smiled and said.

He decided that he would definitely go to the abyss of Teng snakes and kill one to obtain its neidan. Depending on his absorbing capacity granted by the ‘Nine hidden Dragon Mark’ which simply went against the heaven's will, if he managed

to get a neidan then it would certainly enhance his cultivation by a large portion, even if it failed to help him in reaching the Wudao sixth layer in one shot. Ultimately, he would get closer to the Wudao sixth layer.

Due to the time constraints, Long Yu didn't say anything to old white.

Long Yu tidied up and decided to leave.

.....

Liao Lele came out to see off Long Yu.

Outside the bamboo house, not far away, above the butte, there was a alcove, where at that time, old white and an another man clad in black robe were engaged in playing chess and didn't pay any attention to these two young disciples.

On the fork in the mountain road descending the mountain, Liao Lele stopped.

"Take this path and go all the way to reach the abyss of Teng snakes. Be careful ok?"

Liao Lele had taken care of Long Yu for two weeks, and right now, she was quite reluctant to part with him.

"Aren't you coming with me?" Long Yu asked.

“No, old white has received me as his disciple, and temporarily I am busy with my daily practice, moreover my cultivation level is also low, if I went to the abyss of Teng snakes, I will definitely end up dragging you behind.” Liao Lele said but it was obvious from the look on her face that she wanted to accompany him.

Long Yu suddenly thought, so that’s how it was, this girl was received as a disciple by old white, but this was a golden chance for her. Just from looking once, one could say that the cultivation of old white was very profound and might have gone beyond the level of Wudao ninth layer and reached another realm.

She had been accepted as old white’s apprentice and it could be said that she now had a backing in Zhentian Sect, at least she would no longer be bullied by that “fat pig” Feng Yang.

Long Yu turned around and was ready to descend the mountain, but after taking two steps, he suddenly stopped and asked without looking back: “For these two weeks, were you the one changing my clothes?”

“Right.”

Liao Lele’s crisp voice came from behind him.

“Did you see it?”

Long Yu asked without looking back.

“Of course.”

Liao Lele answered again.

“.....”

Long Yu didn't say anything, and marching at a great pace, he quickly went down the mountain and disappeared from the sight of Liao Lele.

“Hmph, so what I saw? Merely the tip, but it gained mass when it straightened up.”

Liao Lele rearranged her hair which was being blown by the breeze, and her face had turned somewhat red. She stood there for a long time, until she made sure that Long Yu was really not coming back, and with a feeling of somewhat dismay in her heart, she turned back.

Long Yu didn't turn back to look at Liao Lele so naturally he didn't know about her reaction at that time.

At this moment, his mind was completely focused on enhancing his cultivation level. He would definitely go to the abyss of Teng snakes and if his luck was good and he managed to kill a Teng snake, then its neidan would certainly enhance his cultivation, but whether he would be able to reach the Wudao sixth layer depended on the quality of neidan which in turn depended on the strength level of the Teng snake.

“Only half a month's time is left and I don't seem to have any other ways of enhancing my cultivation faster....fine, I will first go to the abyss of Teng snakes.”

Long Yu made the decision and quickly moved along the mountain road towards the forest in the direction of the abyss of Teng snakes.

Zhentian mountain sierra stretched far and wide and even from the peak of the Zhentian canyon, it was hard to see the end of these mountains ranges.

The abyss of Teng snakes was located approximately 40 miles away from the Zhentian Sect's entrance.

Long Yu rushed all the way using 'Flickering wind step' and occasionally came across twelve groups of outer disciples going together in groups for hunting Teng snake in the abyss, but nobody greeted him, neither did he greet them, and they all respectively walked their own ways.

After only half an hour, the abyss of Teng snakes appeared in front of Long Yu.

The Zhentian mountain forest was vast and extremely dense because of the presence of verdant and luxuriant trees that didn't allow the sun rays to penetrate and reach inside. Even the outer disciples of Zhentian Sect only dared to roam on its periphery, because if they went deeper, then they would most likely bump into a formidable demon beast and lose their lives.

"I just hope that today I manage to quickly find a Teng snake."

Long Yu hoped as he stepped into the abyss of Teng snakes.

Ordinary Teng snakes found in the abyss were demon beasts with their strengths equivalent to the strength of a person at Wudao fifth layer and it would be easy for Long Yu to kill a Teng snake of such strength level.

After entering deep into the abyss of Teng snakes, Long Yu's field vision dropped a lot. In such a dense and dark forest, one could only rely on sense of hearing, smell, and one's intuition!

Besides Teng snakes, it was possible that he might encounter many other demon beasts in the forest. Moreover there were many poisonous vines present in the abyss of Teng snakes, and though they were not fatal, but often caused great trouble for the cultivator who got trapped in them.

For example, when Long Yu was passing through a place sometime ago, he saw some densely crowded vines in which some of the outer disciples were entangled, and they were trying their best to get out of them, but the only way to get out was to completely clean up these vines which was going to waste a lot of time.

Long Yu decided to move forward without paying attention to them, and depending upon his own keen intuition, he rapidly went deeper into the abyss of Teng snakes.

After he went about 10 miles deep into the forests, his keen intuition suddenly caught a trace of bloody aura, and he concentrated his attention entirely on it.

Bloody aura, there were signs of slaughter everywhere!

His heart began to "thump" rapidly, and he cautiously went towards the place where the bloody aura was transmitting from, in a while, he faintly heard some people crying for help.

” Teng snake king, it’s the Teng snake king, help us, help!”

“Sister Qin, do not leave me – ah!”

Pitiful screams, cries for help, resounded one after another in the abyss.

Long Yu secretly approached and quietly took a look at the situation. There, he saw a huge shadow swallowing a blue-robed outer disciple!

Chapter – 23 fierce combat with the snake king

Not long ago, this outer disciple of the Zhentian Sect was alive and kicking, but now he actually became the food inside the belly of this colossus beast, not even a little residue was left of his body.

On the side, besides being extremely cautious, Long Yu was keeping a closer look at the monster, and was surprised at its huge size, just like a cobra enlarged by several times. The entire body of the beast was dark, almost 100 feet long, and whenever it raised its head above the ground, it reached a height of thirty feet, quite ferocious.

However, on its head, there were no eyes and nose, it only had a giant mouth from which venom was dripping, and it was this giant mouth that had swallowed an outer disciple a moment ago!

This was the Teng snake King.

“Teng snake King, not only its strength is comparable to the strength of a warrior at Wudao seventh layer, but also contains highly toxic venom, its body has rough skin and flesh, seems to be very difficult to deal with.”

An excited look flashed in Long Yu’s eyes: “If I can kill it and obtain its neidan then it will definitely help me in reaching the Wudao sixth layer in one fell swoop!”

Teng snake King possessed the strength of 50,000 Jin to 60,000 Jin, and with this much strength, a casual swing of its tail could easily lead to Long Yu’s death. In a direct fight, Long Yu was definitely not its opponent. So, he would have to

find some other ways to deal with the monster.

Long Yu carefully observed the surroundings and quietly began to take action.

Besides Teng snake King, in the field, there were four other outer disciples of Zhentian Sect, all wearing blue clothes. Very scared of the Teng snake King, all of them looked panic stricken, and were running away from the spot as soon as possible.

A woman was running at the fastest speed, and it seemed that she was the so-called Sister Qin, but the speed of Teng snake King was faster than her.

The black colossus was quickly going through the forest, and swept its tail directly hitting the slowest of the outer disciples, and it was so forcefully hit that he flew up and heavily crashed into a towering giant tree, then fell on the ground, and instantly met his death.

In the next moment, Teng snake King turned around and quickly sprayed its toxic venom on another outer disciple, and his body immediately started to rot, while he was incessantly screaming rolling on the ground.

“Sister Qin! Sister Qin!”

The remaining last person running right behind Sister Qin was frightened and shouting in panic, as if this Sister Qin could save him.

“You stay here and try to stop it, my elder brother can arrive at any moment!”

Sister Qin was similarly in panic and was desperate to escape quickly, as she knew very well that a quick escape was the only way to save life in such a situation, so how could she dare to stop?

“Stop it?”

The man almost despaired after he heard her. She wanted him to stop the Teng snake King?

Confronted with the terrifying Teng snake King, just how could he possibly stay and stop it? For stopping it, won't he have to rely on his petty strength of Wudao fifth layer? His strength was not even enough to stop the beast's tail!

“The Shaking air law!”

The man used an agility type martial skill with full force, but he had recently entered the Sect and had only practiced the shaking air law to the Xiao Cheng level.

Moreover, even if he had practiced the shaking air law to the Da Cheng level, then also it was impossible to rely on the air ripples to hinder Teng snake king's action, because the power gap was too great between the two sides.

Even if he was running at full speed, his speed was nothing compared to the Teng snake King's chasing speed.

After a moment, the huge body of Teng snake King directly came over the body of that outer disciple and swallowed him completely, then opened its large mouth, and with a loud roar it instantly advanced towards Sister Qin!

“Do not come, do not come any closer, my elder brother is at the Wudao seventh layer, if you dare to touch me, my brother will not let you off!”

At that time, Sister Qin said sweetly and charmingly, but she was extremely frightened on the inside, her face was full of panic expression expecting the Teng snake King to not come near her, and the only thing that came in her mind was to threaten the Teng snake King with her brother's identity.

Unfortunately, why would Teng snake King care about her empty threat?

Teng snake King advanced to kill its final prey, Sister Qin, and it directly swept its tail and struck down an old thick tree.

A loud thunder-like sound spread in the surroundings, and the tree fell right in front of Sister and blocked her escape route, and a sharp thorny branch of the falling tree directly pierced her white thigh, and she immediately fell down on the ground with a severe pain in her thigh.

“Hu Chi

Teng snake King's large mouth spurted foul odor and it quickly dragged its huge body towards Sister Qin and soon approached her, it seemed that it could kill her any moment.

However, at this time, a heavy boulder arrived from a distant place towards the head of Teng snake King!

The size of the boulder was same as the size of Wang Ten snake's head. It weighed 10,000 Jin and came straight through the forest and pounded directly on its head generating a heavy sound and threw down its body on the ground.

But immediately, Teng snake King jolted its head powerfully and shot the boulder to fly in the air, and it fell on the ground a bit far away.

Teng snake King opened its large mouth and turned its head towards the direction from where the heavy boulder was thrown at it.

It was actually Long Yu, standing at a distance of thirty feet away from the Teng snake King, still maintaining the throwing pose after throwing the boulder. His strength of throwing the boulders with strength of 10,000 Jin could be regarded as good at his current strength.

“After all, this person is a disciple of Zhentian Sect, at least I should try and rescue a disciple if I can, but if she ends up dying then that's her fate, it can only be a pity.....”

Long Yu thought while calmly observing the movements of Teng snake King.

“Hu Chi!”

When Teng snake King was pounded by the heavy boulder, it became extremely angry, and suddenly abandoned the nearby Sister Qin and rushed in the direction where Long Yu was standing.

Although, Sister Qin was extremely frightened and panting, but when she saw that Teng snake King turned towards a different direction leaving her, then she

heaved a sigh of relief.

She wanted to escape and tried to get up, but as her thigh was pierced by a sharp thorny tree branch and blood was profusely coming out, so she couldn't stand up, and could only curse her fate.....

Faced with the angry Teng snake King rushing towards him at a very high speed, he immediately displayed 'Flickering wind step' and hastily retreated.

Although Long Yu was using 'Flickering wind step' which he had already practiced to the Da Cheng level, but his speed was still inferior to Teng snake King's speed, but he didn't want to escape rather he had already planned to lead Teng snake King into a trap!

After a short time, the distance between Teng snake King and Long Yu remained only twenty feet, but at this time, Teng snake King suddenly felt that its body was caught in a long vine.

Immediately, Teng snake King wanted to rip apart that long vine, but it never thought that in doing so, it would end up alarming a neighboring large vine.

Only after a moment, one after another, sturdy vines suddenly raided Teng snake King's body and twined its whole body tightly. The sharp thorns were protruding and spread all over these vines and began to pierce into its skin one by one and started sucking its flesh and blood.

"These vines are a specific type of vegetation found in the abyss and possess natural wisdom, needless to say that Teng snakes are their natural preys, and these vines like to eat Teng snakes."

Long Yu remembered the information pertaining to vines present in his mind when he had heard about it from Liao Lele, and could not help but feel that this girl was quite an attentive person. She had already looked up such valuable information regarding vines.

If a martial cultivator got entangled in such vines, it won't only lead to a waste of time and nothing serious. But, if a Teng snake got entangled in the vines, then due to its sheer huge size, it will keep getting entangled in the vines until all of its flesh and blood had been sucked dry by the vines!

Teng snake King despised Long Yu. It never expected that it would end up falling into Long Yu's trap. It was careless and accidentally fell into such a hopeless situation.

"Hu Chi!"

Teng snake King opened its giant mouth, and was constantly blowing out venom on the vines, but the poison had no effect on its natural enemy. The best it could do was to use its poison to temporarily block the vines from twining around its body, but after some time, more vines would once again quickly start to entangle its body.

Teng snake King was huge in comparison to these vines, and its power was also far beyond the strength of these vines.

Teng snake King started tearing the vines wrapped around it with a force of 50,000-60,000 Jin and many vines were torn apart and fell down from its body.

However, the vines around here were numerous in number. Although, Teng snake King continued to tear the vines with its great strength, but as it was tearing more and more vines, more and more wounds started to appear on its body, and as time passed, its strength decreased considerably.

Teng snake King and vines were both extremely powerful, rolling and winding against each other, the old and sturdy trees in the nearby area were all destroyed, making a stretch of open area in this dense forest.

Long Yu was hiding on the side, silently observing the fierce struggle of Teng snake King in the field, and after approximately the burning time of two sticks of incense, Teng snake King's strength seemed to have been completely depleted, it stopped struggling and its heavy body fell on the ground and stopped moving.

Surrounding his body, countless sharp thorn vines were scattered on the ground and seemed to have been completely torn apart by the terrifying strength of Teng snake King.

Apparently, it was the situation of no side wins.

Long Yu cautiously walked towards the giant body of Teng snake King.

Soon, he was only 30 feet away from Teng snake King.

“Hu Chi!”

Suddenly, Teng snake King's body somersaulted into the sky, and moving its giant mouth, it sprayed strong venom towards Long Yu. So it turned out to be a surprise attack!

If Long Yu didn't dodge this surprise attack and its venom would naturally kill him, then Teng snake King would have been the final winner.

However, Long Yu had always maintained a high degree of vigilance, and efforts of Teng snake King were all in vain.

As the Teng snake King spurted the venom, Long Yu's figure immediately dodged.

"Flickering wind step!"

When a cultivator practiced 'Flickering wind step' to the Da Cheng level, he could cross a distance of thirty feet in a blink of an eye, so the very next instant, Long Yu's figure appeared close to Teng snake King's belly!

"Give me your neidan!"

Long Yu shouted, and took the opportunity to pull up two sharp thorn vines from the ground with both hands to use them as a whip and flung the vines towards the abdomen of Teng snake King!

Chi la la!

Although sharp thorn vines had been snapped and lost life, but the sharp thorns on its surface still maintained their strong and sharp offensive strength. All of a sudden, the wound on the abdomen of Teng snake King began to expand.

At the same time, Long Yu was clutching sharp thorn vines in his hands, and his hands were also punctured by the sharp thorns, causing the blood to drip continuously and the intense pain almost made him to let go of the vines.

However he knew very well that if he wanted to beat Teng snake King, he would have to bear this pain, because right now, besides using these sharp thorn vines, he did not have any other means to cut open the tough skin on the abdomen of Teng snake King.

He clenched his teeth and made an effort to pull taut the two sharp thorn vines, like using sword right transversely on the abdomen of Teng snake king.

“Hu Chi!”

Teng snake King roared fiercely and a large wound was cut open on its abdomen. Long Yu quickly found and dug out the neidan from its belly and tightly grasped it in his hand.

“Success!”

Long Yu succeeded, and at the maximum speed, he jumped away from Teng snake King, and suddenly felt the warmth of the fist-sized Lingqi-rich neidan of Teng snake King, and his heart was instantly filled with joy.

Although, his hands were covered in blood due to injuries inflicted by holding the sharp thorn vines, and blood was constantly dripping from the countless holes made on his hands, but he didn't care about his injuries, because now he finally obtained the neidan of Teng snake King, and with its help, he would be able to step into the Wudao sixth layer in one fell swoop!

After the neidan was taken out of its body, the Teng snake King's body heavily crashed on the ground.

But at this time, two figures suddenly emerged in front of Long Yu.

One of them was Sister Qin, whom he saved a while ago, and at the moment, she was leaning on a stick and seemed to be facing difficulty in walking.

And at her side, there was a young man wearing black clothes, and from his appearance he looked to be in his early twenties. A formidable aura was coming out of his body and anybody could see that this man had a very high cultivation level, probably at Wudao seventh layer!

“Elder brother, it's him, he is the guy who took Teng snake King's neidan from me. You must help me in taking it back from him!”

At this time, that “Sister Qin” was greedily looking at the neidan in Long Yu's hand!

Chapter – 24 bite the hand that feeds one

Long Yu heard the words of Sister Qin and could not help but frowned.

Took neidan of Teng snake King from her?

She brought back help to snatch it back from him?

This Sister Qin was simply ridiculous. It was evident that Long Yu just now killed Teng snake King so when did she kill it?

Long Yu saved her but instead of thanking him, she actually brought someone to help her snatch away the neidan from him!

“So she intends to bite the hand that fed her?”

(Mystique – ‘bite the hand that feeds one’ is an idiom.)

Long Yu thought then carefully observed Sister Qin and that black-clothed youth and felt that both of them looked somewhat familiar.

Then he suddenly remembered something related to surname Qin.

Yu Guan City, Qin Clan.

Qin Ronger and her elder brother Qin Tianque, this brother and sister combo

of Qin Clan had joined Zhentian Sect, and this year, Qin Tianque appeared to be in his early twenties, but had actually reached the Wudao seventh layer.

At Wudao seventh layer, it was possible to release Xuan qi outside the body and could very much enhance the battle efficiency, and Long Yu, who was still at the Wudao fifth layer, was definitely not his opponent.

However, if Long Yu could only have enough time to absorb the neidan of Teng snake King, then he would be able to step into the Wudao sixth layer, and then, he might a small chance.....

The eyes of Black-clothed youth, Qin Tianque, were clearly revealing arrogance. He shot a fierce glance at Long Yu and lightly said: "I am an inner disciple of Zhentian Sect, Qin Tianque. Know your limits and obediently hand over Teng snake King's neidan, and I may exempt you from physical suffering."

"What utter nonsense, I killed Teng snake King and I also saved your sister's life, but now you come and ask me to hand over the neidan?"

Long Yu said with a contemptuous smile on his face.

"Ha ha ha! That's really funny!"

Qin Tianque laughed: "You are just a trivial Wudao fifth layer brat, how can you possibly kill the Teng snake King whose strength is said to be comparable to a master of Wudao seventh layer? It is obvious that you used despicable means to snatch it from my sister's hands!"

Hearing the biased words of the opposite party, a cold feeling appeared in

Long Yu's heart.

Long Yu looked at that Sister Qin and saw that she actually didn't budge even the slightest while her beautiful eyes were lingering on the neidan of Teng snake King.

If she could obtain this neidan then she would be able to step into the Wudao sixth stage and then she would become eligible for participating in the competition of Royal Ancient Ginseng forest!

She would never let go of this opportunity, even if it was no different than betraying her own savior, she must obtain the neidan at any cost, not to mention there was no one else nearby so no one would know about this matter except the two siblings!

Therefore, there wasn't the slightest guilt in her eyes instead there was a lot of greed and expectation.

"Qin Ronger, rest assured, I will definitely seize the neidan of Teng snake King for you."

Qin Tianque gave a doting look to Qin Ronger then immediately turned his face towards Long Yu and a teasing look flashed in his eyes when he lightly said: "So, do you want me to begin?"

"Senior doesn't need to trouble himself. I will hand over the neidan of Teng snake King."

Long Yu said in a calm voice then raised his hand as if he was going to throw

the neidan in the direction of Qin Tianque.

“Good, you seem to know your limits and where you actually belong.”

Qin Ronger proudly raised her chin as if she already anticipated that Long Yu would eventually have to hand over the neidan, then her elder brother would kill him and finish this matter once and forever. The siblings would naturally not allow Long Yu to live and give him an opportunity to spread the news about this matter in the Sect!

But the next moment, Long Yu's threw something from his already raised hand but it was not the neidan!

Instead, he threw a good few sharp thorn vines towards Qin Tianque, while he himself cast flickering wind step, turned into a burst of breeze, and turned around to run!

“You asked for it!”

When Qin Tianque saw the running figure of Long Yu, the arrogant expression on his face suddenly changed into a cold one. With a flick of his hand, several ripples of blue-green Xuan Qi congealed into a wind-blade and instantly rushed towards the sharp thorn vines and cut them off in the mid-air.

Qin Tianque's figure rushed forwards and he also cast an agility type martial skill to chase Long Yu!

“Elder brother, you must snatch my neidan back from him!”

Qin Ronger viciously shouted.

“Ronger, don’t worry!”

Qin Tianque spoke and the Xuan qi started operating inside his body, and he actually cast a peak level agility type martial skill, giving him a speed far more than Long Yu’s speed!

The agility type martial skill he cast actually belonged to the Qin Clan of Yu Guan City and its effect was no less than the flickering wind step of Zhentian Sect, and in just a burning time of half a stick of incense, the distance between them rapidly reduced.

Originally, Long Yu turned around and fled when he was unprepared, and taking advantage of this, Long Yu was able to widen the separation between them by 20-30 feet, but soon, Qin Tianque’s fast speed caused this separation to come down to less than 10 feet.

And this distance of 10 feet was the longest distance up to which Qin Tianque could successfully and accurately strike the Xuan qi!

“Xuan wind destroyer!”

Qin Tianque immediately released strong ripples of bluish-green Xuan qi and once again congealed a wind-blade and threw towards fleeing Long Yu.

“Flickering wind step, dodge!”

Long Yu just now delayed its use for some time, but now, he could finally use the flickering wind step once again.

Feeling the Xuan qi attack of Qin Tianque drawing close to him from behind, Long Yu congealed Xuan qi, which made his whole body light like the breeze, and now, one flickering step could take him beyond thirty feet!

“Relying on your flickering wind step practiced to Da Cheng level to dodge my attack, but can you escape the second time?”

Qin Tianque sneered and his stature flashed, a moment later, he used a Xuan qi based martial skill, and suddenly, dark Xuan qi such as snakes raided towards Long Yu!

Long Yu immediately dodged to one side and hid behind a giant tree.

However, the Xuan wind destroyer was a top grade martial skill, in addition to that, Qin Tianque was at the Wudao seventh layer, so the wind-blade released by him penetrated the giant tree and passed right through it!

Chi!

The wind-blade inflicted a shearing wound on Long Yu’s arm and it started to bleed profusely, but he didn’t utter a single word, and his running speed suddenly increased instead of decreasing.

“I will see for how long you can escape.”

Qin Tianque smiled and a teasing expression appeared on his face. To him, it was just like a cat-and-mouse chase and he was having fun by sometime ridiculing Long Yu.

In the abyss of Teng snakes, the forest was so dense that it almost completely blocked the sunlight from entering inside. So, it was absolutely impossible for anyone to know what was happening here. Qin Tianque had naturally already planned to destroy Long Yu's corpse without a trace.

But the next moment, the smile on Qin Tianque's face suddenly faded away.

"How is this possible, this boy actually -"

Qin Tianque was so busy in chasing Long Yu and having fun that he actually didn't notice that he unknowingly had been led in a circle through the forest by Long Yu and had returned to the starting position from where the chase began!

Qin Ronger's leg had been severely injured and it was difficult for her move, so he left her near the corpse of Teng snake King and chased after Long Yu, but he did not expect that he would chasing in a circle and would finally come back to the same place.

Long Yu ran ahead and a smirk suddenly appeared on his face.

"Ronger, be careful!"

Qin Tianque immediately shouted loudly.

Qin Ronger was fantasizing that by this time, her brother would have snatched neidan, but how could she possibly know about Long Yu's strategy?

Before she could react, like a breeze, Long Yu appeared beside Qin Ronger with a big stride and grabbed her neck.

"What!"

Qin Ronger was startled when she felt a strong grip on her neck making her to suddenly have a suffocating feeling and was unable to make any sound.

"Stop right there."

Long Yu threatened Qin Tianque who just now arrived and saw Long Yu grabbing his little sister's fragile neck.

"Release Ronger otherwise I will give you a brutal death!"

Qin Tianque was dressed in black clothes and his face looked equally dark and gloomy in the dark woods.

Qin Tianque was so confident in his strength that he got careless, and now, Long Yu seized this opportunity and managed to prevail in this situation. Although taking Qin Ronger as hostage would be a reckless decision for others, but not for a former assassin! The hate and anger in Qin Tianque's heart could be imagined.

“If you tried to take even one step forward then your own sister will die a brutal death.”

Long Yu indifferently said while he increased the intensity of his grip and Qin Ronger suddenly felt like suffocating. A look of hatred appeared in her beautiful eyes.

She tried her best to free herself from Long Yu’s clutches, but he had practiced Demon tyrant form, so his basic inner strength was more compared to her strength, and at this moment, she was completely at the mercy of Long Yu.

“Don’t you know that it’s a serious crime to kill someone from the same Sect?”

Qin Tianque said in a sinister voice but his footsteps actually stopped.

He did not want to make any blunder that might cost his sister’s life.

“Well, I throw the same words back at your face.”

Long Yu faintly smiled and said: “Now, you withdraw 100 steps, otherwise, you will see your sister dying in front of your eyes!”

Qin Tianque hesitated, but eventually stepped back and slowly started to retreat.

“Faster!”

Long Yu shouted: “Stop dilly-dallying, do you really want this girl to die?”

Long Yu’s words caused a burst of anger inside his hearts, but he did not have any way to resist, and could only obediently step back.

“As long as I seize the opportunity kid, you will die without a burial site for your corpse!”

Qin Tianque was viciously cursing as the distance between him and Long Yu gradually increased.

“Earlier you said that you are an inner disciple then you certainly have a battle weapon right? Now, you will throw down your battle weapon otherwise you know what can happen.”

Long Yu said in a calm voice and threatened Qin Tianque using his little sister as the hostage.

“Boy, do not go too far, I am an inner disciple and you are just an outer disciple, continue this nonsense and you will have a bleak future in the Sect!”

Qin Tianque’s cold voice arrived from far and it was obvious that he was not willing to succumb to Long Yu so instead, he began to threaten Long Yu instead.

“Why is it taking so long? Hurry up and throw down the battle weapon!”

Long Yu sneered and threatened once again.

But this time, he did not get a response, Qin Tianque no longer made any sound, and it seemed as if he completely disappeared in the darkness of the woods!

“It seems in the eyes of your brother, a battle weapon is more important than your life.”

Long Yu said to Qin Ronger with a touch of disappointment in his words.

This sentence made Qin Ronger lose her heart. Her elder brother was really going to abandon her for a battle weapon, without caring whether she would live or die?

No, definitely not!

“You won’t dare to kill me.”

Qin Ronger calmed down and said.

She believed that her elder brother must have known that this boy wouldn’t dare to kill her, so he didn’t throw the battle weapon. After all, if the news about him killing her in the abyss of Teng snakes spread in the Zhentian Sect and reached the ears of elder, then this boy would be severely punished and even getting expelled from the Sect would be a light punishment!

“You have such a puny brain.”

Long Yu smiled and said: “Do you really think that your brother ran back to the

Sect to complain to the elders?”

Long Yu said while keeping a careful attention to the surrounding movements and sounds, in these dark woods, he displayed the peak level of perception skill of Wudao fifth layer, and suddenly discovered that Qin Tianque was nearby and was quietly approaching from the other direction.

“Planning a sneak attack on me?”

Long Yu sneered.

Perhaps Qin Tianque did not think that Long Yu would be so calmly observing! After all, Long Yu was just at the Wudao fifth layer, and facing a master at the Wudao seventh layer, he could easily lose his life in a single attack, in such a case, most people would feel their heartbeat racing and would be panic-stricken, causing them to lose their calm.

Long Yu tightly clutched Qin Ronger’s neck and slowly started to move together with her.

The direction in which he was moving to happened to be same where the Teng snake king’s body was laying on the ground and it was also the central location between Long Yu and Qin Tianque. It was obvious, Long Yu had already thought of a strategy to deal with Qin Tianque’s sneak attack!

Chapter – 25 neidan absorption

In the deep dark abyss of Teng snake, giant trees were blocking out the sun, increasing the danger.

While keeping Qin Ronger's neck in his clutches, Long Yu was standing behind the corpse of Teng snake King, in a straight line path leading to Qin Tianque hidden in the forest. The huge body of Teng snake king was blocking the line of sight of Qin Tianque, so he could not observe Long Yu.

This irritated Qin Tianque.

He was a master of Wudao seventh layer and a kid of Wudao fifth layer was actually playing around with him, which made him feel very uncomfortable and annoyed.

“Trying to hinder my line of sight, in order to seize an opportunity to run?”

When Qin Tianque discovered that Long Yu was hiding behind the body of Teng snake king, he snorted and decided that regardless of what method Long Yu used, he won't be able to escape his superior hunting and killing skills.

He was a hunter, while Long Yu was just a prey!

Of course, this was only what Qin Tianque thought.

Suddenly, Qin Ronger shouted in a pained voice, causing a tightening feeling in Qin Tianque's heart, it was not good, he must act quickly!

Shabu!

Qin Tianque's choroid figure moved quickly and in just two or three jumps, he jumped above the corpse of Teng snake king, and occupied a commanding position, and his field of vision suddenly opened up, making him able to see Long Yu and his sister.

"Release my little sister at once! If anything happens to her then you will die without a doubt!"

Qin Tianque saw that not far away from him, Long Yu had just now pinched Qin Ronger's neck with slightly harder force, making her to shout in a loud and pained voice.

But when Qin Tianque jumped upon Teng snake king's body, suddenly, Long Yu slightly curled up the corners of his mouth.

"Swallowed the bait."

Long Yu exerted the strength in his one hand and had already prepared a giant boulder weighing 10,000 Jin underfoot and threw it towards the giant corpse of Teng snake king.

Qin Tianque's complexion changed but could not react when the boulder pounded on the broken abdomen of Teng snake king. With its terrifying weight, the giant boulder suddenly pounded on the internal organs and blood of the broken abdomen of Teng snake king, and all of the filthy things inside the abdomen of Teng snake king crushed and splashed out.

Qin Tianque was originally standing on the corpse of Teng snake King, closest to the impact point of giant boulder, and was immediately drenched by the filthy internal organs splashed from the broken abdomen of Teng snake king. A burst of stink started to exude from his whole body.

“It went well, time to go!”

Long Yu directly threw down Qin Ronger and turned around in one direction and ran away at the fastest possible speed.

“Waste, I will kill you!”

Qin Tianque never thought that Long Yu would come up with such a move, and both his eyes suddenly reddened, filled with a color of pure hatred. Since the time he had stepped into the world of Wudao, he had been considered as the genius of Yu Guan City’s Qin clan, but he had never been so embarrassed!

At the moment, he was drenched with the blood and internal organs of a demon beast!

However, when he actually saw Long Yu discarding Qin Ronger and directly escaping with the neidan of Teng snake king, an intense burst of killing intent suddenly spread throughout his body.

“You must die!”

Qin Tianque pledged in his heart and immediately made an effort to whip his

own body. After removing some of the heavy filth from his body, he jumped sideways to the Qin Ronger's side.

“Ronger, I will take you with me, we will chase together.”

Qin Tianque said that because he would never commit the same mistake again.

Qin Ronger nodded silently but could not help but frowned due to the intense foul and stink coming from the body of Qin Tianque, because it was just too smelly and stinking a lot.

Qin Tianque noticed the disgusted look in his little sister's eyes and his hatred for Long Yu became even deeper than before. That waste, he even dared to make a fool of him in front of his little sister!

He held Qin Ronger and rushed horizontally by once again casting and displaying the speed of his agility type martial skill, practiced to the peak level, and pursued in the same direction in which Long Yu had fled.

But, due to the delay that happened just now, the distance between the two sides had already widened considerably.

Even with the speed of Qin Tianque, he was chasing along with injured Qin Ronger, so catching up with Long Yu was not something that could be achieved easily in a short time.

Long Yu would certainly not escape.

These siblings not only tried to snatch the Teng snake king's neidan from him, they even planned to silence him, so how could he not punish the other side, at least, he would take that Qin Tianque's battle weapon as compensation!

Soon, Long Yu ran back for a distance of several miles. Qin Tianque holding Qin Ronger finally caught up with him once again and arrived not far behind him.

But this time, Long Yu had also finally arrived at his own planned destination.

"Brother, please come and quickly help us!"

"Brother, help us, we are tangled in the vines!"

Several successive voices came one after another. Long Yu looked up and saw that he had really returned to that place where three outer disciples were entangled in vines and crying for help.

"Someone's coming to help you."

Long Yu slightly curled up the corner of his mouth, said something randomly at will, then bypassed them and immediately vanished in the dark thicket.

They looked at each other with clear disappointment on their faces and a clear look of dismay in their eyes. Someone was coming to help them?

In a while, they were going to understand the meaning of Long Yu's words.

Soon, they saw Qin Tianque also coming from the same direction while holding Qin Ronger and felt as if their savior had arrived and all of them shouted loudly in delighted manner: “Brother Qin, Sister Qin, please help us quickly!”

For the disciples of same sect, if someone was in danger then other people would naturally help.

In particular, when the three outer disciples entangled in vines saw a famous inner disciple like Qin Tianque coming in their direction then a burst of hope suddenly bloomed in their hearts.

Considering the strength of an inner disciple, cutting off these vines should be children’s play right?

“Have you seen a man in black clothes passing from here?”

Qin Tianque ran over to them and asked in a fierce tone while his whole body was exuding foul smell.

Listening to his voice, the three outer disciples were surprised for a moment, but immediately, something happened which totally shocked them!

They saw that the vines wrapped around their bodies, as if felt a new source of food, and loosened their bodies at a lightning speed, and immediately advanced towards Qin Tianque!

The three youths did not react and even Qin Tianque was startled and was totally caught off guard.

His whole body was covered in Teng snake king's visceral body fluids and immediately attracted the vines towards Qin Tianque's body.

Qin Tianque quickly understood what was going on. Just when he approached the three youths entangled in the vines, not just the vines on their bodies, even the vines hidden in the surroundings smelled the visceral fluids of Teng snake king on his body and instantly surrounded him.

"Take care of my little sister!"

Qin Tianque hastily pushed Qin Ronger towards the three youths then immediately condensed Xuan qi on his whole body.

"Xuan wind destroyer!"

Bluish-green Xuan qi congealed to become wind-blades and instantly cut off several vines, but the speed of other vines was very fast, and in a short time, they instantly wrapped his body and four limbs.

The sharp thorns on the surface of these vines had apparently regarded Qin Tianque as a Teng snake demon beast and must slurp its flesh and blood!

"Let me go!"

Qin Tianque roared loudly, and at this time, the strength present in his entire body suddenly broke out!

The most fundamental difference between martial cultivators and demon beasts was that martial cultivators were able to use battle weapons while demon beasts couldn't. At this point, Qin Tianque finally took out his battle weapon, rewarded to him by Zhentian Sect after becoming an inner disciple.

There was a jade nature seal on the battle weapon gripped tightly in the hands of Qin Tianque. The Xuan qi suddenly urged inside his body and emitted a series of sharp wind-blades from the seal, and these wind-blades were stronger than the Xuan wind destroyer martial skill of Qin Tianque!

Each of these wind-blades was like the scythe of death and easily cut off the sharp thorn vines. Its might was enormous and perhaps if Long Yu was facing these wind-blades and tried to dodge continuously, he won't be able to dodge all of them and would be cut to shreds.

However, the quantity of vines was really too much.

Even the giant sized Teng snake king was unable to escape after being tied down by one clump of vines and was later completely wrapped in them, let alone a mere human like Qin Tianque.

Although Qin Tianque was cutting the vines faster than Teng snake king, but his body was still gradually being constantly entangled by the sharp thorn vines, and soon got totally twined by the vines, and then, the sharp thorns present on the surface of vines pierced his skin!

As the blood flowed out of his body, the vines reacted as if they felt something like disgust from it and quickly retracted the sharp thorns, but the stench of a Teng snake was still exuding from Qin Tianque's body and was still a favorite of these vines so they didn't let go of him.

The two sides fell into a protracted fight and the three youths standing nearby had dumbfounded looks in their eyes as they were watching this, but the good news was that they had been saved as the boy in black clothes said a moment ago.

“You three, hurry up and chase after that boy in black clothes, he has the neidan of Teng snake king!”

Qin Ronger’s thigh had been pierced by a thorny branch earlier so she was leaning against a tree to support her. She simply didn’t have the time to care about Qin Tianque and suddenly shouted and ordered the three outer disciples to chase after Long Yu!

“Teng snake king’s neidan?”

The three men had just now emerged from the shackles of the vines, and at this time, when they heard about the neidan of Teng snake king, they were immediately startled.

Although, even if they snatched the neidan, it was certain that they would have to hand it over to Qin Tianque, but if they could use this opportunity to become friends with Qin Tianque and Qin Ronger, then it might be very beneficial for their future development.

Thinking of this, they suddenly looked at each other, and all three of them immediately pursued in the same direction in which Long Yu had disappeared a moment ago.

.....

Long Yu was hiding in the thicket in the opposite direction, and seeing this, the corners of his mouth slightly curled up.

He knew that sooner or later, these three would become lackeys of Qin Tianque, but it did not matter, because those three were chasing in the wrong direction.

Long Yu had already crushed Teng snake king's neidan and started to absorb the Lingqi contained inside it.

The neidan of an ordinary Teng snake demon beast was equivalent to an ordinary immortality pill used by the martial cultivators, but Teng snake king's neidan was equivalent to the top grade immortality pills!

Long Yu absorb the Lingqi and suddenly felt an intrepid warm welling inside his body and circulating through all of the meridians within his body.

Under the effects of Nine hidden Dragon Mark which simply went against the heaven's will, he felt a quenching feeling throughout the meridians inside his body, the Xuan qi was rapidly surging and increasing inside his body, while his strength was also gradually increasing, and from initial 16,000 Jin, it slowly raised to 18,000 Jin.

The strength of 18,000 Jin was the limit for Wudao fifth layer, and if one wanted to raise the strength even further, the only option was to have a breakthrough!

Thump! Thump! Thump!

The speed of Long Yu's heartbeats increased and became faster and faster, while the Xuan qi circulation also became more and more vigorous inside his meridians. He immediately realized that he was on the verge of having a breakthrough to the Wudao sixth layer.

He was becoming more and more formidable than ever before.

He quickly and completely absorbed Teng snake king's neidan leaving only a pile of useless debris.

From his body came several sounds of breaking bones which was also the indication of forthcoming breakthrough. At last, Wudao sixth layer was not far away from his reach.

But these sounds suddenly attracted the attention of Qin Ronger.

At this time, less than half an hour had already passed from the time Qin Tianque was entangled in vines. Finally, depending on the strength of his battle weapon, Xuan wind seal, he chopped off all of the sharp thorn vines and freed himself.

However, this dogfight with the sharp thorn vines turned out to be a blessing in disguise, because during the struggle to break free from the vines, the stinky filth on his body was completely absorbed by the vines.

"Elder brother, I heard some sounds from that direction!"

Qin Ronger pointed towards the nearby dark thicket. Since her leg was injured, she was afraid to go and check it out, but now that Qin Tianque had defeated all the vines, she immediately urged him to go and inspect the source of these sounds she heard a while ago.

And in the direction she was pointing, Long Yu was hiding behind the thicket and secretly absorbing the Teng snake king’s neidan.

“Could it be that this boy was hiding in the thicket and secretly absorbing neidan?”

Qin Tianque felt the dense concentration of Lingqi from the thicket, indicating that a martial cultivator was about to have a breakthrough and a cold look suddenly appeared in his eyes.

His sister was going to use Teng snake king’s neidan to enhance her cultivation level, how could he tolerate when someone else used it under his nose?

“Even if you managed to have a breakthrough, I will still kill you!”

Qin Tianque firmly set a resolve in his heart and gradually walked towards the dark thicket where Long Yu was hiding!

.....

Chapter – 26 battle with Qin Tianque

When Qin Tianque came near the thicket, just then, Long Yu finally succeeded in having a breakthrough and stepped into the Wudao sixth layer!

Suddenly, the strength in his entire body increased tremendously. Now, he possessed a terrifying strength of 32,000 Jin, and together with the strength gained by the Demon tyrant form, his total strength increased to almost 35,000 Jin, making him much stronger than a normal martial cultivator of Wudao sixth layer.

And if he activated the ‘Nine hidden Dragon Mark’, then he could further enhance his strength by an extra 10,000 Jin, and when put together, his total strength would be 45,000 Jin.

“The gap of strength between me and Qin Tianque has narrowed down a lot, but still, it will not be so easy to deal with him.....”

Long Yu thought calmly and his eyes flashed, but, just at the moment, he suddenly heard the buzz of conversations from outside the thicket.

“Brother Qin, Brother Qin, are you alright?”

The voice actually belonged to one of the three outer disciples of Zhentian Sect!

The three outer disciples had actually run in the wrong direction to chase Long Yu, of course, they came back without any success. But, at this juncture, they

were not willing to give up, instead they wanted to seize the opportunity to impress Qin Tianque, so they ran back.

“I’m certainly okay.”

Qin Tianque’s voice fell into the ears of Long Yu from a distance of almost twenty feet away, making him realize the probable position of the opposite party.

“Sister Qin, what actually happened? Who took Teng snake king’s neidan from you?”

Seeing the cold and gloomy appearance of Qin Tianque, another outer disciple asked Qin Ronger.

Qin Ronger lightly snorted and said: “We do not know who he is because it was too dark in the woods, moreover, he hides too well so we didn’t clearly see his appearance. We just know that he is an outer disciple at the Wudao fifth layer.”

“Brother Qin couldn’t clearly see his appearance either?”

The remaining outer disciple said in a surprised tone.

Qin Tianque only snorted, but didn’t say anything. He had yet to see the appearance of Long Yu and this brought a feeling of humiliation in his heart.

In his previous life, Long Yu was famous as the king of killers, so how could he so easily expose himself to anybody? Moreover in place like the abyss of Teng

snake, where it was so convenient to hide oneself!

“It’s now important to know who he is. I only know that he snatched the neidan of Teng snake king from me.”

Qin Ronger indifferently said.

As soon as the trio heard her words, one of them immediately said: “He actually dared to snatch the neidan of Teng snake king from Sister Qin? It seems that he impatient to die! Sister Qin’s leg injury is also his fault? How could this person be so cruel to a disciple of the same Sect, such a brutal man should not be let off so easily!”

“You are right, wait a minute, my brother is going to deal with him, you keep a watch all around, do not let him escape once again, understood?”

Qin Ronger said in a commanding tone like a young princess.

“Yes!”

All three replied in unison.

While hiding in the bushes, Long Yu sneered in his heart and thought that this woman was really a vile creature with vicious and ruthless thoughts!

All the three outer disciples solemnly pledged to encircle Long Yu to kill him, but they didn’t actually know that Qin Ronger itself was the real greedy evil person!

However even if they knew, it would probably not change their standpoint, because Qin Tianque was an inner disciples at the Wudao seventh layer, and standing on his side would be obviously be more favorable to them, irrespective of who was right or wrong.

Qin Tianque approached the thicket, but of course, even if facing a Wudao fifth layer boy, he wouldn't possibly be arrogant enough to personally go into the thicket to find Long Yu.

The next moment, the first to enter the thicket was not Qin Tianque but his successive wind-blades.

Xuan wind destroyer!

Qin Tianque as a master of Wudao seventh layer was able to release Xuan qi out of his body and he naturally hadn't forgotten his own superiority, so he used Xuan qi based martial skill, and threw sharp wind-blades that raided on the thicket one after another!

Facing these sharp wind-blades, it was now impossible for Long Yu to hide inside anymore, so his figure appeared out of the thicket.

Long Yu jumped out of the thicket and swept a heavy kick on a giant tree, and immediately, while hugging the great tree using his both hands, he immediately directed the falling giant tree towards Qin Tianque.

Using the strength of more than 30,000 Jin, uprooting such a giant tree was quite difficult for Long Yu, although if it really pounded on Qin Tianque, then

even if he was at Wudao seventh layer, it was not difficult to imagine that he would be severely injured.

“Naive!”

Qin Tianque sneered and instantly displayed an agility type martial skill practiced to the peak level and easily dodged when the giant tree was falling upon him.

Bang!

With a loud sound of bang, the giant tree trunk heavily pounded on the ground!

Long Yu’s figure suddenly appeared behind Qin Tianque.

Long Yu had immediately used flickering wind step, and in a blink of an eye, he crossed a distance of 30 feet.

At that time, in a flash, Long Yu came behind Qin Tianque and immediately activated ‘Nine hidden Dragons Mark’, condensing strength of 45,000 Jin in his leg and gave a hard kick towards Qin Tianque’s waist.

If nothing else, this kick could at least injure Qin Tianque.

Buzz!

But, a translucent blue barrier instantly appeared on one side of Qin Tianque's body and actually blocked the strength present in Long Yu's kick.

"What is this?"

Long Yu frowned because he could say for sure that his kick had not been detected by Qin Tianque beforehand then how did he condense this blue barrier to block his kick?

Defense type martial skill?

"This is an agility type martial skill of our Qin clan, Blue wind agility skill, and when comprehended to the peak level, it grants power to the cultivator to automatically condense a barrier screen of blue wind."

Qin Ronger sneered on one side: "Relying on your strength, give up on the idea of crushing the blue wind barrier, injuring my brother should be really out of question."

As her voice fell, Qin Tianque shouted and threw a heavy fist sideways towards Long Yu.

"Xuan qi inner strength shield!"

Long Yu covered his left shoulder with Xuan qi at a lightning speed, followed by Qin Tianque's heavy punch pounding on his shoulder, making his whole body to fly upside down.

Long Yu fell on the ground, and felt intense pain in his shoulder, but he clenched his teeth and didn't utter a single sound from his mouth.

Fortunately, just a moment ago he used the twinkling step and got a deeper insight of this agility type martial skill. After a lapse of two weeks, it seemed as if he had almost reached the peak of agility type martial skill. (Mystique-One twinkling step can send Long Yu's body 30 feet across)

When Qin Tianque saw Long Yu lying on ground, painfully clenching his teeth, he stood proudly, and a strong look of disdain appeared in his eyes.

"Boy, even if you have stepped into Wudao sixth layer, but you still aren't my opponent. I am at Wudao seventh layer, so there is a difference of heaven and earth between us!"

Qin Tianque step by step moved towards Long Yu, preparing to give the final blow.

"This despicable person took away the neidan of Teng snake king from my sister and also injured my sister's leg, and now, he secretly absorbed the neidan and reached the Wudao sixth layer."

Qin Tianque indifferently said: "Tell me, what I should do with him?"

Qin Ronger didn't say anything, but the other three disciples immediately exclaimed in a loud voice: "This person is despicable and cruel, without any sense of shame. How could Zhentian Sect possibly allow such type of despicable person to exist in the Sect? Brother Qin, it's better to kill him and clean the waste from our sect!"

“Clean the waste, well said.”

It seemed like Qin Ronger’s eyes were spraying fire.

Neidan of Teng snake king used by this boy was practically going to be wasted. If he had not used it, then Qin Ronger would have consumed it to step into Wudao sixth layer, and half a month later, she might have participated in the competition at Royal Ancient Ginseng forest.

“All of this is this person’s fault, brother you must kill him and clean up a waste like him from Zhentian Sect.”

Saying that, Qin Roger gritted her teeth and didn’t even think that not long ago, it was Long Yu who actually saved her life from the Teng snake king.

“It is natural.”

At that time, Qin Tianque stood there, bulging out his chest like a god of death in a dark and gloomy forest, and he moved forward and came close to Long Yu: “Relying on your strength of flickering wind step at the Da Cheng level, you can also use twinkling step for short time, but let’s see how you will run this time?”

“If you must kill me, then why waste time on idle talk, hurry up and begin.”

Still lying on the ground, Long Yu said in an indifferent tone as if he was ready for anything or everything!

“Such being the case, I’ll give you what you want.”

Qin Tianque laughed and having the stance of the final victor, he lifted his one leg and severely stamped towards Long Yu!

Great strength of 64,000 Jin was condensed in his foot, and when he lifted his foot, it produced howling sound in the surrounding air, and it was absolutely sure that if his leg would step on Long Yu, it would instantly turn him into meat paste.

But right now, injured by the fist attack from Qin Tianque, Long Yu didn’t have an opportunity to dodge this attack.

In the face of this cruel scene, the three outer disciples didn’t say anything and just stood there watching silently.

In their eyes, as long as their interest was getting served, they didn’t care what would happen to Long Yu!

Even Qin Ronger’s eyes showed a touch of anticipation, as this boy had taken the neidan of Teng snake king from her and secretly absorbed it, now was the time for him to finally pay the price.

“Die!”

Qin Tianque shouted loudly and stepped down on Long Yu.

Bang!

With the loud bang, the dust flew upwards, however before the foot landed on Long Yu, his figure actually turned into an afterimage and dissipated in the wind!

“What?”

At the moment, Qin Tianque could not react, and for a while, he remained frozen on the spot. How could this boy turn into an afterimage?

Not only Qin Tianque, but Qin Ronger and other three were startled as well. How did the boy vanish all of a sudden?

They looked all around but did not see the figure of Long Yu anywhere, which totally confused them.

However, at this time, Qin Tianque suddenly felt a whistling wind coming from over his head, his heart trembled instantly, and he quickly raised his head to look, but could only see a pair of shoes growing bigger and bigger, as they were dropping down towards his head.

“Damn you!”

Long Yu was actually falling from the sky!

Bang, one foot of Long Yu hit on the head of unprepared Qin Tianque, and the strength condensed in this kick was absolutely exceeding the strength limit of Long Yu!

Bang!

Qin Tianque didn't get a chance to react in time and Long Yu severely stepped on his head. Qin Tianque's body fell on the ground while his neck was directly broken under the heavy impact of tremendous strength possessed by Long Yu. He died on the spot without getting any chance to fight back, it was an instant death!

It turned out just at the crucial moment, Long Yu suddenly felt that he had broken through to the peak level of flickering wind step and a martial cultivator at the peak level of flicker wind step could produce an afterimage of himself and could also take three consecutive twinkling steps to cross a distance of 100 feet in a blink of an eye.

When Qin Tianque stepped his leg towards Long Yu, he instantly displayed the peak level of flickering wind step and left behind an afterimage of himself, and used three consecutive twinkling steps to reach 100 feet into the sky, right above the head of Qin Tianque.

Falling from a height of 100 feet in the sky, coupled with his entire strength condensed in his leg, he actually kicked Qin Tianque!

Just now the screen of that blue wind did not appear, might be because it showed only when Qin Tianque was using his agility type martial skill, but while facing Long Yu's kick, Qin Tianque simply did not have enough time to activate his agility skill.

However, when Qin Tianque's lifeless body fell on the ground, Long Yu also fell down, because although he kicked Qin Tianque, but the strength of counter-shock was too big and his leg broke off once again!

Of course, when compared to losing his life, a broken leg was nothing.

Qin Tianque's haughty figure fell on the ground, while his mouth was open and his eyes were openly staring with disbelief indicating that he never expected that he would be trampled to death by Long Yu.

Qin Tianque was an inner disciple of Zhentian Sect and was also at Wudao seventh layer, but was killed by receiving one kick from a boy who just entered into the Wudao sixth layer?

"Brother!"

Qin Ronger was completely shocked because her elder brother was considered an outstanding genius from childhood to adulthood, then how could he actually die like this?

Long Yu choked back his leg pain, stood up reluctantly, and swept his eyes towards Qin Ronger but did not pay attention to her. He lowered his head and took the battle weapon from Qin Tianque's corpse.

Xuan wind seal, finally obtained!

"Sister Qin, this boy is extremely cruel, he actually killed your elder brother, and we must kill him and get justice for your brother's murder."

At this moment, there was a sudden change in reactions of the three outer disciples and one could clearly see the color of greed in their eyes!

If they combined their strengths with Qin Ronger to kill the wounded Long Yu, then they would be able to capture the battle weapon, Xuan wind seal. One must know that only inner disciples could have battle weapons, but for the outer disciples, it was just like a precious treasure!

Chapter – 27 mysterious youth

In this world of martial artists, everyone was focused on improving their own strength, but regarding right and wrong, how many people would care about all that?

When Long Yu defeated Qin Tianque, he also seriously injured his own leg, giving a golden opportunity to the remaining three!

These three were all the outer disciples of Zhentian Sect, one of them was at Wudao sixth layer, and other two were at Wudao fifth layer, and although their individual cultivations were not high, but if they joined forces, then they could become a formidable force.

Long Yu was originally weak and was very vulnerable compared to earlier while the originally strong Qin Ronger had also become vulnerable after her brother's death!

As the three outer disciples slowly advanced towards Long Yu, Qin Ronger's heart was still in chaos, she could not accept that her elder brother died in front of her eyes.

However, at this time, a loud shout suddenly came from the direction of Zhentian Sect!

“Stop.”

Just then, a middle-aged man clad in purple robe arrived from sideways into

the field, and with a casual wave of his hand, a shock wave rushed towards the three outer disciples and pushed them several steps away from Long Yu.

There was a firm and resolute expression on the face of this middle-aged man and an upright look in his eyes. Looking at the identity token on his waist, everyone noticed that he was actually the law enforcement elder of Zhentian Sect!

Law enforcement elder was a relatively important presence in the Zhentian Sect and held the powers to punish the disciples who violated the rules of Zhentian Sect.

Long Yu looked up and saw the just now arrived law enforcement elder, but did not feel relieved, rather he was more anxious.

Because he did not know whether the law enforcement elder was a friend or foe!

“Elder Tan, you came

Qin Ronger limped to one side and when she noticed that purple-robed middle-aged man had arrived, she couldn't help but revealed a happy expression on her beautiful face.

“Ronger.”

Purple-robed middle-aged man nodded to Qin Ronger then a deep color of regret appeared on his face when he tilted his head and looked at the corpse of Qin Tianque laying on the ground, afterward, his focus immediately shifted

towards Long Yu.

Seeing the mutual salutation between the middle-aged man and Qin Ronger, Long Yu's heart sank because he quickly realized that arrival of this Elder Tan was definitely a bad news!

"I am Tan Wuchuan and Qin Tianque was my just received disciple."

The elder looked at Long Yu and indifferently said.

"So, you want to avenge your disciple?"

Long Yu calmly said while he was constantly racking his brain, thinking about countermeasures, but no matter how much he tried, in the current circumstances, he couldn't formulate any contingency plans to get out of this mess.

The purple-robed middle-aged man, Tan Wuchuan, was the law enforcement elder of Zhentian Sect and his cultivation level must be at least at Wudao ninth layer or might be more than that!

At Long Yu's current strength, he was simply too weak and couldn't possibly fight against an elder.

"If you are at fault then you should be punished, if not, I will let you go."

These words of elder were beyond Long Yu's expectations, then the elder closed his eyes and it seemed as if he was mourning for the death of his disciple.

However, before he closed his eyes, a killing intent faintly flashed in his eyes and it was actually captured by Long Yu's keen eyes!

"This Tan Wuchuan doesn't seem in a mood to properly do his duty of punishing the guilty....."

Long Yu was secretly alert in his heart.

"So, who will tell me what exactly happened here?"

Tan Wuchuan asked.

"Elder Tan, I will tell, I will tell."

Qin Ronger was the first one to step forward while shouting loudly then anxiously said: "Elder Tan, early this morning, I entered the abyss of Teng snake along with other four fellow brothers and coincidentally ran into a Teng snake king!"

"Teng snake king?"

Tan Wuchuan closed his eyes and scowled then nodded his head and said: "Continue."

"After running into the Teng snake king, we went all out and fought desperately, but Teng snake king was just too powerful and four brothers were killed, and by that time, Teng snake king also ran out of its strength."

At this point, a vicious look appeared on Qin Ronger's face, and she said while staring at Long Yu: "I beheaded Teng snake king to avenge the fellow brothers, but at that time, this murderer suddenly appeared and not only wounded my leg, but also snatched Teng snake king's neidan from me!"

Tan Wuchuan kept on listening but didn't say a word and it seemed as if he was considering something.

Long Yu was watching from the sidelines, basically he'd like to see how Qin Ronger would pull it off!

Qin Ronger did not stop and continue to say in her sweet and delicate voice: "After snatching neidan of Teng snake king from me, this murderer escaped, but was finally overtaken by my brother. Brother asked him to hand over the neidan but he not only did not listen, instead tricked my brother with an ambush which ultimately led to his death!"

"Do you really mean what you just said?"

Tan Wuchuan's face revealed a fierce color.

"En, Elder Tan, this murderer is cruel and ruthless, he even killing a fellow disciple from the same sect, he is evil, we absolutely cannot allow him to live in this world!"

Qin Ronger viciously said!

“Next, I will ask you a few questions, Qin Ronger, you answer truthfully.”

Tan Wuchuan nodded, then as the law enforcement elder, he began to inquire: “First, this morning when you entered the abyss of Teng snakes with other four disciples, all of your cultivation levels were just at Wudao fifth layer and even if you five combined forces, you still wouldn’t have been to take on Teng snake king, then tell me, how did you kill Teng snake king?”

When this question was suddenly thrown at her by Tan Wuchuan, Qin Ronger’s tone suddenly stagnated a bit, but then she immediately replied: “We used sharp thorn vines to first consume the strength of Teng snake king then killed it.”

Long Yu, who was standing nearby, sneered and thought that this woman really knew how to brag!

“Second.”

Tan Wuchuan didn’t care to talk about Long Yu and continued to inquire: “How Tianque was able to rush in time, did you send out the signal?”

At this point, Qin Ronger did not deny and directly nodded: “Yes.”

“Third, how did this boy beat Qin Tianque?”

When asking this question, Tan Wuchuan’s gaze was focused on Long Yu while there was a stern look on his face.

“He used a very sinister method, he splashed the visceral fluids of Teng snake

king on the body of my brother, and led him towards the trap of sharp thorn vines, and these vines consumed his strength..... Finally, Elder Tan can also see, he kicked my brother on the head and killed him!”

Qin Ronger said and was ferociously staring at Long Yu.

“You three, what Qin Ronger just said, is that true?”

Tan Wuchuan immediately shifted his attention towards the three outer disciples.

The trio pondered that if Qin Tianque was the disciple of Elder Tan, then he would certainly be anxious to quickly eradicate Long Yu right?

“In the previous matter of killing Teng snake king, we did not participate, so we can’t say for sure, but Brother Qin indeed was trapped by this boy’s dirty trick and killed by his kick!”

The three said in unison.

“I see.”

Tan Wuchuan snorted then glanced at Long Yu: “Long Yu, do you want to say something in your defense?”

Long Yu!

Until this time, Qin Ronger and the three outer disciples didn't know the identity of Long Yu. So, it turned out to be the famous new disciple who sent a core disciple like Feng Yun flying like a ball?

Bewildered expressions appeared on the faces of all four. Just two weeks ago, this Long Yu defeated Fang Kang, who was at Wudao sixth layer. And now, he killed Qin Tianque, who was at the Wudao seventh layer, just how could his progress be so fast?

In order to step from Wudao fifth layer into the Wudao sixth layer, ordinary martial cultivators needed at least three to four month's time, moreover this Long Yu's battle efficiency seemed much higher than ordinary warriors at Wudao sixth layer!

This person, wasn't he actually a monster?

Qin Ronger and other three disciples were still in a state of shock, and at this time, Long Yu replied with an indifferent look on his face: "Elder Tan can judge on his own, why ask me? Not to mention, there are still traces left of fighting with Teng snake king, why doesn't Elder Tan go and investigate, you will probably discover the facts! "

"I will personally check the facts."

Tan Wuchuan lightly said: "But now, you will come with me to visit the law enforcement hall."

He made these remarks without giving any chance to Long Yu to explain his situation!

Long Yu slightly frowned and some doubts suddenly appeared in his heart.

If Tan Wuchuan really wanted to kill him, then why did he stop the other three disciples from attacking him?

But if Tan Wuchuan was really the law enforcement elder, so now, it was impossible that he would not give Long Yu an opportunity to explain himself, rather he wanted to take him to law enforcement hall without investigating the scene? This behavior of Tan Wuchuan was really strange.

Long Yu thought and could not help but speculate. This Elder Tan was trying to set him up while inquiring others to make this whole thing look more impartial to other people?

While at this time, the laughter of a haughty man spread from one side of the woods.

“Ha ha ha -“

Accompanied by the sound of laughter, a mysterious man dressed in black leotard suddenly appeared. He had a handsome face with an insolent smile spread on it and a very domineering gait. He seemed to have taken only two to three steps, but the next moment, he already came in front of Tan Wuchuan!

Long Yu looked up and saw a black mysterious who seemed to be roughly 20 years old, profound eyes and very attractive demeanor.

Although this mysterious youth and Qin Tianque looked of similar age, but his cultivation had already reached an unfathomable level, and Long Yu wasn't able to differentiate between the cultivation levels of Tan Wuchuan and this mysterious youth!

When the mysterious man suddenly appeared while laughing loudly, the complexion on Tan Wuchuan's face suddenly changed.

"Why have you come here?"

Tan Wuchuan asked in a somewhat inwardly angry tone and it seemed that he really disliked this mysterious youth for sticking his nose into someone else's business.

"I hit it off pretty well with Brother Long Yu, so I must take him away."

The black clothed youth was crossing his hands behind his back and looking at Long Yu with a smile on his face: "I witnessed everything that happened today, so you do not need to trouble yourself with further investigation!"

"The matter comes under the jurisdiction of my law enforcement hall."

Tan Wuchuan sneered and said: "If you want to intervene, you should also think clearly about the consequences! A moment ago, Qin Ronger has described the whole matter in detail, as for the fact, I would naturally get to the bottom of it."

"Is that so?"

Mysterious man proudly smiled and in just one step, he came near Tan Wuchuan: “Elder Tan, Qin Tianque was your disciple and it makes sense that you want to take revenge for him, but why were you putting on such a hypocritical show just a moment ago? If Elder Tan wants to invert right and wrong, I am afraid it won’t be easy, especially when I am here!”

As these words came out, Tan Wuchuan’s complexion suddenly changed, but standing nearby, Long Yu finally understood.

Sure enough!

This mysterious man was following him from the very beginning and knew the whole story.

But, who was this mysterious man?

It was obvious just from looking at his young appearance that he wasn’t too old, so how could he have such a plain talk without fearing the law enforcement elder?

Long Yu could not guess the identity of this mysterious youth, perhaps someone related to Elder Yu, old black or maybe old white?

In Zhentian Sect, Long Yu only knew these three elders who had the qualifications to confront the law enforcement elder!

Chapter – 28 Blizzard boots

Long Yu secretly noticed that Tan Wuchuan's complexion had paled after hearing the words of the mysterious youth.

The mysterious youth's words had made Tan Wuchuan extremely uncomfortable in his heart.

"You don't go too far, you say I, Tan Wuchuan, want to invert right and wrong?"

At this time, Tan Wuchuan got very angry, as if the mysterious man's words had insulted him in front of everyone.

"Ha ha!"

Mysterious youth laughed: "Elder Tan, everyone is well aware of your intentions, why beat around the bush? Anyways, I will take my leave now!"

The mysterious youth said these words, and in a flash, he moved and the next instant, Long Yu felt as if he was soaring in the clouds and riding the mist, and at a speed three or four times faster than Long Yu's speed while using flickering wind step at its peak level.

At that time, Tan Wuchuan couldn't even prevent the mysterious youth from taking Long Yu away, and in a blink of an eye, both the mysterious youth and Long Yu disappeared from the spot without a trace.

“Elder Tan, who was that person, why was he behaving so arrogantly?”

Helplessly watching Long Yu being carried away by the mysterious youth, Qin Ronger wasn't feeling well in her heart and couldn't help but asked loudly.

“He is the strongest core disciple of Zhentian Sect.”

Tan Wuchuan said in a cold voice and then immediately leaned to see Qin Tianque's dead body with a look of distress in his eyes: “Since that person has already intervened in this matter, now, I cannot help you anymore.....”

“Elder Tan, do you mean this matter will be considered as finished?”

Qin Ronger's heart was not ready to resign, and suddenly, there emerged a vicious color in her eyes.

“How can it be considered as finished?”

Tan Wuchuan loudly snorted, because he didn't have a favorable impression about Qin Ronger and said in a cold voice: “Even after today's incident, you still don't know repentance? Look at Qin Tianque's face, don't you feel embarrassed, tomorrow morning, you pack up your things and leave Zhentian Sect.”

Just because Qin Tianque was his own disciple, he was going to overlook the truth and finish this matter once and forever.

But now, taking revenge was absolutely hopeless due to the unexpected interference. Qin Tianque was already dead and regarding the main culprit Qin

Ronger, Tan Wuchuan naturally didn't have a favorable impression.

As the law enforcement elder, experienced in dealing with such matters, Tan Wuchuan certainly knew about the whole thing, and understood that all of this happened because of the ungrateful and greedy attitude of Qin Ronger!

When Qin Ronger heard his words, she was suddenly stupefied.

"Elder Tan....."

She widened her eyes in astonishment because she couldn't understand why an elder like Tan Wuchuan could not dare to go against a core disciple.

In front of an elder, how was the strongest core disciple different from other disciples of the Zhentian Sect?

Qin Ronger just couldn't understand no matter how much she tried to figure it out. Why was the law enforcement elder of Zhentian Sect afraid of a core disciple?

However, Tan Wuchuan would certainly not give an explanation to her.

"Listen you four, about today's incident, you are not allowed to disclose to anybody, otherwise....."

An ominous light flashed in Tan Wuchuan's fierce eyes and swept over Qin Ronger and other three outer disciples.

“The disciple, the disciple understands!”

Except Qin Ronger, the other three disciples immediately replied in a frightened manner.

If this thing spread out then it would obviously have a bad impact on the reputation of Tan Wuchuan, so, these disciples would certainly not dare to disseminate carelessly.

“Remember your words.”

An intention to kill flashed in Tan Wuchuan’s eyes then he immediately lowered his head and looked at the corpse of Qin Tianque, and this intention to kill suddenly intensified.

Obviously, he didn’t intend to give up on his revenge, but for now, he needed to bear it patiently!

He picked up the corpse of Qin Tianque, and step by step walked in the direction of Zhentian Sect. His purple robe was moving with the wind, and in a flash, his figure suddenly disappeared from the spot.

In the abyss of Teng snakes, the curtain finally dropped on a soul-stirring contention.....

.....

Long Yu was taken away by that mysterious youth, and at a lightning speed,

they quickly reached the bottom of Zhentian canyon.

“Long Yu, I’ll drop you off here, I have already informed the old couple and they should come to receive you soon.”

At that time, there was an expression of appreciation in the eyes of that mysterious youth while he was looking at Long Yu said in an encouraging tone: “Your fighting talent is superb, and perhaps in the near future, you’ll become a formidable rival.”

“Senior is over praising me, also many thanks to the senior for saving me today.”

Long Yu endured the pain in his broken leg and said while cupping his hands across his chest.

“Oh, don’t call me senior, do I look very old to you?”

The mysterious youth said with a smile on his face: “I am same as you, a disciple of Zhentian Sect, but I am a core disciple so you can call me brother!”

Core disciple!

When Long Yu heard this, he suddenly gawked for a moment. Was this mysterious youth really just a core disciple of Zhentian Sect?

Long Yu initially thought that he was an elder.

By only depending on his status as a core disciple, he was able to suppress Tan Wuchuan, just how terrifyingly strong he actually was! In contrast to him, Feng Yun, who was also a core disciple, seemed too weak!

In Tianyu continent, strength was everything and even if this mysterious youth was only a core disciple, so long as he possessed more strength than Tan Wuchuan, their respective statuses didn't matter.

This was the advantage that came hand in hand with formidable strength.

Otherwise, perhaps today, it would have been impossible for Long Yu to get out of trouble, but now, with the help of the neidan of Teng snake king, he not only stepped into the Wudao sixth layer, but also returned safely, and not just that, he also managed to obtain the battle weapon of Qin Tianque, Xuan wind seal, so it was a long row of harvests that he obtained today in the abyss of Teng snakes.

All of this was made possible because of the generosity of that mysterious youth.

“Brother, please tell your name, someday, I will surely come to thank you and return the favor.”

Long Yu immediately said because he really wanted to find out the name of this mysterious youth.

“Ha ha, names are trivial, are they really worth mentioning? Anyways, I will leave first, hope to see you again!”

The youth laughed, then turned around and disappeared.

When the mysterious youth suddenly vanished, Long Yu was somewhat at loss and kept on thinking, why didn't this guy tell his name? Why did he suddenly appear to help him?

Long Yu absolutely didn't want to believe that the mysterious youth saved him after seeing his potential.

"Is this related to Feng Yun?"

At the level of core disciples, Long Yu could only think of Feng Yun. Maybe this mysterious youth and Feng Yun had some enmity, so the mysterious youth deliberately paid attention to him, and appeared to help him?

"Or maybe this is once again related to my father?"

Long Yu gave it much thought but it was impossible to guess the truth, and soon, at that moment, a tender young girl clad in blue dress came down along the mountain road of the canyon, it was Liao Lele!

"Long Yu, what is this, you went out for an afternoon and broke your leg again?"

Liao Lele was called by old white and she saw Long Yu in a half kneeling position, so how could she not guess what happened to him.

She quickly approached him and an angry look appeared on her beautiful face:

“Your strength is not enough, you only know how to kill, and now you broke your leg again, it seems it will take at least two weeks time to recover thoroughly.”

“Two weeks time is enough, just in time to participate in the competition at Royal Ancient Ginseng forest.”

Long Yu explained himself and said: “In fact, other people were trying to bully me, don’t you think I should take the initiative to teach a lesson to those who try to bully me?”

“Yeah right, now quickly go back with me.”

Liao Lele rolled her eyes, helped him up and gradually walked towards the summit.

Although Liao Lele did not read between the lines, but Long Yu always felt a sense of warmth from this tender girl, making him have a feeling of being concerned about her.

And especially this time when he got injured, he was happy that Liao Lele came to pick him up and also seemed concerned about his injuries, and it once again narrowed the distance between the two and brought them closer.

.....

Ten days later, at the summit of Zhentian canyon.

By this time, Long Yu’s leg injury had already healed, and since this time, there

wasn't a flesh wound unlike last time, his injured leg healed quite rapidly. Moreover, old white gave him a top grade immortality pill which helped him in fully recovering his leg injury within ten days.

However, this time, old white clearly stated if he got seriously injured again, then next time, the immortality pill might not work on him, and in that case, he would have to wait a few months to recover fully, as it happened in the case of Feng Yun!

In this regard, although Long Yu felt somewhat sorry, but if he had to choose between death and broken leg, then he would take the same action once again.

Moreover, he finally obtained a battle weapon, Xuan wind seal.

But, old white said that Xuan wind seal was not suitable for Long Yu, so he secretly took away Xuan wind seal from Long Yu, and said he would go to the Sect and get a better suited battle weapon for him in exchange for this one.

But, ten days had elapsed and old white still hadn't informed him about this matter, so Long Yu was a bit anxious.

Early in the morning, Long Yu could not help but went out of the bamboo room impatiently, and saw old white sitting near the cliff and leisurely drinking tea.

"Old white."

Long Yu stepped forward and asked: "You said that when my leg injury will fully heal, you will tell me the name of that brother."

“Do you really want to know his name?”

Old white stroked his beard and chuckled.

“I am still expecting to learn his name from elder.”

Long Yu cupped his hands across his chest and gave a salute to old white.

During these ten days while he was recuperating, two things had continued to bother him, one was the taking away of his battle weapon by old white and the other was the identity of that mysterious core disciple.

“Then I’ll tell you.”

Old white’s eyes revealed an interesting look: “He is the strongest core disciple of Zhentian Sect, and is also one of the nine young masters of Tang State, and his name is Bu Xing!”

The strongest core disciple of Zhentian Sect!

One of the nine young masters of Tang State!

Long Yu was surprised for a moment because he never thought that the identity of that mysterious youth would be so amazing, that he would actually be famous throughout Tang State!

However when he heard the name of the youth old white, he could not help but gawked for a moment.

Bu Xing? (Mystique: Bu Xing -> 'incapable')

"Bu Xing, Bu means walking, Xing means capable, so his name means 'capable of walking'."

Old White explained.

"....."

Long Yu was still wondering, who actually gave him such a name? No wonder at that time, he didn't tell his name!

A talented man like him named Bu Xing (incapable)?

Yet it turned out to be capable of walking!

"Long Yu, I'm going to remind you, you must never mention his name in front of him, just call him 'brother'."

Old white old paused for a moment then said in a somewhat serious tone: "Do you understand?"

"En, I clearly understand."

Long Yu was already aware of this.

“Well then, you try this battle weapon, I just brought it for you, it’s called Blizzard boots.”

Old white nodded with satisfaction then stretched his hand and Blizzard boots appeared in front of Long Yu.

Blizzard boots?

Long Yu’s face suddenly brightened after looking at the Blizzard boots. Was this the battle weapon which was supposedly better suited for him according to old white?

“Battle weapons and immortality pills are divided into low grade, high grade, top grade and so on, but Zhentian Sect awards only low grade battle weapons to its disciples.”

Old white said in a casual manner: “Blizzard boots is actually a low-grade battle weapon, but it is the also the most precious one among the low-grade battle weapons, go try it and you will automatically understand.”

“En, thank you old white.”

Long Yu took the pair of snow-white boots and carefully observed them.

He saw that the whole body of this pair of boots was white in color, and was entirely made up of ice crystals. Right after wearing, it gave a feeling of chill to

the wearer and an ice-cold air spread in the surrounding, which truly made it worthy of being called Blizzard boots.

But he still didn't know what its effects would be after he would wear the Blizzard boots.

Chapter – 29 Demon Tyrant form Da Cheng

After obtaining Blizzard boots, Long Yu could not wait any longer and impatiently put them on to test the effects of this battle weapon.

Suddenly, ice-cold piercing breath completely surrounded his feet, and he could not help but shudder, but there was a color of joy in his eyes.

Because he could clearly feel that after wearing these Blizzard boots, the ice-cold qi being released from them could enhance his speed!

“I have already practiced the flickering wind step to the peak level, and coupled with this pair of Blizzard boots, now my speed will most probably increase and reach two times of what it was before!”

Long Yu thought, then immediately, his body became light like the breeze and shuttled forward, displaying the peak level of flickering wind step.

Looking at Long Yu’s ultra-fast speed, standing nearby, Liao Lele’s eyes were dazzling and filled with astonishment. She was secretly thinking that although this boy was reckless and stupid at times, always picking fights, but his comprehension speed of martial skills was really too fast.

Liao Lele had joined Zhentian Sect three days before Long Yu, but now, she was still at the Wudao fourth layer, and as far as comprehension of martial skills was concerned, she only chose flickering wind step and had only practiced it to the Xiao Cheng level. In short, she was too far behind Long Yu.

“Every battle weapon is capable of having intelligence and spiritual existence.”

When Long Yu was familiarizing himself with the Blizzard boots, standing on one side, old white explained in a leisurely and carefree manner: “If you are together with this battle weapon for a long time, then you will be able to be on good terms with it, and only then, you can harness the deeper strength hidden inside this battle weapon, and this can even allow the battle weapon to attain self-awareness, however, you will have to be on good terms with it which is not an easy task. And, I cannot teach you how to do that and you can only figure it out on your own. “

He needed to be on good terms with his battle weapon?

When Long Yu heard this, he was a bit surprised, so every battle weapon was capable of having intelligence and could obtain self-awareness?

This information actually shocked him a bit, because he never thought that the battle weapon under his feet wasn't just an ordinary fighting weapon. He did not know that battle weapons in this Tianyuan continent were actually so unusual.

However about this matter, he had never heard before, and now there was an issue of getting on good terms with his battle weapon which was supposedly quite difficult to attain. At least, the battle weapon that Feng Longsong lent to Feng Yao was a high grade battle weapon, Bing copper double-edged sword, but it certainly didn't possess intelligence.

“First, I should concentrate on preparing myself before going to the Royal Ancient Ginseng forest in five days, in just five days, I will practice ‘Demon tyrant form’, and as far as ‘flickering wind step’ is concerned, temporarily, there's no scope left to enhance it.....”

Long Yu planned his course of action for these four days. First, he spent a day to get used to his new speed offered by Blizzard boots, and then in the bamboo room, he began to comprehend Demon tyrant form!

In the Royal Ancient Ginseng forest, in addition to the talented disciples of Zhentian Sect, he would also encounter the talented disciples of Hanbing Sect and Qiansi Sect, two of the seven major Sects of Tang State.

And Long Yu's acquaintance, Feng Yao, was a disciple in Hanbing Sect.

"At least, I will make sure to not lose to that Feng Yao!"

Long Yu thought to himself, because the last time Feng Yao returned to Feng Clan, she sent two servants to kill him, and at that time, she was already at Wudao seventh layer, moreover, she also obtained the Bing copper sword of Feng Longsong, so it was obvious that her battle efficiency was going to be extremely formidable.

One must know, Feng Longsong's Bing copper sword was actually a high grade battle weapon and was much more formidable than Qin Tianque's Xuan wind seal.

It was not easy to breakthrough from a Wudao layer so it could be assumed that Feng Yao was still at the Wudao seventh layer, but she could still use the formidable power of Bing copper sword, making her more formidable than Qin Tianque, who also used to be at Wudao seventh layer.

Long Yu knew that if couldn't reach the Da Cheng level of Demon Tyrant form

then he would absolutely not be Feng Yao's opponent.

If he wanted to reach the Xiao Cheng level of Demon tyrant form, then he would have to quench and refine his muscles and bones using the Xuan qi in his body. If he wanted to reach the Da Cheng level, then he would have to use Xuan qi to refine his flesh, however, these two processes were extremely painful!

However regarding the pain, Long Yu didn't care at all because so long as he could endure and get through these two stages, he would be able to reach the Da Cheng level of Demon tyrant form, and then, his body's anti-attack capability would increase several times.

This sacrifice was worth it.

"Xuan qi, refining muscles and bones!"

Long Yu was sitting on a bamboo bed, Xuan qi was circulating in his whole body and seeping into his muscles, penetrating into his bones, and he was feeling a painful itching feeling in his entire body, making him unable to bear the pain, so he tightly clenched his teeth to resist.

The pain in his muscles and bones was hundred times fiercer than the pain when Xuan qi would circulate in his meridians!

To quench the muscles and bones, if one didn't have extraordinary willpower, then it was absolutely impossible to go through this process, however this was Long Yu and the thing he didn't lack at all was sheer willpower and dedication!

When Long Yu was practicing, Liao Lele would occasionally come to check if he

was alright, but whenever she saw the look of pain on his face, she couldn't help but be somewhat worried for him.

Old white had already informed her that practicing a body refining type martial skills was an incomparably painful process and Liao Lele was worried that something might go wrong in Long Yu's practice.

However even so, Liao Lele was unable to bear the pain of love. (Mystique: O_O)

"Come on."

Liao Lele was silently praying in her heart for Long Yu.

After two days, Long Yu finally stopped quenching his muscles and bones and finally got rid of this painful process. He was finally able to reach the Xiao Cheng level of Demon tyrant form and this was all thanks to his indomitable willpower.

"After reaching the Xiao Cheng level of Demon tyrant form, my basic strength has also grown a lot. Moreover, the anti-attack capability of my body has greatly strengthened."

Long Yu's eyes flashed with a hint of determination in them: "Now if attacked by someone at the same strength level or below, they can only hurt my flesh, but they cannot destroy my muscles and bones!"

If the Demon tyrant form was practiced to the Da Cheng level, it would be similar to turning one's flesh into iron, and even if he was under a heavy attack from a master at the Wudao fifth layer, he would simply feel ticklish!

In the description of Demon tyrant form, Long Yu also read that after reaching the Da Cheng level, one would be able to congeal the Demon Vajra cover on the body, which would then give super defense capabilities.

Even if he had not reached the Wudao seventh layer and couldn't release Xuan qi out of his body, but using the Demon Vajra cover on his body surface, he would be enough to withstand the impact of all the same level martial skills.

"I must achieve the Da Cheng level of Demon tyrant form."

There was a firm and resolute look in Long Yu's eyes, he simply had no time to rest and immediately started the next phase of practice.

This time, he was going to use Xuan qi to quench his flesh. He had just started to practice, but suddenly, his whole skin seemed to have started to crack, and from these cracks, blood was unceasingly oozing out!

It was as if someone was delimiting his skin with hundreds of knives. At this time, the pain he was suffering could be imagined!

The pain of his skin cracking was simply unbearable and Long Yu was clenching his teeth to withstand it. This was a painful process of shedding skin, but once completed, Long Yu would be like a butterfly that just came out of its cocoon, with brand-new flesh, and tough enough to resist a sword!

Long Yu spent three days and three nights constantly in pain, but three days later, his flesh finally had a transformation.

There was a layer of broken skin and meat spread under the bamboo bed, but after finishing the quenching process of his flesh, Long Yu grew back a new baby-like skin, smooth but tough like iron, and when Xuan qi was condensed on it, it could become extremely tough.

“Da Cheng level of Demon tyrant form, meridians, bones, muscles and flesh, all have been refined by Xuan qi, and now, the body seems impregnable. If someone intends to hurt me, they must be at least stronger than me!”

Moreover, in addition to the toughness granted by the Da Cheng level of Demon tyrant form, he could also condense Xuan qi on his body to congeal the Demon vajra cover, which could instantly increase his defensive strength.

The anti-attack strength of Demon vajra cover was enough to resist against the Xuan wind destroyer martial skill of Qin Tianque or the wind-blades released by Xuan wind seal!

Of course, a lot of Xuan qi was consumed to maintain the Demon vajra cover, so Long Yu would only use it at the most crucial moment.

He opened his eyes, got down the bamboo bed, and a look of satisfaction finally appeared on his face.

Now, if he ran into martial skills of a Wudao seventh layer master like Qin Tianque, then fighting would not be so difficult, at least he won't receive any heavy injuries.

After reaching the Da Cheng level of Demon tyrant form, the strength of his body increased from initial strength of 35,000 Jin to 42000 Jin, and this

enhancement rate was quite impressive.

“Next, I must go to the Royal Ancient Ginseng forest, and strive to capture the top grade ancient ginseng, then, I should be able to step into the Wudao seventh layer, and after that, I will be also able to release Xuan qi from my body!”

Long Yu thought that he must take advantage of this opportunity of participating in the Royal Ancient Ginseng forest to increase his strength by leaps and bounds!

.....

At this moment, the chosen few disciples of Zhentian Sect had assembled at the bottom of Zhentian canyon to go to the ‘Royal Ancient Ginseng forest’.

There were a total of fifteen people, and of all of them had their ages below 20 years old, and in addition to that, each of them was at least at the Wudao sixth layer.

“Feng Qianqian, that waste of your Feng Clan is also going to the Royal Ancient Ginseng forest, why hasn’t he come yet?”

In the group of disciples, with a face as sharp as a knife, truncated near the edges and corners, a grandiose man said with an impatient look in his eyes: “Making 15 people wait for him, does he think he is some kind of big shot?”

This grandiose looking man was Tan Yue’s elder brother, Tan Jian!

At present, in Zhentian Sect, Tan Jian was in limelight and was simply unmatched, because a few days ago, he successfully broke into the Wudao eighth layer and became the strongest inner disciple of Zhentian Sect!

And at this time, there were still two months left for Tan Jian to turn 20 years old. It was obvious that his future was limitless and someday, he might break from the Wudao ninth layer and step into another level!

His achievements were even more prominent than Feng Yun, and among all the disciples representing Zhentian Sect in the competition at Royal Ancient Ginseng forest, Tan Jian was the strongest.

At this moment, Tan Jian was actually talking to a girl in black clothes, who had an appearance of 18 years old, and at present, there was an aloof and arrogant look on her face. One could see from her appearance that there was actually a very small resemblance between her and Feng Yang, and it was obvious that she was also a member of Yu Guan City's Feng clan.

Feng Qianqian was Feng Yang's younger sister and although she was still smaller in age compared to him, but her cultivation level was higher than him. She had already stepped into the Wudao seventh layer and was an inner disciple of Zhentian Sect!

Hearing the impatient words of Tan Jian, Feng Qianqian shouted loudly: "My Feng Clan has nothing to do with that waste Long Yu, and if you are so concerned about why he hasn't arrived yet, you can go and ask the same question from the elder."

In front of the group of fifteen disciples, a black robed old man was sitting in repose with his eyes closed. It was none other than Elder Yu, the elder who

guarded Martial Court.

However at this moment, Elder Yu did not participate in their discussion. He simply didn't say a word and no one knew what was going on in his mind right now.

Tan Jian was the strongest inner disciple and was naturally qualified enough to talk to elder and ask questions.

"Elder Yu, Long Yu still hasn't come, if we got delayed and arrived late at the Ancient Ginseng forest, who is to blame for that?"

Tan Yu Jian looked at Elder Yu and asked loudly in a swift and fierce tone.

"Not coming?"

Elder Yu elders said lightly, and immediately, everybody turned their heads to look and actually saw a young man, clad in blue robe, gradually stepping towards the entrance of Zhentian canyon.

This blue robed youth was Long Yu, and this time, he was also representing Zhentian Sect in the competition. And right now, he was clad in the blue colored outer disciple's uniform of Zhentian Sect.

When Long Yu appeared in front of everyone, stern looks flashed in the eyes of many people.

And among them, Feng Qianqian and Tan Jian were the most obvious ones

because they were not at all concealing the killing intention in their eyes while they were staring at Long Yu.

Chapter – 30 Princess of Qiansi

Long Yu's perception regarding the killing intention was extremely sensitive and he immediately saw the figures of Feng Qianqian and Tan Jian and recognized them.

“These must be Feng Qianqian and Tan Jian, so they are also going.....”

Long Yu maintained his composure and walked slowly step by step.

“Waste, you injured my elder brother Feng Yang, in this tour to the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, I will make you pay for sure.”

Feng Qianqian sneered and said to Long Yu in a threatening tone.

“Until now, you're still calling me as 'waste', but your brother Feng Yang could not beat me then isn't he more of a waste than me?”

Long Yu refused to admit himself as inferior and immediately resorted to a verbal counterattack!

“Sharp tongue can't save you, I hope your talks and your strength are equally tough.”

Feng Qianqian sneered to say beautifully and turned away to depart.

She scorned at Long Yu and twisted her lips, she was at Wudao seventh layer,

so in her eyes, Long Yu was a mere waste and simply did not have any qualifications to talk to her.

What she didn't know was that two weeks ago, Long Yu had not only defeated but also killed Qin Tianque, who was also at the Wudao seventh layer like her!

Compared to Feng Qianqian, Tan Jian, who was standing nearby seemed much more matured.

He had already entered the Wudao eight layer, this burly man didn't say a single word, just gave a stern look to Long Yu and it was like his killing intention had substantially enveloped him!

He was a confident person, didn't even bother to say anything, and only with his eyes he gave a warning to Long Yu.

Long Yu dared to injure Tan Yue, kicked and broke her leg, and Tan Jian was her elder brother, so how could he possibly spare him? There was no need to say that in the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest competition, he was surely going to take strong action against Long Yu.

Tan Jian's eyes were filled with intention to kill him, but Long Yu remained unmoved.

This Tan Jian was still inexperienced!

Long Yu simply did not care about all these things and stepped forward and joined the group, and was ready to go.

Because, they were about to go to the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, so all these disciples of Zhentian Sect were very much excited and simply did not care about the short conflict between Long Yu, Feng Qianqian and Tan Jian.

This was a group of 15 people, and in addition to it, there were Long Yu and Elder Yu, altogether 17 people were going to represent Zhentian Sect in Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest competition.

Everyone was riding a horse enabling them to quickly reach their destination.

“If you want to achieve the realm of martial arts in the legend, the harmony of heaven and man is a must, and the empty line, but it is only a pity that in the entire Tang State, such persons are very few.....”

Elder Yu was looking into distance and was riding on a fierce horse, and said which seemed like he did unintentionally, but in reality, he deliberately said those words just to make this group of 16 people aware of this fact.

The harmony of heaven and man, just how formidable was the realm of martial arts?

It was unattainable even for such a powerful elder!

“I’m old and the realm of martial arts is vast, but for kids like you, there are infinite possibilities in the world of martial arts.”

Elder Yu was not looking at them but his discourse was clearly introduced to

each ear: “The Royal Ancient Ginseng forest is only a minor stop on the way of Wudao, but if you encounter any danger you must give priority to your own life, do you understand?”

“Yes”

Everyone in the group nodded. Wudao was a way in which strength was respected, but the strength also relied on the basis of life.

Without life, what would be the use of talking about Wudao and strength?

Everybody understood this fact!

But this was going to be a big chance on the way of Wudao and no one was able to maintain their calmness, by that time, for the sake of gaining more strength, everyone would choose to go all out without caring about their lives.

The group continued to ride on fierce horses on the way to the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest.

Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest was located in the distant place in the northern direction of Zhentian sect, and even on the horseback, they would be able to reach there in ten days.

Back and forth was going to take twenty days of journey, in addition to it, ten days long competition in the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, so all this was going to be an affair for a month in total.

“And after coming back from Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, the annual competition of Feng clan would also be starting soon.....”

Long Yu thought to himself and started secretly observing the disciples of Zhentian Sect who were travelling with him.

Excluding him, there were 15 people, who were all inner disciples of Zhentian Sect, and among them, there were either Wudao sixth layer disciples or Wudao seventh layer disciples and only Tan Jian was at Wudao eight layer and possessed incomparably tyrannical strength.

Properly speaking, relying on his strength, Tan Jian could try to challenge one of the core disciples of Zhentian Sect, and after defeating them, he could become a core disciple, but he actually did not do so.

In Zhentian Sect, there were one hundred and eight core disciples in total, and if an inner disciple wanted to become a core disciple, he must challenge one of the core disciples, and after a successful challenge, he would be able to become the substitute for defeated core disciple.

But, perhaps Tan Jian wanted to wait till his return from Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, because by then, his strength would have increased once again, and with his new enhanced strength, he would challenge a core disciple, and in that case, he would be able to get a higher ranking in the first try, after all, one could get an opportunity to challenge a core disciple once in every half-year time.

“In comparison, becoming an inner disciple is much simpler.”

Long Yu thought because it was only needed for one to step into the Wudao

sixth layer. After that, an elder would perform an inspection and after passing, one could become the inner disciple of Zhentian sect.

After becoming an inner disciple, the Sect would reward him with a low-grade battle weapon to increase his strength.

However, Long Yu already had Blizzard boots as his battle weapon and there was not much difference between it and the battle weapons rewarded to other inner disciples.

This time, the selected group of 16 disciples, which was to represent Zhentian Sect in the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, didn't have any core disciple in it, and it didn't mean that the core disciples were not strong, but because of the ages of these core disciples had already surpassed 20 years, hence they didn't have the qualifications to enter Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest competition.

“It seems according to rumors, this time, a talented core disciple of Qiansi Sect is participating in Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest competition, but who knows what their cultivation levels actually are and how much stronger they are in comparison to Tan Jian.”

Long Yu was secretly thinking and slightly had some anticipation.

So long as he was able to reach to Wudao seventh layer, no matter what, even Tan Jian, who was at the Wudao eight layer, would not be able to hurt him, but the opportunity to step into the Wudao seventh layer very much depended on the success in the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest competition.

If he managed to collect a few ancient ginsengs and absorb their Lingqi then

stepping into the Wudao seventh layer would not be a difficult task.

Horses were galloping all the way through wilderness, open fields under the blue sky filled with white clouds!

During this period, Long Yu was idling and had started to comprehend the Zhentian tactics that he learnt in the Martial Court but was able to reach the beginner's level only. As Elder Yu had explained to him, Zhentian tactics actually contained the core law, created by the founder of Zhentian sect and contained high level world principles and if Long Yu was able to reach a higher level of understanding of it then it would obviously increase his battle strength and efficiency.

Unfortunately, over the past ten days, Long Yu did not have much progress and just managed to slightly strengthen the Zhentian mysterious mood.

“It seems like the comprehension of Zhentian charm is very difficult, no wonder only the core disciples of Zhentian sect are able to comprehend Zhentian mysterious mood

Long Yu was not discouraged that he had been unable to have a breakthrough, after all, he recently stepped into the world of Wudao, and so long as he was given enough time, he believed he would not be worse than anyone else.

After ten days, an old city constructed on a hillside appeared in front of everyone!

“Royal Ancient Ginseng City, it was built by the royal clan of Tang State. And the authentic members of royal clan live here and control the city. Royal Ancient

Ginseng forest is located behind the city.”

After arriving outside the Royal Ancient Ginseng City, Elder Yu explained to the group.

Long Yu looked towards Royal Ancient Ginseng City and was surprised to find that this city was much smaller than Yu Guan city, but it had thicker walls probably built specially in order to protect Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest.

In the past, the members of royal clan and disciples of major sects stayed in this city before entering Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest.

The Royal Ancient City gate was closed. Elder Yu rode forward and shouted facing the city gate: “Zhentian Sect’s Shuiyun Yu has led the disciples so far!”

With a loud bang, the giant city gate immediately opened, allowing them to pass.

“Come on.”

Elder Yu turned and led the group on their horsebacks into Royal Ancient Ginseng City.

When they entered the city, the first thing that Long Yu saw was a spacious street made up of ancient brickwork, leading all the way to the mountain ranges behind the city, and in the centre of the streets, a black shadow was standing and unexpectedly impressively!

Long Yu looked at it and was immediately shocked, because that black shadow was too strange!

Although, it looked like a graceful stature of a beautiful woman, but Long Yu was sure that it was definitely not a person, but was merely a human like shadow existence.

But, that shadow even was able to stand up and could block the paths of the disciples of Zhentian Sect, it was really very bizarre.

“This is a person of Qiansi Sect.”

In the group of Zhentian sect, some people started whispering among themselves.

Qiansi Sect?

Long Yu heard and frowned, just what was the background of this Qiansi Sect, that its people could actually make a shadow stand erect like this?

While everyone’s mind was racing at that time, that standing shadow suddenly spoke!

It was a nice and crisp voice of a girl, who said with some contempt: “You are the disciples of Zhentian Sect, you don’t look formidable, it seems like your levels are even worse in comparison to the disciples of Hanbing Sect.”

It was extremely strange to see a black shadow talking!

When the disciples of Zhentian Sect heard this, all of them were unhappy. Why did this person say that disciples of Zhentian Sect were not strong and that their strength was worse than the disciples of Hanbing Sect?

There was an obviously contempt in her voice and this filled the hearts of the disciples of Zhentian Sect with indignation.

Only Tan Jian, with a look of calm color, said lightly: "Could it be that you are the princess of Qiansi?"

"I can tell that you have good eyesight, well, this princess does not have any interest in you all, so you all may pass!"

The black shadow said with a contemptuous smile and then actually fragmented into small pieces in front of them, quickly turned into black smoke and disappeared, as if she was not there in the first place.

Princess of Qiansi?

"Brother Tan Jian, who is the princess of Qiansi?"

A tall and young Wudao seventh layer disciple of Zhentian sect asked while looking at Tan Jian.

"The princess of Qiansi Sect is the daughter of the sovereign of Qiansi Sect, and she is the only core disciple to enter the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest competition this year, perhaps her strength is more than mine."

Tan Jian said: “If you run into her in the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, be careful, this woman is cruel and merciless.”

All of disciples of Zhentian Sect heard this and nodded.

They never imagined that just after entering the Royal Ancient Ginseng City, the most powerful disciple of Qiansi Sect would come personally to warn them and there was an obvious contempt hidden in her disdainful way of talking, which completely overshadowed these so-called geniuses.

Long Yu didn’t care about this matter, but a genuine curiosity emerged in his heart regarding the precarious martial skill of the princess of Qiansi Sect.

What kind of martial skill did the disciples of Qiansi Sect practice that equipped them with a peculiar power to manipulate human shadows?

Since, these human shadows could speak, so naturally they could also be used in combat. This was a strange ability of the opponent, so Long Yu had premonition that this trip to Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest was going to be extremely difficult!

Leading the group, even Elder Yu’s complexion had somewhat changed.

.....

Website changed to:

<http://novelsnao.com/category/dme/>

Chapter – 31 Imperial City's Liu clan

All the disciples of Zhentian Sect continued to move and arrived at a place where residential arrangements had been made for them by the Tang Emperor.

It was a very fine renovated inn. It actually belonged to the Royal family of Tang State. It was very wide and its space was more than enough to accommodate all 17 members of Zhentian Sect.

“You have to find your own room to rest, tomorrow morning, be ready to enter Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, and seek for your own chance.”

Elder Yu explained to the group: “In addition to that, the disciples of Qiansi Sect practice core law based martial art, and you can find material on these martial arts on these bamboo slips, you can watch them on your own, I will not remind you again.”

Soon, each member of the group received a bamboo slip, on which were inscribed several characteristic features about the peculiarities of Qiansi Sect, and in addition to that, there were also some records on the martial techniques of Hanbing Sect on the bamboo slip.

After getting the bamboo slip, Long Yu went to the second floor and found a room for him, and sat near a table and carefully watched the records described on the bamboo slip all alone.

“The disciples of Qiansi Sect practice the Core law based shadow tactics, and after its successful practice, they are able to manipulate their own human shadows in fight, many martial skills branch from it and came into existence, but

the art of manipulating human shadows is very sinister and ruthlessly fearful, and very difficult to guard against.”

Manipulate one’s own shadow during a fight?

Long Yu’s brows slightly wrinkled, and he quickly remembered that some time ago, he saw the human shadow of the so called princess of Qiansi Sect at the city gate.

The disciples of Qiansi Sect could separate their bodies and shadow at will, and could launch attack using these shadows, moreover, these shadows could also speak. It was really very strange.

In Tianyu continent, martial cultivators had done several researches on Xuan qi which led to the rise of various schools. In the final analysis, the essence of core law and martial skills of Qiansi sect used Xuan qi to manipulate shadow, which was quite a special technique.

“This kind of fighting, I have never encountered before, after entering the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, I must always be careful and try to avoid places with shadows as far as possible, to avoid being sneak attacked

Long Yu thought to himself, and continued to watch the data described on the bamboo slip to get a further understanding of the disciples of Qiansi Sect.

As for the martial art of Hanbing Sect and Zhentian Sect, there was not much difference between them. If disciples of Hanbing Heart disciples comprehended the mysterious mood of their sect’s core law, then it would significantly improve their fighting ability.

“The Zhentian tactics of Zhentian sect contains the mysterious mood which is based on the world principle of suppression, then the core law of Hanbing sect should contain ice-cold related world principle, right?” (Mystique-Zhentian tactics is the core law of Zhentian sect. Core laws are unique to all sects.)

Long Yu guessed, during this trip to the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, he should not encounter an opponent who had already comprehended mysterious mood of their respective sect, but it was not necessarily true either, so he must be prepared for all situations.

He carefully studied the martial characteristics of Qiansi Sect and Hanbing Sect, and kept them in his mind, because this information gathering was very important, and tomorrow, after entering the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, it could save his life.

The time passed, and in a flash, several hours had already passed.

Someone knocked at the door and Long Yu suddenly heard a voice.

“Brother Long Yu, are you in the room?”

A somewhat familiar voice reached the ears of Long Yu.

“It is him?”

Long Yu heard this voice and remembered that it was the voice of the disciple who was quite active on the way, it was Ling Han.

Ling Han, a disciple of Zhentian Sect, now at Wudao seventh layer, could be said the strongest person after Tan Jian in the trip.

Long Yu had a good impression about Ling Han, because Tan Jian was hostile to Long Yu, but throughout the way on this trip, Ling Han had showed a friendly gesture to him.

Ling Han always desired in his heart about the unity of disciples of Zhentian Sect and hoped that everybody could get a chance to reap benefit in Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest!

“Brother Ling Han, what happened?”

Long Yu thought for a moment then asked loudly.

“Well, Brother Long Yu, in a while, the princess of the emperor clan of Tang State is going to arrive at Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, I want to go out for a walk with you, if we get a good look at royal princess then that would be awesome!”

Ling Han, standing at the door, elegantly and courteously said.

Royal princess?

Long Yu felt a bit of headache, he came across the princess of Qiansi sect at the Royal Ancient Ginseng city gate, and now came the actual royal princess of Tang State, why in the world were so many princesses coming to this city?

Of course, Long Yu understood that the royal princess, about whom Ling Han was talking about, was the genuine princess and that princess of Qiansi sect was only a hidden title given to her by people.

“The royal clan of Tang State has built the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest and also controls all of the seven large sects of Tang State.”

Long Yu’s eyes flashed with some touch of anticipation.

He had vaguely heard before that he was actually an abandoned child of a big aristocratic family of the Imperial city, and sooner or later, he would go to Tang Imperial City to find out his true identity

Now, the royal princess was about to arrive, so he might as well have a quick look at her.

“Since fellow brother has personally come to invite me, how can I possibly refuse?”

Long Yu replied and got up to go with him.

It was not so that he was really interested in the royal princess, but he actually wanted to have a look at the elegant demeanor of the members of the so-called royal clan of Tang State!

“Aha, now that brother Long Yu agreed to come with me, we have six people together, let us go!”

Ling Han laughed.

Long Yu opened the door and saw a tall man wearing a white dress and a hat adorned with a jade pendant, he had an elegant temperament, and after looking at him once, a person couldn't help but have a favorable impression about him.

This tall youth was Ling Han.

“Brother, they are waiting below, let's go.”

Ling Han smiled and turned around to go downstairs.

Long Yu was behind him and saw that there were four other people waiting at the door of the inn downstairs, but their cultivation was not as ripe as Long Yu.

When they saw Long Yu, all of them had somewhat discontented appearances on their faces, but since they were concerned about Ling Han, and gave him face, so they didn't say anything.

Six people travelled together, and were walking in the chilly streets of Royal Ancient Ginseng City in the cold night.

Usually, few people used to come to Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, therefore, the entire city was quite empty, and the whole Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest was actually a back garden constructed by the royal clan of Tang State.

Therefore, once a year, the emperor of Tang State invited some of the Sects to

come and pick ancient ginseng from the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, and in a way, it worked as a training to produce powerful martial artists for the bright future of Tang State.

“Hey, it is people of Hanbing Sect.”

Halfway down the street, they suddenly saw that not far from them, there were four disciples of Hanbing Sect, also walking on the same street.

Long Yu gave a casual look to them and was immediately surprised for a moment.

He was surprised to find out that among the four disciples of Hanbing Sect, there was a woman wearing a light green dress, her long hair draped over her shoulders, and a bronze sword scabbard was hung around her waist.

Feng Yao!

Long Yu immediately recognized her. The woman was really Feng Yao, and at that time, she was carrying a bronze long sword, a top grade battle weapon that she had obtained from her father, Feng Longsong.

On the side of Feng Yao, there was a handsome youth dressed in fine clothing and was walking side by side and quite close to her, and from this, one could see clearly that both of them must have good relations.

Then, those four disciples of Hanbing Sect naturally saw Long Yu's group of six people.

“Look, the disciples of Zhentian Sect.”

“The one walking at the forefront is Ling Han right? Looks pretty strong, I do not know his current strength level.”

Two female disciples of Hanbing Sect suddenly talked to each other.

By this time, Feng Yao tilted her head and finally saw Long Yu in the group.

When Feng Yao saw Long Yu, she was extremely surprised and suddenly raised her black eyebrows: “Is he? How is this possible?”

The handsome young man, who stood by the side of Feng Yao, noticed the sudden change in her complexion and couldn’t help but asked: “Sister Yao, whom did you see?”

“It is the waste I told you about, but how could he possibly be here?”

Feng Yao said at will while pressing her eyebrows.

“That waste?”

The handsome youth beside her gawked then immediately followed the line of sight of Feng Yao’s eyes and finally located Long Yu in the group of Zhentian disciples!

Long Yu, at this time, was walking behind Ling Han and had an indifferent look in his eyes.

Long Yu went out to see royal princess but ran into Feng Yao. Of course, he had long been expecting to see Feng Yao, not now, but he simply did not care. Tonight he came out just to “look reverently” at the elegant demeanor of the royal clan, so, as far as settling his account with Feng Yao was concerned, after entering Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, he would have plenty of time to slowly play with her.

However, Long Yu didn’t want to pay any attention to the opposite party, actually, he did not want to pay attention to them paying attention to him!

Then, Long Yu saw that the handsome youth standing next to Feng Yao sneered and even walked straight towards him.

As that youth moved, three other female students of Hanbing Sect, including Feng Yao, would naturally not stand idly and also followed him.

Seeing the threatening look on the face of that handsome youth, Ling Han smiled then stepped forward, and actually directly blocked his path: “You are a disciple of Hanbing Sect, if you have something to say, say it but don’t act unreasonably!”

When that handsome youth of Hanbing Sect heard this, a color of disdain emerged in his eyes, and he stretched out his hand and pointed his finger towards Long Yu and said: “Let that waste come forward, I have something to tell him!”

Seeing this scene, all four disciples standing on the side of Long Yu went one step back, they didn't want to get involved in this conflict!

At that time, Ling Han still stood in front of Long Yu's body, and was entirely still, so as to hide Long Yu behind him!

"You are in the Royal Ancient Ginseng City, don't go too far."

Ling Han still had a smile on his face as he said, but this time, there was a hint of threat in his tone. Although the opposite party was being aggressive, but he was not made of soft persimmon either, how could he just stand there and face the opposite party's rude behavior?

"Well, Brother Ling Han, let me come forward."

Seeing the protective attitude of Ling Han, a warm feeling appeared in the heart of Long Yu.

At this time, Ling Han actually had stepped up to help him on his own accord, but how could Long Yu possibly allow Ling Han to get involved in this matter?

Moreover, it was Long Yu who had a grudge against Feng Yao, not Ling Han!

And Long Yu did not think that Ling Han would be able to solve this matter.

"Brother, you"

Ling Han turned his head and looked at Long Yu, and clearly saw the bubbling confidence in his eyes, and then said with a smug smile: “Well said, come forward, show yourself!”

Ling Han recalled that in Zhentian Sect, how Feng Yun was shot to fly in the air like a ball and was seriously injured!

He knew that Long Yu was strong and also had his own secrets.

Ling Han was arbitrarily getting involved which actually did not seem proper.

“Waste, so you have really come out of the group, your courage is actually not small, I thought you only know how to hide behind others.”

When the youth saw Long Yu coming forward, a contemptuous smile appeared on his face.

But, Long Yu simply did not pay any attention to him.

He tilted his head and looked at Feng Yao and asked with a casual smile on his face asked: “Little Yao, long time no see, why do you have a dog on your side that only knows how to bark randomly?”

Dog that barked randomly!

Hearing this sentence, the complexion of that young man instantly changed. How did this waste even dare to call him a barking dog in front of so many people?

“He is my cousin, a member of the Liu clan of Imperial city, Liu Mingxuan, and like me, he is also a disciple of Hanbing Sect.”

Feng Yao indifferently said, and at that time, there was a color of taunt in her beautiful pair of eyes, as if she wanted to see how Long Yu would react to this.

Imperial City, Liu clan, Liu Mingxuan!

Long Yu finally knew the identity of this barking dog. So he was actually the cousin of Feng Yao, someone from her maternal side of family!

Unexpectedly, Feng Yao's mother Liu Yu was actually someone from the Imperial City, but how did she get married to Feng Longsong?

Did that mean, Feng Longsong had already left his own footprints in the Imperial City?

This was getting more and more interesting!

Long Yu thought to himself, then, if he wanted to know his true identity, it should particularly not be too difficult. As long as he would go to the Imperial City, he should be able to unravel many puzzles.

Chapter 32 Fights bravely

Of course, now was not the time for Long Yu to intertwine his own life experience.

That Liu Mingxuan of Imperial city's Liu clan was staring at him and said furiously: "Waste, you'll pay the price for the words you just said!"

"That is natural, everyone must be responsible for the words one speaks, it implies on you too, barking dog."

Long Yu said with a contemptuous smile.

As Liu Mingxuan listened to these words, his charming face suddenly twisted with anger.

"Do you dare to step forward and fight with me right now?"

Liu Mingxuan looked angrily at Long Yu, put out his hand and pointed his finger at his face. At that time, he was trying to provoke Long Yu and his actions were full of disdain!

"Why wouldn't I?"

Long Yu chuckled loudly, and went a step forward, as if he was not at all affected by Liu Mingxuan's provocation.

Both Liu Mingxuan and Feng Yao possessed the same strength, and were only at the Wudao seventh layer, and when compared to the strength of Qin Tianque, there was not much difference between them, so Long Yu naturally didn't care.

At present, Long Yu had not only practiced Demon tyrant form to the Da Cheng level, but he also had a battle weapon, Blizzard boots, and now, he was several times stronger compared to that time when he had defeated and killed Qin Tianque.

What the other people didn't know that Long Yu had killed Qin Tianque and they also didn't know that how Long Yu had become a lot stronger than before.

When Ling Han heard these words of Long Yu, he was a bit surprised, and quickly stretched out his one hand to stop him: "Brother Long Yu, don't be impulsive, Liu Mingxuan is at Wudao seventh layer, you are not his match."

Theoretically speaking, it seemed obvious to Ling Han that Long Yu would not be able to hold his own against Liu Mingxuan.

But, if when it came to actual combat, then Ling Han did not think that Long Yu was not Liu Mingxuan's opponent!

"Hmph, Ling Han, I do not want to make you an enemy, you stay out of this."

Liu Mingxuan contemptuously smiled and said: "Let this waste step forward, or doesn't he dare to fight with me? I'd like to see how he continues to talk insolently with me!"

At the side, with a color of contempt on her face, Feng Yao was looking at Long

Yu.

She thought to herself that now Long Yu was at Wudao sixth layer, although she didn't know that how he was able to step into the world of Wudao, but even with his current strength, he could never be an opponent of Liu Mingxuan.

As for why Long Yu was able to enhance his cultivation so quickly right after entering the World of Wudao, Feng Yao guessed that it must have been her father, Feng Longsong, who might have possibly prepared some immortality drugs for Long Yu to help in his fast growth.

“Brother Ling Han, please let me handle this.”

Long Yu said.

“I cannot.”

Ling Han was adamant, as an impregnable bastion, he stood in front of Long Yu: “Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest competition is going to start soon, even you want to fight, no need to begin now, isn't it better for both of you to first enter the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest and fight there when competition starts?”

“Well, I am fine with not fighting now.”

Liu Mingxuan said with a disdainful look in his eyes: “Let this waste kowtow to me, he must admit his mistake and say out loud that in the end, who is actually a barking dog!”

“Sire, don’t go too far, he is a disciple of my Zhentian Sect and no one can humiliate him.”

Ling Han’s complexion gradually turned cold and from his stance, it was ready to fight for Long Yu and would not tolerate anymore insult done to him.

At this scene, Long Yu felt a warm feeling in his heart.

Ling Han was really maintaining his position as a senior and treated him as a junior fellow disciple of the same sect!

As for the other four disciples, they stood at the rear side from the very beginning, as they didn’t want to get involved in this matter, because at their current strengths, it was impossible for them to stand up for Long Yu.

“Kowtow and admit mistake? Who do you regard yourself as?”

Long Yu sneered then immediately turned his head and said to Ling Han: “Brother Ling Han, believe in me, nothing would happen.”

Ling Han’s knitted his eyebrows but he also thought that this matter was improper from the very beginning.

Although, he knew that Long Yu was strong, but this disciple of Hanbing Sect was at Wudao seventh layer and if Long Yu really wanted to go to fight with him then it would be very difficult for Long Yu to defeat him.

Obviously, the gap between the strength a master at Wudao seventh layer and

a Wudao sixth layer was really huge. A master at Wudao seventh layer could produce Xuan qi out of his body, and this skill always gave him an overwhelming advantage over his opponent.

Although Long Yu was a master of Wudao sixth layer, but he should not have any experience fighting with a master of Wudao seventh layer, so how could he deal with Liu Mingxuan?

“Brother Long Yu, listen to my words, you must not be impulsive.”

Ling Han said solemnly because he firmly wanted to protect Long Yu!

The other four disciples of Zhentian Sect, as well as Feng Yao and the other two female disciples of Hanbing Sect, thought that relying on the strength of Ling Han, Long Yu was trying to be so arrogant and rampant in front of Liu Mingxuan.

“Really shameless, he is actually pulling Brother Ling Han in his own matter.”

“No wonder this Long Yu is such a kind of person, he has even offended Brother Tan Jian and senior sister Feng Qianqian.”

The four disciples of Zhentian Sect were whispering and this made Long Yu to somewhat wonder.

At present, the truth was that he actually wanted to fight with Liu Mingxuan, just to see who was stronger, but Ling Han was not willing to allow this fight, evidently, he must think of a way.

“So, in reality, you are not just a waste, but a soft egg, trying to hide behind others to not get crushed!”

Liu Mingxuan contemptuous smiled and said: “You’re such a thing, you’re not worthy of Feng Yao, no wonder even she calls you a waste!”

Upon hearing this, standing nearby, Feng Yao did not have any special expression, as if she thought that it was a natural comment.

At this time, others were somewhat surprised at what Liu Mingxuan said about Long Yu, that he was not “worthy” of Feng Yao. What did it mean? Was there some ambiguous relationship between them?

But looking at the facial expression of Feng Yao, it was obvious that there was an apparent disdain in her eyes for Long Yu!

So to say, there was only one possibility, someone actually wanted to match Long Yu with Feng Yao.

Ling Han was also somewhat surprised because he did not think that there would actually be a relationship between Long Yu and Feng Yao.

“Brother Ling Han, he has challenged me, if I do not fight then wouldn’t it be a loss of face for you and other disciples of Zhentian Sect?”

Long Yu’s both eyes flashed with vigor, he had finally found an opportunity to persuade Ling Han.

“Such being the case, you are free to fight!”

Ling Han’s eyes shone brightly and said in an encouraging tone: “Remember, your brother will always be behind you, you do not worry too much, even if you are defeated, show us that you can give a good fight!”

He thought that Long Yu liked Feng Yao Yu, and in front of a person he liked, the reason did not matter, because even if a man knew that he would be defeated, he would still want to fight bravely in front of the person he liked.

“Don’t worry.....”

Long Yu nodded and finally stepped forward.

Long Yu felt somewhat helpless at the assumption that Ling Han had made on his own, but so long as he could fight, he didn’t care about anything else!

“So you really dare to come out.”

Liu Mingxuan saw Long Yu stepping forward, and with a disdainful smile on his face, he said: “Waste, I will beat you up so badly that you will kneel down in front of me and beg for mercy, then you will regret making those impertinent remarks.”

“Less nonsense, come to fight.”

Long Yu said in an indifferent manner, and immediately, Xuan qi began to

revolve in his entire body.

Long Yu immediately activated the Demon Vajra cover, and now, he was prepared to start anytime because even if Liu Mingxuan tried to use his strongest sneak attack on him, this protection cover would ensure his safety.

The next moment, Liu Mingxuan finally shot!

“Collapsing hill fist!”

In a move, he brandished his martial skill and his fist directly went towards the chest of Long Yu.

Ling Han narrowed his both eyes and felt that the strength condensed in this fist was only of Wudao sixth layer standard.

But, while facing this collapsing hill fist, Long Yu didn't move at all.

“If it's an attack of Wudao sixth layer standard then I should be able to withstand it by depending on the Demon tyrant form.....”

Long Yu thought in mind, and in the next moment, that collapsing hill fist directly rumbled on his shoulder!

Strong winds began to rush from place where the fist struck and spread everywhere.

Everyone held their breaths after watching this scene, all of them thought that Long Yu would be shot to fly in the sky by this punch, at least, he would be thoroughly pushed back by the strength in this punch.

But, what happened at that time really surprised all of them. The gust of wind completely dispersed, but even after directly taking this attack, Long Yu's body was entirely still, as if this attack simply had no effect on him, rather it only gave him a tickling sensation.

“Do you have only this much strength?”

Long Yu said aloud: “If you have only such strength, then in a while, it is going to be you who will kneel down and beg for mercy!”

Liu Mingxuan had taken back his fist and moved several steps away from Long Yu, but there was still a disdainful smile on his face: “Waste, this was only 30% of my true strength, so you were able to withstand it, which is still beyond my expectations, but next time, I will let you witness my truth strength!”

“Cold dragon destroys!”

Still having a disdainful look in his eyes, Liu Mingxuan waved his arms, and suddenly, strong Xuan qi began to accumulate around them, and he actually congealed two cold dragons made from Xuan qi, and both dragon advanced towards Long Yu from two directions!

These two streams of Xuan qi actually transformed into dragon claws and were obviously extremely powerful!

“This cold dragon destroyer is absolutely a top grade martial skill, but it seems this Liu Mingxuan has only comprehended it to the Xiao Cheng realm.”

Long Yu’s eyes shone with anticipation: “Makes me want to see, how strong the defensive ability of my Demon Vajra cover is.”

Thinking of this, he once again did not dodge, just stood there, waiting to welcome the two cold dragons, in order to resist these attacks and test the limits of his Demon Vajra cover!

Seeing this scene, Ling Han’s heart sank.

“No, don’t be impulsive, Brother Long Yu should have sufficient assurance before trying something like this, otherwise you won’t be able to dodge when required.....”

Ling Han decided to step up and protect Long Yu but ultimately chose not to.

He chose to believe in Long Yu!

But at this time, facing the two cold dragons, Long Yu felt that they had the strength of 60,000-70,000 Jin, and stood keeping his feet firmly on the ground, and the Xuan qi began to suddenly surge around his body.

“Demon Vajra cover, coagulation!”

The next moment, a layer of pale golden light emerged on the surface his body, so that his whole person seemed incomparably holy!

Meanwhile, the two cold dragons, one from the left and the other from the right, attacked Long Yu and immediately transmitted strong impacts on Long Yu's body, making his whole body to almost stagger!

But then, on the surface of Long Yu's body, the layer of the pale golden light of Demon Vajra cover suddenly illuminated, and generated a stream of holy power, and immediately melted the strong impact.

The Xuan qi was gorgeously surging out of Long Yu's body, but he stood there steady like the Mt. Tai!

Seeing the steady and gorgeously golden stature of Long Yu, everyone standing around was shocked, whether it was Ling Han or Feng Yao or other disciples of Zhentian Sect and Hanbing Sect, because none of them ever thought that Long Yu could be able to so effortlessly resist a formidable move like cold dragon destroyer!

It was most shocking for Liu Mingxuan.

“How is this possible..... cold dragon destroyer is a top grade martial skill, though I have just practiced it to the Xiao Cheng level, but even so, my attack possessed strength of 70,000 Jin, how did this waste not even budge after taking my attack.....”

There was an incredible look in Liu Mingxuan's eyes.

This waste Long Yu was only at Wudao sixth layer? But his cold dragon destroyer was so powerful that even a master of Wudao seventh layer would

find it very difficult to resist!

“You say how? Is this your true strength?”

Long Yu said it loudly with a contemptuous smile: “If so, you are just a dog and do not deserve to clamor in front of me.”

As he finished saying these words, Liu Mingxuan became extremely angry.

He just wanted to use a stronger martial skill to deal with Long Yu, but suddenly, everyone heard a clear hoof beat from the distant place in the street, and everyone’s complexion instantly changed.

Everyone looked in the direction of the source of hoof beats, and saw a group of martial warriors, dressed in shining armors, coming on horsebacks.

“Royal princess has arrived.”

Everyone was startled and their hearts started to beat loudly.

Chapter 33 Youth in metal armor

The identity of Royal princess was enough to generate fear in anyone's heart.

When the intermittent hoof beats resounded, Feng Yao quickly persuaded Liu Mingxuan: "Cousin, Royal princess is coming, it is better that you temporarily don't fight."

Then, she looked at Long Yu, in her eyes flashed a light of indifference: "As for this waste, you will get plenty of opportunities to teach him a lesson."

To be honest, Feng Yao was extremely shocked to see that Long Yu was able to withstand two powerful cold dragon moves of Liu Mingxuan.

However, the impression of Long Yu as a waste was so deep rooted in her mind that she was unable to accept that this strength shown by Long Yu was his actually his own.

There was also a possibility that Long Yu had a strong defense type battle weapon and it was not his own defensive strength.

Now, Royal princess had arrived, and everybody felt that it was not appropriate for them to continue the fighting, so they suddenly stopped.

"Hmph, count yourself as lucky, waste."

Liu Mingxuan said while staring fiercely at Long Yu: "In Royal Ancient Ginseng

Forest, if you try and bump into me then I will kill you.”

“Well, looking at your strength, you don’t have enough skill to kill me.”

Long Yu mockingly looked at him then turned back and walked towards Ling Han’s side.

He was not afraid of Liu Mingxuan, but he thought that it would not be appropriate to continue the fight.

Now, Royal princess had arrived, so it was not proper to continue fighting in her presence .This was one of the two reasons that Long Yu also wanted to stop fighting. The other reason was that if he really wanted to beat Liu Mingxuan, then he would have to use the power of blizzard boots in front of everyone.

As a result of that, all of his cards would be exposed to others and it would be quite disadvantageous, keeping in mind the tomorrow’s trip to Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest .

So, he contented his heart to wait for an opportunity to deal with Liu Mingxuan alone in the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest.

“Brother Long Yu, congratulations.”

Ling Han saw that not far away from their group, dressed in shining metal armors, riding on horses, a group of warriors was coming towards them.

Finally, he would be able to resolve the immediate situation, because Ling Han

felt that if Long Yu and Liu Mingxuan had continued to fight, Long Yu would have definitely lost.

No doubt, Long Yu resisted the two moves of the martial skill of Liu Mingxuan and that too from a top grade martial skill like cold dragon destroyer, and thus, he had proved his strength.

If the fight had continued, perhaps, Long Yu might be able to resist.

“Thank you Brother Ling Han.”

Long Yu smiled but did not say anything, and immediately focused on the far end of the street and saw a group of warriors clad in shining metal armors were advancing towards them.

There were six disciples of Zhentian Sect and four disciples of Hanbing Sect, all standing separately in two groups on the street, and staring at the arriving group of people.

In a while, the group of warriors approached so near to them that now everyone could clearly see their appearance.

Front and rear, both rows had each ten fierce horses lined up parallel to each other. There were a total of twenty shining armor warriors, and there was a beautiful girl in the center, protected by these warriors.

Everyone saw the beautiful girl, dressed in elegant white silk gown, was riding a white horse, wearing a beautiful corolla, and there hung a gentle smile on her face which was simply flawless and serene.

“So this is the Royal princess?”

Long Yu watched, but didn't pay attention to her, instead his eyes moved towards the person standing next to her.

The man seemed to be the strongest among the twenty warriors clad in shining metal armors, and was evidently their leader. He seemed to be in his early twenties, clad in an elegant metal armor, a golden helmet, and there was a spear in his hand. He possessed a very high cultivation level and was much stronger than Feng Yun!

“Perhaps, even the strongest core disciple of Zhentian Sect can't be the opponent of this metal armored youth.....”

Long Yu thought in his mind, but he was not much concerned about the strength of this metal armored youth, but about his appearance.

Whether it was his eyes, nose or mouth, this metal armored youth had one third resemblance with Long Yu!

Upon seeing him, Long Yu quietly stepped back and hid himself behind Ling Han.

“Perhaps my early life experience is somewhat related to this metal armored youth.....”

Long Yu's eyes flashed as he thought: “For these years, the foster father has

not said anything to me about my early life, obviously, due to some scruples. Maybe, he wants to evade the point temporarily until I enhance my strength to a considerable extent!”

Shortly after temporarily bearing patiently, in the future when he would get stronger, he would start searching for the answers, although he possessed ‘Nine hidden dragons mark’, but he could not be too negligent.

The Royal clan was extremely formidable and very influential, and let alone Long Yu, even the entire Zhentian sect could not dare to offend them.

Soon, the group of 20 metal armored warriors, along with the Royal princess protected in the center, arrived near the two groups of disciples, and as they held on the reins, the fierce horses stopped temporarily.

“Disciples of Zhentian Sect and Hanbing Sect.”

Beautiful Royal princess said with a smile on her face: “Gentlemen, it seems everyone has good cultivation, you all are young talents of my Tang State, in tomorrow’s Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest competition, I hope everyone to have good harvest.”

“Thank you, Princess.”

Liu Mingxuan immediately said with a smile on his face: “I am Liu Mingxuan from the Liu clan of Imperial city, I feel honored to see you here, princess.”

“So, you are from Liu clan.”

Royal princess said with a polite smile: "Liu clan has its roots in the Imperial city for generations, one of best known clans for its trade. I believe that father emperor is happy with your clan."

"Princess is very polite."

Liu Mingxuan immediately felt self-satisfied, having a noble birth was different and getting praised by the Royal princess was an entirely different experience for him!

Little did they know that on the side, when Long Yu heard it, a feeling of contempt appeared in his heart: "It turns out that Liu clan is just a clan of traders in the Imperial city, but it also has strong presence in military power....."

No wonder this Liu Mingxuan was only at Wudao seventh layer, he didn't belong to a powerful clan, because in powerful clans, even the children possessed stronger cultivation than him.

"Princess, let's go, it seems that this time, the disciples of Hanbing Sect and Zhentian Sect are not much, even the disciples of Qiansi Sect possess little strength."

At this time, the youth, who had one third resemblances with Long Yu, said to princess with a smile on his face, although, he said it casually, but there was an obvious pride on his face. It was obvious that he looked down on the disciples of the three large sects!

"Well they temporarily lack resources and once they will enter the Royal

Ancient Ginseng forest, they will grow stronger and become strong pillars of our Tang State.”

Royal princess actually smiled gently and said: “Well, I will go first, you all should go back and take rest, tomorrow everyone should enter the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest early in the morning, I wish everyone good luck in advance.”

“Thank you, Princess.”

The crowd answered in unison, and then the group watched the princess leaving with her escorts.

“Hmph, he was really arrogant.”

At that time, Ling Mingxuan was not feeling well in his heart after hearing the words of the youth in metal armor.

“Well, no doubt, he is a bodyguard of the Royal princess, but his cultivation is so high that makes us unable to guess it completely, what he said is quite natural and he has the qualification to do so as well.”

Feng Yao narrowed her eyes and said, and as she finished saying these words, she turned to leave.

Tomorrow was the day to enter Royal Ancient Ginseng forest and her opponent was going to be the beautiful girl of Qiansi Sect, the so-called princess of Qiansi Sect!

As far as a waste like Long Yu was concerned, she was disinclined to pay any attention to him, because in her eyes, Long Yu was not at all on the same level as her.

“Brother Ling Han, shall we go back?”

One of the disciples of Zhentian Sect asked.

Ling Han, at this time, was looking in the direction of the princess slowly disappearing from his sight, as if he was still not satisfied and wanted to watch more!

Ling Han heard someone calling him and suddenly regained his composure:
“Oh what, we should go back?”

“Haha, Brother Ling Han, could it be you have fallen for the princess?”

Immediately someone teased him.

“Don’t talk nonsense, it’s just that princess is so beautiful, can’t I even have a good look at her?”

Ling Han laughed.

“Right, that metal armored youth, who just spoke, looks a bit like one of our disciples, did Brother Ling Han notice?”

One of them asked aloud while his eyes were aiming at Long Yu.

“Ah, looks like whom?”

Ling Han simply hadn't noticed that metal armored youth, so he was surprised at the moment.

“He is hiding behind you, Brother Long Yu.”

The man sneered: “I once heard that Brother Long Yu actually belongs to a certain aristocratic clan from Imperial city, but was exiled from the clan, I originally thought that it was just a rumor, but now it seems like there is a possibility, Brother Long Yu, is that right?”

“My bad, I do not know my own life experience, if you really know so well, take the trouble to tell me about it?”

Long Yu chuckled loudly and simply ignored him!

The discourse of the man stopped, he was suddenly speechless!

“Well, let's stop this idle talk and rush back?”

Ling Han interposed hastily and said with a smile: “Well, be prepared to enter the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest tomorrow, perhaps will be a great opportunity for all of us. If you can obtain a top grade ancient ginseng, you can promote a layer directly!”

As he said these words, the hearts of the four disciples of Zhentian Sect began to burn up with excitement.

However, unless there was a huge burst of good luck, it was not so easy to get a top grade ancient ginseng. Nevertheless, if they could get some low grade ancient ginsengs, then that would be good as well!

Different people harboring different thoughts returned to their respective rooms in the inn to take rest.

This evening, almost all suffered from varying degrees of insomnia, because an important event was approaching their lives, and they were going to get the first important opportunity to enter Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, and if they were lucky enough to get ancient ginsengs, then they could enhance their strengths.

Only Long Yu, who was equipped with a strong psychological quality, slept like a dead pig!

.....

Night time quickly passed.

Next morning, everybody gathered in the inn courtyard, besides Long Yu, everyone was more or less mentally exhausted, even Tan Jian was not an exception.

However, there was a look of excitement in everyone's eyes, obviously, they had waited for a long time to enter the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest!

Elder Yu, dressed in black robes, appeared in front of the group.

“Come with me, today you must enter the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, you must remember that your life is on the line, so give your best!”

Elder Yu reminded them one last time then led the group to leave the inn and went towards the rear side of the Royal Ancient Ginseng City.

Before long, the crowd arrived in front of the rear gate of the Royal Ancient Ginseng City, and just out of the rear gate, the royal clan’s back garden was stretched far and wide, it was the Royal Ancient Ginseng forest!

At the city gate, a total of 53 disciples of Hanbing Sect, Qiansi Sect and Zhentian Sect had gathered, led by their respective elders, and were divided into three groups.

The royal princess and those metal armor warriors stood on the front. Without the permission of a member of the royal clan, the gate leading to Royal Ancient Ginseng forest would absolutely not open.

When all of the participants had assembled, then the metal armored youth came forward, with a look of arrogance in his eyes, and swept his eyes over all of the participants.

“Now, you will enter the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, there is only one rule, and that is, if the best quality ginseng appears, in any event, it is the property of the royal clan, understood?”

The youth gave a stern warning.

“Understood!”

Everyone said in unison, at present, they were excited because they were about to enter the Royal Ancient Ginseng forest, where several opportunities were waiting for them!

As for the best quality ancient ginseng, it was not easy for one to appear.

It was a rare treasure and extremely hard to find one even in a decade, so nobody was expecting to find a best quality ancient ginseng this time!

Chapter 34 A fist bang to fly (Part 1)

Long Yu carefully observed the disciples of Hanbing Sect and Qiansi Sect in the group and quickly found out their general cultivation levels.

Among the disciples of Qiansi Sect, a woman clad in light yellow clothes, was standing with an arrogant look in her eyes and with her hands crossed behind her back. When Long Yu saw her, he immediately recognized that it was that Qiansi princess who had blocked their way near the city gate!

“Qiansi princess, named Yu Qianning, is now at Wudao eight layer and possesses a top grade battle weapon, called thousand shadow needles. Among the group of 53 people entering the Royal Ancient Ginseng forest, she is the strongest disciple, so I cannot bump into her from the beginning.”

Long Yu thought in his mind and moved his gaze in other direction.

In Hanbing Sect, besides Feng Yao and Liu Mingxuan, there were also two disciples with higher cultivation than his, they had already reached the Wudao eighth layer.

The two, a man and a woman, appeared to be brother and sister, both wearing grey dress, performance was very low-key, had thin statures, as if even a gust of wind could blow both of them away.

Including Tan Jian, also a disciple at Wudao eighth layer, there were four disciples at Wudao eighth layer and Long Yu absolutely must not bump into them right after entering the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest.

But, everyone entering Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest would remain there for ten days and search for ancient ginseng, and if Long Yu could be able to step into Wudao seventh layer, then a confrontation with these four men would not necessarily be a problem for him.

Soon, the Royal princess used the imperial decree of the emperor of Tang State and ordered to open the gate leading to the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest.

As the giant city gate opened slowly, everyone's eyes began to shine.

"Gentlemen, please enter."

The Royal princess said, wearing a white silk gown and a gentle smile on her face, her hand was pointing to the gate of Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest!

A total of 53 disciples of the three large sects suddenly rushed inside, their figures flickered quickly, and shortly after, all of them entered the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest.

Long Yu moved slowly and leisurely in the end, until everyone went in, he went one step across the gate and finally entered Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest.

"This Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest is really vast."

Long Yu glanced at the front and found that whole mountain range was actually the Royal Ancient Ginseng forest, full of towering old trees, but the forest was not as dense and moist as the abyss of Teng snakes, but it seemed more open and dry.

Suddenly, Long Yu felt a gaze coming through the trees and apparently belonged to someone hidden in the woods!

“Is someone staring at me?”

Long Yu sneered, but he did not care because except those four people, he wasn't afraid of others.

And, these four people must have already headed towards the depths of Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest to look for top grade ancient ginsengs, so why would they stand idly at the edge of the forest staring at Long Yu?

“Is this Feng Yao? Liu Mingxuan? Or is this Feng Qianqian?”

Long Yu excluded Tan Jian, because he knew that for Tan Jian, the most important thing was to enhance his cultivation, so he would naturally concentrate his energy on grabbing a top grade ancient ginseng instead of waiting for Long Yu at the edge of the forest to teach him a lesson for injuring Tan Yue.

Whether it was Feng Yao, Liu Mingxuan or Feng Qianqian, Long Yu was confident to defeat them all!

Long Yu thought for a while then lifted his steps and strode directly towards the depths of Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest.

It was not so easy to find a top grade ancient ginseng, but there were many

low-grade ancient ginsengs, and if he could get even one low-grade ancient ginseng and absorbed the world Lingqi present in it, then it could help him to improve his cultivation a lot.

Now, Long Yu was in the depths of Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, but soon he noticed that someone was following him, but had not actually shown up.

“Perhaps, he also thinks that I have not discovered him, so he is waiting for me to let my guard down, and at that time, he would initiate the sneak attack?”

Long Yu sneered and could only say that the opposite party was too silly and naïve!

In Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, towering old trees were present, and each tree had such a thick trunk that it would take more ten people to hold hands around its trunk to cover its circumference completely. Long Yu was putting specific marks on these old trees, just to remember its shape and position to avoid being lost in the forest.

An hour passed, Long Yu had already entered more than 50 Li into the forest and found that it was completely desolate and inhabited!

The person had still been following Long Yu all the way from the very beginning.

“There is a rich world Lingqi content in the atmosphere, an ancient ginseng should be nearby.”

At this time, Long Yu’s nose felt a burst of aroma that was spread in the

surrounding air, and his heart began to thump, and he hurriedly ran towards the spot from where that aroma was exuding.

The person keeping track on him also sped up his pace. It was obvious that he must have also felt the aroma of an ancient ginseng.

“Such an anxious pace, this tracking method is really so clumsy!”

Long Yu remained calm and collected, and in a while, he arrived on the edge of a brook and finally saw one like a hay-like plant growing in the creek shore, exuding an intoxicating aroma.

Ancient ginseng, a low-grade ancient ginseng!

Long Yu's was delighted in his heart, although it was a low-grade ancient ginseng, but it contained the amount of Lingqi that was equivalent to the amount present in a low-grade immortality pill.

Relying on the extraordinary power of 'Nine hidden Dragon Mark' to absorb the Lingqi from the low-grade ancient ginseng, even if Long Yu was going to absorb a low-grade ancient ginseng, the effects would be better compared with a common person's absorption, and it could his cultivation in taking a big stride in the Wudao sixth layer.

However, when Long Yu took a step towards the low-grade ancient ginseng plant, the mysterious follower finally made a move.

“Long Yu, die!”

A sweet and delicate voice came from behind Long Yu, and it was followed by a gust of palm wind that severely hit on the back of Long Yu and produced a loud sound!

“So, it is Feng Qianqian.....”

Chapter – 34 A fist bang to fly (Part 2)

“So, it is Feng Qianqian.....”

Long Yu heard the voice and finally knew the identity of the opposite party!

That martial skill used by Feng Qianqian was the same as displayed by Qin Tianque, Xuan wind destroyer!

Because, it was a sneak attack from a far distance, so it didn't contain enough destructive power, so Long Yu didn't take any action, but by the virtue of hardening the flesh and bones using the Demon tyrant form, he easily faced it without receiving any injury!

“You made me wait for so long.”

Long Yu sneered, the Xuan qi began to condense in his entire body, his personal appearance flickered and he immediately rushed forward!

Using the first twinkling step of Flickering wind step, he crossed a distance of

30 feet in a blink of an eye.

The next moment, the stature of Long Yu appeared behind Feng Qianqian, and his powerful fist went towards her back!

“What?”

Feng Qianqian was extremely surprised at the reaction speed of Long Yu, but she was a master of Wudao seventh layer, so she didn't panic at Long Yu's move and immediately resorted to a higher level martial technique.

“Shaking air law!”

Feng Qianqian immediately displayed the peak level of ‘shaking air law’ and Xuan qi began to surge out of her body and a strong gust of air ripples suddenly rushed towards Long Yu and immediately covered his whole body and pushed him several steps back.

After reaching the peak level of ‘Shaking air law’, its effect would not only hinder the motion of the opponent, but could also be extremely overbearing and shook the opponent, in fact, weak martial cultivators would even receive wounds from the shaking air ripples.

As Long Yu had practiced Demon tyrant form to the Da Cheng level, so he was not injured by this move, rather he immediately went for a counter-sneak attack and threw his fist towards her back.

“Long Yu, you bullied my elder brother, so now, I will take your life!”

Feng Qianqian said in a cold voice. Her long hair was floating in the air and she looked like a malicious ghost!

No wonder, since the time she entered Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, she had been following Long Yu for a long time, and now that she finally emerged, she actually wanted to take his life!

“My life, do you think you can take it?”

Long Yu said with a contemptuous smile.

“Relying on your strength of Wudao sixth layer, don’t you even think about escaping from my hands, that is just a wishful thinking!”

Feng Qianqian said with an arrogant look on her face.

“Then, why don’t you try.”

Long Yu shrugged.

“Your flickering wind step should be at Da Cheng level, and it can give you only one twinkling step, and next, you have a useless body refining martial skill like Demon tyrant form, now I would love to see what other methods you have to show.”

Feng Qianqian disdainfully said and immediately moved forward, once again displaying the shaking air law, and the surrounding air vibrated, making her

whole body to flutter in the air.

Using the shock from rippling air, Feng Qianqian's figure quickly headed towards Long Yu and she severely shot her palm!

The palm attack contained her entire strength and was directly aimed at the top of Long Yu's head.

"Xuan wind destroyer!"

At this time, the Xuan wind destroyer granted a terrifying might to this palm attack, which contained the strength of 60000Jin -70000 Jin, and her palm slammed towards his body, even if it was a human form megalith made of rock, this attack was strong enough to shatter it instantly!

Feng Qianqian naturally thought that although Long Yu had practiced Demon tyrant form, but it was impossible for his body to become as hard as a rock.

The only way left for Long Yu to dodge this palm attack was to increase his speed faster than her, otherwise, if this palm hit him then he would certainly die!

While facing this killer move of Feng Qianqian, Long Yu just sneered.

"Flickering wind step, Blizzard boots!"

Long Yu used his intention to move, and immediately cast out of the flickering wind step, and simultaneously activated his battle weapon, blizzard boots, and it seemed as if his whole body had turned into light breeze, and he retreated at a

very high speed!

With the help of the Da Cheng level of 'Flickering wind step' coupled with the effects of blizzard boots, at this moment, Long Yu's speed far exceeded the speed of Feng Qianqian!

Shua!

Surrounded by the strong gust of air ripples generated by 'shaking air law', Feng Qianqian's palm shot nothing and her attack went in vain, while her face suddenly exposed an incredible look. Long Yu, the waste, how could he be so fast?

Of course, a battle weapon!

Feng Qianqian saw the blizzard boots on Long Yu's feet, it was white in color like the snow itself and was easily noticeable.

Usually, blizzard boots appeared the same as ordinary boots, but once stimulated to give acceleration effect, they would immediately get covered in white snow and ice, and not just looked incredibly beautiful but also gave tremendous speed to the user.

"Acceleration effect of this battle weapon is good, although, it is only a low-grade battle weapon, but it is a rare and priceless. I cannot believe this waste also has this grade of treasure!"

Feng Qianqian was now more determined to kill Long Yu and finally resorted to use her killer weapon.

As an inner disciple of Zhentian Sect, she had naturally been rewarded with a top-grade battle weapon, called 'Wandering soul glove', and with its help, she had also practiced 'Smashing soul hand', a high-level martial skill, and now if she wanted to kill Long Yu then it was going to be a piece of cake.

As she wore the 'Wandering soul glove' on her right hand to make a fist, suddenly a burst of black mist surged out of it, and she immediately rushed towards Long Yu!

"Show me how you escape again!"

Feng Qianqian sneered and the black mist congealed into a ghost claw and went towards Long Yu and in a blink of an eye, it surrounded him, keeping a sudden check on his movements!

Smashing soul hand was a high-grade martial skill and it could generate a ghost claw made up of black mist, which could be assigned away from the body and completely block off the movements of the opponent while keeping him alive!

Long Yu's complexion changed, but at this moment, Feng Qianqian's fist rushed towards Long Yu with a full intention to kill him.

"Die!"

Wandering soul glove fist attack contained the great strength of **ten thousand Jin, and if it hit Long Yu, he would surely die!

(Mystique-The author has put ** in the raws :P)

Bang!

Feng Qianqian's attack suddenly hit on top of Long Yu's head!

However, she was then surprised to find that the body of Long Yu turned into an afterimage and gradually disappeared. Right before Feng Qianqian's palm could hit, his figure actually blurred and vanished.

“What! The peak level of flickering wind step?”

Feng Qianqian almost immediately understood everything, and her complexion suddenly changed, but she didn't have enough time to react.

A formidable mysterious mood along with an imposing manner, descended from the heaven and suppressed her movements, and even if she had the strength of Wudao seventh layer, her movements were completely suppressed by the mysterious mood.

Then, the figure of Long Yu flashed and appeared behind her, he activated the 'Nine hidden Dragon Mark' then condensed a great strength in his fist and rumbled on her back, and her frail body was blasted away and went flying into the sky!

Similar to a broken kite, the whole stature of Feng Qianqian was blasted to fly more than 100 feet into the sky and fell down heavily on the ground. She spurted out a mouthful of blood and was obviously injured severely.

Chapter 35 Fierce battle in the forest (Part 1)

Like a broken kite, Feng Qianqian heavily fell on the ground in an upside down manner and instantly fainted.

Long Yu returned to a normal state then took three steps to reach beside the fainted Feng Qianqian and picked up her battle weapon, wandering soul glove, lying beside her.

Long Yu put on the wandering soul glove in his right hand, and randomly threw his fist in the air two times, he found out that this wandering soul glove actually increased the strength in his right hand by 30% and this was all due to the effect of this low-grade battle weapon.

It was hard to imagine that a low-grade battle weapon could give such strength boost. If a martial artist possessed a high-grade battle weapon then what kind of strength he would have.

“Feng Qianqian, this is going to be the first and last time I am forgiving, if you try to attack me next time, I will no longer show any mercy.”

Long Yu thought to himself and quickly moved towards the creek edge of the tree and cautiously picked up the low-grade ancient ginseng.

Then he looked up and glanced in all directions.

“I can safely absorb the Lingqi from the low-grade ancient ginseng at this place, it should be safer to do it on a tree

Long Yu thought then quickly ran up to an old tree, with many branches and cover of leaves, and reached near its trunk. He used his hands and feet to slowly crawl up.

Soon, he hid himself in the dense branches and leaves of the 20 feet high old tree, and occupied a commanding position, from where he could see the distant places clearly, and even there was a hint of danger, he could detect it right away.

Now, he was sitting quietly, hidden in the dense cover of leaves and was confident that no one could discover him easily!

He did not waste time and directly put the low-grade ancient ginseng into his mouth and began to absorb the Lingqi present in it.

At the same time, he didn't forget to simultaneously activate the 'Nine hidden Dragon Mark' after inhaling the immortality pill. Long Yu had become familiar with using the mark and handled it with ease. At this moment, he could easily preserve 70% of the Lingqi present in low-grade ancient ginseng in the 'Nine hidden Dragon mark'.

And the remaining 30% Lingqi would be directly absorbed by Long Yu.

The Xuan qi, once again began to circulate inside his body meridians and his basic strength increased from 32,000 Jin to 33,000 Jin.

"The effects are good."

Long Yu was satisfied after all he could preserve the 70% of the Lingqi present in low-grade ancient ginseng in the 'Nine hidden Dragon mark'.

34,000 Jin.

35,000 Jin!

After Long Yu completely absorbed the Lingqi present in the low-grade ancient ginseng, the Xuan qi began to circulate and surge inside his body and his cultivation level increased. However, he was still at the Wudao sixth layer, although he wanted to have a breakthrough to the higher level, but at present, he could only scratch the surface, because merely absorbing the Lingqi of a low-grade ancient ginseng was far from enough.

The low grade ancient ginseng was completely absorbed by Long Yu, and not a bit of its Lingqi had been wasted, if wasted, the effects would have been absolutely shocking and disappointing than now.

He was hiding in the extreme upper part of the old tree, and now, he was restoring his energy back. While fighting with Feng Qianqian, his Xuan qi was almost exhausted, if he would not restore it back to its peak level, he would not be able to start off once more because it might be risky.

Unknowingly, the sun was setting in the western sky and the sky began to darken.

At this time, Long Yu suddenly felt the fragrance of a rich Lingqi, gradually being transmitted from the distant place, and was getting closer and denser until

it surrounded his entire body!

“Someone is approaching toward me and he seems to be carrying an ancient ginseng!”

Long Yu thought in his mind. From the rich and wonderful fragrance of the Lingqi, it was probably not just a low-grade ancient ginseng, it should be a middle-grade ancient ginseng!

As far as the top grade ancient ginseng was concerned, it was impossible to come across one, because a top grade ancient ginseng contained even more Lingqi than top grade immortality pills and Long Yu had never seen it before.

“A middle-grade ancient ginseng, if possible, I must snatch it.”

Long Yu was certainly not a fool, once he would get the opportunity to enhance his strength, he would definitely not hesitate to avail it.

But soon, the person that appeared in his sight was an acquaintance.

He occupied a commanding position on the tree and saw a long distance away from him, a man was running and gradually approaching towards him, clad in white dress, and was none other than a disciple of his sect, Ling Han!

Ling Han, holding an ancient ginseng in his hand, was running, but he seemed to be injured, because his running speed was not fast.

Behind him, another figure appeared, wearing the blue silk robe of Hanbing

sect, and it turned out to be Liu Mingxuan!

“Has Liu Mingxuan wounded Brother Ling Han?”

In Long Yu’s eyes flashed a piercing look and it seemed as if he was already prepared to make an attack.

Ling Han had an anxious look on his face, his leg was injured, and perhaps he would soon be overtaken by Liu Mingxuan.

Liu Mingxuan, while pursuing him, laughed aloud: “Ling Han, you want to escape from me? Obediently hand over the middle-grade ancient ginseng to me, otherwise, if I catch up with you, I will certainly destroy your cultivation and turn you into a waste.”

There was a proud look on Liu Mingxuan’s face, apparently he felt that Ling Han was a turtle in a jar, and in any case, he would not be able to get away from this trap.

In fact, if he hadn’t actually arrived close to the place where Long Yu was hiding, then Ling Han really had no way to escape, but now, it was actually Liu Mingxuan who was going to bring about his own destruction.

“He wants to destroy the cultivation of Brother Ling Han? He has such a ruthless heart.”

Long Yu thought to himself, and narrowed his eyes. He didn’t have a favorable impression of Liu Mingxuan.

“Huh? Is it junior sister Feng Qianqian?”

At this point, while running away from Liu Mingxuan, Ling Han saw Feng Qianqian lying unconscious on the ground, and his complexion suddenly changed, he quickly stopped to examine the injuries of Feng Qianqian.

Long Yu saw that and suddenly felt a bit of shock.

This Ling Han, he was really a warmhearted person. At that time, he was injured and was still being hunted down by a powerful enemy, but even so, he stopped to look at Feng Qianqian.

“Ling Han, you are really a good man, ha ha!”

Liu Mingxuan laughed and said from far away: “It is only pity that in this world, good people like you never get to live a long time!”

As he laughed, he wildly dashed forward, bring fresh breeze along with him, his appearance looked wild and intimidating!

Just at that time, Long Yu, who was on the side of the old tree, finally found the opportunity and jumped down towards Liu Mingxuan and shot a heavy fist towards him!

Chapter 35 Fierce battle in the forest (Part 2)

At that time, he put on the wandering soul glove covered with a thin layer of black mist and it made his fist strength to reach more than 50,000 Jin!

Long Yu was not a fool so he naturally didn't make any sound in this sneak attack.

Suddenly, Liu Mingxuan saw Long Yu's heavy fist was rapidly coming closer towards his head and was about to make contact!

"A waste like you dares to sneak attack on me!"

Liu Mingxuan reacted sharply and instantly stopped his footsteps, and at this time, there was a fierce look in his eyes.

He immediately waved his arms and Xuan qi began to condense on both his arms, two cold dragons congealed from the Xuan qi, they roared loudly and instantly rushed straight towards Long Yu!

The attacks of the both sides crashed against each other and exploded in the middle air making a huge explosion sound.

Liu Mingxuan was hasty so the strength of his cold dragon destroyer was not strong and was unexpectedly broken by Long Yu's fist bang! Long Yu's pace was not hindered as his fist continued to arrive closer and closer towards Liu Mingxuan.

"Agility!"

Liu Mingxuan moved his footsteps and his body became light like the wind, he instantaneously moved away several steps back.

Yu Long had just now jumped down from the old tree, so at that time, he was not able to chase, all he could do was balance his body and stood firmly on the same place where Liu Mingxuan stood just a moment ago.

“Brother Long Yu?”

Standing on the side, Ling Han was astonished and simply couldn’t believe his own eyes, but when he gave a closer look, he found out that it was really Long Yu and his sudden appearance had compelled Liu Mingxuan to retreat several steps.

“Brother Ling Han, you first go ahead with senior sister Feng Qianqian.”

Long Yu said without turning back to look at Ling Han.

“How can I do that? How can a senior fellow disciple like me leave a junior disciple like you along in this place, facing a powerful enemy? You rest assured because this senior brother will fight alongside you!

Ling Han said these words in an inspiring tone!

“Brother, you must take care of senior sister apprentice Feng Qianqian first so as to keep her from getting violated by the evildoers. It will not be good for us if she becomes a hostage.”

Long Yu said this because he had to persuade Ling Han.

Ling Han heard this and he also thought that Long Yu was right, in case someone suddenly kidnapped Feng Qianqian, won't that simply be disastrous for all?

Ling Han gave it a thought then directly picked up Feng Qianqian to move away and arrived under the nearby old tree.

“Brother Long Yu, first you resist him, I will immediately come to help you!”

Ling Han shouted and began to examine the injuries of Feng Qianqian.

Liu Mingxuan stood firm, facing Long Yu, and said with a contemptuous smile on his face: “Waste, you met me and even dare to take the initiative to appear, I will destroy your cultivation, and you will become a real waste!”

“You can try freely.”

Long Yu said calmly.

“Humph, one thing I want to warn you about, Wang Tianzhuo, the royal prince actually likes Cousin Feng Yao.”

Liu Mingxuan looked very haughty and contemptuously said: “For a waste like you, it will be best to stay as far away as you can from Cousin Feng Yao!”

“From which eye did you look to assume that I want to go near Feng Yao?”

Long Yu said lightly: “Don’t you want to destroy my cultivation, why do you engage in idle talks?”

“Since you are so anxious and can’t wait to die, I’ll give you a helping hand.”

Liu Mingxuan gave a cold croon, the Xuan qi began to circulate inside his body, and his blue silk robe seemed to be moving with the wind, demonstrating his extraordinary cultivation!

Liu Mingxuan swiftly moved his footsteps, and this time, he was using an agility type of martial skill and quickly dashed towards Long Yu.

His arms were gradually covered with Xuan qi and congealed two cold dragons that roared loudly, however this time, he actually cast the cold dragon destroyer near the body, and the strength contained in the attack was more!

Liu Mingxuan was extremely fast, but at that time, Long Yu displayed the flickering wind step, and simultaneously activated his battle weapon, Blizzard boots, and now his speed was not less than his.

Long Yu’s body became light like wind and he instantly dodged to one side. Liu Mingxuan’s cold dragon destroyer actually became an empty shot and hit the void!

“You actually have a pair of battle boots!”

At present, Liu Mingxuan’s eyes were shining and his surprised look was similar

to that of Feng Qianqian!

“Today, I will waste you without a doubt!”

Liu Mingxuan said with a deep hatred in his voice and quietly took out a thin black iron lock from his blue silk robe’s sleeve, which looked like the most insidious snake, and instantly swept towards Long Yu to tie him down.

It was actually Liu Mingxuan’s battle weapon and was known as black iron lock!

Liu Mingxuan shook his both arms and once again used the cold dragon destroyer near his body, it was a top grade martial skill, although, he had only comprehended it to the Xiao Cheng level, but it was still extremely mighty!

“Waste, die!”

With a cruel color in his eyes, Liu Mingxuan swept away both his arms severely towards Long Yu!

Not far away, Ling Han raised his head to look and saw that Long Yu was tightly locked by the black iron lock of Liu Mingxuan, and was about to be hit by his cold dragon destroyer, he could not help but his heart beats suddenly stopped in that instant.

“Brother!”

Ling Han exclaimed loudly!

However, he was too late to take any action because the distance was too far!

At this moment, Ling Han saw that Long Yu would be soon hit by the severe punch and would be seriously injured after all he was facing Liu Mingxuan, a master of Wudao seventh layer. No matter how much strong Long Yu might be, he could not possibly withstand this formidable attack!

But, Long Yu was destined to shock everyone!

Liu Mingxuan's both arms severely pounded on the shoulders of Long Yu, but the next moment, "Long Yu" actually turned into an afterimage and disappeared from the spot, leaving Liu Mingxuan and Ling Han gawking at the scene.`

The same technique, an old trick, and actually had the same effect.

"You wanted to waste me, didn't you? Now see, who wastes whom!"

Long Yu's voice came from behind Liu Mingxuan, at this time, he was wearing the wandering soul glove in his right hand, covered with a layer of black mist, and a burst of powerful Zhentian canyon mysterious mood pressure suddenly enveloped the entire body of Liu Mingxuan!

Chapter 36 Liu Mingxuan crippled

Long Yu, hitherto, had comprehended only a trace of the Zhentian mysterious mood, but with the increase of the level of martial art, his power of comprehending the Zhentian mysterious mood had also considerably enhanced.

At this moment, the mysterious mood of the Zhentian canyon had completely shrouded Ling Mingxuan, a Wudao seventh layer master, and made his movements very slow, and he felt as if a mounting pressure was coming over him from the heaven making him difficult even to move a bit.

The punch that Long Yu swept away was his strongest one, and in order to resist it, Ling Mingxuan could only throw a punch that contained merely 30 % of his strength.

Both of their fists collided against each other with a bang, and Long Yu's fist repulsed Ling Mingxuan's fist!

As Long Yu practiced Demon tyrant form to Da Cheng level, so Ling Mingxuan's punch simply couldn't hurt him, but Ling Mingxuan was pushed a few steps back, simultaneously, he also felt as if his fist would break apart.

"Waste!"

Liu Mingxuan's both eyes seemed to emit fire and could only spit out this word before Long Yu's attack arrived in a flash.

"Look closely, who is the waste in the end? In speed, you are inferior to me! In

strength, you are once again inferior to me! Where does that self-confidence come from when you say that you will cripple me?”

Long Yu said coldly and smashed down punch after punch towards Ling Mingxuan.

Liu Mingxuan was a master of Wudao seventh layer, and had reached the strength of 64000 Jin, but Long Yu took the initiative quickly and went on smashing down punch after punch in such a forceful way that wrecked the centre of gravity of his body, so that he actually couldn't display his full power.

As punch after punch rained on his body, Ling Mingxuan couldn't withstand them, and when Long Yu finally pounded his 18th punch on his abdomen, his whole body flew backward in an upside down manner.

“Since you wanted to cripple me, now, I will first cripple you!”

Long Yu's eyes gave a fierce look and he moved forward one step. At that time, Zhentian mysterious mood completely shrouded Ling Mingxuan.

Under the suppression of Zhentian mysterious mood, the injured Ling Mingxuan could not move at all!

With a jerk, Long Yu's figure moved forward, and suddenly changed into light breeze, and in a flash arrived in front of Ling Mingxuan, and swept away a heavy kick towards his Dantian region.

Poof!

Liu Mingxuan received the heavy kick and his eyes bulged out, his Dantian was completely destroyed and his Xuan qi was scattered, and his strength vanished all of a sudden.

He was a disciple of Hanbing Sect and was at Wudao seventh layer, but instantly turned into a waste and that too by a disciple at merely Wudao sixth layer!

Since then, Liu Mingxuan was not only destined to let go of Wudao, but he would forever be known as a waste throughout his life, and was bound to live a humiliating life!

“Imperial son, Wang Tianzhuo, will not let you off.....”

The severely wounded Liu Mingxuan could barely say these words.

“He will not let me off, that is a future matter, but now, you have already been crippled by me.”

Long Yu said coldly in a winning tone.

Liu Mingxuan listened to these words and couldn't withstand Long Yu's blow, he suddenly fell down on the ground and fainted.

Not far away, Ling Han was ready to take the step to help Long Yu in dealing with Liu Mingxuan together, but now, seeing these series of events, he couldn't help but stared.

“This, how is this possible, Brother Long Yu, even single-handedly crippled Ling Mingxuan.....”

Ling Han couldn't believe the scene he saw just now!

How could a master of Wudao sixth layer beat a master of Wudao seventh layer?

This completely subverted Ling Han's awareness of the world of Wudao!

At this time, Long Yu felt a surge of blood twisting inside his body which was quite painful.

It was a fight of eighteen punches between Long Yu and Ling Mingxuan, although Long Yu ultimately won, but Ling Mingxuan was a master of Wudao seventh layer, so Long Yu also received no light injuries.

Fortunately, Long Yu had protection of Da Cheng level Demon tyrant form, so his injuries were not very serious, only by taking a rest for a night, he would be able to fully recover from his injuries.

“Well, Brother Ling Han, why were you being chased by Ling Mingxuan?”

Long Yu tilted his head towards Ling Han and asked.

“I found a middle-grade ancient ginseng and was actually besieged by two disciples of Hanbing Sect.”

Ling Han explained the incidents with a cold look flashing in his eyes: "I had finally defeated them with great difficulty, but then this Ling Mingxuan made a sneak attack on me to grab the middle-grade ancient ginseng, but due to fellow brother's quick wits, he has been crippled!"

Long Yu listened to it then thought that this Ling Mingxuan was really sinister and deceitful, he was a master of Wudao seventh layer, and even then, in coping with Ling Han, he resorted to make a sneak attack on him, and also frequently talked about crippling others, he was really arrogant and extremely cruel.

Now, Long Yu had destroyed his cultivation, and for this, he himself was to blame.

"Brother, you are not hurt right? This is a middle-grade ancient ginseng, please take it!"

Ling Han spoke while giving the middle-grade ancient ginseng to Long Yu.

Long Yu gawked and said: "Brother, isn't this a middle-grade ancient ginseng? You are the one who found it, so you should use it."

Ling Han heard this and said firmly: "Don't decline, if you had not helped me in time, I would have been definitely caught by that Ling Mingxuan, who would have definitely destroyed my cultivation, and now that you have fought with him heavily, you must build up your consumed strength, so it would be more appropriate that you take this middle-grade ancient ginseng!"

Build up his strength?

Long Yu listened to these words and felt strange, but when he saw that Ling Han was adamant on giving the middle-grade ancient ginseng to him, he had to accept it.

The middle-grade ancient ginseng looked slightly larger than the low-grade ancient ginseng, but it contained richer amount of Lingqi.

When Long Yu was about to begin absorption of the Lingqi from middle-grade ancient ginseng, Ling Han, standing on one side, suddenly asked: “Right, brother, why is Sister Feng Qianqian here, and how did she fell unconscious? Moreover, the battle weapon in your hand is.....”

“As soon as she entered the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, she has been continuously with me, until the discovery of the low-grade grade ancient ginseng, and then she made a sneak attack on me to kill me”

Long Yu explained it in a simple way.

Ling Han listened to the sentence, and came to know that what actually happened, and couldn't help but lamented aloud: “But I never imagined that Feng Qianqian could be so stupid, Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest is an opportunity for all to try their chance, but she was so overwhelmed by the feeling of hatred, that she even didn't hesitate to make a sneak attack on the disciple of the same sect!”

Ling Han did not blame Long Yu. He knew there was some hatred between him and Feng Qianqian, but he never thought that Feng Qianqian would start it so soon.

“Brother, you consume the ancient ginseng, while I heal on one side, also keep an eye on the surroundings.”

Ling Han said it gently and safely hid Feng Qianqian in the middle of the thicket, so as to avoid being discovered by the others.

“Ok.”

Long Yu nodded his head then sat down cross-legged in the place, then immediately looked at the battle weapon lying on the ground not far from him: “Right, brother, here is Liu Mingxuan’s battle weapon, it is a good one and since you gave me the middle-grade ancient ginseng so please take this battle from my side.”

Ling Han heard this and his eyes began to shine immediately.

“Yes, I would gladly take it.”

He took a couple of steps to reach the place and picked up the thin black iron lock. It was a low-grade battle weapon, but if used properly, it could give miraculous effects in the battle.

The curtain of night gradually drew on, the silence pervaded everywhere in the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest.

Although, more than fifty disciples entered this competition, but the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest had a vast area, so there was a small probability for the people to meet with each other.

And in the evening, most of the people would choose to take rest, rather than continuing to move.

Long Yu sat cross-legged, and spent the whole night, and as a result of that, the Lingqi of the middle-grade ancient ginseng was completely absorbed by his body, and his basic strength increased to 40,000 Jin, which was already the limit of Wudao sixth layer.

Next, if he did not break through to the Wudao seventh layer then his basic force was impossible to grow again.

When the sunlight of the early morning penetrated the tree shade and fell on Long Yu, then he opened his eyes. There was a bright shine in his eyes.

“After having absorbed the Lingqi of the middle-grade ancient ginseng, my basic force is 40,000 Jin, and as a result of the influence of Demon tyrant form, my fist contains the strength more than 50,000 Jin. In addition to it, the strength granted by ‘Nine hidden Dragon’ is 10,000 Jin, altogether my total strength is more than 60,000 Jin, and while using the battle weapon, wandering soul glove, a master of Wudao seventh layer is not my match.”

Long Yu now had a clear understanding of his current strength, but he was still not optimistic to immediately go for action.

“I will have to break through to the Wudao seventh layer, and for that, I must find a top-grade ancient ginseng, but it is said to appear only once in every two or three years, the competition is fierce, even if found, it should not be so easy to snatch it.....”

Long Yu thought while looking around and saw Ling Han trying to get used to his new battle weapon, black iron lock.

After practicing throughout a night, Ling Han was now able to use the black iron lock skillfully and his leg that was hurt by Ling Mingxuan’s attack had also almost recovered.

“Brother, you woke up.”

He saw that Long Yu opened his eyes and said with a laugh, taking big strides, he arrived at his side: “Liu Mingxuan, that waste, I have solved him. Today we set out again to see if we can find more ancient ginseng.”

Long Yu listened to it and gawked. He never thought that Ling Han could also be so decisive.

Originally, Long Yu also thought yesterday to get rid of him, but because of impeding blood circulation in his body, he decided to first absorb the middle-grade ancient ginseng and improve his condition.

Now, Ling Han had solved Liu Mingxuan so he didn’t need to dirty his hands.

Obviously, Ling Han’s act was warm-blooded and was quite just, but if he had shown womanly compassion and had not killed Ling Mingxuan, then he would

have definitely proved to be troublesome in future.

“I will not use this black iron lock unless it is absolutely essential, otherwise other may see it.”

Ling Han said and hid the black iron lock in his bosom.

They searched all around and confirmed that they had not left any clues behind, and doing so they felt relieved. What was surprising to them was that after gaining consciousness, Feng Qianqian did not pay any attention to them and quietly left the place last night.

It seemed like she also realized that after entering the Royal Ancient Ginseng forest, the most important thing was searching for ancient ginseng rather than attacking Long Yu once again and asking for death.

Needless to say, she was not really the opponent of Long Yu, and even her battle weapon, wandering soul glove, had been taken away from her by Long Yu.

After cleaning up the location, Long Yu and Ling Han departed together.

The land area occupied by Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest was extremely very vast, and finding an ancient ginseng, especially a top-grade ancient ginseng, was not so easy.

Ling Han, walking by the side of Long Yu said: “Right, brother, although I do not know the matter between you and that girl disciple of Hanbing sect, but this Ling Mingxuan said that prince Wang Tianzhuo of the imperial palace likes her, you must be careful!”

“Brother, don’t worry, there is no relationship between me and Feng Yao. She even sent people to kill me.”

Long Yu lightly smiled and didn’t say anything else.

Regarding Feng Yao, sooner or later, he would settle his accounts with her!

But, Long Yu himself didn’t know that this day was going to come so soon.

Before long, they came across a small hill, along the creek all the way to the downstream, saw a vast pool, where many people were confronting each other on the shore.

Among them, it was Feng Yao, with her copper sword hanging on her waist, clad in a pale green dress swaying in the breeze, making her whole figure look like that of a female immortal.

And the reason for the confrontation among these people was actually the presence of the ancient ginseng on the shore of the pool, the top grade ancient ginseng!

Chapter 37 Snatch ancient ginseng (Part 1)

On the shore of the pool, there grew a top-grade of ancient ginseng exuding a rich and wonderful Lingqi that could attract the people within the radius of ten miles.

Long Yu and Ling Han were also attracted by this burst of fragrance from the Lingqi of top-grade ancient ginseng.

In addition to Feng Yao, two disciples of Hanbing Sect and three disciples of Zhentian Sect, altogether six persons were mutually confronting for the top-grade ancient ginseng.

Not only the three female disciples of Hanbing Sect, but the three disciples of Zhentian Sect were also individually vigilant at the situation!

After all, there was only one top-grade ancient ginseng and the person who could obtain it could promote his own cultivation directly by one layer, attaining formidable strength!

In the face of this opportunity, even the disciples of the same sect would not hesitate to fight with each other.

But before this, of course, they naturally must collaborate to deal with the outsiders.

The three male disciples of Zhentian Sect were the same persons who went with Long Yu and Ling Han on that night to pay tribute to the Royal princess, and

it seemed like they entered the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest and remained together all along.

But the complexions on the face of these Zhentian disciples did not look very good, because all of them were at the Wudao sixth layer, and even if put together, they were not the opponent of Feng Yao, not to mention, two other female disciples of Hanbing Sect were also present on the scene.

However, faced with the temptation of top-grade ancient ginseng, the three of them certainly would not back down without a fight.

“It’s the fellow disciples of our sect. I must go and help them!”

Ling Han and Long Yu had come together to the side of the pool, and on seeing the situation, their blood immediately boiled and Ling Han even wanted to go at once and help them.

“Wait, brother!”

Long Yu said and actually pulled him back: “You only see the disciples of Hanbing Sect and Zhentian Sect on the shore of the pool, but you can’t see the disciples of Qiansi Sect, this situation is quite strange, it is likely that disciples of Qiansi Sect are hiding in the bushes in one side, waiting for an opportunity to sneak attack!”

Ling Han listened and his whole body was suddenly covered in cold sweat.

Right, the disciples of Qiansi Sect could manipulate their human shadows to fight and their main bodies frankly and uprightly didn’t appear, but at that time,

if Long Yu and Ling Han had come out, wouldn't they have definitely fallen prey to their sneak attacks?

While Ling Han thought so, near the side of the pool, six persons started fighting with each other!

Feng Yao led the way and while facing the disciples of Zhentian Sect, she would not show any mercy and immediately churned out the cold dragon destroyer, a top-grade martial skill!

The cold dragon destroyer cast out by Feng Yao was obviously stronger than that of Liu Mingxuan, showing that Feng Yao was much stronger than Liu Mingxuan, not to mention, hitherto, she had yet to use her copper sword that was still hanging on her waist.

That was a top-grade battle weapon, and if she used it, then her power would be unimaginable!

After reaching the Da Cheng level, Feng Yao's cold dragon destroyer martial skill could congeal three Xuan qi cold dragons. These three cold dragons immediately rushed towards the three disciples of Zhentian Sect, and at that time, these three men were thrown in a state of utmost confusion and resorted to agility type of martial skills to escape one by one.

"Want to escape?"

The other two female disciples of Hanbing Sect shouted loudly, and their statures flashed quickly and blocked the ways of the three disciples of Zhentian Sect.

“Landslide fist!”

Xuan qi surged out of their bodies at a tremendous speed, and several fists rushed down and instantly routed the two disciples of Zhentian Sect and they fell down heavily on the ground.

The remaining disciple, seeing this situation, did not dare to stay there any longer, his figure suddenly rushed sideways and quickly jumped into the grove to hide himself.

“Ah!”

A pitiful yell originated from the grove, obviously, the disciple of Zhentian Sect, who entered the grove just now, encountered a mishap. Seeing this, Feng Yao’s complexion slightly changed.

“The disciples of Qiansi Sect are hiding in the nearby bushes to ambush us.”

Feng Yao whispered: “We must take the top-grade ancient ginseng and leave immediately.”

The other two disciples of Hanbing Sect actually also wanted to obtain the top-grade of ancient ginseng, but since Feng Yao was there, and looking at her formidable strength, they simply had no chance, so for now, all they could do was stay together with Feng Yao.

While the three of them were still discussing their next course of action,

suddenly a black shadow glittered near the pool side, and in a blink of an eye, it directly plucked the top-grade of ancient ginseng.

“Don’t even think about it!”

Feng Yao’s complexion suddenly changed. The black shadow that came out shortly was actually the humanoid shadow that the disciples of Qiansi Sect could manipulate.

Shua! Shua!

Feng Yao waved her hands in the wind, and immediately, two Xuan qi cold dragons congealed in her hands, and she instantly threw them towards that black shadow, but that shadow swiftly turned towards a ground post and unexpectedly dodged her attack!

Now, the uprooted top-grade ancient ginseng was in the hand of that black shadow.

The black shadow succeeded, and at a lightning speed, it immediately fled towards one side of the grove.

“Chase!”

Feng Yao’s face sank, her stature flashed forward. Out of the three disciples of Hanbing Sect, she was the first to start to react.

The two other disciples of Hangbing Sect were left behind. They didn’t keep up

with Feng Yao immediately, rather both of them decided to catch up after some time, obviously, both had their own thoughts.

If Feng Yao caught up the disciple of Qiansi Sect, fought with them and mutually wounded each other, then they could reap benefits!

Otherwise, they did not have any hope to win the top-grade ancient ginseng.

Feng Yao chased alone and following that black shadow, she entered the grove.

Although, she knew that disciples of Qiansi Sect could manipulate their shadows and had an advantage in the shadows of trees, so she could easily lose tracks. But the top-grade ancient ginseng was in the hand of that black shadow, so she just needed to follow the strong aroma being exuded by that top-grade ancient ginseng, and in doing so, she expected, that she certainly wouldn't lose the track.

But what she did not expect was that as she entered the grove, immediately, there was a burst of Xuan qi that came from the side of the grove and instantly wrapped her legs tightly!

“It is the martial art of Qiansi Sect.”

Fen Yao coldly thought in her mind, immediately looked down and saw two arm shadows that looked similar to a rope had tied down both her legs, and they contained the strength of several thousand Jin, which seemed to be crushing her legs!

Chapter 37 Snatch ancient ginseng (Part 2)

“You were tricked.”

A cloudy sad voice came from the nearby shadow, although, one could not locate its position, but it was clear that the black shadows were not far from where Feng Yao was standing.

The disciples of Qiansi Sect practiced shadow tactics, and had the ability to manipulate shadows. Moreover, this sect’s martial skills were related to the manipulation shadows.

For example, now, the disciples of Qiansi sect were hiding, and the manipulated shadow nearby the old tree had directly entangled the legs of Feng Yao.

The shadow of the giant old tree was covered with Xuan qi and easily covered the body of Feng Yao, as if to suppress her whole person and tear to shreds!

But the next moment, a burst of freezing cold qi suddenly erupted from Feng Yao’s body.

“Ice moon sword tactics!”

A bright and cold sword light instantly broke through the shadow that had enveloped her body, and immediately, she leapt high in the air and quickly hacked her sword in the other direction.

“Ice moon sword tactics!”

It contained the Swordqi together with ice cold breath, and similar to a round crescent moon, it instantaneously cut off a sturdy old tree.

That sturdy old tree collapsed loudly, but after the old tree came crashing down, there was only the wisp like breath of Qiansi sect’s disciple behind the tree and she did not see him.

“Top-grade ancient ginseng, this way!”

Fen Yao did not hesitate to continue to chase with the perception towards the depths of the bushes.

With her top-grade battle weapon, copper sword, she even could face a master of Wudao eight layer, so she confidently went on chasing and boldly entered the grove.

But in the grove, the shadows proliferated, and suddenly, the two shadows, which were like sinister poisonous snakes, entangled her ankle once again.

“It’s like being haunted a ghost!”

Feng Yao’s face gave an impatient look, and she wanted to cut it, but she saw that several shadows suddenly began to rush towards her at a tremendous speed from all directions.

The ice moon sword tactics that she displayed was greatly strengthened, but in the face of shadows rushing towards her to strangle her to death, she couldn't respond at once!

“So many shadows, so rich Xuan qi fluctuations, there are definitely more than one person!”

Feng Yao responded instantaneously, however, she knew that she had stepped into the trap, and soon she would be strangled to death, but suddenly, all of the shadows retreated and dispersed.

“What?”

Feng Yao wrinkled her eyebrows and didn't understand that what actually happened. The opposite party launched the attack vigorously, why would they evacuate so quickly and all of a sudden?

However, she soon understood the reason.

Because not far from the grove, she heard the sound of fighting, the sound of the collision of Xuan qi was coming from there. Obviously, the rich aroma of the top-grade ancient ginseng had attracted the other people, distracting those disciples of Qiansi Sect.

In fact, Long Yu and Ling Han were the two persons, who at this time, were fighting with the disciples of Qiansi Sect.

They hide themselves secretly in the grove, and now, they just climbed up an old tree to see the situation, and found that there were three disciples of Qiansi

Sect, the two were at Wudao seventh layer and one was at Wudao sixth layer.

When these three besieged Feng Yao completely, then Long Yu and Ling Han suddenly attacked and beheaded the two masters of Wudao seventh layer and quickly snatched the top-grade ancient ginseng from them!

Although, the combat style of the disciples of Qiansi Sect was strange, but near their bodies, they didn't have strong battle efficiency, hence Long Yu and Ling Han collaborated together and beheaded them easily.

"The top-grade ancient ginseng, we succeeded."

The top-grade ancient ginseng was in Long Yu's hand, and at that time, there was a happy expression on his face.

Nearby, Ling Han said in somewhat exciting tone: "Brother, you take this ginseng and leave first, I can stop these people!"

He could feel that if Long Yu absorbed the Lingqi from the top-grade ancient ginseng, then he might be promoted to the Wudao seventh layer!

Now, Long Yu was at Wudao sixth layer, and he could defeat a master of Wudao seventh layer, and when he would be promoted to Wudao seventh layer, then would he not be able to beat a master of Wudao eighth layer?

After that, Long Yu could freely walk in the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest and search for ancient ginsengs for the benefit of the disciples of Zhentian Sect!

Ling Han's reason to make such a decision was because he was still far away from having a breakthrough to the Wudao eighth layer, and even the top-grade ancient ginseng wouldn't necessarily let him break into Wudao eighth layer.

So, handing it over to Long Yu would obviously be more effective.

Long Yu had never been an indecisive person, when he thought about Ling Han's strength, leaving him here should not be a matter of danger for him. He took the top-grade ancient ginseng and turned to leave!

At this place, the situation was too complicated, not only the disciples of Qiansi Sect were secretly hiding in the grove, but Feng Yao and the other two female disciples of Hanbing Sect were also present.

The most important thing was that if Long Yu stayed there for a long time then the strong aroma of the top-grade ancient ginseng would attract other people, and if he encountered a master of Wudao eighth layer then the situation would be very unfavorable.

Therefore, at this time, the urgent matter was to leave the place with the top-grade ancient ginseng and look for a safe place to absorb its Lingqi and attempt to break through to the Wudao seventh layer!

"Flickering wind step, Blizzard boots!"

With a determination to leave the place as soon as possible, Long Yu resorted to the peak level of flickering wind step and simultaneously activated the Blizzard boots and moved towards the depths of the forest!

However, a black shadow instantly followed Long Yu at a speed actually faster than him.

Poof! Poof! Poof!

A series of long needles were fired at him by that shadow!

“Is that the martial skill of Qiansi Sect?”

Upon seeing this, Long Yu didn’t hesitate to take one twinkling step and crossed a distance of 30 feet in a blink of an eye, and he turned his body to one side and easily evaded the attack of long needles.

Then, the shadow suddenly disappeared without a trace.

Long Yu knew that Ling Han was there in the grove, and by this time, he would have certainly found the main body of the disciple of Qiansi Sect and would have silenced him so that the opposite party would not continue to pester him.

At that time, Ling Han killed the Wudao sixth layer disciple of Qiansi Sect hiding at the top of an old tree, and then he saw Feng Yao chasing with the cooper sword in her hand.

“Before you pursue him, you will have to first deal with me!”

Ling Han shouted and jumped down from the tree!

Chapter 38 Opening the heavenly arteries (Part 1)

Long Yu left the place with tremendous speed with the top-grade ancient ginseng to avoid fighting, and at that time, Ling Han jumped from the tree right in front of Feng Yao and directly blocked her path.

“Ling Han? You get out of the way.”

Feng Yao’s complexion slightly changed. She knew Ling Han’s strength, and among the 16 disciples of Zhentian Sect, he was only second to Tan Jian!

If Ling Han was bent upon stopping her then she certainly wouldn’t be able to chase Long Yu.

As a result, the top-grade ancient ginseng might slip away from her hand!

“Ha ha, making me get out of your way would be impossible.”

Ling Han laughed: “You will have to step from my body if you want to go!”

“You are acting recklessly!”

Feng Yao’s complexion sank. And suddenly she waved her copper sword and a layer of Sword qi condensed on it and she immediately swept away that ice moon Sword qi, which rushed towards Ling Han at a tremendous speed.

Ling Han was already prepared to react, then he looked towards his right leg

and the underfoot soil began to float off which immediately took a shape of a bulk that fused with Xuan qi and formed a rock shield wall in front of him.

“Imperial Rock!”

Ling Han shouted loudly, and the rock shield wall was hit by Feng Yao’s Sword qi with a bang, but it was absolutely still!

Imperial rock was a popular defense type martial skill of Zhentian Sect. This martial skill actually belonged to the top grade, and it was very difficult to practice, but once it was practiced to the Da Cheng level then its practitioner could be able to form a rock shield wall, which was a strong defense capability!

Ling Han obviously had practiced the imperial rock martial skill to its Da Cheng level.

“Ice moon nimble and resourceful!”

But, Feng Yao didn’t care about Ling Han’s rock shield wall, her stature flashed and she resorted to ‘Ice moon nimble and resourceful’ martial skill that she had practiced to the peak level providing tremendous acceleration to her agility!

Any martial skill, if practiced to the peak level, would have a qualitative change, Ice moon nimble and resourceful was also the same.

If practiced to the Da Cheng, one could be able to display ice moon Sword qi, and if practiced to the peak level, then one could be able to condense ice moon Sword qi, increasing the speed of its practitioner tremendously.

Feng Yao, immediately stepped her foot on the sludge of icy wind and instantly bypassed the rock shield wall and gave a fast chase to Long Yu.

“Your opponent is me!”

Ling Han laughed, and he waved his hand and, that rock shield wall actually transformed into a shield wall soil fist that rushed towards Feng Yao at breakneck speed to catch her up.

Actually, he had practiced to the peak level of the Imperial rock!

Faced with these soil fists, Feng Yao simply found it impossible to go forward, she knitted her black eyebrows and hastily turned around to cope with them.

While they fought fiercely, to the side of the same place, some of the disciples of Qiansi Sect were hiding behind the old tree, also wanted to seize the opportunity to overtake Long Yu, but unexpectedly the soil fists of Ling Han rumbled towards the old tree and smashed them completely, thus bringing an end to their evil design of chasing after Long Yu.

Depending on his wonderful strength, Ling Han, unexpectedly and single-handedly not only stopped Feng Yao, but also checked the disciples of Qiansi Sect from chasing Long Yu.

.....

Long Yu displayed the flickering wind step and simultaneously stimulated the

blizzard boots, and in a time of sipping one cup of tea, he crossed a distance of 10 miles, and brought the rich Lingqi exuding top-grade ancient ginseng far away from the area where Ling Han and others were fighting.

Long Yu naturally moved towards a remote place and constantly changed his routes all along the way leaving no clue for tracking

If anyone tried to search him along the direction of his running, they would absolutely not be able to find him.

“I should immediately consume the top-grade ancient ginseng!”

Although, Long Yu was temporarily safe and he chose an enough high tree of 20 to 30 feet high and crawled up to its top.

In this way, even if someone would be close then he could first detect them.

The top-grade ancient ginseng was exuding a rich intoxicating aura, if the Lingqi contained in it was completely absorbed by Long Yu, then it would greatly enhance his power.

“Nine hidden Dragon Mark activate.”

Long Yu immediately activated ‘Nine hidden Dragon Mark’ to guide him in fast absorption of the Lingqi of the top-grade ancient ginseng!

At this moment, Long Yu could not help but thought, if he could have a way to cover up the top-grade ancient ginseng then he could have absorbed its Lingqi

with more peace of mind.

Just as he thought, a burst of black light flashed from the 'Nine hidden Dragon Mark'.

Then, he saw that upper surface of the top-grade ancient ginseng was covered with the black traces of lines, which were same as the 'Nine hidden Dragon Mark'. The exudation of the rich Lingqi of the top-grade ancient ginseng which was spreading beyond many miles suddenly vanished without any trace.

At this time, Long Yu gawked and was pleasantly surprised!

"Nine hidden Dragon Mark can actually shield the exudation of Lingqi, this ability simply goes against the heaven's will, how did I not know about it earlier."

Now, Long Yu was completely safe, even if someone would come near the tree, they wouldn't be able to guess that someone was hiding at the top of the tree and absorbing a top-grade ancient ginseng!

A top-grade ancient ginseng was extremely rare and it would appear once in every two or three years in the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest. only after two or three years.

And now, it was in Long Yu's hand.

"Ling Han, now I owe you a big one."

Long Yu thought in his mind, then didn't hesitate anymore and immediately

swallowed the top-grade ancient ginseng in one gulp and quickly began to absorb the Lingqi from it!

Its rich Lingqi began to melt in his stomach, and Long Yu immediately felt that Xuan qi was surging up in his whole body at a greater extent than the time he was absorbing the low-grade ancient ginseng.

“Wudao seventh layer, it seems I will achieve it with no problem, just don’t know whether I can meet the bottleneck.”

Long Yu thought in his mind and started absorbing the rich Lingqi of the top-grade ancient ginseng to break through to the Wudao seventh layer.

Chapter 38 Opening up the heavenly arteries (Part 2)

After reaching the Wudao seventh layer, the masters could assign away the Xuan qi, but the key was that they must make a connection with the most essential passages of the whole body through which vital energy circulated – Heavenly arteries.

By opening the Heavenly arteries, one could control the whole body passages through which vital energy circulated, they would open and close freely, hence the control of Xuan qi would be ten times more flexible than before.

Moreover, Heavenly arteries would have many more vital functions in the future martial arts realm, in fact it could be said that for martial cultivators, the importance of Heavenly arteries was not inferior to the Dantian!

“Heavenly arteries, open up!”

As Long Yu shouted severely, the Xuan qi began to surge in his whole body and started rushing towards the source of Heavenly arteries, and attacked them again and again, the motive was to make a connection and directly stride into the Wudao seventh layer.

The 30% Lingqi of the top-grade ancient ginseng was completely absorbed by him, making him feel that Wudao seventh layer was at hand.

However, within his entire body, the Heavenly arteries actually didn't break through, creating a major barrier between him and the Wudao seventh layer.

“Nine hidden Dragon Mark, activate!”

At that time, ‘Nine hidden Dragon Mark’ had stored up 70% Lingqi of the top-grade ancient ginseng, and when Long Yu began its absorption, it formed turbulent tides one after another continuously and went on attacking the Heavenly arteries.

Thump! Thump! Thump!

Long Yu's heart beats began to maintain the rhythm along with the Xuan qi which went on violently attacking the Heavenly arteries again and again.

Finally, when only 30% Lingqi of the top-grade ancient ginseng still remained to be absorbed, he noticed that the blockage in the Heavenly arteries finally

opened up and these arteries were completely linked up under the successive impacts of Xuan qi.

Buzz!

Long Yu felt as if a miraculous glow had broken through his head, making him establish some kind of vague link with the entire world. Heavenly arteries were the essential passages among the meridians through which the energy circulated, and only by relying on these Heavenly arteries, one would be able to feel the presence of the world laws and principles.

And Long Yu had already walked at this step.

“Zhentian mysterious mood, it seems as if there is a trend that leads to this breakthrough. Could it be that it’s because of the Heavenly arteries that strengthens the induction ability of world laws and principles?”

Long Yu thought, no wonder the core disciples were able to comprehend the mysterious mood of core law, because as the Wudao layer of the martial artists enhanced, the Heavenly arteries throughout the body opened up and were linked together, hence their sensibility of the world laws and principles would increase to another level.

Now, Long Yu’s Heavenly arteries finally opened up and it seemed like his comprehension of the Zhentian mysterious mood was about to break through to the Zhentian charm.

“Almost, I am only missing an opportunity then I can comprehend Zhentian charm that will strengthen the suppression world law!”

Long Yu's eyes flashed with anticipation then he jumped down from that old tree's top of and landed heavily on the ground.

After the breakthrough to the Wudao seventh layer, the most direct change was the enhancement of the strength in his body. His basic strength of 32,000 Jin from Wudao sixth layer increased to the current strength of 64,000 Jin.

In addition to that, he had Demon tyrant form and 'Nine hidden dragon mark', granting him the fist strength of ** ten thousand Jin!

Of course, even after reaching Wudao seventh layer, Long Yu was still not very powerful. Since the last awakening of memories of the 'Nine hidden dragon mark', Long Yu knew that the true and major transformation in the martial strength occurred while stepping into the Wudao eighth layer.

"Warriors of Wudao eighth layer possess the strength of 120,000 Jin, although if I use the wandering soul glove, there will be enhancement in my strength, but the masters of Wudao eighth layer certainly possess a special strength, it will not be so easy to defeat them

Long Yu thought to himself, at his current strength, he should be able to give strong competition to the master of Wudao eighth layer, but when actual battle experience was taken into consideration then they wouldn't necessarily be his rivals.

However, if he could get deeper insight into the charm of Zhentian mysterious mood, then it would mean bigger assurance for Long Yu during his fight with a master of Wudao eighth layer.

“I first need to look for Ling Han, after that I will focus on comprehending the implication of ‘suppression world law’ in the mysterious mood.”

Long Yu calculated the time and discovered that almost 2 hours had passed since the time Ling Han jumped down from the tree to stop his pursuers. Such a long time had already passed, he did not know about the current situation of Ling Han.

He displayed the peak level flickering wind step and returned along the same route.

Soon, he returned to that pool where top-grade ancient ginseng had grown. Long Yu had run through the jungle, but did not hear any sounds of fighting.

Long Yu carefully searched and found three corpses hidden in the woods and belonged to the disciples of Qiansi sect.

“It seems like Brother Ling Han should be all right, but nothing seems to have happened to that Feng Yao as well.....”

Long Yu thought in mind, even though he could not find them, he was not puzzled from this, because he knew that depending on Feng Yao’s strength, it would not be easy for her to kill Ling Han.

Just when Long Yu was about to set out to find them, suddenly, he heard the sound of fighting from the pool’s direction.

“Fight?”

Long Yu complexion slightly changed, he immediately used a twinkling step and hid among the dark trees then looked in the direction of the pool.

He saw that it was not Feng Yao, Ling Han and other pursuers, but were actually the strongest disciple of Wudao eighth layer from Zhentian sect, Tan Jian, as well as other two Wudao eighth layer martial artists.

“Tan Jian and two other masters of Wudao eighth layer from Hanbing sect!”

Long Yu’s eyes shone brightly, he actually never expected to see this trio right on!

Among them was a pair of a man and a woman, both had thin statures and were at Wudao eight layer, but waving among blooming over ten kilograms of force, compelling Tan Jian to draw back step by step!

And Tan Jian seemed to have many scruples and was retreating step by step with a fierce look on his face.

“Top-grade ancient ginseng, so they are fighting for a top-grade ancient ginseng!”

Long Yu sensed a unique breath exuding from Tan Jian, and he was able to tell the difference, it was obvious that the fragrance of a top-grade ancient ginseng was mixed in the aura of Tan Jian.

“No wonder that these two have surrounded Tan Jian, this guy has actually consumed a top-grade ancient ginseng”

A cold look flashed in Long Yu’s eyes.

Since the day he entered the Zhentian sect, this Tan Jian had been causing trouble for him, but he was strong enough to survive all this time, otherwise he would probably have already been crippled, or even killed!

Now that he had a chance to benefit from another’s strife, he must ambush Tan Jian. Long Yu would certainly not miss this opportunity.

The best case scenario should be to catch Tan Jian and the Hanbing sect’s pair and eliminate all of them in one fell swoop!

Chapter 39 Fierce battle (Part 1)

On the pool shore, a thin man, a thin woman and Tan Jian were engaged in intense fighting, but they had not slightly realized that a brave fighter was hiding on the side of the grove and waiting for an opportunity to come out and attack.

“Tan Jian, you have robbed the top-grade ancient ginseng, you should know there will be consequences.”

That thin man sneered, his voice reflected hoarseness!

“Ha ha!”

Tan Jian resisted their attacks, while laughing wildly: “Consequences, what consequences? Depending on your strength, you actually think that I am inadequate?”

“Don’t be too arrogant, you are at Wudao eighth layer, but the two of us, are also at Wudao eighth layer.”

That slim woman coldly snorted: “It’s a two vs one fight, you will obviously lose!”

Through her words, she was trying to apply psychological pressure on Tan Jian, so that he could not display his full strength in the fighting.

However, Tan Jian was a man of firm mind, and of course, he was not at all affected by these words.

He said coldly: “Hua Qing and Hua Yun, you two seriously think that after absorbing the top-grade ancient ginseng, this Tan Jian’s strength will be inferior to the combined strength of the two of you?”

As voice fell down, Xuan qi began to congeal at one foot of Tan Jian, and suddenly a layer of land was stripped of and united to form a rock shield wall in front of him.

It was a top-grade martial skill, Imperial rock!

A rock shield wall instantly appeared in front of Tan Jian to withstand the anticipated attack of Hua Qin and Hua Yun likely to be launched shortly, he was confident that they couldn’t be able to break it.

“In Hanbing sect, the core disciples also practiced similar type of martial skill, although, you both are at Wudao eight layer, but are actually not core disciples.”

Tan Jian, thus, formed the rock shield wall and calmly said: “I’d like to see, is there any way you can break this wall of rock!”

“Humph!”

Hua Qing, the thin man, saw the wall and lightly gave a cold hmph in a hoarse voice, and immediately stepped forward, stretched out his hands and suddenly three cold Xuan qi dragons began to condense on them and rushed towards Tan Jian at a tremendous speed.

Cold dragon destroyer, the Da Cheng level of top-grade martial skill!

Three cold Xuan qi dragons attacked from three different directions, and Tan Jian quickly waved his hand and the rock shield wall in front of him began to expand rapidly until it dashed against the three cold Xuan qi dragons.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The three cold Xuan qi dragons bombarded over the rock shield wall, but simply had actually no impact on the defensive power of the rock shield wall, that might be called very terrifying, unexpectedly gorgeously remained motionless!

Then, however, that thin woman, Hua Yun said with a contemptuous smile on her face.

“This rock shield wall defense, although is strong, but the speed is actually too slow, now see my picking flowers flying leaves martial skill.”

Picking flowers flying leaves!

Hua Yun waved her hand gently and Xuan qi began to agglomerate at her fingertips, congealing round countless flowers and leaves, each piece was unexpectedly sharp like the knife point!

“What martial skill is this?”

Tan Jian said with a somewhat dignified look on his face.

He well remembered that he had carefully read the bamboo slip that Elder Yu gave him, but it had actually not recorded this martial skill, might it be a martial skill belonging to the family of Hua Qin and Hua Yun?

The next moment, the countless flowers and leaves that had congealed at the finger tips of Hua Yun suddenly rushed like knives towards Tan Jian at a tremendous speed!

Picking flowers flying leaves, a top-grade martial skill was not only incredibly powerful, the most important thing associated with it was that it was fast, all-pervasive, and was very appropriate to be used to deal with such royal rock defense martial art!

Everywhere these flying flowers and leaves, which were in the shapes of knives, enveloped the whole body of Tan Jian.

Although, the shield wall rock was a strong defense, and at that moment, it was not slightest affected move, but these flowers and leaves in the shapes of knives were very fast and tricky and in a blink of an eye, they changed their directions and bypassing the shield wall, they reached in front of Tan Jian

Shua! Shua! Shua! Shua!

A series of metallic sounds resounded when these flowers and leaves severely hit on the body of Tan Jian and simply generated tinkling sounds.

“A defensive armor?”

Hua Yun's face slightly changed and she gave a glance at Tan Jian, who was actually wearing defense armor!

Tan Jian jumped into the sky and shook his body and easily resisted this move without any loss.

"Tan Jian is indeed worth of his name."

On the side, Long Yu was observing the fight and he couldn't help but think in his mind that if he faced Tan Jian now, then it would be quite impossible for him to break through his defense.

This guy actually seemed to have practiced the Imperial Rock probably to the Da Cheng level, might be to the peak level, plus wore a defensive armor, he was just as hard as a tortoiseshell!

"How was it?"

Tan Jian firmly stood and said to Hua Yun with a mocking look in his eyes: "Your attack failed? Are you desperate now? Then it's my turn!"

Tan Jian's burly body stood as a rock and suddenly stretched out his hand, immediately a black mist began to congeal on it and he at once swept it away towards Hua Yun.!

"Detaining soul hand, be careful!"

Hua Qing gave a silent reminder to his sister but he himself didn't have pause

and finally took out his battle weapon.

It was a sharp double-edged sword its edge was reflecting silver light. Soon, Xuan qi began to condense on the sword blade, and in an instant, it was covered with a layer of snow and ice, and a cold winter seemed to have arrived in the nearby region.

“Kill!”

Taking advantage of Tan Jian’s release of Detaining soul hand towards Hua Yun, Hua Qin displayed his fencing skill and took out his sword to kill Tan Jian!

But, in a flash, Tan Jian’s ghost like claw arrived in front of Hua Yun, and Hua Yun’s reaction speed was less than his. She was directly covered by it, and suddenly, her whole body seemed to have been bewitched and was unable to move.

“Come!”

Tan Jian shouted and stimulated the circulation of Xuan qi in his body. After practicing the detaining soul hand to the peak level, he was able to instantly catch the soul, and all of a sudden, he grasped the tender body of Hua Yun.

“You want to kill me, see how I kill you!”

Tan Jian looked to his side and saw Hua Qing’s sword coming at him, and laughed, then quickly waved his right hand and grabbed Hua Yun and immediately put her in front of him while keeping her straight in the line of Hua Qing’s sword attack.

Hua Qing tried to pause a little, but his speed was very fast, so his sword directly pierced into the body of Hua Yun!

Tan Jian's smiling face became stiff at this scene, what happened, had Hua Qing actually gone mad to use his sword to kill his own sister?

Chapter – 39 strong battle (Part 2)

But soon, Tan Jian knew that was not the case!

The double edged sword penetrated into Hua Yun's tender body, but not the slightest blood spilled out, followed by her figure changing into flying leaves and dispersed everywhere!

It was the false body of Hua Yun!

The next moment, Hua Qing waved his double edged sword in his hand and the ice cold Swordqi directly came in front of Tan Jian!

Meanwhile, Hua Yun's false body that had turned into flying leaves moved sideways and got restructured behind Tan Jian to attack his back side and kill him!

After these attacks, Tan Jian's eyes flashed fiercely and he finally launched a counter attack.

“Imperial rock, fist of earth!”

The rock shield wall instantly transformed into hundreds of soil fists and rushed towards both of them at a tremendous speed!

Hua Qing immediately resorted to agility type martial skill to avoid this attack from Tan Jian, and the next moment, he waved his sword covered in cold Swordqi and thrust it perpendicularly towards Tan Jian!

The speed of Hua Yun’s picking flowers flying leaves martial skill was quite terrifying, she moved sideways and easily dodged Tan Jian’s attack and arrived close to him.

“Landslide fist!”

Although it was a simple punch because she displayed an ordinary martial skill but the power contained in her fist was not one bit inferior to other top-grade martial skills.

“Perfection level martial skill!”

Tan Jian’s heart trembled and felt the presence of a perfection level martial skill right behind him compelling him to give his all to deal with it.

If a martial skill was practiced to the perfection level, the might of the practitioner became extremely fearful!

Beginner level, Xiao Cheng level, Dacheng level, peak level and perfection level.

Martial skills had various levels and through comprehension, the level of practice increased and the power would also increase dramatically with each level rise.

The might of perfection level landslide fist was very high and compelled Tan Jian to pay attention to it, because it could easily penetrate his defense armor and directly injure him!

When Landslide fist was practiced to the perfection level, its might actually increased to a horrifying extent!

Although, Hua Yun was thin and weak, but the landslide fist that she resorted to was extremely fierce and quickly approached Tan Jian's back.

And in front of Tan Jian, Ice cold sword light was also arriving at this time.

Two attacks were coming at him from front and back, the situation was extremely critical!

"Imperial rock, explode!"

Tan Jian clenched his teeth. With the burst of the Imperial rock, first the rock changed into the storm of soil in the surrounding area and it rushed towards Hua Qin and Hua Yun and hit them and exploded them away.

At that moment, a loud crashing sound was heard and the dust spread

everywhere in the field.

This was the sound of ice cold sword light and landslide fist colliding with the shield rock wall, all these attacks were mixed in together, and Long Yu couldn't see clearly what actually happened in the end.

Suddenly.

"Bang." The two thin figures were shot to fly into the air. One fell into the pool, spraying out blood from his mouth, and another fell heavily on the ground, and was extremely embarrassed.

When dust dispersed, Long Yu finally saw that Tan Jian vomited blood while kneeling on the ground, his clothes had been torn to pieces, and even within the clothes several holes had appeared on his blue defense armor. Evidently that battle weapon, the defense armor, had also been damaged.

When he looked at the side of the ground, he saw Hua Yun lying on the ground and her gray clothes were torn away from her body, revealing the tempting white color of her skin from top to bottom.

On the shore of the pool, Hua Qin had a tough time climbing up from the pool water to the ground and was clearly wounded heavier than Hua Yun.

"They mutually wounded each other"

Long Yu smiled, in such a situation, even these three Wudao eighth layer masters could not be considered as threat to him.

His only opponent, now, was the princess of Qiansi Sect!

Long Yu stood up and was ready to leave quietly.

Although, he wanted to kill all three of these disciples to eliminate the future trouble, but even if the three of them were seriously injured, after all they were masters of Wudao eighth layer and still held certain battle efficiency.

If Tan Jian, Hua Qin and Hua Yun collaborated and fought against him, though he would still be able to kill them off but he himself would be seriously battered after the battle which was simply unnecessary at this time since Tan Jian had already consumed the top-grade ancient ginseng during this fight.

But just when Long Yu turned around and wanted to go, he suddenly felt that his feet had been suddenly shackled.

Disciples of Qiansi Sect!

Long Yu narrowed his eyes then looked down and saw two shadow hands had firmly tied down his feet, while four old tree shadows were advancing towards Long Yu to strangle him.

“Besides the princess of Qiansi sect, I am not really afraid of any other disciple from Qiansi sect!”

Long Yu’s eyes revealed a cold look. He originally didn’t want to waste time here, but since these people wanted to sneak attack on him, then no wonder he

would fight back without showing any mercy!

“Demon tyrant form!”

Long Yu had practiced Demon tyrant form which was a very formidable body refining martial skill and he was confident that mere a shadow could never be able to strangle him.

“Zhentian mysterious mood, congeal!”

Long Yu released Zhentian mysterious mood, that had become much more powerful after linking the heavenly arteries, and all of a sudden, it let Long Yu found the hiding place of that disciple of Qiansi Sect.

At the peak of the old tree, on the left side of Long Yu, the disciple of Qiansi Sect was enveloped completely by the suppression of the mysterious mood and his breath was obstructed by Long Yu’s keen detection!

“Flickering wind step, three twinkling steps!”

Long Yu’s stature flashed, suddenly leaving an afterimage behind, and he himself crossed a distance of 100 feet instantaneously and appeared right behind the disciple of Qiansi Sect.

“Die!”

Long Yu activated ‘Nine hidden Dragon Mark’, wore the wandering soul glove and condensed the strength of more than 100,000 Jin in his fist and pounded

heavily on the back of that disciple of Qiansi Sect.

Bang!

That disciple of Qiansi Sect, dressed in black dress, was at Wudao seventh layer directly received the blow to his back, emitting blood from his mouth, he fell down from the tree in the grove and was completely motionless.

Now that Long Yu had entered into the Wudao seventh layer, a master at the Wudao seventh layer was simply not his match and was just like a chicken in front of a dog.

However, the sound produced suddenly attracted the attention of the three people standing at the side of the pool.

Hua Qin, Hua Yun and Tan Jian, all of them almost simultaneously looked towards the peak of the old tree and saw Long Yu!

Chapter – 40 Comprehends charm (Part 1)

Long Yu was at the peak of an old tree, and Hua Qing, Hua Yu and Tan Jian simultaneously looked at him.

“It’s that waste!”

Tan Jian, although was injured, but a malicious fiery color still emerged out in his eyes. He well remembered that in Zhentian Sect, Long Yu kicked Tan Yu’s and broke her thigh bone and he had severely injured Fang Kang, his personal attendant.

His heart was full of hatred for Long Yu and he would not let him off so easily!

Hua Yun saw Long Yu and became extremely angry as well as ashamed and embarrassed at the same time, because now her clothes were ragged and her attractive white skin was visible. A brat like him actually saw her naked body!

“You saw my body, you will have to die!”

Hua Yun’s eyes exposed an insidious color, whether it was Tan Jian or Long Yu, she would not spare their lives!

“Brother, you take care of Tan Jian, I go kill that kid first!”

Hua Yun said in an inspiring tone, and suddenly with a gust of wind blew her body in the air like a flying leaf and moved with a great speed towards the place where Long Yu was standing!

“Go away, that kid’s life, is mine!”

Tan Jian shouted loudly, took a step and stomped his feet on the ground, and suddenly, there emerged a shield wall rock, which instantly changed into a hundreds of soil fists that immediately rushed towards Long Yu at a tremendous speed.

Long Yu stood at the peak of the tree while his heart was completely calm.

Initially, he wanted to leave quietly to save time and to see if he could find more ancient ginsengs in the forest.

But now, since they didn’t intend to let him go, so he would certainly not back down!

“Well, I would like to see how strong the masters of Wudao eighth layer actually are.”

Long Yu’s eyes shone brightly. He activated his Blizzard boots that suddenly pushed his body, he jumped from the peak of the tree, and voluntarily went up to resist the picking flowers and falling leaves attack of Hua Yun and the soil fists of Tan Jian, he just wanted to test their might!

“Demon vajra cover!”

The Xuan qi began to accumulate on Long Yu’s body, and in no time, a layer of pale golden light suddenly surfaced on his body making it impregnable!

Clang Clang!

The picking flowers and falling leaves blades hit on Long Yu's body producing only a metal clanging sound and couldn't hurt him even a bit. Hundreds of soil fists also exploded one after another on him, but still couldn't break through that cover of pale golden light on his body.

And with a loud sound, Long Yu landed firmly on the ground near the pool and the landing shock produced a cloud of dust in the surrounding area.

Tan Jian stood 50 feet away from him to one side, Hua Qing stood 100 feet away from him near the edge of the pool, and Hua Yun, who had just shot the move of the picking flowers and falling leaves, was on another direction.

Long Yu was surrounded by three masters of Wudao eighth layer!

"You really have a death wish"

Tan Jian stood up and his face had a color of mockery. He lightly said to both Hua Yun and Hua Qing: "I have grudges against both of you, but we must first kill this kid first, then we will settle our accounts, what do you say?"

"I have no idea."

Hua Yun said haggardly. She stood at a far distance, her torn clothes were fluttering in the wind, her white skin was partly hidden and partly visible.

“Then kill him first.”

Hua Qing stood up from the side of the pool with a sword covered with Xuan qi of ice and cold.

Three strong masters had a rough fight, their injuries were not light, now a kid suddenly appeared and wanted to pick up a bargain, it was as if he was joking around with three masters of the Wudao eighth layer.

These three masters of Wudao eighth layer were discussing the things with each other, obviously Long Yu had no value in their eyes, but at that time, they were already injured, so they decided to collaborate and kill Long Yu first.

They also saw that Long Yu easily withstood both the picking flowers and falling leaves attack and soil fists attacks, in spite of being only at Wudao seventh layer.

If they didn't join forces, it would not be easy for them to kill Long Yu.

“Waste, we three are masters of Wudao eighth layer, when you die, you should feel honored.”

Tan Jian sneered and moved forward to prevent Long Yu from escaping.

“Why do you seem so sure that I am going to die?”

Long Yu indifferently said.

Hearing this, all three strong masters of Wudao eighth layer suddenly laughed disdainfully.

“Ha ha, who do you think you are?”

Tan Jian contemptuously laughed: “Even if I was the only one here, there simply is no way for you to escape! Now, just go down easily without causing too much trouble!”

“This fight is between strong masters, a guy like you has tried to meddle, it is a dead end for you.”

Hua Qing moved forward step by step with a sword in his hand and there was a proud look on his face.

As Tan Jian said, even Hua Qing could single-handedly cut Long Yu by his sword, needless to say if the three joined forces then logically speaking, a Wudao seventh layer master like Long Yu should obviously perish.

“Do not talk nonsense, just do it!”

Hua Yun shouted and stepped forward, and the next moment, the Xuan qi began to circulate in her entire body, and she transformed into flying leaves and flew towards Long Yu.

But then, from a far distance, a loud roar came from the forest.

“Stop!”

With this roar, a young man dressed in white walked out from the forest, there was a tense color on his handsome face, it actually turned out to be Ling Han.

“Brother?”

Long Yu saw Ling Han and it seemed like a big stone fell off his heart, making him feel lighter and better, fortunately Brother Ling Han was all right.

Then, however, a shining sword suddenly sprang from the bushes and attacked Ling Han from behind.

“Why are you sticking your nose into someone else’s fight?”

Feng Yao’s crisp and mocking voice came from the bushes. She immediately arrived on the scene while rising on ice-wind sludge, and her figure clad in light green skirt flashed and suddenly came in front of Ling Han then blocked his way.

Now, she stood in front of Ling Han and her copper sword was covered in ice, inducing ice cold weather in the surrounding.

“The fight between us is not over yet, it would be better if you fully concentrate on it!”

Feng Yao reminded Ling Han and attacked him with her sword, which was covered in ice like Swordqi.

Ling Han realized that it was impossible to help Long Yu. He was immediately

forced back by the Swordqi attack, retreating several steps away from Long Yu.

“Brother, you escape!”

Ling Han hastily reminded loudly.

“Brother, you do not need to worry about me, constrain Feng Yao for me.”

Long Yu said aloud.

Chapter 40 Comprehends charm (Part 2)

“Do not worry, as long as I am here, she will absolutely not pass!”

Ling Han said while Xuan qi surged out in his body and immediately congealed a rock wall shield. It was powerful enough to withstand the ice cold Swordqi attack of Feng Yao.

Feng Yao’s mouth slightly curled up: “That’s right.”

At this moment, Ling Han was constraining her, while Long Yu was surrounded by Tan Jian, Hua Yu and Hua Qing, it seemed like Long Yu was going to die without a doubt.

Feng Yao wanted Long Yu’s death.

Otherwise, he would continue to occupy the heart of her father, Feng Longsong. Her father even betrothed her to him. She did not want to go against the wishes of her father, but did not want to marry Long Yu and the only way to get rid of him was just let him die!

Now, she was blocking Ling Han and didn't let him support Long Yu, and besieged by these powerful masters of Wudao eighth layer, he would certainly die!

At that time, Ling Han's heart was burning with impatience and was worried for Long Yu, but Feng Yao was blocking him, and he was unable to shake her off to go help Long Yu. The only thing he could right now was to firmly constrain Feng Yao as Long Yu said a moment ago.

They contained each other and no one was able to intervene in the fight, and at the side of the pool, fighting almost began simultaneously.

Hua Yun was first to initiate. She cast Picking flowers falling leaves martial skill then transformed into falling leaves and instantly arrived at the side of Long Yu, tightly clenched her fist and shot it towards him.

“Landslide fist!”

Perfection level of landslide fist actually contained an extremely formidable might!

Long Yu didn't dare to meet these attacks and instantly stimulated the Blizzard boots and displayed the peak level of flickering the wind step and moved to one

side, but Hua Yun's speed was faster than his!

The speed of the martial skill of picking flowers and falling leaves of was really so quick that even Long Yu couldn't move aside to dodge it.

A fist rumbled loudly on Long Yu's shoulder and its terrifying destructive power sent vibrations inside his body.

"Demon vajra cover!"

A layer of faint golden color light instantly appeared on the whole body of Long Yu but could barely resist the 50% of the strength of the fist, and remaining half strength directly penetrated into his body.

The important functions of Demon tyrant form finally appeared. The vibrations from strength present in that fist attack only made it to his blood vessels, the five internal organs only suffered slight concussions from the vibrations, because the majority of the shock had been neutralized by the defensive effects of Demon tyrant form.

Even Perfection level of landslide fist failed to cause harm to Long Yu!

But, almost immediately Hua Qing took out his sword then covered with ice Swordqi, and immediately chopped his sword traverse towards Long Yu's neck from the back side.

Ice cold Swordqi approached Long Yu making his entire body feel ice cold chill and causing his speed to become half a beat slower than usual.

Buzz!

Long Yu lowered his head as he saw Hua Qing's sword coming towards his neck and the sword simply went on cutting off his few hair which instantly froze and turned silver.

“Detaining soul hand!”

Tan Jian clenched his fist, and a black mist instantly condensed on it, and he immediately swept it towards Long Yu.

Long Yu lost control over the centre of gravity of his body and was unable to escape, he could only display the peak level of ‘flickering wind step’ and left an afterimage at the same place, and dodged the move of Tan Jian, and in a blink of an eye he arrived behind him.

“Eat my fist!”

Taking advantage of Tan Jian still engaged in casting detaining soul hand, Long Yu instantly activated ‘Nine hidden Dragon Mark’ and pounded a heavy punch on his back!

Although, Tan Jian's body defense armor had been disrupted earlier, but its defense capability was still unusual and the heavy punch of Long Yu didn't even make Tan Jian to budge!

“You really are a turtle!”

Long Yu cursed loudly. But, at that time, Hua Qing attacked Long Yu with his sword covered with ice cold Swordqi, and Hua Yun's picking flowers and falling leaves attack also rushed towards him.

“Zhentian mysterious mood, activate!”

Long Yu immediately comprehended Zhentian mysterious mood, and instantly released it, it immediately enveloped the surrounding area extending up to the radius of 100 feet.

The suppression of the mysterious mood slowed down the actions of Tan Jian, Hua Yun and Hua Qing. A color of astonishment appeared on their respective faces. This kid had already comprehended the mysterious mood of Zhentian tactics, so he was actually very talented!

However, he was facing three strong masters of Wudao eighth layer, so what if he had comprehended the mysterious mood?

The Zhentian mysterious mood repression could only weaken their strength and speed by less than 30 %, but their combined strength would still be more than Long Yu, not to mention their coordinated attacks would be hard to deal with.

“Demon vajra cover!”

Instantly Xuan qi congealed on the body of Long Yu and a layer of golden light appeared on his body again and he easily withstood the attacks of Hua Yun and Hua Qing.

Then, Tan Jian turned around and stomped his feet, and rock shield wall again turned into a hundreds of soil fists and rushed towards Long Yu.

“Xuan qi consumption is too much, I am unable to cast Demon vajra cover once again.....”

Long Yu thought to himself and was calm in the face of hundreds of soil fists attack from Tan Jian. He immediately displayed the flickering the wind step, and his body became light like breeze, but the hundreds of soil fists had also come very close behind him at a tremendous speed and were following closely.

“However, sometimes, it is really easy to have a breakthrough during the fight.”

Long Yu, at that time, finally felt that his heavenly arteries had a much more deep contact with this world, he had realized only a trace of the Zhentian mysterious mood earlier, but finally a qualitative change had taken place in the level of his comprehension of the mysterious mood and he had comprehended the charm!

Practicing Zhentian tactics was based on the world principle of suppression, but only after comprehension, one could borrow its strength.

At this moment, Long Yu finally comprehended the suppression charm and didn't hesitate to release it.

Instantaneously, the heavy repression of the Zhentian charm completely enveloped all the three powerful masters of Wudao eighth layer and greatly

hindered their movements.

Whether it was the strength or speed, it had been cut in half because of the wonderful effect of the heavy repression of the charm.

“Charm is a level above mood, it is the world trend and in the field. If the ultimate success of the field, in the field, I will be as the master!”

Long Yu’s eyes flashed brightly: “But against these three wounded masters of Wudao eighth layer, just comprehending charm is more than enough!”

On account of the heavy suppression of the Zhentian charm, the speed of the hundreds of soil fists of Tan Jian sharply declined all of a sudden and Long Yu easily escaped his attack!

The movements of Hua Yun and Hua Qing were also considerably slowed down and now they couldn’t keep up with Long Yu’s speed.

Long Yu now had a thorough grasp over the fight!

Chapter – 41 Beheaded three stronger (Part 1)

When the suppression of the Zhentian charm began, in the field, it seemed as if Long Yu was right in the center of the stage!

Taking advantage of the slowing down of the speed of Hua Qing, Long Yu quickly stimulated his snow boots and simultaneously displaying flickering wind step and quickly circled behind Hua Qing at an extremely fast speed.

“Die!”

Long Yu shouted and wore wandering soul glove, a black mist suddenly condensed on it.

“Dodge!”

Hua Qing felt the imposing aura of the punch coming from behind. He wanted to dodge this fist attack, but under the heavy suppression of the Zhentian charm, his speed had become extremely slow, so he couldn't do so.

The next moment, Long Yu heavily punched his fist containing the strength of 10,000 Jin on the spine of Hua Qing from behind, and he was shot to fly in the air with a bang!

Hua Qing's sword covered with snow and ice soon fell on the ground with a “dang”. Since there was no longer the supply of Xuan qi from Hua Qing, the snow and ice present on the sword soon dissipated, leaving only a silver sword on the ground.

“Nice sword.”

Long Yu picked up the sword. A faint smile was on his face. The sword, no doubt, eased the pressure on him. If he didn't have such a sharp sword, he really didn't know how to deal with the turtle hard defense armor of Tan Jian.

“Picking flowers flying leaves.”

When Hua Yun saw his brother shot to fly in the air, she instantly displayed her picking flowers flying leaves attack, and immediately, thousands of flowers and leaf blades came rushing towards Long Yu.

But, because of being under the heavy pressure of Zhentian charm, even the speed of picking flowers flying leaves became very slow.

Long Yu got enough time to wield the sword in a carefree manner, and in a flash, he chopped down all sharp flowers and leaf blades coming at him, then he cast out flickering wind step, his body became light as breeze and he quickly headed towards Hua Yun to kill her.

Puff!

He skillfully stabbed the sword towards Hua Yun, piercing her throat with great accuracy. She stared in disbelief: “Howcould.....you..., you obviously... only seventh.....”

“I have already said that I will not be the one to die.”

Long Yu faintly said then pulled out the sword from her neck. Hua Yun's thin and tender body quickly fell on the ground, her heartbeat and breathing soon stopped.

"Little Yun!"

After being sent flying by Long Yu's fist bang, Hua Qing was seriously injured. He felt severe pain. His eyes were blood-red and glittering with hatred and while stubbornly staring at Long Yu, he shouted loudly: "I will kill you!!"

"Unfortunately, you will not get the opportunity."

Long Yu said in a calm voice, his stature flashed, his body became light like breeze, and instantly, he arrived behind Hua Qing and slashed the sword at him!

Puff!

Hua Qing couldn't even display his defense type martial skill at that time, the sword pierced through his abdomen and the Xuan qi attached on the sword shattered his Dantian.

Hua Qing instantly fell on the ground with his face up, in a flash, now Tan Jian was the only one left in the field.

After comprehending Zhentian charm, in a flash, he killed stronger enemies!

Long Yu looked at Tan Jian and saw that there was horror stricken look in his

eyes.

Long Yu, the former waste, but now had become so terrible, even comprehended the second layer of the mysterious mood, such a terrifying talent. Tan Jian simply could not imagine and accept such a thing.

“Long Yu, please stop your hand, we are all from Zhentian Sect, there is no need to put our lives on the line and fight to the bitter end!”

Tan Jian stamped his feet on the ground, the rock shield wall reappeared, and he calmly looked at Long Yu.

“Now you actually call me by my name, unlike before, wasn’t I supposed to be a ‘waste’?”

Long Yu contemptuously smiled while there was a killing intention on his face, however Tan Jian had discarded his immense arrogance and wanted to reconcile with Long Yu.

But, how could Long Yu possibly comply?

If Long Yu did not make use of this opportunity to get rid of this turtle, then next time, he might prove to be even more troublesome!

Long Yu would never allow him to live and become a future trouble.

“You must die.”

Long Yu pointed his sword at Tan Jian, and at that time, there was an indifferent look in his eyes.

Tan Jian's heart thumped, he looked into the indifferent eyes of Long Yu, and his heart gave birth to a bad premonition.

Not far from there, Feng Yao and Ling Han were witnessing the situation with their own eyes.

“How is this possible? This waste

Feng Yao clenched her teeth because she could never imagine that not just Long Yu could resist the encirclement of three strong masters of Wudao eight layer, but he instantly killed two of them and cornered the third one!

Now, even the extremely arrogant Tan Jian was compelled to put down his stance and act politely!

Earlier during the fight, these three masters of Wudao eight layer must have mutually injured each other and that too quite severely, they must have fought heavily with each other severely damaging each other's strength, otherwise, it should have been impossible for Long Yu, even after stepping into the Wudao seventh layer, to come out victorious against the three strong masters of Wudao eighth layer.

“Not good, if I do not take advantage of this opportunity to get rid of this guy, I am afraid there won't be small trouble in the future!”

Feng Yao's eyes flashed fiercely, she stepped forward, but right then, Ling Han

moved quickly and caught her up.

“Ha ha, junior sister apprentice Feng Yao, your opponent is me!”

Ling Han jumped in front of Feng Yao and immediately shot a punch at her and stopped her advance!

Ling Han never expected that Long Yu would be so overwhelming powerful, might be that it was due to effect of the top-grade ancient ginseng. He thought that it was definitely the right choice to give the top-grade ancient ginseng to Long Yu.

Right now, although Long Yu was only at Wudao seventh layer, but actually killed two strong masters of Wudao eight layer!

“Who is your junior sister apprentice?”

Feng Yao was stopped by Ling Han. Suddenly, she felt a spontaneous surge of powerlessness, although she was not weak, but while facing Ling Han, she really had no way to approach Long Yu!

These two had quite similar strength, it was not going to be easy for one of them to come out as a winner, so as a result, none of them could escape each other's constraints and was totally entangled.

Initially, Feng Yao wanted to prevent Ling Han from helping Long Yu, but now, Ling Han stopped her from moving forward to kill Long Yu.

Now these two people couldn't influence the battle between Long Yu and Tan Jian.

Long Yu gradually moved towards Tan Jian.

Tan Jian condensed the Xuan qi to make rock shield wall, but felt that the consumption of Xuan qi had depleted to an alarming extent in his body and he wouldn't be able to hold it much longer.

Chapter – 41 Beheaded three stronger (Part 2)

He snatched the top-grade ancient ginseng, and while fighting, he made effort to kill Hua Yun and Hua Qing, and midway in the fight, he also risked to swallow the top-grade ancient ginseng which was the reason why he had yet not fully absorbed the lingqi from it.

Hence, he couldn't take rest after swallowing the top-grade ancient ginseng and now he stood at dead end, producing a surge of hatred in his heart!

Tan Jian looked at Long Yu gradually walking towards him, his mind was racing fast, now he couldn't fight Long Yu or escape from him, his life was on the line so even if he had to give up his dignity for the time being, he decided to put it aside.

“Long Yu, before my sister Tan Yue disrespected you, it was her mistake, after going back, I will strictly teach her discipline!”

Tan Jian said in a loud tone: “We belong to the same Sect, please listen to me,

put down the sword in your hand, how about we patch up?”

While saying these words, Tan Jian’s heart was extremely unwilling, however, now that his Xuan qi had depleted, he could only endure patiently!

The meaning inherent in the sentence was clear, Tan Jian was unexpectedly begging to for mercy in front of Long Yu!

To the side, this scene was absolutely unexpected for Ling Han, the strongest inner disciple of Zhentian sect was actually cornered to such an extent that he was begging for mercy from Long Yu! However, Ling Han was worried, facing the submissive demeanor of Tan Jian who was begging for mercy, would Long Yu actually let him off?

Ling Han didn’t say anything and actually wanted to see that what kind a person Long Yu exactly was!

“You want me to put the sword, fine, but on one condition.”

Long Yu lightly smiled and said on a whim.

“What condition?”

Tan Jian subconsciously asked aloud.

“It’s very simple

Long Yu said these words and with the sword in his hand, and his body light like the breeze, he took one twinkling step and instantly arrived behind Tan Jian.

Xuan qi immediately condensed on the sword, and in a flash, Long Yu's sword pierced Tan Jian's body which damaged his defense armor!

Tan Jian's attention was fully focused on Long Yu, wanting to hear the condition, how could he even imagine that Long Yu would actually attack all of a sudden?

The next moment, the sword covered with Xuan qi, easily pierced Tan Jian's chest!

"You....."

Tan Jian wanted to say something, but he could only stare, and couldn't speak a word.

Then Long Yu gave a heavy kick to Tan Jian and he directly fell on the ground, making a cloud of dust to fly upwards.

This nasty turtle finally died in the hands of Long Yu.

"Even when you were begging for mercy, your eyes reflected unwillingness and hatred, you seriously thought that I would be stupid enough to leave you alive to give myself future trouble?"

Long Yu said in a calm voice then drew out the sword from Tan Jian's body.

That light and long silver sword was a low-grade battle weapon, but Long Yu hadn't practiced fencing, so he couldn't display sword skills with it, he only used its sharpness to kill Tan Jian.

He looked up and saw Ling Han running towards him with a happy expression on his face.

As for Feng Yao, after Tan Jian was killed by Long Yu, she well knew that depending on her current strength, she alone was definitely not the opponent of Long Yu and Ling Han, so she displayed the agility type martial skill and decisively retreated fast and left the place.

"Brother, you leveled up!"

Ling Han laughed and stepped forward.

"Thanks to the brother once again."

Long Yu said. If Ling Han had not stopped pursuers in time, he couldn't have so smoothly entered into the Wudao seventh layer.

"Never imagined that body refining type martial skill could be so strong, it seems like I must considering learning one myself."

Ling Han said with a smile and lightly patted on Long Yu's shoulder.

"Different martial skills have different functions."

Long Yu shook his head and said: “In fact just now, if there was strength left in Tan Jian to fight with me, probably, it would have been me who was finally defeated because the body refining type martial skill consumes too much of Xuan qi from my body.”

Demon vajra cover, although was a strong defense type martial skill, but the consumption of Xuan qi was far greater than other martial skills.

To be honest, it could not be compared with defense type martial skills like Imperial rock, but Demon vajra cover could be bent down to cover the whole body, so it gave a better defense against martial skills like picking flowers falling leaves.

“Right, brother, Feng Yao escaped after telling me to relay her message to you.”

Ling Han put away the joyful demeanor and said in a serious tone: “Hua Yun and Hua Qing of Hanbing Sect has an elder brother named Hua Buxie, now you have killed Hua Yun and Hua Qing, be prepared to face Hua Buxie who will come for you to avenge his siblings!”

“Hua Buxie? What is his cultivation?”

Long Yu was surprised for a moment.

“It’s not clear, but Hua Buxie seems to be the strongest core disciple of Hanbing Sect!”

Ling Han said solemnly.

The strongest core disciple!

Long Yu could not help but think of the mysterious youth from Zhentian Sect, Bu Xing, he was also the strongest core disciple of Zhentian Sect.

As he thought so, Long Yu suddenly felt enormous pressure on him.

At present, if he faced Feng Yao, he could easily deal with her, but if he faced Bu Xing, no matter how many battle strategies he formulated in his mind, none could possibly ensure his victory.

The cultivation of the opposite party had already reached an immeasurably profound level, to the point that he was able to suppress even the law enforcement Elder.

“Feng Yao can simply kill me by informing Hua Buxie that I killed Hua Yun and Hua Qing!”

Long Yu secretly cursed in his heart!

“Brother, you don’t need to worry too much. Hua Buxie cannot be too rampant and it should be impossible for him to come to our sect to kill our people.”

Ling Han looked at Long Yu’s complexion and thought that he was frightened and said just to comfort him: “With your talent, as long as you keep on

practicing in the sect, surmounting the power of that Hua Buxie should be no problem.”

Long Yu heard it, and at that time, he actually didn't know whether to laugh or cry, this brother was really.....

However, the consoling words of Ling Han actually touched Long Yu's heart and he somewhat agreed as well.

Depending on the 'Nine hidden Dragon mark', sooner or later, he would be able to surmount the power of Ling Han and he also believed that it won't take long for that day to come!

“Yes, I have just now heard something interesting, it is said that best quality ancient ginseng has actually appeared this year, now, the royal princess and her royal guards have entered the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest to obtain it.”

Ling Han spoke thoughtlessly as if he was narrating a minor matter, for him, the appearance of the best quality ancient ginseng was like a natural phenomenon for him, and it was obvious that he had nothing to do with it.

However, after listening this, a plan actually appeared in Long Yu's mind!

Chapter 42 Boots resonance (Part 1)

The best quality ancient ginseng was two levels higher than the top-grade ancient ginseng!

“Nine hidden Dragon mark can even shield the exudation of Lingqi from the ancient ginseng, perhaps, I can try to grab the best quality ancient ginseng, but without being discovered by the members of the royal clan.”

There was a twinkling ray of light in the eyes of Long Yu, but the problem was that the people of the royal clan were quite formidable, for example, that metal armored youth. It was very difficult to understand his cultivation level and was simply unfathomable.

To seize food from the mouth of the royal clan, it was only Long Yu who could be so daring, but the enticement of the best quality ancient ginseng was too big to resist. If Long Yu obtained the best quality ancient ginseng, then he could easily jump onto the Wudao eighth layer.

“Brother, what are you thinking?”

Ling Han, who stood on his side, asked with curiosity.

“Oh, nothing.”

Long Yu smiled and shook his head: “Right, brother, you first take this long sword, it’s such a pity that Tan Jian’s battle weapon defense armor was damaged, otherwise it was actually a very good defense battle weapon.”

He said while handing over the sword of Hua Qing to Ling Han.

“Brother, what are you doing?”

Ling Han’s complexion slightly changed, and he refused to accept it: “You have obtained it after a severe fighting, how can I take it? I think this sword suits you better!”

“Well.”

Long Yu nodded.

Now, he could finally determine, it was definitely worth to become friends with Ling Han.

According to Long Yu’s character, he was extremely careful to make friends, and since it was hard to fight the temptation of a battle weapon, he finally knew that Ling Han wasn’t the greedy type and didn’t seek after all the possible ways of having small profits wherever possible, which also showed that he had a deep sense of loyalty and obligation!

Not only Long Yu was testing Ling Han, just now, Ling Han was also testing Long Yu?

When Tan Jian lowered his profile to beg for mercy, then Ling Han didn’t say anything, and obviously hoped that Long Yu would kill him. If Long Yu could achieve it then Ling Han would obviously be very disappointed in him!

But now, the knot of friendship between these two had obviously strengthened much more.

“Right, brother, where did that best quality ancient ginseng appear?”

Long Yu pretended that he asked it inadvertently.

“You look towards the west.”

Ling Han did not give much thought to it, he just thought that Long Yu asked it out of curiosity, and he pointed his finger towards the west direction: “Do you see the hills there? It is said that the best quality ancient ginseng grows on that mountain peak, 1000 feet above the ground.”

Above 1000 feet!

Long Yu gave a look towards the west, and saw about a hundred miles away, there was a towering steep mountain, as straight as a sharp knife!

“Some people felt the presence of rich Lingqi under the hills then went back and informed the royal clan.”

Ling Han said with a smile: “It is very difficult for a common man to surmount a height of 1000 feet, to obtain the best quality ancient ginseng.”

1000 feet was indeed very high, and it seemed that if anyone wanted to obtain the best quality ancient ginseng, then he would have to spend a lot of time and

effort.

The good news was that the royal clan had not yet arrived.

Long Yu's sharp mind was working fast. He could at least have a first look of that place.

Of course, he would not bring Ling Han with him, snatching the best quality ancient ginseng from the hands of the royal clan was going to be dangerous mission, if this matter was exposed, it could lead to serious consequences!

Whether it was for the sake of his own safety, or for the sake of Ling Han, Long Yu thought it was best for just him to try and obtain the best quality ancient ginseng.

But now, separating from Ling Han was going to be quite difficult, in order to not make him suspicious, Long Yu didn't want to make any haste, he could only take things further one step at a time.

"Brother, let us look around everywhere and search for ancient ginsengs, since from the time we have entered the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, it seems you have no harvest."

Long Yu said.

"Where are these words coming from? My harvest so far is not small, that black lock battle weapon of Liu Mingxuan is very easy to use!"

Ling Han laughed.

“But we are in the Royal Ancient Ginseng forest and it doesn’t seem justified if you don’t get an ancient ginseng. Brother, let’s go and search for them.”

Long Yu said then chose a direction and moved forward.

Ling Han also moved to keep up with Long Yu. Long Yu deliberately selected the direction of the west, where the best quality ancient ginseng was.

After some time, they suddenly smelled a slightly bloody breath and immediately became vigilant.

“Brother, there is a corpse!”

The corpse of a man, clad in the blue dress of a disciple of Zhentian Sect, was hanging from a tree and his stomach was cut open.

Seeing this scene, their complexions suddenly changed.

How could someone be so cruel?

“He has died not long ago.”

Long Yu decided to find the clues, he swiftly and fiercely looked around, and then he quickly found the clues.

“Brother, you look after this brother’s corpse, I will catch the culprit!”

As Long Yu finished these words, suddenly, he moved fast towards a direction to chase the murderer, without giving any time to Ling Han to express his idea on this decision.

Ling Han saw the decisive action of Long Yu to pursue the murderer. He actually wanted to kill the murderer with his own hands, the corpse of the disciple of the same sect was hanging from the tree in front of him, he really didn’t feel good about it.

Long Yu rushed out several miles, and now, he was confident that Ling Han couldn’t catch him up, and was secretly relieved.

However, his attention was fully focused on that person, whom he was chasing.

“It seems this person is a disciple of Qiansi Sect, after killing a disciple of Zhentian Sect, he robbed an ancient ginseng from him, and tried to absorb its Lingqi nearby, what a pity, he was discovered by me!”

The cold light flashed in Long Yu’s eyes: “Maybe I should make use of this guy to obtain the best quality ancient ginseng!”

However, the speed of the disciple of Qiansi Sect was actually in no way inferior to Long Yu!

Even if Long Yu displayed flickering wind step, and simultaneously accelerated his snow boots, but he was only able to hear the fleeing sound of the opposite

party in the forest, and throughout this chase, he wasn't be able to see the appearance of the opposite party!

Chapter 42 Boots resonance (Part 2)

“Blizzard boots, a battle weapon, the actual acceleration effect should definitely be more than this.”

Long Yu's eyes flashed brightly: “According to what old white once said, martial cultivators and battle weapon could connect with each other, and after interacting with the battle weapon, the effect definitely gets stronger!”

After thinking of this, he once again centralized all of his thoughts on the blizzard boots, and began the circulation of Xuan qi upon it, which slightly increased his speed.

This was not the first time Long Yu had done so, and each time he would feel his consciousness to get a bit closer to the blizzard boots, but he still couldn't fully interact with it.

At this moment, while facing an enemy he couldn't overtake, the potential of Long Yu was suddenly aroused.

Nine hidden Dragon Mark quietly released several mysterious black traces of light, and in the next moment, they wound up around the blizzard boots, and mysterious cold waves began to surge out of it.

Thump! Thump! Thump!

As if the sound of palpitation began to come out of the blizzard boots, as if it had a heartbeat, and suddenly, Long Yu's heartbeat actually superposed together with its heartbeat.

“This is conjunction!”

Long Yu immediately opened his eyes, he felt a strong mystical force coming out of the blizzard boots, and suddenly, his speed increased tremendously!

Along with the trembling of blizzard boots, Long Yu began to move in the forest like a streamer, leaving behind several afterimages, and that disciple of Qiansi Sect, who had been fleeing from him all this time, finally came into his sight.

He was dressed in a green dress, with prominent cheekbones and skinny face, deep eyes, and was a master of Wudao seventh layer!

“Inner disciples of Qiansi Sect who entered the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest were at most at the Wudao seventh layer, so this guy should be the last disciple of Qiansi Sect, who is at the Wudao seventh layer!”

Long Yu thought to himself, Xuan qi was constantly stimulating the blizzard boots to maintain a constant high speed!

The next moment, a burst of snow and ice came from the blizzard boots and rushed turbulently towards the disciple of Qiansi Sect!

Upon seeing that, he loudly cursed his bad luck. At that time, he actually wanted to manipulate his shadow to impede the pursuit of Long Yu, but suddenly, a burst of awe-inspiring ice came out from the blizzard boots, sprang towards him and instantly enveloped his entire body.

His speed, all of a sudden, was swiftly reduced down due to the encircling of his body by the swift ice waves!

“Resonance, is the first level of interacting with the battle weapon, and this resonance of the Blizzard boots has not only almost doubled my speed, but also released the waves of ice, which hindered the movements of the enemy!”

Long Yu’s heart was surprised, and in the next moment, his body, which was light like the breeze, took a twinkling step and finally caught up with the enemy!

“Zhentian charm, suppression!”

Long Yu saw the enemy, he tried to resist in the beginning, but suddenly, the Zhentian charm released out and completely suppressed him, even the flow of Xuan qi in his body was slowed down by 70-80%.

Now, it was easy for Long Yu to deal with an opponent of Wudao seventh layer.

Facing the Zhentian charm coming from the other side, the enemy had no choice left but to surrender, he was in no capacity to resist. For Long Yu, this was the feeling of absolute control over the opponent! It was hard to imagine how the might of Zhentian charm would be enhanced when Long Yu would get

further insight into the world laws.

Long Yu raised his hand, the effects of the Zhentian charm increase once again and that disciple of Qiansi Sect almost lost the ability to resist, his skinny face was filled with the color of shock and panic.

Long Yu was also at the Wudao seventh layer then how could he be so formidable?

The Qiansi disciple couldn't figure out how this happened!

"Take it easy, I will not kill you, I just want to make a deal with you."

Long Yu faintly smiled and said.

"A deal?"

The man's voice sounded hoarse, he asked this with some doubts.

"I want you to help me get something then I can consider sparing your life, so what do you say, this deal is fair, right?"

Long Yu said.

"Get what?"

The Qiansi disciple subconsciously asked.

“Best quality ancient ginseng!”

Long Yu said.

The complexion of that person suddenly changed: “Do you make to snatch that thing from the royal clan? It’s impossible!”

“What’s wrong, don’t you want?”

Long Yu lightly said: “Then I would have to kill you and go find someone else for the job.”

The complexion of that person sank, he was constantly feeling the heavy pressure of Zhentian charm upon himself, and he also knew well that he was not the match of Long Yu, so after a bit of thinking, in the next moment, he nodded his head once and agreed on this deal.

“I can try.”

He said.

“Well, then let’s go.”

Long Yu grabbed the man, and quickly displayed the flickering the wind step, and with his body light like the breeze, he moved towards the west direction and crossed dozens of miles.

Unfortunately, the resonance with his snow boots eventually stopped.

“This resonance with my battle weapon is only temporary, achieved with the help of ‘Nine hidden Dragon Mark’. I really want to resonate with my blizzard boots as and when I wish for, it seems that it will take some time to achieve that....”

Long Yu thought in his heart, while circulating the Xuan qi in the blizzard boots to maintain the speed and rush towards the destination. The enhancement and coordination with the blizzard boots was necessary and he would make every effort to soon establish a true conjunction with it.

Undoubtedly, speed was very important for a martial cultivator!

But, conjunction with the battle weapon never happened overnight and even Long Yu could only achieve it gradually in an orderly manner.

They quickly crossed the distance of over 100 miles, and finally, tall towering peaks appeared not far away from them.

Even when they were several miles away, they could still feel the rich Lingqi, transmitting from the best quality ancient ginseng, making them unable to stop from getting intoxicated.

“Best quality ancient ginseng is really extraordinary!”

Long Yu was convinced in his heart, closer to the destination, the calmer were

his thoughts.

Trying to snatch something from the hands of the royal clan was not an easy matter!

Separated by several miles, Long Yu was hiding in the bush, holding his sword against the neck of that disciple of Qiansi Sect, putting him under his firm control.

Then, he climbed to the top of a tall old tree and looked towards the bottom of the mountain peak.

Chapter 43 Best quality ancient ginseng (Part 1)

Under the straight steep mountain peak, two men wearing shining armor with good cultivation were sitting on the ground and apparently guarding the best quality ancient ginseng.

As for the other members of the royal clan, whether the royal princess or that metal armored youth, who had certain physical resemblance with Long Yu, had yet not come and must be on the way here.

“The best quality ancient ginseng contains greatly strengthened rich Lingqi, once picked, it will start exuding the Lingqi, thus the best time of consuming it should be right after it’s plucked.”

Long Yu thought to himself. He guessed, probably the members of the royal clan were waiting for other people to come and find the best quality ancient ginseng in the mountain and then take it directly from them.

That would give Long Yu an excellent opportunity to start.

“You can feel the position of the best quality ancient ginseng, right?”

Long Yu lowered his head and asked fiercely.

“I can, I guess.”

The disciple of Qiansi Sect nodded reluctantly: “That place is too high, and now, even if I control my shadow, I will be unable to pick the best quality ancient

ginseng.”

“How do you want to do it?”

Long Yu squinted and asked.

“Let me absorb the Lingqi from this ancient ginseng and if I can step into the Wudao eighth layer then it should be easy to pick the best quality ancient ginseng.”

That disciple of Qiansi Sect said in a low voice and his haggard eyes were moving astutely.

“Is it?”

Long Yu said loudly: “Since you are so useless, then go to hell!”

Voice down, Long Yu took the sword in his hand and immediately put it on the skinny neck of that Qiansi disciple and it immediately left a trail of blood on it!

Seeing this that disciple of Qiansi Sect was shocked and quickly said: “No wait! Let me try first.”

“You do not play any tricks, if I sense something off then I’ll kill you.”

Long Yu said with an indifferent look in his eyes, although the sword in his hand didn’t make any movement. But it was still kept horizontally on the neck of

that man.

That disciple of Qiansi Sect finally knew that Long Yu was not a fool opponent to be deceived so easily, so he would better first try to obtain the best quality ancient ginseng for his own safety.

“I must remind you first, the strength of the members of the royal clan is extraordinary, even if you obtained the best quality ancient ginseng, it is impossible to have an opportunity to absorb its Lingqi!”

The disciple of Qiansi Sect reminded him.

“You don’t need to worry about it, now hurry up!”

Long Yu said indifferently.

That man didn’t dare to be negligent and hastily manipulated his shadow and moved towards the steep face along the shadow of the ancient trees in the forest.

Long Yu put his long sword horizontally on the skinny neck of that man so that he couldn’t actually act unreasonably, and carefully observed the scene, and discovered that now in the evening and the setting sun illuminated the steep cliff on this side and was completely in the shadows.

This gave him the vanguard shadow that brought great convenience to their plan!

Hidden in the shadow of the setting sun, he manipulated the shadow and moved forward at a tremendous speed, his shadow quickly climbed up 50 feet high along the steep hillside.

“Not good, it’s too far, I cannot reach it.”

The disciple of Qiansi Sect said in a sinking voice. At the moment, his shadow controlling force had weakened to a certain extent, and now he was unable to control his shadow to move upward!

The disciple of Qiansi Sect could control his shadow, but there was certainly the distance limit. Moreover, the farther the distance, the shadow controlling force would be weaker. So now the motion of the shadow had become slow or sluggish

“Approach slowly and do not even think about play tricks, unless you want to die.”

Long Yu said in a cold voice. He had literally kidnapped that disciple of Qiansi Sect and both of them were moving slowly towards the cliff.

Along with their slow movement, the shadow was getting more and more near the best quality ancient ginseng, and under the setting sun, the shadow of the cliff helped in hiding them from the two men in shining armors, who were protecting the best quality ancient ginseng and were not aware of the situation.

Long Yu along with that disciple of Qiansi Sect bypassed the two shining armor guards and finally approached the face of the mountain. They arrived in a grove under the steep face of mountain.

“That’s enough.”

The disciple of Qiansi Sect was somewhat excited: “Can I take it?”

“Yes.”

Long Yu nodded.

“You must first remove your mysterious charm, otherwise my shadow can’t display enough power for the job.”

The disciple of Qiansi Sect said.

“You better know that I can instantly invoke this mysterious charm, so you better not try to pull something off.”

Long Yu said in a cold voice then pulled out the mysterious charm!

The disciple of Qiansi Sect obviously felt relieved due to the removal of the mysterious charm. Then within his body, the Xuan qi began to circulate rapidly, and suddenly, on the steep face of the mountain, the sound of some crushed stones falling spread!

“Who’s there!”

“Some people!”

Two shining armor guards immediately found an abnormality on the steep hillside, and for the first time, they raised their heads and looked toward the steep hillside.

They looked up and saw a black shadow, holding the best quality ancient ginseng in its hand. It was exuding rich Lingqi while the shadow was fleeing towards the distant place along the cliff!

“A disciple of Qiansi Sect, you are courting death!”

A shining armor guard shouted and rushed forward, then he moved sideways on the steep hillside, and went along the cliff, step by step up the mountain.

His fist blasted, the golden Xuan qi rumbled loudly, a burst of trembling fluctuations made a big hole in the cliff face, crushing the stones, which were blasted away and some heavy stones came billowing down the mountain.

However, the speed of the shadow of that disciple of Qiansi Sect was very fast, even the shining armor guard, who was at Wudao ninth layer, couldn't overtake.

Just at that moment, the shadow quickly moved on a steep hillside with the best quality ancient ginseng and suddenly hid itself inside the dense grove under the cliff.

“The Lingqi of the best quality ancient ginseng is very rich and strong, but you want to rob it under our eyes by hiding, this is simply a wishful thinking.”

A shining armor guard sneered and said: “Chase!”

“Anyone who dares to touch our royal clan’s things must die without a doubt.”

Another shining armor weapons repair faintly said. He didn’t feel any movement in the forest, his entire shining armored form appeared about 100 feet away at a lightning fast speed but he still could not sense anything!

Chapter 43 Best quality ancient ginseng (Part 2)

If they didn’t find it sooner and the Lingqi was drained a lot before they finally took hold of it then they would certainly be punished.

In such case, it was almost impossible to let off the person who dared to steal the best quality ancient ginseng, even if this thief was Qiansi sect’s sovereign’s daughter.

They came into action and moved fast towards the direction from where the rich Lingqi of the best quality of ginseng was coming, but suddenly their faces changed

As they reached halfway while chasing the culprit, suddenly the exudation of the Lingqi from the best quality ancient ginseng disappeared.

Their complexions paled gradually. The exudation of rich Lingqi from the best quality ancient ginseng didn’t only gradually become weaker, but unexpectedly disappeared completely, even the slightest of its Lingqi couldn’t be sensed.

“It was eaten?”

But they were not convinced about it, because even in the case of it being swallowed by a person, the rich Lingqi would definitely not vanish completely all of a sudden like this!

So, the two guards rushed towards the direction from where the exudation of the rich Lingqi had suddenly disappeared.

In a while, a corpse of the disciple of Qiansi Sect appeared before them lying on the ground, but they didn't see the trace of the best quality ancient ginseng.

“What's going on?”

They looked at each other's faces with confused expressions on their faces.

The disciple of Qiansi Sect robbed the best quality ancient ginseng, and now he was lying dead on the ground before them, and the best quality ancient ginseng was nowhere to be seen, the two were really perplexed.

“Quickly, look everywhere!”

Actually, they were not willing to give up their efforts to get back the best quality ancient ginseng, they immediately went into action, but this time, they did it separately.

However, they couldn't feel the rich Lingqi of the best quality ancient ginseng

so how could they possibly look for it?

After they left, not far away from the corpse of the disciple of Qiansi Sect, a figure flashed through the grove and instantaneously vanished in the bushes.

This figure was Long Yu.

The best quality ancient ginseng was obtained by that disciple of Qiansi Sect but then he tried to play tricks on Long Yu by using his martial skill. Long Yu brought him directly under heavy suppression of the mysterious charm and with just one punch, his heart was crushed.

Then, Long Yu immediately activated 'Nine hidden Dragon Mark' which instantaneously and fully covered up the rich Lingqi of the best quality ancient ginseng.

At that time, two shining armor guards were not far from him, and if Long Yu had tried to escape from there, at that time, he could have been discovered by the sound, so he quickly hid himself in the nearby bushes.

As the two shining armored guards couldn't feel the rich Lingqi of the best quality ancient ginseng, they began to search for it in other places separately.

Long Yu seized this opportunity and sneaked off.

In a while, with cloudy looks on their faces, the two guards returned to the same place from different directions.

“Did you find it?”

One of them asked.

“No.”

Another man shook his head: “To be able to instantly make the rich Lingqi of the best quality ancient ginseng disappear like this, I think the only possibility is that it was been stored into a rare space treasure.”

“Space rare treasure.”

The man’s complexion became quite unsightly: “A person who has a space rare treasure is considered a great personality even in the Imperial City. I never thought one would actually appear here

They had no choice but to wait at that place and not long after, the young royal princess and her guards finally arrived.

After hearing what happened, the metal armored youth’s complexion suddenly changed: “Space rare treasure?”

A space rare treasure of this level was definitely not a simple matter!

However, a person who possessed space rare treasure would be considered extremely rich in the Imperial city. A best quality ancient ginseng was still not a good enough prize that one would put himself in the danger of offending the royal clan in order to get hold of it.

“Block all exits. When the disciples of Zhentian sect, Hanbing sect, and Qiansi sect are leaving, question them strictly and catch any suspicious person.”

The metal armored youth gave the order directly, there was a dark look on his face!

The best quality ancient ginseng, which belonged to the royal clan, now had been robbed by someone, so no matter whom the culprit was, he must pay the price for it!

.....

On another side.

When Long Yu got the best quality ancient ginseng, he immediately looked for a safe place to prepare himself to absorb the rich Lingqi from the best quality ancient ginseng, otherwise, if any delay was made in its absorption, then most of its rich Lingqi would drain unnecessary.

However, he didn't plan to absorb the rich Lingqi of the best quality ancient ginseng completely rather he decided to store up its Lingqi in 'Nine hidden Dragon Mark' temporarily.

“If I absorb the Lingqi of the best quality ancient ginseng completely, then surely I can attempt to reach the Wudao eighth layer, but so quick level promotion may easily lead to suspicion, so I should wait for now.”

After Long Yu made up his mind, he began to absorb the best quality ancient ginseng.

The rich Lingqi contained in the best quality ancient ginseng was ten times more in comparison to the Lingqi present in a top-grade ancient ginseng that he had absorbed some time ago.

Certainly, Long Yu wanted to promote himself from Wudao seventh layer to Wudao eighth layer, and the Lingqi required to do so was also ten times more than that contained in a top-grade ancient ginseng.

If not for this chance coincidence, Long Yu would not have been able to step into the Wudao eighth layer so early.

“Best quality ancient ginseng, absorption!”

Long Yu swallowed the best quality ancient ginseng and started to absorb its Lingqi. He simultaneously activated the ‘Nine hidden Dragon Mark’ to store up the majority of its rich Lingqi.

When Long Yu absorbed 10 % of the rich Lingqi of the best ancient ginseng, the Xuan qi began to revolve in his body meridians leading to an increase from his basic strength to 72,000 Jin, which was the ultimate boundary of the Wudao seventh layer.

“That’s enough for now.”

Long Yu stopped absorbing, opened his eyes and stood up!

At this moment, his strength was much stronger than before. Moreover, the 'Nine hidden Dragon Mark' also stored up the remaining 90 % of the rich Lingqi.

After leaving the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, he could start to absorb the remaining Lingqi of the best ancient ginseng stored up in 'Nine hidden Dragon Mark' to attempt and step into the Wudao eighth layer. He was really happy and eager to see the new transformation of the 'Nine hidden Dragon Mark'.

Chapter 44 mystery of life experience (Part 1)

Long Yu completed the process of the absorption of best quality ancient ginseng then he jumped down from the tree and looked for a deep pool. He casually threw the long sword low-grade battle weapon in his hand into the pool.

Afterward, he moved towards the place where he had separated from Ling Han.

“That long sword low-grade battle weapon is actually stained with the blood from the neck of Qiansi sect’s disciple, keeping it means inviting suspicion of the people, it is better to throw it away.”

Long Yu was not all bothered by discarding a battle weapon.

It was better to discard that low-grade battle weapon in comparison to losing his life at the hands of the members of royal clan, not to mention it was just a low-grade battle weapon, if it had been a top-grade battle weapon, Long Yu would not have discarded it without hesitation.

Soon, Long Yu finally returned to the place where he separated from Ling Han.

At that time, Ling Han had just become free after burying the corpse of the unfortunate Zhentian Sect’s disciple, who had met with his tragic death, and after waiting a little while, he saw Long Yu running towards him.

“Long Yu, how are you?”

Ling Han asked hastily.

“I couldn’t catch him instead I lost that long sword.”

Long Yu said in a heavy voice. He would certainly not say anything about the best quality ancient ginseng to Ling Han.

“Did you see clearly who that person was?”

Ling Han scowled: “Could it be that it was actually a disciple of Qiansi sect? Now in the Royal Ancient Ginseng forest, it seems only that princess of Qiansi sect is your opponent, however even if it’s her, there was no need for her to run from us.”

“It was a disciple of Qiansi Sect, his speed was very fast, but I don’t know who he was.”

Long Yu shook his head and said with regret.

He said this and Ling Han couldn’t certainly ask anything again, he just said: “Brother, now you have obtained three ancient ginsengs, so you may first step out of the Royal ancient Ginseng Forest and ensure your own safety.”

“Brother, earlier you helped me by stopping the pursuers, and thanks to that, I got enough time to absorb the top-grade ancient ginseng.”

Long Yu smiled shaking his head: “Now, how can I leave first? I will at least help you find the middle-grade ancient ginseng, I cannot say for sure about the top-

grade ancient ginseng, because the top-grade ancient ginsengs are not many in numbers in the entire Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest and we may be unable to find one. ”

“Good brother, I really haven’t misread you.”

Ling Han laughed.

They discussed a little about the trip and respectively looked for a big tree then climbed it up to rest for the night, and to be ready to start again the next morning to find an ancient ginseng.

.....

Ten days quickly passed.

They searched and soon found a middle-grade ancient ginseng, but until the last day, they didn’t even see the trace of a top-grade ancient ginseng.

“Forget it, absorbing a middle-grade ancient ginseng in Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest is enough to help with my breakthrough into the Wudao eighth layer. As for the top-grade ancient ginseng, I don’t have such extravagant demands.”

While walking towards the way to the entrance of Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, Ling Han said with a smile.

He thought that after returning to Zhentian Sect, he would attempt to reach the Wudao eighth layer, and if he would be successful in doing so, he could be

able to choose one of the core disciples of Zhentian Sect to challenge.

After a successful challenge, he would become a core disciple, and then, he could go to the Martial Court of Zhentian Sect and comprehend the best class martial skills!

For example, earlier, Feng Yun injured the right leg of Long Yu by using a martial skill called sky wave crossed, which was a best grade martial skill and its power was extremely terrific.

Similarly, if one established mastery over a best grade martial skill like sky wave crossed, then one should be able to break through the defense of the Imperial rock martial skill of Tan Jian.

Best grade martial skills were more powerful than the top grade martial skills.

“Young, this time you learned a lot, but also reached the Wudao seventh layer, and you were able to overcome even the masters of Wudao eighth layer. It seems that the chance for you to become a core disciple is just around the corner.”

Ling Han said with a smile.

“Perhaps.”

Long Yu nodded at will, but in the heart, he was actually thinking that challenging a core disciple was quite natural.

When he would finish the absorption of the Lingqi stored in ‘Nine hidden Dragon Mark’ then he would step into the Wudao eighth layer, and then, he would directly challenge Feng Yun!

When he first entered Zhentian Sect, he continuously defeated Feng Yang and Fang Kang, but just one move of Feng Yun hit his right leg and he was seriously injured, and since then, he harbored a deep hatred for him and he had already decided to give him a thorough payback.

Moreover, Feng Yun would also try to take away the ownership of the Feng can from the hands of his foster father, Feng Longsong, and Long Yu would certainly make the things much more impossible for him to achieve it.

“Yes, brother.”

Arriving at the outlet of Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, Long Yu suddenly remembered something and whispered into the ears of Ling Han: “Later, if the people of royal clan ask questions, you say I grew up together with you in Ling clan’s villa, ok?”

Ling Han grew up in Ling clan’s villa, located in a mountain village nearby Zhentian Sect.

When Ling Han heard these words of Long Yu, he was a little bit surprised: “What’s the matter brother, do you have any connection with the royal clan? I recently heard that the royal guards are searching for someone, but that should have nothing to do with you right?”

“Brother, frankly speaking, I don’t remember my life experience, but I feel that

it is somewhat related with that metal armored youth. If he knows my life experience, I fear, he will create obstacles for me.”

Long Yu explained.

“Relax, when the time comes, I will say that you and I are childhood friends and we grew up together in Ling clan’s villa.”

Ling Han smiled.

Long Yu then felt relieved, they soon arrived at the exit of Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest.

There were four metal armored royal guards at the edge of the door leading to the exit of Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, performing their duties.

That metal armored youth, having one third resemblance to Long Yu, also stood behind these four metal armored guards, and he was personally checking everybody without letting off anybody to pass easily!

When they saw Long Yu and Ling Han on the way, metal armored youth and the four metal armored guards simultaneously said:

“You two, stop!”

The metal armored youth coldly shouted.

This guy's cultivation was unfathomable, Long Yu and Ling Han certainly couldn't defy him, could only stop their footsteps.

"Zhentian sect disciples, Ling Han, Long Yu."

The metal armored youth looked towards both of them: "Looking at your cultivation, comparatively, you have improved a lot, especially you, Long Yu."

As he spoke, the metal armored youth looked at Long Yu with his sharp and piercing eyes: "From Wudao sixth layer, you have upgraded to Wudao seventh layer, it seems that you picked up many ancient ginsengs, state the truth!"

"Low-grade ancient ginseng, top-grade ancient ginseng, I obtained all of them."

Long Yu was self-poised and calmly said while looking into the eyes of that metal armored youth.

"Hmph."

The metal armored youth's eyes gave a disdain look, he moved forward and came in front of Long Yu, and squinted at him: "Your appearance, your name, reminds me of a waste!"

"Have we ever met before this?"

Long Yu narrowed his eyes and asked.

“Now, I am the one asking questions here.”

The metal armored youth said in a heavy voice: “You are not qualified to ask questions! So keep your mouth shut!”

“Adults must not lose temper like this.”

At this moment, Ling Han finally spoke out, smiled and said: “He is my childhood friend from my Ling clan’s mountain village, we have been together from infancy to adulthood, so he certainly cannot be the person who you are mistaking him for.”

“I also hope so, that waste should be unable to enter into the world of Wudao.”

The metal armored youth said proudly, then immediately wave his hand: “Search!”

It was just a word and Long Yu immediately understood that the opposite party actually wanted to uncover the best quality ancient ginseng.

Unfortunately, no matter how much these guys would search, they would never find the whereabouts of the best quality ancient ginseng!

.....

Soon, Ling Han and Long Yu were searched completely, but they did not find any suspicious item, so they were allowed to exit the Royal Ancient ginseng Forest.

Ling Han was relaxed, but Long Yu was thinking about the words that the youth had just said.

“..... a waste”

“..... That waste should not be able to enter the world of Wudao.....”

Putting all of this together, Long Yu was almost convinced that the words of metal armored youth were actually meant for him and he was surely related with the metal armored youth. There might be blood links between them!

Of course, that metal armored youth was only a guard of the royal princess and was not a person of the royal clan, so it was hard to guess which clan he actually belonged to. Long Yu didn't know whether he actually belonged to the Long clan or not.

While thinking so, Long Yu walked along with Ling Han and it didn't take much time for them to see Elder Yu, wearing a black robe and standing not far from the gate, waiting for them.

“Elder Yu.”

They took a few steps and reached to the side of Elder Yu.

“You came out, is the harvest good?”

Elder Yu glanced at the two and smiled. He clearly saw that the cultivation of these two men had improved, especially of Long Yu, whose cultivation had directly increased by one layer.

“My cultivation is also good, Elder Yu, when I return to Zhentian Sect, I would attempt to reach to the Wudao eight layer, and if I become successful in it, then I would prepare myself to challenge one of the core disciples.”

Ling Han said directly in front of Elder Yu, he had nothing to hide.

“Not bad!”

Elder Yu nodded his head, but didn't say anything, and continued to focus on the exit of Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, at that time, his complexion was not very good.

This time, a total of sixteen disciples of Zhentian Sect came to participate in Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, but until now, only two, Long Yu and Ling Han came out of Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest.

This year's casualties were many and seemed serious than that of the previous year.

It was not just the case of Zhentian Sect, even the case of the other two sects was almost the same.

So far as the case of Hanbing Sect was concerned, only Feng Yao as well as the other two disciples of the Wudao sixth layer had appeared, but in the case of Qiansi Sect, only disciple that came out was merely at the Wudao sixth layer.

The strongest four disciples had not yet made their appearances.

Just then, suddenly there came a very frightened cry for help from the side of the entrance to the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest.

“Help! Save me!”

A clear female voice with a tremendous fear, accompanied by a burst of panic footsteps, passed through the ears of the people waiting outside the gate of the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest.

Everyone, including Long Yu, looked towards the entrance of royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, and actually saw a young girl in black clothing, running towards them, but it was like the death was pursuing her, innumerable long needle shadows were chasing her down.

This young girl was actually Feng Qianqian, the beautiful disciple of Zhentian Sect.

“Stop!”

The metal armored youth, at the exit of Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, immediately spoke out loud but it had no effect on her.

Innumerable long needle shadows caught her up at breakneck speed, and the next moment, they pierced through the body of Feng Qianqian, and suddenly bleeding started profusely from her body.

Her eyes showed a desperate desire for survival, the long needle shadows that had pierced through her body, like snakes and scorpions, suddenly took her vitality.

Feng Qianqian's body fell on the ground, her body was immediately covered with dust.

When she fell down, a woman, wearing light yellow clothes, slowly paced out from the trees having a long bloodthirsty needle in her hands.

"It is the princess of Qiansi Sect."

Long Yu's pupils shrank a bit, and he thought that this Qiansi Sect's princess dared to kill a disciple of Zhentian Sect at the forest's exit, and it was clear from this incident she did not pay attention to the royal clan!

She didn't have any expression on her white face, as if killing a person was just an ordinary matter for her. She gradually moved towards the exit of Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest.

"Your Excellency, killing people at the exit of Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest does not seem quite appropriate."

The metal armored youth frowned and said.

As the princess's bodyguard, he had always been proud of himself, whenever he faced the disciples of the other large sects, he always behaved as if he was superior to them.

Now, however, while facing the Qiansi sect's princess, even if her cultivation was inferior to him but he could not show disrespect to her.

After all, he was certainly aware of her status in Qiansi sect, because her mother was actually the sovereign of Qiansi sect!

Chapter 45 Zhenling (Part 1)

Metal armored youth showed soft attitude while confronting Yu Qianning, but his attitude was sharply different while dealing with others.

Long Yu aside, watched this scene with his own eyes, and understood very well the importance of the strength in this world!

With strength, there was identity, even the members of the royal clan would be afraid to say anything!

“Surprisingly, Feng Qianqian didn’t die at my hands, but she died at the hands of the princess of Qiansi sect, Yu Qianning.....”

Long Yu thought in his mind.

Beside him, the two persons, Elder Yu and Ling Han slightly wrinkled their eyebrows, and looked at the dead body of the girl, who was a disciple of their sect, and was killed in front of their eyes. Both of them absolutely didn’t feel good about it, especially Elder Yu!

However, in the face of the armored youth and the princess of Qiansi Sect, both endowed with special identity and status, even Elder Yu had not the qualifications to stand up and say anything to them.

Otherwise, he would only suffer insult and shame in front of everyone.

Having lived for so many years, Elder Yu clearly knew that royal clan

represented big power and status.

Although, the dead body of Feng Qianqian was in front of him, but he had no way.

After noticing the look in the eyes of Elder Yu, suddenly, Long Yu's heart was filled with the desire to gain strength.

Whatever might be the reason, at least Elder Yu, old white and old black, all of them, had been good to him, and from this point of view, Zhentian Sect was already a home for him and was actually even more intimate than his home in Feng clan!

“The royal clan has insulted us, it will have to pay back a hundred times more in the future!”

Long Yu set a firm resolve.

Yu Qianning didn't say anything to the metal armored youth, she just walked out of Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest.

As she came out, she looked at Long Yu and Ling Han with a touch of contempt in her eyes: “You two, your strengths are quite pleasing to the eye, I will wait for you in the seven sects competition and under the glaring eyes of the people, I will kill both of you. Let everyone know that my Qiansi sect is the strongest of all the seven sects of Tang state!”

These words were extremely arrogant, extremely proud, and not only aimed at Long Yu and Ling Han, but also against Feng Yao of Hanbing Sect.

Their complexions changed and looked quite unsightly, this Yu Qianning was too arrogant, right?

Seven sects competition was a martial arts competition among all the seven big sects of the entire Tang State and it was held once in every five years, in which, all leading disciples of these sects participated, such as the disciples of Zhentian Sect town or Hanbing Sect, *etc.*

This Yu Qianning, although was very strong, but compared with the strong experts, who would participate in this competition, her strength was not enough.

“Brother, when is the seven sects competition scheduled to be held?”

Long Yu inquired in a soft voice.

“After six months, seven sects competition will be held in the Imperial City of Tang State.”

Ling Han clenched his fist and said, with a look of intense anticipation in his eyes.

Seven sects competition was the war among the strongest disciples of younger generation of the entire Tang State. If they were able to board the stage, then the whole attention of the Tang state would be on them!

Not only that, seven sects competition also held a special meaning for Ling

Han.

Of course, this special significance was difficult for outsiders to understand, Ling Han didn't even tell Long Yu about it, not because he didn't trust Long Yu but because he didn't find it necessary to tell him.

When Yu Qianning came out, in succession, there were five Wudao sixth layer disciples of Qiansi Sect who followed her out of Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest and the cultivation of all seemed to have improved a lot.

However, the disciples of Hanbing Sect and Zhentian Sect didn't come out from the forest.

Smart people knew that the reason for this was quite simple, the disciples of Qiansi sect followed the principle of kill on sight and the disciples of the other two sects had basically been killed off in the forest!

Seeing this, the complexions of Elder Yu and Elder of Hanbing Sect became very ugly.

"Qiansi sect, I will truthfully report this to my sect's sovereign, goodbye!"

The Elder of Hanbing Sect said these words, and along with Feng Yao and other surviving disciples, turned and left the place, but he didn't forget to threaten before leaving.

"Time is up, I don't think anyone else is going to come out..... we should go."

Elder Yu sighed and turned around to depart with Long Yu and Ling Han.

In total sixteen disciples of Zhentian Sect came, but in the end only two of them survived, and the third surviving one was killed by Yu Qianning of Qiansi Sect.

This matter, Elder Yu would definitely convey to the sovereign of Zhentian Sect, he would never let off Qiansi Sect so easily.

.....

Long Yu and Ling Han rode the horses and while following Elder Yu, they left Royal Ancient Ginseng city.

“Hurry up, increase the speed.”

Elder Yu urged the two, as if he had an ominous premonition.

Needless to say, besides Elder Yu, Long Yu also vaguely felt an unusual atmosphere. The killing of the disciple of Zhentian Sect by Yu Qianning at the exit of Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest seemed absolutely deliberate!

Three horses were galloping in the vast prairies, but when they reached almost halfway, suddenly there came a hurricane blowing from behind them.

“They are coming, you go separately, at this time, you must return to Zhentian Sect and tell the matter to our sovereign!”

Elder Yu said with a dignified look on his face, although, his face was hidden under a black robe, but his voice sounded incomparably firm and resolute.

“Elder Yu, what about you?”

Ling Han didn't understand what he meant, could not help but asked aloud.

“Pursuers are coming to sweep us clean, you go quickly!”

As Elder Yu's voice fell, he shot both his palms in the air, sending waves of Xuan qi towards the two horses and whipped on their buttocks.

Suddenly, the two horses picked up speed as if they were going all out and fleeing to save their lives, making them to go farther and faster very quickly, in a short time.

Soon, Elder Yu heard insidious waves of laughter behind him, and soon, swift winds with hurricane came rushing from behind.

Chapter 45 Zhenling (Part 2)

“Ha ha ha. You want to escape, but do you actually think you can?”

In the big laughter, three figures directly appeared from the hurricane, and one of them turned towards Elder Yu and the other two respectively chased after Long Yu and Ling Han.

“Men of Qiansi Sect, move fast!”

Long Yu saw it and instantly understood everything, and immediately said to Ling Han.

“How do they dare to do such a thing?”

Ling Han was shocked a bit. He couldn't imagine that the men of Qiansi Sect would unexpectedly dare to resort to such action, and would attack them right after leaving the Royal Ancient Ginseng forest. They would try to kill them without taking the fact into their consideration that such action on their part might provoke war between both the sects?

“With the backing of the royal clan, why can't they dare to do so?”

Long Yu had guessed a little, and his guess was correct, that perhaps, there was the involvement of royal clan in this matter.

Ling Han's face suddenly sank down: “So to say, just now, that Yu Qianning said that she would kill us in the seven sects competition, but in fact, this was actually just to distract us, so that they can catch us off guard in case we are unprepared.”

When Long Yu heard these words from Ling Han, he came to the conclusion that this fellow apprentice was not actually a fool.

However, now thinking about all these things were of no use.

Two strong men of Qiansi Sect were chasing them in the vast prairies, and unexpectedly their speed was more than the speed of their horses.

“These two men seemed to have exceeded Wudao ninth layer, and their levels seemed to be at par with that metal armored youth, we will never be their opponents.”

Long Yu thought in his mind and looked at the enemies, who were coming closer at a lightning speed. At that time, complexion of his face was not quite good.

If this continued, he and Ling Han would be overtaken sooner or later.

However, at this point, a frightening heavy pressure was released from the body of Elder Yu, and instantaneously proliferated all around the atmosphere, and immediately, it completely enveloped the two men, who were chasing Long Yu and Ling Han.

“Zhentian hand print, Zhenling, now!”

A vigorous powerful voice of Elder Yu resounded in the air, and with the move of Zhentian hand print, a heavy repressive world law, in the shape of a big shadow hand print, pervaded throughout the surrounding.

With the move of Zhentian hand print, the big shadow hand print, with each of its finger as the size of a human being, Elder Yu suddenly slapped his palm out, containing enough repressive force to flatten dozens of people at once!

There was a surge of suppression everywhere in the atmosphere, and it resulted into an instant cohesion, since the power of the big shadow hand print, all of a sudden, suppressed the three enemies.

“You wanted to chase us, first try and overcome this!”

Elder Yu shouted loudly, he didn’t come into any action, but he simply swept away his Zhentian hand print Zhenling, and the heavy suppression enveloped the pursuers from behind and dragged them from behind, stopping them from chasing Long Yu and Ling Han.

Although, it was only a shadow of big hand print, but its pull was so powerful that it dragged the chasers to fly up!

“What is this martial skill?”

Long Yu turned his head to look back, and could not help but feel a shock in his heart. The cultivation of Elder Yu was unfathomable, and he could actually congeal such a big hand print, not just that, he could also use heavy suppression, which was more profound than that of his Zhentian mysterious charm.

“No, this is not a martial skill, this is Zhenling!”

Ling Han and Long Yu were riding side by side, there was some excitement in his voice: “A cultivator above Wudao ninth layer is able to condense the Zhenling, once one becomes able to communicate with the world! After congealing the Zhenling, one can step into other level, and then no matter how strong these people of Wudao ninth layer actually are, they can’t beat the strong masters who have congealed Zhenling!”

Long Yu listened to it, but in his heart, he thought, did this Zhenling thing really work?

A master of Wudao ninth layer needed to congeal Zhenling to enter into the other level!

“The congealed shape of Zhenling is not the same for everyone, the Zhenling of Elder Yu is based on Zhentian tactics and can congeal the Zhentian hand print, and that’s how he is able to release more profound power of the repressive world law.”

Ling Han continued.

“Zhenling was really amazing.”

There was a shining look in Long Yu’s eyes.

But the situation immediately changed, and their hearts began to stumble.

“Old man, since you want to die, we will first help you out!”

The three strong masters of Qiansi Sect were powerful enough even when they were facing the Zhentian hand print, so they unhurriedly surrounded him up.

Then, three human shaped shadows congealed behind the three men. Each of these had a gloomy strange aura and they instantly confronted the Zhentian huge hand print of Elder Yu.

“Unexpectedly, they can also use Zhenling!”

Long Yu saw this, and clenched his teeth, perhaps Elder Yu was not the match of these people and this was a deliberate ambush, so it was easy to consider that they had already taken into account the strength of Elder Yu.

“Brother, we should escape quickly!”

Long Yu said and pulled the reins of his horse to make it run faster.

Since Elder Yu was fighting for them to gain time, so he would definitely live up to the expectations of Elder Yu.

Ling Han’s face was full of unwilling color, but soon, Elder Yu and the three figurative statues disappeared from their sights, so they turned and dashed away on their horses.

“If anything happened to Elder Yu, I, Ling Han will remove Qiansi Sect from the map of this world.”

There was a hideous color on his face. Not just him, even Long Yu also felt the same.

But now, they were too weak to stay there, because staying there was no different than courting death!

They must go back to Zhentian Sect and report everything to the sovereign!

Chapter 46 Nine Hidden Dragon Fist (Part 1)

Long Yu and Ling Han moved separately, and all the way rode on the horses in the direction of Zhentian Sect.

After seven days, Long Yu finally returned to the entrance of Zhentian canyon.

Elder Yu resorted to using Zhenling and fought for enough time to allow them to flee to Zhentian Sect.

After arriving in Zhentian canyon, finally he was safe.

“Long Yu, you’re back!”

When Long Yu arrived at the entrance of Zhentian canyon, he didn’t dismount, he saw a pretty figure running out from the gorge, her face was full with the color of joy, it was actually Liao Lele!

“It is you.”

Long Yu smiled and jumped off the back of horse.

“Brother Ling Han arrived before you, we already know everything about the things happened in Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest.”

Liao Lele was extremely happy: “He has come back a day before. I didn’t see you with him and thought that you wouldn’t come back.”

Regarding this happy attitude of Liao Lele, Long Yu was certainly disinclined to pay any attention.

“That Qiansi Sect is really too hateful, but fortunately, our Zhentian sect’s sovereign went into action, and went to Qiansi ancestor to settle scores with them, he will definitely not let them off so easily.”

Liao Lele was brandishing her small fists. She was filled with righteous indignation regarding this matter.

“Sovereign went into action? That’s good.”

Long Yu nodded then scowled: “Have you received any news about Elder Yu?”

“No.”

Liao Lele’s face showed a gloomy look: “Yesterday, Old black went to find him, but we still haven’t received any news about him, perhaps…….”

The situation seemed quite ominous.

Long Yu secretly guessed. Elder Yu was alone and had been encircled by three enemies, so he had to depend on his amazing Zhentian hand print, Zhenling, and considering this, if he wanted to withdraw then it must not have been difficult.

But in order to stop these enemies from chasing down Long Yu and Ling Han, there was no way for Elder Yu to transmit his news.

“Boy, come up quickly.”

At this moment, old white's voice fell into Long Yu's ears, and he immediately turned his face towards the old white and nodded once. After greeting Liao Lele once, he went towards the peak of Zhentian canyon along the mountain road.

On the summit, he saw old white wearing a white robe, keeping his hands crossed behind his back. Bone chilling cold mountain breeze was blowing his hoary hair like a chaotic dance and was fluttering with his white gown, making him give the seemingly appearance of an immortal.

“Young fellow, very good, Wudao seventh layer.”

Old white said without looking, he just smiled and nodded once with a look of satisfaction on his face.

Long Yu stood not far behind him, he said in a sinking voice: “It's a pity, other fellow apprentices.....”

“I know.”

Old white turned back and waved: “You come here and sit down, I heard from that kid Ling Han that Hua Qin and Hua Yun of Qiansi Sect and Tan Jian, our strongest inner disciple, all of them collaborated to kill you, but were killed by you instead, is it true?”

“Yes, but at that time, they had a fight and were already quite injured.”

Long Yu thought and replied.

“Even if they were injured, your strength is enough and challenging a core disciple should not be a problem.”

Old white nodded with satisfaction. He didn't regret the death of Tan Jian rather he focused his attention on the talent of Long Yu. So long as Long Yu continued to grow up and become stronger at this rate, then he would be able to play much more important role in enhancing the prestige of Zhentian Sect compared to that Tan Jian.

“There are 108 core disciples in Zhentian Sect, and so long as you challenge and defeat one of the core disciples successfully, then you will be able to become a core disciple and will also be eligible to enter the Martial Court to select and practice super grade martial skill.”

To be able to practice a super grade martial skill had a great allure to it and Long Yu was not an exception.

But, now Long Yu didn't worry about the matter, but he just wanted to quickly absorb the stored rich Lingqi of the best quality ancient ginseng.

Once promoted to Wudao eighth layer, his 'Nine hidden Dragon Mark' would be able to have further transformation and it would not only increase his strength but also grant him a formidable martial skill!

Long Yu believed that the martial skill, which would be granted to him by the 'Nine hidden Dragon Mark', would be much more formidable than the super

grade martial skills of Zhentian Sect.

“Boy, I suggest you to challenge a core disciple with a rank after the hundredth rank, it should be relatively safe.”

Old white stroked his gray beard, narrowed his eyes and said.

“Old white, I want to challenge Feng Yun.”

Long Yu suddenly said in a confident manner.

“Feng Yun?”

Old white was suddenly surprised. Feng Yun was a core disciple of tenth rank, had incessantly practiced a super grade martial skill and his fighting efficiency was outstanding!

Before going to Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, Long Yu was seriously injured by just one move of Feng Yun, and now that he came back from Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, he suddenly wanted to challenge Feng Yun?

This was nothing but indulging in fantasy.

“Boy perhaps you don’t know that Feng Yun has already recovered from his injuries, and after practicing for the last few days, he has also stepped into the Wudao ninth layer.”

Old white said in a dignified tone: “You want to challenge him but I am afraid that you still lack strength. Also, the provision of the sect is that as the first challenge, one can’t challenge the top ten core disciples, so you will have to find another target to hit upon.”

Long Yu listened to it and narrowed his eyes.

As the first challenge to become a core disciple, he couldn’t challenge the top ten disciples, and this was the rule, but he could understand the idea behind it, if not, wouldn’t the top ten disciples be too busy in meeting the challenges from others?

The top ten core disciples were the basic foundation of the sect, and they devoted most of their time in practicing, instead of accepting the challenges from others.

“Such being the case, I would challenge the 108th core disciple.”

Long Yu was somewhat disappointed, shook his head and said.

Since he couldn’t challenge Feng Yun, then challenging anyone else was almost the same for him, so he decided to challenge the 108th core disciple, he was relaxed, now the chance of winning was bigger and the most important thing was time-saving.

“Good”

Old white nodded: “I will help you in proposing that, moreover, at what time you would like to challenge?”

“Seven days later.”

Long Yu said without hesitation.

Now, the Feng clan meeting was going to be held in about a month’s time, so he must become a core disciple before that and learn a super grade martial skill so that he would be able to beat Feng Yun in the Feng clan’s gathering.

Now, Feng Yun had set his foot in the Wudao ninth layer, and his fighting skill was also terrifying.

Long Yu must be well equipped with sufficient preparation.

Long Yu only had the martial skill granted by ‘Nine hidden Dragon Mark but even that might not be enough.

When the consultation with Old white was over, Long Yu went to discuss with Ling Han.

Ling Han told him that he was ready to begin his closed door training for seven days and would try to reach the Wudao eighth layer, and if he succeeded in doing so, then he would also challenge one of the core disciples with Long Yu.

They chatted for a while, and soon, Ling Han said goodbye and left to begin his closed door training.

Immediately Long Yu turned around to return to the bamboo room, and

prepared to absorb the rich Lingqi of the best quality ancient ginseng, stored up in 'Nine hidden Dragon Mark'.

Chapter 46 Nine Hidden Dragon Fist (Part 2)

The news that Long Yu was about to challenge the 108th core disciple spread fast like forest fire in Zhentian Sect.

“Long Yu has just crossed the threshold and joined the sect, and one after another, he has defeated Tan Yue, Han Jian, Feng Yang and Fang Kang?”

“Yes, and now he wants to challenge the core of disciple of 108th rank, named He Renyi!”

“Are you kidding me, he is just an outer disciple and actually attempts to challenge a core disciple?”

“This is called indulging in fantasy. He thinks that just because he went to Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest and came back alive, he will be able to become a core disciple?”

Numerous disciples of Zhentian Sect were talking about the challenge, but they weren't in favor of Long Yu.

However, Long Yu didn't pay any attention to the outlook of the other people about the challenge.

Now, he was fully concentrated on absorbing the stored rich Ling qi of the best quality ancient ginseng.

“To step into the Wudao eighth layer, I must work on expanding my heavenly arteries. If the heavenly arteries respective to Wudao seventh layer is like a point of contact with the world, then heavenly arteries respective to Wudao eighth layer is like a line of contact with the world.”

In the bamboo room, Long Yu concentrated on the practice, unceasingly quenching himself with the rich Lingqi of the best quality ancient ginseng.

The process of expansion of the heavenly arteries was not an easy process for anyone in the Wudao seventh layer, because the process of breakthrough became extremely difficult with each successive layer.

Even if it was a genius like Long Yu, it could not be achieved easily.

Therefore, he gave himself the reserve of seven days, and within seven days of time, however difficult it might be, he must break through to the Wudao eighth layer.

If a common person wanted to break through to the Wudao eighth layer, he would have to face untold hardships, and so long as he had enough Lingqi, achieving it in one go would not be difficult.

Under the support of the rich Lingqi of the best quality ancient ginseng, the heavenly arteries of Long Yu expanded unceasingly.

In this process, Long Yu felt that the contact with the world was getting more and more close, making him even more profoundly comprehend the suppression principle of Zhentian tactics, and it gradually expanded his meridians.

Moreover, the vital energy began to circulate through the meridians in his whole body, and as the impact of the rich Lingqi quenching became sturdier, his body would be able to hold the circulation of larger amounts of Xuan qi, but this was only the foundation of the boundary promotion of martial arts.

Only a stronger body could hold a stronger strength, but Long Yu had practiced demon tyrant form, so he didn't need to worry about it.

Until third day, early morning, Long Yu felt as if his heavenly arteries, all of a sudden, made a connection with the world, making him suddenly see the light, and compared with his time in the Wudao seventh layer, he could feel much more breath of the world.

Immediately, Xuan qi began to surge forward in his body and emerged in each and every inch of his flesh and blood rapidly, and his basic strength of 72,000 Jin increased to 120,000 Jin all of a sudden.

120,000 Jin was only sketchiness, and according to the accurate view, it was the strength of 120 fierce horses. This was the basic strength that all the masters of Wudao eighth layer generally used to have.

“Now, each and every punch will be equal to the strength generated by 128 dashing fierce horses.”

Long Yu opened his both eyes, and felt that the strength of his whole body was

surging up, as if an indomitable spirit just woke up inside him.

When Wudao eighth layer was compared to Wudao seventh layer, the disparity was actually enormous, when his strength actually went past the 100,000 Jin figure then the feeling itself was completely different.

Earlier, Long Yu had defeated masters of Wudao eighth layer like Tan Jian and others, but at that time, they were injured, so Long Yu was able to defeat them with comparatively less difficulty, otherwise, encircled by the three enemies of Wudao eighth layer, and if they were uninjured then he would surely have met his death back then.

“Wudao eighth layer finally achieved. Nine hidden Dragon Mark really started transforming.”

Long Yu lowered his head and looked at the ‘Nine hidden Dragon Mark’ on his chest.

He just felt a burst of hot breath as well cold breath from the ‘Nine hidden Dragon Mark’ and it instantly spread to all of his limbs and bones making his whole body to tremble suddenly.

Then, he saw that the black trace of lines were emanating from the ‘Nine hidden Dragon Mark’ and were becoming deeper, it could even make people feel that this breath was from the nether world itself.

“Activate!”

Long Yu felt the transformation of ‘Nine hidden Dragon Mark’ then he

attempted to activate it by using his Xuan qi, and immediately, a fearful great strength spread in all of his limbs and bones.

100,000 Jin!

The strength of 100 fierce horses!

After the transformation of 'Nine hidden Dragon Mark' was complete, he obtained the strength of 100,000 Jin, and it was ten times more than the strength earlier granted to during the last transformation.

This instant transformation took place in Long Yu's strength, however, most of his joy was not only that.

A best grade martial skill was deeply engraved in his mind, he was simply unable to forget about it even if he wanted to.

"So this is a best grade martial skill called 'Nine hidden Dragon fist' and the strength granted by it is much more than a super grade martial skill."

Long Yu indeed had great expectations from 'Nine hidden Dragon fist'.

Chapter 47 Intoxicated hell (Part 1)

The best grade martial skill, 'Nine hidden Dragon Fist'.

Of all types of martial skills, Long Yu knew well that low grade martial skills were the most common, and the middle grade and the top grade martial skills were stronger than the lower grade martial skills.

But super grade martial skills were the strongest kind of martial skills that Long Yu had ever seen, for example, earlier when Feng Yun displayed his sky wave cross, it was actually a super grade martial skill, and only core disciples were eligible to practice various super grade martial skills.

But, Long Yu had never heard about the best grade martial skills.

One could imagine how powerful a skill 'Nine hidden Dragon Fist' actually was.

"The Nine hidden Dragon Fist is divided into high and low, two techniques, and presently, I can practice the first technique, named 'Intoxicated hell.' As for the second technique, 'Awakening palm rebirth', I will have to wait until the next transformation of "Nine hidden Dragon Mark"."

Long Yu thought in his mind then scowled.

'Nine hidden Dragon Mark' passed on information to him that 'Intoxicated hell' was a best grade martial skill, but it had not given any hint regarding the second technique, 'awakening palm rebirth.'

“The second technique is always stronger than the first technique, but with current state of my strength, I can’t practice it. Is it adequate to assume that there is one more level above the best grade martial skills?”

Long Yu thought for a moment but could not get to any conclusion so he was kind of forced to give up thinking about this topic.

Anyway, by that time, everything would be clear, and now, he only wanted to concentrate on practicing the first technique, ‘Intoxicated hell’.

“The Nine hidden Dragon Fist, black qi from the ‘Nine hidden Dragon Mark’ is released into the body meridians, and then in every fight, with the help of ‘Nine hidden Dragon Fist’, not only my speed will be extremely fast, but the power will also be enormous.”

Long Yu thought deeply about the introduction of ‘Nine hidden Dragon Fist’ and started to practice it according to the view related to the revolving of Xuan qi in the body.

While practicing ‘Nine hidden Dragon Fist’, the most important and most basic step was that he should be able to transform the ‘Nine hidden Dragon qi’ into his Xuan qi and control its circulation in his meridians.

Practicing the Nine hidden Dragon Fist was absolutely impossible for a common cultivator, only a cultivator with ‘Nine hidden Dragon Mark’ on his body would be able to practice it.

The ‘Nine hidden Dragon qi’ actually arose from the depths of the hell itself.

Now, Long Yu knew that earlier, when Feng Yun hit a punch on the ‘Nine hidden Dragon Mark’, then Feng Yun was actually rebounded and was seriously injured, in fact, he was hit by the sudden release of ‘Nine hidden Dragon qi’.

What a pity, then, Long Yu was unable to control the ‘Nine hidden Dragon qi’ at his own initiative, this was the reason that the injuries received by Feng Yu were not very serious, and he not only recovered from this injuries in mere one to two months, but was also able to reach the Wudao ninth layer.

“Nine hidden Dragon qi comes from the hell and enters in the rebirth cycle, it contains two different extremes, life and death. If I can completely comprehend ‘Nine hidden Dragon qi’, then I may be able to attempt to comprehend the ideal conditions of life and death.”

(Note-Ideal condition is basically mysterious mood.)

Long Yu’s eyes flickered, but unfortunately, he was now very far away from this level as well.

Regarding ‘Nine hidden Dragon qi’, even if he was able to transform it into Xuan qi inside his meridians, but in order to utilize it, it was necessary for him to learn about the condensation of ‘Nine hidden Dragon qi’.

Only after condensing ‘Nine hidden Dragon qi’, he could begin to comprehend the ideal conditions of life and death!

“The Nine hidden Dragon Fist, the fist technique, stance, if ‘the Intoxicated hell’ was idea condition of life and death work together then even a fist would be enough to decide someone’s life and death.”

According to the introduction of 'Nine hidden Dragon Fist', Long Yu sent Xuan qi in his body meridians, and immediately there spread a surge of 'Nine hidden Dragon qi' out of the mark and it began to circulate throughout his body.

"Intoxicated hell, congeal!"

Long Yu clenched his right fist, and suddenly, a burst of 'Nine hidden Dragon qi' condensed on his fist, making his fist being covered in a fuzzy black fog, and it looked awe-inspiringly overbearing.

Long Yu shot out a punch into the thin air, and immediately, the Nine hidden Dragon qi condensed on his fist shook the surrounding air, and instantly, a terrifying air current began to curl up and rushed forward.

"Thanks to the 'Nine hidden Dragon Mark' on my chest, I can actually use this 'Nine hidden Dragon Fist' at will, but now, the display of these fists are only at the beginner level."

Long Yu thought in his heart.

Any martial skill, once achieving its Xiao Cheng level, one could show its might, and if achieved its Da Cheng level, one could show comparatively more power than that of the Xiao Cheng level. But after reaching the peak level, there would be a transformation and one could display more power in comparison to previous two levels, however after achieving the perfect level, the might would be terrifying and simply unpredictable.

The first technique, 'Intoxicated hell', of 'Nine hidden Dragon Mark' was

naturally like that as well.

“Once I achieve Xiao Cheng level, ‘the Intoxicated hell’ can let my speed and strength increase by multiple times. Using the strength of 200,000 Jin, after activating the ‘Nine hidden Dragon Mark’, even my average punch should be able to beat a common master of Wudao ninth layer.

In Long Yu’s eyes, there emerged a strong self-confidence, and at last, he gained some sense of security.

Considering the martial strength was actually the dignity in this world, masters at the Wudao ninth layer stood at the peak of mortals. As for those with their cultivation level above the peak Wudao ninth layer, the congealment of Zhenling was necessary, and many masters of the various sects and royal clan had already achieved such level and their cultivation level had also exceeded the imagination of mortals.

If “Intoxicated hell’ is practiced to the Da Cheng level, then a punch will be able to make opponents see the road to hell, inducing the fear of death, to deter their minds with extreme fear.”

Long Yu was determined to practice ‘Intoxicated hell’ to the Da Chen level within the next four days, and as a result, even while facing Feng Yun, there would be a certainty of his victory.

To make the opponents sense the fear of death, he would first have to himself sense the fear of death by putting himself into a near-death situation, and that was the only way to be able to maximize the power of ‘Intoxicated hell’.

Chapter 47 Intoxicated hell (Part 2)

However, regarding this thing about sensing the fear of death, Long Yu already had profound experiences like these, being the strongest hitman in his previous life, he had faced hundreds of thousands of times life and death experiences which had already made him accustomed to life and death scenarios!

Long before the awakening of 'Nine hidden Dragon Mark', Long Yu remembered that even when those belonging to the tribe of "descendants of the dragon" wanted to comprehend the 'Nine hidden Dragon Fist', then they must go out for a long time to have innumerable life and death experiences, then only they were able to successfully reach the Da Cheng level of this move.

But now, all kinds of past experiences helped Long Yu in progressing rapidly in his practice of 'Intoxicated hell'.

After four days, he reached the Da Cheng level of 'Intoxicated hell'.

Now, Long Yu's random fist could even melt the road to hell, making 'Nine hidden Dragon breath' to envelop the opponent, and ultimately, it could frighten the opponent by inducing extreme fear in their mind.

In addition to that, his fist would have the strength of fierce horses that even a Wudao ninth level master like Feng Yun would absolutely be unable to resist.

"However, this 'Nine hidden Dragon Fist' is now my strongest trump card, a last resort, it is better not to show it in front of other people unless it's essential."

Long Yu fully realized the hidden strength of 'Nine hidden Dragon Fist', if not absolutely necessary to use it, he would never use it in front of anyone.

Who would use an axe to kill a chicken?

By this time, the seven days time, as agreed before, had finally crossed.

"It's time to challenge the core disciple of 108th rank"

Long Yu got up and went out of the bamboo room.

.....

Zhentian Sect, Resorting to violence field.

Resorting to violence field was the fighting place for the disciples. Moreover, it was also the place where fighting was held between a challenger disciple and a core disciple in order to qualify for the ranks of a core disciple.

Generally, resorting to violence field wouldn't have a lot of people, because of its remoteness. It was situated in the second highest mountain peak of Zhentian Sect, and it needed a lot of effort for common people to climb it up. Today, however, the field of resorting to violence was crowded, as much as thousands of disciples of Zhentian Sect came here to watch the fights.

Because today, in the resorting to violence field, a total of three people were to challenge the core disciples, and one of them, had challenged Feng Yun, a

core disciple of 10th rank.

The top ten rankings of core disciples had not changed for the last six months, this time, could the challenger succeed?

In addition, Long Yu and Ling Han challenged 108th and 107th core disciples, and it had also captured the attention of many people.

Of course, regarding Long Yu, many people came to laugh at him, but as far as Ling Han was concerned, many people had high expectations from him.

After all, Ling Han was like the prestige of the inner disciples, unlike Long Yu, who had gained a notorious reputation in the sect in such a short time.

In front of everyone, as the spectators had anticipated, a solemn man dressed in white, paced through the entrance of the resorting to violence field.

“Yang Tiancuo, ranked 13th core disciple, he is here!”

“Sure enough, Yang Tiancuo wants to challenge ranked 10th core disciple, Feng Yun!”

“He has stayed at the 13th rank for nearly a year, perhaps by challenging Feng Yun, he may succeed in stepping into the top 10 core disciples.”

“That is but actually uncertain, because earlier, Feng Yun was at Wudao eighth layer and was still able to become a core disciple of 10th rank. Now he has stepped into the Wudao ninth layer, and his true strength can rival the top five

core disciples.”

“You misjudge the top five core disciples. The top five core disciples have already congealed the Zhenling, so a Wudao ninth layer master like Feng Yun is no match for them.”

Resorting to violence field was filled with voices, everyone was discussing about the upcoming fights!

However, that white robed solemn man, Yang Tiancuo, who entered the resorting to violence field, didn't hear the voices of the people, just maintained his walking pace, and calmly walked towards the centre of the field.

After arriving in the centre, he looked up and said.

“Feng Yun, I have arrived.”

There was a hint of indifference in the voice of Yang Tiancuo.

“Ha ha ha ha!”

A haughty laughter arrived from the top of the stand, and along with this laughter, a man dressed in white, lightly walked towards the center of the resorting to violence field.

This man, although was laughing, but his personal appearance was actually incomparably light, like an elegant gentleman, without a single tinct of disgust around him.

He was Feng Yun.

Since Feng Yun was blasted away like a ball by Long Yu ball near the entrance of the Martial Court after being attacked by ‘Nine hidden Dragon qi’, and due to that, he suffered internal injuries and had to rest for two months to recover completely.

And this time, he had already entered the Wudao ninth layer, so his strength also reached the next level.

“Waste Long Yu, I will definitely cut you into pieces.”

Remember the pain he had to experience for the last two months, Feng Yun developed a deep hatred for Long Yu, but on the surface, he didn’t show his anger, instead smiled slightly, it could be said that his performance was very elegant.

Feng Yun wanted to cut Long Yu to pieces, but at that moment, he and Ling Han were together and sitting in a corner of the resorting to violence field to watch the fight.

“Core disciple rank tenth, Feng Yun, it’s usually difficult to get to see him like this.”

Ling Han squinted and said while looking at Feng Yun across the field.

“It seems he has really stepped into the Wudao ninth layer, there is major

change in his strength.”

Long Yu nodded and said.

If Feng Yu was still at the same strength that he had at the time of the fight near the entrance to Martial Court, then Long Yu was sure that Feng Yun would not be his opponent right now.

But, now that Feng Yun entered the Wudao ninth layer, he was definitely much stronger than before.

Yang Tiancuo and Feng Yun, both clad in white clothes, the former looked solemn and the latter looked refined, making quite a striking contrast.

One was the core disciple of 13th rank and other was the core disciple of 10th rank. The long-awaited collision between two strong disciples was soon going to begin!

Chapter 48 Injustice (Part 1)

In 'Resorting to violence' field, Yang Tiancuo and Feng Yun were confronting each other.

Feng Yun looked indifferent, there was a solemn look on Yang Tiancuo's face, obviously this battle was very important for him, moreover he already knew about that Feng Yun was very strong.

Suddenly, Yang Tiancuo's white appearance flashed, and before the onlookers could react, he appeared behind Feng Yun.

"It is a super grade martial skill, horizon is close!"

"His speed is too fast, the horizon must seem really close in the eyes of Yang Tiancuo."

"No, I think Yang Tiancuo has not yet reached the peak level, it seems he has only reached the Da Cheng level. But even so, it is enough to be proud of."

The voices began to arise from all around, but the situation was calm in the field.

Everyone saw Feng Yun raising his hand, the white wave of Xuan qi congealed suddenly, it actually bypassed his body and was shot towards Yang Tiancuo.

Super grade martial skill, 'Sky wave cross'!

‘Sky wave cross’ martial skill was not a one-off attack, but rather a means of manipulation of Xuan qi ripples, and if practiced to the Da Cheng level, one could even use it to attack and defend, then its might would really be incomparably terrifying.

At this moment, the ripples of Xuan qi congealed by Feng Yun attacked Yang Tiancuo and headed towards him in a flash.

The white Xuan qi ripples arrived closer and closer to Yang Tiancuo, but his facial color was invariable, and suddenly, in a flash, his personal appearance dodged to one side and appeared in the other direction.

‘Horizon is close’ was a super grade agility type martial skill, its acceleration effect was much more than that of flickering wind step.

In case of ‘Flickering wind step’, although it could upgrade the speed of the cultivator by 40%-50% with each enhancement of cultivation, and after reaching the Da Cheng level, even one flickering step was equivalent to almost 30 feet distance, but it was still inferior to ‘horizon is close’.

If ‘horizon is close’ was practiced to the Da Cheng level, one could travel short distances in a flash, and when it was required to pull off long-distance runs, such as in cases of chasing to kill or escaping from a very fast enemy, this martial skill was very advantageous and superior to other agility type martial skills!

“Horizon is close, this agility type martial skill is good, I will wait until I become a core disciple then I will definitely practice this martial skill.”

Long Yu was watching the fight and thought in his heart.

Now, Long Yu had a formidable fist technique called 'Nine hidden Dragon Fist', he had practiced a defense technique called 'Demon tyrant form', he just need a better agility type martial skill than 'Flickering wind step'.

Although 'Flickering wind step' was also a smooth to use agility type martial skill, but sometimes, it seemed powerless in front of fast enemies.

If he practiced 'horizon is close', a lot of things would become much simpler for him.

In the field, the situation was still the same, Feng Yun was unceasingly congealing Xuan qi ripples and attacking Yang Tiancuo, but Yang Tiancuo was relying on the extremely fast speed of a super grade agility type martial skill, horizon is close, to constantly dodge the attacks, and so far, he had not been hit even once.

Both were at the Wudao ninth layer, each of their attacks seemed as if 200 fierce horses were galloping at once in the field. It was quite a spectacle and the attacks would raise the cloud of dust in the center of 'resorting to violence' field, making it an intense battle.

Long Yu was observing the battle carefully and realized that whether it was Feng Yun or Yang Tiancuo, each of them had practiced only one super grade martial skill, other than that, they were using top grade martial skills, although they had practiced these top grade martial skills to the perfection level.

"It seems that it's too difficult to practice a super grade martial skill, so very

few people can practice two super grade martial skills.”

Long Yu thought about it while also thinking about his best grade martial skill, ‘Nine hidden Dragon Fist’.

Fortunately, when he was practicing ‘Nine hidden Dragon Fist’, he had the advantage of having innumerable past experiences from the times he was on the verge of death, as well as, he also received help from the ‘Nine hidden Dragon Mark’, otherwise, it would have been impossible for him to reach the Da Cheng level of a best grade martial skill in such a short time.

(Mystique – Low grade martial skill<Middle grade<Top grade<Super grade<Best grade

Hierarchy of practice levels: Beginner level<Xiao Cheng<Da Cheng<Peak<Perfection)

“If one wants to display the complete power of a martial skill, one must practice it to the perfection level. I don’t know how much time and painstaking efforts it will take to practice ‘Intoxicated hell’ to the perfection level

Long Yu secretly shook his head, even strength granted by the Da Cheng level of this best grade martial skill was already way more superior to the strength granted by a usual super grade martial skill, so temporarily, he did not need to think about promoting ‘Intoxicated hell’ to the peak level, perfection level was simply out of picture.

In comparison, by spending the same time and effort, he might be able to practice the super grade agility type martial skill ‘horizon is close’ to the Da

Cheng level. Then his battle efficiency would also increase enormously.

Watching this battle between two strong masters, Long Yu gained crucial benefits. This was also the reason why so many people had come to witness the fight between Feng Yun and Yang Tiancuo.

Soon, both Feng Yun and Yang Tiancuo released their respective ideal conditions that they had comprehended separately. The tyrannical ideal condition of repression proliferated all the way to the audience, most of which were mutually offset by each other, but the grasp of ideal condition of Feng Yun was obviously stronger!

Finally, Yang Tiancuo's ideal mood of suppression was defeated by Feng Yun's ideal mood of suppression and Yang Tiancuo's stature fell heavily on the ground. The tyrannical suppressive force crashed into the ground and shook the entire field just like an earthquake.

"Feng Yun wins."

Long Yu narrowed his eyes while looking at Feng Yun from afar. After carefully observing this battle, he obtained some understanding regarding the battle strength of Feng Yun.

With the current strength of Long Yu, defeating Feng Yun should not be a problem, after all, Feng Yun had recently stepped into the Wudao ninth layer and had not yet gotten used to fully utilizing the true strength granted by the Wudao ninth layer.

"This time when I return to Yu Guan City, in addition to participating in the

competition held by Feng clan and helping foster father in preserving his position as the head of clan, I must also consider preparing myself for facing the experts of Tan clan and Qin clan..... so I must surely learn the agility type martial skill, horizon is close.”

Long Yu was clearly aware of his own situation, and therefore, for him, it was much more urgent to have the desire for strength before returning to Yu Guan City.

In the field, dressed in white clothes, Yang Tiancuo stood up reluctantly, there was still a stubborn and firm expression on his face: “This time I lost, but I will challenge you again.”

“I advise you to not waste time, once defeated, defeated forever.”

Feng Yun said lightly with a hint of contempt in his voice. Yang Tiancuo was just a 13th ranked core disciple and there was a considerable gap between their strengths, in fact the gap was so big that he didn’t even use half of his strength to beat Yang Tiancuo.

Chapter 48 Injustice (Part 2)

“That may not be necessary.”

Yang Tiancuo snorted and turned around to leave.

But Feng Yun did not leave, he jumped onto a nearby stand, glanced around

and said: “I heard that today, a waste is going to challenge a core disciple, why don’t I see that person’s shadow anywhere? Don’t tell me he got scared and ran away?”

As Feng Yun said these words, the audience burst into loud laughter.

Feng Yun approached the audience, a seat was opened for him and the audience respectfully asked him to have a seat.

This was one of the benefits of having great strength. With enough strength, anyone could win the respect of others, because in this world, the only the strong ones were worshipped!

In response to Feng Yun’s provocation, Long Yu did not say anything, he just continued to look at Feng Yun with a faint smile on his face.

A youth dressed in black clothes gradually stepped into the field after Feng Yun left. There was a dense and awe-inspiring smile on his face.

“Where is the guy who is going to challenge me?”

After looking all around, the youth in black clothes said in a horse voice with a disdainful look on his face: “That guy called Long Yu, hurry up and call him out, don’t waste my time.”

This youth in black clothes was actually the core disciple named He Renyi, whom Long Yu was going to challenge!

“Brother, you have to be careful of that He Renyi.”

Long Yu was about to go on stage. Ling Han patted on his shoulder and softly cautioned him: “Although his name is He Renyi, but in fact, he is actually quite malevolent and unjust! He has also practiced insidious and ruthless martial skills, earlier when he challenged a core disciple, he relied on sneak attacks to win the battle. Now, I am afraid he has practiced some deadly and much more sinister super grade martial skill, you must be careful.”

Mystique – He Renyi = To celebrate justice

“Ah, I see.”

Long Yu nodded.

He Renyi was at the Wudao eighth layer just like Long Yu, but there was a wide gap in their respective strengths.

If Feng Yun used only 50% of his strength to deal with Yang Tiancuo, then Long Yu probably won't even need to use 10% of his strength to deal with He Renyi!

Long Yu gradually walked towards the center of 'resorting to violence' field.

Along the way, all of the eyes were fixated on him, there were people doubting him, ridiculing him out loud, there were contemptuous looks on their faces and disdain in their eyes, but Long Yu was basically unaffected by any of it.

“Long Yu, you finally came out!”

He Renyi noticed the blizzard boots on Long Yu's feet, and his eyes suddenly shined: "In resorting to violence field, death is allowed, in case of any accident, you cannot blame me."

"The same words apply on you as well."

Long Yu said unemotionally.

Long Yu was carefully observing He Renyi and knew that he had developed quite a liking for his blizzard boots.

If he died in 'resorting to violence' field, then in accordance with the rules of the sect, the blizzard boots would belong to He Renyi.

Long Yu could clearly see the intention to kill in the eyes of He Renyi, however, no one saw that even more vicious intention to kill was present in the eyes of Long Yu.

"But the challenge is a core of disciples, which He Renyi actually wanted to kill Indiana with the Disciples, it really is unjust, in that case, I do not need Long Yu polite with him!"

Long Yu entered the field then pointed his finger at He Renyi and calmly said: "Hey you, come on."

"As a senior, I allow you three moves first."

He Renyi contemptuously smiled without paying any attention to Long Yu.

“Really? Then allow me.”

Long Yu lightly said.

He remembered, at that time near the Martial Court’s entrance, Fang Kang had also said the same thing and had also been severely wounded by his three moves!

Now this He Renyi, who clearly knew about this incident, was actually daring to repeat the same scenario, indicating that this was not because he had absolute confidence in himself, but he was planning to cheat.

In comparison, depending on the amiable impression of Long Yu, there was higher possibility for the opposite party to trick him.

Accordingly, Long Yu was fully prepared, and at the same time, he simultaneously prepared defense in advance, just in case.

“Flickering wind step, a twinkling step, surmount the distance of thirty feet!”

Long Yu’s stature flashed and suddenly appeared in front of He Renyi, and immediately, he wore the glove battle weapon and released a burst of fist vigor, which went roaring towards He Renyi!

In addition to the increased strength granted by Demon tyrant form, the total strength contained in his fist was a total of 160,000 Jin, which directly smashed

down towards the head of He Renyi.

“Your strength is quite good.”

He Renyi’s hoarse laugh spread in the field and sinister color immediately flashed in his eyes: “However, you better prepare to die!”

As his voice fell, Long Yu actually felt his punch hitting an afterimage!

Even He Renyi had also practiced flickering wind step to the peak level and could produce afterimages like Long Yu!

Then, he appeared behind Long Yu and with him came several gusts of wind, this was actually a top grade martial skill, Xuan wind destroyer.

Few moments ago, He Renyi said that he allowed three moves to Long Yu, but it was really a trick as Long Yu anticipated. Long Yu had only made the first move and He Renyi actually launched a sneak attack on him!

This scene made all of the audience keep their eyes glued on the field.

They did not actually blame He Renyi for tricking Long Yu, but they just wanted to see whether Long Yu would be able to evade this sneak attack.

“Demon vajra cover!”

Long Yu shouted, his whole body was enveloped in golden light, and suddenly,

his entire body became impregnable!

His Xuan wind destroyer attack hit Long Yu's back, and instantly, a loud metal clanging sound resounded throughout the field.

Immediately, Long Yu turned sideways and his vision swept at He Renyi with an extensive intention to kill overflowing in his eyes!

Chapter 49 Sovereign returns (Part 1)

Regarding the sneak attack of He Renyi, Long Yu had already been ready, and instantly covered his body with the Demon vajra cover, and easily resisted the Xuan wind destroyer attack.

Then, Long Yu moved sideways and immediately used Zhentian mysterious charm, unleashing waves of suppression.

Instantaneously, a strong suppression, much stronger than Feng Yun's suppression, fell from the sky and landed on He Renyi, thereby stopping his movement. At this time, his complexion suddenly changed.

"This Zhentian charm is unexpectedly so powerful!"

As a core disciple of Zhentian Sect, He Renyi was aware about the existence of Zhentian mysterious charm, but he himself was actually unable to comprehend it.

At this time, facing Zhentian charm of Long Yu, the movement of his whole body was slowed down, and the flow of Xuan qi in his body almost became stagnant.

"Brother He Renyi!"

Long Yu shouted: "You said I can use three moves, and even then you made a sneak attack on me, do you want to kill me?"

As his voice fell, Long Yu instantly took one twinkling step, and quickly came in front of him, and swept away a heavy fist on his abdomen!

This severe punch made the pupil of He Renyi shrank fiercely. Although he had seen the attack of Long Yu and wanted to protect himself, but under the heavy suppression of Zhentian charm, his movements couldn't follow his thoughts.

The next moment.

Bang!

He Renyi screamed pitifully then fell on the ground, holding his stomach and struggling with unbearable pain.

His Dantian was destroyed by the strength of 200,000 Jin present in the fist of Long Yu turning him into a waste!

“You wanted to kill me, but I spare your life, you should be thankful for it.”

Long Yu said and turned around to depart from the field!

He Renyi was easily defeated and Long Yu became a core disciple of Zhentian Sect, and now, he had the qualifications to go to the backside of Martial Court and select super grade martial skills.

When He Renyi screamed pitifully and fell on the ground, a silence spread in the entire resorting to violence field.

Everyone was shocked and looking at this unexpected scene, they just did not expect that this would be the result of the battle between He Renyi and Long Yu.

Originally, they thought that this Long Yu was so arrogant and impatient that right after joining the sect, in just two months, he challenged a core disciple. With such an arrogant attitude, he would certainly lose, but the reality was exactly opposite of what they had expected.

Long Yu not only defeated He Renyi, he did it very effortlessly and not just that, he also ended up destroying his cultivation and turned him into a waste.

“This Long Yu so calmly destroyed He Renyi’s cultivation. He is such a cruel and ruthless guy.”

Feng Yun’s cold voice arrived from the stage and everyone heard it!

At this time, Feng Yun coldly stared at Long Yu and taunted: “Such a guy, he is a shame on the title of martial artists. He is an evil man who victimizes someone from his own sect.”

Long Yu did not pay any attention to Feng Yun, after all, until the gathering of Feng clan, there would be plenty of opportunities to deal with him.

On hearing these words from Feng Yun, Long Yu turned his head to give a single glance and said in a counter-attack: “If I am ruthless, then what would you call He Renyi, he wanted to kill me in order to seize my blizzard boots? And earlier when I was only at Wudao fifth layer, a 10th ranked core disciple like you bullied me and succeeded in destroying my right leg and after that, you punched on my chest, what would you call that?”

When the spectators heard what Long Yu said just now, their sights immediately turned towards Feng Yun.

This was correct, back then, Feng Yun, a core disciple, had attacked a new disciple like Long Yu, who was merely at Wudao fifth layer and had recently joined the sect. Feng Yun had also destroyed his right leg, wasn't this such a cruel and ruthless act?

Since it had happened in front of many witnesses, so Feng Yun couldn't refute it either.

When Feng Yun noticed that everyone was looking at him and expecting him to give an explanation, he was left speechless for a while. Right now, all he could do was curse Long Yu in his heart.

"One day, I will make you crawl right under my feet."

Feng Yun thought in his heart and sneered!

After speaking out loud in front of everyone, Long Yu did not pay attention to Feng Yun at all. He went all the way back and soon arrived beside Ling Han.

"Brother, now it's your turn."

Long Yu said with a smile.

Ling Han said with a mysterious smile: "No, no, I don't need to fight anymore. I

already am the 107th ranked core disciple.”

“What?”

Long Yu was somewhat surprised.

“Last night, I found the 107th ranked core disciple and defeated him in a battle.”

Ling Han said.

“So that’s how it is.”

Long Yu nodded, thinking that Ling Han was really quite impatient to become a core disciple. Right after he stepped into the Wudao eighth layer, he immediately challenged the core disciple.

Although Ling Han didn’t have a public fight, but so long as the other party was willing to admit defeat, the challenge was considered valid.

“Now, let’s go to the elder pavilion and receive our core disciple identity tokens, then we can go to the backside of Martial Court.”

Ling Han smiled and walked on the front to lead the way.

Long Yu naturally followed him, while the audience also dispersed out from ‘resorting to violence’ field.

Considering the two battles that took place in the resorting to violence field, it was needless to say that Feng Yun was very strong, however Long Yu was simply fierce, and the news about his fierceness quickly spread throughout Zhentian sect.

Originally, not many disciples knew about Long Yu's actual strength and fierceness.

However, today onwards, the name of Long Yu would certainly reach the ears of each and every disciple of the sect!

The inner and outer disciples considered the core disciples as their role models, but they also strived to defeat them. Even if Long Yu was 108th ranked core disciple and there were 107 core disciples ranked above him, but he had already become a role model for other disciples and it could be said that he already had the required qualifications to be treated as a match for other core disciples.

Chapter 49 Sovereign returns (Part 2)

Zhentian sect, the Elders pavilion.

Ordinary disciples rarely visited the Elders pavilion, because this was the place in Zhentian sect where dozens of elders lived and practiced martial arts. It was said that this place was off-limits for ordinary disciples.

However, Long Yu and Ling Han had already become core disciples, so naturally

if they could easily visit the Elders pavilion to receive their new identity token.

Of course, the distribution of core disciple identity token was not managed by the disciples themselves, but personally managed by the elders.

“There are a total of 13 elders living in the Elders pavilion and each of them are able to condense Zhenling, means all of them are super strong. Only after condensing Zhenling and surpassing the Wudao ninth layer, one is able to qualify of entering the Elders pavilion and become the elder of Zhentian sect.”

Ling Han walked along with Long Yu while giving brief introduction to him: “The elders of the Elder pavilion are the authentic elders and truly represents the administration of our sect. They are like the backbone of our sect. Compared to them, the law enforcement elders are merely at the Wudao ninth layer, they are already 40 years old and are unable to break from the Wudao ninth layer, which is why they are not allowed in the Elders pavilion and can only manage some everyday affairs and disputes of the disciples.”

Listening to Ling Han’s introduction, Long Yu could not help but think, the purple robed elder, Tan Wuchuan, who was supposedly the teacher of Qin Tianque, was actually a law enforcement elder.

But the cultivation level of that elder seemed higher than the Wudao ninth layer, was he really the law enforcement elder?

“Brother, if after becoming the law enforcement elder, one is able to condense Zhenling then is he still considered the law enforcement elder, or will he enter into the Elders pavilion?”

Long Yu frowned and asked.

“Of course, he will still be the law enforcement elder.”

Ling Han said at will: “The senior elders of Elders pavilion are very talented are really able to support the development of the sect. Even if the law enforcement elder is able to condense Zhenling and break from the Wudao ninth layer but since he is already 40 years old, it proves that his achievements are limited and he doesn’t have the qualifications to enter into the Elders pavilion.”

“Understood.”

Long Yu nodded, it seemed like the law enforcement elders, Tan Wuchuan was able to break from the Wudao ninth layer only after reaching the age of 40 years, so considering that, the authority of Tan Wuchuan should be relative large among the law enforcement elders.

Although that matter was already over, but Long Yu was still vigilant and knew that Tan Wuchuan might pose troubles for him in the future.

After all, Long Yu killed his apprentice, so he wouldn’t give up on this revenge!

Soon, the two arrived at a quiet and elegant bamboo forest, and in the bamboo forest, a tranquil bamboo tower appeared in front of them. “Elders pavilion” was written on the bamboo tower”.

But behind the bamboo forest, there was an expanse of beautiful scenery and mountains. This type of elegant and pure environment must be the reason why Elders pavilion was located here, to help elders in their practice.

“Disciples Long Yu and Ling Han have successfully become core disciples. We have come to receive our core disciple identity tokens.”

At the entrance of Elders pavilion, both of them said aloud in a respectful manner.

“Long Yu, Ling Han? So it’s you two…… keke, come in.”

The voice of a middle-aged man transmitted from the Elders pavilion. From the voice, it seemed like he was injured, so both Long Yu and Ling Han could not help but looked at each other’s faces at once, there was a doubtful look on their faces.

Why did a strong elder of the Elders pavilion sounded as if he was injured?

They immediately stepped inside the Elders pavilion. After going inside, what they saw suddenly left them in a startled state.

Inside the Elders pavilion, they actually saw a group of 12 elders standing, each of them possessed tyrannical aura, and basically, all of the elders of Elder pavilion were present there.

But at this time, the complexions of all of the twelve elders present in the Elders pavilion were not good!

“Well, old white and old black are also here……”

Long Yu saw familiar faces but he did not say anything to them, after all, he was in the Elders pavilion and couldn't just casually say something.

However when he saw old black, a thought appeared in his mind immediately, wasn't old black supposed to have gone out to look for Elder Yu? Now that he was back, what about Elder Yu?

Long Yu glanced around and finally saw an old man in black robe at the back of the room, lying on a bamboo bed, this was Elder Yu!

This discovery made his heart to make a "thump" sound and he felt a slight chill in his heart. Elder Yu came back but was lying on a bamboo bed. Could it that he was actually dead?

"Elder Yu is still alive, you two first sit down."

Just then, a middle-aged man's voice resounded in the room, making them to move their line of sight towards the source of voice. They saw a middle-aged man in striped clothes, sitting on a bamboo chair, in the middle of group of elders.

Among all of the elders present in the room, even old white and old black were standing next to him, just this middle-aged man was sitting, showing that he held the most authority among all of the elders.

"Boy, this is our sovereign, sovereign Bai."

Old white's voice gently passed into Long Yu's ears, informing him about this middle-aged man's identity.

Zhentian sect's current sovereign, Baiyun Zong!

Even when Long Yu had not yet joined the Zhentian sect, he used to hear about Baiyun Zong in Yu Guan City. Baiyun Zong was originally an Imperial general, who was once surrounded by enemies from all directions and was still able to kill countless foreign enemies!

He was later entrusted with the post of Zhentian sect's sovereign.

Long Yu could not help but observe him and was surprised to find out that he actually appeared to be approximately 30 year old, had a short hair, there were two pinches of small beards near the corners of his mouth, giving him an ordinary appearance. On the surface, he just didn't seem like someone who was actually the head of an entire sect.

However, it was obvious that his aura was superior to the auras of any of the other elders present there, including old white and old black. He was the strongest among all!

But didn't their sovereign go to Qiansi sect, why did he return so quickly?

Looking at the appearance of Baiyun Zong, one could see that he was injured, could it be that he suffered defeat at the hands of Qiansi sect?

When sovereign Bai saw that Long Yu was carefully observing him, he immediately raised an eyebrow and asked: "What's the matter, don't I look like the sovereign?"

“But... a sovereign’s aura should be almost infinite, simply unmatched.”

Long Yu said immediately.

“Is it?”

Baiyun Zong smiled and said: “You talks are quite tricky indeed. Well, then let me ask you something, looking at my current appearance, how do you think I will have my complete aura?”

So he really was injured!

This caused Long Yu to be in a bad mood all of a sudden.

He could not believe that their sovereign went to Qiansi sect to have a word or two with them, but he actually came back injured, what exactly happened there?

Chapter-50 Super grade martial art (Part 1)

Not only Long Yu, but old black and old white also wanted to know that what exactly happened to Baiyun Zong when he went to meet the sovereign of Qiansi sect.

“Sovereign, pardon me for speaking so bluntly.”

Long Yu asked Baiyun Zong straightforwardly: “Properly speaking, Qiansi Sect sovereign should not be your match, right, then how were you”

“Current sovereign of Qiansi Sect is actually not the sovereign of Qiansi Sect....that one.”

Baiyun said lightly and glanced at Long Yu.

Hearing these words, many elders suddenly realized, so that’s what it was!

But Long Yu and Ling Han didn’t understand what Baiyun Zong meant when he said ‘that one’.

Long Yu saw that while saying these words, Baiyun Zong looked at him, could it be that this person was related to him?

“Someone from Long clan?”

Long Yu wrinkled his eyebrows and thought. This Long clan’s person was

unexpectedly linked with Qiansi sect's sovereign and his strength was so tyrannical that he managed to injure Baiyun Zong?

Regarding this, Baiyun Zong actually didn't explain anything, but then he said: "I went there with the sovereign of Hanbing Sect, but we actually lost, also 'that man' threatened me to hand over Zhentian tactics."

"What? Hand over Zhentian tactics?"

Many elders heard this and their complexions changed.

Zhentian tactics was a creation of the ancestor of Zhentian Sect and was also the core law of the sect. It was considered to be the foundation of the sect! And now, that man threatened to hand it over, perhaps, the hegemony of Tang State must change.

The smart people, present at that time, probably understood that the motive of 'that man' was to suppress all the big seven sects of Tang State.

"What did the sovereign of Hanbing Sect say?"

At that time, an elder asked aloud and suggested to take a look at the actions of other sects and then take a proper decision on the matter.

"To save the disciples of Hanbing sect, he agreed to hand over the core law of Hanbing Sect."

Baiyan Zong said in a sinking voice.

Hearing these words, all the elders present there were startled. The sovereign of Hanbing sect actually agreed to it? In order to save their disciples, they had to surrender the core law of their sect!

“Certainly, he has handed over only the half, he plans to wait until another time to buy time and consider whether to surrender the other half.”

Baiyun Zong then said unhurriedly and clearly: “At the time of seven sects competition.”

Seven sects competition.

Long Yu didn’t hear these words for the first time. The seven sects competition was the event of the young generation of Tang State. Only by participating in it, one could earn name and fame in the entire Tang State!

“The ownership of the core laws of these sects will be decided based on the results of the seven sects competition.”

Baiyun Zong said in a serious voice: “Perhaps, this is the worry that compelled us to be anxious and the decision was made, in any case, his daughter is a disciple of Qiansi Sect, her talent is extremely high, wait until the seven sects competition, perhaps, nobody will be her match.”

“Yu Qianning.”

Several elders pronounced her name with emotion.

“Yes”

Baiyun Zong nodded lightly.

Long Yu and Ling Han heard this and looked at each other with incredible looks in their eyes. Why was that Yu Qianning getting such high appraisal from the elders?

Obviously, when Yu Qianning was in the Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, she was at Wudao eighth layer and if she was promoted to Wudao ninth layer, it would be quite difficult to stand before her.

The top few core disciples of these seven big sects, of course, were usually those who had already comprehended the Zhenling and were considered extremely strong experts.

The masters of common Wudao ninth layer could only look up to these truly strong experts.

Frankly speaking, the trivial Yu Qianning was not worthy of getting so much attention.

“As Elder Yu was injured by the shadow technique, he must rest and should be able to recover after a long time.”

Baiyun Zong scowled, considered for a moment then said: “Right now, no one is guarding Martial Court, how about you take charge of guarding it, Elder Li?”

As his voice fell, a handsome youth, appearing to be in his twenties, clad in black dress, nodded.

“I will sincerely obey the command of sovereign.”

The young man said respectfully.

Seeing this, Long Yu was a bit surprised. After passing through the gate, he had seen that handsome youth in black clothing, but at that time, Long Yu didn't know his identity. Now, it turned out that he was actually an elder.

It seemed like Zhentian Sect had many highly talented people, Long Yu never expected to see such a young elder.

From that day, Elder Li became in charge of Martial Court, because Elder Yu was in a comatose state and it was not clear when he would wake up.

“You two, take your identity tokens.”

Baiyun Zong said this as if he addressing this matter while representing the sect, then he turned towards both Long Yu and Ling Han and tossed a core disciple identity token to each of them and said: “Superfluous words, I will not say. However, I would like you both to come with me and make an appearance in the seven sects competition!”

“Yes.”

Long Yu and Ling Han said together in unison.

The seven sects competition was going to be held after six months, so they had six months time to prepare. They must work harder because participating as master of Wudao eighth layer was no different than belonging to the group of lowest level participants in the competition.

If they did not enhance their strengths as soon as possible before the beginning of the seven sects competition, then they would only be considered as weaklings, the most lowly existences during the competition.

“These are the top grade immortality pills called Yushan pills, should help in enhancing your strength, now go and choose a super grade martial skill for yourself.”

Baiyun Zong threw two small bottles towards Long Yu and Ling Han.

Yushan pill was a top grade immortality pill and its role in enhancing the cultivation was extremely significant.

“Many thanks sovereign.”

Although, it had been a convention to reward those who became the core disciples, but they still felt grateful as before, after all, these top grade immortality pills were really priceless!

In order to cultivate talented disciples, the sect didn't hesitate to endure costly expenses, because the future of the sect actually depended on the dedication of these disciples.

“Go.”

Baiyun Zong waved his hand.

Long Yu and Ling Han together, turned around to leave.

Chapter-50 Super grade martial art (Part 2)

After they left, Baiyun Zong looked at the entrance for a very long time and didn't speak.

“Sovereign, what do you think about this Long Yu?”

After Long time, old white broke the silence and asked aloud.

“The general's son, naturally is uncommon, however, in front of Zhenling, all are ants.”

Baiyun Zong lightly said: “Before congealment of Zhenling, if his identity is exposed, I am afraid, it will be beyond redemption!”

“About this, I have already done the preparations, we have spread the news in Zhentian sect that Long Yu grew up in Ling clan's villa since childhood, and doesn't belong to the Long clan.”

Baiyun Zong said.

“Very good.”

Baiyun Zong faintly smiled, then immediately got up and said: “ All disperse, in the six months time, supervise all hanger-on disciples carefully, if we can win against Qiansi Sect, then we will not need to hand over Zhentian tactics, instead we can obtain the shadow tactics of Qiansi Sect, let’s not waste any time and get to work quickly.”

Saying that was fairly easy but everyone present there at that time knew well that expecting hanger-on disciples to defeat Yu Qianning was extremely difficult.

Yu Qianning was the daughter of the sovereign of Qiansi Sect and that’s why she dared to call herself “Qiansi Princess”

In Qiansi Sect, everybody knew that Yu Qianning could easily and fully display the core law and other martial arts of Qiansi Sect, but the informed people also knew that her real hidden strength was far more than that!

.....

At this time, Long Yu and Ling Han had already left the Elder pavilion, and right now, they were on the way to Martial Court.

“Brother Long, have you decided which super grade martial skill you are going to select?”

Ling Han asked while walking beside Long Yu.

Whenever Long Yu heard these two words, 'Brother Long', he always felt a little strange, but did not actually care and immediately replied: "The one called 'horizon is close', that one seems pretty good."

Mystique – 'Long' means 'Dragon' and 'Yu' means 'Royal'

"I see, it's an agility type super grade martial skill."

Ling Han was somewhat surprised: "Although, 'horizon is close' is very good, but considering we are going to participate in the seven sects competition and 'horizon is close' is inferior to other super grade martial skills. What if you bump into a turtle like Tan Jian, what will you do then?"

If he didn't have an offense type martial skill with enough offensive power then having superfast speed would also be in vain.

Especially, since the battle in seven sects competition would occur in arenas.

"If I face Tan Jian now, I will beat him in an instant."

Long Yu smiled in a mysterious way.

The power of 'Nine hidden Dragon Fist' was not a joke, although he had not practiced it to a very high level, but during the time of its little practice, he had come to know its terrifying power!

“Good.”

Ling Han nodded and it was Long Yu’s choice to practice whatever he wanted to. Ling Han naturally couldn’t force his opinion onto him and just said:
“Altogether, there are nine super grade martial skills in Zhentian Sect, we have seen two of them, ‘horizon is close’ and ‘sky wave cross’. But I don’t think I am going to choose any of these two.”

“You really know about other super grade martial skill, what super grade martial skill are you going to choose?”

Long Yu casually asked.

“White noble spirit”

Ling Han’s eyes were moving with the color of anticipation visible in them:
“Since the day I joined Zhentian Sect, I am attracted to this martial skill, now I can finally practice it.”

“White noble spirit?”

Long Yu was somewhat curious.

“This is one of the attack and defense type super grade martial skills which provide both offensive and defensive power, and in its nature, it is almost similar to sky wave cross, but it gives special restraining effect on devils and ghosts.”

Ling Han further explained: “My Ling clan’s villa is situated in a remote area, it faces Yin qi invasions every year, if you are well versed in white noble spirit, then you can face these invasions with ease.”

“So that’s how it is.”

Long Yu nodded and did not inquire further.

“Right, Brother Long, after choosing super grade martial skills, do you want to come with me to my villa and practice?”

Ling Han smiled and invited Long Yu with great kindness: “Since you said that we grew up in Ling clan’s villa, it should not be a problem for you to go there. We will practice there, and we take breaks from practice, we can goof around as well.”

“But, Feng clan’s gathering will soon begin in Yu Guan city.”

Long Yu slightly wrinkled his eyebrows.

“Then you first go back and handle your family matters, then come to my villa.”

Ling Han indifferently said.

“En.”

Long Yu nodded and thought that a trip to Ling clan's villa was actually necessary, after all in the seven sects competition, miscellaneous masters from different places would come to participate, so it was quite handy to have a partner to practice various battle tactics.

In a while, they arrived at the entrance of Martial Court, but did not enter. They took out their core disciple identity tokens and directly walked towards the mountain valley behind the Martial Court.

The nine super grade martial skills of Zhentian Sect were engraved on face of the backside of the mountain.

“Go.”

A handsome youth, clad in black dress, had already arrived at the entrance to the backside of Martial Court. It was none other than Elder Li, who was here to guard Martial Court.

He looked at them, but didn't check their identity tokens. He immediately allowed them to enter the mountain valley.

Not long ago, Baiyun Zong, the sovereign of Zhentian Sect, personally gave identity tokens to these two men, so Elder Li would certainly not stop them.

“Elder Li's is really fast.”

After entering the mountain valley, Ling Han sighed with emotion:
“Condensing Zhenling is really extraordinary!”

“Indeed, we must work hard to achieve it.”

Long Yu smiled and nodded, then looked around. He saw that the hillside, surrounding the valley, was carved with many writings and graphics, altogether divided into a total of nine regions. These were the separately recorded nine super grade martial skills!

Chapter 51 Alternative choice (Part 1)

Out of nine super grade martial arts of Zhentian Sect, two were of agility type, others were either attacking or defense type martial skill, or both attacking and defensive type martial skills, for example the sky wave cross and white noble spirit.

“In the category of agility type martial skill, besides ‘horizon is close’, there is one more named ‘ghost flash’, this one seems more suitable to me.”

Long Yu was carefully observing the descriptions of these two agility type martial skills and was secretly pondering over them.

In the category of super grade martial skills, if ‘horizon is close’ was practiced to Da Cheng level, then a cultivator would not only be able to cover a short distance at will and in a flash, but it would also come in very handy while giving a long distance chase to an enemy at a very high speed.

If practiced to its peak level, its effect would be stronger, and then he would be able to cover a distance of almost 1000 feet in a blink of an eye, and his speed would be so fast that almost nobody would be able to overtake him. Finally, after practicing it to perfection level, he would be capable of forming a horizon barrier screen, which would provide a good defense for him.

The defense effects of different defense classes of martial skills were different, and so the barrier effects of royal rock wall, Demon vajra cover, *etc.* were different, but the horizon barrier screen of ‘horizon is close’ was unique in the sense that the enemy would not be able to touch the user, so it was basically impregnable!

Whenever the core disciples of Zhentian wanted to practice agility type super grade martial skill, they would definitely choose 'horizon is close'.

Because, the effect of the other agility type martial skill, 'ghost flash', was really a quite weak in comparison.

If 'ghost flash' was practiced to the peak level, it would not only increase the speed of the cultivator, but it would also empower him to have his own incarnation ghost! This incarnation ghost would only be injured by Xuan qi, of course, sword and spear would penetrate into the body of the ghost, but wouldn't have any effect.

"The reason that this agility type martial skill is considered weaker is that in the present world of martial arts, everyone prefers Xuan qi based attacks. It's rare to see martial artists who fully rely on a sword or spear to attack the enemy."

Long Yu thought to himself, and at present, there was a tinct of brightness in his eyes: "However, if 'ghost flash' is successfully practiced to the perfection level, then I should be able to make myself completely turn into a void figure, although not invisible, but it should pass through ordinary obstacles, such as walls, trees, ground, etc., if cultivation is good, then I can maintain the void time for a longer period."

This unique feature of 'ghost flash' made Long Yu to like it!

The acceleration effect of this agility type martial skill couldn't be compared to 'horizon is close', but during the fight, the disparity between the two wasn't too big, the practitioner of both agility skills could cover short distances in a flash, in any case, both skills were much stronger than 'flickering wind step'.

“If I can incarnate the body of a ghost, then being a void body, it should be able to get through the wall. Then it will become very advantageous in the future.”

Long Yu thought in his mind, then made a firm resolve to practice ‘ghost flash’.

Even with the help of ‘Nine hidden Dragon Mark, he wouldn’t dare to simultaneously practice two super grade martial skills, because each martial skill required long time for its practice, and he felt it was not necessary right now.

Long Yu believed that by the time his cultivation level would increase considerably, he would have found a better agility type martial skill, so he did not need be so eager and hasty at this time.

“Practicing ‘ghost flash’ needs to penetrate Xuan qi into the entire body, and the practice difficulty is enormous! This is another important reason that the core disciples are not willing to practice it. ”

When Xuan qi seeped into the whole body and the internal organs, then it used to generate unbearable pain. After all, ordinary martial artists generally didn’t practice body refining type martial skill so their internal organs were very fragile.

“Even now, I am afraid it is difficult to bear the penetration of Xuan qi into my body, I must first practice ‘Demon tyrant form’ to the perfection level.”

Long Yu thought to himself, and felt that, now he had no more time to waste.

If a cultivator wanted to reach to Da Cheng level of Demon tyrant form, he would have to quench his body meridians with Xuan qi, and if he wanted to reach its peak level then he would have to quench his Dantian with Xuan qi, but if he wanted to reach to its perfection level, then he would have to quench his five internal organs with Xuan qi.

Above the perfection level, if a practitioner was able to quench his blood vessels with Xuan qi, then he could achieve the transcendent level of ‘Demon tyrant form’.

On the way to practice a martial skill, there were different levels, starting from beginner level, Xiao Cheng level, Da Cheng level, peak level, perfection level and the transcendent level.

Any martial skill, if practiced to the transcendent level, would grant tremendous benefits. But not all martial skills had a transcendent level.

For example, ‘flickering wind step’ and many other martial skills could only be practiced up to the perfection level.

“In order to practice ‘ghost flash’, I must practice ‘Demon tyrant form’ to the perfection level. I will have to first quench my Dantian, and after that, I need to quench the five internal organs, then only my whole body can withstand the Xuan qi seepage.”

Long Yu had already decided his next practice plan. He wanted to practice ‘ghost flash’, and for that, the most important thing was to enhance the withstanding capacity of his internal organs, so practicing ‘Demon tyrant form’ to the perfection level would be sufficient. At this moment, there was no need to reach its transcendent level.

“The Feng clan meeting is soon going to be held, and only half a month of time is left for that. Even if I succeed in practicing ‘Demon tyrant form’ to its perfect level before setting out for Yu Guan City, its effects will certainly be extraordinary, at least I will be in a better position to deal with the fellows of Feng clan.”

He knew that Feng Longsong, his foster parent, might have to face quite a difficult situation during Feng clan’s meeting so he wanted to help him out in this crisis.

“Stronger, I need to get stronger!”

Long Yu’s eyes revealed a firm and resolute look. Soon, the practice method of ‘ghost flash’ was completely recorded in his mind and he was all set to leave and practice it later.

” Brother Long, what’s the matter?”

At this moment, Ling Han’s voice came from the side and he arrived next to Long Yu.

Chapter 51 Alternative choice (Part 2)

His eyes caught the attention of Long Yu’s eyes which appeared to be concentrated on ‘ghost flash’. He gawked and immediately asked: “Brother Long, are you not going to practice ‘horizon is close’? What made you change

your mind to ‘ghost flash’?”

If Long Yu practiced ‘horizon is close’ then it would seem reasonable to Ling Han, considering the strong defense granted by this agility skill after reaching the peak level.

But, Long Yu wanted to practice ‘ghost flash’, which immediately baffled Ling Han.

Although ‘ghost flash’ was a super grade martial skill but nobody practiced it in the entire Zhentian Sect. However, truly speaking, its acceleration was so good that the top grade martial skills couldn’t be compared to it.

Needless to say, it was very difficult to practice ‘ghost flash’, and it could be said that out of all the nine super grade martial skills, it was toughest to practice it!

“I changed my mind and I think ‘ghost flash’ is more suitable for me.”

Long Yu said with a smile.

“Brother Long, you...”

Ling Han stared at him because he simply couldn’t imagine how did Long Yu feel that ‘ghost flash’ was suitable for him? His decision to practice it really surprised him.

“Well, needless to say, I’m going back to begin practicing, how about you?”

Long Yu said.

“I will also begin to practice, I have written down the complete practice method of white noble spirit.”

Ling Han said, while looking at Long Yu like a monster.

No matter, he couldn't figure out the reason why Long Yu chose 'ghost flash'. In his opinion, out of all the nine super grade martial skills, 'ghost flash' was the most useless one and any one of the other eight was easily stronger than 'ghost flash'.

However, Ling Han didn't ask anything, he believed that Long Yu would definitely not crack a joke with his own time.

Since Long Yu chose 'ghost flash' then he must have had his own reasons for it. Ling Han was aware of it so he didn't bother Long Yu anymore.

They departed from Martial Court's back side and returned to their respective residences.

While practicing a martial skill, each and every second was important, a cultivator must promote every moment!

Seven sects competition was going to be held in just six months. It sounded like a very long time, but in reality, it would pass in a flash.

Elder Yu was unconscious due to his injuries, and many disciples of Zhentian sect had been killed at the hands of Yu Qianning of Qiansi Sect, so Long Yu and Ling Han must strive and not waste time.

.....

At the summit of Zhentian canyon, in the bamboo room.

Long Yu was sitting in his bamboo bed and began to quench his Dantian and five internal organs with Xuan qi, and thus he embarked upon for achieving the peak and perfection level of Demon tyrant form.

Old white and old black returned to the summit of the canyon, and for rest of the day, they remained engaged in playing chess, but the earlier carefree color on their faces had gone and dignified looks had appeared instead.

The things that happened in Qiansi Sect had actually overshadowed the hearts of many elders of Zhentian Sect.

If Zhentian Sect lost to Qiansi Sect in the seven sects competition, then Zhentian tactics would have to be surrendered, and it would be just like a serious detrimental blow to their sect.

Although, an ordinary person might not see the true seriousness of this matter at this time, but when Qiansi Sect would get the Zhentian tactics, they would be able to attract more young talents to join their sect and would ultimately command much greater influence than Zhentian sect.

Continuously for a long time, Zhentian Sect didn't have fresh bloods to flow in,

and taking advantage of it, other sects became more and more strong, and if the things continued in this way, then Zhentian Sect would merely survive in name in the future.

As the elders of Zhentian Sect, both old black and old white were naturally worried about it.

Fortunately, the sovereign ordered to open more resources for the core disciples to practice to enhance their strength by promoting their cultivation within six months, especially for the top five core disciples.

In the seven sects competition, these core disciples were going to be the real heroes!

The survival of these sects was to be decided by their respective victories in the seven sects competition.

Regarding this, Long Yu was also keeping watch, but for him, there was no other way except to practice diligently and enhance his strength beyond his capacity.

“Took the dose of Yu Shan immortality pill, my basic strength of 128 fierce horses has increased to 150 now, it is the limit of Wudao eighth layer. It seems currently, I am too far from entering the Wudao ninth layer.”

“The practice method of ‘Demon tyrant form’ is simple and crude but the process itself is quite painful.....”

Long Yu clenched his teeth.

The Xuan qi almost began to boil in his body, quenching his Dantian unceasingly. This step was very important, if any mistake was committed here even for half a minute, it might lead to losing one's cultivation once and for all, turning him into a disabled person.

For a common person, the pain of quenching Dantian was almost comparable to enduring the sea of flames while being pierced by a mountain of knives at the same time!

But considering Long Yu's willpower and experience, it was only a mild pain and nothing more.

Under the unceasing quenching of Xuan qi, the Dantian of Long Yu was becoming stronger every time and pushing his practice of 'Demon tyrant form' to move towards the peak level.

After five days and numerous rounds of non-stop quenching by the Xuan qi, Long Yu finally reached a critical juncture where with each beat of his heart, the Xuan qi was being transported from his Dantian and throughout his body meridians, forming a continuous circulation.

"Quenching the Dantian has not only strengthened the intensity of the Dantian, but also has established the circulation of Xuan qi in the body meridians, hence increasing the restoration speed of Xuan qi in the body."

Long Yu thought in his mind. He had never imagined that quenching of Dantian would unexpectedly have such an incredible effect.

According to this logic, so long as the Dantian would remain strong to a certain extent, the Xuan qi content in his body would be endless and he won't need to worry about the issue of its consumption.

Of course, right now, the intensity of his Dantian was far less than that level, but just after refinement, the regeneration of Xuan qi in his meridians had become faster than before, almost twice of what it used to be before he began the quenching of his Dantian.

“Once the quenching of Dantian is complete, ‘Demon tyrant form’ will reach its peak level then I should be able to use ‘Demon vajra seal’.”

Long Yu thought in his mind.

‘Demon vajra seal’ was a move which could be used after reaching the peak level of ‘Demon tyrant form’. While using it, he would use Demon vajra cover to congeal hand seal and display its impressive power!

Chapter 52 Halfway interception (Part 1)

In his bamboo room, Long Yu was quenching his Dantian with Xuan qi, and finally he advanced one step closer to the peak level of Demon tyrant form.

Above the Da Cheng level was the peak level.

Although, this was only the difference of one level, but its impact on the development in the martial skill was enormous, because at the peak level, now, not only his basic strength would be stronger, even the speed of the restoration of Xuan qi would be doubled.

What was most important that, now, he would be able to display the powerful 'Demon vajra seal.'

"This 'Demon vajra seal', although, is not comparable to 'Dragon Fist', but its power is not less than many of other the top-grade martial skills."

Long Yu nodded with satisfaction, and then he condensed Xuan qi in his palm, emitting golden rays of light, and suddenly, his right hand turned into a golden hand seal!

The golden hand seal could play important role while fighting. It was easy to use, and more specifically, it seemed to have a glow of holy light.

"I think this 'Demon vajra seal' should not be different from 'white noble spirit', which Ling Han wants to learn. Maybe it also has a restraining effect on ghosts?"

Long Yu thought to himself, but actually wasn't much concerned about it, after all, he wasn't going to encounter the ghosts in the near future.

He spent the day time to become familiar with the use of 'Demon vajra seal' then he began quenching his five internal organs, preparing to aim for the perfection level of 'Demon tyrant form'.

Spleen, lung, kidney, liver, and heart were the five vital human internal organs, supporting the basic functions of the human body, if there would any problem in these organs then it would greatly affect the functioning of the human body.

Now, Long Yu was quenching his internal organs with Xuan qi, and it was not difficult to imagine that if anything went wrong then he would possibly fall into a hopeless situation.

However, if he could successfully to quench his internal organs with Xuan qi, then stronger functioning of these internal organs would allow him to become much stronger, and then even his strengthened Dantian would also produce some special results.

"Heart is the foundation of all functions of human body. Heart beat controls the blood circulation, and if heart is quenched with Xuan qi, then it makes heart beats more powerful, then the blood circulation will be good, making one to always be sober remain calm at all times."

"Accordingly, spleen, lung, kidney and liver also control certain important functions of the human body, and quenching of these organs can enhance overall physical fitness, making the human to be reborn."

Long Yu thought in his mind, while stimulating the circulation of Xuan qi in his body meridians and soon started quenching his heart.

.....

Half month after Long Yu began closed up practice.

From the residence of core disciples, an elegant gentleman dressed in white dress walked out, it was Feng Yun.

He walked away from the Zhentian canyon while pulling three boisterous horses with him and was walking along with two core disciples as his attendants and moved in the direction of Yu Guan city, located in the north.

The members of Feng clan were to assemble in Yu Guan city several days later but Feng Yun wanted to arrive there in advance.

Long Yu didn't know about Feng Yun's early departure, because right now, he was in a crucial phase of practicing 'Demon tyrant form'.

After nearly ten days of practice, he finally succeeded in separately quenching spleen, lung, kidney and liver separately and reached the last phase of quenching his heart.

Finally, when his heart made a loud "thump" sound and jumped, the blood started boiling up within his body. He could feel that now he had more vigor and vitality than before.

“At last, the quenching of these five internal organs is complete, and I also reached the perfection level of Demon tyrant form!”

Long Yu stood up and there was tinct of brightness in his eyes!

Reaching the perfection level of ‘Demon tyrant form’ was a real achievement for him, as it actually turned his body into that of a demon tyrant’s, and a layer of golden light was faintly glittering on the surface of his body.

This golden light turned out to be a naturally occurring defense shield. Earlier also, Long Yu could use ‘Demon vajra cover’, but in doing so, he had to consume Xuan qi, but now, he no longer needed to consume Xuan qi to invoke ‘Demon vajra cover’.

The perfection level of ‘Demon tyrant form’ granted him an always activated ‘Demon vajra cover’, giving a firm stature like a rock!

“Practicing ‘Demon tyrant form’ all the way went very smoothly, and some of the credit goes to ‘Nine hidden Dragon Mark’ for it, because without its help, it would have been impossible for me to quench my Dantian and internal organs so fast....”

Long Yu thought to himself, now he could start the practice of agility type super grade martial skill, ‘ghost flash.’

In the practice of ‘Ghost flash,’ the Xuan qi from nether world would seep into the five internal organs, and would empower its cultivator to incarnate his own ghost completely in the form of a void figure, thus the speed would increase

tremendously, and he should be able to pass through walls, *etc.* After the successful completion of practicing this technique, it would have tremendous benefits in a battle.

Since, Long Yu successfully practiced 'Demon tyrant form' to the perfection level, so his internal organs were now strong enough to withstand the seepage of Xuan qi into his internal organs.

While practicing 'ghost flash', one could only get success when conditions were ripe.

In the next three days, Long Yu practiced 'ghost flash' to Xiao Cheng level, and now, he achieved the preliminary incarnation of his own ghost, although it was useless in broad daylight, but at least at night or in secluded places, this ghost incarnation could let him hide in a better way, others would find it difficult to find him.

"Feng clan meeting will be held after three days, now I should head out."

When Long Yu practiced 'ghost flash' to Xiao Cheng level, he nodded with satisfaction. He said goodbye to old black, old white and Liao Lele and went in the direction of Yu Guan city.

Originally, Liao Lele wanted to go with Long Yu, but Long Yu had offended many people in Yu Guan city and he didn't want Liao Lele to take any risk as well, therefore, he decided to hit the road alone.

Long Yu did not ride a horse, he used 'ghost flash' then stimulated his snow boots as well and quickly ran forward.

As a result, he was faster than a horse and at the same time, he would be able to familiarize with the blizzard boots in the running process. While doing so, he might get a chance to interact with his battle weapon!

Chapter 52 Halfway interception (Part 2)

Since, in Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, for the first time, 'Nine hidden Dragon Mark' helped Long Yu in experiencing the resonance between him and the Blizzard boots, as if a relation had been established between the two for a brief moment of time, allowing a smooth flow of Xuan qi from his heart to the blizzard boots while following the rhythm of his heart beats and creating a resonance.

“Although, I may get tired because of this but if I can establish and maintain resonance with blizzard boots, then it’s all are worth it.”

Long Yu was thinking so and embarked on the journey to Yu Guan city.

Endless road, a lofty day and the vast barren lands on both sides!

On the way, Long Yu looked around, and it seemed like he was the only person within a radius of hundred miles. He was, as if, alone and singing loudly under the vault of heaven.

“My current vision is too narrow! I never knew that this world of martial artists, where only the strong are respected, is actually so vast. I do not know whether there really will come a day when I become the master of this world.....”

Moving alone in the vast wilderness, there was mixed feelings in Long Yu's heart.

In a while, the white snow spread out under his feet, and he unexpectedly again produced resonance between himself and the Blizzard boots, and this time without the help of 'Nine hidden Dragon Mark'.

So the thing about conjunction with the battle weapon was really true!

Long Yu quickly bolted and a blizzard like the snow rollers scattered out in the bright radiant rays of sunlight, which appeared extremely dazzling on the green grassland.

"Finally I am able to do it, but, this is just the resonance phase, if I go further, next phase will be to make the blizzard boots sentient, this way, it will produce its own wisdom and should be able to more easily coordinate with my movements....."

Long Yu thought in his mind, however, he wanted to interact with the battle weapon, in order for it to develop wisdom, then as the master, he would not need to give much effort to coordinate his movements with that of the battle weapon.

But now, Long Yu did not know how to make this battle weapon to kindle its wisdom, so he was forced to give up.

He was wildly dashing on the prairie, two days and a night later, he arrived in a forest not far from Yu Guan city.

He actually wanted to quickly go to Yu Guan city, but after entering the woods, he suddenly felt an unusual atmosphere, so he could not help but frowned.

“Trying to ambush?”

Long Yu mused, if he had not discovered that ambush in time, he would have definitely continued to walk into the woods and placed himself in a dangerous situation.

Suddenly, two sharp piercing sounds came out of the blue. The people waiting in ambush must be running out of patience so they launched a sneak attack!

“Naive!”

From that piercing sound, Long Yu could feel that the person that made this sneak attack was only at Wudao sixth layer, hence was no threat to him.

Puff! Puff!

Came twice in succession and Long Yu pretended that these two sneak attacks with hidden weapons were successful. He posed as if he was seriously injured and fell down on the ground.

He planned this in order to know the identity of the enemy.

Seeing him fall on the ground, the person, who had made this sneak attack, was obviously startled.

“It worked?”

A clear voice fell into the ears of Long Yu, and he immediately knew the identity of this person, it was Feng clan’s former elder, Feng Tianxiang!

When Long Yu wanted to enter Feng clan’s Martial Court, Feng Tianxiang was the elder who had stopped him, only to be ending in Long Yu leaving the Feng clan.

Now, he wanted to return home to participate in the Feng clan meeting, so this Feng Tianxiang actually wanted to intercept him midway?

“Take a look at him, surround him, be careful and make sure he doesn’t escape!”

Another quite majestic voice conveyed, Long Yu listened to it, and instantly recognized the identity of this person.

It was Feng Longline, the father of Feng Yang and Feng Qianqian and Feng Longsong’s second brother.

“I cannot believe that Feng Longline is the leader and that Feng Tianxiang is also with them.”

Long Yu was still lying on the ground and was playing possum, but he continued to have unceasing speculation in his heart.

Two hidden weapons were fired at him, but did not have any impact on him. The sneak attacks by a man at Wudao sixth layer was unable to break through his 'Demon vajra cover'.

Soon, a series of footsteps resounded in the surrounding, followed by the arrival of a total of ten juniors of Feng clan, and all came to the place where Long Yu was lying and encircled him.

Feng Longline and Feng Tianxiang were surprised at the incident.

Apart from them, there was still a youth on whose waist hung an identity token of the core disciple of Zhentian Sect, and Long Yu felt that his cultivation was at Wudao eighth layer.

This youth walked forward and lightly said: "Fellow brother Feng Yun said that Long Yu has the strength of Wudao eighth layer, it is impossible that he would be killed by the attack of a person having only the strength of Wudao sixth layer. Listen everyone, don't approach him, let's call a master of Wudao seventh layer and kill him from a distance!"

"This youth actually called Feng Yun as fellow brother!"

Long Yu heard it, calmly thought in his heart and immediately realized that this youth was actually a core disciple of Zhentian Sect and must be a subordinate of Feng Yun, brought here as an assistance to him.

As the matter stood, both Feng Longline and this youth were at Wudao eighth layer. Hence, this ambush against Long Yu was certainly not going to be a problem for them.

“Respectfully follow the command of Senior Li Chong”

Two Wudao seventh layer men heard this and came forward and moved towards Long Yu to attack him. Of course, they wanted to turn him into meat paste, but from a distance.

It turned out to be a core disciple of Zhentian Sect named Li Chong.

Li Chong gave the order, and the two men were ready to attack, of course, from a distance, because they naturally wanted to make sure their own safety.

However, at this time, suddenly a “whoosh” sound transmitted from the place where Long Yu was lying, and at the same time, a burst of powerful suppression fell down from the sky and instantaneously enveloped everyone present in the vicinity.

Chapter 53 Feng Yun, clan head (Part 1)

At that time, when the people encircled him, in the presence of everyone, Long Yu suddenly jumped up, and instantly released tyrannical Zhentian charm that immediately enveloped all of the people present there.

The bodies of Feng Longline, Feng Tianxiang, Zhentian sect's core disciple, Li Chong, and other people suddenly became stagnant.

“He had actually comprehended Zhentian charm!”

Li Chong was greatly shocked and hurriedly raised his hand, and quickly released Zhentian mood, he actually wanted to resist the Zhentian charm of Long Yu.

Li Chong had comprehended only a small section of Zhentian mood. He had come here thinking that if he would show his strength and intercept Long Yu, then being a follower of Feng Yun, he would enjoy the treatment of a powerhouse in Yu Guan city as well.

He was brought here by Feng Yun to do the job of intercepting and killing the 108th ranked core disciple, but he never thought that Long Yu had comprehended Zhentian charm.

Li Chong's repressive Zhentian mood came out, but it was directly broken by Long Yu's Zhentian charm!

Although Long Yu's Zhentian charm was slightly weakened, but it still managed

to suppress everyone.

“Li Chong, you are a core disciple of Zhentian Sect and so am I but you actually led this team to intercept the disciple of the same sect, don’t you think you are going too far?”

Long Yu shouted and immediately resorted to ‘ghost flash’!

His body suddenly became partly visible in the dark night, and all of a sudden, a seal covered in a faint layer of golden light appeared in front of Li Chong.

Demon vajra seal!

Li Chong wanted to escape this palm attack, but under the suppression of the Zhentian charm, but the footsteps that he just took were slowed down, and in a blink of an eye, the ‘Demon vajra seal’ printed on his chest.

Bang!

A deafening sound spread out, and the stature of Li Chong was blasted 100 feet away by the powerful hit of ‘Demon vajra seal’. He fell down heavily on the ground, spraying out a mouthful of blood, and couldn’t get up again.

Although, Li Chong was a master of Wudao eighth layer, but in the face of Long Yu, he was seriously injured.

The strength of two sides simply weren’t on same level.

“Now that I have stepped into the perfection level of ‘Demon tyrant form’, activating ‘Nine hidden Dragon Mark’ should not cause any burden on my body, so now I can activate it more frequently, making my basic strength equal to that of a master of Wudao ninth layer.”

After Long Yu’s ‘Demon vajra seal’ palm attack sent Li Chong flying, and then once again, his ghost form disappeared from the vision of people in the dark night.

In the dark night, nobody could see the incarnated ghost form of Long Yu!

“How did this waste become so strong?”

Feng Longline said after he saw how Li Chong was sent flying by Long Yu’s palm attack. He was a bit shocked, and suddenly, he felt a fresh breeze coming from behind, sending chills down his spine.

“Asura hand!”

Hurriedly, Feng Longline resorted to Asura hand that he had practiced to the perfection level, and his hand instantly turned into a claw, and it directly rushed towards Long Yu, while the Asura breath spread in the vicinity, making everyone in the vicinity feel as if they were falling into a ice hole.

If practiced to perfection level, the power of Asura hand was tremendous. Just Asura breath could impede the blood flow and impede the motion of a person completely.

However, this Asura hand was actually a low-grade martial skill, even if

practiced to the perfection level, it was impossible to block Long Yu!

Three months ago, Long Yu wanted to practice this martial skill in Feng clan's Martial Court, but he not only had to face several obstacles, he also taunted in every possible ways.

Now, however, this martial skill of Feng clan was nothing more than garbage in front of the martial skills known to Long Yu.

“You want to fight? Try all you want, Demon vajra seal!”

Golden light flashed out, releasing holy qi in the surroundings, which immediately scattered away Asura breath from the vicinity, and instantly, a palm, covered in a layer of golden light, appeared in front of Feng Longline.

Bang!

Their palms clashed instantly, giving rise to a faint golden flash, and right then, everyone heard the “click” sound. Feng Longline's palm could be seen hanging down lifelessly, it had been wasted by Long Yu!

In this clash of martial skills, Long Yu's martial skill came out as victorious.

“Run!”

This idea appeared in the heart of Feng Longline, but it was too late.

“Demon vajra seal!”

Once gain, a big hand covered in a layer of golden light appeared in front of Feng Longline. He immediately resorted to an agility type of martial skill to escape.

However, under the powerful suppression of Long Yu’s Zhentian charm, the speed of Feng Longline dropped substantially even though he was using an agility type martial skill. Now, it was simply impossible for him to escape from there.

Snap!

Long Yu congealed a golden palm, and shot it directly at the back of Feng Longline in such a fierce manner that he suddenly started spouting blood from his mouth, and his whole body flew out like a broken kite and heavily fell on the ground.

By this time, the juniors of the Feng clan, who wanted to intercept Long Yu by surrounding him, now wanted to flee, how could they possibly dare to stay?

Everyone, including Feng Tianxiang, began their desperate escape!

Unfortunately, under the repression of Zhentian charm, the speed of each and every one of them had been reduced by half, as if their bodies had fallen into the mire, they desperately wanted to run, but just couldn’t run.

When Long Yu was engaged in knocking down Li Chong and Feng Longline, other people tried to escape, but they couldn’t go very far, and Long Yu needed

only a step to overtake any of them.

Long Yu would not show mercy to those who wanted to take his life!

When two Wudao eighth layer masters instantly lost to him, how could the juniors of Feng clan stand a chance against him? Even those two collateral branch elders at Wudao seventh layer were not his match.

Meanwhile, everyone in the field had already dropped down. Only Feng Tianxiang thought of every means to escape and somehow managed to escape from the range of Zhentian charm.

However, before he could take a breath of relief, a voice rang in his ears: “Elder Feng, do you want to escape?”

It was Long Yu!

Chapter 53 Feng Yun, clan head (Part 2)

Right then, Feng Tianxiang felt something cold and icy chasing him from behind and finally tied him down, thereby stopping his footsteps.

Feng Tianxiang’s heart sank, he realized that now he had become a captive and couldn’t escape.

There was an incomparable regret welling up in his heart, back then, why did

he provoke this Long Yu at the Martial Court of Feng clan? If he had not done so, at present, he would still be a collateral elder of Feng clan, and would not need to come to intercept Long Yu!

“Elder Feng, don’t even think about escaping, I have something to ask of you.”

In the next moment, the ghost incarnated body of Long Yu appeared in front of Feng Tianxiang, and asked straightforwardly: “Has Feng Yun come back?”

Feng Tianxiang thought that he was going to die but never thought that Long Yu would ask him such a question, making him slightly gawk.

A ray of hope appeared on his old face as he said hastily: “He has come back! A couple of days ago, has injured your foster parent and become the head of Feng clan, and at present, is supposed to be celebrating the great occasion of becoming the head of Feng clan by organizing a large feast.”

“He has injured foster father?”

Long Yu’s complexion changed instantaneously.

“Yes Long Yu, this thing has nothing to do with me, ah, you’re looking for him right? Then go find him but please let me go, I promise to never appear in front of you!”

At the moment, Feng Tianxiang broke into cold sweat and begged for mercy.

“Really?”

Long Yu faintly smiled, and immediately lifted his hand, which was covered in a layer of golden light and suddenly hit him with his 'Demon vajra seal'.

Long Yu followed the rule of never going easy on his enemies.

There was an unwilling color on his face and as Long Yu's 'Demon vajra seal' was printed on his chest, his whole body flew upside down and died vomiting blood! He was only at Wudao sixth layer, simply couldn't withstand the attack from a master of Wudao eight layer.

"So Feng Yun actually came back early, injured foster father and proclaimed himself as the head of Feng clan.... I'd like to see whether he has the ability to be the head of Feng clan."

Long Yu's figure suddenly flashed and disappeared in the forest.

Leaving behind all the dead bodies in that field, he rushed in the direction of Yu Guan city.

.....

Yu Guan City, west, residence of Feng clan.

The weather was bright. At this time, Feng clan's mansion was decorated with lanterns and colored banners, and guests had been invited to celebrate this great occasion of Feng Yun becoming the head of Feng clan.

The entire Feng clan had gathered there, happy talks and laughter could be heard everywhere, the whole mansion looked lively and bustling with people.

Feng Yun was clad in a white dress, and with a smile on his face, he was sitting in the main hall and was accepting congratulations from the people arriving unceasingly.

A young man with haughty demeanor was sitting next to Feng Yun. From his appearance, he slightly resembled Ling Han and was most likely someone from the Ling clan.

“Ling Lie, judging from the time, Li Chong should be back soon.”

Feng Yun inadvertently said.

“Perhaps that waste boy did not dare to return and Li Chong is still waiting for his return, naturally can’t come back early.”

The arrogant youth, Ling Lie, who looked like Ling Han, said indifferently.

Feng Yun didn’t answer, it seemed like he was thinking deeply about something.

He took a quick glance at the courtyard, outside the main hall and saw that the heads of the rich and powerful clans, Tan, Qin and Luo, had personally come to congratulate him.

They had been brought here by the influence of strength. Feng Yun stepped

into the Wudao ninth layer, and became the head of Feng clan, so naturally other major clans of Yu Guan city wouldn't dare not to congratulate him!

It was a rare thing in the entire Yu Yuan city to find such a young master of Wudao ninth layer. The strongest person in Yu Guan city was a sixty years old man at the Wudao ninth layer. He was actually the ancestor of Tan clan!

But at present, Feng Yun was less than thirty years old but his strength was already comparable with the strength of Tan clan's ancestor, which was indeed an admirable accomplishment!

Just like Feng Yun, Ling Lie was also a formidable core disciple of Zhentian sect and both of them were receiving lots of dowry. He was also the center of attraction like Feng Yun and receiving similar treatment!

"Feng Yun, my nephew, so young and still stepped into the Wudao ninth layer, congratulations."

A white-haired old man, accompanied by a girl in red dress, arrived in front of Feng Yun and congratulated him: "This is my granddaughter, Tan Yue. Like you, she is also a disciple Zhentian Sect, perhaps can intimate"

This white-haired old man was actually the ancestor of Tan clan!

And it seemed like he wanted to act as a matchmaker for his granddaughter.

Feng Yun took a look at this young girl, Tan Yue, but only found her face to be charming. He wanted to look at her complete appearance, but he didn't dare to look, fearing it to be very likable.

How could a martial arts powerhouse possibly lack a woman's companionship?

"Sit down here."

Feng Yun smiled in a refined way and gently said.

"Yue child, now quickly thank the current head of Feng clan."

Tan clan's ancestor said in a strict voice.

"Ok."

Tan Yue's face revealed a happy expression: "Many thanks to Feng Yun, head of Feng clan."

"Getting such a beauty, the status of being the head of Feng clan is really worthy of the name, ha ha."

Ling Lie saw the facial features of Tan Yue and seemed to have developed a liking, but since she had already taken a fancy for Feng Yun, he certainly wouldn't have such thoughts.

"Women always act distraction in the way of martial arts way."

Feng Yun indifferently said.

This made Tan Yue, who just sat beside Feng Yun, unhappy, but she didn't dare to show it on her face in front of Feng Yun.

While at this time, suddenly, screams of many people in the courtyard attracted the attention of Feng Yun and the others.

Feng Yun, Ling Lie and Tan Yue glanced towards the courtyard, and saw a boy, clad in black clothes. Two servants tried to stop him but were sent flying by him, and with long strides, the boy stepped into main hall of Feng Clan.

“Long Yu!”

These words suddenly came up in the hearts of everyone present there.

.....

Chapter 54 Ling Lie attacks (Part 1)

When Long Yu made an appearance, the whole audience was startled!

Feng Yun suddenly stood up, and tightly wrinkled his eyes brows.

Long Yu came back then what happened to Li Chong? What happened to Feng Longline and Feng Tianxiang, who along with some other juniors, went to the forest to intercept Long Yu? Did it mean that Long Yu didn't come through the forest, but detoured inadequately?

Otherwise, there was no reason that they would be unable to block this waste boy!

“Ha ha ha, Feng Yun, the head of Feng clan, well quite impressive!”

Long Yu laughed mockingly when he saw Feng Yun, clad in a white dress. He also saw Tan Yue, sitting beside him, as well as other people sitting in the main hall of Feng clan's mansion.

“Tan clan's ancestor!”

A white haired old man, along with dozens of people from Tan clan, was sitting in the courtyard and was drinking wine. This immediately reminded Long Yu of how he killed Tan Jian in Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest.

Unfortunately, none of the members of Tan clan really knew that Tan Jian was actually killed by Long Yu!

The members of Tan clan looked at Long Yu but their looks seemed to be filled with resentment. However, when Tan clan's ancestor looked at him, a strong killing intention flashed in his eyes.

He knew that shortly after just joining Zhentian Sect, his granddaughter, Tan Yue, was bullied by Long Yu, and later, her leg was also broken by him.

It was obvious that Tan clan's ancestor wanted to take Long Yu's life!

No wonder, this grandfather was just like his granddaughter, not to forget that it was him who spoiled Tan Yue. He was the main reason how she caught the so-called princess disease, turning her into a cunning and unreasonable person.

“Qin clan!”

Long Yu looked on the other side, and saw Qin Ronger, who had accused him for snatching Teng snake king's neidan from her. At this time, a middle-aged man sitting beside her and there was sign of hatred on his face.

That middle-aged man was actually Qin Ronger's father. He was also the father of that Qin Tianque, who had been killed by Long Yu in the Abyss of Teng snakes. He was the head of Qin clan, named Qin Duan.

At this moment, Qin Duan saw Long Yu and a look of anger and hatred immediately flashed in his eyes.

Qin Ronger was expelled from Zhentian Sect and he naturally knew that Qin

Tianque was killed by Long Yu, so at that time, when he saw Long Yu, how could he possibly hide his hatred for Long Yu?

He must take revenge today by killing the murderer of his son!

“Luo clan!”

Long Yu located the members of Luo clan. Earlier, he didn't have any connection with Luo clan. Luo clan had the lowest position among the four other respected clans of Yu Guan city, and was also known to keep minimal dealings with the other clans.

But even so, when Feng Yun declared himself as the head of Feng clan, Luo clan sent some people to congratulate him.

“Feng Yao, Li Yu!”

Both mother and daughter were also sitting in the main hall, and at that time, there were astonished looks on their faces, obviously they never thought that Long Yu would come back at this time.

However, although mother and daughter were present there, but even the shadow of Feng Longsong was nowhere to be seen?

“I heard that foster father was injured by Feng Yun, and this mother and daughter have come here to congratulate him and also seem to be in leisurely and carefree mood, are really scoundrels.”

A cold look appeared in Long Yu's eyes, at that time, he ignored Feng Yao and Li Yu, because to him, the most essential thing was that he must see Feng Longsong!

"Feng Yun, where is my foster father?"

Long Yu looked at Feng Yun and asked fiercely.

As he said these words, a middle-aged man sitting beside Feng Yun, stood up and looked at Long Yu in a taunting way: "Today, my son has become the head of Feng clan, and this waste, dares to shout and wrangle on this occasion, and is also being impolite to the head of the clan."

This middle-aged man was actually the father of Feng Yun, Feng Longtian!

In the main hall, direct descendants of Feng clan had taken their respective seats, for example, Feng Luo, Feng Yang, and so on, but since Feng Qianqian was killed by Yu Qianning at the entrance gate of Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, so she was not present on this occasion.

Both Feng Luo and Feng Yang looked at Long Yu with hateful looks in their eyes.

(Mystique-Feng Luo is Feng Yun's younger brother and used to bully Long Yu. He was defeated by Long Yu outside the Feng clan's Martial Court. Feng Yang is the elder brother of Feng Qianqian, he was defeated by Long Yu outside Zhentian sect's Martial Court.)

"Head of Feng clan?"

Long Yu sneered: “You mean to say a waste like Feng Yun has been made the head of Feng clan? It really makes me laugh!”

As he said these words, suddenly, people in the surroundings began to curse out loud.

“Feng Yun is a dignified master of Wudao ninth layer. How can a waste like you dare to insult him like this?

“Cousin Feng Yun is the head of Feng clan, it is perfectly justified. Do you actually think that a waste like you can decide whether he is a good choice for this position or not?”

“You actually dare to cause trouble at this time, you are acting recklessly!”

As the last sentence finished, suddenly a youth got up and jumped towards Long Yu.

“I’m Feng Lin. I will teach you a lesson and give you a clear understanding of what you really are!”

This youth, named Feng Lin, who jumped towards Long Yu, was actually a talented master of the branch clan and was now at the Wudao sixth layer.

When Feng Lin interfered into this matter and took action, in the surroundings, many people showed their smiling faces in a teasing manner. This Long Yu rushed to kick up a fuss today just to make Feng Yun lose his face, now

this boy would be taught an absolutely malicious lesson!

But soon, their smiling faces turned stiff.

“The clear understanding of what I really am? We’ll see.”

Long Yu sneered, his figure was gorgeously motionless, but right then, he directly pounded his fist towards Feng Lin!

Feng Lin thought that this Long Yu was such a waste, a disdainful smile appeared on his face and he also threw his fist towards Long Yu.

Bang!

The forceful punch of Long Yu directly hit Feng Lin, and one of his arms was discarded, his whole body was sent flying several feet away, and he heavily fell on the ground. No wonder it was him who acted recklessly and paid the price for that!

Chapter 54 Ling Lie attacks (Part 2)

A silence spread across the audience! Those who wanted to make fun of Long Yu suddenly turned lifeless on the spot.

Only those, who already knew the strength of Long Yu weren’t affected by this outcome and they did not have any surprises at this scene, for example, Qin

Duan, the head of Qin clan, Feng Yun, Ling Lie, *etc.*

Qin Duan knew that Long Yu killed his son, Qin Tianque, and Feng Luo, who was merely at Wudao sixth layer, certainly didn't stand a chance against him.

Moreover, Feng Yun and Ling Lie knew that Long Yu was a core disciple of Zhentian Sect, so it was basically impossible for him to be defeated by a trivial guy like Feng Lin.

"How dare you!"

Feng Yun looked at Long Yu and loudly said: "You dare to hurt someone from my Feng clan, you have gone too far!"

"So, according to what you mean, I should just stand here and let him attack me?"

Long Yu said in a cold voice.

"Enough said."

With an indifferent look on his face, Feng Yun sneered and lightly said: "Feng clan takes the responsibility for its actions but it's not answerable to a waste like you. Earlier, you were a waste, you are a waste and even in future, you will always be a waste! But, you have offended some body from my Feng clan so today, I must teach you a lesson and allow everyone to witness what happens to those who try to offend my clan. Otherwise, won't people stop being scared of the Feng clan?"

“Whether they are scared or not, how is that related to me?”

Long Yu said at will: “Today, I have come to restore my foster parent to his earlier status, and I will also teach you a lesson about what it means to respect your elders!”

After saying these words, a fierce killing intention flashed in Long Yu’s eyes.

This Feng Yun dared to injure his foster father so it was now impossible that Long Yu would forgive him at any cost!

Wudao ninth layer, so what?

Long Yu, now, had enough confidence in his own strength and knew that he could deal with Feng Yun!

First, beat Feng Yun, frighten the audience, and only by doing so, he could handle the affairs of Feng clan and pave the way for Feng Longsong in the future.

Seeing the conflicts between Feng Yun and Long Yu was intensifying second by second, the people of Tan clan and Qin clan were full of hatred for Long Yu, but were respectively repressed as well.

Looking at this dogfight of Feng clan, they could certainly benefit as the third party in this dispute!

Feng Yun had stepped into the Wudao ninth layer and became the head of

Feng clan, making another three large clans to have a sense of crisis. If they would allow Feng Yun to step any further, wouldn't the entire Yu Guan city then come under the influence of Feng clan?

Today, they came here with this purpose, of course, under the pretext of coming here just to congratulate Feng Yun!

Now, that Long Yu brought appetizers, they didn't mind to first look at the show from the sidelines.

"Brother Feng Yun, he seems like a clumsy clown, but it's still not your turn to personally go into action."

At this point, Ling Lie, sitting beside Feng Yun, stood up and said while contemptuously looking at Long Yu: "I, Ling Lie, will get rid of him."

"Good."

Feng Yun nodded.

Ling Lie was at Wudao ninth layer, although his strength was inferior to that of Feng Yun, but when it came to dealing with Long Yu, he was certainly more than enough.

When Ling Lie walked towards Long Yu, he narrowed his eyes.

"Your name is Ling Lie, what relation do you have with Ling Han?"

Long Yu asked.

“Ling Han is my younger brother.”

Ling Lie said freely: “Your death is imminent so all this is none of your business, because there’s basically no point in asking questions before your death?”

“Since you are Ling Han’s brother, today I will spare your life.”

Long Yu said.

After saying this, everyone, including Feng Yun, suddenly gawked for a moment then immediately laughed.

“Ling Lie is at Wudao ninth layer and you actually talk about sparing his life, don’t you think it’s simply laughable?”

Feng Yao’s crisp voice, which was full of disdain, came from one side.

Fortunately, she did not say it loudly. Long Yu looked at her and laughed: “Laughable, laughable! Feng Yao, you are the biological daughter of my foster father, Feng Longsong, and this Feng Yun has injured your father and snatched the status of Feng clan’s head from him, but look at you, attending the celebration. You actually came here to congratulate Feng Yun but don’t you think that your own actions are too shameless?”

“Look at Cousin Feng Yun’s strength, neither I nor my father are his match.”

Feng Yao lightly said: “What’s wrong with him becoming the head of Feng clan?”

“Well said, be the strongest and then you can be the head of Feng clan!”

Long Royal said with contempt: “Since this Feng Yun is stronger than your father, so now you are in his favor? this indicates that from now onwards, you will no longer recognize your father and follow Feng Yun?”

As Long Yu said these words, several people gave strange looks to Feng Yao.

Feng Yao’s complexion immediately stiffened, but sitting nearby, her mother, Li Yu, immediately said aloud in a harsh tone: “You waste kid, don’t distort the facts. Feng Yun became the head of Feng clan, and we people have come to congratulate him, so what is wrong with it? You are not educated enough to understand all these things, you are deliberately making trouble in Feng clan, it is highly improper!”

“No need to talk nonsense with him, I will finish him quickly.”

There was an unhappy look in Ling Lie’s eyes, he was 33rd ranked core disciple of Zhentian Sect, and his strength was very good, but right on his face, Long Yu actually said to spare his life, which made him feel very uncomfortable.

“I’d like to see whether a waste like you has the ability to spare my life!”

Ling Lie’s words were full of sarcasm, step by step he moved forward and stopped almost 100 feet away from Long Yu.

Since they were going to fight so the people, sitting nearby, left their seats so as to avoid being hit by the stray attacks.

“Ling Lie comes from the Ling clan and just like Ling Han, he must also have practiced that super grade martial skill called white noble spirit.”

Long Yu thought to himself, while his eyes were fixed on Ling Lie. Suddenly, the Xuan qi began to revolve and congeal rapidly in his entire body.

“Swing the stratus step!”

Ling Lie suddenly jumped and his whole body shot up towards the sky, and almost instantly reached the height of 100 feet.

‘Swing the stratus step’ was a top-grade martial skill of Zhentian Sect, and it was said that if practiced to the perfection level, its cultivator could step into the clouds. Also, it could be used to coordinate various martial skill applications.

“Xuan wind destroyer!”

Ling Lie was at a very high altitude and suddenly waved his hand. Green colored Xuan qi immediately congealed on his hand and he suddenly shot his palm down towards Long Yu!

Ling Lie was dropping from so high and the might of this move was extremely powerful, most importantly, he also immediately released the Zhentian mood in order to suppress Long Yu, so that his palm attack won’t miss to hit Long Yu!

Chapter 55 Spare your life (Part 1)

As Ling Lie cast out this trick, suddenly the wind in the sky turned bone-chilling cold, and the Zhentian mysterious mood, that he released, not only enveloped Long Yu but also shrouded all the people in the surrounding.

These guests, who were suppressed by Ling Lie's mysterious mood, were startled in their hearts. What type of strength was this? It made the flow of Xuan qi in their meridians stagnant, and also blocked their movements completely, if someone seized this opportunity and attacked them, they absolutely couldn't run away!

Sure enough, he was indeed worthy of the title of the core disciple of Zhentian Sect, a Wudao ninth layer powerhouse, equipped with such a terrific strength!

Even Tan clan's ancestor, who was not far away, felt the suppression from the Zhentian mysterious mood and his complexion suddenly changed, fearful, this was too fearful.

The mysterious mood used by a Wudao ninth layer master of Zhentian Sect was enough to quell the audience all together!

Respective core laws were present in all seven large sects. Since Tan clan's ancestor, a Wudao ninth layer master, hadn't practiced any core law, so it was certainly impossible for him to comprehend the ideal condition of any world laws.

(Mystique-Ideal condition is the same thing as mood. One can only practice the ideal condition of a core law. Zhentian sect's core law is called 'Zhentian

tactics' and its ideal condition is called 'Zhentian mysterious mood'. The next level of mysterious mood is called 'Zhentian mysterious charm')

At this moment, almost everyone felt that Long Yu would be struck by this terrifying burst of suppression, as its might was really too strong.

But the next moment, Long Yu shot outrageously.

"Nine hidden Dragon Mark, activate!"

Long Yu used his intention to activate the mark, and immediately, the great strength of 100,000 Jin spread throughout his body from the 'Nine hidden Dragon Mark'. The Xuan qi began to boil up within his whole body and his hand began to emit a thin layer of golden light.

"Demon vajra seal, congeal!"

A pale golden big hand imprint sprang out from Long Yu's palm and immediately headed towards Ling Lie, who was still dropping from the clouds.

Ling Lie condensed green colored Xuan qi on his hands and instantaneously displayed the perfection level of 'Xuan wind destroyer' martial skill. He thrust his palm towards that golden big hand seal, and suddenly, pale golden light and green colored Xuan collided with each other and scattered in all directions.

The next moment, a thin layer of golden light covered the entire body of Long Yu. At this time, he actually cast out 'Demon vajra cover'.

Ling Lie was at Wudao ninth layer and was ranked 33rd core disciple, so Long Yu's 'Demon vajra seal' couldn't defeat him in one shot.

Ling Lie's 'Xuan wind destroyer' palm attack abruptly dropped from the sky and fell stiffly on Long Yu's head.

Bang!

A loud and heavy noise spread in all directions, making all people open their eyes with astonishment.

Ling Lie was a tyrannical master at Wudao ninth layer, and since his palm attack had directly fallen on Long Yu's head, then he would certainly have died on the spot.

"Do you have only this much strength?"

Long Yu smirked as the corners of his mouth slightly curled up: "Your attack didn't even tickle!"

Under the protective armor of 'Demon vajra cover', Long Yu was simply unscathed. He immediately stomped his foot and directly stimulated the Blizzard boots, and with a gust of wind and snow rushing out of boots, he rushed towards Ling Lie.

"Demon vajra seal!"

Long Yu once again congealed a layer of golden light on his hand, and shot a

big hand golden seal towards Ling Lie, who was caught up in the wind and snow.

“He has actually practiced a body refining martial skill to perfection level!”

Ling Lie certainly felt Long Yu’s breath. He knew, if Long Yu had not practiced a body refining type martial skill to the perfection skill, he wouldn’t have been able to resist ‘Xuan wind destroyer’!

Seeing Long Yu’s golden hand seal coming towards him, Ling Lie retreated several steps, immediately waved his one hand and instantly released a white beam of light.

“White noble spirit!”

Right when this white light appeared, it immediately enveloped Long Yu, and just like Zhentian mysterious mood, it also began to hinder Long Yu’s movements.

The white light beam appeared out of the blue and instantly struck Long Yu’s golden hand seal.

Accompanied by a loud thunderclap, white light and golden light scattered in the air and Long Yu withdrew several successive steps, as if he was in a disadvantageous position.

“This Ling Lie, his strength is really good, this 33rd ranked core disciple of Zhentian Sect is stronger than I imagined.”

Long Yu's eyes shone brightly: "But now, you will not get the chance."

He used his intention and suddenly released Zhentian mysterious charm!

The Zhentian mysterious charm instantly erupted and broke through Ling Lie's mysterious mood then it also defeated his white noble spirit, which once more startled everyone in the surrounding.

The strength, which erupted from Long Yu, was stronger and more terrific than that of Ling Lie.

Nearby guests, one by one, came under the suppression of Zhentian mysterious charm, almost made them suffocate.

Under the influence of such a heavy repression, let alone fighting back, they couldn't even walk or eat!

And this turned out to be from the strength that erupted from Long Yu!

At this moment, a lot of people looked at Long Yu and their impression about him suddenly changed, Long Yu, the waste, was now no longer a waste in their eyes, because he was able to fight with a master of Wudao ninth layer!

Of course, until now, no one thought that Long Yu would be able to beat Ling Lie, after all, everyone already knew about Ling Lie's great strength, and Long Yu just started to display his true strength.

"Zhentian charm!"

Ling Lie's complexion turned somewhat ugly.

Under the heavy suppression of the Zhentian charm, his actions were hampered and he could only partially offset it by using the repressive power of his mysterious mood, but still couldn't completely remain unaffected.

"White noble spirit!"

A burst of white light rushed out from his body and moved towards Long Yu and it seemed like it would soon envelop him completely.

But, at this time, Long Yu displayed 'Flickering wind step' and in just one twinkling step, he directly arrived behind Ling Lie.

"Demon vajra seal!"

Long Yu congealed out the golden hand seal and shot it at Ling Lie's back!

Shua! Shua!

The white beam of light instantly circled around Ling Lie's body, just like a snake, and appeared on his back then collided with the golden hand seal.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

Chapter 55 Spare your life (Part 2)

Long Yu went on pounding his golden hand seal continuously one after another, fiercely compelling and forcing Ling Lie to withdraw constantly towards the rear area.

Even white noble spirit, a super grade martial skill, couldn't stop Long Yu who was pushing him back step by step!

Ling Lie pulled out all of his strength, but his body could only use the strength of nearly 300 fierce horses at the maximum, however, keeping the fact into consideration that Long Yu was only at Wudao eighth layer so Ling Lie's basic strength was not inferior to that of Long Yu. Ling Lie tried his best to figure out what was going on, but he still couldn't find a solution to this problem!

(Mystique-1 fierce horse strength = 1000 Jin)

Under the heavy repression of Long Yu's Zhentian mysterious charm, the imposing aura of Ling Lie continued to weaken, and after receiving more than a dozen hits of 'Demon vajra seal', Ling Lie finally couldn't withstand anymore.

After a crashing palm strike, a pale golden light flashed, accompanied by a loud sound!

Ling Lie was sent flying by Long Yu's final palm attack, he spurted out a mouthful of blood and his body went flying across the Feng mansion's courtyard wall and then heavily fell on the Yu Guan city street. This immediately attracted the attention of several people, who stopped to look at this scene.

Wasn't today the date of change of Feng clan's head? There was supposed to be a banquet going on, how come someone was sent flying outside the Feng mansion and it seemed like this person was injured as well?

A this time, not only many guests, who had come to congratulate Feng Yun, but other ordinary people, all stopped and started pointing towards the Feng clan mansion and discussing among themselves.

"As I said before, since you are Ling Han's brother, I will spare your life, so you better get out of here now."

Long Yu, step by step, arrived near Ling Lie and said contemptuously!

With great difficulty, Ling Lie managed to crawl up and looked at Long Yu, while his eyes revealed a vicious color: "You have dared to hurt me, now die!"

As his voice fell, Ling Lie took out a multicolored bracelet from his bosom and directly threw it towards Long Yu.

"A battle weapon?"

Long Yu thought to himself when he saw that colorful bracelet, it instantly increased in size and wrapped Long Yu's stature all of a sudden, afterward it began to reduce in size unceasingly.

Moreover, Long Yu also felt that the flow of Xuan qi in his body suddenly stopped under the influence of this colorful bracelet, making him unable to use

Xuan qi!

“You are dead.”

Ling Lie wiped blood from the corner of his mouth, his eyes revealed a vicious look, then he stood up and gradually walked towards Long Yu.

“This battle weapon is good, but unfortunately, you are highly mistaken if you think that it can bind me!”

Long Yu shouted and immediately stimulated the circulation of Xuan qi towards his Dantian and five internal organs!

By quenching his Dantian with Xuan qi, it become very tough and when it closely followed Long Yu’s heart beats, all of a sudden, Xuan qi was released from his Dantian and circulated throughout his body.

“You have been trapped by the calming down bracelet, at your current state, what do you think you can achieve?”

Ling Lie sneered and arrived in front of Long Yu, he raised his hand and congealed white noble spirit into his palm: “Perfection level of body refining type martial skill, so what, I’d like to see you in the end how much resistance do you have.”

As his voice fell, the white noble spirit, condensed on his palm, instantly congealed sharp spikes and rushed towards Long Yu to puncture his whole body.

However at this time, Xuan qi erupted from Long Yu's Dantian and spread throughout his body!

A short while ago, his Xuan qi was sealed, but now that got fresh supply of Xuan qi from his Dantian, he was able to cast 'ghost flash'.

His whole body turned hollow, similar to that of a ghost in general.

His ghostly figure rapidly withdrew and separated out from the encirclement of that colorful bracelet.

"Ghost flash? A waste like you..... this is really unexpected!"

Ling Lie saw the incarnated ghost body of Long Yu and there was simply an incredible look on his face because almost nobody actually practiced 'ghost flash' and this guy not only practiced 'ghost flash', but also actually used it to dodge the trap of colorful bracelet.

"Demon vajra cover!"

Immediately, the whole body of Long Yu was covered in a thin layer of golden light, and the next moment, it withstood all the attacks of white noble spirit. He once again released Zhentian mysterious charm and moved step by step towards Ling Lie.

"Demon vajra seal!"

This time, not only his hand was covered in a thin layer of golden light, but he

also didn't forget to put up the wandering souls glove.

Wandering souls glove fist could enhance the power of his right hand, naturally, would also enhance the power of 'Demon vajra seal'.

Ling Lie had just been injured and was now facing Long Yu's attack, while being repressed by Zhentian mysterious charm, so he was simply unable to fight back.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

One palm after another, Ling Lie continued to retrocede and was finally knocked down once again by Long Yu!

This time, Long Yu was not in a mood to forgive him. Long Yu put his one foot on Ling Lie's arm, and the next instant, a sound of breaking bone resounded everywhere, followed by Ling Lie's pitiful screams!

"There goes your arm, now will you stay down?"

After that, Long Yu gave a heavy kick to Ling Lie and sent him flying several feet away on the street.

Obviously, he had absolutely no hatred or enmity for Ling Lie. Ling Lie wanted to take his life but Long Yu promised him to spare his life just because he really looked like Ling Han.

Seeing this, many guests of Feng clan were shocked at the scene, they never thought that this Long Yu could actually be so strong, and would be able to

defeat a Wudao ninth layer master like Ling Lie and send him flying on the street.

Only with the strength of Wudao eighth layer, he managed to beat a master of Wudao ninth layer. This was enough to make someone proud of himself.

But after seeing this scene, Feng Yun, sitting inside the main hall of Feng mansion, was finally unable to bear any longer!

“Waste, you are going to die!”

Feng Yun, dressed in white clothes, came out of Feng mansion, and immediately resorted to the super grade martial skill of Zhentian Sect, ‘horizon is close’ to make a long-range raid on Long Yu.

The distance of few hundred feet could be covered in a blink of an eye by using this agility skill!

“So, he has actually practiced two super grade martial skills, which means that Feng Yun has already practiced sky-wave cross to the perfection level!”

Long Yu was still calm, thinking how much terrifying the perfection level of a super grade martial skill could be?

He had yet not experienced it, but could affirm that Feng Yun was much more fiercer and more formidable than Ling Lie!

Chapter 56 Fierce battle with Feng Yun

When Feng Yun attacked, almost all the people on the street were convinced that Long Yu would certainly die, as everybody knew that Feng Yun, the present head of Feng clan, was the 10th ranked core disciple of Zhentian Sect!

Although, Long Yu easily beat Ling Lie, but now that he was facing Feng Yun, he would surely suffer defeat.

“His strength seems to have become good, but he is still too stupid.”

Within the Feng mansion, Feng Yao’s opinion regarding Long Yu slightly changed for the better, and she also poured some admiration for him. She thought that since Long Yu defeated Ling Lie, this meant that his strength was not worse than her.

But, now he was causing trouble by interfering with the affairs of Feng clan, and in this respect, he was being absurdly stupid, because now Feng Yun emerged on the scene, how could he forgive Long Yu so easily?

“Yao’er, you don’t need to pay attention to that waste.”

Liu Yu said indifferently: “Now your father has lost his position as the head of Feng clan, we don’t have any status in Feng clan anymore, you may as well return to imperial city with me, so that you can obtain more resources to practice martial skills.”

When Feng Yao heard from Liu Yu to return to imperial city, her complexion

changed for the worse, that place.....

Outside of the Feng mansion, on the Yu Guan city street!

Feng Yun resorted to agility type martial skill, 'horizon is close', and instantly came behind Long Yu. At that time, he was holding a sword battle weapon, and suddenly, he swept out sword qi towards Long Yu.

"It's Storm sword tactic, a top-grade sword skill of Zhentian Sect!"

Many people exclaimed aloud.

Not only the sword skill was a top-grade martial skill of Zhentian Sect, the sword in the hand of Feng Yun was actually a top-grade battle weapon that Zhentian Sect rewarded only to its top ten core disciples.

By using this top-grade battle weapon, one could blast sword qi out of it, and could be able to play much power. Everyone was waiting to watch this in action.

"Storm sword tactic?"

Long Yu dodged sideways and was quite surprised. He actually didn't imagine that he would have to face this sword type martial skill.

When he just joined Zhentian Sect, he had to fight with Han Jian, and at that time, Han Jian had displayed the same 'Storm sword tactic' and released sword qi to attack him, but this attack was scattered by Long Yu.

But, at this time, the sword qi attack released by Feng Yun was god knows how many times more powerful in comparison to that of Han Jian!

Feng Yun had not only practiced this martial skill to the perfection level, but was also holding a top-grade sword battle weapon in his hand, and in the face of the combination of the two, Long Yu didn't dare to ignore it, even if he had practiced Demon tyrant form to the perfection level.

Feng Yun waved his sword, and instantaneously, ten tornados rolled out and rushed towards Long Yu.

Then, the body of Feng Yun was surrounded by the tornado, and since the blast was fast, in a blink of an eye, it rushed from another direction to puncture his body with more than ten swords rushed!

“Demon vajra cover!”

Long Yu instantly operated his Xuan qi, and immediately, a layer of golden light appeared on the surface of his body and some of this golden light instantly rushed towards the tornado.

The golden light that came out of the body of Long Yu rushed towards the tornado and neutralized its effects, so this tornado attack failed to damage the Demon vajra cover of Long Yu.

Although, this ‘Storm sword tactic’ was a top-grade sword type martial skill, but Long Yu’s Demon vajra cover was also a top-grade body refining type martial skill, so he didn’t fear the words that the opposite party put together hardly!

The next moment, Long Yu quickly rushed against the tornado and arrived in front of Feng Yun.

“Demon vajra seal!”

Long Yu waved his hand, and a layer of golden light immediately condensed on his palm, and he instantly swept away his palm towards Feng Yun.

“This technique of yours can only work on other people!”

Feng Yun sneered and instantaneously resorted to agility type martial skill, horizon is close, and in flash, withdrew several steps back and easily dodged Long Yu’s golden hand imprint.

They went on clashing against each other, making no distinction between victory and defeat.

This scene fell into the eyes of everyone in the surrounding and a lot people were extremely surprised.

This Long Yu’s strength seemed to be good, after all he was able to withstand the attack from Feng Yun’s top-grade sword martial skill, and it also looked like the effect of Long Yu’s body refining martial skill was excellent.

Only with the strength of Wudao eighth layer, he was able to fight with Feng Yun on equal grounds. This was enough for Long Yu to be proud of himself!

“It’s only a pity that at present, Feng Yun is just playing around with him.”

“Yes, two days ago, in his battle with Feng Longsong and Feng Yao, Feng Yun used his true great strength.”

“You don’t understand, this Long Yu’s strength is not enough to force Feng Yun into using his true strength.”

Everyone was talking about, but simply did not know who would eventually win.

Because in their eyes, it was simply impossible to defeat Feng Yun!

On the street, Feng Yun moved sideways to withdraw several to escape from Long Yu’s Demon vajra, and said with a disdainful smile on his face: “Waste, your speed is the same as that of an ant. You simply don’t have the stratagem which will ensure your success before me!”

“If my speed is the same as that of an ant then how about you?”

Long Yu said in a cold voice and instantly displayed the Xiao Cheng level of ‘ghost flash’ and also stimulated his Blizzard boots.

Although, the speed of Long Yu obtained by the display of Xiao Cheng level of ‘ghost flash’ was slightly slower than the speed of Feng Yun granted by the Da Cheng level of ‘horizon is close’, but when the acceleration effect of the Blizzard boots was added to it, then his speed was in no way less than the speed of Feng Yun.

“Demon vajra seal!”

Long Yu’s palm emitted a faint golden light, and with the accelerated Blizzard boots, it raided on Feng Yun at lightning speed.

“Horizon is close!”

Feng Yun immediately resorted to agility type martial skill once again and his figure instantly flashed behind Long Yu.

But Long Yu seemed well prepared, he footsteps moved and he turned back to shoot his palm! Meanwhile, a storm of snow and ice was gushing out of his Blizzard boots, while he rushed behind Feng Yun at an extremely fast speed.

After attaining resonance with his boots battle weapon, so long he stimulated the Blizzard boots, the storm of snow and ice would hinder the movement of his opponents!

Long Yu shot his palm while a burst of snow and ice roll towards Feng Yun!

Even if Feng Yun had practiced horizon is close to the Da Cheng level, but at this time, he was too late to dodge, so he only waved his hand: “Horizon barrier!”

Even if Feng Yun had practiced horizon is close to the Da Cheng level, but at this time, he was too late to dodge, so he only waved his hand: “Horizon barrier!”

A layer of translucent barrier suddenly appeared around the body of Feng Yun, and when Long Yu looked at Feng Yun through this barrier, it seemed as if both sides were separated by several miles distance.

“So, this Feng Yun can actually condense horizon barrier, which means he has practiced this agility type super grade martial skill to the perfection level!”

Long Yu thought coldly and just came to know that this Feng Yun was actually hiding his true strength.

Horizon barrier from the perfection level of ‘horizon is close’, perfection level of the Storm sword tactic and perfection level of sky-wave cross!

Feng Yun was indeed worthy of being the 10th ranked core disciple of Zhentian Sect, and his ability to comprehend martial skill was beyond most cultivators. In less than 30 years, he had already comprehended two super grade martial skills to the perfection level.

Accompanied by the storm of snow and ice released by Blizzard boots, Long Yu dashed against the horizon barrier and shot his palm.

Suddenly, then golden light dissipated along with snow and ice without a trace. Long Yu’s attack didn’t have any effect on Feng Yun’s horizon barrier!

“See? Relying on horizon is close, a super grade martial skill, I am in an

impregnable position.”

Feng Yun’s eyes were full of disdainful look. He waved his hand and the horizon barrier was removed, and then he instantly raised his hand.

Sky-wave cross!

This was the other super grade martial skill that he had practiced to the perfection level, which he cast out at once. Instantly, a white Xuan qi ripple, similar to white noble spirit, began to revolve around Feng Yun and immediately shot it at Long Yu.

“This is the same move that once passed through my right leg, making me lie down on the bamboo bed for half a month. Old white had to spend a super immortality pill to cure me!”

Long Yu saw this and his thoughts returned to that night. Relying on his strength of Wudao eighth layer, Feng Yun had really used cruel methods against him!

After remembering this, Long Yu’s eyes shone brightly, revealing a cold light in his eyes!

“I’d like to take a look at this move of yours. Let’s see whether it can run through the right leg once again or not.”

Long Yu immediately displayed ‘Demon vajra cover’, and instantly, a golden layer appeared around his right leg. Then he jumped and swept away a forceful kick towards the white Xuan qi ripple.

Boom!

Long Yu kicked on the sky-wave cross white Xuan qi ripple. The Xuan qi white ripple dashed against his right leg but his leg actually remained intact and unscathed!

After practicing Demon tyrant form to the perfection level, Long Yu's body had already turned into that of steel, so facing the same level of power was simply not big deal anymore.

Unfortunately, his kick was unable to break this sky-wave cross super grade martial skill.

Although the white Xuan qi ripple was broken by his kick, but the next moment, it actually restructured quite easily and continued to shoot towards Long Yu.

"Practicing a body refining martial skill to the perfection, is that even useful?"

Feng Yun sneered: "Its defense will sooner or later be broken."

As he said these words, under his manipulation, the Xuan qi ripple suddenly split into several channels and attacked Long Yu from different directions!

"This arrogant waste must be defeated."

In the Feng mansion, Tan clan's ancestor was watching and said lightly.

“Humph, this guy dared to bully my Tan Yue and is now making trouble in Feng clan, he is basically courting death.”

A middle-aged man, clad in black clothes, sitting beside Tan clan’s ancestor, said while his eyes were full of hatred.

This middle-aged man in black clothes was named Tan Heng, the father of Tan Jian and Tan Yue. He was also the current head of Tan clan and was at the Wudao eighth layer!

“I actually wanted to personally act but now Feng Yun is doing the job for us.”

Tan clan’s ancestors loudly snorted.

“If ancestor personally came into action then that boy won’t last one move.”

Tan Heng said with a proud smile on his face.

Tan clan had managed to obtain the most resources for its disciples throughout Yu Guan city just because of Tan clan’s ancestor!

Just because Tan Heng had a powerful father, he led this whole life very calmly and steadily!

Not far away, on the street, while facing white Xuan qi ripples from Feng Yun’s sky-wave cross martial skill, Long Yu immediately responded.

“Zhentian charm!”

Long Yu used his intention to release the strong repression of Zhentian charm, which instantly enveloped Feng Yun!

Under the repression of Zhentian charm, those white Xuan qi ripples suddenly slowed down, then Long Yu immediately displayed ‘Demon Vajra Seal’ and shot multiple times.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

All of the white Xuan qi ripples were crushed by Long Yu!

Under the repression of Zhentian charm, even a super grade martial skill, practiced to the perfection level, didn’t stand a chance. It was easily crushed and obliterated by Long Yu.

“I cannot believe that in your age, you are able comprehend Zhentian charm, it is really not easy!”

Feng Yun snorted, then stood firmly and began circulation of Xuan qi within his body. His white clothes were calm and unmoving, while at the same time, his long hair automatically began floating in the air!

Then a burst of imposing aura descended from the clouds, and all of a sudden, it mutually resisted against Long Yu’s Zhentian charm.

“It’s only a pity for you, but I have also comprehended Zhentian charm. You are still too naïve if you think you can deal with me by relying on it!”

Feng Yun’s white clothes were fluttering in the wind and he looked quite elegant and refined. The waves of white Xuan qi ripples congealed once again. Being a super grade martial skill, the biggest feature of sky-wave cross was the less consumption of Xuan qi.

Even if they were evenly matched, Feng Yun could keep on casting one attack after another, and eventually, the outcome of this battle would depend upon the consumption of Xuan qi!

“So this Feng Yun has also comprehended Zhentian charm!”

Long Yu frowned, it seemed like it was time for him to use the best grade martial skill, granted by ‘Nine Hidden Dragon mark’.

“Nine Hidden Dragon Fist, let me see how powerful you are.”

Long Yu thought while a cold light flashed in his eyes!

.....

Chapter 57 Incredible (Part 1)

When Feng Yun released his Zhentian charm to contend with Long Yu's charm, Long Yu instantly realized that if he didn't display 'Nine hidden Dragon Fist', he definitely wouldn't be able to beat Feng Yun.

Although, Feng Yun was the same as Ling Lie, at Wudao ninth layer, but his strength was much stronger, as he practiced two super grade martial skills to the perfection level, including both offensive and defensive, was extremely formidable!

"You are dead."

As Feng Yun's indifferent voice fell, a white Xuan qi ripple immediately rushed towards Long Yu to hit him.

The white clothing of Feng Yun was fluttering in the breeze making his whole person appear extremely elegant. Actually, when he displayed the sky wave cross martial skill at this time, several people in the surrounding started cheering for him.

Especially, Tan Yue as the extraordinary splendor induced the flow of tears in her eyes, but in her mind, she was always thinking about how to get hooked up with Feng Yun.

At least from the performance of Feng Yun, she was certain she was wanted him. If only she could be on good terms with such a powerhouse...

“Senior Feng Yun, you must kill him!”

Ling Lie, whose one arm had been broken by Long Yu, said while at this time, he held the corner of a pillar to stand up reluctantly, and was looking towards the distant field where the battle was taking place, while a ray of hatred was flashing in his eyes.

From infancy to maturity, Ling Lie had never been subjected to such humiliation, this boy named Long Yu, must die!

Feng Yao was also watching the fight from the main hall of Feng mansion and it seemed like even she wanted to completely get rid of Long Yu.

She wanted Long Yu dead for a long time, but now it seemed like finally, her wishes would be fulfilled.

Moreover, if he died at the hands of Feng Yun, it could be considered as his honor, after all, considering the talent of Feng Yun, in the future, he would definitely have greater achievements.

“Yao child, it seems that this waste boy is finally going to die.”

Li Yu, sitting beside Feng Yao, sarcastically said: “Such a kind of guy, but also wants to marry my Yao child, it’s really a wishful thinking.”

Feng Yao faintly smiled, in fact from the very beginning, her father wanted her to marry Long Yu, and if he had not made that decision then she would not have developed the killing intention for Long Yu

Now, however, it was too late, no matter how much Feng Longsong wanted to protect Long Yu, he would surely die at the hands of Feng Yun!

“This boy is going to die.”

The head of the Qin clan, Qin Duan, looked at the fight on the street, smiled and lightly said.

His attention diverted and inadvertently swept into the two directions where the representatives of Luo clan and Tan clan were present. Unexpectedly, his line of sight crossed paths with those of the Tan clan’s ancestor and Luo clan’s head.

The three people smiled, nodded secretly, and then looked away.

Obviously, the heads of these three clans had come to congratulate Feng Yun, but they already had joined forces and had a plan to undoubtedly needle the Feng clan!

Now, the moment Long Yu would die, perhaps that would be the time for their combined action.

Unfortunately, right now, the people of Feng clan didn’t know anything, all descendants of the Feng clan and the children of the collateral branches were watching the fighting on the street with excitement.

The new head of their clan was soon going to beat Long Yu and would once again establish the hegemony of the Feng clan!

Especially, Feng Luo, whose one leg was abandoned by Long Yu, and Feng Yang, whom Long Yu defeated at the entrance of Zhentian sect's Martial Court, these two were the most excited at this moment.

"You abandoned my right leg at the martial Court of my Feng clan, now, my brother Feng Yun, the head of the clan, would kill you with ease."

Feng Luo was thinking, as he saw Long Yu clenching his teeth facing the attack of Xuan qi ripples, and hoped that this attack would kill him for sure.

But the next moment, the scene on the street changed beyond the expectations of all!

"Sky wave cross, a super grade martial skill, practiced to the perfection level, is indeed really strong!"

Long Yu stood calm with self poise with a cold light flashing in his eyes, thinking in his heart: "But, the 'Nine hidden Dragon Fist' is a best grade martial skill, although I have only practiced it to the Da Cheng level, but there should be no problem facing sky wave cross."

In the entire Zhentian Sect, there wasn't a single best grade martial skill.

Perhaps there was best grade martial skill in Tang state's royal clan, but even they wouldn't have more than one or two, so one could see how precious a best grade martial skill actually was, common martial cultivators couldn't even dream about seeing one in their entire lifetime.

However now, Long Yu had a best grade martial skill and he had already practiced the first skill of 'Nine hidden Dragon Fist' called 'Intoxicated hell' to the Da Cheng level!

"Nine hidden Dragon Fist's first skill, intoxicated hell! Once practiced to the Da Cheng level, even a single fist can melt the road to heel and the Dragon qi leaking from the hell would deter the enemy by inducing intense fright."

Faced with the Xuan qi ripples of sky wave cross, Long Yu moved suddenly, leaving only an afterimage behind.

Flickering wind step, afterimage!

Then he immediately displayed 'Ghost flash', and suddenly, his body turned into an incarnated ghost, and instantly avoided the Xuan qi ripples that arrived in a flash but couldn't even touch him.

"Look at my fist, intoxicated hell!"

At this time, in Long Yu's hand, one could see wandering soul glove, which was sending out strange rays of light, followed by the 'Nine hidden Dragon qi' coming out of his right fist.

"What is this power?"

Feng Yun felt the 'Nine hidden Dragon qi' coming out of Long Yu's right hand and his complexion immediately changed.

Chapter 57 Incredible (Part 2)

He immediately recognized it. It was that powerful force that had burst out of Long Yu's chest when he pounded his fist on it, injuring him seriously and he had to take rest for two months to recover from it.

Until now, Feng Yun didn't know what kind of power it was actually, but at the moment, he knew well that he absolutely couldn't spell with Long Yu because this power was extremely gloomy and strange!

But while he was still thinking, the 'Nine hidden Dragon qi' suddenly became extremely strong and intense. It came in crashing and deterred his whole person all of a sudden, while his brain stopped working instantly.

The intoxicated hell, even a fist could melt the road to hell!

Long Yu shot his fist, and suddenly, 'Nine hidden Dragon qi' arose from the road to hell and spread in front of Feng Yun, then instantly enveloped him, which overawed his mind, making him to stop thinking at this very moment.

"Nine hidden Dragon Fist!"

Long Yu stimulated his Blizzard boots to its limits, his body became light like the breeze, instantly passed along the road to hell and arrived in front of Feng Yun!

The 'Nine hidden Dragon qi' congealed heavily into a fist suddenly pounded on

the chest of Feng Yun, and there erupted a terrifying air shock while the whole body of Feng Yun was sent flying in the air!

Dense, strange and awe-inspiring road to hell, upon which Long Yu was walking right now, was simply invisible to ordinary people, but this road was constantly melting and releasing 'Nine hidden Dragon qi' which was making the people in the surrounding to shudder with terror.

What was this power?

Just a fist attack actually sent Feng Yun flying!

Bang!

There was disbelief in the eyes of everyone, Feng Yun heavy fell on the ground, and even spouted a mouthful of blood.

But there was a somewhat dark look on his face. Obviously a strange force just now ravaged his body so heavily that he completely lost his battle efficiency.

"Nine hidden Dragon Fist is really extraordinary, indeed worthy of being a best quality martial skill."

Long Yu thought to himself, he looked up, quickly paced forward and soon arrived in front of Feng Yun, who was lying down on the ground.

He looked at Feng Yun and found a complex expression on Feng Yun's handsome face, his face had turned blue from shock, there was doubt as well as

disbelief apparent on his face, but more so, it was unwillingness on his face.

Yes, he was not willing. Feng Yun was a dignified master of Wudao ninth layer, and had always been classified as 'genius' from infancy to maturity, and even managed to step into the top ten cored disciple ranks of Zhentian Sect.

His way to martial arts should be a vast stretch of flat land and he had finally managed to step into the Wudao ninth layer. The only thing needed was to congeal Zhenling then he would be considered an extraordinary master in this world.

How could he drop down like this?

"Feng Yun, you said that you will kill me, but now, you have actually been struck down by me and seriously wounded as well."

Long Yu occupied a commanding position and looked at Feng Yun: "You keep on saying that I am a waste, but now, you tell me, who is the waste?"

Am I the waste?

Feng Yun engaged in introspection: "No, never, I cannot allow this Long Yu to attack the core of my martial arts."

"Maybe you do not want to acknowledge, but you are at Wudao ninth layer, a 10th ranked core disciple of Zhentian Sect, and I am only at Wudao eighth layer and still defeated you, so if you are not a waste then what else can you be?"

Long Yu stepped forward and said these words in a more aggressive tone which deeply engraved in Feng Yun's mind.

Not long ago, Feng Yun used to be at Wudao eighth layer when he became a core disciple of Zhentian Sect, and later on advanced to Wudao ninth layer.

Nobody in the Feng clan had imagined that Feng Yun would be defeated by a waste like Long Yu.

After all, he had become the head of Feng clan that day only.

Am I really a waste?

The self-confidence of Feng Yun, after being defeated, was completely disintegrated by the severely piercing words of Long Yu.

Once losing his confidence, he would no longer be able to make advancement in the way of martial arts.

Long Yu didn't need to waste any more of his breath on playing with the mind of Feng Yun, because at this moment, the meridians within Feng Yun's body had been completely corroded by 'Nine Hidden Dragon qi'. This time, the corrosion effect was ten times worse than the last time.

Now, it was almost impossible for Feng Yu to recover completely, and from now onwards, Feng Yun would lead the life of a disabled person.

When Long Yu defeated Feng Yu and came in front of him and was asking him

questions, the several Feng clan juniors and other guests were shocked at this scene, no one could utter a single word.

Feng Yun had just become the head of the Feng clan and was actually beaten by a waste!

Was this real?

They weren't dreaming right?

Everyone soon discovered that Feng Yun was really defeated by Long Yu, and was seriously injured, and this was actually an absolute fact!

"Where is my foster father?"

Long Yu once again asked Feng Yun in a cold voice.

Long Yu had asked him the same question right after stepping inside the Feng mansion, but since everyone was busy in taunting him, nobody bothered to answer his question.

But now, when he asked this question once again, everyone had to attach great importance to it.

Long Yu, a powerhouse, who was capable of beating Feng Yun, had come back to Feng clan entirely for his foster father, the former head of Feng clan, Feng Longsong!

“Little Long, you

At this time, an exceptionally familiar voice transmitted from the Feng mansion.

At the first glance, he immediately saw Feng Longsong coming out from the backyard. He stopped at the entrance and looked incredibly at Long Yu.

When the servants notified Feng Longsong that Long Yu was back and was fighting with Ling Lie, he impatiently rushed out because he knew that Ling Lie was strong master of Wudao ninth layer and was also the 33rd ranked core disciple of Zhentian sect!

Merely three months ago, Long Yu stepped into the world of martial arts, so how could he possibly be Ling Lie's opponent?

However, when Feng Longsong arrived at the entrance, he actually saw such an unexpected scene.

Long Yu had already defeated Feng Yun and completely shocked the audience!

Chapter 58 Sudden changes in Feng clan (Part 1)

Long Yu glanced towards Feng Longsong, and saw that there was shock on his face, and he looked exhausted as well, even his pace seemed somewhat impractical.

“So he is really injured.”

Long Yu felt his heart tightening and quickly ran towards Feng Longsong.

“Foster father, are you all right?”

Long Yu asked with great concern.

“I am fine, you don’t need to worry.”

For Feng Longsong, it seemed as if the god himself had come, he said with a gratified smile on his face: “ I can’t imagine, only three months have elapsed since you entered the world of Wudao, and you advanced to Wudao eighth layer, and even beat Wudao ninth layer masters like Ling Lie and Feng Yun ” .

“It’s all because of foster father, who prepared immortality pills for me.”

Long Yu said respectfully.

In fact, if Feng Longsong had not prepared immortality pills for him, he would

have probably not been able to join Zhentian Sect, and even if he had joined it, it would have been impossible for him to deal with the difficulties, how could he have gained the present cultivation?

Among other things, just in two weeks, he would have not qualified for Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, and it would have been impossible for him to get various types of ancient ginseng, which helped in quick enhancement of his cultivation.

All the way by chance, the preparation of those two immortality pills by Feng Longsong was the foundation of all the achievements that Long Yu made so far.

“In the world of Wudao, just relying on external objects doesn’t bring achievements, the strength you have now is mostly because of your own talent.”

Feng Longsong smiled, patted on the shoulder of Long Yu, then his face gradually became solemn and serious: “But you must not therefore be complacent, in the world of Wudao, Wudao ninth layer is only the beginning! In this world, taking your talent into account, you can easily become a powerful expert, your future is surely much brighter and broader, but if you reach Wudao ninth layer and just sit idle, then you will get nothing.”

“Foster father, do you know about Zhenling?”

Long Yu thought about something and asked.

He remembered that Elder Yu released the Zhenling while confronting the three strong persons of Qiansi Sect while returning from Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest.

The congealment of Zhenling was actually possible above Wudao ninth layer, and each core disciple of a number of sects knew about it, but, it seemed that Feng Longsong had very extensive experience of it, although he was only at Wudao eighth layer.

“I certainly know.”

Feng Longsong smiled: “After reaching the Wudao ninth layer, one can actually begin the quenching of body’s mystical realm, and after successfully quenching the mystical realm of one’s body, one can step into Zhenling mystical realm.”

Quenching the body’s mystical realm, Zhenling mystical realm!

Long Yu was not familiar with these words, but they actually stimulated his heart to achieve this realm in order to outdo others.

Wudao ninth layer was only the foundation, the beginning point of quenching the mystical realm of the body.

But after quenching the mystical realm of the body, one could step into the world of genuine martial arts by congealing Zhenling and stepping into Zhenling mystical realm!

At this moment, Long Yu thought of what Elder Yu explained to him by saying that to become a powerhouse of martial arts, one must first achieve the legendary realm, then one could achieve the oneness of heaven and the man.

Well, what kind of realm was it?

Elder Yu was actually a powerhouse who had already attained Zhenling mystical realm but even he said that he was unable to step into that realm, where one could achieve the oneness with the heaven, just what kind of terrifying and heaven shattering power one would achieve by stepping into that realm?

All these realms, Long Yu deeply wanted to achieve, and with the help of 'Nine hidden Dragon Mark', he would make every effort to climb towards the peak of martial arts.

“And you, Yu Fei, one day, I will find you and discover who you are in the end!”

Long Yu had an unwavering faith!

“Well, little Yu, now is not the time to chat.”

Feng Longsong looked up, glanced across the Feng clan mansion and lightly said.

At this point, in the Feng clan mansion, everyone was staring at them with indifferent looks in their eyes.

The juniors of Feng clan saw that Feng Yun was defeated by Long Yu and now didn't know what to say.

Feng Yun was the new head of Feng clan, but he was now defeated by Long Yu, so now who would be the next head of Feng clan, who was going to take the

responsibility?

Feng Yun? Feng Longsong? Long Yu?

Giving the position of the headship of Feng clan to Long Yu would absolutely be not liked by any member of Feng clan, because in that case, would Feng clan still be called Feng clan? Might as well change the name to Long clan!

Feng Yao had an indifferent look in her eyes, but now she was extremely surprised, as she never thought that Long Yu, the former waste, had now actually become so formidable.

Standing nearby, Li Yu was also shocked: “This, this, this, this waste is actually so strong?”

Feng Yao heard it, then came back to her composure, there emerged a hint of complex look in her eyes: “He is no longer the waste is used to be, he has killed Hua Yun and Hua Qing in Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, and their elder brother, Hua Buxie, will absolutely not let him off.”

Hua Buxie was the strongest core disciple of Hanbing Sect. He had already congealed Zhenling and also stepped into the Zhenling mystical realm.

Although Long Yu was very strong but he was definitely not the opponent of Hua Buxie. Once met, he would definitely kill Long Yu!

Among the people of Feng clan, Feng Luo and Feng Yang, these two guys simply gawked, and weren't able to speak even a few words.

They were proud of their brother, Feng Yun, the 10th ranked core disciple of Zhentian Sect, but even he lost to Long Yu, a former waste?

Feng Yun's father, Feng Longtian suddenly stood up.

"Son!"

Feng Longtian quickly rushed towards the place where Feng Yun was lying injured on the ground, and began to examine the condition of his injuries.

But, at that time, suddenly, hundreds of people stood up simultaneously in Feng clan mansion, and from among them, Qin Duan, the head of Qin clan, dressed in black clothes, came in front of Feng Longtian, and blocked his path.

Chapter 58 Sudden changes in Feng clan (Part 2)

"My old friend, why are you so anxious?"

Qin Duan smiled hypocritically, and blocked the path of Feng Longtian: "Your son, Feng Yun, has lost to a waste, and now he is no longer suitable to become the head of Feng clan again."

"If there is no one suitable in Feng clan to become the head, I think that this clan should also disperse."

Standing on the other side, Tan ancestor declared it in an energetic voice.

Tan ancestor stood up, looked all around, and fixed his vision on Long Yu, and smiled lightly: “This little guy’s strength is extraordinary, we do not intend to aim for you, you can take your foster father and leave here, we will not investigate.”

“Other people of Feng clan can pledge their allegiance to one of us three respected clans, otherwise, all will be expelled from Yu Guan city!”

Luo clan’s head, a refined middle-aged man, stood up and said while narrowing his fox-like eyes.

The Qin clan’s head, Qin Duan, Tan clan’s ancestor, and Luo clan’s head, the top figure of the three clans launched an attack on Feng clan at the same time, and everyone of Feng clan was startled. What was this all about, the three respected clans joined forces to suppress Feng clan, could it be that this was the end of Feng clan?

If Feng Yun had been the same as before, these three clans would never have dared to play such a dirty trick.

But now, Feng Yun was seriously injured by Long Yu, and Long Yu didn’t belong to Feng clan.

“All will be expelled from Yu Guan City, this is quite ruthless.”

Many Feng clan juniors were secretly thinking, on the surface, it seemed like these three respected clans did not want to slaughter the people of Feng clan, instead they would be expelled from Yu Guan city, but once expelled from the

city, it would be quite easy for the three clans to secretly kill Feng clan juniors.

Even if they chose to join these three clans, to be sure, they would definitely have to suffer a variety of discriminations.

In short, from now onwards, the entire Feng clan would cease to exist in Yu Guan city!

Suddenly, many juniors of Feng clan looked towards Long Yu with hatred, if Long Yu had not injured Feng Yun, then Feng clan would have not have to face such a crisis.

“My son has been injured, I’ll take him away. I no longer care what happens to Feng clan.”

As Feng Longtian said these words, the complexion of Qin Duan, who had blocked his path, suddenly changed.

“Alright, you can go.”

Qin Duan faintly smiled, looked once at Feng Yun then let them go.

Feng Longtian didn’t even turn back to look at the other people of Feng clan, he picked up Feng Yun and left straight away!

Seeing this scene, the people of Feng clan were stunned. Feng Longtian, the father of Feng Yun, was at Wudao eighth layer, and it could be said that he was now the main figure of Feng clan.

Now, however, even he actually ran away?

However, Qin Duan looked at his back when he left, and at that time, there was a clear killing intention in his eyes.

How could he possibly let them off like this?

They knew well that Feng Yun was extremely strong, so it was a potential threat to them, so these three clans would not let him go so easily, but as it was the beginning stage for the suppression of the Feng clan, so their plan involved to first scatter Feng clan from within, so he temporarily decided to let them go.

Long Yu narrowed his eyes and was carefully looking at all these things happening in the Feng mansion.

He found out that after Feng Longtian departed with Feng Yun, several experts dressed in black clothes, secretly followed them, each of them seemed to be at Wudao eighth layer.

This was obviously to prevent Feng Longtian and Feng Yun from escaping.

“They will not let Feng Yun go, likewise, will not let me off.”

Long Yu thought to himself, and from looking at the killing intentions flashing in the eyes of Qin Duan, Tan ancestor and Luo clan’s head, he had certainly come to understand what their final motive was.

Right now, Feng Yun was injured and the three clans seemed too strong and well prepared to eradicate Feng clan first, then they would deal with him later.

“Little Yu, you take Feng Yao and my wife, first get out of here.”

Feng Longsong looked dignified and said to Long Yu.

Out of the three powerhouses, Tan ancestor had advanced to the Wudao ninth layer long ago and his strength was almost comparable to that of Feng Yun.

Qin Duan, the head of Qin clan, also recently entered into the Wudao ninth layer.

The head of the Luo clan, that refined middle-aged man, was also a master of Wudao ninth layer, but usually had been relatively low-key, and had very little to do with other people.

Now, he finally stood up to join forces with other two clans to eradicate Feng clan.

The collaborative strength of these three masters of Wudao ninth layer together was very strong, even Long Yu alone couldn't resist them. However, at present, the priority was first to ensure the safety of the family

As Feng Longsong said those words, standing nearby, the complexions of both Feng Yao and Li Yu slightly changed.

Would Long Yu lead them to leave?

Then, Feng Longsong was ready to stay in Feng clan's mansion and face the three clans, who were trying to annihilate Feng clan?

"Yao'er, let's go."

Li Yu clenched her teeth, and she, along with Feng Yao, walked towards Long Yu.

Although, she was a woman from imperial city's Li family, but at present, if she would not go with Long Yu, then it would be almost impossible to escape from being chased down by the men of these three clans.

Feng Yao was a little bit reluctant to go but she still arrived next to Long Yu.

Long Yu saw this scene, and could not help but secretly shook his head, this mother and daughter pair was really heartless. They actually immediately considered escaping and didn't even care about Feng Longsong.

"If you want to go, go on your own."

Long Yu shook his head, at this time, how could he possibly leave Feng Longsong alone?

Feng clan was the root of Feng Longsong, and moreover, it was the place where Long Yu grew up since his childhood.

So watching Feng clan being eradicated by these three clans, this was not Long

Yu's style!

Three Wudao ninth layer masters, so what?

Long Yu stepped forward and stopped in front of Feng Longsong, and gave a sweeping glance towards Tan clan's ancestor, Qin Duan and Luo clan's head. The fierceness in Long Yu's eyes immediately stunned them: "Today, if you all want to destroy Feng clan, you will have to first deal with me!"

Chapter 59 Forty two people (Part 1)

When Long Yu stepped forward and said those words, the people in the audience was once again in shock.

Feng Longsong froze for a moment, then snapped out of it and said: “Little Yu, I will stay because I belong to Feng clan, my name is derived from it! But your case is different and did you forget how the people of Feng clan used to treat you? Just take Little Yao and quickly leave! ”

Long Yu faintly smiled and said: “Foster father, all my life, I have considered you as my only family, how can I just run and leave you here to fight alone?”

“This—”

Feng Longsong suddenly didn't know what to say, in his eyes, there was worry, there was anxiety, but in his heart, he was deeply moved.

Long Yu was willing to stay with him to fight, made him excited in his heart, however, facing the joint forces of three big clans, what could mere Long Yu possibly achieve?

“Ha ha ha, Feng Longsong, this father and son love is really moving my heart!”

Standing nearby, Qin Duan laughed loudly and said, while intention to kill was flashing in his eyes as he was looking at Long Yu: “This boy has killed my son, I already feel like killing him since he did not cherish the opportunity to leave. He insists to stay, so why not let us see how powerful this kid really is? Maybe, this

kid can alone resist against us three clans, ha ha ha! ”

The last sentence was obviously meant as a joke, making more than a hundred people of the three clans suddenly burst into laughter.

Put together, a total of more than a hundred people of the three clans present on the scene, among which, three people were at Wudao ninth layer!

Long Yu alone wanting to deal with them seemed quite inadequate to everyone.

It was simply a dream, a delusion!

Everyone felt that Long Yu’s decision to stay here was completely suicidal, including those juniors of Feng clan.

“No matter how you think, today, I’m staying here.”

Long Yu looked all around, assessed the current situation then immediately said in a loud and firm voice: “I, Long Yu, have grew up in Feng clan since childhood, although foster father was the only person who treated me nicely, but foster father’s family is my family as well, so today, I cannot stand and helplessly watch Feng clan perishing in front of my eyes!”

“Those of the Feng clan who believe in me can stay and fight together with me and foster father. If you do not believe me, then leave the clan right now and run the father the better, however in the future, you will no longer have any connection with Feng clan!”

When Long Yu finished this sentence, all of the juniors of Feng clan were stunned.

Long Yu, who was able to beat a powerhouse like Feng Yun, was actually willing to stay here and perish together with their Feng clan?

In fact, all of the members of Feng clan knew that formerly, when Long Yu couldn't practice and was considered a waste, the people of Feng clan had done many harsh things to him, but now that the same Feng clan was going to be destroyed, Long Yu was firmly standing before them to lead them.

"Humph, I am leaving!"

In the crowd of Feng clan juniors, the grandiose statured Feng Yang immediately stood up and said: "Long Yu, I can tell that the wandering soul glove on your hand is actually the battle weapon of my sister Feng Qianqian! She lost her life in Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest and now we see that you are in possession of her battle weapon, do you actually think that you can mislead the juniors of my Feng clan into accompanying you to their deaths, bah, dream on!"

Long Yu's piercing gaze fell on Feng Yang and he differently said: "It is a well known fact that Feng Qianqian was killed by Yu Qianning of Qiansi sect, but instead of going after her to take revenge, you just stand here and make things difficult for me? I'd like to ask you, do you really not mind that starting today, your Feng clan is going to be removed from the entire Yu Guan city?"

When Feng Yang heard this, his breathing became slightly stifled.

Go after Yu Qianning of Qiansi sect to take revenge?

He simply didn't have the guts, even if he was beaten to death, he wouldn't dare to go after her!

"Humph!"

Feng Yang snorted and did not say anything, he turned away to walk away, in any event, he couldn't dare to stay here.

"Brother Yang, wait for me!"

Feng Yun's younger brother, Feng Luo, called out and quickly caught up with Feng Yang in order to go with him.

Feng Luo was actually thinking of later finding his father and brother, then after that, he would be able to live a better life in the future with his father.

After the two of them left, suddenly, a lot of other people also made up their minds and were also ready to leave.

"If you do not want to go, I will leave with Yao'er."

Li Yu harshly sneered, held her daughter's hand and turned to leave.

Feng Yao did not speak, neither did she stop, did not even look back.

However, after arriving at the entrance of Feng mansion's entrance, Li Yu could not help but looked back and looked at Feng Longsong.

"You really won't come with us?"

Li Yu asked.

"I won't."

Feng Longsong simply didn't entertain the thought of running away.

"Then don't, forget about it!"

Li Yu turned around angrily and left along with Feng Yao!

Feng Longsong glanced once at the departing figures of his wife and daughter, a somewhat depressed look appeared on his face, but then, a firm look appeared instead.

Being the Feng Longsong of Feng clan, he would never abandon Feng clan no matter what!

"I am leaving, Feng clan is doomed today. Staying here is no different than courting death."

"I am also going, only a fool will stay behind and fight with the joined forces of the three big clans!"

“Actually, I don’t want to go, I decide to join the Qin clan, considering my talent, I can certainly obtain good practice resourced in Qin clan.”

A total of four hundred people of Feng clan soon made their respective decisions.

Among them, more than hundred people made the decision to directly leave, while more than hundred people made the decision to join the other three clans.

In the end, there remained only 40 or so people who were still standing firmly behind Long Yu and Feng Longsong!

But these people were actually the juniors from the collateral Feng clan, each and every one of them was full of vigor and vitality, they cultivation was also quite good.

Chapter 59 Forty two people (Part 2)

Also, most of them were still teenagers, but their hearts were filled with the warm blood running in their veins. They were very much impressed by the decision of Long Yu and Feng Longsong so they also wanted to stay and either live or perish together with Feng clan!

“I never imagined that in the end, only 42 people will stay behind to fight.”

Feng Longsong sighed with emotion.

“Clan head, this is a critical moment of life or death for our Feng clan, how can we leave you alone?”

“Yes, clan head, other direct descendants of Feng clan treat us like servants, always on beck and call, but only you often taught us to practice, teaching and directing our martial arts! Even if I die today, I will have no regret dying alongside the head of our clan!”

“Formerly, I was merely a servant of Feng clan, but it was clan head who discovered my talent as a martial artist and bestowed upon me the surname of Feng, hence I became a collateral branch junior of Feng clan. I will never forget such graciousness!”

There were excited facial expressions on the faces of these 42 people as they were telling their reasons for staying behind. Some of the Feng clan junior who chose to leave Feng clan would not be able to lift their heads if they saw this scene.

“Good, good, then today, we will have a good time fighting together!”

Feng Longsong was moved to tears that were rolling down from the corners of his eyes. He did not think that at this time, so many people would be standing firmly behind him, willingly present to die alongside him if necessary.

“Good.”

Long Yu said to show his approval, then he looked up and his fierce gaze clashed with the gazes of those Feng clan juniors who just now joined the three

enemy clans and were standing behind them. Suddenly, a cold look flashed in Long Yu's eyes.

Long Yu decided in his heart that he must make these people regret their decision to betray their own clan!

"Fight!"

Long Yu took a long step: "Foster father, you stay here to guard them, I'll go first and deal with them."

"Little Yu!"

Feng Longsong was suddenly startled at his words, he was about to stop Long Yu, but saw that Long Yu's figure flashed and moved several meters away!

"Qin clan's head, Qin Duan!"

Long Yu's body was light like the breeze, he instantly came in front of Qin Duan and shouted: "You said that I have killed your son, Qin Tianque but you actually don't know that your children are shameless and despicable, they tried to seize the treasure and eliminate the potential informant, I wonder who is to blame for your son's death?"

Accompanied by the loud shout, the golden light flashed on the palm of Long Yu as he instantly used 'Demon vajra seal'!

Qin Duan never thought that Long Yu would suddenly attack him out of the

blue!

In a hurry, Qin Duan began the circulation of Xuan qi within his body and immediately used Qin clan's agility type martial skill-Qingfeng martial skill. A screen of blue wind congealed out of nowhere and tried to resist Long Yu's attack.

“Zhentian charm!”

Long Yu released a burst of repression force which instantly fell on Qin Duan's body and firmly suppressed the circulation of Xuan qi within his meridians, hence even the Qingfeng screen ended up becoming somewhat fragile.

Boom Kara!

The golden palm instantly crashed into that defensive barrier derived from agility type martial skill and shattered it!

Not long ago, Long Yu had faced the same blue wing screen of Qin Tianque in the Abyss of Teng snakes, but last time, there was no way to break through the barrier and his last resort to use the peak level speed of flickering wind step to deceive Qin Tianque and perform a surprise kill.

But now, Long Yu was facing Qin Tianque's father and actually managed to smash the blue wind screen in one shot.

Long Yu's 'Demon vajra seal' shattered the blue wind barrier and went towards Qin Duan, but just when the barrier was smashed by Long Yu, Qin Duan immediately used the agility skill to quickly retreat several feet away. His entire

face was covered in beads of cold sweat.

Long Yu's strength was extremely fearful and this Qin Duan was absolutely not his opponent!

"Bewildering trace step!"

At this time, Tan ancestor finally went into action, he suddenly shouted and instantly used the agility type martial skill called 'Bewildering trace step' to instantly arrive next to Long Yu.

"Space breaker palm!"

There was ruthlessness apparent in the old appearance of Tan ancestor when he displayed perfection level of 'Space breaker palm' martial skill. It seemed like he wanted to kill Long Yu in one fell swoop!

"Demon vajra seal!"

Long Yu turned back and his golden palm collided with the palm of Tan ancestor.

Bang!

Both of them were pushed several steps back by the collision and dignified looks emerged out on their faces.

“This old guy has indeed been there on the Wudao ninth layer for several decades, no wonder he can skillfully use Xuan qi, and way better than Ling Lie.”

Long Yu narrowed his eyes and thought.

“First encircle Feng Longsong and those other people behind him, do not let them run.”

Luo clan’s head, Luo Chenghui, who had a refined temperament and fox-like eyes, pointed at Feng Longsong and commanded his men: “The three of us should collaborate and crush this Long Yu, let us take him down and then we can consider Feng clan as finished.”

As his voice fell down, Luo Chenghui’s figure flashed and appeared behind Long Yu.

Three Wudao ninth layer strong masters suddenly surrounded Long Yu and could launch an attack on him any moment!

But, Feng Longsong and the 42 Feng clan juniors were also surrounded by the members of the three clans and could not even take one step to help Long Yu!

There were more than 100 people, with each having the cultivation of at least Wudao fourth layer, who had come to represent the three clans, while there more than 100 people who betrayed Feng clan and joined the other three clans. So basically, there were more than 200 people crammed up in the Feng mansion.

“Little Yu!”

When Feng Longsong saw that Long Yu had been surrounded, he could not help but worry for him!

“Foster father, you rest assured!”

Long Yu shouted loudly and while being besieged by three strong masters of Wudao ninth layer, the layer of golden light remerged on his body.

“Demon vajra cover!”

Tan ancestor, Qin Duan and Luo Chenghui, all three masters attacked Long Yu at once!

Everyone present on the scene heard a loud thunderclap and saw the three masters retreating several steps, while Long Yu was still standing in the middle, motionless, and a faint golden light was shining on his body!

Chapter 60 – The death of old ancestor (Part 1)

Long Yu remained motionless like an iron tower, but the heads of three clans were pushed several feet back.

“How is this possible?”

Tan ancestor’s look immediately changed, he just now displayed the ‘Space breaker palm’ martial skill and actually used 70% of his strength in it, but still couldn’t break ‘Demon vajra cover’ of Long Yu.

The reason for not applying his full strength was because he also wanted to take a guard against another two clan heads.

While Qin Duan and Luo Chenghui, the other two clans heads were also harboring the same idea as Tan ancestor.

So, even if these three main figures were at Wudao ninth layer, but this time could not pose any harm to Long Yu.

“Continue!”

Qin Duan’s eyes flashed fiercely, he knew well that the severe punch of Long Yu had seriously injured Feng Yun, and if the three of them would give even the slightest respite to Long Yu, then the result of this could be disastrous for them, and it would be difficult to say who would win in the end.

As his voice fell, Qin Duan first cast out the top-grade martial skill of Zhentian

Sect-‘detaining soul hand’!

Long time ago, Qin Duan used to be a disciple of Zhentian Sect, but didn’t celebrate the New Year there after he turned 30 years old. He wasn’t able to break through to the Wudao eighth layer, and hence was always regarded as a low-key disciple there.

Therefore, he could only come back, take charge of Qin clan and engage in training the next generation talents.

Therefore, Qin Duan could also display some of the martial skills of Zhentian Sect. But there were certain rules of Zhentian Sect, and according to them, he couldn’t pass on these martial skills to the next generation talents.

The Qin descendants also wanted to learn these martial skills, but due to the rules of Zhentian Sect, they had to first join the sect in order to learn them.

Qin Duan had high hopes from his son, Qin Tianque, but he was killed by Long Yu in the abyss of Teng snake, so this enmity was absolutely irreconcilable for him!

He resorted to ‘detaining soul hand’, and suddenly, a claw of black fog rushed towards Long Yu to grasp him and its speed was so fast that even Long Yu couldn’t dodge in time.

“Da Cheng level!”

A cold thought appeared in Long Yu’s mind as he looked at this ‘detaining soul hand’ martial skill of Da Cheng level, displayed by Qin Duan, a Wudao ninth level

master, and it covered him so tightly that he was unable to move!

At this time, Tan ancestor and Luo Chenghui seized the opportunity, and both of them swept away their fists towards Long Yu from both sides, and it produced the intermittent fresh breeze, which was howling turbulently!

“Demon tyrant form, Dantian, help me in breaking free!”

Long Yu shouted, since he had quenched his Dantian, now, it was stronger and immediately synched with his heart beats, allowing the ebullition of Xuan qi within his body, and in a flash, he was able to break free from the clutches of ‘Detaining soul hand’.

‘Demon tyrant form’ was at the perfection level while ‘detaining soul hand’ was only at Da Cheng level, so relying on it to surround Long Yu was undoubtedly a fool’s dream.

However, at this time, the fists swept by Tan ancestor and Luo Chenghui came around, and arrived very close to him.

“Incarnated ghost body, Ghost flash!”

Xuan qi immediately began to move restlessly inside his body, and he instantly displayed the agility type martial skill, ghost flash, and dodged the converging attacks from the three masters with great difficulty.

“Continue!”

These heads of three big clans didn't want to give the slightest respite to Long Yu, and continued to raid on him from three different directions.

“This is not good, facing three enemies is putting me on disadvantage, I must get rid of at least one of them.”

Long Yu's stature suddenly flashed, the Xuan qi instantly began to circulate inside his body, while 'Nine hidden dragon qi' started condensing on his right fist.

“Tan ancestor is the biggest threat, I must first get rid of him.”

Long Yu rushed to one side of Tan ancestor, the 'Nine hidden Xuan qi' suddenly surged out, and when he brandished his fist, the road to hell instantly appeared before him 'Intoxicated hell' started melting the road.

Boom!

The whole person of Tan ancestor was enveloped by the dark qi, released from the melting road to hell, as if struck by lightning, and he temporarily lost consciousness!

“Nine hidden Dragon Fist, Intoxicated Hell, kill!”

Long Yu's body became light like breeze, and he moved along the proposed path of the intoxicated hell. He arrived near Tan ancestor in a flash and severely pounded his fist towards the old ancestor's Dantian.

Bang!

This powerful blow, carrying the strange profound power of nine hidden dragon qi, instantly invaded the body of Tan ancestor in such a forceful manner that his face immediately turned black, spouted blood, while his body was sent flying 100 feet away and fell heavily on the ground!

“Die!”

However, at this time, when the other two clan heads saw Long Yu engaged in destroying Tan ancestor, they seized this opportunity, and Qin Duan resorted to ‘Xuan wind destroyer’ whereas Luo Chenghui congealed three Xuan qi cold dragons. All of the attacks loudly crashed against Long Yu’s body at lightning speed.

Puff!

However, the silver lining was that Long Yu had practiced ‘Demon tyrant form’ to the perfection level, so at this time, he was able to face these two attacks, but he couldn’t bear its force entirely and spat blood.

“Dodge!”

Long Yu, without any hesitation, instantly stimulated his blizzard boots to the extreme and immediately displayed ‘Flickering wind step’, then took one twinkling step and his figure appeared far away, thereby preventing Qin Duan and Luo Chenghui from making continued attacks on him.

The ice cold qi had permeated into his meridians, making his meridians to

freeze up, and because of the ice-bound, his meridians began to shiver as well.

Luo Chenghui, the head of Luo clan, displayed a martial skill of Hanbing Sect, which showed that he used to be a disciple of Hanbing Sect.

But the 'Xuan wind destroyer' martial skill, used by Qin Duan, struck on the back of Long Yu and opened up several deep wounds, some wounds were deep enough to reach the bones, making his whole back dripping with blood.

Long Yu discarded Tan ancestor, the strongest among them, but in doing so, he was seriously battered.

“Grandfather!”

A pitiful shout came out from the crowd, and a girl in red skirt, jumped out of the crowd and quickly arrived at the side of Tan ancestor, who was heavily injured and lying on the ground.

Chapter 60 – The death of old ancestor (Part 2)

This red dressed girl was actually Tan Yue, and at that time, her face was covered in tear stains, she never thought that her grandfather would face a heavy loss in this frigid war.

She took a quick look around and saw that a strange black qi was flowing randomly on the surface of her grandfather's body, making her grandfather incomparably weak.

Although, he was at Wudao ninth layer, but after getting corroded by ‘Nine hidden Dragon qi’, he had become very vulnerable.

“Yue, Yue child.....”

Tan ancestor’s muddy old eyes, looked at the sweet and pretty appearance of Tan Yue, but there was still a spoiling look on his face: “After your grandpa is no longer in this world, you must practice hard and grow stronger.....”

As his voice fell, Tan ancestor’s breathing stagnated and his heart beats suddenly stopped.

Tan ancestor was very old, not as young and vigorous like Feng Yun, so when Long Yu displayed his ‘Nine hidden Dragon Fist’, the nine hidden dragon qi violently invaded his body and killed him immediately.

Tan Yue froze on the spot.

Just like that, her grandfather died right in front of her eyes and she suddenly realized that from now onwards, she would no longer be spoiled by her invincible grandfather, and now, based on her current strength, she literally was nobody in this world.

Even her father, Tan Heng, at this time, was at Wudao eighth layer, and a master of Wudao eighth layer was basically nothing even in Yu Guan city.

Depending on the strength of Tan Heng, only a Wudao eighth layer master, to

support Tan clan was too difficult!

Tan Yue suddenly regretted a little, initially why did she go to provoke Long Yu in the Zhentian canyon.

She regretted that since she had been so cunning and unreasonably willful, putting her grandfather in trouble constantly, and now due to that, Long Yu made her grandfather his first target!

With rays of hatred emitting from her eyes, Tan Yue looked up and glanced at Long Yu: "This cruel and merciless Long Yu has also suffered heavy injuries, today, it's impossible for him to live. Grandfather, you don't need to worry, Qin Duan and Luo Chenghui will take revenge for you."

Long Yu looked at Tan ancestor and Tan Yue from afar, and at that moment, a somewhat bleak feeling poured out in his heart.

But, in this world of martial arts, human lives were basically worthless, life and death was an ordinary thing, not to mention, this time, their luck ran out because they were facing Long Yu.

Cruel and merciless?

Long Yu's heart denied it, after all he just followed the principle of eye for an eye!

He never took the initiative to stir up trouble, it was always someone else's fault.

Now, he must defend his foster father, if he couldn't defend then his foster father would be dead soon, as well as all the 42 juniors of Feng clan standing behind him.

“Long Yu, you are really something, you actually defeated Feng Yun and Tan ancestor with just one fist, quite admirable!”

Qin Duan saw the dead body of Tan ancestor, but he didn't regret, instead he laughed out loudly: “Now you are already seriously injured, how will you face the combined attacks of me and Brother Luo Chenghui. It seems like this Yu Guan city, from now onward, is the home of Qin clan and Luo clan.”

Qin Duan excluded Tan clan without any hesitation.

After Tan ancestor's death, none of the other members of Tan clan had enough qualifications, so only these two clans would share the benefits from the extermination of Feng clan.

Luo Chenghui walked quietly behind Long Yu, and at that time, his fox-like cunning eyes were looking at him. He didn't say a word, but he never removed his gaze from Long Yu.

Luo Chenghui was considering a foolproof plan so he could never allow Long Yu to run away, otherwise, even after sharing Yu Guan city between these two clans, they would never be calm and stable.

“Master of the house!”

Just then, sounds of neat footsteps transmitted from the street, outside the Feng mansion.

Everyone looked and saw that a group of people from the three clans had come back. All seemed to be at Wudao eighth layer, clad in black clothes and were carrying the corpses of two persons.

After a closer look, everyone saw that these were the corpses of Feng Tianxiang and Feng Yun.

Feng Tianxiang actually wanted to flee from Yu Guan city with Feng Yun regardless of the crisis of Feng clan, but was chased down by the people of the three clans and finally died at their hands.

“Ha ha ha! Feng Tianxiang and Fen Yun are dead, now there’s nothing to fear from the present Feng clan.”

Qin Duan laughed, while in the crowd, all of the juniors of Qin clan were also excited.

It seemed today, Qin clan and Luo clan were the biggest winners, just waiting to catch the rich treasure owned by Feng clan-nearly ten battle weapons, many spiritual grasses and immortality pills, and even some of the women of Feng clan-all would belong to them!

After the annihilation of Feng clan, if they would have a liking for any Feng woman, who would dare to say no to them?

“Unfortunately, Tan ancestor is dead.”

Luo Chenghui's eyes flashed as he looked towards the several members of Tan clan, who just brought the corpses of Feng Tianxiang and Feng Yun: "Just now, Tan ancestor was killed by Long Yu's fist, this is really infuriating, but fortunately, he is also seriously injured and seems not far from going down!"

Hearing these words of Luo Chenghui, a total of four people of Tan clan, all at Wudao eighth layer, and clad in black clothes, gave an angry look towards Long Yu

Out of the four, one was the son of Tan ancestor and other three were his nephews. Tan ancestor actually had a brother.

"This child's life, give it to us!"

Among the four, one of them roared, put down the corpse of Feng Yun on the ground and rushed straight towards Long Yu.

"We will help you!"

The other three also gave a loud shout, and one after another rushed toward Long Yu, condensing their Xuan qi and displaying extremely tyrannical attack methods.

"We will also give a helping hand."

Luo Chenghui said and Qin Duan nodded, then they joined the four Tan clan's members and rushed towards Long Yu.

Two masters of Wudao ninth layer, four masters of Wudao eighth layer, a total of six people, full of anger, rushed towards Long Yu, as if they would turn him into meat paste.

Chapter 61 World influence (Part 1)

When Qin Duan and Luo Chenghui, and other four Wudao masters headed towards Long Yu, then, Feng Longsong hastily called out in alarm.

“Little Yu!”

Feng Longsong stepped forward and actually wanted to help Long Yu.

However, a Qin clan’s master of Wudao eighth layer came in front of him and blocked his path: “Do you want to go? Don’t think of running all over the place, otherwise I won’t wait for the head of clan to come, I alone can tidy you up whenever I want to and instill some obedience into you!”

At that time, more than two hundred people of Feng clan, who had opposed Feng Longsong, encircled him as well as those forty two people, so that they couldn’t attack or help Long Yu, actually they didn’t want unnecessary casualties among themselves, so they were just waiting for Qin Duan and Luo Chenghui, both Wudao ninth layer masters, to come out victorious, then they could easily exterminate Feng Longsong and all other people of Feng clan.

Seeing that Long Yu would definitely be killed by collaborated actions of six people, all forty-two juniors of Feng clan were filled with righteous indignation, and each of them looked excited and ready to step forward to help Long Yu.

“Everybody, do not panic!”

Seeing this, Feng Longsong quickly stopped them and said: “Now, we can only

choose to believe in Long Yu!”

Each of these remaining loyal forty-two people was either at Wudao fifth or sixth layer, and if they moved heedlessly, all would meet with their deaths.

So, Feng Longsong thought that it was better to wait. There was a slight anticipation in his heart that Long Yu might be able to defeat the opposite party.

“Believe in Long Yu? Ha ha, so hilarious!”

The people of the three clans as well as those, who revolted against the current head of Feng clan, gathered in the surroundings, looked towards Long Yu, who was encircled by six persons. At that time, there were mocking smiles on their faces.

At that time, Long Yu was facing Qin Duan and Luo Chenghui, both at Wudao ninth layer, plus four Wudao eighth layer masters of Tan clan. Could Long Yu, who was already severely injured, possibly be able to survive in such a situation?

Really a wishful thinking!

In the field, Long Yu was besieged by six masters, however the more dangerous the situation would be, the calmer he appeared.

“So, you want to suppress me with numbers?”

Long Yu instantly released Zhentian charm in order to bring his enemies under the world law of terrifying suppression.

As he released his powerful Zhentian charm, a sudden burst of heavy repression began to pour down from the sky, and immediately shrouded all of the six people completely, and instantaneously, the speed of all these people slowed down considerably.

The suppressive strength of Zhentian charm, released by Long Yu, was much more powerful and intense than the strength of an ordinary master of Wudao ninth layer!

Under the heavy repression of Zhentian charm, the four Wudao eighth layer people of Tan clan felt difficulty in breathing, even Qin Duan and Luo Chenghui, Wudao ninth layer masters, were also affected greatly, and the Xuan qi circulation was also impeded in their bodies.

However, even if suppressed by Zhentian charm, these six people were moving, of course slowly, towards Long Yu to perform a long-range raid on him.

No matter how weakened their own strengths had become after facing the charm suppression, but their combined strength still posed a great threat to Long Yu.

But, at that time, due to the invasion of cold Xuan qi dragon of Luo Chenghui, the circulation of Xuan qi inside the meridians of Long Yu had almost frozen, not to mention while confronting these six people, coming at him from all direction, he was not even able to cast out agility type martial skill to escape from the encirclement.

If this continued, it would surely be a dead end for Long Yu.

“Since ancient times, this world has certain unique principles! But only after practicing the core law successfully, one can attempt to comprehend these unique world principles.”

“To comprehend the world principle, the first stage is to comprehend the mysterious mood, because in this very stage, one can initially feel the presence of these world principles. After that, the second stage is to comprehend the mysterious charm, and in this stage, one can communicate with the world principles and can also borrow stronger strength from it.”

“After the charm, the next stage is to comprehend the world influence! Then one can borrow the great might from the world principles, and once the world influence is condensed, the borrowed power would be ten times more powerful than the power derived from mysterious charm.”

While thinking so, Long Yu’s eyes shone brightly and right then, he forcefully operated Zhentian tactics within his meridians.

As he had strengthened up his Dantian by quenching it, so his frozen meridians recovered quickly and Xuan qi began to circulate inside the meridians throughout his body.

This operational line that he usually operated had spread surely, was the foundation of the core law of Zhentian tactics, and each time operated, would help him to comprehend the profound suppression of the world principle.

At this moment, faced with encirclement of six masters, suddenly, Long Yu’s heart started beating rapidly, and at this moment, it seemed as if the Zhentian tactics had undergone transformation.

“Heavenly arteries, link up!”

The link between the world and the heavenly arteries of Long Yu suddenly strengthened, and all of a sudden, he felt the incredible existence of the strength of suppression laws of the world.

“Finally grasped, so this is called the world influence! In the world, the world principle of suppression exists anytime and anywhere and so long as one can enhance one’s linkage with the world, one can borrow the strength of the world influence.”

Long Yu’s eyes shone brightly.

At this moment, the repression of the world influence finally came under his grasp, and this was not only a major breakthrough in the way of his martial cultivation, but it also made him capable enough to calmly face the present difficult situation.

“World influence, suppression!”

Long Yu stepped forward and released tyrannical repression of world influence, and suddenly, layer upon layer of strong wind waves rushed towards the six people.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

These burst of layers of wind waves were actually the suppression waves of

world influence that completely shrouded all of the six people. Long Yu borrowed the strength of world influence and not just relied on his own strength, but also borrowed the strength from the world principles.

However, these 6 masters were only at Wudao eighth layer and ninth layer, so how could they possibly contend against the strength of the tremendous repression of world influence?

Chapter 61 World influence (Part 2)

The suppressive influence suddenly froze the statures of those six people on the spot, and it seemed like they were withstanding extremely terrifying great strength of suppression, they exhausted their strength and their foreheads turned red with rage, while cold sweat directly appeared on their faces.

The world influence of Long Yu didn't only suppress these six people, who had encircled him, but other people nearby also felt the heavy repression, as if an invisible force seemed to have enveloped them, making everyone look at Long Yu. After all, it was hard to clearly say who actually produced this type of precarious constriction.

Such constriction was giving birth to the feelings of terror in their hearts!

“Give me the suppression!”

Long Yu immediately went back one step and his Xuan qi broke through his heavenly arteries and further enhanced the linkage with the world, thereby increasing the suppression strength of world influence.

Terrifying coercion instantly fell on the six people in such a forceful manner that all of them directly sprayed a mouthful of blood.

Long Yu was already injured, so he also spat blood!

Originally, they had victory in their hands, and according to their plan, they could have easily killed Long Yu. But now, Long Yu comprehended the world influence and they had no means to face it, they simply had no means left to escape, they could only stand there and be completely suppressed by it.

This influence stemmed from the strength of this world and held the very strength of the world principles.

Long Yu, through the penetration of his heavenly arteries, comprehended the world influence, and once released, he would be able to rule the world principles, gaining such power that would suppress the opposite party completely.

This was the power of absolute suppression and the opposite party could withstand this suppression only when there was a huge gap between the cultivation level of Long Yu and the opposite party, otherwise, it was simply impossible to resist the terrifying suppression of the world influence.

“Qin Duan!”

Long Yu snorted and said: “To be honest, your daughter, Qin Ronger, still owes me for saving her life. If I hadn’t saved her, she would have already been eaten by the Teng snake king! But, instead of thanking me for saving her life, she actually

teamed up with Qin Tianque to kill me! Don't you think that you should take responsibility for raising such a daughter?"

Qin Duan was suppressed by world influence and was vomiting blood constantly, his face looked deathly pale!

He wanted to say something, but under the mighty repression of world influence, he couldn't even utter a single word!

"I think you are not suitable to be the head of Qin clan, you should engage in introspection!"

Long Yu's stature flashed, and the next moment, he came in front of Qin Duan, while a layer of golden light immediately condensed on his right fist.

"Demon vajra seal!"

Long Yu instantly shot his fist but Qin Duan didn't have the strength to resist, and his whole body was sent flying into the sky and heavily crashed into the courtyard wall of Feng mansion and finally fell on the ground.

"Father!"

Qin Ronger was hopeful that the revenge for the killing of Qin Tianque would definitely be taken today by her father, but she never thought that Long Yu could unexpectedly be able to comprehend the heavy repression of the world influence. She couldn't believe that just one palm attack from Long Yu sent her father flying into the sky.

After listening to the words of Long Yu, Qin Ronger wished to turn into a worm and drill her way out of there. The ungrateful things she did to Long Yu were contrary to the common sense, and even if this was the world of martial arts, if the news about this spread out then she would be despised by everyone.

Now, she somewhat regretted her actions, why did she allege Long Yu for snatching Teng snake king's neidan from her that really provoked Qin Tianque to try to kill Long Yu, but eventually he himself was killed by the latter.

She ran up and wanted to go to her father's side.

However, she just entered the area of Long Yu's heavy suppression of the world influence and immediately felt a burst of mighty suppression upon her, making her whole person completely suppressed and instantly fell down on the ground, she tried to crawl but was unable to!

She was just a martial of Wudao fifth layer and was obviously unable to stand up under the mighty suppression of world influence!

Long Yu didn't pay any attention to Qin Ronger, but turned to move towards another side, now his target was the head of Luo clan, Luo Chenghui, who, at that time, was also under the mighty repression and spouting blood from his mouth.

"Head of Luo clan, I, Long Yu, have never provoked you before."

Long Yu said and quickly approached Luo Chenghui, while his eyes revealed an ominous look: "My foster father has never provoked you either! But you actually

led the people of Luo clan and tried to kill me, tried to destroy my Feng clan! You tell me, aren't you completely insane, worse than a pig or dog?"

As his voice fell, he didn't wait for Luo Chenghui to say something and instantly shot out his golden palm seal towards Luo Chenghui.

Long Yu's fist heavily hit on the chest of Luo Chenghui and his whole body was sent flying, while there was an unwilling look in his fox-like cunning eyes.

The terrifying suppression of the world influence had already damaged the five internal organs of Luo Chenghui, now this severe fist of Long Yu directly crushed his heart and violently killed him.

With the help of tyrannical repression of the world influence, Long Yu managed to deal with two Wudao ninth layer masters, the two clan head level character and killed them so effortlessly.

When these two clan heads, Qin Duan and Luo Chenghui, were sent flying in the air by the fist of Long Yu, all of the people present in the field were panic-stricken. None of them could speak even a single word.

They never imagined that Long Yu would actually be such a horrifying guy.

He single-handedly defeated a Wudao ninth layer master, Feng Yun, killed Tan ancestor with a single punch, and now, Qin Duan and Luo Chenghui, the two clan heads, went sent flying by him. One died and the other was seriously injured!

The members of Tan, Qin and Luo clan could not help but involuntarily stepped back.

In the eyes of all present at the scene, Long Yu was like a monster!

Even when the heads of three respected clans collaborated to defeat him, they lost the battle together, so how could these ordinary clan members possibly dare to face Long Yu?

The remaining four Wudao eighth layer masters of Tan clan didn't need Long Yu to attack them personally. They were spouting blood after being suppressed for so long by the world influence and half of their cultivation was already destroyed by now.

“Maintaining world influence is really quite strenuous.”

After defeating Qin Duan and Luo Chenghui, Long Yu finally deactivated the mighty suppression of world influence.

Even if he had quenched his Dantian, doubling the recovery rate of Xuan qi in his body, but he could only maintain the suppression of world influence for a small amount of time!

Chapter 62 Royal prince (Part 1)

Smoke and dust filled the air in the field and remained revolving around there for a very long time, there was only Long Yu's stature standing there fixed as mountain.

Everyone looked into his eyes, their opinions regarding him had completely changed by now.

"Little Yu!"

From the crowd, Feng Longsong happily exclaimed, he was excited to see how strong Long Yu had actually become.

In his excitement, he could not help but think, Long Yu was really worthy of being called the son of general, so talented, for the time being, he thought that he was actually watching general in action.

Long Yu turned around and swept his eyes towards more than 200 people, then stood surrounding Feng Longsong.

His this vision was so swift and fierce, that 200 people immediately stepped back unexpectedly!

Long Yu single-handedly defeated Tan ancestor, Qin Duan and Luo Chenghui, and even if they tried to face Long Yu, what could they possibly achieve against him?

Even, if it was possible to strike down Long Yu by following the huge-crowd strategy, but who was willing to take the lead?

When Long Yu stepped towards Feng Longsong, two hundred people moved away towards the rear and made a path for Long Yu to come out quickly.

“Long Yu, today’s incident is entirely the fault of our clan head, it’s not something we wanted!”

A Wudao eighth layer master of Qin clan said aloud: “It would be better to stop now, what do you think?”

Long Yu looked at that man and lightly said: “When you want to come, you come, when you want to go, you go, what do you actually think of my Feng clan, huh?”

“Sir, don’t tell me that you are actually planning to eradicate all of the people present here?”

The Qin clan’s master snorted and said: “You are certainly strong, but we three respected clans are still dominant, if we fight now, you will certainly die!”

“However, you will be the first to die, you, and not only you, perhaps many others as well.”

Long Yu said in a stern tone and flashed his fierce eyes towards everyone.

As these words went out, he coordinated his eyes with Long Yu, and went two

steps back subconsciously. At that time, his complexion became very ugly.

Indeed, really put together, if they fought with Long Yu, then Long Yu, at his current strength, could easily punch many of them to death. This fight would only result into piling up of dead bodies.

“Long Yu, forget it.”

Feng Longsong stood up at the right time, shook his head and said to Long Yu.

“Since my foster father says so, you all can leave, I won’t embarrass you anymore, but yes, take your clan heads along with you.”

Long Yu said.

As soon as the people of these three respected clans heard his words, it was just like amnesty, and they felt relaxed.

Even if they really wanted to fight, but in the face of Long Yu, who would have dared to begin?

However, the people of these three respected clans were relaxed, but there were some people, who were still nervous, and at that time, their hearts were beating up rapidly.

These were the 100 or so people, who revolted against Feng clan moments ago, and joined the three respected clans, but now, the people of these three clans left them behind, so they were literally hiding on the side and observing the

current turn of events.

They at first thought that Feng clan would be destroyed, therefore, they abandoned it, but now Long Yu marvelously reversed the situation, and saved Feng clan from being ruined.

“Brother Long Yu, your strength is too good, from now on, out Feng clan should be led by you.”

Immediately, some people changed their faces. They actually separated themselves from the three respected clans, and now wanted to join Feng clan, so they were flattering him.

Today, the situation was that the three clans couldn't accept them, so the only way left to them was to return to Feng clan.

However, they betrayed the Feng clan earlier, so now, would the present Feng clan accept them?

Long Yu looked at the man and sneered: “I will not become the head of Feng clan because from now on, my foster father will continue to be the clan head.”

“However, the matter about who should be the head of Feng clan, how is it related to you?

Long Yu stepped forward, his vision was swift and fierce, and his words were sharp: “You have been ousted from the Feng clan. As I said earlier, the moment you leave the Feng clan, you will no longer have any connection with it in the future!”

Many people of revolting group of Feng clan heard this and their complexions changed immediately.

And some people said instantly: “We are the members of Feng clan and we wish that Feng clan must rise in the future, why you are not allowing us to return to Feng clan?”

“Because, you are unfaithful and unjust, when my foster father once again becomes in charge of Feng clan, he doesn’t need such people.”

Long Yu sneered: “In the moment of crisis, you so-called people of Feng clan chose to defected to their side, and now, you are seeking asylum from the same Feng clan you abandoned, just how much disloyal you lot can be!”

“Helplessly you only looked at the people besieging the members of Feng clan, while there was every likelihood that they would be killed, but you remained indifferent, and sat on the sidelines, you all are simply heartless.”

“Not just that, you also helped these three clans by joining hands with them in besieging the people of your own Feng clan, this is called being unjust!”

“Such disloyal and unjust people, my Feng clan will not accept people like you.”

Disloyalty, heartless, unjust, as these three words came out, a burst of purple color came on the faces of all those people, who had betrayed Feng clan.

They also felt that their conduct was wrong, but who knew that Long Yu was so strong, and would be able to beat three clan heads of Wudao ninth layer?

Now, except for returning to Feng clan, they had no other choice!

“Humph, Long Yu, don’t go too far.”

One person said it severely: “You only said that you are not the head of Feng clan, and your foster father is still the head of Feng clan, and Feng Longsong is my father’s younger brother. Whether we can return to Feng clan or not will be decided by my father’s younger brother, not by you.”

He uttered these words and was immediately looked somewhat self-satisfied, since, Feng Longsong had taken the headship of Feng clan, and at present, he was quite weak. Moreover, the special good intention, this enabled him almost to foresee, Feng Longsong would certainly consider the former consanguinity share, and would give shelter to them once again.

Unfortunately, when he uttered these words, Feng Longsong lightly swept his eyes towards him.

Chapter 62 Royal prince (Part 2)

“Even to me, you all appear as unfaithful and unjust people. Even I, Feng Longsong, will not allow you all to return to Feng clan.”

Feng Longsong stared at the 42 juniors and said seriously: “Starting today, I

will be the head of new Feng clan, consisting of only these 42 brave persons, who successfully showed that they have the guts to stand for their Feng clan.”

These words of Feng Longsong completely changed the complexions on the faces of all the deserters.

However, Feng Longsong, who was generally temperate guy with jolly mood, actually didn't care about the changing faces of the deserters.

As everyone knew, Feng Longsong was a gentleman, because he was faced with the wind at home children.

Since earlier, these people deserted Feng clan and joined the enemies, so now, they basically no longer belonged to Feng clan, so why would he show his gentle kindness to them.

With that, Feng Longsong looked around and said with a mocking smile: “Moreover I made it clear in advance, although little Yu is very strong, but in the end, he will not stay in Feng clan, his world lies in a broader world. The new Feng clan may also encounter various difficulties, so at that time, won't you all run away just like today?

Hearing these words, a lot of people finally calmed down.

Good, Long Yu was very strong, but in the end, he would not stay in Feng clan as his surname was Long [Dragon].

Considering his strength, it could be imagined that it was not possible for them to subdue Feng clan, so they must wait till Long Yu would leave Yu Guan city,

then the people of Qin clan, Tan clan and Luo clan would not let off the enmity for today!

Perhaps when the time would be right, the whole new clan including Feng Longsong must die.....

Feng Longsong sneered in his heart when he saw the renegade footsteps of these juniors of Feng clan.

In few words, if he allowed them to join the new Feng clan then in the time of difficulties, considering their attitude, wasn't their presence in the clan basically futile?

New Feng clan didn't need to include useless, disloyal and unjust people.

There was a color of excitement on the faces of all 42 people who stood by Feng Longsong. They never imagined that Long Yu would be so strong and single-handedly defeat three Wudao ninth layer clan heads.

"Big brother Long Yu is really a genius, so young and even fought vigorously with the three clan heads, killing two of them and injuring one."

"We hope we can be as strong as Brother Long Yu, then Feng clan doesn't need to fear anything!"

"May our Feng clan rise to its peak, although, we are not as talented as Brother Long Yu but we will have to put all out efforts to get stronger, we must repay the graciousness of the head of Feng clan, who risked his life for us."

The facial expressions of all 42 people were excited and there were worshipping looks on their faces for Long Yu.

However, at this time, a disdainful and contemptuous laughter passed from a distant place: “Oh, genius? In my opinion, this boy is nothing, it really makes me laugh when you call him a genius!”

As this voice conveyed, the people of new Feng clan, the deserters, and the people of other three clans, who had yet not departed, they all looked towards the end of the street.

They saw a youth wearing a golden silk robe, laughing with a look of contempt on his face. He was with four attendants and step by step walking towards the Feng mansion.

Although his pace was slow, but the speed was very extremely fast. In just few steps, he arrived outside the courtyard wall of Feng mansion.

“Who are you? Why do you despise Brother Long Yu so much?”

Standing behind Feng Longsong, a slim statured teenager shouted and asked in an angry voice. His cultivation was strongest among the members of new Feng clan. He recently entered into the Wudao sixth layer.

“Despise?”

The youth in golden robe said with a mocking smile on his face: “Such a

boorish fellow, he is not even qualified to be despised by me.”

Long Yu’s eyes swept towards the group of five people and scowled.

Long Yu didn’t know the youth in golden robe but just intuitively felt that he was very strong. His eyes were fixed on one of this youth’s attendants, who somewhat looked familiar.

The attendant appeared quite handsome and pretty, and when taking his physical features into consideration, he looked 70% to 80% similar to Liu Mingxuan, the cousin of Feng Yao.

Everyone seemed to see at these five people with different looks, and at that time, the personal attendant, who looked similar to Liu Mingxuan, chuckled and introduced that youth with an arrogant facial expression:

“Lord Wang Tianzhuo, the prince from Royal clan, his natural talent is remarkable, do you actually think that people from countryside can possibly imagine the extent of his greatness? He is a real genius, this so-called Long Yu, whom you call genius, is not even qualified to pull on his shoes!”

Along with these words, the youth clad in golden robe stood proudly at the entrance of Feng mansion and was arrogantly looking at everyone.

He was Wang Tianzhuo, a prince from Royal clan!

Depending on his status and strength, all people standing here, should lie down and prostrate in his worship!

“The prince is visiting this rustic place just for a beautiful woman!”

Wang Tianzhuo narrowed his eyes and looked at Feng Longsong: “Sister Feng Yao, where is she?”

Feng Longsong heard his question and scowled: “You came one step late, she has returned to her sect.”

“So it’s like this.”

Wang Tianzhuo chuckled: “Since you are father of Sister Feng Yao, I presume you can take responsibility of her wedding. I have come here to be betrothed with Sister Feng Yao.”

Feng Longsong lightly said: “Even if I am her father, I have no control over her. She is the one who decides any important matter of her life.”

“Is it?”

Wang Tianzhuo narrowed his eye, and at that time, there flashed a ruthless color in his eyes: “Perhaps, you don’t know that what kind of person I am. Such being the case, I will first make you to have a look at my strength, then decide, whether this Wang Tianzhuo is qualified to get married to your daughter.”

As his voice fell, Wang Tianzhuo’s eyes immediately stared at Long Yu.

This suddenly increased the feeling of pressure on Long Yu, as if a brave fighter

or tiger was eyeing him!

“This Wang Tianzhuo is very strong, the feeling of pressure while facing him is much bigger than the pressure I felt while facing Feng Yun. Could it be that he is actually a powerhouse of Zhenling mystical realm?”

The pressure on Long Yu suddenly increased!

Chapter 63 Tiger Zhenling (Part 1)

In facing Wang Tianzhuo, Long Yu felt much more pressure than what he had felt while facing Feng Yun.

This pressure was a little bit similar to the pressure that Long Yu had felt while facing the first disciple of Zhentian Sect, named 'Bu Xing.'

“Zhenling mystical realm is really extraordinary!”

Long Yu had heard these words from Feng Longsong, and his complexion changed.

Such a powerful Zhenling mystical realm master had come to Yu Guan city, it could lead to quite a disastrous situation, because even if all people of Yu Guan city joined up together, they were not his opponents.

Wang Tianzhuo was a genius prince of Royal family. He grew up taking all kinds of immortality pills since childhood. His talent was also remarkable, so he easily stepped into Wudao ninth layer.

If a Wudao master wanted to condense Zhenling, his talent must be good, or else it would be impossible to break through the bottleneck.

This Wang Tianzhuo looked only twenty four or twenty five years old, and was able to step into Zhenling mystical realm, it really showed that his talent was quite good!

“It seems even vice general Feng Longsong has little experience about it.”

Wang Tianzhuo slightly curled his mouth upward and looked arrogantly at Long Yu, and contemptuously said: “Perhaps a country bumpkin like you had never seen Zhenling, today, I, Wang Tianzhuo, will be merciful to let you experience what Zhenling is all about.”

As the voice fell down, Wang Tianzhuo raised his hand, and a crazy fierce Xuan qi immediately condensed on his whole body.

At this moment, Long Yu felt like he was facing a brave fighter!

Immediately, Xuan qi began to circulate into the body meridians of Wang Tianzhuo, and instantly an imaginary tiger-shaped figure was formed behind him, and at the same time, loud roars of mountain forest tiger was heard, making everyone in the field have a deafening feeling, and many people immediately covered their ears subconsciously.

When Long Yu heard this crazy fierce roar of a tiger, he instantly clenched his teeth, and withdrew several steps back.

This force was actually generated by the congealment of Tiger king Zhenling by Wang Tianzhuo. This force of Zhenling pushed Long Yu several steps back and brought him under its suppression.

“The princes of the Royal family had been practicing the Heart Tiger tactic for generations, and if the junior princes successfully congealed the Zhenling mystical realm, then they could be able to display the Tiger Zhenling”

Similarly, Feng Longsong also moved away a few steps back, and at that time, his face was full of dignified color.

He was in the Royal forces, and it seemed that he had certain experiences of the martial skills of the family, and moreover, Wang Tianzhuo also called him “vice general Feng,” so it was visible from the front that Feng Longsong definitely had some different experiences of the Royal family.

At that time, Long Yu was carefully watching the back of Wang Tianzhuo, and saw that there stood an imaginary tiger-shaped figure, not real, but just an imaginary one, and it had a big forehead, like “King” character, and actually tallied with the surname of the prince.

That imaginary tiger-shaped figure was thirty feet long, and more than ten feet high, and was standing behind Wang Tianzhuo. It appeared as if a high house, and immediately deterred the people standing in the surrounding.

This, was really the Tiger Zhenling!

If practiced to Zhenling mystical realm successfully, then only one could congeal Zhenling, and even a master of Wudao ninth layer couldn't have the ability to face it.

“But, you, if want to fight, I, Long Yu will fight to the end!”

Long Yu simply had not actually feared. While facing the Zhenling master, he had not only flinched, instead his warm-blooded heart was ignited to fight.

At present, the Zhenling Mystical realm person was really strong!

Prior to it, Long Yu had seen Elder Yu using Zhenling against the people of Qiansi Sect, but now, he faced the Tiger Zhenling of Wang Tianzhuo, and it would result into a direct-viewing feeling for him.

“Suppression principle, world influence!”

Long Yu didn’t draw back, stepped forward, clenched his teeth, and immediately released the Zhentian world influence.

After just a short time to rest, his Dantian began to beat again and quickly restored 30 % of his Xuan qi to his body, and at this moment, he instantaneously released Zhentian world influence to resist Wang Tianzhuo’s Tiger Zhenling.

“Under the Zhenling, all creatures are ants!”

Wang Tianzhuo felt the heavy repression of the world influence released by Long Yu, and was somewhat surprised a little bit, and then immediately smiled contemptuously. In the next moment, the imaginary tiger-shaped figure behind him roared loudly and instantly broke the heavy repression of the world influence of Long Yu.

“My fist, can defeat you at will, like an ant being run over and dying easily!”

Wang Tianzhuo laughed disdainfully, and swept his fist towards Long Yu!

As he clenched his fist, the imaginary tiger-shaped figure behind him suddenly made a howling sound, as if to give him more power to his Zhenling.

“Demon vajra cover!”

Long Yu clenched his teeth, and instantly Xuan qi began to circulate crazily into his body meridians, and immediately a thin layer of golden light appeared on his entire body.

“Defense, what’s its use?”

Wang Tianzhuo’s arrogant stature instantly came in front of Long Yu, accompanied by loud roaring of Tiger-shaped imaginary figure, and punched his fist towards Long Yu.

Bang!

That punch hit on Long Yu’s shoulder, and his whole person was flown and heavily fell on the ground.

“It is not that world influence can’t resist the Tiger Zhenling, but there was too much difference between their basic strength!”

Long Yu crawled up with difficulty, and clenched his teeth while thinking.

He could clearly feel that his world influence dropped down the repression of Tiger Zhenling to a considerable extent, but because the gap of basic strength of both sides was too wide, so it finally resulted into the breaking down of world influence

“This kind of waste, and you have the nerve to say that he is a genius? Ha, ha, it is too funny!”

Wang Tianzhuo paced to arrive quickly at Long Yu, and stood by his side and slantingly looked at him with one eye and said disdainfully: “Now, you should know that who is the genius, and who is the waste”

Just one punch, and Long Yu was shot to fly and was injured, and this scene stunned the people on the spot.

Chapter 63 Tiger Zhenling (Part 2)

Listening to these ridiculing words of Wang Tianzhuo, everyone of the new people of Feng clan looked at him, and clenched their fists.

But they were aware of the fact that even Long Yu was not the opponent of Wang Tianzhuo, how could they face Wang Tianzhuo?

Those people, who had revolted against Feng clan, took pleasures in others' misfortunes.

“This Long Yu, in fact, is a waste, but can bluff and act arrogantly in front of us only!”

“Yes, to encounter the genius of Wang Tianzhuo of Royal family, he punched Long Yu to fly, it seems Royal city is the real martial world, Yu Guan city is too small.”

“I have decided that if Feng clan will not accept me then I will go to the Imperial City, and will earn prestige in the future, and will come back to despise Feng clan again!”

These taunts of the people directed against Long Yu didn't affect him at all.

When Long Yu looked that Wang Tianzhuo arrived at him, he climbed up with some difficulties, and without looking up, he suddenly condensed Nine hidden Dragon qi and punched his Nine hidden Dragon Fist towards Wang Tianzhuo.

Nine hidden Dragon Fist, and the Intoxicated Hell punched down by Long Yu deterred the minds of the people in the field.

Instantaneously Dragon Xuan qi rushed towards Wang Tianzhuo and immediately enveloped him completely, and suddenly Wang Tianzhuo's face became stiff.

At this moment, the Intoxicated Hell of Long Yu was in action, and he was the master of lives on the road!

Even Wang Tianzhuo's Tiger Zhenling was floating behind him, so what?

The Nine hidden Dragon Xuan qi instantly attacked Wang Tianzhuo, and a state of absent mindlessness was generated in him.

“Nine hidden Dragon Fist deter their lives!”

Long Yu immediately wore his black glove souls, and instantly it was covered with a thin layer of golden light, and immediately activating his Nine hidden Dragon Mark, he swept away his fist towards Wang Tianzhuo.

At that time, Long Yu's fist that he swept out towards Wang Tianzhuo contained the force of 300 fierce horses.

Roar!

That imaginary tiger-shaped figure suddenly howled loudly, a burst of Tiger Zhenling rushed towards Long Yu.

"You have condensed Xuan qi against the animal, but also have dared to stop me!"

Long Yu heard these words, and suddenly released Zhentian world influence, and taking the advantage of the absent mindlessness of Wang Tianzhuo, he instantly broke the Tiger Zhenling.

At that time, he immediately drew close to Wang Tianzhuo, and instantly condensed Dragon Xuan qi on his fist, and pounded it heavily Wang Tianzhuo's chest.

However, at this time, Wang Tianzhuo finally woke up from the state of his absent mindlessness.

He opened his eyes, and saw that Long Yu was going against the repression of Tiger Zhenling unexpectedly, and also hit a punch on his chest, and seeing it, suddenly his heart was startled.

Just a trick, what type of martial skill?

Even could make Wang Tianzhuo absent-minded unexpectedly!

Moreover, this Long Yu was only at Wudao eight layer, and unexpectedly could release the world influence to break the coercion of Tiger Zhenling, it was extremely terrific

“This kid, making me angry!”

Wang Tianzhuo’s eyes flashed intention to kill, and immediately the imaginary tiger-shaped figure roared loudly, and a powerful Zhenling rushed towards Long Yu, and this time Wang Tianzhuo shot a more terrifying punch towards him.

His this fist actually contained a force of 1000 fierce horses, and suddenly hit Long Yu.

Kacha!

Long Yu’s fist bone fractured, and his whole person again inverted away, and fell heavily on the ground!

However, the Nine hidden Dragon Xuan qi, that had condensed on his fist, suddenly seeped into the body of Wang Tianzhuo, and suddenly a burst of blue purple color emerged on his face.

“What type of this strange power is?”

Wang Tianzhuo was surprised, and quickly he ran his Xuan qi into his body meridians to neutralize the effects of Dragon Xuan qi.

As a Zhenling Mystical realm master, the intensity of his Xuan qi was of unusual nature, and it easily blocked the flow of the Dragon Xuan qi that had stopped the passage of his body meridians through which the vital energy of his body circulated.

However, even Wang Tianzhuo was more powerful than him, but even he couldn't be able to check the building up of the wisp of the Nine hidden Dragon Xuan qi at once.

Once he would relax his vigilance, this wisp of Nine hidden Dragon Xuan qi would wreak havoc into his body meridians immediately, and would corrode the passages through which the vital energy of his body circulated.

“Hateful!”

As a result, now temporarily he could only use his 30 % less power, because this 30 % power was used by him in neutralizing the effects of the Nine hidden Dragon Xuan qi.

This made him very angry. He had not imagined that in dealing with a Wudao eight layer master he would have to face such type of situation.

His power was extremely formidable, now, he thought to kill Long Yu with his single punch.

“But now, you have no chance.”

Wang Tianzhuo looked at Long Yu with a killing intention in his eyes.

At this time, Feng Longsong's face slightly changed, and he walked one step and came in front of Long Yu and stopped Wang Tianzhuo.

“Wang Tianzhuo, you have proved your strength, Long Yu, is not your opponent!”

Feng Longsong said in a cold voice: “You kill him if you want, then you will have to first deal with me, but for my daughter, Feng Yao, I have only to say, if you want to marry her, go to her, as her father, I have no control over her choice.”

“The Feng vice general, you say this, don't think I would think twice because I have liking for your daughter, my hands don't dare to begin on you?”

Wang Tianzhuo said in a cold voice, and stared at Feng Longsong.

“You can give a try freely.”

Feng Longsong didn't fear, and at that time, his look was indifferent. He was ready to confront Wang Tianzhuo.

“You're not to open the case again, I really want to try!”

Wang Tianzhuo glanced at Feng Longsong, and said indifferently.

“Stop!”

A crisp and anxious voice, suddenly came over from the sidelines and people in the field listened to it, and all gawked.

Feng Yao!

Long Yu looked at the entrance of the Feng House, and saw pretty Feng Yao, wearing a light green dress, who actually ran back, and made noise to restrain Wang Tianzhuo, who, at that time, wanted to begin his hands on Feng Longsong.

Chapter 64 Skyhawk strikes down the tiger (Part 1)

When Feng Yao appeared, Wang Tianzhuo was obviously stunned, and was surprised at that moment, but then he smiled.

“Feng Yao junior sister apprentice, didn’t you go back to your Sect?”

He naturally asked.

Feng Yao didn’t reply to him, but clenched her teeth and said: “How do you want to deal with Long Yu, I don’t care, but I will not allow you to hurt my father.”

Wang Tianzhuo laughed: “I want to deal with anyone who will create obstacle on my way to achieve my aim, however, Feng Yao junior sister apprentice, if you promise to marry me, they would not be ‘others’, but would be persons of my own side!”

“Yes.”

That handsome youth, who looked like Liu Mingxuan, smiled out, and said: “Cousin, Wang Tianzhuo is a prince from Royal Imperial family, and is talented one, he holds a high status, and wants to marry you, and it is more than enough for you”

Feng Yao heard it, and bit her lip lightly, and looked at Wang Tianzhuo and then looked at Feng Longsong.

“Engagement, Ok, but I will not walk with you temporarily.”

She thought for a long time, and finally said in a cold voice: “This year, I am only 16 years old, when I will be 18 years old, I will surely pay a visit to the prince, I think that Mr. Wang Tianzhuo, a talented prince from the Royal Imperial family, should not be afraid that I will go back on my promise of today!”

“Two years!”

An interesting look immediately flashed in Wang Tianzhuo’s eyes, and said in a serious tone: “I am not afraid that you will go back on your promise, all people, but hear what you said. However, if you want to use two years to find a patron powerful enough to rival my Royal family, I advise you to give up this thought!”

This was obviously the intention of Feng Yao’s saying, but Wang Tianzhuo didn’t oppose it.

He came from Royal Imperial family, and keeping in the view of his family background, he had enough self-confidence!

Two years’ time was, a short time, but it seemed to be long, but actually was not very long.

In such a short period of time, what patron could she be able to find? Feng Yao would have definitely liked to say that in these two years she would grow herself to confront Wang Tianzhuo, and that was more impossible.

The Royal family was one of the four important families of Tang State, and its foundation was solid and its overall strength was very strong, and even it could

be compared with the ancestor of Zhentian Sect.

“How I, will not need you to manage, so long as you know that I will abide by the agreement on the line.”

Feng Yao said coldly.

“Well, I promise you, I will not begin my hands on vice general Feng” ”

Wang Tianzhuo nodded, and then suddenly a killing intention flashed in his eyes: “But, you make your father to make way to me! Today, I will surely kill this Long Yu.”

“Father, you make way to him”

Feng Yao heard it, and tilted her head to look at Feng Longsong, having the hope in her eyes: “I am worried about you and my mother, so I came back to look after you, failing that, I’m afraid”

“Don’t say more.”

Feng Longsong said with firm look in his eyes, and then he shook his head: “I never looked at Long Yu to be killed by others.”

His eyes reflected the feeling as if he was trying to wipe his heart pain. He knew well that Feng Yao didn’t like Wang Tianzhuo, but just to save his life, she actually became ready to set the engagement with Wang Tianzhuo.

This was a shameful engagement. This was a shameful thing for Long clan as well as for Feng Longsong.

However, he was simply incapable of preventing all these. At that time, he was also injured, now how could he stop Wang Tianzhuo?

It was only a pity that at the moment, he was simply powerless.

What he could do only that at the risk of his life, he blocked Wang Tianzhuo to save the life of Long Yu.

In the past, his life was saved by the general.

Now, no matter, even if he died, he must preserve the only blood heir of the general.

“You want to block me, can you prevent me?”

Wang Tianzhuo saw the firm look in Feng Longsong’s eyes, and couldn’t help but sneered, and immediately his footsteps moved and suddenly a tiger-shaped imaginary figure appeared behind him and started roaring crazily once again.

The Tiger Zhenling suddenly rushed towards Feng Longsong, and shrouded him completely, and immediately he could not move!

“At the same time!”

Wang Tianzhuo looked fierce, and he suddenly raised his right hand, and displayed the Tiger Zhenling again and immediately a burst of Tiger coercion rushed out, and instantly pushed Feng Longsong ten feet away.

“Father !”

Seeing this, Feng Yao quickly ran over and grabbed Feng Longsong.

“Little Long Yu!”

Feng Longsong’s face changed. At that time, he actually wanted to run to stop Wang Tianzhuo again, but he was virtually stopped firmly by Feng Yao, and didn’t make him pass.

Wang Tianzhuo, step by step moved towards injured Long Yu.

At this time, Long Yu’s right hand’s bone had disrupted, and his body meridians, through which vital energy circulated, were also affected, and under the heavy pressure of the Tiger Zhenling of Wang Tianzhuo, he wanted to stand up, but could not achieve it.

“You, just a Wudao eight layer, could even injure me unexpectedly, good, very good!”

Wang Tianzhuo arrived at Long Yu, and his eyes were emitting fire at that time:

“Unfortunately, today, you are going to die at Wang Tianzhuo’s hands!”

As the voice down, nearby one could see a strong desire in Feng Longsong's eyes to crack.

Long Yu, how possibly could he be dead in such a manner?

He was the only male heir of the general, the talent that he exhibited so far was terrific, so how could he be killed in such a way by Wang Tianzhuo?

All visions of the people in the field were focused on Wang Tianzhuo, and all actually wanted to see that how he would start to kill Long Yu.

However, at this time, suddenly a fierce cry of a sky hawk was transmitted in the upper air, and let Wan Tianzhuo's face change immediately.

"Who? "

Wang Tianzhuo felt as if he was locked from the distant place, and if he would try to move even a bit, then he would be hit by a series of violent storm attacks.

This was actually due to the impact of the move of a powerful Zhenling by a strong Wudao master.

Wang Tianzhuo felt that if he would move a bit, he would die.

"Ha ha ha -"

A loud laughter of a proud man came from far and near, followed by the

appearance of a youth dressed in black tights on the roof of the hall of Feng mansion house!

Chapter 64 Skyhawk strikes down the tiger (Part 2)

“Ha ha ha -”

A loud laughter of a proud man came from far and near, followed by the appearance of a youth dressed in black tights on the roof of the hall of Feng mansion house!

This choroid-clothed youth had a handsome look with a smiling face, and occupied a commanding position, and was looking at the people standing in the field with an unruly temperament!

Long Yu saw him, and his heart thumped, Bu Xing?

This youth, clad in black clothes, was actually the first of the disciples of Zhentian Sect, Bu Xing!

And just with the sound of a sky hawk’s cry, there emerged a sky hawk behind the youth, and began to fly proudly and spatially in circles, and it looked aggressive and stubborn.

It was actually carved out by Bu Xing’s Sky hawk Zhenling that he shot out a moment ago locking Wang Tianzhuo completely, so he didn’t dare even to move a bit!

“Bu Xing?”

Wang Tianzhuo looked up and saw the figure of Bu Xing, and could not help but his face changed.

He was a person from the Royal family, so how could he not know the identity of Bu Xing? He was one of the nine geniuses of Tang State, and was many times stronger than Wang Tianzhuo.

But unexpectedly, as the word ‘ Bu Xing ’ came out of the mouth of Wang Tianzhuo, the complexion of that youth, then standing on the roof of the hall of the Feng mansion house, suddenly changed,

“What did you say?”

Bu Xing fiercely looked at the locked body of Wang Tianzhuo, as if a flying sky hawk finally found a prey.

This feeling accelerated the palpitation of Wang Tianzhuo’s heart considerably.

“Awful, I forgot not to address him by his name in front of him

Instantly cold sweat emerged on the face of Wang Tianzhuo!

Wang Tianzhuo had just arrived Yu Guan city triumphantly, as if he was the master of the entire Yu Guan City, with a control over everything present there.

But now, in the face of Bu Xing, his heart was actually disturbed, because he feared that in a rage he could even kill him.

This was the impact of strength.

“What kind of thing you are, dare to shout at Wang Tianzhuo?”

Just then, a rampant and domineering voice resounded, and it was of one of the four attendants of Wang Tianzhuo, and he looked at Bu Xing then standing on the roof with a disdain and despising look in his eyes.

He was a personal attendant of Wang Tianzhuo, and was at Wudao eight layer, and a master of Wudao eight layer was considered as a powerful person in Yu Guan city, so this made him to show off his strength at this moment.

Obviously, this guy did not recognize the identity of Bu Xing, and marked the end of his life.

“What am I? You ask your lord actually, what thing am I?”

A sneer appeared on the stubborn face of Bu Xing, and then a sharp cry of the Sky hawk was heard behind him, and a windy hurricane instantaneously rushed towards that attendant.

In just a moment, a gust of wind of Sky hawk Zhenling directly shattered the heart vessels of that attendant, and with a staring eyes, he slowly fell on the ground.

With the strength to walk, trying to kill a Wudao eight layer unusual master, a move of the Sky hawk Zhenling was enough, and it could be able to shatter the heart of the opposite party instantly.

Then, the imaginary shape of Sky hawk, which was hovering in the sky, now turned around and dived down towards Wang Tianzhuo.

“Wang Tianzhuo, so you bully the disciple of my Zhentian Sect, do you think that Zhentian Sect is devoid of powerhouses?”

Bu Xing said in a stubborn voice, and immediately displayed Sky hawk Zhenling, and suddenly a gust of windy hurricane rushed towards Wang Tianzhuo.

“Step Brother, I didn’t know, this guy is a disciple of Zhentian Sect!”

Wang Tianzhuo hurriedly explained it, and suddenly a roar of imaginary tiger-shaped figure was heard behind him, and he swept away his Tiger Zhenling towards Bu Xing. He actually wanted to resist the attack of Bu Xing.

However, the power of the Sky hawk Zhenling was stronger than the Tiger Zhenling of Wang Tianzhuo.

Just in the face of the Sky hawk Zhenling, the power of the Tiger Zhenling was blown off by the crazy fierce hurricane of the Sky hawk Zhenling.

The Sky hawk wrestled with the Tiger, and disillusioned it in a flash.

Then, the sky hawk with a pair of wings, each extended up to 10 feet, suddenly dived down towards Wang Tianzhuo to grip his whole person with its mouth.

“You wanted to kill the disciple of my Zhentian Sect, I’d like to see in the end who kills whom today?”

Bu Xing, with wild and unruly smile, raised his hand, and rolled the whole person of Wang Tianzhuo with the terrific force of his sky hawk Zhenling and pushed him into the mouth of the sky hawk flying high in the sky.

“I am a person of Royal family, you really can’t kill me”

Faced with the threat to his life, Wang Tianzhuo wanted to save his life by virtue of his family background.

“I have only comprehended the sky hawk Zhenling and the world influence of Zhentian Sect, and you have mountain forest Tiger Zhenling, what to fear?”

Bu Xing laughed: “Since today, depending on your power of Zhenling, you were bullying Brother Long Yu Young, I’ll keep your life, making Brother Long Yu personally to take your life in the future!”

As his voice down, the hurricane dissipated, and the whole person of Wang Tianzhuo fell down on the ground from the sky.

Slammed, and his body crashed against pounded bricks and stones, but this time Wang Tianzhuo was seriously injured, and now, he had no Xuan qi left in his body to suppress the Nine hidden Xuan qi that now, started eroding his body meridians again.

“Ahem!”

Wang Tianzhuo coughed out blood, and climbed up with difficulty, and stared at Bu Xing with rays of hatred in his eyes: : “ Today’s insult, I will keep in my mind, and one day I will avenge it ”

“Get lost, such type of words, wait for time to have enough strength to say it again”

Bu Xing stubbornly smiled as if he didn’t pay any attention on Wang Tianzhuo.

When the outcome of the fighting between Sky hawk and Tiger came out, the people in the surrounding were simply stunned, and didn’t know what to say.

Today, this series of things, nothing could be said about their twists and turns, every turn, was enough for them to wonder at.

Chapter 65 The wind stopped the rain (Part 1)

Yu Guan City, the Feng mansion, gathering of many people in the surrounding.

From the beginning to the end of the play, all people experienced accelerated palpitations of their hearts.

Initially, Feng Yun became the head of Feng clan, then Long Yu made his entry into the scene and provoked Feng Yun, and later on defeated Ling Lie and wasted Feng Yun!

Then, Tan clan, Qin clan and Luo clan, these three important clans jointly launched attack to destroy Feng clan, and their attack was resisted by Long Yu, and out of three clan heads, two were dead, and one was seriously injured.

Long Yu was a valiant, and in a short time, he left a deep impact on the minds of the people!

However afterward, Wang Tianzhuo, the prince of the Royal family defeated Long Yu using his Tiger Zhenling, then Bu Xing, the first of the core disciples of Zhentian Sect came, and his sky hawk wrestled with the tiger and easily defeated it.

There were twists and turns of the events, but all were really amazing!

“Let’s go!”

Wang Tianzhuo stood up reluctantly, and then, the youth that looked like Liu

Mingxuan, quickly ran over to support him.

He brought four personal attendants with him, but one died at the hands of Bu Xing, and now only three were left, and at that time, all of them hastily led him towards the outside of the Feng mansion.

When Feng Tianzhuo came around Feng Yao, he suddenly stopped and snorted: “Don’t forget your agreement with me, after two years, remember to come to Royal palace to fulfill the engagement!”

Feng Yao’s eyes flashed. She knew well, although Wang Tianzhuo had lost to Bu Xing today, but it didn’t mean that Wang Tianzhuo would always face defeat.

After going back to Royal palace, Wang Tianzhuo would certainly not sit idle, and would definitely send Royal experts to deal with Bu Xing, and then it might be difficult for Bu Xing to resist them alone.

“Two years later, I, Feng Yao will visit to the Royal palace.”

Feng Yao said in a cold voice.

“Ahem.”

Wang Tianzhuo coldly looked at her, and could not help but think, that he didn’t know that what kind of attractive scene would be there when this woman would be waiting on my parents?

He lightly snorted and turned around to leave with his three attendants.

“Liu Mingcheng.”

Suddenly, Feng Yao called out loudly, and stopped that youth, who looked like Liu Mingxuan, and asked: “Liu family has become a dependency of Wang Tianzhuo, but why have you become a running dog of this Wang Tianzhuo?”

That youth, who looked like Liu Mingxuan, was actually called Liu Mingcheng!

As soon as he heard these words, he couldn't help but smiled: “You are not a person of Liu family. You don't need to manage that what kind of person I, Liu Mingcheng is? Mr. Wang Tianzhuo is at the top of the column in the entire Tang State, The talent of Mr. Wang is outstanding. I and Mr. Wang are friends, why not proper?”

“You look at you, how did you speak these words, cousin?”

A beautiful woman hid herself aside, and at that time she ran out hurriedly, it was the mother of Feng Yao, Li Yu!

She stared at Feng Yao, and said to Liu Mingcheng and Wang Tianzhuo with a smile on her face: “ Honestly speaking, Mr. Wang, my this daughter is innocent, if she marries you, then it would be good fortune for her for the rest of her life, perhaps it will not need two years, she will understand this truth! When the time comes, I will certainly take her to the Royal palace!

“It seems that Yu Guan city still has sensible persons. “

Wang Tianzhuo said maintaining his arrogant temperament. Although, he was just defeated by Bu Xing, but this couldn't let him realize something.

Depending on the background of his life experience of Royal family, he had become accustomed to his arrogant temperament.

“Yao, let's return to Liu family.”

Liu Yu said.

“I won't go.”

Feng Yao shook her head and turned away.

She moved in the direction that actually led to Hanbing Sect, and at present it was her only destination!

Right now, Feng Yao didn't have any honor left to stay in Feng clan. Moreover, even if she stayed in Feng clan, she no longer had any chance of ascension. And as far as Liu clan was concerned, since her very childhood, she had been unable to forget the humiliation she suffered at the hands of Liu clan.

Until she would make herself strong enough, she would never return to the Feng mansion.

“This girl”

Li Yu cursed loudly, and then immediately said to Wang Tianzhuo: “Wang Tianzhuo, you should not be angry, I remember what this girl has said, she has certain priorities for Hanbing Sect, so she must first return to her Sect.” i

“No harm, anyway, after two years, we have to implement the agreement, everyone knows.”

Wang Tianzhuo lightly said, looking at the attractive back of Feng Yao, and a greedy color flashed in his eyes.

Regarding a beautiful woman, Wang Tianzhuo was extremely friendly, and not to mention, Feng Yao had enough talent, and she had qualifications to become his wife.

He turned his head, and stared at Bu Xing and Long Yu maliciously, and departed with his three attendants as well as Li Yu.

“Some people, refuse to be convinced until they are faced with grim reality.”

Bu Xing looked at Wang Tianzhuo, shrugged his shoulder, and said: “Brother Long Yu, when you will bump into with him next time, perhaps he will not be your opponent.”

Bu Xing tilted his head, and smiled and looked at Long Yu: “Your quick progress is amazing, it is really making other fellow apprentices to blush with shame.”

Long Yu got up, and stood beside Bu Xing and shook his head slowly: “My strength, is too weak, a person of Zhenling Mystical realm, will be able to defeat me.....”

“Ha ha, you are at Wudao eighth layer, I have never heard of someone can rally beat a person of Zhenling Mystical realm, remaining only at Wudao eighth layer.”

Bu Xing shook his head and said with a smile on his face: “For your own requirement, you have too much to know, even the first layer person of Zhenling mystical realm has 3 to 4 times more strength than a Wudao ninth layer master, and his basic strength is of 1000 fierce horses, and it is considered as an honored strength!”

At present, the strongest force that Long Yu could display was only 300 fierce horses.

However, while facing a person of Zhenling mystical realm, the gap of the strength was too big, even if he comprehended the world influence, it was impossible for him to confront a person of Zhenling mystical realm.

Zhenling Mystical realm was the foundation, and in this state, one could have enough power base.

Otherwise, practice any type of martial skill, comprehend any ideal condition, all would be futile.

“Brother says right.”

Long Yu nodded, but also knew that he acted with undue haste.

Chapter 65 The wind stopped the rain (Part 2)

However, if he could be able to step into Wudao ninth layer, then his basic force would increase, and after that it could be possible to cope with the single layer mystical realm Wang Tianzhuo.

After all, even a Zhenling mystical realm person would not necessarily be able to comprehend the world influence.

“Moreover, you can comprehend the world influence, it really seems contrary to the anticipations of the fellow apprentices.”

Bu Xing with a natural smile, patted Long Yu’s shoulder and said: “My view regarding the congealment of the sky hawk Zhenling is that first you will have to make a thorough connection with your body meridians, and then you can step into the Zhenling mystical realm, and then you can comprehend it successfully, this is the highest state of cultivation of Zhentian tactics.”

“Really Zhenling mystical realm, for the time being, I don’t think to go for it. Now, I’m not even at Wudao ninth layer, it is still very far distance.”

Long Yu shook his head and said.

“Good, carefully, Wudao is a way, then you must lead the way steadfastly, otherwise foundation is not steady, and cultivation will not be fruitful.”

Bu Xing approvingly said.

At this time, Feng Longsong finally came to the side of both, and with full of color of gratitude in his eyes, said to Bu Xing: "Thank you, for saving your fellow brother."

"Ha ha, vice general Feng, there is no need to be polite."

Bu Xing laughed: "My teacher, and vice general Feng are but old friends!"

Hearing such remarks, Feng Longsong gawked: "Who is Your teacher?"

"Baiyun Zong."

Bu Xing said these words.

These words brought a pleasant surprise for Feng Longsong, and also surprised Long Yu.

Baiyun Zong, the sovereign of Zhentian Sect, was actually the teacher of Bu Xing! No wonder, then in the Teng snake abyss time, the Law Enforcement elder, Chuan couldn't dare to talk to Bu Xing!

Except the strength as well as the identity, put together, how could Law Enforcement elder, Chuan dare to hands-free talk to Bu Xing.

"So, it is general Baiyun."

Feng Longsong sighed with emotions.

“The teacher, was a former general, but now, is the sovereign of Zhentian Sect.”

Bu Xing shook his head and said with a smile: “Well, senior Feng, I would like to take Long Yu with me to return to my Sect, my teacher has arranged something for him to look at there.”

“Ah, you feel free.”

Feng Longsong said with a smile, and then turned towards Long Yu: “Little Long Yu, now you have progressed amazingly quick, but Wudao is a way, must not become arrogant and complacent, you know.”

“Yes”

Long Yu nodded.

“As for our new Feng clan here, don’t worry.”

Feng Longsong looked all around once, and said: “ Three clans are not having anyone at Wudao ninth layer, so temporarily, they can’t come to me to create any trouble, not to mention, Feng Yao has set the engagement with Wang Tianzhuo, it can also deter them, but unfortunately child Yao.....”

Long Yu saw, Feng Longsong’ eyes were full of unwillingness and shame, and then he knew that Feng Longsong was extremely reluctant to see Feng Yao to

marry Wang Tianzhuo.

But at present, Feng Longsong didn't have the ability to prevent it, and if this matter became a reality, then it would be a lifetime pain and hate for him!

Long Yu placed this matter secretly at his heart.

He must step onto this prince of the Royal family, but not now. To rush to the Royal palace, he needed more strength than Bu Xing!

And this, couldn't be achieved in a single day, but fortunately, the agreement between Feng Yao and Wang Tianzhuo was for two years.

Two years' time, could change a lot of things.

He must save Feng Yao, not for Feng Yao, but for his foster father, Feng Longsong!

"Brother Long Yu, come on!"

When Long Yu and Bu Xing turned to leave, they heard from their back the respective blessing of all 42 new people of the Feng clan..

Now, the Feng clan had become more spacious than before, it was now an integrated Feng clan with Feng Longsong as its head, in total there were 43 persons including Feng Longsong.

However, the cohesive force of the entire new Feng clan was actually unprecedented.

“You also get prepared.”

Long Yu did not look back, only stopped for a while, and then continued to walk to leave.

The most of the people, who had defected Feng clan, had departed, and now their destination was the Royal city, as they were impressed by the strength of Wang Tianzhuo today, and felt that only the Royal city could provide a chance for the development of their power.

The people of other three clans of Yu Guan city had also dispersed.

They suffered heavy losses today, and even after a very long period of respite, they would necessarily be not able to compensate the losses of today.

Originally, they wanted to annex the Feng clan to receive benefits, and in doing so, they were actually trying to steal a chicken, but lost a handful of rice, and their high aims ultimately resulted into a total failure, and it was all because of the appearance of Long Yu to resist their evildoings.

So far, the day in Yu Guan city was bustling with noise and excitement, and the wind finally stopped the rain!

Long Yu followed Bu Xing, and quickly left Yu Guan city, and marched to the south in the direction of Zhentian Sect.

“Fellow, don’t you want to know about your life experience?”

Walking to the side of Long Yu, Bu Xing asked aloud.

“Brother, do you know?”

Long Yu said, and at that time, his heart was startled.

From the very beginning, he actually wanted to know about his life experience, but couldn’t be able to know, because Feng Longsong was not willing to say anything about it.

“My teacher knows about it, and this time he wants you to go back to the Sect, perhaps, he wants to tell you something. Depending on your current strength, it is time to know about it!”

Bu Xing’s words fell into Long Yu’s ears, making him somewhat impatient.

About the life experience, could he be able to get to the bottom of it?

Chapter 66 Qian Dragon Spear

Long Yu followed Bu Xing all the way and after two days, both returned to Zhentian Sect, and arrived at the bamboo grove, where the elders lived.

On the way, Bu Xing probably said something to Long Yu about the background of his life.

In those years, Baiyun Zong and Long Zaitian were generals of Tang State, and Feng Longsong was the vice general of Long Zaitian.

The main task of these generals was to protect Tang State from the menace of foreign enemies, and a person having cultivation level at least above than Zhenling mystical realm could become a general of Tang State, and obviously, the cultivation levels of Long Zaitian, Baiyun Zong and Feng Longsong were above Zhenling mystical realm.

But, on one occasion, while resisting against foreign enemies, Feng Longsong was seriously injured and his body meridians were severely damaged, so now, he could only display the force equal to Wudao eighth layer and thus was unable to release Zhenling.

“So my father is called Long Zaitian and he was a general of Tang State. But, Bu Xing, perhaps doesn’t know many things about him, for particular details, I will have to ask sovereign Baiyun Zong.”

Long Yu thought to himself and looked at the Elders Pavilion, in the bamboo grove.

“Sovereign is inside, you go and see him.”

Bu Xing smiled and said again while reminding Long Yu: “Right brother, wait for me when you return to the martial Court. Your good brother Ling Han has sent a letter two days ago, possibly there may be something in it you’re looking for....”

“Ok.”

At that time, Long Yu’s mind was fully focused on seeing the sovereign, however, he nodded his head.

Ling Han had talked before about his trip to Ling clan’s villa, perhaps something might have happened there?

But, Long Yu put aside this thing for the time being, and moved forward and stepped into the elders’ pavilion.

At this time, the elders’ pavilion looked empty in comparison to the previous time, when many elders gathered together.

Long Yu gave a quick look inside and saw the appearance of a 31-year-old middle-aged man, with short hair, and two pinches of small mustache on the corners of his mouth, it was actually the sovereign of Zhentian Sect, Baiyun Zong!

At this time, Baiyun Zong sat at will and was sipping tea and when he looked up, he saw Long Yu.

“Then.”

Baiyun Zong said the word, and immediately waved his hand towards Long Yu's side, where a spear was kept, leaning against the wall.

“What is this?”

Long Yu gawked at the moment, and subconsciously put out his hands, perhaps he wanted to grab the long spear.

However, as his hand bumped into the spear, he felt as if a roaring sound of a dragon spread from that long spear and sipped into his whole body.

“Very heavy!”

Long Yu's whole body trembled, but he immediately extended his other hand to hold the long spear to balance his stature and was able to stabilize himself.

But, the weight of the long spear was beyond his imagination, perhaps 10,000 Jin, so he couldn't hold it suddenly, however, he was able to stand firm, but by the time, the spear already turned and hit the ground heavily.

“It's the spear used by your father before his death, called Qian Dragon Spear!”

Baiyun Zong said in a melancholy voice, as if delving deep into some of his past memories.

Qian Dragon Spear!

Long Yu scowled, did his father use this spear during his lifetime?

Was his father dead now?

“My father, he -”

Long Yu could not help but asked aloud.

“Now you have the capability to take up this Qian Dragon Spear, though not very smoothly, but now you can begin coordinating with it to understand how to use it.”

Then, Baiyun Zong looked at him, and immediately sipped some tea, and said: “Originally, I thought that I will have to keep this Qian Dragon Spear quietly for the rest of my life, actually I never thought that you will actually turn out to be so talented..”

The scenes of the past, along with the narration of Baiyun Zong, page after page was being turned in front of Long Yu!

Long Yu’s father, Long Zaitian, was born in the Dragon clan of Tang State.

The Dragon clan, the Chu clan and the Mo clan were three clans who proved their powerful presence and formidable strength in Tang State!

The heads of these clans established their influence in the entire Tang State.

As for the Royal family, to which Wang Tianzhuo belonged, it was one of the four Royal families in Tang State.

The Royal families and the clans, simply couldn't be compared, briefly speaking, the four big Royal families including the family to which Wang Tianzhuo belonged, weren't as powerful as the Dragon clan.

The Dragon clan was nursery of martial talents, and produced several geniuses every year, and they were finally recruited to be the generals of Tang State from generation to generation. Long Zaitian had extraordinary talent and only at the age of 18 he stepped into the Zhenling mystical realm!

On the basis of his extraordinary talent, he became one of the youngest generals of Tang State.

Also after this, Baiyun Zong and Long Zaitian came to know each other, and from the beginning, Feng Longsong was the vice general of Long Zaitian, but Long Zaitian never put on airs and always treated him as his brother.

After that, they were engaged in a military expedition for ten years. During these ten years, Baiyun Zong and Long Zaitian repeatedly resisted the invasions of Meng State and Dang State successfully. The news of their military glory circulated widely.

For example, when Long Yu had not left Yu Guan city, then he had heard about Baiyun Zong leading a military expedition and killing enemies, but at that time,

he didn't hear anything about Long Zaitian, it seemed, as if news related to him was being actually intentionally blocked and no one dared to say even a single word about him.

This left Long Yu's mind full of doubts.

But this time, Long Yu finally knew the truth from Baiyun Zong.

After ten years when he became the general of Tang State, he came into contact with a woman named Beiyu Yao.

Needless to say, Beiyu Yao was extremely beautiful, but the most important thing was that her family forces had much more formidable influence in comparison to Tang State!

Long Zaitian and Beiyu Yao loved each other, but Beiyu Yao actually encountered a lot of obstructions from numerous powerhouses of her clan.

This resulted into several wars and killings of the opponents by Long Zaitian. His strength was regarded as a terror for the enemies in those days and deterred everyone. Some of the powerhouses of the family of Beiyu Yao set out to cope with Long Zaitian, but finally weren't able to deal with him!

But, because of their influence, the forces of the family of Beiyu Yao put pressure on Tang State to take action against Long Zaitian. Moreover, some of the people were jealous of the rise of Long Zaitian. All of this led to taking a series of actions against Long Zaitian by Tang State, and it finally resulted into his deportation from Tang State.

He was not only ousted from the position of the general of Tang State, but also expelled from there!

The reason for Long Zaitian's expulsion was treason, which was just framed-up by the collaboration of his enemies.

Thus, it could be imagined that Long Zaitian had no place left to go.

In those days, Long Zaitian faced a precarious situation. Tang State couldn't accommodate him, and once he led the Tang State's and killed several enemies from Meng State and Dang State, so these two States couldn't accommodate him either, and Long Zaitian was so arrogant that he would never seek shelter in the enemy States.

So, he and Beiyu Yao roamed here and there for one year, but ultimately could not avoid a disaster.

Eventually, after Beiyu Yao gave birth to Long Yu, she was captured by the enemy forces and there was no news about her for a long time.

Long Zaitian was a man of no compromise, and it was said that he broke into the enemy forces, but what exactly happened there, no one knew, even Baiyun Zong didn't know the whereabouts of Long Zaitian.

Only a small fragmentary news came and Baiyun Zong came to know that Long Zaitian was completely suppressed, and was feared to have already passed away.

Feng Longsong was actually not in position to protect Long Zaitian. Quite before tendering any help in the protection of Long Zaitian, Feng Longsong was

seriously injured, and his body meridians were damaged, and it became impossible for him for the rest of his life to step into higher level of martial arts. Now he could only display the strength of Wudao eighth layer only and couldn't even congeal Zhenling.

Long after the day of disappearance of Long Zaitian, Feng Longsong returned to Yu Guan city with Long Yu, and brought him up there.

Meanwhile, he met with a Liu family's woman, named Liu Yu, whom he previously knew, and married her. She gave birth to Feng Yao. Thus, Feng Longsong finally settled in Yu Guan city.

During these years, many people wanted to kill the source of the trouble, Long Yu, but he managed to survive.

"Whether the Tang Emperor or the Dragon clan or the forces of your mother, all of them want to kill you."

Baiyun Zong said lightly: "But, there are many people who also want to protect you, that's why you have managed to survive until now."

"I understand that there are people who want to kill me. But, who wants to protect me?"

Long Yu scowled: "My mother has been arrested, my father disappeared, in addition, who else?"

"Regarding this, we can only wait after you to become stronger, then only we will find the truth."

Baiyun Zong cast aside his mustache, smiled and said: "Ultimately, I, Baiyun Zong, was only an outsider, your father was implicated and ousted from the status of general, and being your father's friend, similarly, I was also ousted from the status of general, and could only come to Zhentian Sect to become its sovereign."

"Do you hate my father?"

Long Yu asked.

"What do you think?"

Baiyun Zong snorted loudly: "Young fellow, if he has become a wanderer but hasn't informed me then it is seriously hateful! At present, no one knows his whereabouts, and I could only come to Zhentian Sect to become its sovereign and to perform this dull job, it is boring, boring ah!"

"....."

Long Yu listened to it, and thought that the relationship between Baiyun Zong and Long Zaitian was perhaps good, and so he would not complain about being implicated by Long Zaitian.

Long Yu didn't find any trace of regret in Baiyun Zong's eyes for the loss of his status as a general, but perhaps, Long Zaitian probably thought that this loss would definitely touch Baiyun Zong's heart, so he didn't say anything to Baiyun Zong and wandered away on his own!

But regarding this, Long Yu didn't have the means to say anything with certainty, and he could only make a guess secretly in his heart.

The Tang Emperor, the Dragon clan, and the forces of his mother's clan, but who exactly wanted to protect him?

Now, he didn't fully understand these three aspects, but he simply could guess only. But now, he somewhat confirmed that besides Feng Longsong, there were some other people who were worried for him.

"In any event, I, Long Yu, will set foot on the summit of martial arts, and I will figure out everything."

"Long Zaitian, my father, I will eventually find you, and then together, we will catch the person who falsely accused you of treason!"

Long Yu set firm resolve in his heart.

In this world, strength was respected by all, and if one had enough strength, all problems could be solved!

"Here, I give this Qian Dragon Spear to you."

Baiyun Zong told everything that he knew and looked very much relaxed: "This is not a common battle weapon, if in the perfect condition, it is more powerful than the best grade battle weapons, but unfortunately, it has been damaged."

With his words, he gave the spear to Long Yu, and as he took it in his hand, he

again heart the faint roar of a dragon coming out of the spear.

“Sovereign, is there any martial skills above the best grade martial skills?”

Long Yu wrinkled his eyebrows and inquired.

Ever since he got Nine hidden Dragon Fist, he wanted to know whether there existed some martial skills above best grade martial skills.

But, he didn't know what exactly they were, so now, he decided to ask Baiyun Zong about it.

“Of course.”

Baiyun Zong wrinkled his eyebrows and said: “However, these are the things you can use only stepping into the Zhenling Mystical realm. At present, you should choose a top grade marksmanship skill first and temporarily coordinate with this Qian Dragon Spear, in order to learn how to use it properly.”

Chapter 67 Sect rewards

Top grade marksmanship skill.

Altogether nine super grade martial skills were recorded in the mountain valley, situated at the back of the Zhentian martial court, but none of them was actually a marksmanship skill, and if a Wudao master wanted to practice a marksmanship skill, he could choose only a top grade marksmanship skill.

“You will have to wait till you step into the Zhenling mystical realm in order to use this Qian Dragon Spear efficiently, so until then, you should learn a top grade marksmanship skill.”

Baiyun Zong said.

Now Long Yu really realized that why Baiyun Zong said to him to use a top grade marksmanship skill “temporarily.”

It was necessary to practice a top grade marksmanship skill completely, but Long Yu must wait till he would step into Zhenling mystical realm.

But stepping into Zhenling mystical realm was not an easy matter, and at least it couldn't be achieved in a short time, therefore, Long Yu needed a top grade marksmanship skill in order to familiarize himself with Qian Dragon spear.

“When I further go with the practice of Qian Dragon Spear, the most important thing would be the imposing aura. But since I have comprehended the Zhentian world influence, even if I haven't practiced a marksmanship skill, I

should be able to display very strong strength with Qian Dragon Spear.”

Long Yu thought to himself and then took leave from Baiyun Zong.

Baiyun Zong always said to him that ‘time waits for none’, so he would have to rely on his own hard work.

He could feel that Qian Dragon Spear seemed to hide some secret, but at present, he was unable to understand it, and only after stepping into Zhenling mystical realm, he would be able to figure it out.

Somehow, Long Yu always felt that this Qian Dragon Spear seemed to have its own intelligence, but that intelligence was hidden deep within, so he was unable to notice it.

Soon, Long Yu descended the mountain, and arrived at the Martial Court.

Bu Xing, clad in a black tight dress, was standing near the cliff of the Martial Court and overlooking the sea of clouds, and his stature attracted the attention of the disciples of Zhentian Sect moving here and there in the surrounding.

The identity of Bu Xing was so great that almost every disciple of Zhentian Sect knew him!

At this point, they saw Bu Xing standing here, and it seemed that he was waiting for someone, and now they were curious, but they actually didn’t know who this first core disciple was actually waiting for?

Perhaps he had developed a liking for some beautiful woman?

And when the figure of Long Yu appeared there, the eyes of many people shone brightly.

“When did this boy come back? I have heard that this Long Yu is very strong, has defeated Feng Yun unexpectedly, and has become the 10th ranked core disciple.”

“Feng Yun died in Yu Guan city, but I have got the news that he was actually killed by the collaboration of the people of three respected clans of Yu Guan city. This Long Yu picked up a bargain at most.”

“I also think so, but due to this alone, he has managed to suddenly become the 10th ranked core disciple, this is really so unfair!”

“After two days, rewards will be given to the core disciples for this month, this Long Yu will pick up a big bargain!”

In Zhentian Sect, each disciple could get rewards that sect provided.

The outer disciples of the Sect could get a low grade immortality pill after every three months.

The inner disciples could get a low grade good immortality pill after every two months, or a low grade good immortality pill, chosen by themselves, after every four months.

And, in the case of the core disciples, higher the rank, the more would be the rewards.

For example, Long Yu was now 10th ranked core disciple, then he could get a top grade immortality pill every month, or if he could maintain this position for three months, then he could get a top grade battle weapon.

And if he maintained his position for six months, then he could get a super grade immortality pill, and if he maintained his position for one year, then he could get a super grade battle weapon.

Besides the immortality pills and battle weapons, the core disciples also received certain other rewards that greatly helped them in their cultivation to enhance their strength.

Certainly, according to the provisions of the Sect, every disciple, while receiving the reward, must simultaneously accept certain tasks to perform, for example, the task of collecting certain medicinal herbs, killing some ominous beasts, chasing down rebel disciples, apprehending the enemies of the Sect and so on.

Once a core disciple completed his allotted task, then it would guarantee the payment of the next reward to him. And if the task was not completed, the next reward would not be paid to him, whereas a new task would be allotted to him to perform.

Although, Long Yu joined the sect only three months ago, but he was different from an ordinary disciple. He was too quick to progress and didn't have too many exchanges with ordinary disciples.

He didn't go to receive any sect rewards naturally had not completed any task for the Sect.

And now, in two days, he would receive the reward for being a core disciple, and it would naturally help him to enhance his strength, and simultaneously would also get certain task to perform for the Sect.

The higher the rank of the core disciple, the better would be the reward, and tougher would be the task to perform!

Because of this, many people were jealous of Long Yu.

They thought in abundance that depending on his current strength, Long Yu had actually not the qualifications to become the 10th ranked core disciple, and in two days, the core disciples were going to receive rewards according to their rankings, so they didn't feel well regarding this matter!

Meanwhile, Long Yu arrived and looked at people in the surrounding, and noticed that from their facial expressions, they didn't appear to be feeling well and were somewhat bewildered.

The 10th ranked core disciple? Would receive the reward?

Long Yu, of course, knew that sect provided rewards to the core disciples, but at that time, he was a little bit surprised, because he substituted Feng Yun and directly became the 10th ranked core disciple.

Regarding this, he didn't think much and just walked towards Bu Xing and greeted him loudly.

“Senior Bu.”

Long Yu waved.

Seeing this movement, immediately there revealed mocking looks on the faces of the people in surroundings. What did this Long Yu think of himself? He greeted Bu Xing by saying Senior Bu and expected him to comply favorably?

Who didn't know about the stubborn nature of Bu Xing, the first core disciple? If it was not the person of his same level, he would not even bother to exchange a word with that person.

This Long Yu was definitely going to be humiliated!

However, what the people thought was right, but the action that Bu Xing took at that time, greatly surprised them.

“Brother Long Yu, you came back, take this, this is Ling Han's letter to you.”

He moved sideways, waved his arm and threw an envelope towards Long Yu.

Pa.

Long Yu caught it, and casually said: “Thank you, Senior Bu.”

“Ha ha, I will go first!”

Bu Xing stubbornly smiled, and turned around to leave and instantly disappeared in front of all people!

This let all people in surrounding to freeze on the spot. Bu Xing was standing here for a long time, could it be that he was actually waiting for Long Yu?

Moreover, just to give a letter to Long Yu, he was personally waiting for him here!

Was there some unique relationship between Long Yu and Bu Xing?

Well, this Long Yu also seemed to have certain relations with the elders of the Sect!

Many people thought and guessed correctly that Long Yu surely had some relations with the elders of the Sect and might also be getting various sect resources, and because of all this, his strength was progressing so fast.

Otherwise, how could he double his strength from Wudao fourth layer to eighth layer in just three months?

Moreover, being only at Wudao eighth layer, how could he possibly replace Feng Yun to become the 10th ranked core disciple?

If Feng Yun died outside leaving his position vacant, why arrangements were not made to increase one rank to every core disciple, vacating the 108th position!

But now, Long Yu was being treated as an exception!

Unfortunately, no matter how the people looked at this thing, Long Yu didn't bother about them at all.

He put Ling Han's letter in his pocket, and stepped into the Martial Court, and moved towards its third floor to choose a top grade marksmanship skill.

The first floor of the Martial Court was the place where Zhentian tactics practice rooms were present, while the second floor was meant for the outer disciples to pick up martial skills to practice.

Long Yu went to the third floor, which was only accessible to inner disciples.

"Hey, Long Yu?"

He just stepped into the third floor, and suddenly, a clear joyful voice fell into his ears.

Long Yu looked up and saw that it was none other than Liao Lele, who had come there to pick up a martial skill for herself!

"Liao Lele, I never expected you to be so fast, now you are at Wudao sixth layer."

Long Yu saw her, could not help but felt a warm feeling in his heart.

It could be said, when he came to Zhentian Sect, he was alone and had no friend. When he was left alone to face Feng Yang, Fang Kang and Feng Yun, this girl was always by his side.

“Are you kidding me? You are at Wudao eighth layer and I am at Wudao sixth layer, and you call me fast?”

Liao Lele lightly snorted, and at that time, her eyes were shining with an inexplicable look as she quickly came in front of Long Yu and looked at him: “Yes, you are really at Wudao eighth layer and also defeated a Wudao ninth layer master like Feng Yun, fierce, so fierce.”

“All this actually passed very quickly.”

Long Yu smiled.

All this happened only two days ago in Yu Guan city, and he didn’t expect the news about that incident to spread so fast in the entire Zhentian Sect.

“The news about Feng Yun’s death really circulated fast.”

Liao Lele plainly looked at him: “As an exception, you have actually substituted Feng Yun, have become the 10th ranked core disciple, making many core disciples secretly discontented, and there’s this one fellow who actually went to the Elder’s pavilion to put a challenge request against you.”

“He has challenged me?”

Long Yu said, while at the moment, he was a bit surprised.

“Yes, the challenge is for you, has actually come from a disciple of the 15th rank, and if he defeats you, then you will fall to the 15th rank, and you can miss this month’s reward for the core disciple.”

Liao Lele explained.

“15th ranked core disciple, Meng Ce.”

Long Yu narrowed his eyes.

He had not heard Meng Ce’s name before, but his strength should be more than Ling Lie, but should be inferior to Feng Yun.

But since Long Yu was able to defeat Feng Yun, so he certainly was not afraid of Meng Ce.

“Right, do you know that what’s the reward for 10th ranked core disciple for this month?”

Long Yu asked.

“Yes, it is a top grade immortality pill and an opportunity to practice in Sect Valley for three days!”

Liao Lele said straightforwardly: “If you fell to 15th rank, you will still get the top grade immortality pill, but the time for practicing in Sect Valley will be only for two days.”

Sect Valley practice!

Long Yu heard it, and suddenly some expectations arose in his heart!

He also spent a long time in Zhentian Sect, of course, he also knew about Sect Valley. A practice place which was only accessible to core disciples, and there, it was very helpful in comprehending the world trend of Zhentian tactics.

In Zhentian Sect, almost more than 80 % disciples had comprehended the Zhentian mysterious mood by practicing in Sect Valley!

“If I can enter Sect Valley to practice, then I can consolidate my comprehension of the world trend, and strengthen the understanding of the repressive laws of the world, to build the foundation of domain building.”

Long Yu thought.

Sect Valley practice was the most important reward for the core disciples of Zhentian Sect, and in its comparison, a top grade immortality pill was not so important.

Because, all the core disciples had stepped into Wudao eighth layer, and some had even stepped into Wudao ninth layer, and these immortality pills simply lessened the time of their practice, and couldn't really help in getting quick breakthrough and increasing their strength.

But, by practicing in Sect Valley, if he was able to consolidate his comprehension of Zhentian mood or Zhentian charm, then his battle efficiency would increase tremendously.

Chapter 68 Luo clan's Tailong

Undoubtedly, Long Yu wanted to enter Sect Valley with a view to consolidate his understanding of the world influence, which would surely enhance his battle efficiency.

But, if the news spread out, and other disciples knew about it, perhaps they would hardly believe it.

Ironically, most of the disciples had yet not even comprehended the Zhentian mysterious mood or just comprehended the mysterious mood only, while long time ago, Long Yu had not only comprehended the mysterious mood and the mysterious charm but also mastered the world influence!

And more specifically, in Zhentian Sect, the disciples, who could comprehend the world influence, could be counted on fingers.

For example, Bu Xing was the one, and another was Long Yu.

Of course, besides them, there were only few top ranking core disciples, who could comprehend the world influence in Zhentian Sect.

“When exactly is that Meng Ce going to challenge me?”

Impatiently, Long Yu asked Liao Lele.

“After two days, in the resorting to violence field.”

Liao Lele said: “In addition, after three days, you can go to the elders court to receive the reward. I know you can comprehend the world influence of Zhentian tactics, and by getting the opportunity to practice in Sect Valley, you can strengthen your grasp over the world influence.”

“En.”

Long Yu nodded his head, indicating that he understood what she said.

“Then I will go first, you choose a skill, and come back to practice together with me.”

Liao Lele laughed loudly and playfully turned around to leave.

Long Yu looked at her back until she left, and then got ready to start his own things.

At present, for Long Yu, an urgent need was to choose a top grade marksmanship skill, so he quickly rushed towards martial court, and meanwhile also took out Ling Han’s letter, sent from Ling clan, and quickly opened it and spread it in his hand. This letter was addressed to Long Yu.

He quickly looked for a secluded corner, and spread out the letter to have a look.

“To Brother Long.....”

Seeing the opening signature, the whole face of Long Yu darkened all of a sudden. This Ling Han, was he trying to be funny by doing such a thing?

But, when Long Yu looked at the bottom of the letter, its content became clear to him.

“Ling clan’s mountain village, in the nearby, has imminent earthly treasures, Ling Han has invited me to go to Ling clan’s villa after two weeks, wants to set out with me to explore the treasures together.”

Long Yu thought to himself. After two weeks, he didn’t have any engagement, so he could comfortably plan a trip to Ling mountain village!

Now, he hurriedly arrived at the Martial Court wall, and quickly lit a candle on its edge, and cautiously burnt the paper of the letter along with the envelope, and didn’t take any risk of leaving any trace.

Then, he came in front of a bookshelf that contained books on marksmanship skills, and began to choose one of them.

“Zhentian Spear tactics!”

Long Yu read for a moment and quickly picked up this top grade marksmanship skill.

As a matter of fact, this Zhentian Spear tactics was actually not practiced by many disciples, because, as a prerequisite, a disciple, wanting to practice it, must be able to comprehend the Zhentian mysterious mood!

A disciple, having a more profound insight of the Zhentian mysterious mood, could be able to display a stronger power with the Zhentian Spear tactics. This top grade marksmanship skill was actually created by the ancestors of Zhentian Sect with to integrate it with the Zhentian mysterious mood to display more power.

Of course, there were some other top grade marksmanship skills, but they couldn't be directly integrated with the repressive principles of the world influence, but this Zhentian Spear tactics could be integrated not only with repressive principles of mysterious mood and charm, but even could also integrate with the world influence.

When used simultaneously with Qiang Dragon Spear, one could suppress all creatures!

“Although, this Zhentian Spear tactics is only a top grade marksmanship skill, but if it is practiced integrating with the repressive principles of the world trend, then it can display immense power, which is absolutely not inferior to super grade martial skills.”

Long Yu's eyes shone brightly. Already, he had his father's Qiang Dragon Spear, a battle weapon that was more powerful than a super grade battle weapon!

Now, if the Zhentian Spear tactics was integrated with the world influence, could it play a much stronger power?

“Well, I will wait and see what happens.”

Long Yu picked up the Zhentian Spear tactics, and set its cultivation methods in his mind so that he wouldn't forget them, and quickly left the Martial Court.

As he came out, beyond his expectation, a pedestrian, in a menacing way, suddenly came in front of him, and stopped him. Some other people were also with him.

“What are you doing?”

Long Yu gave a sweeping look over those other people, and found that all were either at Wudao eighth layer or even at Wudao ninth layer, almost all were core disciples!

At that time, a lot of disciples present at the outside of Martial Court, looked at the scene, and were constantly pointing towards Long Yu, and started whispering.

They looked at Long Yu, and it seemed as if they were thinking why bad luck always fell upon him!

“Are you Long Yu?”

A contemptuous voice of a man came from the side of the people.

Long Yu looked at the man, and found that this guy looked a bit like the Luo clan's head, Luo Chenghui, of Yu Guan city!

“Are you a person from Luo clan? “

Long Yu asked.

“I am an adopted son of Luo clan’s head named Luo Tailong!”

That guy’s eyes flashed fiercely.

Long Yu carefully looked at him, and felt that this person looked fierce and brutal, having a systemic imposing rock solid body, filled with strength.

From his experience, Long Yu immediately knew that this Luo Tailong had absolutely killed a lot of people, and mostly brutal killing, otherwise, he would not agglomerate such pestilential airs.

“Since you are Long Yu, two days later, it will be the time of your death. “

Luo Tailong’s eyes fiercely flashed as he was maliciously looking at Long Yu. It seemed as if a deathly aura suddenly enveloped Long Yu’s entire body!

Immediately, Luo Tailong contemptuously smiled, and bypassed Long Yu, and walked inside the Martial Court.

The disciples of Zhentian Sect, standing in the surrounding, kept on murmuring!

“That is Luo Tailong, I heard a few days ago, he came out of six months closed door practice and right after coming out, he challenged a 6th ranked core disciple and won, thereby becoming the 6th ranked core disciple in one fell

swoop!”

“Luo Tailong is well-known, before, he was a 12th ranked core disciple and held extraordinary strength! Unfortunately, he got the news of his foster father’s death, it is pitiful!”

“His foster father was the Luo clan’s head in the Yu Guan city, was he not killed by Long Yu? Now, Luo Tailong will definitely take revenge on Long Yu for killing his foster father!”

“Your news is too outdated. Luo Tailong has already started to take action. Two days later, Meng Ce, the 15th ranked disciple, who has challenged Long Yu, is actually Luo Tailong’s man!”

Listening to these words of the people, Long Yu finally knew the general idea of the matter.

Meng Ce, who was soon to challenge him, unexpectedly turned out to be Luo Tailong’s attendant, and this 6th ranked core disciple, Luo Tailong, was actually adopted son of Luo Chenghui, the Luo clan head!

“Luo Tailong, well.”

Long Yu’s eyes flashed coldly!

This Luo Tailong was powerful, at least he was stronger than Feng Yun, otherwise it was impossible for him to become 6th ranked core disciple of Zhentian Sect.

In Zhentian Sect, the first five core disciples were already the formidable existences of Zhenling mystical realm.

Therefore, it could be said that Luo Tailong, the 6th ranked core disciple, was the strongest among the core disciples that had yet not stepped into the Zhenling mystical realm!

The existence of such a powerful figure was definitely a threat to Long Yu, and if it was not a threat to him, then surely, he would pose a threat to Feng Longsong, and ultimately could menace the Feng clan in Yu Guan city.

“Even if you do not annoy me but I must eradicate you. Since, you have come to me at your own initiative to cause trouble, that’s actually makes things easier for me.”

Long Yu thought calmly and left the Martial Court!

Luo Tailong must be eradicated as soon as possible, otherwise, he would be a future trouble for Feng Longsong, and in its turn he would also be a trouble for him!

Of course, even if he wanted to kill Luo Tailong, he must look for the most appropriate opportunity to kill him.

Anyhow, the opposite party was a core disciple of Zhentian Sect, so it was impossible for Long Yu to do it directly, because such action would go against the established rules of Zhentian Sect.

Sure enough, such things would become a subject to criticism, and Long Yu would certainly not do such a thing at any cost, but he was sure that he would get plenty of opportunities to deal with Luo Tailong.

.....

At the summit of Zhentian canyon.

In the open space, at the summit of the Zhentian canyon, Liao Lele, clad in a blue dress, was practicing the top grade martial skill, called Imperial rock.

Really, Imperial rock was indeed the most popular defensive type top grade martial skill, and specially after practicing it to the perfection level, then it could be used as rock fists, making it both defensive and offensive. It was quite formidable as well!

Liao Lele had chosen this top grade martial skill to practice.

On the other side, Long Yu was holding Qiang Dragon Spear in one hand and was practicing Zhentian Spear tactics!

At the same time, he needed to practice the Zhentian Spear tactics, while on the other hand, he had to familiarize himself with the weight and shape of Qiang Dragon Spear.

Since, he wanted to learn to use Qiang Dragon Spear, so he must learn all aspects of its use to achieve perfection in battlefield.

If his hands would control this battle weapon poorly, then how would he be able to hit the target accurately or track the enemy while fighting with him in the battlefield?

In that case, it would be better to not use this battle weapon!

“Zhentian Spear tactics, if I can practice it to the Xiao Cheng level, I will be able to integrate it with the law of repression of the mysterious mood, or the charm, or the world influence, then even in the battlefield, if it can be integrated with one of these three, the power of this marksmanship skill should increase considerably!”

“I now understand the repressive principle of world influence, even if I can practice the Zhentian Spear tactics to the Xiao Cheng level, then I can frighten those disciples who are still under Zhenling mystical realm, but the only difference will be the length of time for which I will be able to frighten them.”

“By practicing the Zhentian Spear tactics to Xiao Cheng level, perhaps trying to cope with Luo Tailong is not quite enough, but in dealing with Meng Ce, it is perfectly adequate.”

Long Yu was practicing and simultaneously estimating the strength of his opponents.

He couldn't allow himself to be defeated, so he must redouble his efforts!

Although, Luo Tailong was a 6th rank core because of a successful challenge to the 6th ranked core disciple, but it didn't suggest that he couldn't overcome the strength of the 5th ranked core disciple, perhaps he there was no 100 %

assurance about it.

So, in Long Yu's heart, Luo Tailong had become a hypothetical Zhenling mystical realm master!

Only by doing so, he could remove his shortcomings, because underestimating the enemy might lead to accidents in battles.

“Zhentian Spear tactics, Qiang Dragon Spear, give me repression!”

Holding a spear in both his hands, Long Yu jumped high, as if he shot out his spear to attack someone!

At this time, it seemed as if he heard the dragon roar straight into his forehead, and the blood of his whole body began to boil up!

“This is the intelligence of Qiang Dragon Spear, is similar to a real dragon unexpectedly, stimulates Xuan qi of my body, and strengthens me to show more power with this battle weapon!”

At this moment, Long Yu had a clear feeling that there was a hidden intelligent being in this Qiang Dragon Spear? This was perhaps due to his slight communication with this battle weapon!

Of course, this didn't mean that Long Yu, in such a short time, managed to align himself with Qiang Dragon Spear.

Qiang Dragon Spear was actually Long Yu's father's battle weapon, and he

would have used it and might have conjoined himself with its hidden intelligence, and at this moment, it was stimulated by the same blood.

Long Yu's body was having the same blood vessels as that of dragon race, and his blood was the same as that of Long clan/Dragon clan!

But, now he was expelled from Dragon clan, and similarly this Qiang Dragon Spear was also expelled from the Dragon clan, it seemed as if it was weeping with grief at this moment!

Long Yu struck with Qiang Dragon Spear, and immediately, the summit of the entire Zhentian canyon was filled with the suppression of world influence, and not far away, both old black and old white, engaged in playing chess, could not help but wrinkled their eyebrows!

"It really is the world influence, so the sovereign has not misread him!"

Old white's eyes were filled with the color of appreciation and he rubbed his beard while saying.

"He is fierce."

Old black nodded similarly, his eyes revealed a color of surprise.

Although, they were already the masters of Zhenling mystical realm, and regarding the repressive principle of the world influence, they had already comprehended it, but in their lifetime, they had never seen an 18 years old guy who was able to comprehend world influence.

Chapter 69 Meng Ce crushed

In two days, Long Yu practiced the Zhentian Spear tactics to the Xiao Cheng level, and now, he could integrate it with Zhentian mysterious mood.

At this time, Long Yu was holding Qian Dragon Spear in his hand and was trying to integrate it with the world influence, and was also displaying the Zhentian Spear tactics, a top grade martial skill. Then its overall power would be on par with the best grade martial skills like Intoxicated Hell.

“Moreover, this spear, if integrated with repressive principle of the world influence, can cause condensation of suppression on its tip to maximize its power.”

Long Yu nodded with satisfaction.

Actually, Long Yu wanted to practice this top grade marksmanship skill to the Da Cheng level, but even with the help of Nine Hidden Dragon Mark, it would need half a month's time to achieve it.

And in just two days, he was able to practice it to the Xiao Cheng level, so it could be said as pretty good.

At this time, Long Yu had already practiced 'flickering wind step' to the peak level, and was capable of producing afterimage, and could take three consecutive twinkling steps, crossing 100 feet in a blink of an eye.

Moreover, long time ago, by practicing Demon Vajra cover to the perfection

level, he had made his body solid like rock, and by quenching his five internal organs and Dantian, he had made it certain that there would be circulation of more Xuan qi in his body meridians, granting him good stamina in comparison to ordinary martial artists.

In addition, he had already achieved the Da Cheng level of 'Intoxicated Hell', the first technique of 'Nine Hidden Dragon Fist', plus he was not at the Xiao Cheng level of agility type martial skill, 'ghost flash', as well as 'Zhentian Spear tactics'.

"As I continue my practice, I must place special emphasis on practicing Intoxicated Hell, the ghost flash and Zhentian Spear tactics."

Long Yu thought in his heart. It was certainly not necessary to spend time on 'flickering wind step'. And he had already practiced 'Demon Vajra cover' to perfection level and strengthened his five internal organs. Hence this much was enough for him.

But, regarding Intoxicated Hell, ghost flash and Zhentian Spear tactics, one level promotion in each of them could bring a tremendous change in his power, and the amount of time spent on them would not be a matter of regret for him.

"I guess it's time to go to 'resorting to violence' field."

Long Yu looked at the sky, the sun was rising, and soon the appointed time of challenge was to come.

His current opponent, Meng Ce, was a 15th ranked core disciple, and was an attendant of Luo Tailong!

“Hey, wait for me, I will also go with you!”

Liao Lele hurriedly followed him up.

And together, they walked towards ‘resorting to violence’ field of Zhentian Sect.

.....

‘Resorting to violence’ field.

Interestingly, Meng Ce’s challenge to Long Yu attracted the attention of many disciples of Zhentian Sect, and consequently, at this time, the field was crowded and tightly packed with people, and all of them were engaged in guessing the outcome of this challenge.

“Relying on the strength of Long Yu, at most, he should be placed at the 50th rank, so in today’s challenge, he will certainly be defeated!”

“Not necessarily, I heard that he actually defeated Feng Yun, you must know that the strength of Feng Yun was slightly more than a 10th ranked core disciple.”

“You are kidding me, if there had been no collaboration of the three respected clans of Yu Guan City, it would have not been possible to defeat Feng Yun!”

“Yes, this Long Yu has picked up a cheap bargain, today, after the fight, he will

be unmasked and the whole truth will be exposed.”

Thus, it was apparent that most of the disciples didn't hold a favorable opinion for Long Yu.

After all, Yu Guan city and Zhentian Sect were not very close, so the news that spread here from there would naturally become a bit different now.

In the spectators' gallery, with a very fierce look in his eyes and the whole body covered with pestilential aura, Luo Tailong was sitting in the front row, and standing behind him was a youth, with refined demeanor and holding a long sword in his hand. At this time, he was cleaning the long sword.

“Meng Ce, are you confident?”

Luo Tailong asked aloud.

That refined looking youth waved his hand, and leisurely smiled: “That goes without saying. The long sword in my hand is a top grade battle weapon that I have received last month, I spent three months just to obtain it.”

This person was none other than Meng Ce.

This top grade battle weapon, of course, was very powerful, and not even Feng Yun had such a battle weapon!

Of course, each core disciple could obtain a top grade battle weapon, but for it, he must complete the given tasks from the Sect for three consecutive months,

and if he chose to not take rewards for three consecutive months, then only he could obtain a top grade battle weapon from the Sect.

This top grade battle weapon was almost similar to the copper sword battle weapon of Feng Longsong, and a fencing type of martial skill really increased the fighting efficiency of its owner in many ways.

Moreover, Meng Ce was at Wudao ninth layer, and today's fight was against a Wudao eighth layer, so was there anything to be afraid of?

"Very good, first make him beg for mercy then kill him, or at least destroy his cultivation, got it?"

Luo Tailong lowered his voice, and said to him as if reminding him.

"Brother Luo, don't worry, from today onwards, even if that kid doesn't die, he will become a waste."

Although Meng Ce had plain facial features, but, at this time, his eyes actually flashed, with a touch of ominous light in them.

Ironically, he didn't have enmity with Long Yu, but just to flatter Luo Tailong to obtain favors from him in future, he decided either to kill Long Yu or at least destroy his cultivation.

Just when they were engaged in discussion, two figures appeared at the door of resorting to violence field. One of them, clad in black clothes, was the person everyone was expecting for a long time. It was none other than Long Yu.

Another person was Liao Lele, clad in blue dress, and when her tender and lovely stature appeared, it immediately attracted the attention of many people.

No need to say, Liao Lele was quite lovely, especially when she carefully chose her attire, making her look a lot different from her usual carefree temperament and attracting the attention of many.

In her words, “It’s so difficult to get a chance to go out with Long Yu, so certainly must dress up to look more attractive.”

Regarding this, Long Yu actually did not care much.

This made Liao Lele secretly unhappy in her heart. This dense boy, he didn’t even pay any attention to her face!

When arrived at the ‘resorting to violence’ field, Long Yu saw Luo Tailong and Men Ce was sitting behind him.

“A top grade battle weapon, I see.”

Long Yu narrowed his eyes, stepped forward and entered the resorting to violence field.

His opponent had a top grade battle weapon, but he too had Qian Dragon Spear!

Before, while fighting with Feng Yun, he defeated him in one fell swoop by

displaying his Intoxicated Hell, but now, he didn't plan to display Intoxicated Hell, but wanted to try Qian Dragon Spear and Zhentian Spear tactics.

“Come on, Long Yu.”

Liao Lele cheered for him, and then she went to one side, all prepared to watch the fight.

Long Yu gradually stepped towards the central area of resorting to violence field, then lifted his Qian Dragon Spear and pointed at Meng Ce: “Come out!”

When people saw a long spear in Long Yu's hand, the first thing to attract their attention was the cracks and fissures on it, making them burst into laughter.

“This guy, even if he has practiced a marksmanship type martial skill, what's up with him, using this kind of tattered long spear?”

“It's really funny, with such a tattered spear, he wants to resist Meng Ce's top grade battle weapon.”

“I think in a moment, this long spear will be cut off in half!”

Everyone burst into laughter, including Luo Tailong and Meng Ce.

Luo Tailong had actually not thought that Long Yu would really bring this tattered junk to fight, because last time, when he had suddenly come in front of Long Yu at the entrance of Martial Court, he had seen this long spear in his hand and thought that Long Yu was holding it just to use it temporarily for his

practice.

“Cut off his long spear, cut off his martial arts!”

Luo Tailong said fiercely.

“Brother Luo, this long sword in my hand will certainly not disappoint you.”

Meng Ce’s stature moved and floated all the way to the stage.

Long Yu grasped the Qian Dragon Spear and looked at Meng Ce.

Xuan qi began to condense quietly in his body, and the world influence began to condense at the tip of Qian Dragon Spear!

“Long Yu, I had some anticipation regarding your strength, but you disappoint me. So easily stepping into the 10th rank, I think it’s not proper.”

On the stage, Meng Ce said lightly, and looked at Long Yu with obvious color of disappointment in his eyes!

“Cut the crap, let’s get to business.”

Long Yu said unemotionally and his footsteps moved immediately, his figure flashed, carrying Qian Dragon Spear in his hand, and then he shot it towards Meng Ce.

“Zhentian Spear tactics, world influence, repression!”

At this moment, Long Yu didn't wait for Meng Ce to respond, his whole body immediately released the fearful world influence and it instantaneously condensed at the tip of Qian Dragon Spear, and a powerful air current suddenly rushed out at tremendous speed!

Meng Ce actually never thought that Long Yu would actually go all out from the get go.

He was standing still, holding his long sword, but Long Yu's long spear was coming towards him at a tremendous speed, and what frightened him the most was the terrifying repression of the world influence that was rushing towards him at tremendous speed.

Buzz!

Meng Ce's brain thundered, and his whole stature was instantaneously suppressed completely on the spot, making him unable to move even a bit!

Moreover, the circulation of Xuan qi in his body became completely stagnant!

At that time, he also wanted to release his own Zhentian mysterious mood, but found out that he was unable to release it.

With the integration of Zhentian Spear tactics and Qian Dragon Spear with the world influence, it was possible to suppress the opponent instantly, although, the opponent could still manage to think clearly, but would be unable to make any response.

This outcome was something no one ever thought of!

Grasping the spear in his hand, Long Yu instantly came in front of Meng Ce, and put it on his neck, and until this time, Meng Ce couldn't even move a bit.

"You lose!"

Long Yu said lightly.

Thump!

Meng Ce even could not swallow his saliva and cold sweat appeared on his face, his eyes completely focused on Long Yu, with intense fear in them.

Now, Long Yu's spear was on his neck and could easily end his life!

But, after a moment, Long Yu put away his Qian Dragon Spear from his neck.

Since Zhentian Sect was faced with the threat of enemy oppression from Qiansi Sect, so Long Yu didn't want to destroy or kill a strong core disciple of Zhentian Sect.

Moreover, it could be said that this Meng Ce might be selected as one of the members of the team to represent Zhentian sect in the seven sects competition!

He pulled back his Qian Dragon Spear and turned around to leave. But, as he

turned around, Meng Ce's eyes revealed an ominous color, and he immediately made a sneak attack on Long Yu from behind.

Meng Ce waved his sword, and to make a sneak attack on Long Yu, he resorted to using a super grade martial skill of Zhentian Sect– Concept of autumn sword!

Practicing 'concept of autumn sword' to Xiao Cheng level, coupled with the long sword as a top grade battle weapon, Meng Ce brought the scenery of autumn leaf depression, the autumn wind began to rush and withered autumn leaves began to flutter about.

As his sword struck, autumn winds rushed as approaching death of his opponent!

“En?”

Long Yu had always been extremely sensitive to killing intention, and when Meng Ce planned to make a sneak attack on him, he had been quite vigilant to it.

At this time, while facing this attack from his back, the 'concept of autumn sword' swept away a bone chilling cold autumn wind towards him, but it seemed like Long Yu simply didn't have any intention of moving aside.

“Zhentian world influence, repression!”

Long Yu, at this time, responded by immediately condensing the world influence at the tip of Qian Dragon Spear, and the tremendous repression of world influence rushed from his rear side to block off the cold autumn wind.

The terrifying world influence entangled together with the cold autumn wind, and completely suppressed it, and next, the long spear swept towards the long sword of Meng Ce.

Clang!

The world influence condensed at the spear tip shot down the sword, and suddenly, the powerful suppression force of world influence, released by Long Yu, shattered that top grade battle weapon!

Then, after shattering the long sword, the Zhentian world influence went ahead and once again enveloped the whole being of Meng Ce.

Meng Ce was stunned on the spot, his eyes were filled with terror and regret.

No one actually thought that Long Yu would actually crush Meng Ce like a road roller!

A top grade battle weapon was actually shattered by a “broken spear” in front of everyone!

“Die!”

Long Yu swiftly moved forward and swept his long spear that hit on the waist of Meng Ce with such an enormous force that his whole stature was sent flying upside down and heavily fell on the ground!

Chapter 70 Frosted Leaves

Meng Ce was sent flying and heavily fell on the ground, and the people present in the resorting to violence field were shocked at the scene.

Especially, the shattering of that long silver sword, a top grade battle weapon, by that tattered long spear of Long Yu, shocked the people instantaneously.

Top grade battle weapons were regarded as long awaited treasures for most of the disciples of Zhentian Sect.

But, such a powerful battle weapon was shattered by Long Yu unexpectedly, it could be imagined that how formidable would be the strength contained in one hit of that spear.

At this moment, in the resorting to violence field, no one dared to say that Long Yu didn't actually deserve the 10th rank among the core disciples of Zhentian Sect.

Meng Ce was sent flying and his top grade battle weapon was shattered, and these things couldn't be achieved by an ordinary person.

The complexion of Luo Tailong, sitting in the front row of the spectator gallery, also changed heavily.

That top grade battle weapon was shattered, and this was something he couldn't do!

“This Long Yu, he is no pushover.”

Luo Tailong narrowed his eyes, and at that time, his eyes were flashing fiercely.

He made Meng Ce to challenge Long Yu, certainly he also wanted to probe into the strength of Long Yu, and now it appeared that this probing turned out to be necessary, at least it let Luo Tailong to know that he shouldn't treat Long Yu as an ordinary martial artist.

“This long spear seems to have certain strangeness!”

Luo Tailong stared at Qian Dragon Spear in Long Yu's hand, and secretly guessed that perhaps, it was a best grade battle weapon?

Regarding the best grade battle weapon, the fact remained that even the first disciple of Zhentian Sect might not be able to get it, because they were too scarce, and actually not used to be rewarded to the core disciples by the sect.

Only if a core disciple made a great contribution to Zhentian Sect, then he might be rewarded with a best grade battle weapon, however, how could Long Yu possibly be able to get it?

Obviously, this fellow joined the sect three months ago and hadn't completed even an ordinary task of the Sect!

“Sure enough, behind it, he has some secret relationship with the Elders, but even so, I, Luo Tailong, am not scared of you.”

Luo Tailong sneered but didn't go into action!

To deal with Long Yu personally, he had a very good idea, because he didn't need to act against him under the gaze of public eyes.

"This Meng Ce, he really collapsed at the first blow, so vulnerable."

When Long Yu wanted to turn around to leave the stage, a somewhat lazy sound, suddenly came from one side of the spectators' gallery

He looked towards the side from where the sound came, and what Long Yu saw was a man, clad in grey clothes, and holding a long sword, slightly dispirited, coming towards him.

This grey clothed man, with a long silver sword in his hand, looked at Meng Ce, whose meridians were now completely destroyed by Long Yu. He shook his head and said: "In dealing with a weakling like Meng Ce, you had to use sneak attack, Long Yu, you are nothing in my, Huayi Lun's, eyes."

"Huayi Lun?"

Long Yu narrowed his eyes and gave a quick thought.

A couple of days ago, when he went to practice Zhentian Spear tactics, then Liao Lele had informed him that the 6th ranked core disciple, who was defeated by Luo Tailong short time ago, was called Huayi Lun and he was actually considered the strongest core disciple, under the Zhenling mystical realm!

(Mystique-All of the top five core disciples are in the Zhenling mystical realm)

Unfortunately, the challenge to him by Luo Tailong turned out to be successful, and he fell to the 12th rank.

Like Meng Ce, Huayi Lun had also practiced the super grade martial skill of 'concept of autumn sword', but his strength was much stronger than Meng Ce, so both were not at the same level.

It could be said that in a fight between Huayi Lun and Meng Ce, the former could easily defeat the latter in a single move!

But depending on the formidable strength of Huayi Lun, he would certainly not be willing to stay at the 12th position of the core disciple.

At this time, when Meng Ce used this opportunity to challenge Long Yu for the 10th rank, he also wanted to challenge Meng Ce to improve his rank to the 10th rank, but he never thought that Meng Ce would be so useless, and would actually be sent flying in one shot.

(Mystique-Huayi assumed that Long Yu was a weakling, who didn't deserve to be on the 10th rank. So Meng Ce will certainly be able to defeat Long Yu. And after Meng Ce becomes the 10th ranked core disciple, he would come forward to challenge him for the 10th rank. But his plan failed!)

"Sneak attack? Huayi Lun, your vision is too narrow, no wonder you were defeated by Luo Tailong!"

Long Yu chuckled and said loudly.

Huayi Lun said that Long Yu actually defeated Meng Ce by virtue of sneak attack, but the truth was that, he was defeated by greatly strengthened world influence as well as incomparably fast speed, when used together was able to deter Meng Ce.

On the contrary, Long Yu once spared his life, it was actually Meng Ce who initiated to make a sneak attack on him, and was sent flying by the stunning strike from Long Yu's spear.

This was the fact related to the fight, so how could one say that Long Yu made a sneak attack?

Long Yu's words somewhat dispirited Meng Ce, and his eyes flashed with a touch of stern countenance: "You are only a 10th ranked core disciple, but go as far as to teach me that my vision is narrow, I see, you are too self-centered!"

"Even if I am, what do you want?"

Long Yu calmly asked.

"A core disciple gets an opportunity to challenge only once after every six months, I do not want to waste this opportunity, even if I must fight someone like you."

Huayi Lun sneered: "Since you have provoked me much, so I must teach you a lesson, just to make you know whose vision is narrow!"

Clang!

A metal clanging sound resounded, and a long silver double-edged sword was unsheathed in Huayi Lun's hands, it was actually a top grade battle weapon!

Seeing that Huayi Lun challenged Long Yu, all of the people in surrounding were excited once again to watch the fight which was soon to unfold in front of their eyes.

"Unexpectedly, it turned out to be Huayi Lun, right now, it looks like Long Yu will lose the fight!"

"Yes, though Long Yu easily defeated Meng Ce, but this Huayi Lun is on a whole another level!"

"We will get to watch a good fight, Huayi Lun was defeated at the hands of Luo Tailong, which certainly must have filled him with anger and he has no place to vent it out, naturally his anger will now fall upon Long Yu. Seriously, Long Yu had such a bad luck!"

Frankly speaking, Huayi Lun was very strong. Originally, he was the 6th ranked core disciple, although, he was defeated by Luo Tailong, but his strength could be said as the strongest among all of the core disciples, who were under Zhenling mystical realm.

Especially, Huayi Lun had practiced the autumn sword, a super grade martial skill, and a long time ago, he reached the perfection level. He had also used it in his fight with Luo Tailong.

The concept of autumn sword, a super grade martial skill, when practiced to its perfection level, its might was extremely enormous, but Luo Tailong finally defeated Huayi Lun!

“I accept your challenge.”

Long Yu said lightly, and immediately picked up his Qian Dragon Spear, and suddenly aimed at Huayi Lun!

Just now, Long Yu also disliked the fact that Meng Ce proved to be so weak, he actually couldn't test accurately the might of Zhentian tactics against him, so Huayi Lun's challenge was like another chance to test it.

Luo Tailong didn't seem ready to fight with him, so he might as well first have a match with Huayi Lun!

“You better watch out for my sword!”

The stature of Huayi Lun in grey dress looked very elegant, holding a long silver double-edged sword which was twinkling brightly, then in a blink of an eye, he arrived in front of Long Yu!

“So fast!”

Long Yu's eyes shone brightly, this Huayi Lun's strength was really much more than Meng Ce.

If Meng Ce had such a speed, Long Yu would have not succeeded in defeating him in one fell swoop.

However, if Huayi Lun possessed such speed, then so did Long Yu!

Ghost flash!

Then, immediately Long Yu's body turned hollow, and his whole body actually somewhat became blurred, and drifted more than 100 feet towards the rear area, and easily dodged this sword attack of Huayi Lun!

"Ghost flash, how can it possibly match with my horizon is close?"

Huayi Lun sneered, and suddenly, his whole person disappeared into the horizon close, and closely followed Long Yu from behind.

Long Yu was constantly dodging the long silver sword, which, in his vision, was coming like poisonous snake to hit him!

"We will see which ones stronger, my spear or your sword!"

Long Yu swept away the spear in his hand, and immediately Zhentian world influence rushed out and punctured the sword thrust in one fell swoop!

At that time, the roar of a real dragon was heard, as if this Qian Dragon Spear had its own intelligence, and suddenly Xuan qi began to circulate in his body, and a terrific repression of world influence proliferated in all directions instantaneously, and immediately shrouded Huayi Lun completely.

“Repression!”

Long Yu shouted loudly, and suddenly thrust the spear point towards Huayi Lun’s double edged silver sword!

“Concept of autumn sword, autumn leaves fall!”

Huayi Lun had practiced this super grade martial skill to perfection level, and all of a sudden, there was a burst of autumn leaves!

Even in the face of Long Yu’s world influence, it seemed as if the autumn leaves had no weight, they flew to the spear point and instantly covered it up completely.

When the spear point was covered up by numerous autumn leaves, then immediately came a burst of explosions as these autumn leaves blasted one after another!

At that time, unexpectedly, Huayi Lun’s long silver double edged sword penetrated the air, and was actually going against the heavy repression of world influence, and was coming towards Long Yu at a high speed!

“This Huayi Lun has counter-balanced the repression of my world influence by releasing his Zhentian mysterious charm, and the surplus repression is unable to suppress him completely, his strength is much more than Meng Ce!”

Long Yu could clearly perceive that Huayi Lun’s speed had slowed down a lot

under the suppression of the world influence, but he could still move, and this was because he had comprehended the mysterious charm, but Meng Ce was unable to use his Xuan qi or release the mysterious mood!

The autumn leaves exploded and the silver sword attacked!

“World influence, sweeps away!”

Long Yu swept away his spear towards Huayi Lun to resist his sword, and suddenly a burst of terrible repression of world influence began and rushed like mighty ocean waves towards Huayi Lun!

But, facing the great strength of the repression of world influence, Huayi Lun hurriedly waved his long silver double edged sword!

“Concept of autumn sword, frosted leaves!”

Suddenly, snow white cold frost began to congeal piece by piece rapidly on the decorated place of that long silver sword, and turned into a wall of cold frost, and it was able to withstand the attack of the spear containing the strength of the world influence.

Kacha!

That cold frost wall was hit by Long Yu’s spear loudly, and its surface was slightly cracked, but it unexpectedly managed to resist Long Yu’s spear attack.

Moreover, unexpectedly, this cold frost wall also isolated the world influence

of Long Yu, and obstructed it from affecting Huayi Lun.

“The autumn of your death has arrived!”

Huayi Lun sneered and jumped high, waving his long silver sword, and immediately, autumn leaves came in contact with cold frost and instantly became frozen, beginning to perform a chaotic dance!

An intermittent dreary breath, dropped from the clouds, and instantly covered the whole person of Long Yu.

Moreover, Long Yu also felt that Huayi Lun was able to have conjunction with that long silver sword, and had reached the stage of resonance!

As a result, Huayi Lun’s sword was displaying great power at that time!

A master of Wudao ninth layer, displaying the perfection level of super grade martial skill, plus a top grade battle weapon, could be able to break out such a terrible force. He was really much more powerful than Feng Yun!

“Luo Tailong was somehow able to beat Huayi Lun, but his strength cannot be overlooked, indeed, he is the strongest among all of the disciples under Zhenling mystical realm!”

At this moment, Long Yu accelerated his palpitation and following his heart beats, his Dantian also began to beat, and he instantly coordinated with the intelligent dragon of the Qian Dragon Spear, making the blood throughout his body to seethe with excitement.

Buzz!

Suddenly, Long Yu threw his Qian Dragon Spear into sky towards Huayi Lun, along with the terrifying force of world influence, and the complexion of Huayi Lun immediately changed!

Chapter 71 Receives the rewards

Long Yu shot his Qian Dragon Spear towards Huayi Lun, and the terrifying repression of Zhentian world influence instantly enveloped his body.

But, when Huayi Lun saw the scene, he was surprised and was also happy at his heart.

As long as he could block the long spear that Long Yu threw towards him, wouldn't it drop his fighting force?

“Horizon is close, horizon barrier!”

Immediately, right before Huayi Lun's body, Xuan qi began to condense, and instantly, an illusory horizon barrier was formed in front of him. Only a master who had practiced 'horizon is close' to its perfection level could use this martial skill for defensive purpose.

In front of the horizon barrier, even the close distance looked far away in the horizon!

With the roaring sound of the intelligent dragon being, Long Yu's Qian Dragon Spear rushed forward and coupled with the strength of world influence, it shattered the horizon barrier!

“Let's see whether the long spear in your hand can resist my sword!”

Huayi Lun instantly swept away his sword, and autumn leaves started falling from the sky, each leaf wrapped with cold frost rushed towards Long Yu as if declaring the arrival of his death!

However, Long Yu stood firmly, and instantaneously, he put on the wandering soul glove in his right fist, and it was instantly wrapped with black fog.

“Nine Hidden Dragon fist, Intoxicated Hell, eat my fist!”

Long Yu blasted his punch, and suddenly, Nine Hidden Dragon qi began to surge out, as if travelled out from the road to hell, and within a moment, it shrouded Huayi Lun completely.

Nine Hidden Dragon qi deterred all, and the mind of Huayi Lun, all of a sudden, lost in the path of Intoxicated Hell!

Long Yu jumped one step, and seemed to be walking on the path to hell, and in an insntant, he came in front of Huayi Lun and hit him heavily!

Bang!

With the bang sound, Huayi Lun was sent flying and heavily fell on the ground, and that top grade long silver sword battle weapon fell on the ground with a sonorous sound!

A complete silence prevailed in the ‘Blood-feud field’ when the whole stature of Huayi Lun heavily fell on the ground!

(Mystique-I have changed 'Resorting to violence field' to 'Blood-feud field' as suggested by a reader. If you have any suggestions for other names in the story, do tell me :D)

At this moment, even Luo Tailong stood up, his whole face revealed a dignified expression as he was looking towards the field.

Just at that time when Long Yu punched, Luo Tailong felt a strange aura that spread faintly and only for a moment then disappeared.

“Long Yu’s punch, it’s definitely an extremely high level martial skill, by no means it’s a martial skill of Zhentian Sect! “

Luo Tailong was almost certain about it!

However, he could guess whatever he wanted to, but, it was impossible for him to know about the source of Nine Hidden Dragon fist, and no need to say, on that day when Baiyun Zong came, even he also couldn’t know about the secrets of Nine Hidden Dragon fist!

“Is there anyone else who wants to challenge me?

Long Yu looked all around, then picked up Qian Dragon Spear in his hand, and just like a King, he looked fiercely towards the spectators.

His vision stayed for a little while on Luo Tailong, and deliberately, because if this Luo Tailong would want to fight, Long Yu wouldn’t mind to fight again!

Unfortunately, Luo Tailong sneered, but the pestilence aura around him didn't reduce: "You are the 10th ranked core disciple, while I am at the 6th rank, so it's up to you to challenge me!"

"Really?"

Long Yu calmly said: "But who was saying earlier that today is my time of death? I am the enemy that killed your foster father, and, I am standing in front of you, but you don't dare to challenge me, isn't this kind of ridiculous?"

"You don't need to prod me, today you were able to defeat Huayi Lun, which explains that you are definitely strong."

Luo Tailong remained unmoved and coldly said: "But, you are only at Wudao eighth layer, and there has to be some gap between you and me after all."

As voice fell down, Luo Tailong turned around to walk towards the exit of Blood-feud field!

Long Yu looked at his back, narrowed his eyes, and secretly thought that this Luo Tailong appeared to be a formidable opponent, and from his pestilential aura, he knew that he had brutally killed many people.

To deal with such a person, a simple strategy certainly wouldn't work. Long Yu would have to adopt a way to gain absolute power to crush him once and for all.

"Tomorrow is the day to receive core disciple's rewards, first I should go back to take rest, and then prepare to go to Sect valley to practice!"

Long Yu held the Qian Dragon Spear in his hand, and glanced at Meng Ce and Huayi Lun, lying on the ground, and went towards the exit of Blood-feud field.

Liao Le was naturally overjoyed, and followed him happily. Long Yu won two victories so aggressively, making her understand the profoundness of Long Yu's strength that also inspired her to practice more and more.

After Long Yu and Luo Tailong left, everyone present in the Blood-feud field started talking again.

“That fist martial skill, displayed by Long Yu, is definitely not a martial skill of Zhentian Sect! “

“Moreover, that long spear is definitely not a reward from Zhentian Sect, from where did he get that spear?”

“I heard, he seems to be brought up in Ling clan's villa probably since his childhood, but two days ago, didn't the news arrived that Long Yu has wasted an arm of Ling Lie, the eldest son of Ling clan?”

“Yes, it's too strange! I also heard before that he comes from Feng clan, so in the end, which news is true and which one is false?”

Everyone was talking about, but no one actually knew, from where had Long Yu really come!

Baiyun Zong directed many elders to spread false news regarding the origin of

Long Yu, which certainly confused everyone once again!

At least at this stage, the true identity of Long Yu couldn't be easily discovered by people.

.....

Next day.

After taking rest for one day, Long Yu alone went to the Elder pavilion.

This morning, a lot of people were coming and going into the Elder pavilion, because many core disciples had been chosen today to receive core disciple awards, and simultaneously would also receive the tasks to make their contributions to the Sect.

“Yangtian Cuo, 13th ranked core disciple, rewards are top grade immortality pills, a Feng Dan, Sect Valley practice time for two days!”

A magnificent voice, not only spread all the way across the Elder pavilion, but also passed into Long Yu's ears.

Yang Tiancuo had actually challenged Feng Yun, but failed, and was still a core disciple placed at the 13th rank, and today he was to receive core disciple rewards.

Long Yu walked towards the elder pavilion, and soon saw a youth dressed in white coming out of Elder pavilion, it was actually Yang Tiancuo.

Yang Tiancuo saw Long Yu, and was somewhat astonished, but coldly snorted: “So, you are Long Yu? Ling Han has invited you to come to Ling clan villa?”

“Do you know Ling Han?”

Long Yu scowled and asked.

Obviously, the rule followed by Long Yu was that if the standpoint of the other party was not clear, and if he didn't know the person, then he wouldn't expose any message before that person on his own initiative.

“He has invited me, Yang Tiancuo, to come to Ling clan villa after two weeks to help him in handling some matter.”

Yang Tiancuo said in a somewhat habitual prideful tone, but immediately remembered the news that spread yesterday that Long Yu had defeated Meng Ce and Huayi Lun one after another, so his strength was obviously stronger than his own.

Yang Tiancuo's challenged Feng Yun and failed, however, Long Yu was able to kill Feng Yun in Yu Guan city!

Who was weak and who was strong, it was quite apparent.

However, Yang Tiancuo remembered something suddenly, and he put away the frustration from his heart, and regained his self-confidence!

He shot a look at Long Yu and said in a cold tone: “Ling clan villa, several people are going there, so it will be better for you to not go there! Heavy treasures, and only one can obtain them, if you don’t listen to this warning and insist on going there, you will lose your life, and when the time comes, don’t blame me that I didn’t warn you!”

“Does my life or death have anything to do with you?”

Long Yu said lightly.

Listening to the words of Yang Tiancuo, how couldn’t he see that the opposite party was being hostile to him?

Since he was neither a friend nor foe, Long Yu didn’t need to say anything more to him!

Regarding Ling Han’s invitation, Long Yu was certainly going, otherwise, how would he show his face to Ling Han later? The way Ling Han called him “Brother Yu”, how could he simply refuse a loyal brother like Ling Han!

As for Yang Tiancuo, the hidden meaning inside the warning that Long Yu should not go there was to just get rid of Long Yu from the competition and snatch the treasures.

But, Long Yu was of the opinion that the treasures belonged to Ling Han, but he didn’t know exactly which people had been invited to go there?

“Listen to my warning, otherwise, you will quickly know whether you will live or die, it is entirely up to you to choose!”

Yang Tiancuo said solemnly and turned around to leave.

Long Yu looked at his solemn back once, and chuckled loudly, and certainly didn't pay attention to this empty threat!

He put away the thought, turned around and stepped into the Elder's pavilion.

This was the third time he came to the Elders' pavilion, and every time he came here, he saw unknown faces.

The first time, he saw almost all the elders of Zhentian Sect, and the second time, he saw the sovereign, Baiyun Zong.

And this time, he saw a black-brawny guy with sturdy arm, he was granting rewards to the deserving core disciples. It was Wu Jianxin, also known as Elder Wu!

"Elder Wu, I am Long Yu, the 10th ranked core disciple."

Long Yu entered Elder pavilion calmly and while facing Wu Jianxin, he introduced himself.

Wu Jianxin looked up and an ugly face appeared in front of Long Yu.

"Are you Long Yu? "

Wu Jianxin snorted lightly: “The 10th ranked core disciple, rewards are top grade immortality pills, Feng Dan, and in addition to that, permission for three days practice time in Sect valley.”

Regarding Wu Jianxin’s attitude, it was not unexpected for Long Yu.

Because, before coming, Long Yu heard that Luo Tailong was the disciple of elder Wu Jianxin!

In Zhentian Sect, if the talent of a disciple was high enough, and if any elder of Elder pavilion or the law enforcement elder had liking for him, then he could receive him as his disciple, and after that he could focus on his rigorous training, and that way, the disciple could also get some extra practice resources.

The elders of Elder pavilion, everyone could choose two disciples and the law enforcement elder could only choose one disciple.

For example, beforehand, Qin Tianque was the disciple of law enforcement elder, Wuchuan!

Now, this Wu Jianxin was the teacher of Luo Tailong.

As for Bu Xing, being the first core disciple of Zhentian Sect, he was received as a disciple by the sovereign, Baiyun Zong.

This world was the world of martial arts elite, so Zhentian Sect also implemented the elite strategy!

Let the elders recruit disciples of high talent, then grant many practice resources, and in this way, train more backbones for the Sect.

Currently, out of the elders of the Elder pavilion, many elders were disciples of other elders, for example, the handsome young caretaker of Martial Court was the disciple of sovereign Baiyun Zong.

“This is Feng Dan!”

Wu Jianxin, with an expression of ill-feeling on his black face, threw a small vase filled with immortality pills towards Long Yu, and said: “You received the reward for this month, this month you will have to complete a task for the Sect. The task content is recorded on this bamboo slip!”

A bamboo slip with some text record was thrown by him into the hands of Long Yu.

Long Yu caught the bamboo slip, and couldn't help but think this Wu Jianxin surely knew that Luo Chenghui, the foster father of Luo Tailong, was killed by him in Yu Guan city.

So what kind of trap was hidden in this task?

Chapter 72 Occupied Sect Valley

Long Yu left the Elder pavilion, and then opened the roll up of the bamboo slip, and quickly viewed its contents.

“Elder Yu Shuiyun, while facing enemies from Qiansi Sect, was injured and now needs some therapy from refined compounded drugs made from special medicinal herbs. “

“As the core disciples of the Sect are obliged to go to the depths of Teng snake abyss to collect three medicinal herbs for the Elder. The actions are deployed to five groups of core disciples, each led by the law enforcement elder.”

“Luo Tailong, Long Yu and Meng Ce, these three will form the fourth group, led by the law enforcement elder, Tan Wuchuan.”

“Needs to collect herbs: the dragon head grass, the blossomless oak fruit and the Yu Gunhua flower!”

After reading the contents of the bamboo slip, Long Yu’s eyes flashed coldly.

This task turned out to collect some special medicinal herbs to make compounded drugs to heal Elder Yu!

Regarding this, Long Yu was certainly glad to accept it, even without receiving any sect reward to force him to do so, he would surely do his best, after all, it was a matter of saving injured Elder Yu and Ling Han.

But now, in this duty, unexpectedly with him, Luo Tailong and Meng Ce had been placed in the same group, and moreover, it was to be led by Tan Wuchuan, the law enforcement elder!

This was one of the sinister intentions, of course, was not self-evident!

Prior to it, Long Yu killed Qin Tianque, the disciple of Tan Wuchuan, and also killed Luo Chenghui, the foster father of Luo Tailong. And these two men would travel with him, and once they would go into the depths of deep Teng snake forest, there would be no way out for Long Yu?

Even if, no matter how strong Long Yu was, but with his current strength, he couldn't directly resist Tan Wuchuan, a Zhenling mystical realm master!

"It really is a good strategy!"

Long Yu's eyes flashed brightly.

However, this Wu Jianxin thought so, but, could he be able to deal with Long Yu?

"I, Long Yu, do not fear anything!"

Long Yu thought to himself. He was ready to cope with anything, and would resist by whatever means available, and definitely it wouldn't be an easy thing for Tan Wuchuan, even a Zhenling mystical realm master to kill him while performing task for the Sect!

The dragon head grass, the blossomless oak fruit and the Yu Gunhua flower were actually found in the depths of Teng snake abyss.

Last time, Long Yu saw the Teng snake when he just entered the middle half of Teng Snake Abyss, but if they went further, they might face more powerful beasts, and they could even face beasts having power of Zhenling realm.

In the mainland of Zhentian Sect, even beasts were capable of comprehending repressive principles of world influence, and could also step into Zhenling realm.

Because of this, only the core disciples used to go into the depth of Teng snake abyss in a group, and each group would have a Zhenling realm master to lead it, to ensure maximum safety.

“First, I will have to go to the Sect valley for practice for three days so that my strength can be enhanced, then I will go to see Elder Yu and prepare to set off.”

Long Yu looked at the content of the bamboo slip, and saw that they had to start their departure for the Teng snake abyss after five days.

He made a decision, then he walked towards the inner parts of Zhentian Sect, in the direction of the Sect valley.

.....

The inner parts of Zhentian Sect, the Sect valley.

This was inner town of Zhentian Sect, and it was the best place for those disciples, who wanted to comprehend Zhentian mysterious mood, and was really the foundation of the entire sect!

In the beginning, the Sect valley was the place where for the first time, the ancestors of Zhentian Sect actually comprehended the repressive principles of the world influence, and then later on they founded Zhentian Sect, which, with the passage of time, developed as one of the seven large Sects of Tang state.

The founders of Zhentian Sect carved out many calligraphies and paintings on the four walls of the Sect valley, and each painting was interlinked with the world influence and actually contained the momentum of the repressive principles of the world influence!

The disciples of Zhentian Sect, if practiced in the Sect valley, then the comprehension speed of the repressive principles of the world trend would be ten times more in comparison to a common place.

However, to maintain the intensity of the energy of repression, too many persons were not allowed to practice in the Sect valley at the same time.

For an effective practice, the Sect valley could only accommodate three persons at the same time for comprehending the suppression of world influence, and this was its saturation point.

If one more person would practice in it, then the energy contained in the repression would be insufficient, and practicing effect would be greatly reduced for everyone.

Because of this, the time was limited for those disciples who wanted to go to Sect valley to practice the repressive principle of the world influence, and it was either for two days or three days.

Every month, a core disciple would get longer time to practice in the Sect valley.

When Long Yu came to the Sect valley, he found that it was a small valley. He intensely felt the imposing aura that made him to understand that it was not an ordinary valley.

“There’s a person.”

Holding Qian Dragon Spear in his hand, Long Yu stood at the mouth of the Sect valley, and saw that a man was already practicing there.

But, there was only one person, then Long Yu could enter, and the effect of practicing wouldn’t be reduced, as the prescribed rule was that not more three persons should practice at the same time.

“Young, wait!”

At that time, when Long Yu was about to step into the Sect valley, suddenly he heard a young man’s voice from the side!

“Um?”

Long Yu tilted his head and saw a young man wearing a white dress, raising his

head, walked forward and looked at him disdainfully!

“Does young fellow want to enter the Sect valley? Now, someone is already practicing, you come back in two days!”

That young guy looked at Long Yu disdainfully and said.

“The Sect valley can accommodate three persons at the same time. Now, there is only one person, why can’t I enter?”

Long Yu asked lightly.

“Do you know, now, who the practitioner within the Sect valley is?”

That young man clad in white dress held his head high and said: “He is 7th ranked core disciple, Brother Yi Yan. He has been comprehending world influence and is now in a crucial stage, so he doesn’t want to face any disturbance.”

“So, you’re a dog of that Yi Yan?”

Long Yu chuckled.

This Yi Yan was actually very arrogant, the Sect valley could accommodate three persons for practicing repressive principle of world influence, and at that time, only one person was practicing there, let the lackey outside to stop other people to enter the valley, really was rampant!

“I advise you to mind your tongue.”

That white clothed young man’s face suddenly sank down: “I see you are only at Wudao eighth layer so I should remind you. Just now you made an impertinent remark on me, if I, Liu Shucheng, don’t teach you a lesson, you will not know how to respect the strong!”

Long Yu looked at him.

Liu Shucheng?

Long Yu quickly traced out a name from his mind, this white clothed young man was 21st ranked core disciple, and had shortly stepped into Wudao ninth layer, and with Yi Yan, everywhere, he bluffed and blustered!

Many disciples were bullied by Liu Shucheng and Yi Yan, and they could go nowhere to redress their grievances, because Yi Yan’s teacher was the same as was Luo Tailong, and he was also in charge of the incentive payment of the core disciples, it was Wu Jianxin, also known as Elder Wu.

An Elder of the Elder pavilion could select two core disciples as his disciples.

Two disciples of Wu Jianxin were Yi Yan and Luo Tailong.

Yi Yan was placed at 7th rank and Luo Tailong was at 6th rank, and this let Wu Jianxing to make a good say and weight among the elders!

Accordingly, Liu Shucheng, by staying always with Yi Yan, bluffed and

blustered, and this had become his character.

“Bully the weak by relying on powerful connections, and then you are actually an expert, but you alone are nothing but a clown in my, Long Yu’s eyes.”

Long Yu narrowed his eyes, and looked at Liu Shucheng with one eye.

That white clothed youth Liu Shucheng listened to these words, and his complexion suddenly changed.

Long Yu?

Although, he had not seen Long Yu, but heard that just yesterday, this Long Yu defeated Meng Ce and Huayin Lun one after another in the blood feud field, to keep the 10th position of the core disciple!

Whether it was Meng Ce or Huayin Lun Meng, both were much stronger than Liu Shucheng!

This made Liu Shucheng’s face become suddenly very ugly.

He withdrew two steps, and anxiously stared at Long Yu: “Anyway, I have to remind you, even if you are Long Yu, possibly aren’t the match of Brother Yi Yan, and if you enter the Sect valley, will easily anger him and you may have to bear the consequences of your own action!”

Obviously, Liu Shucheng heard the name of Long Yu and felt instigated all of a sudden!

“Ha ha ha!”

Long Yu saw that and immediately laughed three times, and holding his Qian Dragon Spear, turned around to walk towards the inside of the Sect valley.

To cope with a lackey like Liu Shucheng, bullying the weak and fearing the strong, didn't need to begin, only saying the name was enough to frighten a guy like him!

Such a person, no matter how strong he would be, Long Yu wouldn't pay any attention to him.

But, Yi Yan had occupied the Sect valley, and now, Long Yu really would like to know that how strong his strength was in comparison to Huayi Lin, the original 6th ranked core disciple!

Long Yu's words really scared Liu Shucheng, and he turned around and quickly entered the Sect valley!

As Long Yu entered the Sect valley, he felt a burst of world influence dropping from the clouds, and it was of the same nature what he felt in the Zhentian canyon, but the pressure of the world influence of the Sect valley was somewhat lesser than that of the Zhentian canyon.

“Heavenly arteries link up!”

Long Yu felt that his body meridians were instantly linked up with his heavenly

arteries and they immediately began to communicate with the repressive principles of world influence, instantaneously making his mind able to comprehend suppression of world influence with more insight.

“Practicing for three days in the Sect valley, the effect must be good, at least I can consolidate the world influence to use it in a more skilled way. Pressure of suppression can be increased at least by 30 % in comparison to the current pressure, then can attempt to build Zhentian domain.”

Long Yu was shocked at his heart.

Practice for three days in the Sect valley, could be equal to practice for one month, the effect was ten times stronger, no wonder, numerous disciples of Zhentian Sect desperately wanted to step into the rank of the core disciples.

If a disciple entered the rank of the core disciple, one day, they would get a chance to practice in the Sect valley!

“Who dares to disturb me during my calm practice!”

At this point, a cold voice transmitted from the side of the Sect valley.

At that time, Yi Yan had occupied the Sect valley, and as he felt that Long Yu entered the Sect valley, suddenly he stood up, and gave a swift and fierce look towards Long Yu!

Yi Yan was clad in gray dress, was tall and sturdy, and looked like a rock!

At that time, his eyes flashed with a look of impatience like a wolf, and were fiercely staring at Long Yu!

“The Sect valley can accommodate three people to practice, so what’s the big deal?”

Long Yu didn’t fear, looked at Yi Yan and lightly said!

“Big deal, ha ha, big deal you say!”

Yi Yan laughed, but behind his laughter was hidden his intention to kill: “I, Yi Yan, have been walking in Zhentian Sect for so many years, but this is the first time I heard someone talk big in front of my face! You are courageous, but just so you know, you won’t live long!”

“I think, my life is going to be bigger than yours.”

Long Yu lightly said.

Yi Yan was extremely arrogant and if anyone made an unsuited remark on him, then he wouldn’t hesitate to kill them, with no regard of them being the disciples of the same sect!

“I am Yi Yan, and soon will let you know that your life is not as big as you think!”

Yi Yan said as his eyes were emitting the rays of anger!

Since the day he was acknowledged by Wu Jianxin as a disciple, nobody said such words to Yi Yan. Moreover, he was in a critical moment to comprehend world influence, and at that key moment, Long Yu entered the Sect valley to disturb him, so he was obviously going to be extremely furious!

Chapter 73 Qian Dragon prance

Yi Yan was angry, but at the same time, he neglected the most basic matter.

He should have thought that only one more person entered the Sect valley at that time, so how could it affect his practice there?

Long ago, Yi Yan stepped into Wudao ninth layer, but he wasn't able to condense Zhenling realm, not because he lacked talent, but because his mind was not firm, his intention was uncertain!

When Long Yu felt that Yi Yan's whole body was filled with the intention to kill, he was, of course, ready for the combat.

As he descended the valley, he felt repression, and he immediately clenched his Qian Dragon Spear, and instantly, the repression of world influence began to condense on his whole body!

"A mere Wudao eighth layer ant, but also dares to disrespect me, Yi Yan, damn it!"

Yi Yan shouted loudly, and stamped his feet on the ground, and at the same time, congealed the rock wall as shield!!

It was actually a top grade martial skill of Zhentian Sect, Imperial Rock!

At that time, Yi Yan displayed this Imperial Rock not to defend but to attack!

Instantaneously, that rock shield wall changed into several hundred unsophisticated soil fists, and rushed towards Long Yu like artillery shells!

“Qian Dragon Spear, repression!”

Long Yu grasped the Qian Dragon Spear, and with steady steps, he aimed at several hundred unsophisticated soil fists coming towards him, and punctured them directly.

The formidable pressure of Zhentian world influence, all of a sudden, suppressed all these unsophisticated soil fists, and immediately they were sent flying one after another by the hits from spear point, and not even for a moment, Yi Yan’ trick of using rock attack had actually any effect on Long Yu!

“World influence!”

Yi Yan felt the heavy pressure of World influence coming out of the Qian Dragon Spear of Long Yu, and his face slightly changed: “You are Long Yu!”

“I am.”

Holding the spear in his hand, Long Yu stood like the Mount Tai!

“Ha ha, Long Yu, it’s you, no wonder you are so arrogant!”

Yi Yan laughed: “You have killed my fellow Brother Luo Tailong’s foster father, today, I will gladly take revenge for that!”

With the sound of his laughter, instantly, Xuan qi began to condense on his leg, and suddenly his whole stature jumped and immediately he swept away his cross-kick towards Long Yu like a tornado.

At the same time, a touching “hum” sound transmitted from his leg, as if the heaven was crying!

It was actually a super grade martial skill, ‘the heaven cries’!

‘The heaven cries’ was one of the nine super grade martial skills of Zhentian Sect, but ‘the heaven cries’ was the most special type of super grade martial skill, because, it had no specific style, and after practicing it, one could use just Xuan qi to invoke the cry of the heaven!

After practicing ‘the heaven’s cries’ one could inspire the crying of the heaven either with punch or kick resulting into a strong blasting sonic hit on the opponent.

One could do it with battle weapons, whether it could be a knife, spear, sword or halberd, Xuan qi could be used to inspire these battle weapons resulting into powerful blasting hits on the opponent!

At that time, Yi Yan had swept away his cross-kick, and his leg actually gave out a ‘hum’ sound that was apparently based on the inspiring ‘the heaven cries’ by using Xuan qi.

Whenever his leg would be in action, there would be a heavenly crying blast!

Regarding that power, Long Yu was not very clear, so he already prepared himself to resist it.

“Blizzard boots!”

Long Yu stimulated Blizzard snow boots, and immediately, ice sludge and broken ice emerged from his Blizzard boots and suddenly rushed towards Yi Yan and churned away his tornado attack!

At that time, the whole stature of Yi Yan, that was like tornado coming towards Long Yu, was obstructed by the ice barrier, and in addition to it, the heavy repression of the Zhentian mood, suddenly, reduced the momentum of his attack.

Then Long Yu took out his spear and released terrific repression of the world influence from his whole body and instantly integrated it with his spear, and the result was that the power of repression reached its climax!

“Qian Dragon Spear, repression!”

Long Yu provoked his spear and like a tornado, a burst of suppression of world influence rushed out from the spear point and wrapped with the flying kick of Yi Yan.

“Heaven cries, blow away!”

Yi Yan shouted loudly, and immediately came a sound, as if the heaven itself was sobbing, and a formidable air current erupted and rushed towards Long Yu, and pushed him several meters back.

Qian Dragon spear in Long Yu's hand suddenly trembled. The blasting power of the heaven cries, even against the repression of world influence, pushed Long Yu back, clearly showed its tyrannical power and influence!

"You can't!"

Yi Yan laughed, and swept away a flying kick, at the same time, displayed horizon is close, and instantaneously came in front of Long Yu.

Yi Yan was a top ranking core disciple, and basically he had practiced an agility type super grade martial skill, horizon is close, because it was a very good agility type martial skill.

For example now, the whole stature of Yi Yan suddenly came in front of Long Yu so quickly that he hardly could get time to react.

"Demon vajra cover!"

Long Yu shouted loudly, and instantly a light golden ray emerged from his body and covered it completely.

Hum!

The sound of crying, like a tornado rushed towards Long Yu, and keeping his both arms off horizontally, Yi Yan blasted his heavy kick on the body of Long Yu.

Bang!

With a loud sound, Long Yu was pushed several steps back, but the light golden layer of his body remained intact, and actually no damage was caused to him.

The perfection level of Demon tyrant form had outstanding defense ability, and it was able to resist the attack of a super grade martial skill, the heaven cries.

“Defense is good, but with only defense, how can you be my opponent!”

Yi Yan shouted loudly, and then he pulled out a small crossbow from his waist, and seeing this scene, Long Yu’s heart became cold.

“The crossbow of heavenly crying!”

Yi Yan laughed, and suddenly Xuan qi began to congeal on these numerous crossbow arrows, and rushed towards Long Yu, as if it was a rain of arrows.

At that time, the entire Sect valley was echoing with the “hum” sound, and soon, these arrows had covered the whole body of Long Yu!

“Zhentian world influence, congeal!”

Long Yu felt dropping of the Zhentian pressure from the clouds, and suddenly, Qian Dragon Spear in his hand, was suddenly linked with his palpitation, and began to beat together.

Long Yu felt as if Qian Dragon Spear resonated with him as his blood began to boil up in his blood vessels!

“Conjunction!”

At this moment, Long Yu grasped Qian Dragon Spear, and felt the rhythm of his heart beat with the beat of the spear, and immediately understood that he was able to make a resonance with this spear!

“Qian Dragon Spear, dad’s battle weapon, let me see, how strong you are!”

Long Yu shouted loudly, and suddenly an extremely intense air current burst on the point of the spear!

This burst of air flow was not to roll around Long Yu to push him towards the opponent, but it actually curled him up enabling him to take a high leap towards the sky!

Qian Dragon prance!

When Long Yu fitted himself with Qian Dragon Spear, instantly, Qian Dragon Spear was able to play a stronger force, and this technique of Qian Dragon prance was derived from the ability of the Qian Dragon Spear!

The air current that erupted from the spear point let Long Yu jump very high in the sky, and Long Yu looked like a sky dragon, keeping his spear pointing towards the ground!

The crossbow arrows, fired at Long Yu, spread in all directions in the sky above the Sect valley and there erupted blasting waves of heavenly cries everywhere.

If Long Yu had not shunted these crossbow arrows, even if he had practiced Demon tyrant form to its perfection level, he would have been instantly killed.

But, at that time, he immediately resorted to Qian Dragon prance, and before the arrival of crossbow arrows, he jumped very high in the sky, which was beyond the expectation of Yi Yan!

Of course, Yi Yan took it into his account that Long Yu could possibly display any agility type martial skill to dodge the crossbow arrows, so he had shot them in such a way that they covered the entire Sect valley completely, not giving any chance to Long Yu to shunt them.

In fact he shot these arrows in the mid-air, but he didn't expect that Long Yu would jump so high!

The scene was that Long Yu displayed Qian Dragon prance and jumped 100 feet high into the sky, and immediately shot his spear, wrapped with the tyrannical coercion of world influence, towards the ground, also taking advantage of the natural suppression of the Sect valley!

This spear, like a sky Dragon, rushed at a breakneck speed towards the place where Yi Yan was standing.

“Royal Rock!”

Yi Yan felt the terrific power inherent in Long Yu's spear, and his reigning face

changed, and he immediately waved his hand, and instantly condensed out rock shield wall to resist this attack!

Royal Rock was a top grade martial skill, and its defense was really superior!

However, the coercive power of world influence, condensed on the spear point, was so terrific that it shattered Yi Yan's rock shield wall completely!

Then, there was a loud thunder, and the sky was filled with dust in the entire Sect valley!

The air current that came from the spear point of Long Yu suddenly sent grey clothed Yi Yan flying out of the area of the Sect valley, and he heavily fell on the ground!

Under this Long Yu's Qian Dragon prance move, which was better than Wudao ninth layer Yi Yan, he was sent flying 100 feet away.

"Brother Yi!"

Liu Shucheng stood outside the Sect valley, and he also saw Long Yu sending Yi Yan flying. He never thought that Yi Yan would actually be sent flying by Long Yu!

He went three-steps to reach to the side of Yi Yan, and turned out to see that Yi Yan was actually in comatose state, he was actually stunned by the violent coercion of the world influence of Long Yu.

"Long Yu, what a big courage you possess, you unexpectedly snatch the

practice position in the Sect valley, and shot to offend somebody, I will report the matter to the Elder of the Elder pavilion, and request him to decide the matter!”

Liu Shucheng snapped, and then single-handedly picked up Yi Yan, and fled from the Sect valley, and soon disappeared without any trace.

He was actually afraid of Long Yu, who might begin with him, but he actually didn't know that Long Yu didn't pay any attention to him.

“Go to Sect Elder to request to decide the matter?”

Long Yu's eyes flashed coldly.

If that Wu Jianxin really confused right and wrong, and it would depend on his conviction to determine the case, but Long Yu would surely interrogate him, should this Sect valley be used only by one person for practice?

Yi Yan occupied the Sect valley, and said to Long Yu as “excessive”, and also got all prepared to kill him.

Hadn't this point allowed Long Yu to revolt?

Absurd!

Long Yu didn't want to think too much about it, and bowed his head to look his Qian Dragon spear, and felt mutual sympathetic chord relationship with his blood.

“After the integration of mutual sympathetic chord with Qian Dragon Spear, then Qian Dragon prance could be used to jump 100 feet, and then it could be used against enemy for multiple purposes, to kill, escape, may be called the masterstroke!”

Long Yu’s blood was still boiling up, and was in a condition of resonance with Qian Dragon Spear, and he couldn’t help but wanted to know that what type of battle weapon was actually this spear?

However, this answer, perhaps he would get only when he would enter the Zhenling realm!

“Sect valley is extremely conducive for comprehending repressive principle of the world influence, so on this day comprehending the Zhentian mood meant twice the result with half the effort!”

When surrounded by silence, Long Yu began to realize Sect valley practice.

Regarding repressive rules of the world influence, he just had a preliminary understanding, now was the time to consolidate it!

In a while, other core disciples came, and when they saw that Yi Yan, who had occupied the Sect valley, was dislodged by Long Yu, they were overjoyed and started to whoop!

Chapter 74 Knife Cut Sect disciples

“Yi Yan was really expelled out by Long Yu, and it was really an acrobatic display of his removal from the Sect valley!”

“However, I fear now Brother Long Yu is going to be in troublesome situation!”

“I think, since Brother Long Yu dared to start then he certainly would be ready to face any trouble whatsoever, so should we actually worry about it?”

“True, on the other hand, this time, I finally can enter Sect valley to practice, I feel as if I can comprehend the mood in a day only, I can truly comprehend the Zhentian mysterious mood this time.”

While talking, two top ranked core disciples went into the Sect valley, and started practicing together with Long Yu!

These two core disciples looked at Long Yu with admiration and gratitude, if Long Yu had not dislodged Yi Yan, then they would have to wait for five days to enter the Sect valley for practice!

Five days of time, was really precious for any cultivator of martial arts, so they were naturally thankful to Long Yu.

However, Long Yu didn't actually pay any attention to them.

At present, Long Yu didn't like to be disturbed by someone, and actually

wanted to concentrate his thoughts on comprehending and consolidating the repressive principles of world influence.

“Repression was a type of world principle, and by practicing Zhentian tactics, one could use one’s Xuan qi to comprehend the law of world influence.”

“Even if a Wudao master didn’t practice the Zhentian tactics, it was possible for him to comprehend the repressive principles of world influence by using his heavenly arteries.”

“But, the repressive principle of the world is rare and if a disciple doesn’t practice the Zhentian tactics, then it will be difficult for him to comprehend the repressive principle of the world influence completely.”

“Simply put, if a disciple didn’t practice the Zhentian tactics, he wouldn’t be able to comprehend the repressive principles of the world influence completely, he would only be able to make people feel simple repressive mood. However, by practicing in the Sect valley, he may expand the intensity of the repressive principle of the world trend!”

“Practicing in the Sect valley, of course, would increase the speed of comprehending the repressive principle of the world influence!”

What Long Yu had practiced so far was only the general repressive principle of the world influence.

Besides the repressive principle of Zhentian Sect, other sects also taught the repressive principle to their disciples, for example, Hanbing Sect had the Heart Sutra as its core law, and the effect of comprehending the repressive principle of

both the Sects was same, and through the practice of the Heart Sutra, one could easily comprehend the repressive principles of the world.

However, from this, he had a question.

Since if one didn't practice Heart Sutra, it was extremely difficult to comprehend the repressive principles of the world, so Hanbing Sect created its Heart Sutra as its core law, such as the ancestors of Zhentian Sect did to comprehend the repressive principles. It might be possible that's why they created the Zhentian tactics?

Or, it might be the ancestors of Zhentian Sect were the first to create Zhentian tactics, then comprehended the repressive principles of the world influence?

This question, perhaps nobody could answer in the entire Zhentian Sect, because no one was alive from that era!

Long Yu, at that time, relied on the Zhentian tactics to comprehend the repressive principles of the world influence, and it was good for him because of conducive atmosphere in the Sect valley, the speed of comprehending the repressive principles of the world influence was comparatively faster than a common place.

Long Yu had three days of time to practice, so he didn't pay any attention to those two persons, who were presently practicing in the sect valley.

Moreover, in these three days, Wu Jianxin didn't come to create any trouble to Long Yu, he actually thought that soon, the time would come to go to the depths of Teng snake Abyss, and there, he would have plenty of opportunities to kill

Long Yu, so he didn't need to unnecessarily make any hasty move.

Now, the time was nearing for Long Yu to go to the depths of Teng snake Abyss with the group to collect three medicinal herbs to cure Elder Yu.

So, Long Yu set out, and grasped his Qian Dragon Spear and left the Sect valley taking big strides. At that time, there were signs of reverence for him in the eyes of some of the disciples present there.

“Qian Dragon Spear in the hand, practicing the Zhentian Spear tactics! Through these three days of comprehension, I have finally consolidated my comprehension of world influence, the repressive power has improved at least by 30%!”

Long Yu left the Sect valley and went towards Elders' pavilion, his eyes were shining brightly: “At the same time, the consolidation of the world influence has led to the promotion of my Zhentian Spear tactics, helping me to comprehend the Zhentian Spear tactics up to Da Cheng level!”

If Zhentian Spear tactics was practiced to Da Cheng level, then one could quickly shoot dozens of spears, the numerous spear shadows, and each spear could be integrated with the repressive principle of world influence, displaying peerless power!

After that, if Long Yu only integrated his spear with the repressive principle of world influence, then he could display the strength of 400 to 500 fierce horses, but if he displayed the spear shadows one after another, then his strength could reach over the power of 1000 fierce horses!

(Mystique-1 fierce horse= 1000 Jin)

The strength of 1000 fierce horses was actually the basic strength of a Wudao master right after stepping into the Zhenling mystical realm!

“Even after being at Wudao eighth layer, I can display the strength of 1000 fierce horses, and this strength was actually 4 or 5 times more than the basic strength of an ordinary master of Wudao eighth layer. Thus it can be seen, that how formidable can be the power of the integration of Zhentian Spear tactics into the repressive principle of world influence!”

Long Yu rushed at extremely high speed, and at that time, he felt a heroic spirit inside himself. But, suddenly he stopped, thought something then displayed ghost flash, and his ghost like stature disappeared in the middle of the forest.

His ghost like figure moved insanely fast in the forest, and soon, he found a rather secluded place, and pulled out the top grade immortality pills, and the Feng Dan, and swallowed them.

These top grade immortality pills, for a Wudao eighth layer master, could only promote his cultivation like a drop in the bucket, but better than nothing, and not to mention, with the help of Nine Hidden Dragon Mark, he could fully absorb any type of immortality pill.

Then, a top grade immortality pill was actually equivalent to three pills for Long Yu!

In the evening, Long Yu stored up all the Ling qi of the immortality pill in Nine Hidden Dragon Mark, and opened his eyes, and stood up, and continued moving

towards his destination.

He had to go to the bamboo grove where Elders' pavilion was situated, and it was at a good far distance from the Sect valley.

Because of this, he was able to find time for absorbing the top grade immortality pills on the way.

And he also wanted to go to the bamboo grove to see the injured Elder Yu!

Now, Elder Yu was injured, and all the elders, in rotation, took care of him after giving training to their disciples in the Elders' pavilion, but while taking his care, the most important ones were his disciples.

Usually, Elder Yu gave practice resources to his disciples, and now, he was injured, so naturally, his disciples devotedly took care of him.

“Hm? Someone's killing intention?”

Long Yu just stepped into the bamboo grove, but he felt that the whole bamboo grove was lightly filled with an aura of intention to kill, so he suddenly became vigilant of the present situation!

Regarding killing intentions, Long Yu's sense of perception had always been extremely sensitive. Immediately, he cast out ghost flash and his whole person turned into an incarnation of ghost, quite invisible, and taking the advantage of the shadow of the setting sun, he instantly hid himself in the bamboo grove.

If not carefully observed, one couldn't see him.

Long Yu's first reaction was that which person was here to ambush him, but soon he would know about him.

Shua! Shua! Shua!

Three shadows suddenly rushed out of the bamboo grove, and quietly moved towards the bamboo room, where Elder Yu was lying injured on the bed!

"Attack!"

With a loud shout, the killing intention pervaded in the air!

Three shadows, each holding a black handle knife, wrapped with Xuan qi, rushed towards Elder Yu's bamboo room!

"You amateurs want to kill Elder Yu?"

Long Yu thought, and at this moment he had no choice, but to come out!

Because he could sense from afar that at this time, Elder Yu, who was dressed in black robes, was the only person there and he was lying on the bed, and no one else was there to guard him.

If Long Yu would not come into action, Elder Yu would definitely be killed by these three assassins!

“The sun is setting in the western sky and its almost dinner time, so it looks like the disciples, who were supposed to take care of Elder Yu, have gone out for dinner, these three shadows selected this time specially to perform the kill. They must have been observing for a long time.”

Long Yu thought and immediately waved Qian Dragon Spear in his hands.

Qian Dragon prance!

Long Yu stood a few hundred feet away from Elder Yu’s bamboo room, and besides displaying Qian Dragon prance, there was no other means for him to reach the place quickly.

Repression of world influence immediately began to condense on the tip of Qian Dragon Spear, and instantaneously swept away, and the air current curled up Long Yu instantly, and he pranced away towards the three knife carrying assassins!

Powerful repression of the world influence of began to pervade everywhere, and Long Yu, grasping Qian Dragon Spear in his hand, looked like a real Dragon!

“Shatter into pieces!”

Long Yu shouted loudly, and the terrifying suppression of the world influence rushed out and instantly shattered one knife light completely!

Then, he turned the tip of the spear towards another knife light, and

instantaneously, it was also smashed!

The terrifying pressure fell, and Long Yu instantly swept away the two knife lights!

But when the heavy repression rushing out from the tip of the spear collided with the last knife light, it actually felt as if the knife light rebounded with a terrifying force, which suddenly penetrated into the internal organs of Long Yu!

“Poof!”

Fortunately, Long Yu had practiced Demon tyrant form to the perfection level, so the rebound power of the knife light didn't seriously damage his five internal organs, but still, he suddenly spouted a mouthful of blood!

Bang!

Long Yu descended from the sky, and came to stop reluctantly, at that time, his eyebrows were tightened.

Actually, out of three shadows, one person that displayed the third knife light was above Zhenling realm, so his rebounding knife light had seriously injured Long Yu!

Bang!

There was a loud sound, and the third knife light crashed into Elder Yu's bamboo room that was present behind Long Yu at this time. It immediately

collapsed from the impact, but fortunately, the coercive power of world influence which was released from the tip of Long Yu's spear had crooked the knife light and the life of Elder Yu was saved.

Elder Yu, at this time, did not wake up, if Long Yu had not been there, then he would have died!

“Who is it, who wants to kill Elder Yu?”

Long Yu turned around and looked towards the three shadows, but was surprised to find that all these three shadows completely disappeared, perhaps hid themselves in the bamboo forest!

Under the cover of the crashing sound of the collapsing bamboo room, the three shadows found opportunity to hide themselves in the bamboo forest, so Long Yu felt their breaths completely vanishing, but he perceived that there still remained a hint of killing intention in the bamboo forest, so he knew that they had actually not gone from there.

Bam!

Suddenly, behind Long Yu, a deafening sound of knife light was heard, and a terrifying force shrouded him completely!

Carrying a knife light, a shadow suddenly rushed behind him!

Relying on his strength of Wudao eighth layer, Long Yu absolutely couldn't withstand this attack, and there was also no chance to avoid it!

“A Zhenling realm master from Knife Cut Sect, ha ha ha, it is really you!”

At this time, an unruly laughter was heard coming from the sidelines, Long Yu heard and recognized it immediately, it actually turned out to be Bu Xing!

Suddenly, a stubborn hawk cry dropped from the clouds!

Long Yu turned to look and saw that an imaginary figure of sky hawk instantaneously blocked the path of knife light, and both the imaginary figure of the sky hawk and that empty shadow of the knife light began to fight with each other!

“Disciples from Knife Cut Sect?”

Long Yu coldly thought in his heart. He actually knew that Knife Cut Sect, like Zhentian Sect, was one of the seven large sects of Tang State.

At this moment, a disciple, who was above Zhenling realm and was from Knife Cut Sect, had actually sneaked into Zhentian sect to assassinate Elder Yu.

Chapter 75 – If you want to condemn somebody, don't worry about the pretext

(Mystique-The name of this chapter is actually an idiom from Zuozhuan. 'Give a dog a bad name, then hang him' You can check wikipedia to learn about Zhuzhuan.)

Long Yu and Elder Yu were in a critical situation, but the strongest disciple of Zhentian Sect, Bu Xing, appeared at the scene and cast out his sky hawk Zhenling to rescue them from danger!

However, even the sky hawk coupled with the suppression of world influence, couldn't break the knife-light of the opposite party. This showed that the martial skill of the opposite party was extremely high!

"It's Bu Xing! Let's back down for now!"

A loud shout came from the side of the bamboo grove, and suddenly, three shadows reappeared nearby Long Yu from three different directions and fled away.

"You prevented our actions this time but this is not over yet! That tiny old Elder Yu of yours won't escape death next time."

"Young Yu, you take care of Elder Yu, I will pursue them!"

Bu Xing quickly said to Long Yu and without taking enough time, he swiftly moved his steps and immediately displayed 'close horizon'. In a flash, his stature

began to pursue the guy whose cultivation was above Zhenling realm!

Long Yu heard his words, and immediately grasped his Qian Dragon Spear and swiftly walked into the almost collapsed bamboo room, and quickly arrived nearby Elder Yu.

Although, he received a strong concussion from the attack of Zhenling realm knife-light, but because he had practiced Demon tyrant form, the injury caused by the knife-light was not very serious. Just by controlling his breathing training, he should be all right.

Now, however, he certainly did not have time for breathing practice.

“Elder Yu.”

Long Yu entered the collapsed bamboo room and found Elder Yu lying on the bed, still in comatose state. He put him on his back and came out of the collapsed bamboo room.

But this scene was seen by several people not very far from the place!

“Who dares to lay hands on my teacher!”

A wild shout fell into Long Yu’s ears, followed by trotting sounds of several figures rushing towards him, and soon, they surrounded him!

Long Yu looked up and saw that these people were disciples of Zhentian Sect, each having ugly expression on his face. They had actually trapped him in the

middle.

One tall and sturdy youth with ugly complexion, who had just now shouted, was actually the disciple of Elder Yu, called Lu Guanming.

Altogether five people were there, and when they heard the loud sound, they quickly rushed over and finally saw that Long Yu was coming out of the collapsed bamboo room carrying Elder Yu on his back!

Subconsciously, they thought it was Long Yu who destroyed the bamboo room and now wanted to hurt Elder Yu!

“He is Long Yu, I’ve seen him before in the blood feud field.”

One of them pointed at Long Yu and said.

“Long Yu!”

The remaining four suddenly began to tremble with fear, but Elder Yu’s disciple, Lu Guan Ming, soon shouted loudly: “So you are Long Yu, you traitor, my teacher protected you when you were injured, and you are trying to bite the hands that fed you. You actually intend to hurt my teacher, you are simply worse than filthy beasts!”

“Fellow apprentice, don’t be impulsive.”

Long Yu said in a serious tone while keeping his guard on against the opposite party: “Actually, I wanted to see Elder Yu, but I came to the bamboo room, just

to see that he three killers from Knife Cut Sect wanted to assassinate Elder Yu. This bamboo room was actually collapsed by the attack from the killer of Knife Cut Sect!”

“Nonsense!”

One youth, whose eyes were shining with doubt and sarcasm, pointed out loudly: “Killer from Knife Cut Sect? You tell me, where is this killer from Knife Cut Sect?”

“Brother Bu Xing arrived promptly, he is already chasing them away.”

Long Yu said lightly.

“Brother Bu Xing?”

All of the five people heard it, and gawked, but immediately responded.

Bu Xing!

Did Bu Xing really arrive?

However, at this time, there was nothing present to validate Long Yu’s verbal statement so these five people would naturally not believe him!

“We must not listen to his nonsense, we cannot allow him to escape.”

Another man said and even took out his battle weapon, a long sword, while covetously eyeing Long Yu!

“Long Yu, put down my teacher!”

Hot tempered Lu Guanming, holding a big iron hammer battle weapon in his hand and staring at Long Yu with hatred, shouted loudly: “If anything wrong happens to my teacher, I will go all out today, I will make you pay the price for it!”

Lu Guan Ming was only a 35th ranked core disciple and was just a Wudao eighth layer master.

Even after joining forces together, they were not necessarily the opponents of Long Yu, and all five people actually knew this fact.

After all, Long Yu defeated Huayi Lun, the 6th ranked core disciple, and this news had already spread throughout Zhentian Sect.

Sure enough, it was granted that they would be unable to defeat him, but at any cost, they wouldn't allow Long Yu to leave the place!

“Believe it or not, this is the fact!”

Long Yu calmly looked all around and said in a self-poised manner: “We only need to wait here, once the fellow apprentice Bu Xing comes back, then the truth will be revealed to all.”

Hand over the unconscious Elder Yu to them and escape alone from this place, Long Yu would never do such foolish things.

Although, he could see that Lu Guanming was really worried about the safety of Elder Yu, but regarding the intentions of the other four people, Long Yu was actually still quite skeptic.

So, under such circumstances, if he surrendered Elder Yu to them then they could find an excuse to attack him!

If anything wrong happened to Elder Yu then it would be difficult for him to prove his innocence!

Therefore, Long Yu decided just to protect Elder Yu and wait for the return of Bu Xing!

Now, there were many disciples of Zhentian Sect in the field, so the killers from Knife Cut Sect would naturally not appear again, so Long Yu must guard against sudden attacks from the people of his own sect.

This whole thing seemed somewhat ridiculous, but Long Yu knew well that in this case, he could only depend on him because it was indeed impossible to make Lu Guanming to believe the fact.

“What’s going on here?”

Suddenly, a severe castigation passed from the bamboo grove entrance!

Lu Guanming and other four people looked towards the place from where the sound passed over to them and saw a short black faced man with sturdy arms, it was actually the core disciples reward issuer, Elder Wu Jianxin!

Although, Wu Jianxin was stout but he looked quite short, just like a black coal briquette!

He came from the bamboo grove edge, with his eyes flashing a stern countenance and looked towards Long Yu.

When Wu Jianxin saw Long Yu carrying Elder Yu on his back, his eyes flashed fiercely, then immediately returned to normal, as if nothing had actually happened!

However, that fierce touch, which flashed for a moment in his eyes, was instantly captured by the keen observation of Long Yu!

“This Wu Jianxin, in the end, what motive does he have?”

Long Yu thought and instantaneously knew that Wu Jianxin had certainly planned something secretly!

But, at this time, Long Yu couldn't say anything, after all, he knew that there was no evidence to support it, so he actually didn't know what exactly Wu Jianxing's plan was!

Wu Jianxin walked step by step and released repression of world influence that instantly enveloped all the people in the surrounding.

Long Yu, carrying Elder Yu on his back, obviously felt that Wu Jianxing's release of repression of world influence was actually aimed at him!

Elder Wu Jianxin was a Zhenling realm master, so the effect of the coercion of world influence was indeed intense!

There were two other elders that followed behind Wu Jianxin, but Long Yu didn't know these two elders. He only saw them once when he went to the Elder pavilion for the first time.

Three elders arrived at the scene and Wu Jianxin released the world influence, which completely put Long Yu under its heavy suppression!

Now Long Yu couldn't move, and at that time, his face was covered in beads of sweat. He could only clench his teeth to get support in order to stabilize his back on which he was carrying Elder Yu!

"Long Yu, you are a disciple of Zhentian Sect and actually want to harm your sect elder, this crime is enough for you to die ten thousand times!"

Wu Jianxin said in a cold voice, and at that time, he stood at a distance of 100 feet from Long Yu.

"To be combined with sin..... It's easy to find a pretext, isn't it?"

Long Yu clenched his teeth while resisting the heavy repression of the world influence of Wu Jianxing, he stubbornly raised his head and said with difficulty: "I

just intercepted the killer from Knife Cut Sect, and regarding Elder Yu's protection matter, wait for Brother Bu to come back, you will then understand!"

"How dare to talk back in front of me you fool!"

Wu Jianxin shouted loudly: "If you confess your crime, you can be treated leniently, and after destroying your cultivation, you will be allowed to leave Zhentian Sect, but if you refuse to admit it then I, Wu Jianxing, as the Elder of Zhentian Sect, can only kill you right now just to set an example to warn others!"

"Ha ha..... ha ha!"

Long Yu laughed with difficulty: "If you don't want to wait for fellow apprentice Bu Xing, then you will only have a guilty conscience later!"

"I am an elder, do you think I need you to teach me what to do?"

Wu Jianxin snorted coldly and took a step forward which made Long Yu to bear a stronger coercion of world influence.

As a result, now, Long Yu couldn't even speak up!

As the sound of footsteps transmitted from the bamboo grove, more and more disciples Of Zhentian Sect came from the bamboo grove and their number reached over a hundred people in no time!

Among these, Yi Yan's attendant, who ran away from the Sect valley after being scared of Long Yu, also came leading a group of people.

“We can see that Long Yu wants to hurt Elder Yu, he is shameless!”

Liu Shucheng pointed at Long Yu, his words were full of disdain and contempt for Long Yu, as if he was trying to bluff and bluster to ruin him!

After listening to the words of Liu Shucheng, dozens of other disciples also raised their fingers at Long Yu, and started talking, and apparently accused Long Yu of turning out to be such a despicable and ungrateful person!

It is always easy to mislead mass with rumors, and especially at this time, the people saw Long Yu carrying Elder Yu on his back before a collapsed bamboo room and were convinced that Long Yu actually wanted to hurt Elder Yu!

“Now, I, Wu Jianxin, must exercise my power as the elder to put Long Yu to death for treason and heresy.”

Wu Jianxin took one more step and looked around and loudly asked: “Does anyone has opinions, stand up!”

“Put him to death, put him to death!”

All the disciples of Zhentian Sect present on the scene started shouting while they were looking at Long Yu with contempt.

Ungrateful, outrageous, how he could do such a thing, not a single man was there to support Long Yu!

“Such being the case, I will now begin!”

Wu Jianxin snorted, looked at Long Yu and gradually moved towards him!

With each step of Wu Jianxin, Long Yu felt that world influence’s pressure was getting more and more stronger, and while facing a Zhenling mystical elder, he simply didn’t have any ability to resist.

“Bu Xing, there is no sign of his coming back, I must plan something for the time being.....”

Long Yu’s heart began to beat, even his Dantian also began to beat up strongly and Xuan qi began to flow into his body meridians.

His suppressed stature could now move under the powerful beats of his Dantian, coupled with the flow of Xuan qi into his body meridians!

“I can finally move about, I cannot miss the opportunity!”

Long Yu thought in his heart and fiercely grasped Qian Dragon Spear in his hand!

Poof!

He punctured the ‘Nine Hidden Dragon Mark’ on his chest with the spear, and the blood began to flow out, but strangely, the color of his blood was deep black just like the color of the mark.

Chapter 76 Blood stained Dragon Spear

Long Yu's action stunned all the people in the surrounding.

Perhaps, Long Yu couldn't bear the suppression of Wu Jianxin's world influence , so he ventured into suicide mode?

But the spear got down and the blood that flowed out of Long Yu's chest was bringing forth a faint trace of black ripples which appeared very dense, strange and awe-inspiring!

Wu Jianxin, stepping in front of the original line, stopped his footsteps and scowled.

Long Yu's blood contained a hint of terror and induced alarm and fear in his heart. Those black ripples seemed to be coming from the Nine Hidden Dragon Mark and really frightened all the people in the surrounding!

"Dead or alive, we will see."

Long Yu, at that time, felt a sudden surge of strength in his body. He was finally able to make such an action and pierced the Qian Dragon Spear into his chest, right into through the Nine Hidden Dragon Mark!

Last time, when Feng Yu had blasted his fist on Long Yu's chest, then Dragon qi rebounded him and sent him flying, thereby injuring him seriously in the process.

Now, Long Yu pierced his chest with the spear, and penetrated Nine Hidden Dragon Mark because he actually wanted to see the changes that Nine Hidden Dragon Mark would produce this time.

As he induced the flow of black-rippling blood from his chest, it immediately stained Qian Dragon Spear in black color, and instantly, a black aura enveloped the entire Qian Dragon Spear!

Dense and awe-inspiring Dragon Xuan qi instantly spread around and rushed towards all directions!

It seemed as if the aura was surging straight from hell. The Dragon qi enveloped the entire bamboo grove and also penetrated into the meridians of each person present there!

Including Wu Jianxin, everyone had a piercing cold sensation in their bodies and all were frozen on the spot, while everyone's blood circulation and Xuan qi flow rate became extremely slow.

They fixed their eyes on the field, watching the blood flow from Long Yu's chest. No one knew exactly what it was, but could definitely determine that Long Yu was really very strange!

Although only lasted for a while but the bodies of everyone was covered in a layer of pale-black frost, making them act stiffly and slow!

When Wu Jianxin was enveloped in Dragon qi, as a result, the heavy suppression of world influence on Long Yu also vanished without a trace, and Long Yu finally relaxed again.

“They have been frozen by Nine Hidden Dragon qi?”

Long Yu was enduring the pain from his chest-wound. He looked up and around and was all set to seize the opportunity to leave.

“I cannot lose this opportunity!”

No one knew for how long the people in the surroundings would remain in a frozen state due to the seeping of Nine Hidden Dragon qi into their bodies.

Especially Wu Jianxin, a Zhenling realm master. Perhaps he would soon be completely recovered!

He pulled out his dyed black Qian Dragon Spear with one hand, and holding still unconscious Elder Yu by his another hand, he stood up, and rushed towards the bamboo grove.

Seeing Long Yu escaping in this way, Wu Jianxin was apparently extremely angry and his eyeball almost stared out, however, at that time, he was enveloped in Dragon qi and his body was in a frozen state. Even his palpitation had also almost stopped!

Nobody could prevent Long Yu from leaving the place!

Fortunately, the Dragon qi began to dissipate.

Just after a short time, Wu Jianxin could feel that the frozen atmosphere had

fully dissipated and now he could again cast out the repression of world influence.

However, a short time ago, he could only watch the escaping of Long Yu with Elder Yu!

Soon, as Long Yu left the place with Elder Yu, he disappeared from everyone's sight.

In the bamboo grove, only a strange awe-inspiring bleak atmosphere was left and everyone was trembling with cold.

A full half-an-hour elapsed.

Wu Jianxin gradually returned to normal. He integrated the Dragon qi into his world influence, and depending on his skills of Zhenling mystical realm, he finally expelled out the Dragon qi from his body.

"Humph."

He snorted loudly and looked around.

When he saw that numerous disciples of Zhentian Sect were not yet able to recover, his complexion became even more ugly.

"Elder Liang Wei, I trouble you to stay here and take care of our disciples, also, report the evil deeds of Long Yu to everyone else."

Wu Jianxin said to Elder Liang Wei who had also managed to fully recover: “ I, Wu Jianxin, will surely catch this Long Yu today, hence, I’m taking my leave now!”

As the voice fell, he trod his steps to pursue towards the place from where Long Yu had vanished!

It looked like Long Yu seemed to be escaping in the direction of Zhentian canyon, so Elder Wu Jianxin naturally moved towards that direction to pursue Long Yu.

He actually didn’t know that the direction he selected to pursue was completely wrong!

At this moment, Long Yu actually went away in the reverse direction towards the Teng snake’s abyss.

Thus, it was basically impossible for Wu Jianxin to overtake Long Yu. Half an hour had already passed away and Long Yu would have surely crossed over a hundred miles towards the depths of Teng snake’s abyss!

Even if already stepped into Zhenling mystical realm, for Wu Jianxin, it was impossible to catch the trail of Long Yu.

.....

Long Yu left the bamboo grove with Elder Yu and he certainly had a follow-up plan.

He would certainly not want to flee, since Wu Jianxin would definitely try to harm him, he must go for tit for tat, making Wu Jianxin to taste the consequences of his evil doing!

“This Wu Jianxin didn’t dare to wait for the return of Bu Xing, he was anxious to kill me, definitely has some ulterior motives.”

Long Yu thought in his heart: “Let Elder Yu wake up, I may be able to find out more details.”

At this moment, Long Yu’s destination was the abyss of Teng snake!

The disciples from Knife Cut Sect wanted to kill Elder Yu, and Wu Jianxin had certain ulterior motives, so Long Yu not only wanted to unearth all these things, but also wanted to seek justice!

Especially, Wu Jianxin used his authority to redress his personal grievances, placing Long Yu with Tan Wuchuan, Luotai Long and Meng Ce in the same group to go to Teng forest abyss to collect medicinal herbs, which made this clear that he actually wanted to take Long Yu’s life.

“So you want my life. I would surely like to see how you will react when it is exposed to everyone that an elder from Zhentian sect’s Elder Pavilion did such a shameful thing.”

Long Yu secretly thought, he actually wanted to work on this plan right away, but, of course, he would first wake up Elder Yu.

Elder Yu's treatment required three herbs, the blossomless oak fruit, the Yu Gunhua flower and the dragonhead grass.

Among them, the blossomless oak fruit would moisten the meridians, and even if the meridians were damaged, then one could depend upon the blossomless oak fruit for its restoration. Yu Gunhua flower would strengthen the Dantian and even if it was not functioning properly, one could depend upon the healing prowess of Yu Gunhua flower to restore one's Dantian.

These two herbs were of high value, and within the radius of a thousand miles, there were present in very small amount in the depths of Teng snake's abyss.

As for the dragonhead grass, it was necessary for stimulating and awaking brain, and could help in restoring the mind of Elder Yu. And when all these three medicinal herbs were united together, these would be able to fully cure Elder Yu from his injuries.

Long Yu was now carrying Elder Yu on his back, and along the way, he felt that Elder Yu's injury was not simply an injury, but it was highly toxic, making his whole body to fall into a dormant state!

Moreover, his meridians and Dantian were surrounded by the toxin, but temporarily, this toxin was in incubation period, and had not yet erupted, and once they would erupt then the matter of saving Elder Yu's life would become hopeless!

"No wonder, with these three herbs, Elder Yu can be relieved from the toxin."

Long Yu's eyes shone brightly: "Such being the case, I will first go to Teng

snake's abyss and look for these three medicinal herbs.”

Soon, he entered a bleak forest and disappeared without trace.

This section of forest and bleak shadows of lush trees belonged to the range of Teng snake's abyss.

With Elder Yu, Long Yu was moving very fast in such a dense forest, and considering his skill and rich experience, it was quite easy for him to lose the pursuers.

As he continued to run, Qian Dragon Spear, held in his hand, was getting more and more hot and was actually sending out gloomy rays of black light. It seemed as if the spear itself had turned into Nine Hidden Dragon Mark.

Actually some strange changes happened in the Blood stained Qian Dragon Spear, but Long Yu didn't know whether it was for good or bad.

“It is not good, its way too hot, I must first find a place to rest!”

Long Yu began to feel the increasing temperature of Qian Dragon Spear, and actually felt that it had become so hot that he was unable to hold it.

He looked around, and soon found a small cave, and with Elder Yu on his back, he went inside. Afterward, he placed a boulder and completely blocked the entrance to the cave, leaving only a trace of gap for ventilation.

Then, he carefully put Elder Yu against the cave wall and left him to rest. He

put Qian Dragon Spear on the ground, and carefully observed the changes!

“Blood stained Dragon Spear, I wonder what changes have occurred to it.”

Long Yu slightly frowned because even in the dark cave, he was able to see the blood stained surface of Qian Dragon Spear, and at that time, it was sending out a dim light, making it appear extremely strange.

Under the influence of the blood Nine Hidden Xuan qi, dual changes were actually happening in Qian Dragon Spear!

Clang! Clang! Clang!

The intermittent metallic sounds were transmitted from the Qian Dragon Spear, making the surface of the spear precipitate with gradually spreading dim rays of light.

A strip of black lines, as if engraved on the Qian Dragon Spear, appeared on it!

The spear point had become pitch-black!

A strip of black lines were now engraved on its surface!

“The pattern on Qian Dragon Spear has actually become a bit like Nine Hidden Dragon Mark.”

Long Yu felt the exudation of a touch of Nine Hidden Dragon qi and certain

expectations grew in his mind regarding the spear.

It looked like the power of Qian dragon spear had actually enhanced?

He grasped the Qian Dragon spear in one hand but it wasn't hot, and the Nine Hidden Dragon that was exuding out of it had also stopped.

Long Yu finally understood that he could coordinate with Nine Hidden Dragon Mark to produce Nine Hidden Dragon qi, and felt really refreshed!

"It's power has indeed enhanced."

Long Yu's eyes shone brightly, and immediately, he sent Xuan qi into Qian dragon spear, and all of a sudden, the lines carved on the surface of Qian dragon spear were activated.

"Heavy Spear Shadows!"

Long Yu shouted loudly and pointed the spear towards the cave-floor, and instantly, a dozen of spears penetrated into the cave-floor!

The terrific suppression of world influence along with the strange Nine Hidden Dragon qi rushed out of the tip of Qian dragon Spear and immediately rumbled, and suddenly, a ten feet deep pit appeared in the cave-floor!

"It has the strength of 1500 fierce horses!"

(Mystique – 1 fierce horse = 1000 Jin)

Long Yu's face was reflecting the color of pleasant surprise.

Originally, if he had integrated the repression of world influence with Qian Dragon Spear, he could cast heavy spear shadows at most with the strength of 1000 fierce horses only.

But now, after the transformation of the spear into the Blood Stained Qian Dragon spear, its power suddenly increased by fifty percent!

“In the future, I will call you Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear!”

Long Yu clasped the spear, and waved it a few times and found that he could rely on his own Xuan qi to choose whether to activate the black lines on Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear.

If he would not activate these black lines on the spear, then the spear-power would be exactly the same as before.

“Perhaps this spear can perform many functions after its activation, like Nine Hidden Dragon Mark

Long Yu thought to himself, and suddenly, he heard the roar of a dragon coming from the tip of Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear, as if coming from remoteness.

Chapter 77 Spirit Martial Skill

Along with the distant roar of Dragon, Long Yu's heart suddenly skipped a beat.

"Is this resonance? I feel that Nine Hidden Dragon Spear seemed to be able to sense my thoughts!"

Long Yu's eyes glittered.

If he was able to resonate with Nine Hidden Dragon Spear, wouldn't there be a drastic increment in his level?

Shua! Shua!

Long Yu waved his spear twice, and all of a sudden, he felt that Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear was more in the line with his heart.

Whenever, Long Yu would contemplate a move, Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear was able to understand what he meant, and if the lines on the spear were activated then the speed would become very fast.

If Long Yu would cast Heavy Spear Shadows, it would only need the time of one breath to activate, so it could be said now that it would actually require little-to-no time to display its might.

Whenever, Long Yu would contemplate in his mind, there would be a Heavy

Spear Shadow storm!

“The battle weapon conjunction is finished in addition to the beginning of the resonance, so the next stage is the psychic stage.”

Before, Long Yu remembered the words that Old White: “After reaching the psychic stage, the master of the battle weapon can fully interact with it, and the battle weapon will be able to display the will of its master, hence the speed of attack invocation will be extremely fast.”

“However, achieving the psychic stage is not the most important change, the most important thing is, if the master and the battle weapon are spiritually linked, and if beforehand, the master has previously integrated the Xuan qi into the battle weapon, then the battle weapon will be able to perform well in long-range control fights.”

Simply put, if the battle weapon spiritually agreed with the master, then it could kill an enemy thousands of miles away!

Certainly, this was only in theory, in fact, for the long-range control fights, the consumption rate of Xuan qi would be very large, so in a critical moment, no master would like to let go of his battle weapon for a long-range control attack.

“Touch lamella, no its lamella touch, Nine Hidden Dragon Spear, what do you want to tell me?”

{Note: Mystique— “Lamella touch” means staining of Dragon spear with Long Yu’ blood. Whenever, the spear will be contaminated with Long Yu’s blood, then it will display its spirit martial skill, full of terrific power.}

Long Yu seemed to have heard the voice coming from the Nine Hidden Dragon Spear, but ‘Lamella touch’, these words cleared some of his doubts.

“Dragon lamella touch, even a single touch from it can kill. Whenever, I will display lamella touch with this Nine Hidden Qian Dragon spear, then it can display “ lamella touch”, a spirit martial skill.”

When, Nine hidden Qian Dragon Spear would be contaminated with the blood of Long Yu, it would be able to display the spirit martial skill, and its power would be more than the Zhentian Spear tactics at perfection level!

“Let me check how much power this lamella touch actually has!”

Long Yu lifted his hand and nipped a small wound on his finger and immediately flung the drops of blood onto the Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear!

The roar of a dragon came from Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear, and suddenly, the black lines on the spear got activated and integrated into the world influence of Long Yu and stabbed down towards the cave-floor.

Lamella touch!

Dragon lamella touch, even a touch can kill!

With a loud bang, Long Yu’s crashed into the cave-floor, but this time, a twenty feet deep pit appeared on the floor!

“The strength of 1800 fierce horses!”

Long Yu’s eyes glittered brightly.

When he would cast Lamella touch, this Nine Hidden Qian Dragon spear would display the spirit martial skill, and the power would be more than the Heavy Spear Shadows, moreover, this was not the strongest power of Lamella touch.

If Long Yu himself didn’t wound himself to apply the blood on the spear but was wounded by the enemy, then the power of lamella touch would be much more stronger!

Now, this small cave was not safe to stay due to the testing of spear’s might which ended up producing loud noise.

Long Yu held the spear in his hand and left the cave with unconscious Elder Yu. He rapidly continued to move towards Teng snake’s abyss.

Way back, when he just stepped into the world of Wudao, he could only display the strength of 1000-1200 Jin, that was equal to the strength of 10-20 fierce horses.

Now, however, if he shot his spear then there would be the strength of thousands of fierce horses contained in one attack. One must know that this new strength was several hundred times more than his earlier strength!

The Wudao ninth layer was just the beginning of the way of Wudao.

If he stepped into the Zhenling realm, what tyrannical power would he have then?

.....

When Long Yu was advancing towards Teng snake's abyss, in Zhentian Sect, everyone was in chaos.

Long Yu wanted to kill Elder Yu, this matter had spread throughout Zhentian Sect!

The disciples of the sect, everywhere, were discussing about this matter.

In the residence of the core disciples, several core disciples were discussing about Long Yu.

“Long Yu easily defeated Yi Yan so that we could have the opportunity to enter the Sect valley to practice. Originally I was grateful to him, but I never thought that he would turn out to be such a person!”

“Yes, even taking advantage of the unconsciousness of Elder Yu to kidnap him and also taking advantage of Lu Guanming going out for dinner. Who would have thought that he wanted to kill Elder Yu!”

“However, I think that he has been intentionally framed by Elder Wu Jianxin. After all

“Hush, don't speak irresponsibly. Long Yu wanted to kill Elder Yu, over a

hundred people saw it, how it can be framed by Wu Jianxin deliberately?”

Several people discussed and finally blamed Long Yu!

After all, everyone knew that Elder Yu saved Long Yu, and now Long Yu was so ungrateful that he wanted to kill Elder Yu, anyone would dislike such behavior!

At the summit of the Zhentian canyon.

Old Black and old white were playing chess as usual and were guarding the Zhentian canyon.

But Liao Lele was making fuss on one side.

“Old White, do you really think that Long Yu plotted to kill Elder Yu? I am certain that Elder Wu Jianxin has planned all this to frame him up!”

“Old White, Long Yu and Luo Tailong have mutual enmity, and Long Yu also drove Yi Yan out from the Sect valley, and, both of them are the disciples of Elder Wu Jianxin that’s why he is using this opportunity to deal with Long Yu.”

“Moreover, senior apprentice Bu Xing said that three disciples of Knife Cut Sect sneaked into our sect to kill Elder Yu, and I have heard that relations between Elder Yu and Wu Jianxin were never good, may be.....”

However, regardless of what Liao Lele was saying, both old black and old white remained unmoved!

As the caretaker of Zhentian Sect, they knew that this matter was somewhat complicated, so now, they couldn't act rashly.

"Lele, calm down."

Old white kindly smiled and said: "Long Yu, who is yet not dead but also took away Elder Yu, may be, has his own way to do something, you feel at ease, wait and see?"

"But, why we aren't taking any action against them?"

Liao Lele clenched her teeth.

"This is not the time to act rashly."

Old white calmly said.

Hearing these words, Liao Lele slightly wrinkled her eye brows.

Actually, Liao Lele didn't understand anything, after all, she didn't know much about the whole circumstance!

At this time, in the office of the sovereign of Zhentian Sect, dressed in black clothes, Bu Xing was having a discussion with the sovereign.

"Teacher, the matter is so, the enemy was the strongest disciple of Knife Cut Sect, but I managed to break his knife-light skill."

Bu Xing frowned slightly but said lightly: "I could not beat him but even he also could not beat me. I was worrying about Brother Long Yu so I hurried back to meet up with him but I never thought that he had already left with Elder Yu."

"He was forced to leave by Wu Jianxin because he was trying to kill Long Yu, and under such situation, he could only run away. This whole situation was beyond my expectations."

Baiyun Zong, sitting in a chair, frowned and pounded heavily on table with one hand: "Originally, I also wanted to save him, but that strange breath appeared out of nowhere and even I was frozen by it. It was really beyond my comprehension."

"In any event, that strange breath is Brother Long Yu's own secret, should be related with his father."

Bu Xing said: "But, Wu Jianxin's move is somewhat autocratic, even he didn't wait for teacher and himself tried to decide the matter. The question is, why couldn't Wu Jianxin find the trail of Knife Cut sect's disciples nearby?"

"Yes, it is a doubtful point against Wu Jianxin."

Baiyun Zong nodded and cast aside his mustache: "This Wu Jianxin certainly has enmity with Elder Yu, I do not know for how many years until both of them became elders....."

Baiyun Zong said.

His eyes shone with a color of wisdom.

As the head of all elders, Baiyun Zong knew about the characters of all elders

As a sovereign of the Sect, he knew the nature of elders on the basis of the happenings in the past, so the basic truth of the facts was now clear to him.

Regarding Long Yu, Baiyun Zong naturally cared a lot!

Now, however, Baiyun Zong didn't come forward to justify the action of Long Yu, because, even if he was sovereign, but it was very difficult to make the disciples to believe the facts.

He remained in the background, watching the situation, and just waited until the right moment, then he would come into action!

.....

It took a full day for Wu Jianxin to recover and he also failed to catch Long Yu, so naturally, he was very angry.

After his return, he kept himself busy in issuing the duties to the core disciples.

Originally, the duty of the core disciples was to go to Teng snake's abyss and collect the three medicinal herbs, but now, they were supposed to look for Long Yu and Elder Yu.

Because Long Yu carried off Elder Yu, therefore, now, collecting three medicinal herbs would be useless.

Of course, their priority was to find out about the whereabouts of Long Yu!

“We have dragon charioteer, counted as a credit, a reward, a top grade battle weapon!”

“Kill Long Yu, it will be counted as great work, reward is a super-grade battle weapon!”

In order to kill Long Yu, Wu Jianxin was willing to invest an initial capital. In fact, he was even committing to give a super-grade battle weapon as reward to the core disciples!

And this naturally made many core disciples of Zhentian Sect go crazy!

At the entrance of Teng snake’s abyss, Tan Wuchuan, the law enforcement elder, was talking about Elder Yu, and had brought Luo Tailong and Meng Ce with him.

“According to my understanding of Long Yu, at this time, he should be in Teng snake’s abyss and would definitely be looking for those three medicinal herbs to save Elder Yu.”

Tan Wuchuan said lightly.

Luo Tailong’s face reflected a fierce color: “This time, I certainly want to find

him and when I do, I will cut him into pieces.”

“This time, the elders were discussing, it was not easy to kill that guy?”

The refined face of Meng Ce revealed a flattered smile.

Since his top grade battle weapon was shattered by Long Yu, so Meng Ce lost his earlier self-confidence and always followed Luo Tailong!

“Without further ado, let’s go.”

Tan Wuchuan didn’t pay any attention to Meng Ce.

He first met Long Yu in the Teng snake’s abyss, when Long Yu killed his disciple, Qin Tianque.

“Long Yu, I, in the depths of Teng snake’s abyss, will take your life to pay homage to my dead disciple, Qin Tianque!”

Tan Wuchuan’s eyes flashed fiercely, and at a face pace, they entered Teng snake’s abyss!

Chapter 78 Killed to seize grass

The Elder Pavilion was located beside the collapsed bamboo room of Elder Yu, and at that time, Lu Guanming was kneeling at the door of its gate with a remorse look on his face.

“Master, I, Lu Guanming, am useless. I was unable to prevent you from being taken away by that culprit!”

Lu Guanming lifted his face upwards and heaved a deep sigh.

Behind him were standing some of the core disciples of Zhentian Sect who were his good friends.

One of them offered an advice and suggested: “I have just inquired that earlier, Long Yu broke an arm of Brother Ling Lie in Yu Guan city, and now, Elder Zheng Changlao, the teacher of Ling Lie, is very angry and is actively looking for Elder Yu. Let us go together with Elder Zheng and look for Long Yu.”

Another man heard this, and suddenly his eyes shone brightly: “Yes, although, Zheng Changlao is only the law enforcement elder, but he has also stepped into Zhenling mystical realm. Once found Long Yu, he could be able to grasp him!”

“Well, according to you, as you said, I, Lu Guan Ming, who, everybody said called the bad words, should depend on fellow apprentices!”

Lu Guan Ming stood up and said bitterly.

“Lu brother, I assure you, we as a fellow, would certainly work hand in hand with you!”

The eyeball of that core disciple, who proposed that suggestion, took a turn, and said: “But I hear that Long Yu actually has many good things, for example, that boots and that long spear.....”

Lu Guanming heard him and suddenly said: “If I find that Long Yu, I will save my teacher.”

“That’s good!”

That person laughed: “So, Brother Lu, you alone are a disciple of Elder Yu, but if asked later, we can certainly say that we were moving together with Elder Zheng!”

“Indeed, let’s go.”

Lu Guanming’s black face was full of hatred and he turned around to set out. He actually didn’t perceive that these fellow disciples were simply mocking him.

.....

And at this moment, in the abyss of Teng snake.

Long Yu, grasping Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear in one hand and carrying Elder Yu in another, soon stepped into Teng snake’s abyss.

Now, his power had increased considerably was no longer the way he used to be the last time he came to this forest. If now he encountered a Teng snake king, his spear could kill it with a single strike or it could be completely suppressed by only releasing the repression of world influence.

But since he was moving towards the depths of Teng snake's abyss, so it was possible to encounter a stronger ominous beast, in fact there was even the possibility of encountering beasts above Zhenling mystical realm!

Although, with the conversion of Qian Dragon Spear into Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear, Long Yu could fight with a beast of Zhenling realm, but he didn't have much assurance of winning.

Because in addition to the basic force, the most important thing was that a Zhenling realm powerhouse could also congeal Zhenling.

And in the face of congealed Zhenling, Long Yu's suppressive power of world influence really didn't stand a chance!

"If I encounter a powerhouse as strong as Wang Tianzhuo, I can't say who will win and who will lose."

Long Yu thought to himself and cautiously moved ahead in the forest.

Suddenly, he heard the sound of the waterfall not very far from him and headed towards it.

Of course, after receiving the task of collecting the medicinal herbs, he tried his best to know about these three types of medicinal herbs, and knew that the dragonhead grass could help in stimulating and awakening of brain, and it generally grew in areas with abundance of water.

And now, he was near waterfalls, so it was possible to find the dragonhead grass here. Long Yu decided to get it to awaken the brain and restore the mind of Elder Yu!

He quickly ran towards the sound of the waterfall, but at the same time, he didn't forget to hide himself, because he knew very well that the people of Zhentian Sect would definitely be looking for his whereabouts.

"Huh? There's someone here, I should hide first!"

Long Yu immediately displayed ghost flash and his whole stature instantly turned into the form of ghost, and immediately, he hid in a bush!

As the sound of the waterfall was getting more and more loud, the voices of those two men talking to each other, gradually entered Long Yu's ears.

"I finally found the first dragonhead grass, it was really not easy!"

"Brother Zhang, you say, Zhentian sect issued the task that they want us to collect so many dragonhead grasses, blossomless oak fruits and Yu Gunhua flowers, in the end, what's the use?"

"Hey, Brother Li, you do not even know? Elder Wu holds grudge against Elder Yu for many years, and now, since Elder Yu has been seriously poisoned from the

attack of Qiansi sect's disciples, if we pick all these medicinal herbs, Elder Yu may not have the medicinal herbs to cure him."

"Elder Yu has been affected by a terrifying toxin which can make people unconscious and can corrode their meridians and Dantian."

"Hey, the seven sects competition is near, if Elder Yu dies then our Elder Wu will be in a very good mood and will definitely give us more rewards!"

"In the depths of Teng snake's abyss, these three medicinal herbs are extremely rare and disciples of Knife Cut Sect have already plucked most of these herbs, now, from where will the disciples of Zhentian Sect get these herbs?"

Two young men were walking and talking to each other, and simply didn't think that someone was listening to their talk.

Long Yu, hidden in the shade of bushes, was listening to their talk and immediately came to know a lot of things.

It turned out that there was a hatred between Elder Wu and Elder Yu!

Earlier, the three disciples of Knife Cut Sect wanted to kill Elder Yu and were actually sent by Elder Wu? Moreover, Elder Wu not only sent men to assassinate Elder Yu, but issued task to the disciples of Knife Cut Sect to pluck these three medicinal herbs.

"Wu Jianxin issued the task to the core disciples of Zhentian Sect to collect three medicinal herbs to save injured Elder Yu. It seems now I can connect all the dots. Was this matter related to Wu Jianxin? Was Wu Jianxin deliberately stalling

for time, making the disciples of Knife Cut Sect to first step out to pluck the three medicinal herbs completely?”

Long Yu secretly guessed, and quickly noticed that Brother Zhang and Brother Li, who were disciples of Knife Cut Sect, were at Wudao ninth layer and what was the most important that there were two dragonhead grasses in their hands!

“As these guys are at Wudao ninth layer, with my current strength, I should be able to beat them easily.”

Long Yu thought to himself then quietly put down Elder Yu, and grasping Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear in one hand, he moved towards the two disciples of Knife Cut Sect in the ghost form.

“Who’s there?”

Those two disciples of Knife Cut Sect were at Wudao ninth layer and as Long Yu approached 100 feet of their range, they became aware of him!

“Just a Wudao eighth layer disciple of Zhentian Sect, kill him!”

Brother Zhang Qiang, whose strength was stronger, saw through the cultivation of Long Yu, and grasping a black handle knife, he rushed towards Long Yu!

“These disciples of Knife Cut Sect are really rude!”

Long Yu chuckled and his ghost body actually appeared from the other

direction while holding Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear which suddenly flashed in front of Brother Li.

Brother Zhang approached to kill him, but at that time, Long Yu's figure actually blurred and his knife attack went right through him!

“Heavy Spear Shadows!”

Long Yu instantly integrated his spear with the suppressive power of his world influence, and suddenly, dozens of spear shadows rushed towards Brother Li!

“Knife cut cross!”

Brother Li showed a sharp reaction, and wanted to escape this spear attack, but it was too late, however, he took out his black handle knife, and waved it three times in front of his chest, and instantaneously condensed his Xuan qi!

Knife barrier appeared in front of him, trying to resist Long Yu's attack!

The next moment, however, the terrific suppression of world influence shrouded Brother Li, and his knife barrier was shattered into pieces

“Die!”

Nine Hidden Dragon qi filled the air and the terrific suppression of the world influence stagnated the circulation of Xuan qi in the meridians of brother Li in such a way that he was unable to take any measure, and helplessly watched the raid of numerous spear shadows on his body.

puff! puff! puff!

Numerous spear shadows impaled him and made several holes in Brother Li's body. He simply stared and fell on the ground bleeding profusely!

As he died, he realized how he never thought that he would be killed in this way by a Wudao eighth layer disciple of Zhentian Sect!

Brother Zhang's knife attack went in vain as Long Yu had blurred himself, and when he turned his head actually only to see that his fellow apprentice dying under the heavy raid of numerous spear shadows!

"Damn you, how dare you kill someone from my Knife Cut sect!"

Brother Zhang waved his black handle knife and cut out the air three times, and suddenly, three knife-lights rushed towards Long Yu: "Startled Great wild goose three knives!"

Bam! Bam! Bam!

Three knife-lights arrived from the front, left and right, from three directions, rushing at a tremendous speed towards Long Yu!

"Nine Hidden Dragon prance!"

Long Yu waved the spear in his hand, and immediately air current curled up beneath him and his whole stature was suddenly rolled up to the high altitude in

the sky!

Shua!

Long Yu was curled up by the air current and Nine Hidden Dragon qi enveloped the spear point, and suddenly, Long Yu leapt above the dense forest. One could see the moon hanging in the background as Long Yu was still in the midair, while the whole Teng snake's abyss appeared like a piece of silver platter in the white moonlight!

“Kill!”

Long Yu fell like a meteor while holding the spear and keeping the spear-tip aiming at Brother Zhang!

It really seemed strange to Brother Zhang, where did Long Yu go after jumping so high into the sky, how could he leap so high into the sky?

When he saw Long Yu's figure coming towards him with the spear reflecting the white moonlight, he immediately felt like escaping but it was too late.

After the transformation of Qian Dragon Spear into Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear, Long Yu's move of dragon prance had undergone a corresponding change, and now it could be called as Nine Hidden Dragon prance.

All of a sudden, he could jump very high in the sky and fall down at a terrifying speed!

“Suppression of world influence!”

As soon as Long Yu shouted loudly, numerous spear shadows suddenly came crashing to the ground, but Brother Zhang, at that crucial moment, had moved one step aside, so these spear shadows didn't hit him directly.

But even so, the strong air current generated by this spear sent Brother Zhang flying and his whole stature crashed on a thick tree trunk so heavily that the entire tree trunk was knocked down!

Even if he had not been directly hit by the spear, but he sustained an enormous hit.

Long Yu stepped forward and took out the dragonhead grass from the pocket of Brother Zhang.

“Now that I have dragonhead grass, I expect that Elder Yu will regain consciousness.”

Thus, Long Yu removed the two dragonhead grasses from the corpses of Knife Cut Sect disciples!

He returned to the same place where he had left the unconscious body of Elder Yu, and soon, he disappeared from that place without a trace.

This place saw a lot of fighting, and it would definitely attract the attention of people nearby. Since Long Yu wanted to revive Elder Yu so he must look for a safe place.

Soon, he arrived under a waterfall.

“This is the first dragonhead grass and can be administered directly. I should first crush it, mix in water and let Elder Yu drink it slowly.”

Long Yu crushed the dragonhead grass in his hand then mixed it with a small amount of water and fed it to Elder Yu.

Chapter 79 The Giant Poisonous Snake

Swiftly, Long Yu mixed the dragonhead grass with a little amount of clean water and quickly fed it to Elder Yu, and for safety point of view, he quickly moved to the nearby grove with him.

“Elder Yu should definitely be able to wake up by the curative effect of this dragonhead grass, but as of now, I have no means to restore his damaged meridians and Dantian.....”

Long Yu thought to himself. At that time he felt thirsty, so he ran back to the nearby river under the waterfall and was ready to drink water.

But, just at this time, he suddenly felt a trace of a hidden killing intention coming from the river side, and this killing intention instantly covered his whole body all of a sudden!

“Who is it?”

Long Yu gave a quick thought to it and immediately became alert and vigilant of the situation.

“This killing intention seems to be mixed with a cloudy and cold evil aura and has a fishy smell.....Is this an ominous beast?”

Long Yu secretly guessed.

If it was an ominous beast, then could it be an ominous beast of Zhenling mystical realm ?

If so, with the current strength of Long Yu, he didn't have any chance of victory!

So, Long Yu didn't act rashly and cautiously tightened his grip over the Nine Hidden Dragon Spear!

Hiss, hiss!

Suddenly, a hissing sound as if being transmitted from a snake's tongue fell into Long Yu's ears, and its breath completely shrouded his whole stature and unexpectedly stagnated the flow of Xuan qi in his meridians!

"Dantian, activate!"

Long Yu immediately moved his intention, and instantly, his Dantian started to beat up and the stagnated Xuan qi again began to flow in his meridians.

Then, he felt the danger of attack that was to come from the river straight on his face!

He simply didn't see the shape of the enemy, and as always relying on his intuition, he immediately displayed the suppression of word influence and swept away his Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear.

Heavy Spear Shadow!

Instantaneously dozens of spears crashed out and penetrated into the ground and a barrier of numerous spear shadows was immediately raised in front of Long Yu!

Now, any enemy wanting to attack him must first break through this barrier of numerous spear shadows, and this barrier was so strong that even a master of Wudao ninth layer couldn't break it easily!

Hiss, hiss!

A strange sound came out from the snake's tongue and spread in the surrounding, and suddenly a giant black poisonous snake leapt out from the river and swiftly moved towards Long Yu!

Meanwhile, a tyrannical pressure spread from the body of that poisonous snake, and immediately, an empty shade of strange grass type Zhenling congealed behind that poisonous snake.

"It's actually a Zhenling realm beast and its Zhenling is actually a grass type Zhenling!"

Long Yu's heart began to beat rapidly. He never imagined that he would have to face a Zhenling realm formidable beast under this waterfall!

Although, he didn't know what this grass Zhenling actually was, but he could feel its terrific pressure that had suppressed him so heavily that his whole stature was virtually unable to move!

Bang!

With that loud sound, he saw that giant poisonous snake's sturdy tail flung and broke the barrier of his spear shadows!

Not only this, the heavy suppression of his world influence was also shattered by this tail-sweep!

"This beast is very formidable!"

Long Yu clenched his teeth. At that time, he actually wanted to display agility type martial skill to evade this attack, but he simply couldn't do so because his Xuan qi was heavily entangled with the terrific suppression of the grass Zhenling!

"This grass Zhenling comparatively seems to be more powerful than the Tiger Zhenling of Wang Tianzhuo!"

Not only the agility type martial skill, at that time, Long Yu was even not able to display any other types of martial skills. Even if he would cast Demon tyrant form, he couldn't necessarily be able to resist the attack of that giant poisonous snake!

Hiss, hiss!

That giant poisonous snake was extremely self-satisfied when it saw that Long Yu couldn't move and spitting its wick, it looked at Long Yu with its scarlet pupils.

He perhaps thought that Long Yu was not planning to make any move so he

immediately made the “hissing” sound, and its entire body leapt from the river making a spiral winding in the air. Its whole body was jet black and its length was unexpectedly more than 200 feet!

Actually, Long Yu had seen its big head before and could guess its general size, but now he saw its whole stature, and couldn’t help but express his feeling!

“This beast probably does not need any means, it can just directly and strongly wrap around me, and will be able to mince my organs. Not to mention, it has already congealed its grass Zhenling.”

Long Yu’s sharp mind was working fast, but at this moment, there was really no way out for him.

Should he again pierce Nine Hidden dragon Mark on his chest?

Just when he thought so, that giant poisonous snake spat its wick and looked at Long Yu with his scarlet pupil and took out its whole tongue towards Long Yu to bite him!

It’s all over?”

Long Yu shrank his eyes, but suddenly he felt that the stagnated Xuan qi suddenly began to flow again in his meridians, and now he could use it!

This discovery made him overjoyed, and almost immediately, he circulated his Xuan qi into his meridians and displayed the peak level of flickering wind step, and blurred himself at the place, and in just one twinkling step, he moved 100 feet towards the rear side!

Rumble!

That giant poisonous snake actually wanted to bite Long Yu, but as he blurred his figure, so the snake could only bite his afterimage and in doing so he also bit a giant stone and smashed!

The crushed giant stone fell towards the ground and scattered everywhere on the floor.

Long Yu, in his ghost-form, hid himself behind a nearby tree, and carefully watched the situation in the field, and the scene that he saw actually delighted him very much.

He saw that a translucent Zhenling big imprint unexpectedly emerged out of thin air at the edge of the river and was confronting with the shadow of grass Zhenling of that giant poisonous snake!

“Elder Yu seems to have woken up.”

Long Yu immediately knew what was the matter but didn't actually make any sound.

Now, that giant poisonous snake stimulated the movement of its grass Zhenling to resist Elder Yu's big hand shadow while intermittent producing the whooshing sounds. It seemed that both sides were evenly matched.

Long Yu was hidden in the shadow of a nearby tree, and if he seized the

opportunity at the right moment, then he could kill that giant poisonous snake in one fell swoop!

Elder Yu woke up, but as his meridians and Dantian were yet not cured, so he was simply unable to cast other martial skills, nevertheless, he was still a Zhenling realm master.

The power of Elder Yu's Zhenling big hand print finally suppressed the repression of the grass Zhenling of that giant poisonous snake and saved Long Yu's life at this crucial moment!

However, Elder Yu had just awoken up from the comatose condition, so the displayed power of his big hand print was slightly less.

The grass Zhenling of that snake was suppressed by it and the strange strength of the grass Zhenling was entangled with the heavy suppression principle of the big hand print!

The strength contained in the Zhenling big hand print was ordinary and he was actually unable to display his true might!

Long Yu was hidden on the side and was carefully observing the situation. He couldn't help but had cold feeling in his heart.

What kind of strange and powerful force this grass Zhenling really had?

However, Elder Yu's martial skill of Zhenling was certainly more powerful than the grass Zhenling of that giant poisonous snake, but at this moment, even after being displayed in a slightly weakened state, his Zhenling had firmly suppressed

the grass Zhenling of the enemy!

The suppression effect of grass Zhenling was unable to spread again and didn't affect Long Yu!

"Filthy beast, you have recently congealed the Zhenling and still think you can fight with me? It seems you are really impatient to end your life!"

Elder Yu, dressed in a black robe, finally emerged from the side of the tree!

Long Yu looked at Elder Yu and clearly saw the weak color on his face. Long Yu thought that Elder Yu should not have come out of the shadow of the tree, because his coming out of there seemed to have caught the attention of the giant poisonous snake.

Hiss, hiss!

That giant poisonous snake saw Elder Yu, and of course, it immediately understood that it was this old man who cast out the Zhenling big hand print!

It spat scarlet wick, and patted its tail on the shore of the river and moved with its whole pitch-black body towards the place where Elder Yu was standing!

"Damn, Elder Yu's meridians and Dantian are highly toxic, he can't cast any martial skills and absolutely can't withstand this giant snake's attacks!"

Long Yu saw the scene and clenched his teeth. He quickly tightened his grip over Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear and instantly his Dantian began to beat in

synch with his heart!

Thump! Thump! Thump!

With the beating of his Dantian, Xuan qi began to boil up in his body and completely integrated with the tip of his Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear!

“Nine Hidden Dragon qi, activate!”

“Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear black lines, activate!”

Long Yu’s Xuan qi instantly activated the Nine Hidden Dragon qi, and immediately, strange black Dragon qi emerged out the spear tip.

“Beast, eat my spear, heavy spear shadow!”

Long Yu moved one step, and with Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear in his hand, he condensed the strength of over 1000 boisterous horses on the spear tip and heavily struck that giant poisonous snake!

Hiss, hiss!

That giant poisonous snake made whooshing sound, and suddenly swept his tail towards Long Yu, but its main body continued to gallop towards Elder Yu.

At that time, obviously, the threat from Elder Yu was greater than that from Long Yu!

Bang!

And with a bang, Long Yu's numerous spear shadows were directly shattered by the tail of that giant snake and scattered in all directions.

Then the tail swept on the waist of Long Yu!

"Puff!"

Long Yu withstood the hit of the tail, but suddenly, his blood sprayed out and stained the tip of his spear!

"Now!"

Spirit martial skill of Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear, Lamella touch!

At that time, Long Yu was swept away by the tail of that giant poisonous snake and the blood that sprayed out of Long Yu's body had scattered over the Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear and immediately activated the spirit martial skill of Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear!

Immediately, an incomparably aggressive breath spread out of the Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear.

"Zhentian world influence! Lamella touch!"

Long Yu instantaneously integrated the terrifying suppression of Zhentian world influence on the spear tip which was sending out the horrifying Dragon qi. He instantaneously stabbed the black stature of that giant poisonous snake!

Hiss, hiss, hiss!

The whole body of that giant poisonous snake was about to reach Elder Yu, but it didn't expect that sweeping of its tail towards Long Yu would cost its life.

Moreover, Long Yu displayed a surprisingly stronger spear attack and this attack was almost two times more powerful than the earlier numerous spear shadow attack. Numerous spears instantaneously penetrated into the entire stature of that giant poisonous snake!

Its painful roars could be heard from far and its huge jet black stature was sent flying back by the powerful bang of Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear. Its huge body fell on the shore smashing a pile of rocks!

Long Yu stood there grasping his Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear in his hand. His body was shrouded in the faint black light of Nine Hidden Dragon qi. It seemed as if he was a messenger who had come from the hell itself!

But his blood stained lips clearly showed that he was seriously injured!

"Boy, hurry up and cut open the body of that snake and take its neidan. It is not only able to detoxify powerful toxins but is also a way to raise your cultivation to the next level!"

Elder Yu's anxious voice came from behind!

Chapter 80 Zhenling Imprinting

Long Yu heard Elder Yu's words and quickly responded.

Every monster beast would have a neidan and in its nature this neidan was somewhat similar to a Dantian of a Wudao master and this Dantian was actually considered as the store house of all the forces of the beast.

But the cultivation of a beast and a martial artist was quite different.

A Wudao martial artist could store up his Ling qi in his Dantian and by using this Ling qi he could release his Xuan qi to circulate into his body meridians and thus by using this Xuan qi he could display his different types of martial skills, but in any case, he couldn't be able to absorb and store up his Xuan qi in his Dantian, because whenever he would try to do so, his Dantian would produce a strong rejection.

However, a beast could absorb its mysterious qi, called "Yao qi" in its neidan!

As a beast could absorb its Reiki and Yao qi in its neidan and if a martial artist got its neidan then he could be able to absorb its Yao qi to enhance his martial realm.

{Note: Mystique— " Reiki" of a beast is same as "Ling qi" of a Wudao master, and " Yao qi" of a beast is same as " Xuan qi" of a Wudao master.}

Of course, with the death of the beast there would be a gradual erosion of its Yao qi with the passage of time, more time would elapse after its death more

would be the loss of its Yao qi.

So, the best time to get its neidan was that while killing the beast take out its neidan as soon as possible to gain more Yao qi to upgrade the level of martial skill.

As Long Yu listened to Elder Yu's words, he immediately rushed towards the snake and in no time he was just three steps away of the dead body of that giant poisonous snake.

The gigantic body of that poisonous snake was almost cut into two halves by the powerful spear hit of Long Yu and from this scene it was really visible that how terrible was the force of the Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear integrated with lamella touch!

“Neidan is in its belly position, well, first I cut open its body to get its neidan.....”

And soon, Long Yu's heart was rejoiced to see the neidan of that snake.

Soon, the warm neidan of that poisonous snake was taken out by Long Yu. At that time, it was exuding a strange smell. Besides Yao qi it also contained a non-absorbed divine and wonderful Reiki!

“This huge poisonous snake, had been eating a different type of grass, it could congeal Zhenling”

Transmitting the sound of his footsteps Elder Yu gradually came to Long Yu from behind: “The divine and wonderful Reiki of this different grass had not been

completely absorbed by it, but it is now in your hand boy, you should be able to promote yourself successfully with its help!”

“Elder Yu, do you know, what type of this grass Zhenling actually is?”

Long Yu asked Elder Yu loudly.

“I don’t know, have not seen such a strange and rare grass, but don’t worry, you can swallow it, it should not cause any harm to you.”

Elder Yu said.

“Um.”

Long Yu nodded his head, but did not say anything to Elder Yu and just holding the neidan of that poisonous snake in his hand he ran to the side of the woods and found a hidden safe place to sit cross-legged to begin its absorption.

He chew the neidan, and then Xuan qi began to revolve in his body meridians and he began to absorb the divine and wonderful Yao qi and Reiki of that giant poisonous snake.

At the same time, he activated Nine Hidden Dragon Mark to store up the snake’s Reiki and Yao qi in it, because he directly could not absorb them, plus, long before, he already had stored up the immortality pill that he had received as reward in Nine Hidden Dragon Mark, and now it was just appropriate time for him to absorb them to step into Wudao ninth layer!

“It’s strange, I feel the strength of grass Zhenling”

Long Yu was absorbing the Yao qi and Reiki, while frowning.

He felt that the power of grass Zhenling was passing from the neidan of the snake to his body!

The effect of this power of grass Zhenling was just like moving in the swamp in general, and if released, the opposite party would feel himself entangled in a swamp and would find it very difficult to move.

This was similar to the effect of suppression principle, but actually differed from it because world influence actually suppressed, but this grass Zhenling actually entangled to fall, and if it could be utilized properly it could play a unique role in the face of enemies.

“Regardless of this, first I must step into Wudao ninth layer, it is the most important for me at present!”

Long Yu put aside these thoughts, and began to circulate Xuan qi in his whole body meridians and was now ready to break through the first checkpoint of his day arteries.

Day arteries of a human body were actually linked with the world principles, and could feel the presence of world principles, and these day arteries had actually four checkpoints.

When broke through to the first checkpoint a Wudao master could be able to step into Wudao ninth later and then by releasing his Xuan qi, he could be able

to induce to the existence of world principle initially.

With more break through to other checkpoints the induction to the existence of the world principle would be more intense.

At Wudao ninth layer, a Wudao master could maintain a point of contact with the principle of world, while at Wudao eight layer, he could only associate with the world principle.

If a Wudao master broke through to the third checkpoint then he would step into a heavy Wudao ninth layer and then the day arteries could make contact with the surface of the world and it would be the peak level of Wudao ninth layer!

And after breaking through to the last checkpoint, one could be able to establish complete connectivity with the principle of the world, and could be able to congeal Zhenling empowering him to borrow more powers from heaven and earth!

Long Yu began to absorb the neidan, while to the side, Elder Yu protected him, while conveniently also taking rest.

This Elder Yu was injured due to poisoning. Although, he had just regained consciousness and when he saw that Long Yu was in danger while facing that giant poisonous snake, then he fought with all his might using his rich experience and information!

At this time, he wore a black robe, and sat in repose with his eyes closed.

Suddenly, he felt a slight movement that came not far away from him, making him to open his eyes suddenly.

“So it is the two old acquaintances!”

Elder Yu’s eyes twinkled, but he didn’t act rashly.

Although, he didn’t know any reason, but that neidan in Long Yu’s hand didn’t exude even a slightest Yao qi and Reiki.

At this time, Long Yu was hiding in the bushes and it was almost impossible to attract the attention of others!

As body meridian and Dantian of Elder Yu were damaged, so he was less likely to be noticed by anyone!

At this moment, these two persons were slowly moving towards the edge of the river, where the corpse of that giant poisonous snake was lying down in the water.

Soon, these two powerful figures, almost simultaneously arrived near the corpse of that giant poisonous snake!

One of them, a black face with a stout but short figure as a whole similar to coal briquette, was Elder Wu Jianxin of Zhentian Sect!

Another man was dressed in black robe and hat, and from his appearance, Elder Yu could only see that he was very tall, but he couldn’t see who this person

was.

But, from his breath, Elder Yu clearly knew the identity of that man!

“Wu Jianxin, really intriguing with Wu Li unexpectedly!”

Elder Yu felt their breaths, and quietly observed the scene to the one side, and secretly began to resort to the method in case of any confrontation.

“Brother Wu, how are the things, did you find the trace of Elder Yu?”

“I have yet not found him, but he has no place to escape, the entire Zhentian Sect is looking for his trace.”

“That’s good, in the depth of this Teng snake abyss , I have been collecting these three medicinal herbs, and I calculate, according to the stipulated time, the other disciples of Knife Cut Sect will collect most of these herbs, and Elder Yu wouldn’t be able to see the sun of the seventh day absolutely!”

“But, at present this giant poisonous snake”

Wu Jianxin seemed puzzled, and looked at the dead body of that giant poisonous snake.

“This giant poisonous snake seemed to be killed by a sudden hit of a powerful battle weapon. One disciple above Zhenling realm from Cut Knife Sect has been sent to this forest to collect blossomless Yu Gan flowers, and after collecting them, he would have returned in time, this giant poisonous snake seemed to be

killed by him.”

Saying these words, Wu Li became relaxed, and again said: “ Well, at present I will not leave the forest, I must see the old Elder Yu dead with my own eyes, ha, ha, ha.....”

They actually thought that Elder Yu was injured to display any power, and depending on the current strength of Long Yu, it was not possible for him to kill that giant poisonous snake!

Therefore, they had not the slightest doubt regarding this matter.

After having a little exchange for a while, they left from the place, and Elder Yu heaved a sigh of relief.

“Fortunately, this little guy Long Yu’s martial realm is too low, so it will not make people doubt, and if they had found their trail, then also, it would have been impossible for them to run away from the place, but now.....” .

Elder Yu’s eyes flickered.

He clenched his right hand which had a Zhenling imprinting, and the scene and the dialogues between Wu Jianxin and Wu Li were recorded on his palm!

When he would return to the Sect, he would expose Wu Jianxin’s evil deeds to all!

It was actually Zhenling imprinting, and a Wudao master of above Zhenling

mystical realm could display a small part of Zhenling to capture the current scene, and it could be imprinted down, including picture, sound, etc, and could also be stored down.

Whenever there would be need, he could be able to reproduce the scene to everyone to see!

The whole scene of the meeting and dialogues of Wu Jianxin with Li Wu Jianxin were recorded down by Elder Yu on his palm!

By this time, the absorbing of the neidan of that giant poisonous snake by Long Yu had reached a critical point.

“Day arteries, the third checkpoint, give me a break!”

Nine Hidden Dragon Mark stored up the rich divine and wonderful Yao qi and Reiki of that snake, and at that time, it seemed that mighty waves of this Yao qi and Reiki were constantly impacting on the third checkpoint of the day artery and finally it started to vacillate.

One!

Two!

Three!

The rich Yao qi and Reiki were continuously causing impact on the day artery and were changing into Xuan qi and was becoming Long Yu’s own strength.

“Broken!”

Finally, Long Yu shouted loudly, and the clogged day arteries of his body finally broke through!

With the break through to the third checkpoint, he suddenly felt that now he could establish much more enhanced connection with the principles of the world. Now, only one checkpoint was left.

If he broke to the last checkpoint, then he could be able to congeal Zhenling, but the stored up Reiki in Nine Hidden Dragon Mark was not sufficient enough for it.

He wanted to empower himself with the congealment of Zhenling, but the required amount of Reiki was more than what he had spent hitherto for breaking through to the third checkpoint, and in addition to the need of Reiki, the more important was the talent and perception.

If there would be lack of talent and understanding, then one couldn't be able to congeal Zhenling even in one's lifetime, for example, the Tan clan head, who was killed by Long Yu, couldn't be able to condense Zhenling.

“Finally Wudao ninth heavy layer, the effect of the absorption of the Reiki and Yao qi of that giant poisonous snake is really good, it is even equivalent to the effect of ten top grade immortality pills!”

Long Yu opened his eyes, and at that time, his eyes reflected a confident look.

With the stepping into Wudao ninth layer, his power base was raised to nearly the strength of 300 boisterous horses.

Now, If he displayed his heavy spear shadow or lamella touch, then he could be able to release the force more than the strength of 2000 boisterous horses!

Now, with his current strength, it could be said that he could face a first layer powerhouse of Zhenling realm with some confidence.

The disparity of basic force was reduced, and now Long Yu's battle efficiency was stronger than before from many angles!

Chapter 81 Twin moods

Now Long Yu had stepped into Wudao ninth layer increasing his power base.

Not only that, after taking the dose of the neidan of that poisonous snake he was completely relieved from the wound that he sustained by the swept of the tail of that poisonous snake and now he didn't have any sequel shape.

“However, I have been able only to comprehend a little bit of the strange strength the Yao qi of the snake and if I get some of its consolidation then I can be able to display Zhentian world influence directly.”

Long Yu thought to himself and finally stood up.

While he was engaged in the process of stepping into Wudao ninth layer he had felt the presence of two people not very far away from him, but these two people didn't actually come close to him.

But now, he was somewhat curious to know who those two people really were?

He walked out of the bushes and saw Elder Yu in black robe sitting in a cross-legged position.

“Little boy, you may come out, and you have really not disappointed me, finally stepped into Wudao ninth layer!”

Long Yu heard the words of Elder Yu, and Elder Yu opened his eyes, and in his eyes there was praise for Long Yu!

“Thanks to Elder Yu, it is because of your help that I could kill that giant poisonous snake, otherwise, I would have been buried in its belly and would have become a fine food for that poisonous snake.”

Long Yu said with a smile.

“Well, prior to it, on other occasions also, I have been always with you?”

Elder Yu Shuiyun smiled and asked: “Before I went into comatose, I could vaguely see the old black, and about the rest of thing I don’t know anything, why Wu Jianxin is eyeing at you, why the people of Zhentian Sect are looking for our trace?”

Long Yu heard Elder Yu’s these words with cold heart.

How did Elder Yu come to know that Wu Jianxin was eyeing at him?

It seemed that those two men who had just come close, had certainly said something that made Elder Yu to roughly know the current situation!

Then, Long Yu put the things before him from the beginning.

Of course, Long Yu omitted the matter related to Feng clan and he began from his visit to Elder Yu and let Elder Yu know the general situation.

“So, Li Wu and Wu Jianxin, they are really audacious, and they want to kill me in the Elder pavilion!”

Elder Yu listened to Long Yu and flickered his eyes: “ Well, little guy, this old man also wants to thank you for saving my life. However, now I want to return to the Sect so that Wu Jianxin and Li Wu should not escape from Zhentian Sect!”

“Elder Yu, the toxin in your body has yet not been detoxified, are you sure to deal with them?”

Long Yu was somewhat surprised.

“Ha ha, I have just imprinted the meeting scene of these two men by using Zhenling imprinting, but this Zhenling imprinting can only be displayed once, so I will display it at the crucial moment, and when put out, I believe, I can make the sovereign Baiyun Zong ready to take action against them.”

Elder Yu confidently said.

Baiyun Zong, the sovereign?

Long Yu scowled, to make Baiyun Zong ready to take action against them?

But, then he was relieved to think that when Baiyun Zong would come to know all these things then as the sovereign of Zhentian Sect he would definitely not sit idle on this matter!

“Um, now what should I do?”

Long Yu inquired.

Since Elder Yu had convincing evidence, so Long Yu now didn't need to hide, sooner he would make his appearance would be better to subdue the secret murderer. Moreover, the toxin might erupt at any time in Elder Yu's body, and if anything wrong happened to the life of Elder Yu, then the matter would not go smoothly and it would be very difficult for Long Yu to prove his innocence.

"Now, go back to Zhentian Sect, I'd like to see Wu Jianxin, who is engaged in such evil deeds, what face he has to be treated as Zhentian elder."

Elder Yu flung his sleeve gown, and turned around and walked towards the direction of Zhentian Sect.

Long Yu followed him closely: "Elder Yu, you couldn't display martial skill, let me come in front of you."

With these words, his whole body became light like breeze, and he quickly came in front of Elder Yu, and began to lead the way.

Elder Yu saw this and was incomparably satisfied with Long Yu, his eyes shone with his praise, such had the big talent and big chance, a young man of firm determination, future achievements would definitely be in his hands!

"Elder Yu, be careful!"

Long Yu, moving fast through the forest, quickly perceived the transmission of

certain kind of sound in front of him and suddenly he became alert and vigilant of the situation.

“From the breath, it seems to be a disciple of Knife Cut Sect, a Zhenling realm powerhouse of first layer!”

Elder Yu narrowed his eyes and quickly gathered much more information than Long Yu.

Because of the ability to congeal Zhenling, a Wudao master of Zhenling realm could perceive the presence of enemy with much stronger intensity than an ordinary martial artist and even he could feel the movements of the creatures in the forest also!

So, naturally Elder Yu felt the presence of the opposite party and the opposite party being a Zhenling powerhouse also felt the presence of Elder Yu and Long Yu!

The next moment, an imposing knife light came from the forest side and rushed towards Long Yu!

“Zhentian spear tactic!”

Long Yu was already alert. He immediately picked up his Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear and released the terrific suppression of Zhentian world influence and by its incomparable power and influence shattered the imposing knife light released by the opposite party.

“You have really displayed good marksmanship!”

A laughter was heard coming from the forest side followed by a loud shouting:
“Want to face bury soul life Liu Ye, you will have only a dead end!”

Bury soul knife Liu Ye!

With a little knowledge of Knife Cut Sect, it could be easily known that this Liu Ye was a 5th ranked core disciple of Knife Cut Sect and six months ago he had stepped into Zhenling realm!

His practiced ‘bury soul life,’ a super grade martial skill of Knife Cut Sect and could display power that would alarm and horrify the people!

Simply after hearing the name of bury soul knife Liu Ye, the other disciples of Zhentian Sect under Zhenling realm would be too scared to go to fight with him.

However, Long Yu did not know what type of power this bury soul knife Liu Yexie actually had!

He didn’t fear anyone and turned his head towards Elder Yu and said loudly:
“Elder Yu, let me alone deal with him.”

Elder Yu was surprised to hear these words of Long Yu: “You are just at Wudao ninth layer, how could you confront a powerhouse of Zhenling realm, his strength is also very scary?”

“Elder Yu, believe me!”

Long Yu shouted loudly. His body became light like breeze and grasping the Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear he galloped away towards the sound of the opposite party aiming the spear point at him!

Elder Yu nodded secretly. He was much impressed by the courage that Long Yu showed at that time!

“If you will be any trouble, I’ll help you again!”

Elder Yu thought to himself. He gave up to take any initiative and agreed to the intention of Long Yu.

Meanwhile, Long Yu instantly condensed the Zhentian world influence and holding the Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear rushed towards the incoming sound of the opposite party and swept the spear, but his hit went empty as the opposite party was not present at that distant place.

Not only that, even the Zhentian world influence released by him didn’t suppress anyone.

“Ha, ha, your speed is too slow!”

Bury soul knife Liu Ye’s arrogant laughter came from the other direction:

“Startled great wild goose three knives”

It was very easy to deal with a mere Wudao ninth layer Wudao master. Moreover, this was the guy Elder Wu Li of the Knife Cut Sect was looking for!

He thought that it would be a great contribution to his sect from his side if he would kill Long Yu and capture Elder Yu who was now not in a condition to display any martial skill.

And if he did so then he would definitely get good reward from his sect!

“Although, the skill of startled great wild goose three knives is similar to other knife light skill, but it is of the perfection level with fast speed!”

Long Yu thought coldly in his heart. He looked back and saw that three knife lights were rushing towards him at tremendous speed from the forest side!

An important feature of this startled great wild goose three knives martial skill was its terrific speed!

However, the most important feature of this martial skill was that these three knives could kill three persons simultaneously!

“Spear shade numerous, give me break!”

Keeping his Nine Hidden Qian Dragon horizontally Long Yu immediately condensed the world influence at its tip and swept away numerous spear shadows which instantaneously clashed with startled great wild goose three knives in the mid air.

Bang!

After a loud sound, knife light and spear shadows dissipated.

However, Long Yu had no time to rest and soon he felt a powerful world influence dropping from the sky and found himself completely enveloped by its suppression.

“This is the world influence of the core law of knife Cut Sect!”

Long Yu’s mind was extremely alert and he was quite vigilant of the situation. At that time he suddenly felt that someone moved very fast nearby, but he couldn’t see his physique!

“It is the repression of the world influence of the core law of Knife Cut Sect!”

Elder Yu saw it and loudly said to remind him in one side: “Fast speed is the main feature of this world influence of knife Cut Sect and in general strength, it is equal to Zhentian world influence!”

If Long Yu had been on the same level as the opposite party in his strength, then he would have suppressed the world influence of the other side, and thus both could offset each other’s world influence.

But now, Long Yu was only at Wudao ninth layer and that bury soul knife Liu Ye was Zhenling realm master!

The gap of basic power between them was big, so Long Yu’s Zhentian world influence couldn’t suppress the world influence of Knife Cut Sect, it could only slightly weaken the speed of the opposite party.

Thus, Long Yu simply couldn't keep up with the speed of the opposite party.

The speed became an important factor in this fight and increased the possibility of ultimate failure on the part of Long Yu!

"Speed, I must surmount, this is the most important factor to control the rhythm in this fight!"

Long Yu's eyes shone brightly: "Since I can't increase my speed, then I will think about how to make you slow down!"

Shortly before he had absorbed the Yao qi of that giant poisonous snake and as Long Yu moved his intention his Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear stormed out the grass Zhenling of that giant poisonous snake.

"Fall into the feeling of moving in the swamp, perhaps you will not feel better, make you also taste it!"

Long Yu swept away his spear and the strength that the strange grass contained suddenly bloomed and spread in all directions!

In the next moment, the periphery of Long Yu as if turned into a swamp in general, the air circulation became slow and the wind was completely stagnated in this piece of space!

"Unexpectedly, it is turned out to be twin moods!"

Elder Yu felt the situation in the field, and was immediately shocked at the scene, then closed his mouth and thought in his heart: “He has just swallowed that strange grass of the snake !”

Twin moods!

If a martial artist could comprehend twin moods, because of the combined strength, could it produce a big power?

Elder Yu didn’t know exactly about it because he had not seen personally rather he just heard that a Wudao master capable of comprehending twin moods would be like god-given wisdom!

“This boy, comprehended twin moods because of his swallowing of that strange grass, I am really proud of him!”

Elder Yu expressed his innermost feeling!

“Twin moods? The strength of that strange grass and the strength of the Zhentian world influence?”

Long Yu’s eyes shone brightly: “So, I will call it dry marsh mood!”

Dry marsh mood spread and the periphery space in front of Long Yu changed completely into a swamp. Because of the obstruction created by the swamp the fast speed of Liu Ye suddenly dropped down to the extent where Long Yu could catch him.

“What strength is this?”

Bury soul knife Liu Ye, dressed in black and wearing a black hat with a black handle knife in his hand felt that he was entangled in a swamp and suddenly his complexion changed.

But then, he immediately congealed a break knife ghost behind him.

“This boy is a little strange, I display knife cut to work, now lets see what more can you show?”

Burial soul knife Liu Ye shouted loudly and killing intention broke out in his whole body: “Bury soul knife, knife bury soul, you are dead.”

Chapter 82 Power of the enemy Zhenling

Long Yu released his twin moods, the Zhentian mood and the dry marsh mood, the former repressed while the latter entangled to fall and put together they counter balanced the suppression of Liu Ye!

Then, Liu Ye's knife cut Zhenling reappeared and swept out a terrific coercion!

Liu Ye's this Knife Cut Zhenling actually was of a high level and as he displayed his knife bury soul skill a confused knife light flashed in all directions and enveloped Long Yu completely!

Each knife light contained almost a suffocating soul burying breath, as if it would bury the human soul thoroughly!

"Numerous spear shades!"

Facing the knife light from all directions, there was actually no way for Long Yu's defense.

However, he immediately waved his Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear over the top of his head and suddenly numerous spear shades wrapped with world influence emerged and rushed towards the knife light!

Numerous spear shades emerged and their crazy fierce force drove out the knife light from the top of his head!

“Nine Hidden Dragon Spear, prance!”

Then, Long Yu’s spear danced and an air current curled up and rolled up the whole stature of Long Yu high into the sky!

Bam! Bam!

As Long Yu’s whole stature was rolled up very high into the sky, these numerous bury the soul knife lights suddenly lost their target and collided with each other resulting into an eruption of a terrific burying soul breath in the atmosphere, making the trim forest lost its vitality instantaneously.

“Um? ”

Liu Ye saw it and scowled. Then, he immediately displayed his another martial skill, and a ghost shadow emerged instantly behind him. At that time, the whole stature of Liu Ye actually looked like a ghost.

“Give me a break!”

At this moment, Long Yu shot his Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear from the top of the sky towards the ground and a terrific suppression released from the tip of the spear and instantly shrouded Liu Ye completely.

“Naive!”

Liu Ye sneered and waved his knife Cut Zhenling ghost shadow behind him and suddenly this ghost shadow came forward and rushed towards Long Yu in the

sky at a tremendous speed!

The next moment, there was a heavy crashing!

The powerful force of that knife Cut Zhenling ghost shadow collided with Long Yu's suppression of world influence and it not only exploded his suppression of the world influence but also resisted the spear that he had swept down from the sky, and then an intense burying soul breath proliferated and lifted the whole stature of Long Yu to fly towards the distant!

Bang!

Long Yu heavily fell on the ground knocking down two towering trees. He immediately emitted blood and it seemed that his injuries were not light!

"Ha ha, a trivial Wudao ninth layer only, dares to face my Knife Cut Zhenling, really brings about his own destruction!"

Burial soul knife Liu Ye laughed and grasping his black handle knife he moved his footsteps and suddenly rushed towards Long Yu.

However, he didn't see that there was a meaningful smile on the face of long Yu.

" My blood, finally contaminated the Nine Hidden Dragon Spear!"

Long Yu grasped the spear and standing up reluctantly condensed Dragon qi on the spear point inatantaneously!

“Dragon spirit skill,, lamella touch!”

Dragon spirit skill, even a touch can kill!”

When Long Yu would be injured and if the Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear would be contaminated with his blood, then it could show the spirit skill, the Lamella touch!

When grasping a black handle knife and congealing his knife light Zhenling Liu Te had rushed towards Long Yu, then the whole stature of Long Yu flashed swiftly not to evade this attack, instead he shot his Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear that seemed to be whooshing at that time!

Thus, his spear rushed out. At that time, Long Yu’s heart beat and Nine Hidden Dragon Spear completely agreed with each other and their conjunction reached to such a level that Long Yu could show the terrific power of the spirit skill of the Nine Hidden Dragon Spear, only thing needed was his intention to move!

Whooshing of Nine Hidden Dragon Spear seemed to spread to Long Yu’s ears enabling him as if to unify together with Nine Hidden Dragon Spear.

I would be the spear, the spear would be me!

Suddenly, Nine Hidden Dragon qi erupted from the tips of the numerous spear shades.

When Liu Ye wasted 50% of his time, then he actually realized that he missed

something. He had actually rushed towards Long Yu with his black handle knife, but now, he hastily stopped his footsteps because he actually now wanted to shunt the attack of Long Yu, but he was too late.

Due to Lamella contact, the speed of the Dragon qi was extremely fast, faster than Liu Ye's knife cut light!

Then, the Nine Hidden Dragon qi filled the space everywhere and virtually changed this region into an intoxicated hell!

And the spear shot by Long Yu rushed towards Liu Ye as if the god of death extended his both hands towards him!

“Imperial round dance knife skill!”

At this crucial moment, Liu Ye hastily displayed his defense type martial skill and a thin-bladed knife light barrier immediately appeared in front of him!

Bam!

The spear point had yet not arrived, but because of its tremendous speed the Dragon qi reached earlier and shattered the thin-bladed knife light layer, followed by the rushing of the spear towards Liu Yexie.

“Zhenling”

Liu Ye shouted loudly and immediately waved his hand and threw a knife towards Nine Hidden Dragon spear to cut it down!

Bang!

With a bang, there was a terrible burst of smoke and dust in the surrounding area. The air was filled with these smoke and dust and the power of Long Yu's Nine Hidden dragon spear was cut down by the Knife Cut Zhenling so forcefully that the entire area was suddenly shaken up and Long Yu almost couldn't hold the spear in his hand and let it go off!

The blasting power of the spirit martial of the spear, lamella touch, that had instantly spread, was also stopped by that Knife Cut Zhenling!

"Ahem!"

The whole stature of Liu Ye was forced to draw back more than 100 feet. .

Although, he resisted Long Yu's this move of Lamella touch, but internally he was very upset because he felt that this time his Knife Cut Zhenling showed the sign of collapsing!

Zhenling was not invincible and if it continued to be used for a long time attack, then it would show the sign of collapsing but after taking some rest, the Xuan qi would be restored and then a martial artist could condense it once more.

Of course, the collapse of the power of Zhenling of a martial artist didn't mean that he would fall down from the level of Zhenling realm, but it could be said that temporarily he couldn't be able to use it.

After taking some rest, naturally he could be able to condense it once more, but now the time required for the rest was long for Liu Ye.

“I can’t think that your martial art of ninth layer can destroy my Zhenling to such an extent unexpectedly.....”

Liu Ye’s voice came: “I admit that I looked down on you! However, now, I want to see that what martial skill do you have against my knife bury soul?”

The battle weapon of Knife Cut Sect in his hand immediately erupted bury the soul breath and rushed towards Long Yu and scattered his Dragon qi unexpectedly.

Liu Ye’s this knife bury soul martial skill was a super grade martial skill of complete boundary and its absolute power was beyond the imagination of Long Yu.

If Liu Ye had actually displayed his this bury soul martial skill with all its might, then Long Yu really couldn’t resist it!

However, Long Yu didn’t wait for Liu Ye to display this knife bury soul martial skill, and swiftly he first launched his attack.

“Nine Hidden Dragon fist, Nine Hidden Dragon qi, the intoxicated hell, frighten the will of the people!”

Long Yu actually abandoned his spear and like a storm rushed towards Liu Ye on his foot and his Dragon fist fired Dragon qi that rushed towards Liu Ye and enveloped him completely!

As Long Yu stepped into Wudao ninth layer, so the deterrent effect of his Dragon qi was somewhat stronger than before in the face of the power of a Zhenling realm master.

When he fired Dragon qi at Wang Tianzhuo in Yu Guan city, the he was able to wake up after a short time.

But, now the Dragon qi that Long Yu released enveloped Liu Ye so violently that he immediately lost his consciousness and was unable to wake up even after the passage of short time!

Liu Ye couldn't cast his knife bury soul and Long Yu's fist first blasted!

Bam!

Although Liu Ye was deterred by the force of Dragon Xuan qi, but his knife cut Zhenling was actually working behind him and rushed towards Long Yu to resist his Dragon fist.

"Boils to me!"

Long Yu pounded his fist and actually hit at the top of Knife Cut Zhenling of Liu Ye!

A loud bang took place and this Knife Cut Zhenling was shattered by the Long Yu's powerful fist hit, and furthermore, his fist continued to go towards Liu Ye's chest!

If Liu Ye had not been deterred by Long Yu's Dragon qi and if he had taken the initiative in attacking first, then Long Yu absolutely would have been unable to break the defense of knife cut Zhenling of Liu Ye.

Now, however, Liu Ye lost his consciousness, and his knife cut Zhenling became extremely fragile, so it was suddenly broken up by Long Yu, and in its force, it was similar to Wang Tianzhuo's Tiger Zhenling, broken by Long Yu at that time.

If a martial artist faced the collapse of his Zhenling again and again, then he would require a long time to recover to be able to display it again.

However, if the other party was absent-minded and meanwhile his Zhenling was broken, then once he would awake, he could instantly re-unite the power of Zhenling.

Therefore, this opportunity was extremely rare for Long Yu!

"Nine Hidden Dragon Fist, break!"

Long Yu seemed to become a messenger who came from the intoxicated hell, and at that time, his fist carrying the tyrannical Dragon qi suddenly rumbled on the chest of Liu Ye!

Bang!

Liu Ye was hit to fly by this direct fist hit of Long Yu and heavily hit on the old tree and smashed its thick trunk.

However, this fist hit generated a powerful counter-shaking and Long Yu was unexpectedly pushed several feet back making his complexion slightly changed.

“Has he put on defensive battle weapon?”

Long Yu secretly guessed. The fist that he blasted actually hit above a gold and iron defense armor and perhaps didn't cause a big damage to Liu Ye.

Instead, Long Yu received a strong counter-shaking by his gold and iron armor and his internal organs were churned.

Soon, wearing a black robe the stature of Liu Ye slowly stood up from the ground and as Dragon Xuan qi had shattered the cloth of his robe near his chest area, so his gold and iron defensive armor was exposed clearly.

“Ha ha!”

Liu Ye sneered: “ I have to say, your strength is really beyond my expectations. You couldn't be able to breakthrough my defense, and now, you will die under my bury soul knife finally!”

“Really? Well, then, you again taste this fist!”

Long Yu stepped forward and activated his Nine Hidden Dragon Mark completely, and it seemed as if his whole body immersed in the Nine Hidden Dragon intoxicated hell.

His both eyes were shining brightly and the pair of his pupils resembled with the intoxicated hell making his look to shudder anybody.

“Nine Hidden Dragon Fist, the intoxicated hell, has reached the perfection level!”

After stepping into heavy Wudao ninth layer, Long Yu’s understanding of martial skill had reached to the next level, and he used his this skill with his Dragon fist, and the intoxicated hell martial technique just broke through the perfection level.

Breakthrough of the intoxicated hell martial skill to the perfection level and now, it was to be seen that what terrific force it would release?

He clenched his right fist and Dragon qi immediately condensed on his body.

Step by step, Long Yu walked towards Liu Ye.

“Wants to come with such a fist again? Unfortunately, I have protection against it, is impossible to be frightened by you again!”

Liu Ye sneered, and said: “After your death, I will surely study well about your this strength, now, death.”

“Then, give a try to it!”

Long Yu said without any expression and staring at Liu Ye, he clenched his right fist and turned around and fired a punch towards the ground!

With the punching of this fist, the Nine Hidden Dragon qi instantly enveloped the whole body of Liu Ye, making him to have a bad feeling.

However, he did not mind too much.

Shadowboxing towards the ground boxing?

Burial soul knife Liu Ye sneered. His Knife Cut Zhenling continued to emerge and there was Zhenling working behind him and for any attack he was in an impregnable position.

What's more, his burial knife soul was not a vegetarian!

Bang!

Long Yu condensed his Nine Hidden Dragon fist with Dragon qi and suddenly hit the ground so fiercely that the whole area around here felt a big jolt!

Chapter 83 Burst of Nine Hidden Dragon qi

When Long Yu's fist hit the ground, the shocking waves emerged out of the ground and jolted the whole body of Liu Ye.

"What happened?"

Liu Ye's heart became restless. He was getting more and more intense, however, he actually couldn't understand clearly from where did this restlessness actually come ?

Long Yu actually punched the ground, but he couldn't understand that what force was really passed over through the ground.

Of course, Liu Ye was nervous and at that time he immediately wanted to jump to avoid this unknown crisis, but he was too late to show his response.

In no time the condensed Dragon qi exploded under the foot of Liu Ye and suddenly enveloped his whole stature!

The exploded Dragon qi was similar to the jet black rock magma column of flame!

Jet black, strange and gloomy Nine Hidden Dragon qi swallowed the entire black robed stature of Liu Ye and even the knife cut empty shadow behind him was also completely engulfed into it.

The burst of this Dragon qi seemed quiet without generating any special sound, one could only hear the screams of Liu Ye making the people know that Liu Yexie was experiencing severe pain at that time!

“The first technique of Nine Hidden Dragon Fist, the intoxicated hell, if this technique was practiced to the perfection level, then a fist hit to the ground can connect the intoxicated hell to initiate the burst of Nine Hidden Dragon qi quietly!”

Long Yu standing nearby quietly watched Liu Yexie swallowed by the burst of the Nine Hidden Dragon qi.

The power generated by the burst of Nine Hidden Dragon qi was so terrific that Liu Ye couldn't be able to resist it.

Liu Ye's screams soon became from strong to weak until it completely disappeared.

And then, the Nine Hidden Dragon qi gushing out of the intoxicated hell soon dissipated in the air.

Long Yu looked at the scene and saw that the whole stature of Liu Ye was shrouded by the Nine Hidden Dragon qi and this Dragon qi had completely eroded the whole body of Liu Ye in such a way that it had turned into a dry corpse, as if his whole blood was drained off his body!

“This Nine Hidden Dragon qi is really scary, its exploding and cohesive power is ten times more than an ordinary fist, it can erode a person's body unexpectedly similar to a dry corpse.....”

Long Yu saw this death, and somewhat he was himself afraid of it. He had seen many deaths in his life, but at this moment he saw such a horrible way to die and that also by his own making.

This made his heart a little bit of bad feeling.

If not necessary, he wouldn't use this martial skill in future as far as possible.

“Nine Hidden Dragon Fist, Nine Hidden Dragon Mark.....what kind of existence actually do you have? Imperial concubine Yu, what do you want by engraving Nine Hidden Dragon Mark on my chest?”

Long Yu's heart was puzzled, but he was confident that he could eventually be able to unlock this puzzle only by moving ahead along the way of Wudao!

“Young boy, you have really defeated a master of Zhenling realm, your talent is beyond my imagination!”

Elder Yu Shuiyun's surprised voice passed over from one side.

Long Yu was pulled back to reality by this voice and scowled and then immediately ran 32 steps to reach to the dried corpse of Liu Yexie, and quickly opened his black robe.

A dried flower appeared to his eyes. It was actually Yu Gunhua flower and he actually wanted to spend it on Elder Yu, but it had been completely corroded by the exploding Nine Hidden Dragon qi!

Unfortunately, the Nine Hidden Dragon qi had corroded this Yu Gunhua flower, and it didn't have any curative effect, so it was useless to give it to Elder Yu to take it.

“Elder Yu, unfortunately this Yu Gunhua flower has been corroded by.....”

Long Yu's complexion sank.

“No harm, and now we must do, just hurry back to Zhentian Sect, find the sovereign, tell everything to him.”

Elder Yu Shuiyun was actually self-poised, he didn't care for the corrosion of the Gunhua flower.

Even now, his meridians and Dantian were highly toxic but he didn't worry, rather he showed tremendous confidence to go to have a dialogue with the Sovereign!

“Um.”

Long Yu also knew that delaying the matter wouldn't be good for him, so he couldn't delay here for a long time.

Before leaving, he turned out the black hat of Liu Ye and finally saw his face and found that in his physical features Liu Ye resembled with Liu Mingxuan and Liu Mingcheng.

“Really is a person of Liu family.”

Long Yu knew fairly well.

Imperial Liu family seemed to have a good influence in Tang State and its persons were in Hanbing Sect and Knife Cut Sect, and not only that, this Liu family was one of the important four families of Tang State.

Then, Long Yu quickly stood up and immediately came in front of Elder Yu and swiftly moved towards the direction of Zhentian Sect.

“I know that some of the disciples of Zhentian Sect are looking for my trail in this Teng snake abyss, and if I encountered them and if they dared to stop me, I will kill them!”

Long Yu firmly grasped his Nine Dragon Spear. At that time, his eyes were shining brightly.

Now, he seized every second and minute. Even the disciples of Zhentian Sect couldn't be able to stop him as the matter was related to the life of Elder Yu!

Even, if the sovereign, Baiyun Zong would come to know about the facts then he would definitely not blame Long Yu, as some of the disciples of Zhentian Sect blamed him because they were ignorant of the facts.

Moreover, Long Yu wouldn't give any opportunity to the opposite party, so long as the opposite party was obedient to make way.

He believed, when discerning persons would see Elder Yu in an awoken state with him, wouldn't they probably understand what was the matter?

Soon, Long Yu took Elder Yu to the place from where Zhentian Sect was only dozens of miles away.

Here, the area was very far from the deep of Teng snake abyss, so there was no chance of the appearing of the disciples of Knife Cut Sect in such shallow area of the forest.

Long Yu just jumped one step over a stone and suddenly heard the sounds of the footsteps of some people coming towards him.

“Are disciples of Zhentian Sect?”

Long Yu thought to himself, and he came straight forward out of the bushes, and saw that there were four famous disciples of Zhentian sect, looking for something everywhere in the grove.

“Look, is Long Yu!”

Those four disciples of Zhentian Sect seemed to have discovered a buried treasure, and looked to Long Yu.

Out of these four persons, two were at Wudao ninth layer and two were at Wudao eight layer, apparently belonging to the category of core disciples and dared to come close to the deep of Teng snake abyss.

If they had moved forward beyond this area into the Teng snake abyss, possibly they would have faced a beast of Zhenling realm, and then they would have certainly met with their deaths. They had really cracked a joke with their own lives.

“Elder Yu is here, going back to Zhentian Sect, will report to the Sovereign, hurry up, you all get out of here?”

Lon Yu lightly said these few words and then Elder Yu dressed in black robe behind Long Yu appeared in front of them and began.

“Get out of here, all go back to the Sect, standby!”

Elder Yu Shuiyun’s voice fell into the ears of these four persons.

These four persons were extremely surprised when they saw Elder Yu and heard his voice!

“So it is Elder Yu! Since Elder Yu is now awake, should there be now any misunderstanding?”

Four disciples looked at each other in blank dismay.

They also thought that the order released by Elder Wu Jianxin said that Long Yu kidnapped comatose Elder Yu and wanted to kill him.

But now, Elder Yu was here in an awaken state with Long Yu, and moreover, he was going back to the Sect with Long Yu to report everything to the Sovereign!

This made them probably understand something, so they made way silently.

Even, if they wanted to hit then they would have to explain to Elder Yu, and moreover, they were certainly not the opponents of Long Yu!

“Elder Yu, let’s go.”

Long Yu turned his head and said to Elder Yu and lifted his footsteps and continued to walk towards the direction of Zhentian Sect.

Those four core disciples, who were left behind them, faintly felt that something big was going to happen and they actually didn’t want to miss the play, so they soon prepared themselves to follow them all the way!

“Some people are in front of me.”

Soon long Yu heard the sound of the movement of some of the people in front of him, and was surprised.

He couldn’t think that some of the disciples of Zhentian Sect entered so close to the deep Teng snake abyss in search of him,, and now, just after taking two steps he would run into some people unexpectedly!

Soon, he stepped out of bush and caught a glimpse of the opposite party.

“Um? ”

The identity of the three people of the other side made Long Yu to scowl.

The law enforcement Elder Tan Wuchuan!

The 6th ranked core disciple, Luotai Long! And, Luotai Long's personal servant, Meng Ce!.

"Look, is Long Yu!"

Meng Ce saw Long Yu and was immediately pleasantly surprised and shouted!

"Really, is he!"

Luotai Long gave a look to Long Yu and then a fierce look flashed in his eyes:
"Looking for you for so long, finally I found you."

Dressed in a purple robe, Elder Tan Wuchuan looked at Long Yu, and lightly said: "You, evildoer, where are you going with Elder Yu?"

Long Yu heard these words and laughed: "? Elder Yu, is not just behind me, now he has awaken up!"

With these words, Yu Shuiyun in black dress came forward from behind Long Yu and a familiar breath of Elder Yu Sichuan was felt by Tan Wuchuan.

Really Yu Shuiyun!

At that time, the indifferent face of Tan Wuchuan suddenly changed somewhat to bad.

“Well, Elder Yu, this boy has gone mad, wanted to kill you by taking advantage of your comatose, you went so far with him?”

Tan Wuchuan came forward one step and snorted: “You step aside, and let me recapture this culprit to condemn”

Yu Shuiyun heard it, and looked up, and said in a moderate tone: “ Long Yu, has not committed any crime, it is a crime of someone else, and now you make way, we must return to the Sect.”

“Back to the Sect?”

Tan Wuchuan laughed: “Elder Yu, don’t listen to what this boy Long Yu said, he must be lying to you, is trying to deceive you. This cruel and merciless boy is perhaps using you. What I feel now presently that in spite of being a master of Zhenling realm, you can’t display any martial skill, and this makes me easy to start with this boy!”

“You want more, hasn’t yet made way?”

Yu Shuiyun’s tone became somewhat severe. Of course, he was one of the 13 pavilion elders of Zhentian Sect, and this Tan Wuchuan was simply a Law enforcement Elder!

Tan Wuchuan was simply a Law enforcement Elder and dared to speak before Elder Yu, obviously, he didn't pay any attention on him.

"Make way? You want more, right? Today, Long Yu, this boy, must die!"

Tan Wuchuan's eyes flashed fiercely: "Luotai Long, here is the opportunity to take revenge for the death of your foster parent, I allow you to begin your hands on Long Yu before Elder Yu, I assure you my hands!"

"It's good!"

Suddenly, a fierce and vicious anger came out of Luotai Long and he took a step towards Long Yu and looked to Long Yu as if he was a prey for him!

"You!"

Elder Yu Shuiyun was extremely angry with Tan Wuchuan, the law enforcement Elder, who wanted to use his office to settle account of his enmity with Long Yu and didn't attend to the important matter!

"I am what I am? I just follow the rules of the Sect, Elder Yu, since you woke up, that's good, now look, how this criminal suffers extreme penalty!"

Tan Wuchuan looked to Long Yu and at that time, his eyes flashed fiercely!

Although, he saw that Long Yu entered Wudao ninth layer, but this didn't mean anything.

Luotai Long was 6th ranked core disciple and by the virtue of his strength he could confront for some time with the powerhouse of first layer Zhenling mystical realm and it could be said that he was the first person under the Zhenling mystical realm!

This Long Yu just set foot on Wudao ninth layer, how could he be the opponent of Luotai Long?

Today, Long Yu will die!

Of course, this was just the thinking of Tan Wuchuan only.

Chapter 84 Two Law Enforcement elders

Luotai Long moved one step towards Long Yu, actually he wanted to kill Long Yu as fast as possible.

Of course this time, Yu Shuiyun didn't make any action because he witnessed with his own eyes that Long Yu alone killed the first layer Zhenling realm powerhouse of Knife Cut Sect. Was there anything to worry about Long Yu this time?

At present Luotai Long was just at Wudao ninth layer, in comparison to Liu Ye, there was a very big difference of strength between them!

This time Long Yu would definitely defeat him instantly.

Long Yu watched Luotai Long coming out towards him. He and Tan Wuchuan echoed each other and wanted to encircle him to kill him. A fierce look suddenly sparkled in Long Yu's eyes.

"These two men are really courting their death!"

Long Yu thought to himself and stepped forward!

"You have just stepped into Wudao ninth layer. Do you really think that you can fight with me?"

Luotai Long said in a cold voice.

“Can, you can’t decide it.”

Long Yu said lightly.

“Ha ha! Really naive!”

Luotai Long and his attendant Meng Ce laughed simultaneously, Long Yu was really arrogant!

Just now the four disciples of Zhentian Sect also arrived there following Long Yu and Elder Yu and from a far distance they started looking at the situation. At that time, there was a color of curiosity on their faces.

They guessed that there might be some misunderstanding with the events related to Long Yu and Elder Yu. But right now, since Long Yu was facing Luotai Long, he would surely be killed on the spot.

After all everyone knew that Long Yu killed the foster parent of Luotai Long!

As Elder Yu Shuiyun was unable to use Xuan qi to play any martial skill and his conversation with Tan Wuchuan also couldn’t stop him, so this time, he couldn’t certainly be able to help Long Yu.

Long Yu was really on the verge of his death!

But, in the field Elder Yu and Long Yu didn’t think so.

Grasping his Nine Hidden Dragon Spear Long Yu was standing firmly in the field and then immediately he directed his spear point at Luotai Long: “Come, make me have a look at your strength, the adopted son of that old fox, let me see, what means do you have!”

Old fox!

These words made Luotai Long extremely angry.

He was brought up by Luo Chenghui since his childhood and Long Yu didn't only kill his foster parent, but now he dared to call him “old fox”!

Luotai Long knew his foster parent Luocheng Hui had resorted sinister means by joining hands with the heads of other clans against Long Yu, but regardless of all these things he was his adoptive father!

“Regarding my foster parent, a waste like you are not qualified enough to make any comment, now suffer to death!”

Luotai Long was so much provoked by the words of Long Yu that a fierce and brutal breath instantly began to diffuse out of his body and he immediately cast the horizon right close martial skill and in a blink of an eye he came in front of Long Yu and fired a punch towards him!

The punch instantly started a “whining” sound, as if the day was weeping and actually it turned out to be same martial skill, the day crying which had been displayed by Yi Yan in the Sect valley.

The blasting power of this day crying punch was really formidable!

However, this move of Luotai Long didn't generate any fear in Long Yu's heart!

Once Yi Yan had cast out the punch of day crying martial skill at Long Yu which had been instantly broken by Long Yu at the same time. Again the same simple punch was used by Luotai Long now against him.

"You want to face me, I would like to use to test this fist? You will never have a chance to beat me."

Long Yu's stature suddenly flashed and he waved his Nine Hidden Qian Dragon in the air and Dragon qi instantaneously burst out of the tip of the spear.

"Nine Hidden Dragon Mark, Nine Hidden Dragon black lines, activate!"

"Zhentian world influence, heavy spear shadows!"

Then, heavy spear shadows came out of the Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear of Long Yu and rushed towards the day crying punch of Luotai Long!

Meanwhile, the tyrannical coercion of the Zhentian world influence suddenly fell on Luotai Long from the clouds and it not only stagnated the whole stature of Luotai Long but also shattered his day crying punch completely!

And now the heavy spear shadows instantly came straight on the face of Luotai Long!

“Right close horizon barrier! End barrier!”

Luo Tailong was quite unprepared for this onslaught of Long Yu, but any how he could be able to cast out his right close horizon derived defensive barrier. He actually wanted to resist the heavy spear shadows of Long Yu by raising this right close horizon barrier in front of him.

He did not think that Long Yu, who had just stepped into Wudao ninth layer, could actually be able to display such a terrible coercion of world influence that would even directly shatter his day crying martial skill.

However, he did not think this move of heavy spear shadows of Long Yu could hurt him because he was confident that his right close horizon barrier was a very strong defensive type martial skill.

The next moment, the heavy spear shadows rumbled all of a sudden on the horizon barrier with the eruption of a loud sound.

“En?”

Luo Tailong’s complexion suddenly changed.

Because he found that his horizon barrier actually completely collapsed just at the first blow of the heavy spear shadows of Long Yu unexpectedly!

Luo Tailong was at Wudao ninth layer and the basic force of his whole body was only 200 to 300 boisterous horses, and the right close horizon barrier defensive martial skill displayed by him could resist the force of 500 boisterous horses at most.

However, this heavy spear shadows displayed by Long Yu actually contained the force of more than 1000 boisterous horses!

So after shattering the right close horizon barrier, the force of the heavy spear shadows of Long Yu didn't get weakened a bit, as a result the spear shadows actually continued to move towards Luo Tailong to attack him!

Long Yu practiced the tyrant body form to the perfection level, so basic force of Long Yu was naturally more than an ordinary Wudao master of ninth layer. Moreover, before beginning hands on Luo Tailong he had not forgotten to activate his Nine Hidden Dragon Mark that instantly gave the strength of 100 boisterous to Long Yu.

Thus, the Zhentian world influence and the heavy spear shadows displayed by Long Yu were so forceful that they couldn't be resisted by a Wudao master of the same level !

Puff! puff! puff!

Luo Tailong even tried to move to the sideway to shunt this attack, but he was too late, and numerous heavy shadows directly hit him and several bloody holes appeared on his body!

Bang!

He robed in a red dress fell heavily to the ground. He was then mortally injured and couldn't crawl up again.

With a single move of his heavy spear shadows, Long Yu finally defeated Luo Tailong which was simply similar to the slaughter of an ordinary dog!

Nearby, the Law enforcement elder Tan Wuchuan was anticipating that without the help of Elder Yu, Luo Tailong would be easily able to kill Long Yu, but his complexion became pale when he saw the current scene in the field. Luotai Long really proved to be too useless.

In dealing with Long Yu, he was unexpectedly so careless!

The refined facial expression of Meng Ce, the personal servant of Luo Tailong, also changed at that time.

Luo Tailong was really too careless, so he was defeated by Long Yu in one move only!

From the distance place the four core disciples were also watching the scene and they had also the similar feeling. In their eyes, Luo Tailong was a powerful core disciple of ninth layer, so how could he be defeated by Long Yu just by his single move?

Now, his body had countless wounds and nobody knew whether he would survive or not!

However, they didn't know that Luo Tailong was defeated not because of his carelessness, but the fact was there was a big gap of strength between them.

Inspite of being careful, Luo Tailong was actually not the opponent of Long Yu!

“Elder Yu, Luo Tailong wanted to kill me, I then retaliated on him, there won’t be any problem, right?”

Long Yu stepped forward and grasping his spear in his hand said lightly.

“Naturally, does not have any problem.”

Elder Yu Shuiyun rubbing his beard laughed lightly: “ That, I can testify for you.”

“Absurd!”

Law enforcement elder Tan Wuchuan scowled and with his sank face shouted: “This young man Long Yu has shown a heavy hand on the disciple of the same sect, he has not paid attention to the Sect men simply, I, as a law enforcement elder, if let him off today, then it wouldn’t be good from the discipline point of the Sect!”

As these words were out, Elder Yu and Long Yu were stunned.

Tan Wuchuan was really shameless. He just allowed Luo Tailong to kill Long Yu and now how could he say that Long Yu showed his heavy hand on Luo Tailong?

“Elder Tan, I see, Long Yu has demon like temptation, and if you will not eliminate him then many more disciples will surely become victims at his hand!”

Meng Ce said clenching his jaw to one side!

When he challenged Long Yu in the blood feud field, Long Yu had shattered his battle weapon and this matter always pinched his heart.

Actually it was not important that he lost his battle weapon, the more important thing was that he actually lost his face and couldn't lift his in front of Luo Tailong!

Now, Luo Tailong was defeated by Long Yu in one fell swoop, and if he was left to go so easily, then wouldn't he look down even on the elders of Zhenling realm in future?

Tan Wuchuan also thought so in his heart!

He could see the growth of Long Yu was very rapidly approaching to the point where he couldn't imagine.

However, after all, Long Yu couldn't congeal Zhenling, so now or never, this was the opportunity for him to kill Long Yu.

If he would wait until the condensation of Zhenling by Long Yu, then it would not be possible for Tan Wuchuan to overpower Long Yu!

So now, Long Yu must die!

"Tan Wuchuan, as a law enforcement elder, you don't distinguish right from wrong, is it appropriate?"

Yu Shuiyun lightly said, but his tone was severe!

“Ha ha ha!”

A laughter passed over not far away from the place and another group of people came out of the forest and appeared in front of everyone.

This group of people was headed by a man with a tall and straight physique, having an upright face, even wearing the same purple robe. It was Elder Zhengyi Zhen, the first layer Zhenling realm law enforcement elder!

“Elder Zhengyi Zhen?”

As soon as Yu Shuiyun saw this man, his face slightly changed.

“Yes Elder Yu, it’s me.”

That elder Zhengyi Zhen looked at the side of Long Yu and lightly said: “Long Yu has seriously injured the fellow brother, he is really lawless. Elder Tan Wuchuan has said right, if this child is kept in the sect then many other disciples would surely become victims at his hands!”

“Even you say so?”

Elder Yu scowled.

“Because, it is a fact.”

There was a color of an awe-inspiring righteousness on his face!

Long Yu looked to the side of Zhengyi Zhen and immediately saw that there were several famous disciples of Zhentian Sect who were behind Zhengyi Zhen and almost all of them belong to the category of top ranking core disciples.

One of them was Lu Guan Ming, the disciple of Elder Yu Shuiyun.

Lu Guan Ming saw Elder Yu and his face immediately turned to be full of excitement.

“Teacher”

Lu Guan Ming immediately wanted to run up to the side of Elder Yu. .

However, as he had come with Zhengyi Zhen, so Lu Guan Ming stopped and looking at him said: “ Hold on, now the most essential is to kill Long Yu, don’t give him the slightest opportunity to escape, all go to encircle him, don’t let him have any chance to escape!”

It appeared that the two Zhenling realm law enforcement elders, Tan Wuchuan and Zhengyi Zhen, would simultaneously kill Long Yu on the spot!

This was the scene. Those four disciples, who followed Elder Yu and Long Yu, looked at each other in blank dismay. They couldn’t think the reason why Tan Wuchuan and Zhengyi Zhen were actually aiming at Long Yu?

Especially when Elder Yu was present on the spot!

“Tan Wuchuan, your disciple Qin Tianque was killed by Long Yu, Zhengyi Zhen, your disciple Ling Lie was injured by Long Yu, and his one arm was broken.”

Elder Yu Shuiyun stood up and lightly said: “But that Qin Tianque, good deed goes unpunished, actually he wanted to kill Long Yu to get the neidan of the Teng snake, he truly deserves to be damned, and that Ling Lie, without having any enmity with Long Yu, followed Feng Yun, bluffed and blustered with him and he also wanted to kill Long Yu, the hegemonic actions must commit suicide. And here you are trying to take revenge for them at a promiscuous manner, you must think that what consequences your actions will bring!”

These words of Elder Yu Shuiyun let the people in the surrounding to know the truth.

Originally, two disciples of these two law enforcement elders, Tan Wuchuan and Zhengyi Zhen were defeated by Long Yu, one met with his death and one was seriously injured!

Chapter 85 Tianwei sword tactics

After hearing the words of Elder Yu, both Tan Wuchuan and Zhengyi Zhen were embarrassed.

However, the intention to kill still prevailed in their minds.

“Today, I have come not to take revenge, but to enforce justice on behalf of the Heaven, to eradicate a future trouble!”

Zhengyi Zhen lightly said.

“Good, to eradicate future trouble!”

Long Yu laughed loudly: “Here you begin, still you are saying so much to do what? Anyway, you guys want to kill me, right?”

“Evildoer, you are courting death!”

Tan Wuchuan heard the laughter of Long Yu and became extremely angry, this kid was really arrogant, how could he even dare to speak like this in front of these two law enforcement elders?

“Since you are being impatient, I will give you death.”

Zhengyi Zhen’s face turned serious. He moved one step forward and took out

his long sword hanging on his waist.

The long sword which he took out was actually a top grade battle weapon which he had got from the Sect. Being a law enforcement elder, his top grade battle weapon was better than the battle weapon of Liu Ye.

However, as far as strength was concerned, Zhengyi Zhen couldn't be compared favorably with buried soul knife of Liu Ye.

Of course, Zhengyi Zhen was a law enforcement elder, but he wasn't able to congeal Zhenling before the age of 40 years, hence his talent was naturally inferior to Liu Ye.

Sometimes regarding the understanding of a martial skill, the time of its completion was not so important, rather more important was the need of talent.

Zhengyi Zhen had stepped into the Zhenling realm and could congeal Zhenling. His talent was better than a common person and he was stronger than the Tan Clan's ancestor.

However, his talent fell far short when compared to Liu Ye.

When Elder Yu saw that the fight was inevitable, he didn't try to stop Tan Wuchuan and Zhengyi Zhen. With his eyes reflecting bitter grievances against these two persons, he gave a stern look to each of them.

He firmly set in his mind that when he would go back to the Sect, he would strongly recommend to the sovereign, Baiyun Zong, to kick these two men out of the Sect.

But right now, the best he could do for Long Yu was that he could focus his full energy to keep off at least one of the Zhenling realm law enforcement elders.

“Zhenling, now!”

Elder Yu immediately congealed his Zhenling and a big hand instantly appeared behind him and rushed towards Tan Wuchuan to slap him heavily!

“Elder Yu, why are you interfering?”

When Tan Wuchuan saw Elder Yu displaying his Zhenling, his eyes flashed fiercely: “Even if you are a Zhenling realm master of third layer, but presently, your body is highly toxic, how can you possibly resist the joint forces of mine and Zhengyi Zhen. Let me first deal with Long Yu, then I will take you back to the Sect!”

“Don’t indulge yourself in idle talk, prior to killing Long Yu, you will have to cross over my corpse!”

Elder Yu snorted and his Zhenling hand print suppressed Tan Wuchuan!

A terrific coercion of world influence burst out and instantaneously enveloped Tan Wuchuan, and suddenly, his complexion changed!

Indeed, Elder Yu was Zhenling realm master of third layer, although his body was highly toxic at the moment but still the coercion of his Zhenling was much stronger than that the Zhenling of Tan Wuchuan!

However, Tan Wuchuan would certainly not like to show his weakness, he thought that since the body of Elder Yu was highly toxic, so he wouldn't be able to stop him.

“Rock turtle Zhenling!”

Tan Wuchuan shouted loudly and suddenly a brown incarnation of Zhenling turtle appeared behind him and a terrible suppression burst out and rushed towards Elder Yu!

But, Tan Wuchuan realized that he would only be able to comprehend Zhentian charm and it was less effective than that of the Zhentian world influence released by Elder Yu.

But this made him realize to concentrate all of his energy in making himself able to withstand the heavy repression of the Elder Yu's Zhenling!

“Elder Zhengyi Zhen, quickly begin!”

Tan Wuchuan clenched his teeth and immediately said!

Zhengyi Zhen heard him and nodded and then he gave a look to Long Yu as if showing a little mercy to him: “I actually don't want to kill you, but your actions are too cruel and are also completely contrary to the rules of the Sect.”

Until this time, Zhengyi Zhen was still boasting, that was why Long Yu was simply unable to hold his laughter.

“Old dog, you want to kill me. Why don’t you come freely? Don’t try to talk nonsense!”

Long Yu laughed and grasped the Nine Hidden Qian Dragon. He had absolutely no fear of this trivial Zhengyi Zhen!

“You are quite bold!”

A severe look of anger immediately appeared on the face of Zhengyi Zhen. He grew so old but he had never heard someone calling him “old dog”!

At least, he had not heard face to face, while at present, Long Yu really insulted him by saying so!

Zhengyi Zhen, with his shaking sword which was in his hand, suddenly came forward towards Long Yu and cast a martial skill, the autumn sword.

The autumn sword displayed by him was a super grade fencing type martial skill.

Long Yu was not a stranger to this fencing type martial skill, but this time he really didn’t know what would be its effects, since he was not facing Meng Ce or Huayi Lun, rather a law enforcement elder equipped with the power to congeal Zhenling!

“Look at the autumn sword, the leaves have become frosted. The autumn has arrived as your death!”

Zhengyi Zhen swept away his autumn sword and frosted leaves rushed towards Long Yu at a tremendous speed.

“This autumn sword of Zhengyi Zhen is similar to ‘the deity descending on the earth’. It is really too strong!”

“Right, it is not only a sword, but it is also integrated with heavy suppression of Zhentian charm. I wonder for how long Long Yu can resist it!”

One of the disciples that followed Zhengyi Zhen pointed out, and in doing so, he also didn’t forget to complement Zhengyi Zhen.

That burly black Lu Guanming, the disciple of Elder Yu, focused his both eyes on Elder Yu. .

For him, his teacher Elder Yu was everything and he couldn’t even think that somebody could hurt his teacher before his eyes!

Lu Guanming really felt unspeakable joy when he saw Elder Yu in action and congealing Zhenling, but when he saw that Tan Wuchuan was actually fighting with Elder Yu then he couldn’t help but be secretly worried.

By this time while facing the autumn sword of Zhengyi Zhen, Long Yu simply didn’t feel any pressure!

“Even as a Zhenling realm powerhouse, he will not condense Zhenling, then how can he display any strength?”

Long Yu laughed and waved his Nine Hidden Qian Dragon spear and Nine Hidden Dragon qi instantaneously burst out of the spear tip and rushed towards Zhengyi Zhen.

Zhengyi Zhen's autumn sword wrapped with Zhentian charm was completely shattered by Long Yu's Dragon qi!

"Eat my spear-attack!"

Long Yu jumped high and swept away his spear towards Zhengyi Zhen!

But, the whole stature of Zhengyi Zhen suddenly flashed and instantaneously arrived behind Long Yu, sure enough he had also practiced the agility type super grade martial skill, horizon is close.

"Your strength really excels in comparison to a common martial artist of Wudao ninth layer, but in front of me, you are still nothing but a clown!"

Zhengyi Zhen shouted loudly and suddenly congealed his Zhenling and instantly a Zhenling fist emerged behind him!

It contained terrifying coercion of Zhentian mood and when it appeared, Long Yu immediately felt its heavy suppression!

"Really, I still want to face Zhenling which can actually give some meaning to this fight."

Long Yu thought to himself and quickly waved his spear.

Heavy Spear shadows!

His heavy spear shadows rushed towards the Zhenling fist of Zhengyi Zhen!

“I’ll let you see the power of my Zhenling, it is so formidable that you will die peacefully!”

Zhengyi Zhen waved his fist to fend against the heavy spear shadows of Long Yu.

Instantaneously, both attacks collided loudly with each other!

“Spear shadow, suppression!”

Long Yu shouted loudly and immediately integrated Zhentian world influence with his Nine Hidden Qian Dragon and a terrible burst of suppression broke out and rushed towards the Zhenling fist and shrouded it completely!

The Zhenling fist contained the force of Zhentian charm only, but it could be able to entangle the suppression of the world influence of Long Yu.

Unfortunately, the difference of the power base was huge between Long Yu and Zhengyi Zhen.

Therefore, although the heavy spear shadows of Long Yu contained the terrible

suppression of world influence, but still, the Zhenling fist fully resisted it.

“Long Yu has really overreached himself, he dares to confront with a Zhenling realm master, he really is impatient to die!”

“It is simply like hitting a stone by an egg, he is bringing his own doom!”

“In my opinion, in a short while, Long Yu will kneel down before Zhen elder and beg him to spare his life, ha ha ha!”

Several disciples that followed Zhengyi Zhen suddenly burst out laughing.

Ironically, Zhengyi Zhen’s complexion was not very nice at that time.

Because, just at that time of the collision, although his fist withstood the heavy spear shadows of Long Yu, but it also sustained a hint of rift.

In other words, Long Yu had actually become able to defeat the tyrannical power of his Zhenling!

“This boy is unexpectedly so terrifying, I will surely finish him off today!”

Zhengyi Zhen firmly set his mind and was finally ready to cast his strongest fencing type martial skill.

Tianwei sword tactics.

This Tianwei sword tactics was not accessible to ordinary disciples of Zhentian Sect and even the disciples of Zhenling realm couldn't practice it.

Tianwei sword tactics was actually superior than a top grade martial skill or a super grade battle weapon. Actually, it was completely on another level!

Long Yu actually didn't know exactly at what level this sword knack was, but he was certain that it was more powerful than a super grade martial skill!

Zhengyi Zhen pulled back his fist and instantly took out his long sword and pointed it at Long Yu.

"Now, you are dead!"

Zhengyi Zhen's face reflected righteousness and the power that emerged out of his sword, strengthened his Zhenling fist!

"What is this?"

Long Yu's face immediately changed and he suddenly felt the terrific pressure that had instantly shrouded him completely.

"The power of this sword tactics is way above common martial skills!"

Elder Yu, who was on one side and was engaged in fighting with Tan Wuchuan, said in dignified way: "In fact, masters of Wudao ninth layer generally practice low-grade martial skills, and in case of battle weapons, they use top grade and super grade battle weapons, and every level of martial skill has a spirit level

martial skill.”

“It is a spirit level martial skill, although it is only a low-grade spirit level martial skill, but it is more powerful than a super grade martial skill!”

Elder Yu’s words slightly calmed down the heart of Long Yu.

Spirit level martial skill!

It turned out that he was now practicing various types of martial skills and each martial skill had a spirit level. It meant that the first technique of Dragon fist, the intoxicated hell, was the best grade martial skill!

“In short, the second technique of Dragon fist should be a spirit level martial skill as well, in fact, it is also a best grade spirit level martial skill!”

Long Yu suddenly understood a lot: “In addition, some of the skills pertaining to ‘Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear’ are certainly the best grade spirit level martial skills, otherwise the sovereign would have not said that I am temporarily unable to practice it.....The Spirit level is above all levels, so that’s how it is!”

Chapter 86 Royal rock of perfection level

With the sword in his hand, Zhengyi Zhen was about to display Tianwei sword tactics and there would be burst of terrible Tianwei which would envelop Long Yu completely to make him stagnant.

“Wants to strike, if I punch my fist first then I would be in an advantageous position.”

Long Yu calmly thought to himself. At that time, he actually didn't know that what force exactly this spirit level martial skill had. Zhengyi Zhen was really a Zhenling realm powerhouse and he was simply a ninth layer Wudao master.

Prior to it, Liu Ye perhaps displayed his spirit level martial skill against Long Yu, but at that critical juncture, the burst of Dragon qi initiated by intoxicated hell enabled Long Yu to kill Liu Ye, otherwise it would have been difficult for him to kill Liu Ye!

“Nine Hidden Dragon prance!”

Then, Long Yu moved his intention and suddenly his whole stature was rolled up high in the sky by the air current generated by the sudden burst of Nine Hidden Dragon qi and then he immediately fell from the sky like a stone towards Zhengyi Zhen!

Suddenly, the tyrannical repression of Zhentian world influence suppressed Zhengyi Zhen and in addition to it, the coercion of the dry marsh mood that was released from the grass Zhenling turned the entire area into a swamp in general

and wrapped Zhengyi Zhen.

“Twin moods!”

Zhengyi Zhen’s body felt sluggish and his complexion immediately changed. Long Yu could even comprehend twin moods unexpectedly and it suppressed him so heavily that he was entangled to fall and was unable to move!

“Lamella touch, even a touch can kill!”

While falling down from the sky Long Yu directly bit one of his fingers and flung the blood on the Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear.

Suddenly, a burst of Nine Hidden Dragon qi seemed to fall from the sky and rushed towards the ground as if it would swallow the body of Zhengyi Zhen!

“Tianwei sword tactics!”

Undoubtedly, Zhengyi Zhen was indeed a Zhenling realm master of first layer. Although, he was shrouded by the terrific suppression of the twin moods of Long Yu, but still he was able to cast his sword tactics.

Tianwei sword tactics was a spirit level martial skill. As Zhengyi Zhen displayed it, a fist ghost immediately appeared behind him and it instantaneously integrated with the giant sword light and rushed towards sky to resist Long Yu’s spear attack!

“Dodge!”

Long Yu displayed twinkling one step and his whole stature flashed in the air, actually he wanted to shunt Zhengyi Zhen's giant sword light that was coming straight on his face at a tremendous speed!

Bam!

Suddenly, the sword light swept away by Zhengyi Zhen filled the air and withstood the lamella touch of Long Yu's spear!

The spear and sword light collided with each other resulting into a terrible burst of stream that instantly sent Long Yu and Zhengyi Zhen to fly and both fell heavily to the ground.

Both were mutually injured!

"Spirit level martial skill is really extraordinary!"

The injury that Long Yu received suppressed the blood crest of his body and he recollected his entire energy to stand up because he knew well that if he would not stand up at that time then he would not be able to stand up again.

Undoubtedly, the five internal organs of Long Yu were also a little bit churned out by the terrible coercion of that sword light, but he still insisted on fighting only!

Obviously, Zhengyi Zhen was also seriously injured. Although, he withstood the terrific power of the lamella touch of Long Yu's spear that contained the force of

2000 boisterous horses.

Although, the sword light of Zhengyi Zhen contained the force of 1000 boisterous horses only and it could also be able to withstand the lamella touch power of Long Yu's spear, but he himself received a very strong shock and was seriously injured.

What was most important that he had not practiced body refining type martial skill, so his body strength couldn't be compared with Long Yu!

Obviously, at this time of fighting, the injury received by Zhengyi Zhen was more than Long Yu!

With the collision of the forces of both sides, both were sent flying, and when the surrounding people saw this scene , they were simply dumbfounded.

This Wudao ninth layer Long Yu fought to draw with Zhenling realm Zhengyi Zhen, and each was sent flying and fell to the ground?

Simply inconceivable!

Moreover, as Elder Yu just said that this Tianwei sword tactics displayed by Zhengyi Zhen was a spirit level martial skill.

But, Long Yu not only withstood this Tianwei sword tactics of Zhengyi Zhen but also was able to stand up quickly!

Even black face grandiose Lu Guan Ming, could not help but remain surprised

to look in the field.

Long Yu was really very strong!

“Elder Zheng!”

Seeing the scene in the field, Ta Wuchuan immediately said anxiously. At that time, he was actually confronting with the Zhenling hand print of Elder Yu.

At that time, he was annoyed with Zhengyi Zhen who couldn't be able to manage the things reasonably and was still not able to solve even a Wudao ninth layer boy?

Certainly, only Elder Yu Shuiyun looked indifferent at that time because he knew that in spite of being a Zhenling realm master, Zhengyi Zhen was not actually the opponent of Long Yu.

Moreover, Long Yu had yet not cast his strongest martial skill!

Both Zhengyi Zhen and Long Yu were sent flying, but Long Yu quickly stood up, but the speed of Zhengyi Zhen was not fast.

“I must cut you into pieces, then only I can release hatred of my heart!”

Zhengyi Zhen roared loudly and grasping his sword tried to stand up.

However, when he roared this idle talk, Long Yu quickly prepared himself to

display his Dragon fist, the intoxicated hell!

After tumbling, the speed of getting up sometimes also decides life and death!

“Intoxicated hell, Dragon fist, initiate the burst of the stream of Dragon qi!”

Long Yu fired his fist and intoxicated hell initiated the burst of the stream of Dragon qi that instantly enveloped the entire space in the surrounding including Zhengyi Zhen.

Zhengyi Zhen suddenly became absent-minded and was frightened to see that his Zhenling fist ghost also showed sign of collapsing.

“Nine Hidden Dragon fist, perfection level.”

Long Yu’s whole stature flashed suddenly and he immediately punched his fist to the ground: “Nine Hidden Dragon qi blast stream!”

The characteristic feature of the intoxicated hell at the perfection level was that if a fist would be fired to the ground then the intoxicated hell would initiate the blasting of black Nine Hidden Dragon Qi like an eruption of a volcano.

The next moment, as if a volcano erupted under the foot of Zhengyi Zhen and his body was swallowed by the air column of Nine Hidden Dragon qi in such a way that he even couldn’t stand up!

“What—”

A loud scream came out from his mouth and spread in the surrounding area making all the people absolutely terrified!

Besides Elder Yu Shuiyun, all the people were shocked to see Zhengyi Zhen shrouded by the air column of Nine Hidden Dragon qi and the burst of this Nine Hidden Dragon qi actually deterred them on the spot.

Zhengyi Zhen's screams did not last long.

After the elapse of the time of just a breath, the sound of Zhengyi Zhen's scream stopped and by this time the air column of Nine Hidden Dragon qi also dissipated in the air.

And before the eyes of the people there appeared only a dry corpse eroded by Nine Hidden Dragon qi.

Zhengyi Zhen, a first layer Zhenling law enforcement elder was finally killed by a Wudao ninth layer Long Yu!

What type of terrific martial skill did this Long Yu actually practice?

The hearts of all the people were chilled to see Long Yu, who, at that time, looked like a monster!

"Kill!"

However, at this time, nearby confronting Elder Yu, Tan Wuchuan suddenly shouted loudly!

Obviously, at this moment Tan Wuchuan was very much embarrassed to see the death of Zhengyi Zhen and he clearly knew that now, if he wanted to kill Long Yu today then he would have to rely on him only.

And now, he was blocked by the Zhenling print hand of Elder Yu, so he couldn't directly begin his hands on Long Yu.

Thus, only way left for him was first to solve Elder Yu and then turn towards Long Yu!

In the beginning Tan Wuchuan didn't dare to face Elder Yu's Zhenling print hand, however now, he decided to to kill Long Yu, so he would have to put his everything in this fight.

Since Elder Yu blocked him from killing Long Yu, so first he would surely kill Elder Yu Shuiyun!

At that time, Tan Wuchuan's both eyes emitted bloodthirsty light. The confrontation was going on between rock turtle Zhenling of Tan Wuchuan and Zhenling print hand of Elder Yu. Meanwhile, Tan Wuchuan condensed Xuan qi on his body and rushed towards Elder Yu to fire a punch!

At this time, Elder Yu Shuiyun's body was highly toxic so he didn't have the capacity to resist it.

"Elder Yu!"

Long Yu saw this and was stunned. He actually wanted to run to rescue Elder Yu, but his five internal organs surged and he couldn't resist his blood to spray out.

Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear once again contaminated with his blood, but as Long Yu had just cast his Nine Hidden Dragon fist and his breath had yet not come back to normal, so he couldn't promptly cast lamella touch!

And as long as his breath would come back to be normal, he feared that Tan Wuchuan might kill Elder Yu!

"Give up any idea of injuring my teacher!"

At this time, a thundering voice came out from one side and spread to the people.

Suddenly, a burly figure dressed in a black robe came out like an arrow from the side of the people and instantaneously came in front of Elder Yu.

This figure, with a look of anger on his face, was actually Lu Guan Ming, the disciple of Elder Yu!

Although, he was only at Wudao eighth layer but he didn't hesitate to stand in front of Elder Yu to resist the attack of Tan Wuchuan!

Lu Guan Ming was a 35th ranked core disciple, and of course, like Long Yu, it was impossible for him to defeat the power of Zhenling of Tan Wuchuan.

Certainly, at that time, Tan Wuchuan's rock turtle Zhenling was entangled with the Zhenling hand print of Elder Yu, even then it was absolutely not possible for Lu Guan Ming to beat Tan Wuchuan!

"Court death!"

A fierce color suddenly emerged in the eyes of Tan Wuchuan and he immediately integrated his fist with "whining" day crying, a super grade martial skill and swept it towards Lu Guan Ming!

Of course, he just cast his day crying martial skill to deal with Lu Guan Ming, as he thought that after killing Lu Guan Ming he would use his spirit level martial skill to kill Elder Yu Shuiyun.

Actually, Lu Guan Ming had no fear in his heart in the face of day crying martial skill of Tan Wuchuan and with an angry look on his face he shouted loudly: "You want to deal with Long Yu, I don't care but you want to get rid of my teacher, you betray the Sect, even if I was killed, you will also die!"

These words made Tan Wuchuan fierce and his eyes were full of bloodthirsty color: "Then, you die."

He instantly released his Zhentian charm that enveloped the whole stature of Lu Guan Ming and then immediately he integrated his fist with day crying "whining" sound and rushed towards Lu Guan Ming to hit him!

"Royal rock, congeal!"

Lu Guan Ming lifted his hand and immediately condensed a pile of rocks, but

these rocks actually didn't condense into rock shield wall, but like a helmet and armor, they completely covered his whole body.

Covered with numerous rocks Lu Guan Ming, suddenly like a boulder, was even voluntarily ready to face the hit of Tan Wuchuan!

"It is, Royal Rock, of the perfection level!"

Lu Guan Ming's this move shocked everyone!

The Royal rock, as a top grade defense type martial skill, was the most popular in Zhentian Sect and several hundred people were its cultivators.

Lu Guan Ming had practiced this Royal rock martial skill to the perfection level, but for a long time he didn't show it up, but now after so many years this martial skill was first time displayed by him!

Practicing the Royal rock to the perfection level, this martial skill would actually change into a different level of martial skill and its cultivator would be able to control mood and strength in more perfect way.

At that time, Lu Guan Ming Lu covered his whole body with numerous rocks like an armor and was just waiting the hit of Tan Wuchuan!

"Death"!

With bloodthirsty color in his eyes, Tan Wuchuan suddenly blasted his fist wrapped with day crying "whining" sound on rocks that covered the whole body

of Lu Guan Ming!

Chapter 87 Tan Wuchuan has no life

The day crying fist of Tan Wuchuan blasted with such a terrible force that it blew up the giant rock that covered Luo Guan Ming.

With a loud rock blasting sound the whole body of Lu Guan Ming flew upside down towards the rear side and the crushed rock scattered in all directions!

The giant rock that covered Lu Guan Ming was smashed by the terrible blasting force of the fist of Tan Wuchuan unexpectedly!

However, the covered boulders didn't actually bring any injury to Lu Guan Ming because it was seen that the whole body surface of Lu Guan Ming was covered with a light golden color and it actually turned out to be the Demon King mask unexpectedly!

Lu Guan Ming practiced the Royal rock defense type martial skill to the perfection level and he could congeal the Demon King mask and at that time, displaying this Demon King mask he could be able to resist the terrific fist blast of Tan Wuchuan unexpectedly!

Lu Guan Ming, simply a Wudao master of eight layer and he could do this, it was really enough to make one feel proud of him!

“Managing rock, wrapped around me!”

Lu Guan Ming clenched his teeth, his whole body flew upside down, but he quickly waved his both hands and numerous crushed rocks scattered on the

ground immediately congealed and rushed towards Tan Wuchuan.

Actually he wanted to wrap Tan Wuchuan with these numerous rocks so that he couldn't bring any harm to Elder Yu!

“Trying to wrap me? It's only your grand dream!”

Tan Wuchuan thundered loudly and instantaneously displayed his day crying fist that rushed towards the numerous rocks that were coming towards him at tremendous speed to wrap him and crushed them into sediment and scattered them into the atmosphere in the air!

Relying on his strength, Lu Guan Ming actually wanted to block Tan Wuchuan, it was indeed a dream of a fool.

However, as long as he was holding him at this moment of time, it was enough!

Nearby, Long Yu's breath returned to be normal and with the intermittent palpitation he felt a psychic resonance with the Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear in his hand.

Thump! Thump! Thump!

Along with Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear spiritual beating, the Xuan qi began to boil up in his entire body.

“Lamella touch, even a touch can kill!”

With his spear Long Yu moved his footsteps and like a gust of wind he galloped in the direction of the place where Tan Wuchuan was standing!

A black Dragon qi suddenly burst out of the tip of the spear and brought about a strange and gloomy atmosphere in the surrounding and it slightly changed the face of Lu Guan Ming Chuan, who was planning to take advantage of the situation by attacking Tan Wuchuan again.

This Long Yu, already injured while fighting with Zhengyi Zhen, even at that time was able to cast out such a tyrannical marksmanship?

Obviously, this kid was only a ninth level Wudao master!

However, there was no sign of shock on the face of Tan Wuchuan. At that time, his eyes flashed a fierce and brutal color: "Well, I want to kill you, and you have yourself dropped in to come, court death!"

As the voice down, he turned his face towards Long Yu, seemed to cast what tyrannical martial skill!

If Tan Wuchuan would cast spirit level martial skill then it would be almost impossible for Long Yu to resist it because he received injury while fighting with Zhengyi Zhen and he came forward to fight once again, so it looked that he would be seriously injured or might even be killed!

However, Long Yu did not shrink back.

He grasped the Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear and listened attentively his heartbeat that had integrated with his spear maintaining conjunction with his

blood vessels, making him understand that this was the spear that had been used by his father.

Nine Hidden Dragon Spear, Qian Dragon Spear!

“My father used you, certainly you haven’t shrank back even one step!”

Long Yu thought to himself. He then clenched his teeth and felt the tyrannical coercion of Nine Hidden Dragon Spear. At that time, Xuan qi was moving rapidly in his body meridians. He condensed Lamella touch on his spear and immediately, as it seemed, a shadow of Nine Hidden Dragon appeared in the mid air!

Roar!

Dragon’s roaring sound, as if coming from the Nine Hidden Dragon, resounded in the minds of the people in the surrounding making them to clearly understand that how powerful was the spear of Long Yu!

“Rock, give me wrapped around!”

At this time, Guan Ming Lu once again displayed the perfection level Royal rock martial skill and instantly numerous rocks rushed towards Tan Wuchuan to wrap him.

Lu Guan Ming actually manipulated these numerous rocks to wrap Tan Wuchuan in order to save his teacher Elder Yu. He was fully determined to put everything in this fight.

He thought that if he would be able to wrap Tan Wuchuan with these rocks even for a moment only then Long Yu would be able to kill Tan Wuchuan and thus the life of Elder Yu could be saved!

Facing Lu Guan Ming's entanglement, Tan Wuchuan became extremely angry. However, from the beginning he had actually underestimated the strength of Lu Guan Ming as well as Long Yu.

Undoubtedly, Lu Guan Ming was not as strong as Tan Wuchuan, but nobody could ignore his rock attack!

"Day cry, blow up!"

Tan Wuchuan waved his fist and immediately displayed his day crying martial skill which again crushed these rocks into sediment and scattered them into the atmosphere in the air!

However, at this time, Long Yu's spirit level martial skill, the Lamella touch had finally arrived!

With this spear raid, the whole stature of Tan Wuchuan was shrouded by black Dragon qi initiated by the intoxicated hell and made him a little bit afraid.

"Give me death!"

Tan Wuchuan roared and suddenly took his footsteps and quickly moved to one side and shunted this spear attack and simultaneously swept away his fist

towards Long Yu!

“Spirit level martial skill, soul moving fist!”

Elder Yu Shuiyun was watching the scene in the one side, and at that time his face immediately became dignified and as a reminder he said to Long Yu: “The soul moving fist, will be able to shake the soul of the opponent stagnating the flow of his Xuan qi, and for a short time he will not be able to display any martial skill, Long Yu, be careful!”

It was really a spirit level martial skill!

With a cold heart Long Yu didn’t want to think about it and he instantly shot out his Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear towards the location where Tan Wuchuan was standing!

“Go!”

In a flash, his Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear wrapped with terrific Nine Hidden dragon qi and integrated with terrible coercion of Zhentian world influence came in front of Tan Wuchuan!

“Moving soul fist, give me break!”

Tan Wuchuan hurriedly swept away his moving soul fist to resist Nine Hidden Qian Dragon spear of Long Yu. At that time, a bloodthirsty color was on his face.

However, he had largely ignored the powerful spear of Long Yu!

This Nine Hidden Qian Dragon spear was coming towards Tan Wuchuan at a tremendous speed and this time it didn't only condense the mind blowing power of the Lamella touch but was also contaminated with the blood of injured Long Yu!

This spear really contained fiercer might and faster speed and had rally more destructive power than the spear that Long Yu had used while fighting Zhengyi Zhen!

Of course, while fighting Zhengyi Zhen, Long Yu was able to resist his Tianwei sword tactics sword light.

And now, the strongest soul moving fist of Tan Wuchuan was coming to confront with Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear.

It was really difficult to determine that which was weak and which was strong.

The next moment, Tan Wuchuan's soul moving fist pounded on the Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear point. Immediately a terrific air current erupted and the lower hem corner of Tan Wuchuan's purple Chinese-style gown raised to fly.

And the frightening fluctuations of soul moving fist spread in all directions and suddenly affected the Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear of Long Yu!

Bang! Bang!

Long Yu felt that his brain started to shake unceasingly and the rhythm of the

flow of the Xuan qi into his body meridians was disrupted in such a way that he couldn't display any martial skill for a short time!

And this was actually the characteristic feature of the soul moving fist, once punched it would deter the soul of the opponent and he couldn't be able to cast any martial skill for a short period of time!

Not only Long Yu, even far away Lu Guan Ming as well as other people in the surrounding were also frightened by this soul moving fist and similarly they were also not in a position to display any martial skill.

However, Tan Wuchuan himself didn't feel good!

The Lamella touch power of the Nine Hidden Qian dragon spear of Long Yu was beyond the imagination of Tan Wuchuan. Undoubtedly, the power of his fist had disintegrated most of the force of Long Yu's spear, but still Tan Wuchuan was repulsed several steps.

The strange Nine Hidden Dragon qi invaded the whole body of Tan Wuchuan and created havoc in his whole body meridians.

Nine Hidden Dragon qi began to erode his body meridians!

Long Yu required time to recover from the frightening of the soul moving fist and the same was the case with Tan Wuchuan as he also needed time to spend to drive out the Nine Hidden Dragon qi from his body.

Both were not in any action. However, when Tan Wuchuan was engaged in driving out the Nine Hidden dragon qi from his body, his control over his

Zhenling suddenly weakened.

Nearby Elder Yu Shuiyun seized this opportunity and quickly stimulated the movement of his Zhenling hand imprint and immediately condensed Zhentian world influence and completely routed the turtle Zhenling of Tan Wuchuan!

Zhenling realm of third layer, and Zhenling realm of the first layer, the gap was too big.

Tan Wuchuan wanted to fight with Elder Yu's Zhenling, but it was impossible for him to rival Elder Yu.

“Suppression!”

Then, Elder Yu congealed Zhenling big hand imprint and suddenly patted it towards Tan Wuchuan and the terrific coercion of his Zhentian world influence also rushed towards him to envelop him completely!

Tan Wuchuan desperately wanted to escape it, but at this time Long Yu displayed his Blizzard boots and out of his boots there was a burst of snow and ice that rushed towards Tan Wuchuan and froze him on the spot.

Although, Long Yu was unable to display any martial skill, but establishing resonance with his Blizzard boots he could be able to display it.

Under the heavy suppression of the snow and ice, Tan Wuchuan's whole stature became stagnant. Meanwhile, Elder Yu's big hand imprint completely suppressed Tan Wuchuan and link between his body meridians and Dantian was cut off.

Ping!

Tan Wuchuan came on his knees. He simply couldn't bear the terrific repression of Elder Yu's big hand imprint Zhenling and under its pressure it seemed that his body would be cracked!

"I am not willing, Long Yu, you have killed my disciple, how can I let you live!"

Tan Wuchuan's eyes were full of fierce and brutal color, he said stubbornly staring at Long Yu!

"I saved the younger sister of Qin Tianque, but he wanted to kill me and to take neidan of Teng snake from me."

Royal Dragon calmly asked: "I would like to ask you, with your eyes, you can see that under what situation I was actually at that time, do you think that your obedient disciple Qin Tianque did the right thing when he tried to kill me and snatch neidan of Teng snake from my hands?"

As these words went out, the people in the surrounding began to whisper pointing towards Tan Wuchuan.

Indeed, just Elder Yu had also said the same fact that under the fact it was clear that Qin Tianque actually first violated the custom of Zhentian Sect.

Tan Wuchuan wanted to take revenge for it and also wanted to get rid of Elder Yu, he had really gone mad!

“So what?”

Tan Wuchuan looked up and laughed: “You have killed my disciple, if I don’t take revenge for him, what teacher I am? You.....”

He seemed to want to say something, but the next moment, a white ripple flew high to fly to come across and rumbled the chest of Tan Wuchuan and in one fell swoop broke his heart.

With this blow, Tan Wuchuan didn’t have life!

The sky waves cross!

All people recognized this martial skill and turned to look towards the place from where these white ripples actually came.

They actually saw a youth dressed in black tights. He was pacing to come towards them, hanging a vague smile on his face. It was actually the first core disciple of Zhentian Sect, Bu Xing!

At this moment, he finally came and ended the life of Tan Wuchuan.

Even if he had not come, after the restoration of Xuan qi, Long Yu would have possibly killed Tan Wuchuan, but Bu Xing came and killed Tan Wuchuan in one fell swoop saving a lot of time.

“Please return to Sect quickly!”

Bu Xing said this and turned around to go!

“Teacher, we should go!”

Nearby, Lu Guan Ming’s black face was overjoyed. He quickly stepped forward to lift up Elder Yu.

Far Long Yu was concerned, at that time, he stepped forward to pick up his Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear.

His spear had faced the terrific hit of Tan Wuchuan’s soul moving fist, but it didn’t receive any damage and it showed that its quality was absolutely extraordinary.

“Where the level is divided into common martial skill and spirit level martial skill, then perhaps in case of battle weapon also, there should be common level and spirit level. This Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear is probably a spirit level battle weapon, no wonder, it is so strong!”

Long Yu thought to himself and grasping the Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear, he followed Bu Xing and moved away towards the direction of Zhentian Sect with Elder Yu!

The people in the surrounding looked at each other one by one. They had never thought at the moment that such would be the outcome, the two Zhenling realm law enforcement elders, even would meet with their deaths.

Moreover, almost all it could be said that they actually died at the hands of Long Yu!

Bu Xing, the first core disciple of Zhentian Sect came, killed Tan Wuchuan and gave direction to everyone to return quickly to the Sect, nobody actually knew what he was to announce.

Long after Long Yu abducted Elder Yu, and now Long Yu and Elder Yu appeared together, what exactly happened, nobody knew?

All people were extremely confused, but they believed that soon truth would be known!

Chapter 88 – The hall of Zhentian Sect

Long Yu and Elder Yu together with Luo Guan Ming followed Bu Xing at a very fast speed in the direction of Zhentian Sect.

Those several key disciples, whom Zhengyi Zhen brought with him and his personal attendant, Meng Ce, also followed them behind.

The other four disciples, who bumped into Long Yu and made way for him in Teng abyss, also followed them behind.

With their own eyes these disciples of Zhentian Sect witnessed the fighting of Long Yu with Zhengyi Zhen and Tan Wuchuan, the two Zhenling realm enforcement elders and everyone was shocked to see the terrific fighting skill of Long Yu!

However, Long Yu just summed up the battle and analyzed his own shortcomings.

“My basic strength was too weak as compared to a Zhenling realm powerhouse, this is the biggest disadvantage.”

Long Yu thought to himself: “Besides it, I couldn’t keep up the speed, seems that at first I will have to upgrade Xiao Cheng level of the ghost flash, then focus on other martial skills”

Of course, speed was considered as one of the key points for battle efficiency.

Although, Long Yu was able to cast Nine Hidden Dragon prance, but in dealing with the opponent face to face, this secluded Nine Hidden Dragon prance was not suitable.

Other people, who saw the tyrannical fighting skill of Long Yu, were actually whispering while pointing towards him.

But, Long Yu was actually contemplating about how to become much more stronger!

And this was the biggest difference between Long Yu and a common Wudao master. He would always preserve his conscience and make target to promote his own strength.

In addition to other things, he would pay little attention on the people unless they were close to him, like Elder Yu, Feng Longsong or Ling Han.

“Ling Han has invited me and my day of leaving for Ling clan villa is drawing nearer, I think Elder Yu should end the matter soon.”

Long Yu wanted to finish the matter as soon as possible. He looked up and moved on his foot towards the main waiting hall of Zhentian Sect.

Elder Yu and Lu Guan Ming were moving together. Both the teacher and the disciple had not seen each other for a long time and there were a lot of things to say.

However, Lu Guan Ming although collaborated with Long Yu in his fight with Tan Wuchuan, but at this time, he still didn't trust Long Yu and occasionally he

looked to Long Yu with a little hostility.

The truth yet was hidden from him, and Elder Yu also didn't say anything to him about it.

But soon the truth would be known to the people of entire Zhentian Sect.

“Brother Bu Xing!”

Soon, the disciples returned to Zhentian Sect and many other disciples were coming towards the hall.

These disciples were looking at Long Yu with contemptuous and disdainful look because in their eyes Long Yu was a wicked thief and betrayed Zhentian Sect by planning to kill Elder Yu, who once saved his life. He was simply extremely shameless!

“Brother Bu Xing has done well, he still has to really go into action in order to seize Long Yu, this wicked thief!”

“Ha ha, this sinner was finally caught, Elder Yu was also rescued and has returned safely, our Sect elders will definitely take appropriate action against this useless person!”

One group of the people were praising Bu Xing, while scolding Long Yu, as if they had sworn irreconcilable hatred for Long Yu.

Regarding these people, Long Yu didn't pay any attention.

They were actually playing with their lips and flattering Bu Xing.

Long Yu completely ignored them!

Elder Yu Shuiyun also did not say anything, but while walking towards the hall he observed the facial expression of Long Yu and found that he was really self-poised and simply had not gone to pay any attention on these people in the surrounding, and secretly nodded.

“Long Yu has a firm mind, under such circumstances he has not come under the outside influence, it is really rare!”

Elder Yu’s evaluation of Long Yu was of higher level.

Although, Long Yu thought to be free from all these things, but at this time, he was static like stopped water.

Long Yu had really unparalleled talent!

Luckily, such talented person appeared in Zhentian Sect and became its disciple!

In front of Bu Xing there were many disciples of Zhentian Sect. He heard these disciples flattering him and slandering Long Yu. His heart cursed them, but he solaced his heart thinking that these disciples were simply idiots.

However, Bu Xing didn’t say anything.

His stature was such that nobody dared to overstep even half step the place where he stood. He quickly moved towards Long Yu, caught his one hand and brought him in front of the people.

“My Elder Wu Jianxin together with other elders are present in the main waiting hall of Zhentian Sect, Elder Yu and Long Yu together are now also with us.”

Bu Xing said these words to the people standing in front of him.

Intelligent persons listened to these words and clearly made out their meaning that Bu Xing captured Long Yu back not as a sinner!

As these words went out, most of the people in the surrounding were surprisingly confused.

Listening to the tone of Big Brother Bu Xing, did Long Yu appear to be a sinner?

Everybody wanted to know what exactly the matter was?

Elder Wu Jianxin firmly set the criminal charges on Long Yu. Could it be said that Wu Jianxin had a bad luck?

Many people secretly guessed about it.

Bu Xing and Long Yu were again together and the people in the surrounding

didn't actually want to miss the play which was soon to unfurl.

By this time, rumors about Royal Dragon finally began to spread out.

“What? This Long Yu, even single-handedly resisted the two Zhenling realm enforcement elders?”

“How this could be! This kid is only at Wudao ninth layer, how could he confront with a Zhenling realm powerhouse!”

“No, I have heard that Long Yu didn't only block these two enforcement elders, Zhengyi Zhen and Tan Wuchuan, but he also killed them at the scene!”

“Nonsense, this is more impossible! This Long Yu is at best is only a core disciple, if he has really killed law enforcement elders then he deserves to be blamed?”

All the people were discussing about Long Yu but most of them didn't believe it.

After all, in the eyes of the disciples of Wudao ninth layer, it was almost impossible to defeat a Zhenling realm powerhouse!

The people that had so far gathered in front of the main waiting hall of Zhentian Sect were now actually curious to know that what the Sovereign had to say on the matter.

Numerous people had already gathered in front of the main waiting hall of the

Sect and when Bu Xing and Long Yu arrived there, then many other disciples followed behind them and still their number was increasing and the mountain road was jammed!

The main waiting hall of Zhentian Sect was situated on the top of the hills. There was a big ravine platform and above it there was a grand and magnificent temple architecture. At the first sight of this hall, everyone felt a burst of repression coming from the clouds as if all of them were enveloped by it.

The main waiting hall of Zhentian Sect!

The main waiting hall was the centre of Zhentian Sect and whenever any important event occurred then the sovereign would call the sect elders and sect disciples together to the hall to discuss the related issues.

At this time, the people followed Bu Xing and Long Yu to arrive at the main waiting hall of the Sect!

“What’s the matter? Even if this Long Yu is sinner, to punish him doesn’t need to come to the main hall of Zhentian Sect. right?”

A young man dressed in white said from the crowd. He was somewhat surprised at this moment.

This youth in white dress was Yi Yan’s personal attendant, Liu Shucheng, who being scared of Long Yu had run away from the Sect valley.

To the side of Liu Shucheng stood a burly young man dressed in gray. It was actually Yi Yan, the 7th rank core disciple, who was impressively defeated by

Long Yu in the Sect valley.

Yi Yan and Liu Shucheng, these two men later arrived at the main waiting hall followed by many people, so he didn't hear the words of Bu Xing, and at this moment, of course, didn't know that Long Yu had come here not as a sinner.

At this time, Yi Yan's eyes flashed fiercely, and he stared at Long Yu.

Long Yu came back alive and also brought Elder Yu back and also came to Zhentian Sect with Bu Xing unexpectedly, these incidents were quite different from the original plan of my teacher, Wu Jianxin!

Yi Yan was free to think whatever he liked, but at present, he was not qualified to say anything.

Bu Xing together with Elder Yu arrived in front of the main waiting hall of Zhentian Sect and stooped there.

Long Yu and Lu Guan Ming also stopped behind them.

Around these four persons, about 1000 disciples of Zhentian Sect gathered and pointing to field they were discussing, of course, about Long Yu.

After all, in this incident Long Yu had become the central figure!

Whether as a sinner, or the rumors that he killed the two Zhenling realm law enforcement elders, Long Yu had come into the limelight among the people.

Many people secretly guessed that the things were not as simple as they thought. Most of the people still considered Long Yu as a sinner.

Because Wu Jianxin's rally was really too strong at this time.

Long Yu took the advantage of comatose of Elder Yu and abducted him and this incident was witnessed by hundreds of disciples of Zhentian Sect. Such heinous crimes, how could he be able to wash them?

The results would come out soon!

"Teacher, the disciples came!"

Standing in front of the huge gate of the main waiting hall of Zhentian Sect, Bu Xing said announcing the arrival of the disciples.

Along with these words, a middle-aged man in stripe clothing with a sturdy arm and black dwarf face walked out quickly.

The former was naturally Baiyun Zong, the Sovereign of Zhentian Sect, his two pinch mouth mustache had become his symbol.

And the latter was one of the 13 elders of the Sect, elder Wu Jianxin.

At this time, Wu Jianxin, with a hard color on his face came out and immediately stared at Long Yu.

“Long Yu, you dared to abscond for a long time, but eventually couldn’t be able to escape Sect punishment!”

Wu Jianxin shouted loudly pointing at Long Yu. He actually tried to forestall the opponent by a show of strength!

Long Yu listened to him and suddenly thought that Wu Jianxin’ heart was really strange. He actually didn’t know that his death was near at his hand, because he even didn’t know that the fact of his collusion with Wu Li of Knife Cut Sect was known to Elder Yu.

And most of the people in the field, when heard the words of Wu Jianxin, their hearts sank suddenly.

This Long Yu would really be sentenced on criminal charges and it seemed that he couldn’t escape death!

Many people suddenly waned to support Wu Jianxin and simultaneously began to accuse Long Yu and Yi Yan and Liu Shucheng were included among these people!

“Long Yu should be charged with treason and heresy, he wanted to kill our gracious figure Elder Yu, he should be cast aside!”

“Yes, in my opinion, he should be beheaded on the spot, in order to deter the other disciples of Zhentian Sect, otherwise such incidents will happen again in the future!”

“Kill this criminal directly, there is no need to pronounce any judgment!”

In the loud noise, almost all people looked at the vision of Baiyun Zong, the sovereign, after all he had the supreme decision-making power on any matter.

Chapter 89 Who is a sinner

When all people were clamoring that Long Yu must be punished while looking at Baiyun Zong, at that time, there was a faint smile on his face.

He rubbed his mustache with one hand and looked to Elder Yu Shuiyun who was dressed in black robe. At that time, there was a happy expression on his face.

“Elder Yu, I think, it would be appropriate if you announce now about who is a sinner!”

Baiyun Zong said with a smile. This brought a scowl on the face of Wu Jianxin and a puzzled expression appeared on his face.

Just when he and Baiyun Zong reached an agreement, and obviously came out to punish Long Yu, moreover Baiyun Zong also agreed to it. Then now, why did Baiyun Zong allow Elder Yu to speak on this matter?

Looking at the smile on Baiyun Zong’s face, Wu Jianxin suddenly felt that he was very likely to be fooled by this fellow!

However, he did not think that Elder Yu could be able to put out the things that were to come.

He thought that in such a short time even if Long Yu would have been able to acquire dragon head grass in the Teng snake abyss, in order to use it on Elder Yu to restore his intelligence, still it was almost impossible to obtain an evidence

regarding his collusion with Wu Li.

He and Wu Li recently met only once, and that meeting place was near the dead body of the giant poisonous snake on the river side.

“That giant poisonous snake was actually a Zhenling realm beast, so naturally it would have not been killed by Long Yu. So it could be said that it was impossible for Long Yu and Elder Yu to be present at that time in the vicinity of the river.....”

At that time, Wu Jianxin’s mind was extremely disturbed and he knew it quite well that it was really a critical moment for him.

He looked at Elder Yu and firmly set his mind that so long as Elder Yu would not produce ample evidence, he would not acknowledge anything!

“The toxin present in his body was due to the injury caused by the attack of the disciples of Qiansi Sect and this highly poisonous toxin will remain in his body for four days. But in this short time of four days, could it be possible for anyone to go to Teng snake abyss to find Yu Gan flower to spend on Elder Yu to cure him?”

Wu Jianxin thought this in his heart. He then looked at Elder Yu in such a manner as if he wanted to see him dead!

At this moment, over a thousand of disciples of Zhentian Sect gathered at the outside of the main waiting hall of the Sect, and they all were really anxious to think that this Long Yu who came to Zhentian Sect to make many records, would he really be put to death shortly?

Why did he actually abduct Elder Yu? What exactly did he want to do with Elder Yu?

These were the things that all surrounding people wanted to know!

“Who is a sinner? I think most of the disciples of Zhentian Sect think that Long Yu is a sinner, he wanted to abduct me, his intention was illegal!”

Elder Yu Shuiyun calmly said that. At that time, he was in a black robe and was standing firmly.

“Isn’t this true?”

Wu Jianxin snorted loudly: “However, I know that there has been some hatred between you and elder Wu Li of Knife Cut Sect!”

As these words came out, many people had started doubting about this thing. How could this matter go up to Knife Cut Sect?

Knife Cut Sect was one of the seven large sects of Tang state, and the disciples of Zhentian Sect obviously heard of it and were not unfamiliar with it.

They couldn’t think that Elder Yu Shuiyun had actually some grudges with elder Wu Li of Knife Cut Sect!

“I and Wu Li have some grudges, so what?”

Yu Shuiyun did not hurry, he asked with interest.

“Yu Shuiyun, this, Wu Li might have planned to hurt you.”

Wu Jianxin said and while looking at Long Yu he again said fiercely: “And according to my investigation, Long Yu is an accomplice of that Wu Li.”

As the words went out, there was an uproar in the audience.

Long Yu unexpectedly turned out to be an accomplice of Knife Cut Sect elder Wu Li, to kill Elder Yu?

“Damn, so this evil doer, shouldn’t remain in the world!”

“Colludes even with the people of other sect to kill our elder, the crime can’t be redeemed!”

“Can’t think that this Long Yu can be such person unexpectedly, before I thought him as a genius, who knows that he is actually a scouring!”

Many people made noise glaring towards Long Yu!

“Long Yu!”

And beside Long Yu, the disciple of Elder Yu, Lu Guan Ming angrily stared at him and said: “You actually colluded with an outsider, with a view to hurt my

teacher, I'll kill you!"

"Your talent is good, your loyalty is praiseworthy, but unfortunately you don't use your brain properly."

Long Yu looked at this black face man with one eye and said lightly.

"What did you say?"

Lu Guan Ming turned to be more and more angry. He wanted to take some action against Long Yu, but he saw that Elder Yu turned back and severely stared at him.

Seeing this stare of Elder Yu, Lu Guan Ming suddenly calmed down as a defeated cock and no longer dared to say even a word.

"Long Yu!"

At this time, an anxious female voice came from one the side of the field followed by a tender figure rushing out from the crowd and galloping towards the place where Long Yu was standing.

"Liao Lele?"

Long Yu heard the voice and turned his head back to see.

Really, when he turned his head and saw Liao Lele coming towards him. At that

time, she was looking extremely beautiful in a blue dress, but there was an anxious look in her eyes, still she was looking simply adorable.

For several days, Liao Lele had been worrying about something to go bad!

Although, the old white had consoled her that nothing wrong would happen to Long Yu. But, she was unable to control her concern for Long Yu.

She heard a moment ago that Long Yu came back to the Sect and she couldn't wait and ran over to this place and here, Wu Jianxin announced in the main waiting hall that Long Yu was in collusion with elder Wu Li of Knife Cut Sect!

This was, however, a heinous crime and betrayal of the Sect, so Liao Lele rushed out of the crowd and moved towards Long Yu.

“Are you really in a collusion with Wu Li?”

Liao Lele went around Long Yu and stared at him bitterly.

“What do you think?”

Long Yu asked back.

“Of course, I believe you can't.”

Liao Lele snorted lightly: “Otherwise I would not have run over to you. Or else don't you think would not have some of the people regarded me as one of your

accomplices?”

“.....”

Long Yu was speechless.

“You have gone too far up.”

Wu Jianxin shouted in a sinking voice.

At this time, his heart didn't feel happy when he saw that a female disciple actually ran to Long Yu's side. It was simply a hit on Wu Jianxin's face!

“Long Yu, you colluded with Knife Cut Sect elder Wu Li and promised him to bring Elder Yu to him, and in return, he promised you to give corresponding immortality to help you to promote your martial skill.”

Wu Jianxin loudly said staring at Long Yu: “Can you acknowledge your guilt?”

“What a joke, I, Long Yu, don't even know Wu Li, and you fasten the charge to me.”

Long Yu laughed: “Can you actually call Wu Li and let me and him confront to have a face to face look?”

“You are unexpectedly besotted, haven't yet acknowledged your guilt!”

Wu Jianxin snorted loudly: “I have concrete evidence, but if you acknowledge your guilt on your own initiative then leniency can be shown to you. If I put out the evidence of your betrayal of the Sect, there may be no way out.....”

“If you have evidence, why don’t you put it out. If I was found guilty, I will immediately commit suicide!”

Long Yu didn’t fear from Wu Jianxin and said that straightforwardly on his face!

“Well, Long Yu, this is not the way to speak with the elder, the tone used by you clearly shows that you have no respect for your elders in your heart. If such type of man gets any achievement in the future, it will be the evil of the Sect.”

Wu Jianxin’s face became more and more cold!

It was beyond his imagination. He was a Sect elder and he was being repeatedly intimidated by a trivial ninth layer disciple!

“Didn’t you just say that you have evidence?”

Long Yu saw that Wu Jianxin was trying to shift the subject, he could not help but sneered and in turn interrogated: “If you have evidence, then why don’t you quickly come up with evidence, it will make the people not to wait for long. Otherwise, the people will laugh at you that being a Sect elder you are labeling baseless charges on me!”

As these words went out, all the people were startled!

No one thought that Long Yu could use such sharp words, even in front of Wu Jianxin!

Almost all the disciples of Zhentian Sect, who originally thought that Long Yu was not a sinner, then felt that now Long Yu was finished.

Even if Long Yu could escape this disaster, how could he be able to continue as a core disciple in the Sect peacefully?

Now, he had offended Wu Jianxin and the future core disciples used to receive rewards from him, so he would definitely try to make things difficult for Long Yu!

Many people felt that Long Yu was really stupid, even he dared to speak such sharp words to Wu Jianxin. .

But Long Yu was such a guy, who simply didn't fear anybody.

At that time, Wu Jianxin was trembling with rage. He had not encountered such a talk with his disciples since he became the Pavilion elder of Zhentian Sect!

He had arranged a witness that came from Knife Cut Sect and that was the first disciple of that sect!

If that witness would come forward to prove that Long Yu was in collusion with Wu Lin, then there would be no chance for Long Yu to save his life.

But, at that time, Wu Jianxin was a bit puzzled, because that witness had yet

not returned to the Sect.

“Ha ha”

At this point, Elder Yu Shuiyun thought the time was almost up, and finally chuckled loudly.

He took out the Zhenling imprinting from his sleeve and said: “The evidence, this old man has actually, but it is not the evidence of the collusion of Long Yu and Wu Li, but.....”

As his voice fell, he displayed his Zhenling imprinting and suddenly a Zhenling power condensed picture flashed in the sky over his head!

In this picture, there appeared the shaded woods not far from a waterfall.

Under the waterfall, a corpse of a giant poisonous snake was lying, and then two figures almost simultaneously appeared in the riverside.

Wu Jianxin, Wu Li!

Watching this scene Wu Jianxin immediately knew that he had been exposed, and his dark face became darker. He couldn't think that when he actually met with Wu Li, Elder Yu was not only present at the scene, but also carved out the Zhenling imprinting of their meeting!

“Oh, run!”

Wu Jianxin immediately knew that it was not good for him to stay there even for a moment, so he quickly moved his footsteps and wanted to escape towards the side!

However, Baiyun Zong was already prepared for it!

“Young Bu Xing!”

Baiyun Zong shouted lightly! I

“I’ll go to block him!”

At that time, Bu Xing who was standing beside Elder Yu Shuiyun, he instantly came into action and his tight black dressed stature flashed and a sky hawk ghost immediately emerged.

Suddenly, sky hawk cry echoed in the surrounding!

“Sky hawk Zhenling, repression!”

Bu Xing shouted loudly and immediately overtook Wu Jianxin. Then his sky hawk Zhenling together with the terrible repression of Zhentian world influence completely suppressed Wu Jianxing on the spot!

Watching this scene, Long Yu’s heart thundered!

The power of this Bu Xing was so tyrannical that he could even dared alone to

chase the Pavilion elder, Wu Jianxin!

Prior to it, although Long Yu saw the strength of Bu Xing on several occasions, but he had not thought that he could be strong to this point unexpectedly.

But then he thought that earlier, Bu Xing killed the first Zhenling layer law enforcement elder. He was first core disciple of Zhentian Sect and was a disciple of the sovereign, he could cope with Wu Jianxin was quite normal.

But, at that time, many people were still concerned about the scene of the Zhenling imprinting of Elder Yu.

At once, they clearly understood that who was actually a sinner!

Wu Jianxin, the sect elder Wu Jianxin, even colluded with Knife Cut Sect elder Wu Li to kill Elder Yu and shifted the blame to Long Yu, simply had the heart like viper!

Suddenly, everyone looked to the one side.

Wu Jianxin's conspiracy was exposed, and now he was trying to escape, but relying on his own strength Bu Xing easily overtook him alone.

Bu Xing, the first core disciple of Zhentian Sect, showed his strength, but his real strength was yet to come.

Chapter 90 Three crimes

Everyone saw that Bu Xing moved fast and his Zhenling sky hawk ghost galloped like a meteor and rushed towards Wu Jianxin, who just wanted to run away.

This strike fused with the tyrannical coercion of Zhentian world influence which also made Long Yu feel a crazy fierce breath while standing not very far away!

“Bu Xing, Elder Yu and Wu Jianxin, these three people should be Zhenling third layer powerhouses!”

Long Yu watched the scene and thought to himself: “It seems that also in the field of Zhenling realm, there are different levels beginning from the first to the third layer, and dealing with a Zhenling first layer powerhouse by a third layer powerhouse is as simple as like dealing a Wudao first layer powerhouse by a Wudao third layer powerhouse.”

The same was also true in the case of third layer Zhenling powerhouses and their mutual strengths also used to be very different.

For example, at present, Wu Jianxin was chased by Bu Xing.

“Court death!”

At this time, because of the tyrannical repression of world influence of Bu Xing, Wu Jianxin felt that his mind was to burst, and when he further saw that Bu Xing

was coming towards him to catch him up, he immediately condensed his Zhenling and instantly a tiger ghost repression emerged behind him.

Wu Jianxin's Tiger Zhenling was quite different from the Tiger Zhenling of Wang Tianzhuo. The Royal Wang family actually practiced Tiger tactics and its practitioner could pour out Tiger Zhenling, but Wu Jianxin's tiger Zhenling simply could only release repression.

Thus, the nature and the power of both Zhenling was quite different with each other. Although, earlier the Tiger Zhenling of Wang Tianzhuo and now the repression of Wu Jianxin's Tiger Zhenling, seemed to be vulnerable in the face of sky hawk Zhenling of Bu Xing!

"Sky hawk, suppression!"

"The fist of soul moving!"

The whole stature of Bu Xing moved towards Wu Jianxin. Then his sky hawk Zhenling collided with the Tiger Zhenling of Wu Jianxin.

A deafening cry of sky hawk and a tiger's roar echoed in the surrounding!

Soon, the repression of Tiger Zhenling was completely suppressed by tyrannical coercion of sky hawk Zhenling!

By this time, Bu Xing's powerful soul moving fist arrived before Wu Jianxin. This soul moving fist was so powerful that its one punch could frighten the soul of the opponent!

Of course, Wu Jianxin wanted to resist this fist attack, but in haste he couldn't display any martial skill. Moreover, he also wanted to cast out agility type martial skill to dodge his fist attack, but the flow of the Xuan qi in his body had been tightly suppressed by tyrannical coercion of Bu Xing's sky hawk Zhenling, so it became impossible for him to display it.

The fist falls!

Bu Xing's fist integrated with the terrific coercion of the world influence and it hit on Wu Jianxin's chest and his whole stature flew up and fell on the ground like a broken kite.

However, Bu Xing's stature was actually gorgeously motionless, as stable as the rock of Gibraltar. Obviously, this showed the difference of strength between the two!

"Teacher, the good fortune doesn't fail in one's mission."

Bu Xing moved forward a few steps towards Wu Jianxin, who was then not in a position to display agility type of martial skill. Bu Xing picked him up and put him on his back and then threw him in face of Elder Yu.

At this moment, the Zhenling imprinting of Elder Yu had just come to an end.

That scene of the shaded woods under a waterfall, the meeting of Wu Jianxin and Wu Li completed, both respectively left the place, and this Zhenling imprinting scene actually became the basis for the conviction of Wu Jianxin.

In the face of this evidence, Wu Jianxin couldn't escape responsibility!

"Wu Jianxin, once the elder of my Zhentian Sect, do you know your crime?"

Then, Baiyun Zong occupied a commanding position. He bitterly looked at the injured and completely suppressed Wu Jianxin, and lightly asked.

Wu Jianxin's face looked fierce and it seemed that he still wanted to get up to run away, but he simply couldn't escape the tyrannical coercion of Zhentian world influence released by Bu Xing. Moreover, Bu Xing's soul moving fist damaged his body meridians, so at this moment, basically he couldn't display any martial skill.

"It seems that you don't want to acknowledge your guilt, then I, the sovereign would like to announce your three crimes!"

Baiyun Zong was on the rise, he looked all around over the thousand famous disciples who were present then in the field, and then he began mentioning the three crimes of Wu Jianxin.

"The first crime! Wu Jianxin, you are a Pavilion elder of Zhentian Sect, and in this capacity you actually oppressed the disciples in matter of occupying Sect valley. Your this action seriously hindered the practice order of the Sect, To occupy the Sect valley for practice was actually the right of the disciples. This is your arrogant and willful domineering crime!"

As these words went out, many people in the crowd started clapping and cheering!

It was said that Yi Yan was allowed to occupy the Sect valley not only for two or three days but for several months and this made many core disciples angry, but they didn't dare to say anything.

Now, they listened to Baiyun Zong judging Wu Jianxin's this action as a crime, so they were extremely happy!

"The second crime, you told this sovereign that you would soon issue sect duty to the core disciples to collect the dragon head grass, the blossomless oak fruit and Yu Gan flower for the treatment of Elder Yu, but you deliberately delayed the matter, you didn't really pay attention on the person of the same sect. This is the crime of seeing somebody in danger and doing nothing!"

While saying these words Baiyun Zong's eyes flashed a meaning!

Obviously, Baiyun Zong had kept watch on Wu Jianxin's actions from the very beginning. He actually wanted to catch a big fish, so he didn't make any statement on this matter before.

"Luckily, I the sovereign was already well prepared, personally went to Teng snake abyss as mentioned in the legends and collected the 3 types of herbs and handed them over to white old to refine them into a compounded drug."

Baiyun Zong said lightly.

Old white had yet not made his appearance in the crowd, but along with Baiyun Zong's these words he quickly walked out of the crowd and by rubbing his beard, he came over to Baiyun Zong with a smile.

Long Yu listened to these words, the old white refined the three herbs into a compounded drug?

“Originally the old white unexpectedly is alchemy teacher of Zhentian Sect, no wonder, at that time he had the therapy wondrous medicines, twice treated me!”

Long Yu was suddenly enlightened!

Moreover, Baiyun Zong was actually aware of all this, so he gave the task to the old white to prepare the compounded drug. His main worry was to save the life of Elder Yu at any cost.

Old white threw a small vase filled with compounded drug towards Elder Yu Shuiyun.

Elder Yu Shuiyun caught it with one hand and looked at old white with a grateful smile, and then opened that small porcelain vase and without looking at whether it was a true antidote, he swallowed the pills.

Undoubtedly, the disciples of Zhentian Sect gathered there were moved to see the trust between the two elders!

But, the whole stature of Wu Jianxin was shocked to see this. At this time, there was look of disbelief in his eyes.

Elder Yu Shuiyun, even took the purifier dose of compounded drug unexpectedly?

Baiyun Zong had already confessed that he had given three herbs to old white with a direction to prepare a compounded drug to spend on Elder Yu, but yet it had not been given to Elder Yu , perhaps to clutch this criminal first?

This was also extremely sinister!

Wu Jianxin didn't want to think that the fate he was encountering rightnow was completely brought upon by him only.

“The third crime!”

Baiyun Zong lowered his head to look at Wu Jianxin, whose eyes then shone with the color of disappointment: “As a pavilion elder, you, Wu Jianxin colluded with Knife Cut Sect elder Wu Li, allowed the core disciples to sneak into Zhentian Sect and they collapsed the bamboo house of Elder Yu and tried to kill him. Moreover, you falsely accused the Sect disciple Long Yu. You actually wanted to shirk the responsibility, this is the crime of revolting against the Sect!”

The crime of revolting against the Sect!

As the words came out, Wu Jianxin's face immediately turned as pale as death.

According to the custom of the Sect, if an elder or a disciple of the Sect was found guilty of the crime of revolting against the Sect, then as a punishment, his cultivation would be destroyed and he would be expelled permanently from the Sect!

“To break your Dantian, this sovereign wants personally to begin?”

Baiyun Zong looked at Wu Jianxin and lightly said.

“I will fight with you!”

Wu Jianxin was not willing to resign. At that time, his eyes flashed fiercely. He suddenly got up and swept his fist towards Baiyun Zong!

“Come to your sense!”

Baiyun Zong snorted loudly and cast his mustache away and immediately raised his hand and clapped down his palm!

Bang!

Tyrannical coercion fell from the clouds and completely enveloped Wu Jianxin followed by the emergence of a giant pike behind Baiyun Zong. This was actually the Zhenling of Baiyun Zong!

Long Yu immediately stared at it!

“This is a Zhenling giant pike, and it is quite different from other Zhenling that I have yet seen. The Zhenling of others just create shadows, but this giant pike seems to be real, and it also releases coercion, it is certainly more powerful than the other Zhenling that only create ghost forms!”

Was this the Zhenling realm above the third layer?

This Zhenling could materialize the shadows into reality and actually multiplied the force, and then it would be very difficult for the opponent to defeat it.

No wonder, Baiyun Zong could become the sovereign of the Sect, a host, that was really powerful than the common elders.

The real Zhenling pike released tyrannical coercion and tightly suppressed Wu Jianxin.

At that time, Wu Jianxin stared helplessly and was unable to move even a tiny bit, he could only look the fall of Baiyun Zong's palm above his Dantian.

Puff!

The great strength seeped and Wu Jianxin's Dantian was shattered by the palm hit of the sovereign and his whole stature spat blood and flew upside down and fell on the ground in front of Elder Yu and Long Yu and others!

"Your Dantian has been shattered, henceforth, you are expelled from Zhentian Sect, now, you can't return to the Sect!"

Baiyun Zong finally announced. Now, Wu Jianxin was no longer the elder of Zhentian Sect!

Seeing this situation, the two people in the crowd retreated quietly. They were actually Yi Yan and Liu Shucheng.

Yi Yan was a disciple of Wu Jianxin, but when Wu Jianxin encountered the mishap, he even didn't think to help him in any way, and he even didn't stay at the place for fear of being implicated in the case.

A misfortune had fallen on Wu Jianxin, but it didn't make any difference to Yi Yan. He was still a 7th ranked core disciple of Zhentian Sect!

Luotai Long, the 6th ranked core disciple, seemed to have died, and if so, then he would be able to become the 6th ranked core disciple and future achievements would be also limitless.....

He did not know that his behavior was being watched by some of the people.

Before long, Yi Yan was known for his harsh remarks, but at present, he saw with his own eyes the shattering of Dantian of his teacher Wu Jianxin by the sovereign, but he didn't say even a single word, rather he decided to move away from the place.

At that time, the hearts of many people really felt sad for Wu Jianxin!

"Bring elder Wu Li of Knife Cut Sect!"

At this time, this direction of the sovereign was circulated in Zhentian Sect and many pavilion elders were sent to grab Wu Li of Knife Cut Sect and to put him before the sovereign.

Long Yu looked back and saw that a few number of pavilion elders of Zhentian

Sect suppressed a tall black robed person and were coming with him towards the main gate of the hall of the Sect.

From the scene of Zhenling imprinting of Elder Yu, everyone recognized that this black robed person was actually elder Wu Li of Knife Cut Sect!

At this moment, Wu Li was subdued by many elders of Zhentian Sect and in seizing him they didn't face any difficulty!

Long Yu at first glance saw a black robed handsome youth among the elders. It was actually Li Bufan.

Li Bufan was a disciple of Baiyun Zong, but he was no longer a core disciple, he was made one of the elders of Zhentian Sect.

If the strength Li Bufan was compared with Bu Xing, then it was difficult to say who was actually more powerful?

Of course, at that time, Long Yu was actually curious to know who was more powerful between Li Bufan and Bu Xing, rather he was curious to know that how the problem of Wu Li would be disposed of!

After all, Wu Li was the elder of Knife Cut Sect and it wouldn't be appropriate to handle him like Wu Jianxin!

Long Yu thought so and the same was the thinking of everyone in the field.

All were actually curious to know that how exactly Baiyun Zong would dispose

of Wu Li?

Many elders didn't absolutely feel any panic in suppressing Wu Li. But Wu Li, at that time, didn't fear from anything. The elders of Zhentian caught him, so what?

He did not believe actually that people of Zhentian Sect would dare to put their hands on him!

Behind Wu Li, stood the entire Knife Cut Sect!

Chapter 91 Duanmu Conglong

Soon, under the suppression of the four famous elders of Zhentian Sect, Wu Li arrived in front of Baiyun Zong.

He lowered his head to glance at Wu Jianxin lying on the ground with shattered cultivation, and chuckled: "Sovereign Baiyun Zong's method is really good, even decided to start to discard the cultivation of Wu Jianxin, I, Wu Li admire and respect you"

"Why do you admire me, it's my duty?"

Baiyun Zong said lightly. He actually didn't care Wu Li and the giant Zhenling spike that he had condensed behind him, was still appearing.

At this moment, when Wu Li came to him, he waved his hand and suddenly the giant Zhenling spike began to tremble.

"What do you want to do?"

Wu Li's complexion suddenly changed!

At this time, from the appearance he could see that Baiyun Zong seemed to begin his hands on him, would he really dare to do so?

Of course, Wu Li was an elder of Knife Cut Sect and undoubtedly the entire Knife Cut Sect stood behind him!

If Wu Li was killed here then people of Knife Cut Sect would not take this matter in a polite way and it might even lead a war between both the sects!

“What I want to do?”

Baiyun Zong’s face revealed the color of surprise: “I’d like to ask you, recently you have been wandering in the vicinity of our Zhentian Sect, What do you want to do here? To kill the elder of our Zhentian Sect? ”

“Ha ha, Baiyun Zong you listen to me!”

Wu Li laughed: “I, Wu Li came here just to collect some of the herbs, and the rest of the things, totally I haven’t done.”

“Such being the case, who broke the bamboo room of our elder, who wanted to begin hands on the elder our sect?”

Baiyun Zong asked with great interest.

“This might have been done by the core disciple of Knife Cut Sect, Duan Mie, You are looking for him, you find him, this thing has nothing to do with me.”

Saying these words Wu Li acted perversely.

However, these word spread to the ears of the disciples of Zhentian Sect standing nearby, but they didn’t cast any impact on them. At that time, Wu Li’s face looked pale and weak.

Just now, the Zhenling imprinting of Elder Yu had revealed the truth, and no matter what Wu Li would say in his protection, he simply couldn't escape his responsibility of the crime against Elder Yu!

"Duan Mie, this time he has fled away, but you, Wu Li actually have fallen on our hands."

Baiyun Zong gave a calm smile and turned his hand immediately and a murderous breath burst out from the giant Zhenling pike and enveloped the black robed Wu Li instantaneously

"Do you dare?"

Wu Li saw this and his complexion turned pale.

"How I dare!"

Grasping the long pike in his hand, the whole stature of Baiyun Zong instantaneously changed into as if he stood in a battlefield with a decisive mood and his whole body revealed the terrific intention to kill!

Once he was a Tang general and once he decided to kill anybody, he never dragged his feet!

With an endless rage of anger, he shot away his long pike towards Wu Li!

There was still a look of disbelief on the face of Wu Li and this pike instantly

penetrated his chest and shattered his heart!

“Dares to kill the elder of Zhentian Sect, pardon couldn’t be given to the convict!”

Baiyun Zong stood grasping the pike in his hand. At this time, he looked completely domineering!

The whole stature of Wu Li fell on the ground. All the four elders of Zhentian Sect present there cheered the sovereign enthusiastically. They felt that their sovereign was really too domineering!

No matter, he was an elder of Knife Cut Sect, so what?

He dared to plan to kill the elder of Zhentian Sect, hence pardon couldn’t be given to him!

At this moment, all the disciples of Zhentian Sect were greatly influenced by the words of their sovereign. They had such a domineering sovereign, was there any need for them to worry about the prestige and safety of their Sect?

“Teacher, this

Bu Xing looked on and was slightly scowled.

“No harm, Knife Cut Sect wouldn’t pay any attention to such trivial matter.”

Baiyun Zong cast aside his mustache and the giant Zhenling pike dispersed.

Just before leaving, he stood firmly and facing the crowd, declared: “This time, the younger core disciple Long Yu has greatly contributed to the Sect by showing his active protection to Elder Yu, so he is rewarded with Sect valley practice for three days, and best quality immortality pills, condensate panacea”

Baiyun Zong finished these words and quickly stepped into the main hall of Zhentian Sect and disappeared from the front of all the people.

Almost all people cast envious eyes on Long Yu. This time he didn’t only obtain Sect valley practice for three days but was also rewarded with the best quality immortality pills, condensate panacea!

Condensate panacea used to be the dream of every Wudao master because with its help he could breakthrough in his cultivation by setting time to achieve congealment of Zhenling. The use of condensate panacea could increase 10% success rate in achieving congealment of Zhenling.

Even a Wudao master with insufficient talent could achieve the congealment of Zhenling with the help of a condensate panacea!

“Boy, what kind, satisfied?”

Elder Yu Shuiyun lightly smiled and looking at Long Yu asked.

“Good.”

Long Yu was naturally very satisfied with this reward and nodded with smile.

With condensate panacea, he could be able to condense the Zhenling earlier and could be able to step into Zhenling realm. Of course, the sooner would be better!

In less than six months, the time of life or death of Zhentian Sect was to arrive, the seven sect competition.

Long Yu knew about the agreement between the sovereigns of Qiansi Sect and Zhentian Sect, as well as the agreement of “the one who” and according to that agreement if Qian Sect would defeat Zhentian Sect in the seven sect competition, then it would have to surrender Zhentian tactics to Qiansi Sect.

Or vice versa!

Such being the case, the sovereign of Qiansi Sect and “the one who” would definitely try to win the seven sect competition.

“I don’t know, why the people of Qiansi Sect were so much confident of conquering Zhentian Sect in the seven sect competition?”

Long Yu was somewhat puzzled!

However in any event, within this six months time, Long Yu must improve his cultivation as soon as possible.

Whether he wanted to find the whereabouts of his father or to see his mother

Yu Yao or to solve the secret of the Nine Hidden Dragon Mark or to solve the mystery of the imperial concubine Yu, the strength was the most basic need.

Long Yu now couldn't slack even for a moment!

"Brother Long Yu, congratulations to you."

Soon, Bu Xing took out a condensate panacea and came in front of Long Yu and handed over a small porcelain vase to him with a smile.

"Thank you, brother Bu Xing."

Long Yu nodded and took the condensate panacea.

Suddenly, he felt someone not far away from him seemed looking at him and couldn't help but scowled and looked at the line of the sight of place of the opposite party.

This, one could see that standing at the edge of the main hall of Zhentian Sect, two young men were staring at Long Yu and were talking something to each other.

One of them, dressed in white and with cold face, was it not Yang Tiancuo, the 13th ranked core disciple of Zhentian Sect?

To the side of Yang Tiancuo stood a young man with a tall and upright posture looking at Long Yu with color of disdain and despise in his eyes!

“Is Duanmu Conglong, the 4th ranked core disciple, a Zhenling realm master of first layer at its peak level.”

Bu Xing narrowed his eyes and explained to Long Yu. .

“4th ranked, Duanmu Conglong.”

Long Yu nodded and understood each other’s identity.

Before he recalled, Yang Tiancuo warned him not to go to Ling clan villa to compete for treasures, and said that if he would do so then there would be no guarantee for his life.

Now it looked like, this Yang Tiancuo relied on, was this Duanmu Conglong, the 4th ranked core disciple of Zhentian Sect?

Duanmu Conglong was a Zhenling realm Wudao master of first layer at its peak level, and he was regarded as a powerful core disciple in the Zhentian Sect, however, his personal contacts with Ling Han were very strong.

Was it possible that Ling Han might have invited Yang Tiancuo to come to Ling clan villa and Yang Tiancuo would have secretly invited Duanmu Conglong to go there?

Long Yu couldn’t guess now, but he was confident that he would understand everything by the time when he would go to Ling clan villa!

He was carrying the condensate panacea, and then he said goodbye to Elder

Yu, Bu Xing, white old, Liao Lele and several other people, and turned around to walk towards Sect valley.

Next, he could practice three days in Sect valley and could try to break through.

After coming out from the Sect valley, it would be the time to go to Ling clan villa!

And when Long Yu left the place, Yang Tiancuo and Duanmu Conglong took back their line of sight and began to talk to each other.

“Brother Duanmu, I have just heard that this Long Yu single-handedly killed two Zhenling realm enforcement elders of Zhentian Sect.”

Yang Tiancuo stood respectfully to one side of Duanmu Conglong and at that time, his eyes were shining with the color of wonder.

“You don’t know much about it.”

Duanmu Conglong lightly said, his eyes were showing the color of disdain: “How a ninth layer Wudao master could be able to kill a Zhenling realm powerhouse, even if it’s true, it’s only because of the help of the powerful Zhenling of Elder Yu.”

“Also right,, but brother Duanmu, if he also went to Ling clan villa to grab the coveted earthly treasures that we only want to.....”

Yang Tiancuo said revolving his eyeballs.

Duanmu Conglong narrowed his eyes and fighting intention emerged in his pupils: “I have heard that Ling clan villa has imminent earthly treasures and for their possession powerhouses from Allure Court Sect and Tibetan Fire Temple Sect are also planning to go there, and our opponents will really be the powerhouses of Allure Court Sect and Tibetan Fire Temple Sect!”

“Brother Duanmu is really far-sighted, I, Yang Tiancuo feel ashamed of my inferiority, ha ha!”

Yang Tiancuo laughed thinking highly of Duanmu Conglong.

“If you congeal Zhenling, the vision is naturally different from the common people, for example, Long Yu.”

Duanmu Conglong lightly said with a smile: “This boy all alone, wants to go to Ling clan villa to seize the treasure, even I don’t put my hands on him, some people want his life, and he has no chance to achieve the congealment of Zhenling!”

The implication was that Yang Tiancuo actually relied on Duanmu Conglong in order to save his life, and only by doing so it was possible for him to reap some benefits!

Regarding this, Yang Tiancuo didn’t refute Duanmu Conglong, because he felt that what Duanmu Conglong said was right.

The rumors were there that the rich treasures of Ling clan villa had attracted

the attention of Zhenling realm powerhouses from different sects and many Zhenling powerhouses of Tibetan Fire Temple Sect and Allure Court Sect were also going to Ling clan villa to seize the treasures.

So, it was simply a wishful thinking for a Wudao ninth master to get the treasures!

As Long Yu left the place, Lu Guan Ming, the disciple of Elder Yu also left the main hall of Zhentian Sect.

Although, Elder Yu had taken the antidote, but Elder Yu still needed to take rest to be able to fully recover.

White old and Liao Lele also returned to the Zhentian canyon.

Liao Lele was somewhat unhappy when she saw Long Yu to turn around to leave and to walk towards Sect valley, but she also knew that at present the most important work for Long Yu was his practice and he had no time to stay and chat with her.

Bu Xing watched Long Yu leaving the place and smiled lightly and then immediately turned around to leave.

Long Yu needed time to practice and he was walking towards the Sect valley, should he be blamed for it?

It must be said that the efforts made by Long Yu behind this walk would never be less than anyone else!

Just Zhentian Sect had received a shock, the cultivation of elder Wu Jianxin was shattered by the sovereign and he was also expelled out from Zhentian Sect forever, and now many changes were to be followed in Zhentian Sect.

Long Yu was once again in Sect valley, and this time, Sect valley was not occupied by such fellow like Yi Yan!

“Sect valley practice for three days, see if I can consolidate the repressive principles of Zhentian world influence, and if I can do so, then there would be an assurance for me to step into the first layer of Zhenling realm.”

Long Yu thought to himself and stepped into Sect valley and delved deep into the consolidation of the repressive principles of Zhentian world influence!

Chapter 92 Grand Accord

When Long Yu stepped into the Sect valley and began to practice which he had to continue for three days. On the other hand, life was full of bustling activities in a luxurious garret that was situated in the Tang Imperial Hall, the most prosperous area of the entire Tang state.

This luxurious garret, called “Golden Pavilion”, actually belonged to the industry of Liu Imperial family.

This “Golden Pavilion” was actually the most important entertaining centre for all the guests who visited it. These guests were generally rich people and common martial artists of Tang Imperial Wall, simply didn’t have the qualifications to enter it.

At this time, in the most precious Grand Accord of “Golden Pavilion”, a man wearing a golden silk fabric was sitting on the luxurious seat curling his legs upwards and two beautiful women were thumping his shoulders.

This young man was actually Wang Tianzhuo, that once had to deal with Long Yu in Yu Guan city!

Wang Tianzhuo came from one of the four imperial families of Tang state, and obviously he had the qualifications to sit in the Grand Accord of “Golden Pavilion” and enjoy its highest quality service.

At this time, a hurried sound of footsteps of a person was transmitted from the outside of the Grand Accord followed by a voice: “Mr. Wang, may I come in?”

I have certain news related to Long Yu.”

As Wang Tianzhuo listened to the voice he immediately knew that this person was Liu Mingcheng, the son of the first wife of the Imperial Liu family!

Although, the matter was of great concern to Wang Tianzhuo, but before entering the Grand Accord Liu Mingcheng thought it better to first report it loudly to him.

After all, Liu Mingcheng knew that Wang Tianzhuo and two beautiful women were inside the Grand Accord, and he didn't know exactly what he was doing there?

“Come in.”

Wang Tianzhuo quickly grasped the meaning of something and jumped from his seat with his eyes shining with the color of joy.

At that time, this waste Long Yu was only at Wudao eight layer and could be able to escape the injury caused by his condensed Zhenling, it was simply unforgivable!

After coming back from Yu Guan city, Wang Tianzhuo had been thinking about going to kill Long Yu and to wash off his shame, therefore he sent Liu Mingcheng to Zhentian Sect to inquire about Long Yu.

Now, the results finally came out, would these results not make Wang Tianzhuo excited?

“Mr. Wang, I, Liu Mingcheng went to Zhentian Sect for several days and have collected certain news related to that boy.”

Liu Mingcheng pushed the door to enter and saw two beautiful women standing on the one side and waved his hand impatiently: “You exit first, I have something important to discuss with Mr. Wang!”

“Haven’t gone yet?”

Obviously, Wang Tianzhuo also impatiently wanted to know the news of Long Yu, so he also scolded these two maid servants.

“Servants retire.”

Two beautiful maid servants quickly bowed their heads and hurriedly left the Grand Accord.

Now, Wang Tianzhuo and Liu Mingcheng, only these two persons were left in the room. Liu Mingcheng finally arrived at the side of Wang Tianzhuo, stood and said: “Mr. Wang, I checked out, Long Yu grew up in Ling clan villa since his childhood!”

“Ling clan villa?”

Wang Tianzhuo’s eyes flashed fiercely.

He had certainly heard about Ling clan villa, but it was only one of the small

collateral branches of the families of Tang state.

The entire Ling clan villa didn't have even a single Zhenling realm master.

It was beyond imagination that Long Yu actually grew up in Ling clan villa since his childhood unexpectedly!

More recently, the news of the rich earthly treasures of Ling Clan Villa spread everywhere stirring up many people jealous.

“The last time Long Yu went to Yu Guan city and Linglie of Ling Clan Villa also happened to be there to celebrate the occasion of Feng Yun's becoming of the head of Feng Clan, but a conflict took place and Long Yu broke one arm of Linglie and defeated Feng Yun.”

Liu Mingcheng continued to say.

The news related to Long Yu was actually not Liu Mingcheng's own guess but the domestic servants of the Liu family went to Zhentian Sect and secretly inquired about him!

Obviously, in this matter Baiyun Zong acted attentively. He already thought that someone might come to probe the identity of Long Yu, therefore he already spread the rumor that Long Yu grew up in Ling clan villa since his childhood!

Naturally, when the domestic servants of Liu family went to Zhentian Sect then they got this false news about Long Yu and thus avoided the premature exposure of the identity of Long Yu!

Although, this rumor certainly couldn't last long, but could only hide the truth for sometime providing some security to Long Yu for the time being, otherwise if the identity of Long Yu would be exposed, there would be a lot of troubles.

In fact, if Liu Mingcheng had showed his intelligence and sent the domestic servants of Liu family to Yu Guan city then it would have been easy to know that Long Yu was not the person of Ling clan villa.

However, it was pity that at that time, Wang Tianzhuo's Tiger Zhenling was completely routed by Sky hawk Zhenling of Bu Xing, and by being distressed by this defeat he fled from Yu Guan city, so Liu Mingcheng couldn't dare to send Liu family servants to Yu Guan city to inquire about Long Yu.

“Are you sure that this investigated news is true?”

Wang Tianzhuo scowled.

“I sent three domestic servants of Liu family to Zhentian Sect to inquire the matter and the conclusion that I have reached is that Long Yu is a person of Ling clan villa, they can't be wrong.”

Liu Mingcheng replied.

“If this is the matter, then why did Feng Yao's father try to protect Long Yu in Yu Guan city?”

Wang Tianzhuo actually didn't believe the news of Long Yu brought by Liu

Mingcheng.

If Long Yu grew up in Ling clan villa, then what was actually the relation of Feng Longsong with Long Yu? Why Feng Longsong was so much desperate to protect Long Yu even at the risk of his life?”

“This I don’t know, it was a family meeting of Feng clan, Long Yu went there to attend it, because of sentiment Feng Longsong would have tried to protect.....”

Liu Mingcheng also didn’t understand it clearly, but now he could only believe the news brought by the domestic servants of Liu family.

“Well, I will not speak about it, anyway, I am going to Ling clan villa.”

Wang Tianzhuo lightly ahem, the recent rumors of treasures had naturally attracted his attention!

“Mr. Wang is wise.” `

Liu Mingcheng said in a flattering way: “If you see that Long Yu there, you can easily kill him, moreover, you can also find out whether he is a person of Ling clan villa or not!”

“Yes, but the most important thing of this trip is that treasures, as for that waste Long Yu, I will have plenty of time to deal with him!

Wang Tianzhuo’s eyes flashed fiercely.

“Mr. Wang goes into action, no matter what treasures, it will be naturally to Mr. Wang, nobody would dare to fight with him.”

Liu Mingcheng immediately said in a flattering manner.

“That is.”

Wang Tianzhuo said proudly, and then suddenly thought of something and said: “By the way, send men to Hanbing Sect to inform junior sister apprentice Feng Yao to go to Ling clan villa, If I get that treasures, I would like to present it to junior sister apprentice Feng Yao!”

“Mr. Wang, I’ll manage it!”

Liu Mingcheng said respectfully: “You enjoy something in this garret, when I arrange the manpower, and then we together will set out to Ling clan villa!”

“No, I will first go on a royal trip to Ling clan villa”

Wang Tianzhuo shook his head: “It is said that heavy treasures have greatly attracted the attention of Zhenling realm masters, to prevent any accident, go and ask my ancient butler to accompany me in this trip, and there is no space for you to go with me.”

As these words went out, suddenly there flashed a hint of the color of surprise in Liu Mingcheng’s eyes.

Ancient butler!

Everyone knew that the Imperial family royal butler, Hebo was Zhenling realm master!

“It would be naturally good if the ancient butler accompanies you in this trip, but the ancient butler is always busy with managing huge royal business, perhaps he will have no time to accompany Mr. Wang in this trip.....?”

Liu Mingcheng honestly said these words cautiously, observing the complexion of Wang Tianzhuo.

Although, Wang Tianzhuo was a person of the royal family, but he was not in the direct line of the descendant of the royal family, but was a talented collateral branch junior and once had been praised by the ancient butler, Hebo.

Relying on this relationship, Wang Tianzhuo thought of inviting the ancient butler to accompany him in this trip.

But the ancient butler Hebo was the main figure in the Tang state entrusted with the task of managing the huge royal affairs. Could it be possible for him to spare out time to go with Wang Tianzhuo to protect him?

Wang Tianzhuo heard these words of Liu Mingcheng and his face sank down: “If the ancient butler will not go personally, then arrange two Zhenling realm bodyguards for me, that will be also enough for me!”

“That is, that is, Mr. Wang, I first go to Hanbing Sect to give your message to Feng Yao, you see!”

Liu Mingcheng hastily piled up a flattering smile.

Wang Tianzhuo then returned to normal mood. He left the Grand Accord and walked away in the direction of the Imperial palace!

The heavy treasures of Ling clan villa, he must win!

.....

At this time, Long Yu didn't know that Wang Tianzhuo again made him his target and he was one of the important persons to go to Ling clan villa.

In Zhentian Sect in the Sect valley, Long Yu felt the rich principle of Zhentian world influence dropping from the clouds and he began its unceasing absorption to comprehend Zhentian world principle completely.

In three days of time, he made a great progress in comprehending Zhentian world influence!

“Now I can play Zhentian world influence 20% more powerful than before, even I am in a position to comprehend Zhentian domain in the near future, but I miss a turning point.....”

Long Yu thought in his mind.

This turning point for the comprehension of Zhentian domain was quite rare and it simply didn't depend on the wish of a Wudao master. It was almost impossible to comprehend Zhentian domain practicing it only by sitting. To

achieve it, he would have to have fighting experiences, he would have to see certain unique landscapes, he would have to observe and emulate the fights of some powerhouses, and only these activities could help him in comprehending Zhentian domain.

However, if Long Yu got success in comprehending Zhentian domain, then he would be the only person to comprehend Zhentian domain in the entire Zhentian Sect, it was only feared that Baiyun Zong might be knowing about it!

Even Long Yu was not sure whether Baiyun Zong could comprehend Zhentian domain because when he was in his middle age then he became the Sovereign of Zhentian Sect and prior to it he was one of the Tang generals. He would have definitely practiced the Heart Law, but Zhentian tactics was quite different from it.

“No matter what, three days of time crossed, and now it was the time to go to Ling clan villa.”

Long Yu got up and left the practice that he did for three days in the Sect valley and went to Zhentian horse stable to choose a boisterous horse and then rode away in the direction of Ling clan villa.

Meanwhile, in Zhentian Sect, Yang Tiancuo and Duanmu Conglong separately rode away on the boisterous horse in the direction of Ling clan villa.

In Tang Imperial City, Wang Tianzhuo took two Zhenling realm bodyguards and Liu Mingcheng as his attendant and rushed towards Ling clan villa.

In Hanbing Sect, Feng Yao received the message of Wang Tianzhuo threatening

her to go to Ling clan villa so that he could present the treasures to her if he seized them.

If she didn't go to Ling clan villa then Wang Tianzhuo might go to Yu Guan city to create trouble for her father, Feng Longsong!

And after Feng Yao, there was also one person from Hanbing Sect to go to Ling clan villa. This person had thin physique and flirtatious look.

This person was actually the 3rd ranked core disciple of Hanbing Sect and a Zhenling second layer master, named Qiang Hua buxie, who also planned to go to Ling clan villa!

“Long Yu, you have killed my brother and sister, this enmity will cost you heavily!”

Qiang Hua buxie's eyes flashed with bloodthirsty color!

In addition, the people of Tibetan Fire Temple Sect and Allure Court Sect of Tang State also got the news of that rich treasures and many strong powerhouses of these two sects were also going to Ling clan villa.

Suddenly, Ling clan villa was going to be stormed!

Chapter 93 Ling clan villa

Riding on the back of boisterous horses, two beautiful young girls were galloping fast on the road that led to Ling clan villa.

The girl on the front was roughly 20 years old, and at that time she wore a black vigor attire sticking to the attractive curve of her stature, sketching out a stunning and intoxicating beauty that almost could make any man go crazy.

The appearance of this beautiful girl was extremely attractive, her snow white and busy cheek was impeccable, her black hair was hanging on her lower back and her beautiful eyes were like stars.

In her waist, cross hung two red handle swords with white streamer flashing on their blades, obviously, they were unusual battle weapons!

It was actually Liu Yan, one of the core disciples of Allure Court Sect, which was one of the seven large sects of Tang State. She was highly talented, and at the age of merely 20 years, she had entered the second layer of Zhenling realm!

She was to become the rising hope of the Liu Imperial family and was really the brightest star among all the famous Wudao masters of the new generation of the Liu Imperial family.

And the girl behind her, although was also beautiful, but when compared with the front girl, she was slightly less beautiful.

“Senior sister apprentice Liu, you say we are going to Ling clan villa, will we

meet Mo Fengming there?”

The behind girl seemed to fantasize something, while asking Liu Yan, her face lightly blushed.

The girl, named Xinyue Ya, was at the first layer of Zhenling realm and had the same impressive strength like senior sister apprentice Liu Yuan.

“Don’t spend all day thinking about Mo Fengming.”

Liu Yuan lightly smiled: “He is now very busy, how can he spare time to go to Ling clan villa? The north ancient Mongolia country has again invaded our country, the nine thirty-year old masters like him have already been reassigned the task by the Emperor of Tang State to go to establish meritorious deeds by killing the enemies.”

“Then, you will get the lunar debris of this Ling clan villa, can anybody compete with senior sister apprentice?”

Xinyue Ya’s eyes brightly twinkled: “Now in young generation, except for the nine thirty-year old masters of Tang State, it can be said that you are the strongest!”

“That is quite hard to say.”

Liu Yuan shook her head: “In this world, talented people are everywhere, even my position is nothing in the entire mainland of Tang State, one must not be arrogant and complacent.”

“Yes Yes Yes.”

Xin Yueya dug her mouth and said impatiently and then suddenly she thought of something and her eye balls turned: “Senior sister apprentice, I have heard that you have a cousin in Hanbing Sect. called, Feng Yao.”

“Um?”

Liu Yuan’s pupils glistened.

“I have heard that this Feng Yao has been slandering senior sister apprentice in Hanbing Sect!”

Xinyue Ya said bitterly: “I know a disciple of ice gate, before I asked that fellow whether he knew senior sister Liu Yuan, then he said about you to be arrogant, domineering and tyrannical, and this really irritated me!”

Arrogant, domineering and tyrannical, these words and present Liu Yuan, actually couldn’t be related together in any way!

It meant, obviously someone was maliciously slandering Liu Yuan in Hanbing Sect.

Liu Yuan heard this and smiled: “That was the childhood matter, I had actually bullied Feng Yao in childhood. However, afterward, I have apologized to her several times. But unfortunately, that girl didn’t appreciate the kindness rendered to her.”

“Senior sister apprentice, she slandered you, did you really apologize to her? You are really too good!”

Xinyue Ya somewhat didn't understand clearly.

“After all, I first bullied her in childhood, apologized to her, nothing.”

Liu Yuan smiled indifferently: “But, this girl has aimed at me, wants to exceed me.”

“Wants to exceed senior sister apprentice, is really dreaming.”

Xinyue Ya cracked into a chuckle: “Yes senior sister apprentice, the previous time major General Long invited you to view the flowers, why didn't you go? This fellow has clarified that he wants to pursue you!?”

“He invited several other people, not only me.”

Liu Yuan scowled, seemed to hate that “Major Long”: “I don't like him.”

“Oh.”

Xinyue Ya spat her tongue, but thought in her heart that this senior sister was really different, was unusually refined.

But now Major General Long of Tang States was the son of the first wife the

Long family and she could get his attention then it could have greatly helped in the rise of the Liu family in future!

Young girls who wanted to hook on Major general Long were thousands in number!

“Can’t think that Liu Yuan disdained Major General Long and frankly said that she didn’t like him. She even didn’t know that what type of man this Major general Long was, would he be able to enter into the eyes of Liu Yuan?”

Xinyue Ya was thinking , while following Liu Yuan on the way to Ling clan villa.

The veins of Ling clan villa soon appeared in front of them.

It was actually continuous hills and there was gloomy atmosphere in the entire sierra, even it was unable to grow trees.

The whole mountain range was all iron grey rock, even one couldn’t see a green embellishment!

The Ling clan villa was located in the centre of this ring like sierra managed by the Tang Emperor producing various types of rich ores.

These ores could be refined to use to make battle weapons by the Emperor’s clan, particularly the battle weapons like long spears that were issued to the regiments of the soldiers of Tang State.

Villa Langkawi was really located in a remote area and full of gloomy

atmosphere!

.....

Long Yu alone rode the line and finally on the third day after the departure, he came to Ling clan villa.

After entering the ring-like sierra, Long Yu clearly felt a gloomy air, and if a common person lived for a long time in this place, perhaps his life would be reduced a lot because the invasion of this gloomy air!

“Fortunately Nine Hidden Dragon qi can counter-balance this gloomy air making it not to have any effect on my body.....”

Long Yu was thinking, while moving forward towards Ling clan villa.

At the foot of the hill, a piece of continuous architectural complex appeared before him. This was actually Ling clan villa which was in fact equal to the size of a city.

Actually mining workers of Tang State lived in this villa and were subjected to the jurisdiction of Ling clan villa.

“Is larger than Yu Guan city!”

Long Yu rode to enter the architectural complex and threw a glance over it and saw that many miners were coming up to the horse-drawn vehicles containing ores which were to be sent by efficient escorting to the Imperial city of Tang

State.

The body of every miner was corroded by the gloomy air of Ling clan villa, although usually it didn't have anything to affect to them, but in reality it could reduce the life span of every miner by 10 years or even 20 years!

"Can't think that Tang State also has such place."

Long Yu scowled and rode away towards the central committee of the architectural complex.

Ling Han in his letter had clearly said that he would be waiting for him in Lin clan mansion, so he directly came to the Ling clan mansion.

Along the way, Long Yu saw many officers with good cultivation inspecting and monitoring the activities of the people in Ling clan villa. These officers were not only expected to supervise the miners, but were also entrusted with the task of supervising action and movement every person dropping in Ling clan villa.

And this was the power of the royal family of Tang State in the country. The strength of the royal family of Tang State was always in the dominant position throughout in the country!

"I don't know how is Ling Han."

Long Yu quickly rode a horse to arrive at the Ling clan mansion and then he dismounted from it.

He looked up and saw that the Ling clan mansion was larger than the mansion of Feng clan and the entire construction wall was very thick, possibly to prevent the invasion of the gloomy air that prevailed in Ling clan villa.

Two Wudao masters stood at the gate of the Ling clan mansion. They saw Long Yu coming towards them after dismounting from the horse.

“Wudao master of ninth heavy layer!”

They saw the cultivation of Long Yu, and their leisurely and carefree complexion immediately changed and they hastily moved towards Long Yu to welcome him.

“So, do you come to Ling clan villa to find someone?”

One of them asked with tense look on his face.

Both of them were placed at the entrance of Ling clan villa to guard the door, one was at Wudao fourth layer and the other was at Wudao fifth layer and at this time, a Wudao ninth heavy layer powerhouse approached to them, how could they be not nervous?

“Is Ling Han in?”

Long Yu freely asked.

“Ling Han?”

They looked at each other, and from their looks they seemed to be surprised.

“In In, the son, you please come in, I’ll take you to Ling Han.”

One of them said cautiously, and immediately made the movement of invitation.

Long Yu nodded and followed them to enter the Ling clan mansion.

“Ling Han, how is he in Ling clan villa?”

Long Yu thought and then he specifically asked one, because he saw that when he uttered the name “Ling Han,” the expression of these two gatekeepers seemed to be strange.

“Oh, he is son of the head of Ling clan villa, but the previous head of the clan passed away for more than a decade.”

The man that led the way said, while asked discretely: “Son, your relationship with Ling Han.....”

Obviously, he actually didn’t know the identity of Long Yu, so he didn’t dare to speak.

“I am Ling Han’s good friend.”

Long Yu said.

“So that’s how it is.”

That person relaxed obviously and his expression also became a bit natural: “In these years the condition of the master Ling Han has not been good, after the death of the previous head of the clan, the new clan head deliberately suppressed Ling Han and his sister, making him have no choice but to leave Ling clan villa and to join Zhentian Sect with his younger sister!”

Younger sister?

Long Yu listened to it and somewhat felt strange, he had not heard that Ling Han also had a younger sister.

“Not long ago, Master Ling Han came back to Ling clan villa, but actually can live with his younger sister in the side yard, son I will bring you to look for him.”

He continued: “It is strange to say, today the two persons have already come to look for Ling Han, son you are the third.”

The third?

Long Yu said nothing, but was actually considering in his heart, were they Yang Tiancuo and Duanmu Conglong?

Long Yu followed him and soon came to a secluded side yard of Ling clan mansion!

This side yard was located in the corner of Ling clan mansion, and in reality it was meant for the domestic servants, but now, Ling Han lived in this remote side yard with his younger sister!

Long Yu looked at the environment of the side yard and then knew that the fortune of Ling Han was really not good in Ling clan villa.

“Son, please enter, Master Ling Han is inside. Small first retire!”

The man came to the side door of the yard and said, then he turned to leave.

Long Yu stepped into the side yard, and saw that the hall had a lot of people, although its environment was crude, but the people were actually harmonious!

“Ling Han, Lu Guan Ming.”

Long Yu caught a glimpse of two acquaintances, and another a young man and a girl, but didn't see Yang Tiancuo and Duanmu Conglong.

He smiled and stepped into the hall, and his entry in the hall suddenly attracted the attention of four!

Chapter 94 Lunar debris

Long Yu really didn't expect Lu Guan Ming to come here.

He stepped into the hall, but didn't get enough time to speak as Ling Han moved towards him with a face of warm welcome: "Brother Long, you finally came, a few days ago I heard about the things in Zhentian Sect, I can't think that you have really entered Wudao ninth layer and even can fight with a Zhenling realm powerhouse!"

Long Yu looked at the side of Lu Guan Ming.

Ling Han returned to Ling clan villa for a long time, this matter, Lu Guan Ming would have definitely told him.

"Brother Ling Han, do you actually know brother Lu?"

Long Yu questioned.

"Ah, brother Lu, his straightforward nature, his passionate sense of justice, before he met me."

Ling Han said with a smile, then seemed to think something and scowled.

"That Yang Tiancuo just doesn't know the good and the evil, unexpectedly said that he would follow Duanmu Conglong to go directly to the place of valuable treasures, disdains with us."

The black face of Lu Guan Ming was dodging an angry color. It was very obvious, Tiancuo and Duanmu Conglong didn't come with them, so he was very unhappy!.

Wasn't he trying to gang up with Duanmu Conglong?

Why he was looking down on him and Ling Han!

"Well, brother Lu, don't get angry, we now have brother Long Yu together, is enough."

Ling Han laughed and patted the shoulder of Lu Guan Ming.

"Also right."

Lu Guan Ming also smiled and looked to Long Yu with a feeling of some reverence in his eyes.

Now his misunderstanding with Long Yu had come to an end. Several days ago when Long Yu returned To Zhentian Sect with his teacher Elder Yu and the truth was revealed that it was actually Wu Jianxin who wanted to kill Elder Yu and Wu Li was executed, then Luo Guan Ming developed a great respect for Long Yu.

Stepping into Wudao ninth layer was in itself a rare thing. Moreover, not to mention, Wudao ninth layer of Long Yu was not a common Wudao ninth layer.

Even the Zhenling realm first layer powerhouses were nothing in front of Long

Yu!

“Yes, brother Long, I want to introduce you.”

Ling Han remembered something, immediately smiled and put out his hand to aim at the girl that stood in one side: “My younger sister, Ling Yiyue, is a disciple of Zhentian Sect, but is only an outside disciple of the Sect, has just entered Wudao sixth layer.”

“Ling Yiyue.”

Long Yu nodded his head, and looked at the girl.

He saw the personal appearance of that girl was extremely beautiful, her pupils were dodging a miraculous glow, she had delicate facial features, and from her look she should be less than sixteen years.

Long Yu had never thought that Ling Han would have actually such a pretty lovable younger sister, and in such a young age she had reached at Wudao sixth layer, and undoubtedly her this talent was not inferior to Feng Yao!”

“You are Long Yu, my brother and I always talk about you, brother Lu praises you wonderfully!”

She said slightly with some curiosity looking at Long Yu.

“What they say is simply an exaggeration, I am an ordinary Wudao master, but with better luck.”

Long Yu gave a casual smile.

“Sometimes, luck is also a strength, but depending only on luck diminishes the scope of going far on the way of Wudao.”

Another youth present in the hall said lightly: “Since all people have come together, we can start it?”

“Oh, this is core disciple of Zhentian Sect, Yao Yan at 5th rank, can congeal Zhenling, is a big help for our trip.”

Ling Han hastily introduced Long Yu to Yao Yan.

Yao Yan?

Long Yu looked towards that youth and saw that his eyebrows were like hawk hook, the bridge of his nose was high and from his facial expression he looked quite contrary to his name.

So proud!

“If I hadn’t wanted to see the face of junior sister apprentice, Ling Yiyue, I, Yao Yan wouldn’t have come to this remote back water place and wouldn’t have become a companion of the people like you.

The majority of time, the vision of Yao Yan stayed at Ling Yiyue, and he had disdain look not only for Long Yu, but even for Ling Han!

All of a sudden, Long Yu didn't have a favorable impression for this Yao Yan, even Bu Xing, the first core disciple, was not so arrogant.

This Yao Yan was just a 5th ranked core disciple, and has just stepped into Zhenling realm, but he was so arrogant!

"You shouldn't have come over here, I haven't asked you to come."

Ling Yiyue lightly snorted to say, at that time, she looked extremely cute.

"Junior sister apprentice Ling Yiyue, don't misunderstand me, in any event, I will stand by your side, protecting your security!"

Yao Yan said with a smile, he seemed to have the idea to pair with Ling Yiyue.

Long Yu watched it and scowled.

Yao Yan's this look didn't appear good to Long Yu.

For Ling Han's sister, Ling Yiyue, Long Yu really didn't want to see her falling into the pit of fire.

But, this Ling Yiyue obviously was not that simple little girl!

After all, Ling Yiyue and Ling Han together had experienced very difficult days in Ling clan villa, so naturally they would not trust people so easily.

There was much possibility that this Ling Yiyue and Ling Han were using Yao Yan for their purpose.

But, after all, Yao Yan was a Zhenling powerhouse and if he wanted to do something to Ling Yiyue, then Ling Yiyue was not in a position to resist him!

In a flash Long Yu thought all these in his mind, but in fact, he didn't care about Yao Yan, instead of asked Ling Han: "Brother Ling Han, I don't know about your rich treasures of Ling clan villa, actually what exactly is going on here?"

"Ling clan villa has the jurisdiction over this area full of ores, and after every few years the lunar debris makes its appearance, what I call the reach treasure is actually this lunar debris."

Ling Han's look became dignified. He went on explaining: "Five years ago, Mo Fengming of Mo family in Tang State was able to get the lunar debris which greatly helped him to increase his strength, and he is now one of the nine young masters of Tang State, and he is ranked third, even brother Bu Xing has personally said that he couldn't be able to block even a single move of Mo Fengming!"

Lunar debris!

Long Yu scowled: "This lunar debris, what's unique element does it have?"

Ling Han heard this and said shaking his head: "I don't know this lunar debris, I haven't seen it, five years ago, even the disciples of Zhentian Sect didn't have the qualifications to join the expedition to get lunar debris, it is said that the lunar

debris is a fragment of lunar stone containing lunar forces.”

“Lunar forces.”

When he was still pondering, nearby Yao Yan stood up and squinted at him: “Long Yu, we have waited for you for long hours, now you have come, why do you indulge in talking all these idle talks”

“You want to go, you first go.”

Ling Yiyue lightly said in one side: “Nobody asks you to stay!”

“Junior sister apprentice Ling Yiyue, will this not save everybody’s time?”

Yao Yan immediately piled up a smile on his face.

“Then you quietly move along with us.”

Ling Yiyue groaned, then looked to Ling Han: “Elder brother, do we now start?”

“Ah, since Long Yu has come, there is no need to stay at this place.”

Ling Han nodded while gave an apology smile to Long Yu.

Yao Yan was so arrogant, and seemed to have a particular opinion on Long Yu. Ling Han didn’t think much about it, at this moment, he could only hope that they didn’t erupt anything to conflict.

Long Yu, would certainly not embarrass Ling Han. .

He looked at Ling Yiyue and felt that this younger sister was interesting. She was lovable and smart month and was bringing maturely astute, coupled with her practice talent, her future achievements would never be lower.

“Then let’s go on.”

Long Yu stood up and said.

Long Yu, Ling Han, Ling Yiyue, Lu Guan Ming, plus Yao Yan, a total of five people were ready to go together!

However, as these five people came out of the hall and arrived at the entrance of this remote side yard, suddenly a group of people came in front of them and encircled the entire side yard!

“What’s the matter?”

Lu Guan Ming looked up and saw a group of strange people, some scratching their heads.

Long Yu actually saw an acquaintance in the group – Linglie!

In Yu Guan city, he had no enmity with Linglie, but without any justification he wanted to waste him, wanted to take his life, but instead his one arm was spent by him!

After Feng Yun was killed, Linglie was naturally embarrassed and fled to Ling clan villa.

At this time, when Long Yu came to Ling clan villa, Linglie immediately got the news and immediately informed numerous people of Ling clan villa to rush over to encircle Long Yu to catch him up!

Linglie's one was hanging down, obviously, Ling clan didn't have such old White's wondrous medicine that could quickly heal his arm.

He was staring at Long Yu with hatred, still there was fear in his eyes, obviously, his heart had still the shadow cast by Long Yu's actions.

In front of the body of Linglie body, a middle-aged man with tall stature stood and led numerous powerhouses of Ling clan villa to encircle the entire side yard.

Linglie was simply a mold carved out of this middle-aged man, who was, obviously Linglie's father!

"Ling Tianba, the head of the house."

Ling Han said in a calm voice: "I, Ling Han have not come back to offend you, why have you encircled us? What do you actually desire?"

The middle-aged man, Linglie's father, called Ling Tianba, was unexpectedly the current head of the Ling clan house!

This person, a Wudao ninth layer master, had the highest cultivation level in the entire Ling clan villa.

Ling Tianba's eyes flashed a touch of severe color: "You have not offended me, but the guy beside you has discarded one arm of your cousin Linglie, you say whether he is a personal enemy of Ling clan house?"

"Ha ha!"

Ling Han laughed: "In the city of Guan Yu, Linglie brought contempt upon himself, if children are not educated then it is the fault of their fathers, you are his father and you didn't educate him properly and went so far to help him continue to cause trouble unexpectedly?"

"Scoundrel!"

This saying made Ling Tianba extremely angry, his both eyes stared such as the copper bell to be common: "You are a person of Ling clan villa, and are helping outsiders to speak unexpectedly, do you want to be expelled from Ling clan villa?"

"How do you dare to say that, I'm just saying the fact and nothing."

Ling Han lightly taunted: "As for expelling me from Ling clan villa, Ling Tianba, you don't have this qualification!"

"Cut the crap, I'm not here to quarrel with you, you just hand over Long Yu to me, I will then let you leave, otherwise don't even think about to go!"

Ling Tianba said staring at Long Yu aggressively!

“Merely a Wudao ninth layer, even dares to speak so big, makes the people to laugh aloud simply!”

Zhenling realm powerhouse Yao Yan said loudly with disdain look: “If you want to deal with this Long Yu, you can at will, but if you will dare to stop our other persons even one step, I will immediately behead you!”

These words obviously indicated his standpoint.

This Yao Yan wouldn't help Long Yu, but he wouldn't tolerate Ling Tianba stopping him and wasting his time!

“Well, the four of you can go.”

Ling Tianba looked and felt that Yao Yan was unexpectedly revealing formidable breath of his Zhenling that made his heart to shiver, and he immediately waved his hand towards the people behind him to make way for these four people to go.

At that time, a color of pride appeared on his face as if to say to look the benefits that strength used to bring!

As for Long Yu, although news had spread everywhere that he beheaded the Zhenling realm masters, but who knew that this was true or false?

Now, the people led by a Wudao ninth layer master could stop Long Yu!

“Trivial Long Yu, how can be compared with me, Yao Yan!”

Yao Yan was even more self-confident.

Chapter 95 Measure by knife

Yao Yan proudly walked towards the way the opposite party made, however, he quickly found that nobody unexpectedly followed him!

Ling Han or Lu Guan Ming, even Ling Yiyue still stood with Long Yu!

“Haven’t you followed?”

Yao Yan scowled, and said lightly.

“If brother Long doesn’t go, then we will not go as well, if you want to go, then you can go.”

Lu Guan Ming said stubbornly, and he unexpectedly followed same as Ling Han, who called “Brother Long.”

It made Long Yu somewhat to wonder, but he let it go. What was in the trivial name?, he simply didn’t care about it.

He tilted his head to look towards Ling Tianba and said in a relishing manner: “Are you sure that you want to stop me.”

“Are you an idiot?”

Ling Tianba looked at Long Yu as if he was a fool: “Although, you are very

strong, but I am also a Wudao ninth heavy later master, I will surely block you in Ling clan villa!”

“Then go ahead and try!”

Long Yu chuckled. He crossed his hands behind his back and stood upright keeping his spine straight, even he had yet not taken out his spear hanging on his back!

This move of Long Yu greatly impressed Ling Yiyue. Her eyes shone brightly. Long Yu really seemed to be very confident!

Yao Yan snorted. He didn’t walk from there, rather he leapt one step and jumped on the side wall and prepared himself to watch the scene that was soon to unfurl.

He actually wanted to see that without his help how Ling Han and others could be able to leave the place!

“Rumors are there that your Long Yu can kill a Zhenling realm powerhouse, now let us take a look at his strength.”

Yao Yan contemptuously smiled, and said this with a disdainful look on his face.

“Hey, brother Long killed a Zhenling realm powerhouse, I have already seen it!”

Lu Guan Ming rebutted with sarcasm. At that time, his face was showing the

color of disdain for Yao Yan.

This black-faced man directly spoke these words bluntly, although his manner was refreshed, but was also very easy to offend people!

At this time, Yao Yan's eyes flashed fiercely, obviously he was bearing a grudge against Lu Guan Ming.

Surely, Lu Guan Ming had great confidence in the strength of Long Yu, and Ling Han and Li Yiyue would naturally not go forward to help Long Yu, rather they expected to experience the current strength of Long Yu.

Obviously, if Long Yu would be in danger then they would surely render help to him.

"In the Ancient Royal Ginseng Forest, when Long Yu was at Wudao sixth layer, he could defeat a Wudao master of seventh layer. After entering Wudao seventh layer, he was able to kill his three enemies Hua Qing, Hua Yun and Tan Jian!"

Ling Han stood behind Long Yu. At that time, his eyes were shining with expectations: "Now, Long Yu has stepped into Wudao ninth heavy layer, and his speed is too fast, and what to say about defeating a Wudao ninth layer master, he can even defeat a Zhenling realm master!"

These facts really made Ling Han more curious about Long Yu!

Ling Tianba snorted lightly. Long Yu wanted to try his strength, and obviously he would not be certainly parsimonious!

“Give me on!”

Ling Tianba commanded and immediately the Ling clan juniors, who had stepped into heavy Wudao seventh layer, cast out black Xuan qi that rushed away towards Long Yu!

This Ling Tianba unexpectedly wanted to register a win over Long Yu, using number game.

“Shameless! Even besieges unexpectedly!”

Ling Yiyue exclaimed out loudly!

However, Long Yu was quite self-poised in the face of this Xuan qi attack.

“Demon vajra cover!”

Immediately a thin golden layer emerged over the whole body surface of Long Yu. He stood still and was gorgeously motionless.

Then, numerous Xuan qi burst into a golden thin layer that had appeared over his body, but it neither simply could let him even half a step back nor caused any injury to him!

Ling Yiyue saw this and was very much relieved.

It seemed that the Xuan qi attack of these Wudao seventh layer masters was exactly like a tickling for Long Yu!

“Calming down bracelet!”

Rather abruptly, a colorful bracelet flew out from an unattended corner, and suddenly it became large and wrapped the whole stature of Long Yu!

“Yes, this is the battle weapon of Linglie!”

This calming down bracelet battle weapon was not strange to Long Yu. In Yu Guan city, Long Yu shattered the power of this battle weapon, ironically now his cultivation was stronger than the earlier.

“Give me a break!”

Long Yu’s Dantian began to beat up rapidly and suddenly Xuan qi began to boil up in his body and quickly linked up with his body meridians with the result that this calming down bracelet couldn’t cause any impact on his whole stature.

“Kill!”

By this time, Ling Tianba grasped a long knife and displayed the Ling inherited knife skill, and swept away a knife towards the top of the head of Long Yu to chop off his head!

The knife actually combined the strongest forces of Ling Tianba’s whole life, the knife bone-chilling cold, and he displayed it with a view to get a clean sweep

over Long Yu!

“Spear heavy shadow!”

Long Yu finally grasped his Nine Hidden Dragon Spear in his hand, but he didn't activate the black lines on The Nine Hidden Dragon Spear, but directly displayed the Great Zhentian Spear tactics and swept away numerous spears towards Ling Tianba's overbearing knife light!

With a bang, the whole stature of Ling Tianba flew upside down and fell heavily to the ground!

Suddenly the calming down bracelet that surrounded Long Yu was shattered with its integration with the terrible Zhentian world influence released from the tip of the Nine Hidden Dragon Spear!

The terrific repression of Zhentian world influence of Long Yu completely suppressed the other men of Ling clan in the field, particularly it suppressed Linglie and Ling Tianba so heavily that they began to feel restlessness, even breathing became difficult for them.

Collapsed completely!

The persons of Ling clan house were numerous, but they couldn't stand off the strength of Long Yu!

“Ha ha, brother Long Yu, is really fierce!”

Lu Guan Ming laughed, his black face was full of the color of excitement.

“They are just too weak.”

Long Yu lightly smiled, and put away his Nine Hidden Dragon Spear.

The persons of Ling clan house were watching their feet, but Long Yu looked quite indifferent and walked towards the exit door of Ling clan mansion.

Lu Guan Ming, Ling Han, Ling Yiyue naturally also followed him behind, but Yao Yan was stunned at the spot. He never imagined that Long Yu could be so strong.

“Zhentian world influence!”

Even Yao Yan himself failed to comprehend Zhentian world influence, but Long Yu was actually able to comprehend it!

“Can this Long Yu really deal with a Zhenling realm powerhouse? No, it’s impossible, a Zhenling realm powerhouse, suppresses the audience, how could a trivial Wudao ninth layer person confront a Zhenling realm powerhouse!”

Yao Yan thought to himself, in any event, he didn’t believe it!

He jumped off the wall and quickly caught up Ling Yiyue: “ Junior sister apprentice Ling Yiyue, and so, I was just joking, now it appears that Long Yu has the qualifications to be with us all the way.”

This he said just to flatter Ling Yiyue, but he actually couldn't think that Ling Yiyue didn't have a favorable impression to him.

When the people looked at Long Yu, they always found that his power was terrific, but he didn't have the disgusting pride of Yao Yan, he was amiable to a friend and always ruled an enemy by force!

But, this Yao Yan was arrogant and complacent, bluffed and blustered everywhere boasting his strength.

Such person, who would be willing to go with him?"

But, this trip was meant to win lunar debris, and many Zhenling realm powerhouses had come to Ling clan villa to capture it, so the presence of Yao Yan in the group could prove a layer of protection in this trip.

Five people around the line, soon each rode a horse, left the Ling clan villa and galloped away towards the ring-like sierra.

.....

After long Yu left Ling clan mansion, soon a group of people arrived at Ling clan villa and found Ling clan mansion.

This group of people was impressively Imperial royal prince Wang Tianzhuo with two Zhenling realm royal guards and Liu Mingcheng as an attendant!

Wang Tianzhuo, wearing a golden silk fabrics Chinese dress, was proudly

standing in the Ling clan mansion.

As he lifted his foot and wanted to step into the Ling clan mansion, a horse neighing was transmitted behind him!

“Junior sister apprentice Feng Yao is coming.”

Liu Mingcheng turned his head to look, and hastily said to remind.

“Ha ha, junior sister apprentice Feng Yao, we will finally meet again!”

Wang Tianzhuo laughed, looked back, and saw Feng Yao coming towards him riding on a horse, her pale green dress was swaying. She had delicate facial features with a perfect face that were worth seeing a hundred times!

However, presently Feng Yao’s complexion didn’t seem very good.

“You make me come to Ling clan mansion to meet, I have come, now you mustn’t create any trouble to my father.”

Feng Yao was still on the horseback, said lightly.

“Ha ha, that is natural, since junior sister Feng Yao, you have come, I will stick to my words.”

Wang Tianzhuo smiled: “I, Wang Tianzhuo, how could be detrimental to my future father-in-law?”

“Cut the crap, you make me come here, in the end what is to be done?”

Feng Yao was not in good temper, asked coldly.

“I have come here to capture the lunar debris that I want to present you as a gift.”

Wang Tianzhuo smiled proudly and said:. “In addition, I am looking for the boy called Long Yu, I want to solve him.”

“Long Yu? Has he also come?”

Feng Yao scowled.

“The news that I have got about Long Yu shouldn’t be wrong.

Wang Tianzhuo said.

“Compared to Long Yu, I hope you actually solve another person for me.”

Feng Yao said inciting him.

“Oh? Who is that person? Dares to annoy our junior sister Feng Yao to be angry unexpectedly?”

Wang Tianzhuo was somewhat curious.

“Liu Yuan!”

Feng Yao put out these two words, making the complexion of Wang Tianzhuo and Liu Mingcheng change.

Allure Court, Liu Yuan!

“Liu Yuan, has come?”

Liu Mingcheng couldn't help but ask: “Cousin, did you run into her?”

“I have just hit the road.”

Feng Yao said lightly: “But, she first went to the mineral lode now.”

“Mr. Wang, Liu Yuan is the most talented person of the Liu family, since her childhood she joined the Allure Court, and now she is the 3rd ranked core disciple of the Allure Court, has already stepped into Zhenling second heavy layer!”

Liu Mingcheng whispered to Wang Tianzhuo.

Wang Tianzhuo's complexion was really not good, and regarding Liu Yuan, he had certainly heard that she was not a good character to cope with.

“Junior sister apprentice Feng Yao, what melancholy do you have with her? Your mother is not a person of Liu family?”

Wang Tianzhuo asked aloud.

“In childhood, she once teased to insult me.”

Feng Yao said lightly, then looked up, and staring at Wang Tianzhuo said: “As my future husband, you shouldn’t fear Liu Yan.”

“Ha ha, how is that possible?”

Wang Tianzhuo laughed, glanced behind two Zhenling realm royal guards and said with self-confidence: “You feel relieved with me, this time, if I meet that Liu Yan, I, Wang Tianzhuo must shame her surely!”

“That’s good.”

Feng Yao dismounted from the horse and arrived at the side of Wang Tianzhuo. At that time, she was carrying C copper sword on her waist.

Now she was weak, her cultivation was only Wudao eight heavy layer and facing Liu Yan, she did not have the slightest chance of winning.

Temporarily, Wang Tianzhuo had sorted out the problem of Liu Yan, that was extremely good, after all murder with a borrowed knife, Feng Yao was not at any loss!

A total of five people entered the Ling clan mansion once more, but the weird scene of the entire Ling clan mansion came to their eyes.

“What’s all this about? Are you the people of Ling clan mansion?”

Wang Tianzhuo frowned, asked shouting loudly.

Ling Tianba was leaning against the wall. He was seriously injured by the spear heavy shadow attack of Long Yu, and this had shaken his vitality completely, so it was necessary for him to take rest to recover.

Now he saw Wang Tianzhuo wearing a golden silk fabrics Chinese dress, and was immediately surprised, and moved forward to greet him.

Sure enough, the upcoming lunar debris had really attracted the attention of a large number of Zhenling realm powerhouses!

But this matter, obviously Ling Tianba couldn’t participate, and if he did so, he would surely meet with his death.

Chapter 96 Brutal Hua Fu

Wang Tianzhuo and Feng Yao together entered the Ling clan mansion, but they saw that many Ling juniors were off their feet.

When Ling Tianba reluctantly approached, Wang Tianzhuo asked in a cold voice: “Who are you? Where is the head of the Ling clan mansion?”

“I am the head of the Ling clan mansion.”

Ling Tianba said enduring his injury.

“Are you the head of the Ling clan mansion?”

Wang Tianzhuo looked at him, suddenly laughed: “Wudao ninth layer, in the entire Ling clan villa, there is not a single Zhenling realm master, you are the head of this Ling clan, why are you so embarrassed?”

“The son, who are you?”

Ling Tianba asked discretely.

“He is the Imperial Royal’s son, Wang Tianzhuo!”

Liu Mingcheng said with pride: “We have come to Ling clan villa to find a person, Long Yu, have you heard about him?”

“Long Yu!”

Ling Tianba was surprised in his heart.

His Ling persons were seriously injured by Long Yu and the terrific suppression of his Zhentian world influence had made off their feet, so how could he not hear the name of Long Yu?

Present Ling Tianba only knew that Long Yu was a good friend of Ling Han in Zhentian Sect, but he did not know other matters related to Long Yu.

Now Wang Tianzhuo, one of the Imperial palace princes, was looking for Long Yu, his thoughts were suddenly active again.

“It seems that they are looking for Long Yu to create trouble for him.”

Ling Tianba thought to himself, but on his face keeping timid expression, he said: “Have heard, of course, certainly have heard that Long Yu is simply a real villain.”

Wang Tianzhuo and Liu Mingcheng looked at each other once, then Liu Mingcheng nodded and continued to ask: “This Long Yu, has he grown up in your Ling clan villa?”

As these words went out, nearby Feng Yao felt strange.

Long Yu, grew up in Ling clan villa?

Feng Yao suddenly remembered about Long Yu's life experience in the Feng family for so many years. Her father Feng Longsong made every effort to keep secret the life experience of Long Yu, and she simply knew that he had been expelled from the Imperial family and he was brought by her father Feng Longsong from the Imperial palace to Feng family.

Feng Yao thought, while maintained composure. She was using Wang Tianzhuo now, so she would certainly not remind matters related to long Yu.

Although, Feng Yao didn't feel well regarding Long Yu, but regarding Wang Tianzhuo, she was more sure that she didn't feel well for him!

"Long Yu in my Ling clan villa....."

Ling Tianba was somewhat surprised in his heart. He had simply heard about Long Yu, how could this guy grow up in Ling clan villa?

But then he remembered something, and rotating his eye balls, he asked: "The son, you are looking for Long Yu, are you his friend?"

"Friend my ass, we are looking for him to kill him!"

Liu Mingcheng said coldly.

"Oh."

Ling Tianba was really very happy in his heart to think that they were actually

looking for Long Yu to kill him!

“He indeed is the person of my Ling clan villa, unfortunately he went to Zhentian Sect and when he came back he became supercilious, arrogant and willful domineering, is really hateful. Son, if you see him, kill him for me to clean up my Ling clan mansion, we have spent so many years in raising him up, but just a moment ago, he has seriously injured us!”

After saying these words Ling Tianba was relaxed.

He said so, because he feared that if Wang Tianzhuo would know that Long Yu was a person of Zhentian Sect then he wouldn't dare to start against him.

Now he said that Long Yu was a person of Ling clan villa, when the time would come then Wang Tianba would not hesitate to kill him!

Ling Tianba and his Ling juniors together were not the match of Long Yu, and Ling Tianba actually wanted to save his face and he could only rely on the others for this.

Wang Tianzhuo certainly couldn't think that Ling Tianba was actually trying to borrow his knife to kill Long Yu, at this time, he heard Ling Tianba and immediately snorted: “Can't think that boy is so ungrateful, now where are they? As they have just visited you, so they shouldn't have gone very far.”

“They should be into the Ling clan villa mountains, probably looking for to seize lunar debris.”

Ling Tianba respectfully replied.

“Let’s go.”

Wang Tianzhuo got the news about Long Yu, so he didn’t want to stay there even for a moment, turned around to go.

Five people arrived at the outside of Ling clan mansion, rode the boisterous horses and moved away in the direction of mineral lode of Ling clan mountains.

.....

Long Yu, Ling Han, and Ling Yi month, Lu Guan Ming, Yao Yan five people riding boisterous horses soon approached to the gloomy threatening mineral lode.

This piece of mineral lode was a piece of continuous hills without trees and flowers, looked like incomparably barren.

“The gloomy heaviest place is actually the earthly place where lunar debris makes its appearance.”

Ling Han led the way, while said: “The Ling mountain villa has the miners in the mining, this place is really gloomy, soon the news of the appearance of lunar debris will pass on to the present world.”

After approaching the mineral lode, under five human feet the boisterous horses were not willing to lead the way to enter the sierra, so these five people dismounted from the horse and walked on foot.

The gloomy atmosphere of the mountain range was extremely harmful to any living thing, one could imagine that how bad was the condition of those perennial miners engaged in mining.

Among the five people, the cultivation of Ling Yiyue was the lowest, so she felt somewhat uncomfortable under the impact of the gloomy air of the mountain range.

Ling Han practised Bai noble spirit martial skill that gave its practitioner ability to cope with this gloomy air. Ling Han was aware of the difficulty that Ling Yiyue was facing due to the gloomy air of the mountain, therefore, he had congealed a piece of barrier that prevented the gloomy air for Ling Yiyue making her feel much better.

“Come on, come with me, these days I have found a shortest route leading to place.”

Ling Han said and chose a way that was nearest to the earthly place of lunar debris.

In continuous small massifs, the way was also very complex, although it didn't have the luxuriant vegetation, but the massif that stuck out was also preventing the field of vision of the people and they couldn't see about several miles scene.

Only Ling Han, who was familiar with this landscape, could go fast through these small massifs.

After burning a joss stick time, the five people penetrated into small massifs and took a broad view to look. In all directions were the small massifs and one

could sometimes see a big pile of crushed stones along with very hot gloomy air!

“Miners usually mine in underground, but we are looking for the lunar debris and for it there is no need to use the underground walk.”

Ling Han explained, but soon scowled: “Probably someone is nearby.”

“Ha ha ha! Really worthy of the former young head of Ling clan mansion, this area is not sensitive, but you perceived our presence!”

A rampant extremely arrogant voice immediately passed out from nearby small massif!

Then, two figures wearing flame color Chinese-style gowns paced out and instantly came to the side of the five people!

Long Yu was somewhat surprised.

Of course, he had just noticed someone nearby to follow, but they didn't expose intention to kill clearly, therefore, Long Yu couldn't perceive it.

It was very difficult to perceive the intention to kill, but how could Ling Han find that someone was nearby?

Long Yu looked quietly to Yao Yan and found that even Yao Yan was frowning regarding the accidental appearance of these two people.

Obviously, Yao Yan was a Zhenling realm master but even he couldn't find that someone was following them!

"I rely on the intention to kill, and Ling Han, probably because he was familiar with the flow of the gloomy air in the vicinity, and relying on this familiar gloomy air he could be able to find these two people following them!"

Long Yu was guessing secretly, and then immediately took a look at the two persons who paced to come.

Two people, wearing the flame color Chinese-style big gown of "fire" character that clearly announced their status without a doubt.

"Disciples of Tibetan fire temple!"

Long Yu and other people didn't feel well in their hearts.

What was the most important that these two people were Zhenling realm powerhouses, one of them was Zhenling first heavy layer and the other was Zhenling second heavy layer master!

This suddenly made Long Yu and other people to feel bad.

Such two powerhouses, even these five people together were not able to deal with them!

"Like this group of weak persons, you also want to seize lunar debris, it is simply a wishful thinking."

One of the Zhenling second heavy layer person, tall and thin, small eyes, his face wearing a teasing look said: "I'm Hua Fu from the Tibetan fire temple, you are the young master of Ling clan villa, would you bring me to the earthly place of lunar debris?"

"Hua Fu!"

Yao Yan's face became pale: "You are Hua Fu, the son of the head of the Tibetan fire temple!"

"I didn't think that someone have heard me, I'm really lucky."

A color of contempt flashed in the little eyes of Hua Fu: "Since you have heard about me, now, are you going to back away on your own initiative and give me the way to the earthly place of lunar debris?"

"Hua Fu, we have no intention to offend you, but please don't embarrass me and others, put us to leave!"

Yao Yan had heard the name of Hua Fu, directly showed his weakness unexpectedly!

This grade of behavior of Yao Yan really annoyed the other four people, Long Yu, Ling Han, Lu Guan Ming and Ling Yiyue, although Yao Yan was a Zhenling realm powerhouse, was such type of behavior was right for him?

Yao Yan's character was such that he liked bullying the weak and fearing the

strong!

“You depart voluntarily, I will not move you!”

Hua Fu said in a teasing manner and swept over the people with his one eye.

“Many thanks to brother Hua Fu.”

Yao Yan said and looking towards Long Yu and other people asked: “Do you want to be with the big brother Hua Fu from the Tibetan fire temple.”

“If you want to go, then you go, nobody is blocking you.”

Long Yu said in a cold voice.

Enemy was at the gate, but Yao Yan called each other as “brother,” people would simply laugh at it!

“Well, you don’t go, then wait for death, brother Hua Fu is not just good to speak!”

Yao Yan said with a color of disdain in his eyes, and then looked to Ling Yiyue: “Junior sister apprentice Ling Yiyue, we should go with Hua Fu, no need to pay attention to other people, believe that Hua Fu would not embarrass your brother!”

“I’m going with my brother.”

Ling Yi month shook her head, but she had extreme contempt for Yao Yan.

“I may remind you, it will not be good for you, I want to!”

Yao Yan snorted and looked at Ling Yiyue, his heart was really very uncomfortable.

Although, he wanted to occupy Ling Yiyue, but not at the cost of fighting with Hua Fu.

He had heard about Hua Fu that his method of killing people was extremely brutal, and if anyone fell on his hand then his death was absolutely sure!

He was mindful of this fact, so he turned away and went to the side of Hua Fu and in doing so he didn't feel any hesitation!

A squad of five people, but just after entering the first mineral lode, one of them, Yao Yan, left everyone, ironically, without any fight!

“To pin hope in such a person is nothing but the waste of time.”

Ling Yiyue couldn't help but put her remark on Yao Yan.

Hua Fu stood in front of the four people. He licked his lips and said in a teasing manner: “You people, don't know the good and the evil, I am thinking that I must burn you while still alive or to explode the fragments of your bodies by using my flame burst!”

With his words, Ling Yi month could not help but shudder.

The method of this Hua Fu could be so cruel!

It could be imagined that if Ling Han alone led the way for them to follow, then finally the end will definitely be very miserable.

“You, can try freely!”

Long Yu said these words, came around Ling Han and other two people and stood in front of Hua Fu!

At this moment, Yao Yan had the power of congealment of Zhenling, but he sneaked away at this critical juncture, so now Long Yu was only one in the group to do something in the face of Hua Fu.

He, of course, the other side would not let Ling Han away!

Long Yu’s mind was working sharply. Although, his this step, of course, was reckless and unrealistic, but his plan was to resist Hua Fu for sometime so that other people could find the opportunity to escape!

Chapter 97 Xiahou Tianjie

When Long Yu stood out, Hua Fu narrowed his small eyes: “You have actually the courage.”

Hua Fu said aloud in an awe-inspiring tone: “Unfortunately, the person who has the courage but doesn’t use his brain, dies quickly! Xiahou, you teach this boy a lesson making him know that a person who doesn’t have the strength and raise his head forcefully will have what kind of consequences!”

As these words went out, the person standing behind Hua Fu, wearing flame color Chinese-style gown lightly said: “Few palace hosts, these minions, you want to solve, why put so much effort?”

“Xiahou Tianjie.”

Hua Fu didn’t turn his head, but said fiercely: “If you do not want to deal with these minions, then how will you face Bai Hang of Zhentian Sect.”

Upon hearing this, Xiahou Tianjie’s complexion immediately changed.

Bai Hang of Zhentian Sect!

While coming to Ling clan villa, on the way, Hua Fu had run into Bai Hang, who was also a Zhenling second layer powerhouse!

Hua Fu said these words, was Bai Hang present in the nearby?

Xiahou Tianjie's complexion sank. Now he knew that Hua Fu must guard against Bai Hang in the one side, then, at present, only he would have to solve these minions.

Mindful of this fact, handsome looking Xiahou Tianjie came out, moved forward, and soon stood in front of Hua Fu, and presently he was separated by 100 feet distance with Long Yu for mutual confrontation.

"I, Xiahou Tianjie, don't begin against a person weaker than me, because that makes me look very bad taste."

Xiahou Tianjie's face gave such a look as if that by coming out against Long Yu and others he had violated his own principles!

"You are really very lucky, I'll give you a chance to roll, quickly get out, or else, if I started, no one can leave!"

Xiahou Tianjie was really a Zhenling first heavy layer powerhouse.

In the eyes of Xiahou and Hua Fu, it seemed that a Zhenling realm powerhouse could easily deal with Long Yu and others, but Long Yu didn't care about it!

"Bai Hang."

Long Yu heard the conversation of Hua Fu and Xiahou Tianjie, and his heart was delighted, but he maintained composure.

Long Yu really couldn't cope with a Zhenling second layer powerhouse.

But, in his eyes this Zhenling first heavy layer powerhouse, Xiahou Tianjie was not too strong!

Depending on his current strength Long Yu could deal with an unusual Zhenling first heavy layer powerhouse, and at that time, he didn't have slightest pressure on him. Hua Fu thought that Xiahou Tianjie could be able to kill Long Yu, but he was completely mistaken in thinking so!

As their mouths said about Bai Hang, of course, Long Yu had also heard about him.

In Zhentian Sect, Bu Xing was the first core disciple, and this Bai Hang was actually the second core disciple of Zhentian Sect and was said to be Zhenling second heavy peak layer powerhouse!

"Can't think that Bai Hang has also come, it seems like that this lunar debris has really annoyed the human to be jealous."

Long Yu thought to himself, while carefully observed Xiahou Tianjie, and narrowing his eyes said: "You want to kill me, now you can begin with."

"Well, I have seen courting death, but has never seen a person in such a hurry!"

Xiahou Tianjie snorted, and on his face appeared the impatient color: "Since I wanted you to make roll, but you didn't roll, go to hell!"

As the voice fell, one could see that a flame ghost instantly appeared behind Xiahou Tianjie. Xiahou Tianjie was a disciple of Tibetan fire temple and could congeal Zhenling flame ghost!

This Zhenling flame suddenly scattered in the entire surrounding making everyone feel scalding hot!

“Brother Long.....”

Ling Han saw this, the color of concern for Long Yu appeared on his face.

“We should withdraw, we mustn’t interfere with brother Long!”

Lu Guan Ming’s black face was actually self-poised, Ling Han and others immediately stepped several steps back!

He experienced Long Yu to resist law enforcement elders Zhengyi Zhen and Tan Wuchuan, so he had full confidence in the strength of Long Yu!

Ling Han also felt the confidence in Lu Guan Ming’s words, and he decided to believe in Long Yu.

He had never thought that a Wudao ninth layer powerhouse could be able to defeat a Zhenling realm master, however, he believed in the words of Lu guan Ming!

Lu Guan Ming was frank and straightforward in his character and it was

impossible for him to talk nonsense.

He said that he had seen Long Yu beheading Zhenling powerhouses, then it would be absolutely true!

“Ling Yiyue, withdraw!”

Ling Han calmed down, and shouted to caution his younger sister Ling Yiyue.

At that time, Ling Yiyue was somewhat angry, this Lu Guan Ming called to make the brother and the sister to withdraw several steps back, would then Long Yu not think that the brother and the sister were timid persons being afraid of getting into trouble?

However, she couldn't dare not to listen to the words of Ling Han, and she also withdrew several steps back.

Seeing the movement of these three persons, Xiahou Tianjie thought that they were actually trying to run away from the place at the cost of Long Yu's life in exchange of their own safety!

“You want to run, can you do so?”

Xiahou Tianjie sneered proudly: “A trivial Wudao ninth layer person, how long you can block me!”

As the voice fell, the Zhenling flame ghost behind him instantly broke out and a cluster of flame scattered and a congealed flame hunting dog opening its giant

mouth roared towards Long Yu.

A terrible temperature raised towards the head of Long Yu!

“Zhentian world influence, numerous spear shadow!”

Long Yu saw it, and suddenly grasped Nine Hidden Qiang Dragon Spear, quickly condensed terrific repression of Zhentian world influence on its tip and instantly swept away numerous spear shadows towards that upcoming flame hunting dog!

“A mantis trying to stop a chariot, overconfident -”

Xiahou Tianjie snorted lightly, but immediately the smile on his face vanished!

He saw that the numerous spear shadows with an integration with the Zhentian world influence pierced through the flame hunting dog making a big hole in it dispersing the power of the flame!

“Nine Hidden Dragon lines, activate, give me break!”

Long Yu once again swept away the Zhentian world influence, and a crazy fierce repression dropped from the clouds and suddenly shattered the power of the flame hunting dog completely!

“In your hand is a battle weapon, is a spiritual level battle weapon!”

Xiahou Tianjie's face slightly changed, and glanced at that extraordinary Nine Hidden Qiang Dragon Spear!

"Yes, how?"

Long Yu said lightly.

"Well, now it will be mine!"

Xiahou Tianjie's face was greedy, and he immediately congealed a bunch of flame in his hand.

The disciples of Tibetan fire temple practiced various types of martial skills and after stepping into Wudao ninth layer they could use their Xuan qi to congeal flame against their enemies.

And if the flame was congealed using the power of Zhenling then it used to be more tyrannical!

"A spiritual level battle weapon in your hands, a mere Wudao ninth layer person, can play what role? It is better to shine in my hands!"

Xiahou Tianjie shouted loudly, and swept away the congealed flame towards Long Yu, and suddenly this flame exploded off in the mid air!

"Roaring flames burst boom!"

The flame suddenly exploded, and a sudden burst of destructive force covered the whole area nearby!

“In the face of the disciples of Tibetan fire temple, fast speed is radically useless, because their attack range is too big!”

Long Yu thought to himself calmly.

Surely, Long Yu practiced the Demon tyrant body, but in the face of this outstanding roaring flame bang of Xiahou Tianjie, perhaps it was also unable to resist it!

Fortunately, before the flames exploded off in the mid air, Long Yu subconsciously swept away his spear trying out the secluded Nine Hidden Dragon prance and leapt about to go high in the sky!

With such a powerful jumping ability, Long Yu suddenly jumped very high in the sky from where he found that indeed not far away, there was a team of four people hiding in a small hill watching the side movement.

“It should be the group of Bai Hang.”

Long Yu didn't think too much about it because now the most important thing for him was to beat Xiahou Tianjie!

“Lamella touch, even a touch can kill!”

He exhausted his strength, chew his finger and sprinkled his blood above Nine

Hidden Qian Dragon Spear.

Immediately, the Nine Hidden Dragon qi enveloped the whole stature of Long Yu and integrating with his Zhentian world influence rushed towards Xiahou Tianjie!

“Has he escaped above?”

Xiahou Tianjie curled up his mouth slightly above, and immediately congealed Zhenling flame ghost behind him cementing a huge flame claw and swept it away towards Long Yu to grab him to burn.

“Flickering the wind step, dodge!”

Long Yu moved sideways, even abandoned Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear, and was far away from the flame claw!

Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear with its terrible power stabbed the flame claw!

However, the coercion of the Zhentian world influence was instantly lowered down, because Xiahou Tianjie had also comprehended the Tibetan fire temple world influence, and due to power of Zhenling, the basic strength of Xiahou Tianjie was more than that of Long Yu.

“Unexpectedly is the world influence of Zhentian tactics, the boy is really highly talented.”

Hua Fu guarding against Bai Hang of Zhentian Sect nearby observed the

strength of Long Yu and was impressed by it.

However, in Hua Fu's opinion, the gap between a Wudao ninth layer and a Zhenling realm powerhouse was completely unredeemable.

Ultimately, this boy would definitely be burnt to death by Xiahou Tianjie!

"This is the spiritual level battle weapon, now it has been abandoned by you, if it is a spiritual level battle weapon, then it will surely upset you."

On the handsome face of Xiahou Tianjie appeared a color of banter, said these words while watching the dodge of Long Yu to the side and the fall of Nine Hidden Dragon Spear to the ground.

"Do you think that this long spear is my entirety?"

Long Yu said curling up his mouth upward.

Of course, Long Yu was very sad regarding discarding Nine Hidden Qian Dragon Spear, but he had enough self-confidence to take it back!

But in such situation, if Xiahou Tianjie once again displayed his bunch of flame then it would be very difficult for him to resist it without Nine Hidden Dragon Spear.

His killer, lay above Nine Hidden Dragon Fist!

“Naive!”

Xiahou Tianjie suddenly laughed disdainfully: “I admit, you rely on the spirit level battle weapon, you have good strength, but now you have no battle weapon, and without it, you are nothing!”

“Really? Do you dare to fight with my fist.”

Long Yu served as a tool the method of goading him into action.

“Do you want to fight with me with your fist, I have chosen.”

Xiahou Tianjie sneered and stamped his one foot on the ground: “Explode the inflammation earth!”

As the voice fell, the ground in the trim region split unexpectedly, and instantly there emerged a layer of roaring flame that completely expelled out the gloomy air in the surrounding area!

Meanwhile, Long Yu felt as if his whole stature was in a stove and suddenly it became boiling hot under his feet.

Whether flames boom burst, or explode the inflammation earth, was spiritual level martial skill, and this Xiahou Tianjie was definitely much stronger than Zhengyi Zheng and Tan Wuchuan!

The next moment.

Long Yu's whole stature, even in the land of the smoke of the flames blurred completely!

"Behind you!"

Hua Fu shouted loudly!

Xiahou Tianjie's complexion changed. He was about to turn back, but it was too late!

Gloomy and strange Nine Hidden Dragon qi instantly enveloped him completely so that his stature was thoroughly overawed, his mind went blank!

Chapter 98 Bang kills Xiahou Tianjie

With the blur Long Yu disappeared and instantly arrived behind Xiahou Tianjie and immediately swept away his Nine Hidden Dragon Fist towards him.

The gloomy and strange Nine Hidden Dragon qi invaded the body of Xiahou Tianjie and turned his mind blank, making him sluggish on the spot!

“Nine Hidden Dragon burst stream!”

Long Yu shouted loudly and punched his fist to the ground!

It actually turned out that when Nine Hidden Dragon Spear was abandoned by Long Yu, then a fight strategy was made by him in which he first decided to blur himself to attract the attention of everyone, and for this he displayed his ghost flash martial skill, that he practiced to Da Cheng level and blurred himself by turning himself into a ghost body!

At that time, when, Long Yu was planning to visit Ling clan villa, he finally practiced the ghost flash to Da Cheng level.

This ghost body of Long Yu actually made of a colorless invisible gas, and in this way, nobody could find him where exactly he was present in the field.

Although, with this ghost body he could flicker remaining invisible for a moment only, but under the present situation it was to be of great use that could ensure victory for him.

With this ghost body, he directly arrived behind Xiahou Tianjie and rumbled Nine Hidden Dragon Fist towards him!

The blurring movement of Long Yu distracted the attention of Xiahou Tianjie, actually he didn't have any protection against this fist hit. In no time, the black Dragon qi that emerged from the underground explosion, instantaneously enveloped Xiahou Tianjie and immediately began to erode his body !

“Xiahou Tianjie!”

The Zhenling second layer Hua Fu, who was observing the fight, suddenly clenched his fist. At that time, his eyes flashed a cruel color.

When Hua Fu saw that Xiahou Tianjie was lagging behind in his fight with Long Yu, then he wanted to tender some help to him, but then suddenly a powerful repression of Zhenling world influence came from the side and enveloped him completely, letting him know that if he tried to move a bit, then there would be more terrible attack on him from the side.

Bai Hang!

Actually, Bai Hang had been watching the fight since the moment when Hua Fu instructed to Xiahou Tianjie to begin against Long Yu.

But, who thought that Xiahou Tianjie was not the opponent of a trivial ninth layer powerhouse!

After being shrouded by the Nine Hidden Dragon qi, Xiahou Tianjie had no time to respond. Now, his whole body was filled with strange Dragon qi that completely eroded his body's meridians and Dantian.

Now, he would have to wait for the dissipation of the strange Dragon qi from his body to display his Zhenling power again. But, he didn't get time. The flame that burst out of the ground explosion shrouded him completely and soon the handsome Xiahou Tianjie turned into a shrivelled corpse in front of the people present in the surrounding.

This scene made Hua Fu crazy with rage!

"Boy, you killed my person of Tibetan fire temple, you seem to be impatient of living!"

Hua Fu shouted loudly in anger!

Long Yu stood on the ground, he had retrieved his Nine Hidden Dragon Spear, standing steady: "In this world, strong is always revered. Do you think that it only allows you to kill others and doesn't allow others to kill you?"

"Exactly!"

Lu Guan Ming laughed at the side: "If Long Yu had not been powerful then we all would have died here. We have no enmity with you, still you began the conflict. You yourself have brought this misfortune at your door!"

Now, Hua Fu certainly had some regret.

He looked at the dead body of Xiahou Tianjie and lightly snorted. He didn't expect that Long Yu could be so strong, being only at Wudao ninth layer, he could be able to kill a Zhenling first heavy layer powerhouse.

“Next time if I see, you will surely be burnt to death!”

Hua Fu's eyes were dodging the cruel pestilential air, immediately he turned around to leave.

After the death of Xiahou Tianjie, he was the only person from Tibetan fire temple left on the spot, but 7 or 8 persons including Bai Hang from Zhentian Sect were present in the field!

No doubt, Hua Fu was strong, but was certainly not the opponent of Bai Hang, and moreover, he was now alone, so he was just not willing to face Bai Hang.

So it was better on his part to leave the place!

With the departure of Hua Fu, Long Yu was somewhat relaxed, because with his current strength, it was almost impossible to score a victory over a Zhenling second heavy layer powerhouse.

“Quite fierce.”

Ling Han and Ling Yiyue—brother and sister observed Long Yu's fight and simply felt that this Long Yu looked like god of war in the field.

Even if he was at Wudao ninth layer, not a Zhenling powerhouse, so what?

Nine Hidden Dragon explosive fist, the intoxicated hell, air swallowing everything!

“Terrible, terrible.”

A voice was transmitted from nearby small massif, and a handsome man in white clothing with a natural smile on his face paced out followed by another three people behind.

Bai Hang!

Long Yu and other people looked towards the location of Bai Hang and saw three people were following Bai Hang, and scowled.

That three people, unexpectedly were Yi Yan, Liu Shucheng and Huayi Lun!

All these people were the core disciples of Zhentian Sect, and earlier each had a conflict with Long Yu. At that time, Long Yu didn't know that what type of relations this Bai Hang had with these three people?

At that time, the complexion of these three people that followed Bai Hang didn't look good. They, obviously, didn't expect that now Long Yu had enough strength to kill a Zhenling realm powerhouse.

“Brother Bai, the act of this boy Long Yu is improper.”

Liu Shucheng came forward from behind Bai Hang and looked directly to Long Yu and actually accused him up: “Although a little strength, but relying on this strength, he not only ran into the disciple of Tibetan fire temple, but also killed him, this act, will definitely make the people of Tibetan fire temple the enemies of Zhentian Sect!”

Long Yu heard these words, looked to Liu Shucheng and said lightly: “According to you, if the people of Tibetan fire temple bully you, will try to kill you, then you should pray them to spare your life, is so good? Like Yao Yan, who clamped the tail to escape, has this act of mine not saved the face of our Zhentian Sect?”

These words with thick ironic significance turned Liu Shucheng suddenly speechless!

The conflict was actually initiated by the people of Tibetan fire temple, and Long Yu simply gave the fittest reply to it, so he seemed to have done nothing wrong!

After saying these words Long Yu simply didn’t care about these three people and shifted his vision on Bai Hang.

Bai Hang was 2nd ranked core disciple of Zhentian Sect. He was only 23 or 24 years old, but his strength was really impressive.

At this time, he paced out to come near to Long Yu!

“Long Yu, brother Bu Xing and I always talk about you. You are extremely optimistic.”

Bai Hang while walking smiled and said aloud” “It now appears that you didn’t wrong, but don’t think that you can be able to seize lunar debris.”

“I have just come for my brother.”

Long Yu looked at Ling Han in the side and said.

When Ling Han invited him, he actually didn’t know about this lunar debris, moreover, he had not much interest in this lunar debris.

“Good, to come for the brother, ha ha!”

Bai Hang said with a natural smile: “Yes, since we have the same purpose, it is better to go hand in hand, what do you think?”

Long Yu scowled.

He swept over his eyes over the three people standing behind Bai Hang, shook his head and said: “To go with such people, forget about it, right.”

If Yi Yan, Liu Shucheng and Huayi Lun these three persons would be together, then they were bound to be backstabbers.

Yao Yan was with them, but what did he do, he simply deserted them at the critical juncture. To have such a person in the group was useless!

Bai Hang heard the words of Long Yu and smiled indifferently.

In fact, he also thought in the same manner as Long Yu thought. He wanted Long Yu to be in his group, but suspected Long Yu to pull him down.

And if they walked together, and if only one lunar debris was achieved, then how it would be divided among them?

“That then consider as finished, we would like to depart!”

Bai Hang smiled, he turned away: “Let’s go!”

Huayi Lun, once defeated by Long Yu, looked at Long Yu with one eye, and immediately followed Bai Hang.

Once upon a time, this Huayi Lun, as the core of disciple of Zhentian Sect, took care of Bai Hang.

Now, Bai Hang had become the second most powerful core disciple of Zhentian Sect, and was now taking care of Huayi Lun!

Huayi Lun was no longer young, and it was not possible for him to get any breakthrough, so he was dependent on Bai Hang for the availability of lunar debris, if possible.

“Brother Bai, Long Yu didn’t give you face, with good intention you invited him, but he rejected it, really doesn’t know the good and the evil!”

Liu Shucheng said to Bai Hang in a flattering manner.

However, Bai Hang simply ignored him.

“Although, Long Yu has killed the Zhenling first heavy layer disciple of Tibetan fire temple, and by doing so, he has surely offended Hua Fu, brother Bai, he even didn’t pay attention to your words, I would like to see him be burnt to death by Hua Fu!”

Yi Yan said with a color of hatred for Long Yu in his eyes.

However, Bai Hang didn’t pay attention to his words similarly.

Yi Yan and Liu Shucheng had a little friendship with Bai Hang, and Huayi Lun previously didn’t know Bai Hang.

Bai Hang didn’t certainly need to give them any face!

.....

After Bai Hang left with his men, then Long Yu was somewhat relieved.

He actually feared Bai Hang, who harbored hostility to him, and depending on his current strength, he was not the opponent of Bai Hang.

Although he had just killed Xiahou Tianjie, but his explode the inflammation earth martial skill had left his body with burning skin, particularly under his feet, the whole skin was charred.

If he had not practiced the Demon tyrant form, he would have definitely burnt to death.

“Brother Ling Han, let’s go.”

Long Yu turned his head to nod to Ling Han.

Just entered the mineral lode area, and ran into two Zhenling realm second heavy layer powerhouses. This time, the competition for the lunar debris was probably going to be very tough!

However, fortunately in the fight that just took place, he got an opportunity to comprehend Zhentian world influence in a more profound way.

“If there’s a stressful battle, perhaps then I can achieve Zhentian world domain!”

Long Yu’s eyes shone brightly: “That way, even Zhenling second heavy layer powerhouse couldn’t be able to defeat me quickly!”

Ling Han, Ling Yiyue and Lu Guan Ming, at this time, thoroughly admired Long Yu.

Originally, Ling Han looked upon Long Yu as his junior, but now, he was well aware that Long Yu was much stronger than him.

Now, Long Yu could kill a Zhenling realm powerhouse, but Ling Han was still

only at Wudao eight layer!

Ling Han, initially didn't want to rely on Long Yu to seize lunar debris.

However, now it looked that that if he would not depend on Long Yu, then it would be impossible for him to get lunar debris!

The competition for lunar debris was really going to be too intense.

However, Ling Han didn't think that progress of the strength of Long Yu was so fast approaching to the point where people couldn't imagine.

Yao Yan left the group, but he confirmed that Long Yu really had the strength to kill a Zhenling powerhouse.

Ling Yiyue looked towards the vision of Long Yu with admiration and curiosity. She simply couldn't think that her own elder brother could know such outstanding powerhouse, and became his good friend!

Lu Guan Ming was as before with mindless smile, didn't think too much about all these things.

To this guy, killing a Zhenling realm powerhouse by Long Yu was a normal thing, there was nothing surprising in it?

No one really thought that such achievement was rare in the entire Tang state!

The power of Zhenling represented the absolute strength of coercion, representing the absolute position of honor.

Besides Long Yu, very few people at Wudao ninth layer could kill a Zhenling realm powerhouse.

Imagine, if Long Yu stepped into the Zhenling realm, then his character would go against the heaven's will!

Just thinking about it, Ling Han suddenly felt great expectations.

Most likely, Long Yu was to create a legend in Zhentian Sect, even could become a legendary figure in the entire Tang State!

They were moving forward, but suddenly a sound of howling of several wolves was transmitted from some direction making the hearts of these four people, simultaneously tense up.

"Be careful, it's the dark green wolf in the mineral lode, usually moves in a group, hunting food, our Ling clan villa miners suffer!"

Ling Han made the noise to remind them.

Chapter 99 Dark green lunar wolf

Dark green wolf?

Long Yu said with some doubts: “This mineral lode Yinqi is rich, should not be suitable to any living being, how to have the dark green wolf to exist?”

“You actually don’t know, the dark green wolf can congeal Yinqi with spirituality.”

Ling Han said explaining the facts” “You know, these dark green wolves are the protectors of this mineral lode area, any invader either a human being or a monster beast, is their natural enemy.”

“Really has such existence!”

Long Yu’s heart was surprised.

The dark green wolf could congeal Yinqi, had the ability to comprehend spirituality, wasn’t this and a battle weapon had similar nature of spirituality?

“Um, this Tang State is really vast, every possible strange thing is here.”

Ling Han’s complexion was dignified: “For these dark green wolves, the royal regiment is sent every year to exterminate them, the majority of the wolves are killed every year, but due to the rich Yinqi of the mineral lode, there will be more wolves every year, and the cycle goes on killing them repeatedly and

unceasingly.”

“So that’s how it is, let me observe.”

Long Yu nodded, immediately swept away his Nine Hidden Spear and displayed the Dragon prance, and then he jumped very high above into the sky!

He lowered his head to look in all directions, and his complexion sank immediately.

In the direction of their advance, there was a large group of dark green wolves coming towards their direction, and if these people would go forward, they would definitely encounter these wolves!

Even, the group of these dark green wolves seemed to have been aware of their arrival, and were moving swiftly towards their direction!

Long Yu fell on the ground from the sky and stood firmly, and immediately said: “Everybody, be careful, there are many dark green wolves moving in our direction to attack us!”

“Brother Long, in fact, we don’t need to be anxious, though these wolves are numerous in their number, but they are generally at Wudao fifth layer, rarely they are found at Wudao sixth layer.”

Ling Han said: “Depending on our current strength, we can easily face them, but what actually worrying me is the fear of sneak attack by someone while we will be engaged in dealing with these wolves.”

“You have really underestimated them.”

Long Yu’s face was dignified: “Just what I’ve seen, there are several Zhenling realm dark green wolves, the situation is much more serious than what you say!”

“What!”

The pair of that brother and sister, Ling Han and Ling Yiyue were simultaneously surprised.

Zhenling realm dark green wolves?

“Not a single Zhenling realm dark green wolf did appear throughout the year, and now how several Zhenling wolves have appeared all of a sudden!”

Ling Yiyue, obviously, didn’t believe it.

However, Ling Han frowned: “Can this be possible because of the presence of lunar debris in this area that let the wolves congeal Zhenling?”

“Anyway, we must rush, they’re already here.”

Long Yu felt not far away several dark green wolves transmitting intermittently the cloudy and cold intention to kill.

Now there was no time to change their direction to avoid this confrontation

with these dark green wolves.

“Now the time is for me to begin my hands!”

Lu Guan Ming’s face revealed the color of excitement, just after seeing that Long Yu killed Xiao Tianjie, and now his pair of hands was already itchy.

Ling Yiyue was also somewhat eager to try her hands, she actually wanted to make Long Yu know that she was really not physically very weak.

However, when in the front, several dark green wolves flushed, her pretty small face stiffened all of a sudden.

The head of the group of this dark green wolves was a Zhenling realm wolf, and this dark green wolf had already congealed its Zhenling and the ghost of a lunar claw was floating behind it, spreading the intermittent gloomy and grim breath!

But several other dark green wolves were at Wudao eight layer and Wudao ninth layer, although altogether there were six dark green wolves, but their overall strength was stronger than Long Yu and his companions!

“On!”

Long Yu didn’t act timidly, by grasping his Nine Hidden dragon Spear, his whole stature moved and dashed out wildly!

“Nine Hidden Dragon, activate!”

“Numerous spear shadows!

This was a battle for life and death. In dealing with these wolves he didn't need to use wisdom. Take any type of move, the only aim should be to kill them directly.

“Kill!”

The whole stature of Long Yu suddenly flashed, his body became light like a breeze and instantaneously came in front of a dark green wolf.

Perhaps this dark green wolf was at Wudao ninth layer. It was of the same size as Long Yu. When it saw Long Yu, he stood up and grasped its claw releasing cold wind that rushed towards Long Yu!

But the next moment, Long Yu integrated his spear with the terrible Zhentian world influence and swept away his numerous spear shadows that instantly crushed the wolf!

Long Yu just used a move of Zhentian spear shock tactic to kill a Wudao ninth layer wolf in one fell swoop!

Then, he rotated his spear point and the terrific repression of the Zhentian world influence suppressed down the other five dark green wolves.

“Imperial rock, kill!”

Lu Guan Ming laughed, and immediately lifted his hand to congeal one block of

giant stone in front of him to resist the Yinqi that was rushing out from these five dark green wolves!

Lu Guan Ming and Ling Han were at Wudao eighth layer, and Ling Yiyue was at Wudao sixth layer.

Thus, after Lu Guan Ming shot his move, Ling Han also displayed his white noble spirit skill to resist the Yinqi of these dark green wolves, but he paid much more attention to the protection of his younger sister Ling Yiyue.

Ling Yiyue's cultivation level was low, and if the Yinqi struck her, then her death was certain!

"Numerous spear shadows!"

Long Yu swept away the Nine Hidden Dragon Spear of his hand, and suddenly all these dark green wolves were pushed several feet back.

Out of these five dark green wolves, one wolf was at the Zhenling realm ninth layer, and at that time, it congealed its Zhenling lunar claw behind it and again it congealed its Yinqi and swept it towards Long Yu. This Yinqi instantly shrouded Long Yu completely!

Depending on his current strength, it was somewhat difficult for Long Yu to deal with this Zhenling realm dark green wolf. But, Long Yu didn't fear and instantly condensed Dragon qi on the tip of his Nine Hidden Dragon Spear and swept it towards that wolf.

This Nine Hidden Dragon qi collided with the Yinqi of this wolf and shattered it

completely.

Then, he clenched his fist and blasted it towards that lunar wolf.

“Nine Hidden Dragon Fist, the intoxicated hell, kill!”

Long Yu pounded his punch, but suddenly he found that this lunar wolf was not deterred by his Dragon qi!

Long Yu’s black and strange Dragon qi and the lunar claws of that Zhenling realm wolf collided with each other with a bang!

After the bang, Long Yu was pushed back a few steps because the gap between their strength was too big.

However, his fist continued to rumble to the ground.

“Nine Hidden Dragon burst stream!”

As he pounded his fist into the ground, there was a terrible burst of Nine Hidden Dragon qi out of the ground and rushed towards that dark green lunar wolf and instantaneously enveloped its whole stature!

The Yinqi of this lunar wolf was completely shattered by this Dragon qi. The lunar claw that had been congealed by this lunar wolf was turned into ashes by the impact of Dragon qi and the body of this dark green lunar wolf soon turned into a dried corpse.

It was not the first time that Long Yu killed a Zhenling realm powerhouse, at this moment, his this technique reached a high degree of proficiency!

When this dark green lunar wolf was killed by the burst of the Dragon qi, then Lu Guan Ming and Ling Han teamed up to kill other dark green wolves.

Lu Guan Ming had been practicing imperial rock top grade martial skill and by using this skill he could cast out a strong defence, and the attack capability of this skill was also very impressive.

But he eventually killed these dark green wolves not by the attack of the imperial rock martial skill, but by using martial skill of Demon vajra.

Long Yu knew that this Lu Guan Ming was a disciple of Elder Yu, and from him he came to know the beauty of this Demon vajra martial skill, and therefore, he learnt this skill from Long Yu and chose to practice Demon tyrant form.

For Lu Guan Ming, displaying the Demon vajra skill proved to be very effective.

And Ling Han, who cast his white noble spirit, and Lu Guan Ming, who were only at Wudao ninth layer, but killed these Wudao ninth layer dark green wolves like slaughtering an ordinary dog.

“I didn’t need to display the Demon vajra, although this style is powerful, but its power is inferior to Nine Hidden Dragon Fist and Nine Hidden Dragon Spear.”

Long Yu thought to his mind, he was now at Wudao ninth layer and it was impossible for him to use Demon vajra to kill these dark green lunar wolves.

He must use his own unique means of killing!

“Brother Long, the bodies of these dark green wolves contain a Yao Dan, because these dark green wolves congealed gloomy qi, therefore this Yao Dan inherits the most of the Yao Qi of the wolf.”

All these dark green wolves were killed, Ling Han then walked up and said with a smile: “If one absorbs this Yinqi, the effect is not inferior to the swallowing of a high-grade immortality pill.”

Long Yu heard this, nodded his head, and looked around, a total of six dark green wolves had been killed, leaving behind them six Yao Dans dodging dim light on the ground.

Stronger the strength of the dark green wolf, the stronger would be the strength of his Yao Dan. And when absorbed, it would enhance the power of the cultivation of a Wudao master.

“These gloomy Qi Dans, better first to keep them, then go back and absorb them slowly.”

Long Yu felt that dark green lunar wolf’s Yao Dan was the largest one and the effect of its absorption would be better than a high-grade immortality pill.

But its effect wouldn’t help in congealing Zhenling, so Long Yu didn’t want to waste time in its absorption.

Han also knew that time was running out, so he put away all six Yao Dans.

Afterwards, the four people led the way to go towards the destination once more.

In the martial world, Wudao masters used to take immortality pills for rapid enhancement of their power, but it had certain limitations. If a Wudao master took the second immortality pill in continuation, then the effect would be reduced or even would be less than half of the first one.

The fact also applied to these Yao Dans.

After taking one, if anyone would take the second one in continuation, then the effect would be sharply weakened, if this was not so, then it would have been very easy to upgrade one's cultivation.

But Long Yu had Nine Hidden Dragon Mark that usually helped him by completely absorbing such immortality pills. If Long Yu would take one Yao Dan then its effect would be three times more than that of the others and it was a great advantage for him in comparison to others!

Four people were marching forward in the front, but they suddenly felt the invasion of a strong Yinqi from the front again.

“The earthly position of the lunar debris was nearing in the front, but there are many dark green wolves, not far from here, how do we pass over them?”

Like before, Long Yu again saw that over a hundred dark green wolves were wandering not very far from them.

Depending on the current strength of these four people, it was almost impossible for them to pass such a large number of dark green wolves!

When they couldn't find the way out, they saw many persons' shadows that came at this time in abundance, and immediately went towards the direction of that large group of those dark green wolves.

“Bai Hang!”

“Hua Fu!”

Long Yu and other three people looked at the four Zhenling powerhouses heading towards the direction where they would have to take joint action to kill the dark green wolves!

Chapter 100 – The four great masters

Long Yu looked up and saw the figures of four powerhouses, each on the second layer of Zhenling realm. They were going in the direction of a large group of dark green wolves.

And, one was clad in a white dress and holding a three feet sword in his hand. He was actually a core disciple of Zhentian sect, named Bai Hang. He was soon to rush into the group of dark green wolves.

His sword was extremely fast, enormous and powerful, because he had practiced Tianwei sword tactics to the peak level!

The Tianwei sword tactics, displayed by Bai Hang, was much more formidable than the sword tactics cast out by the law enforcement elder, Zhengyi Zhen.

His random sword strike cut a dark green wolf, which was unable to congeal Zhenling Yinqi in time and was killed instantly!

(NT: I am changing the term ‘gloomy qi’ to ‘Yinqi’. As we all know, Yin is the negative counterpart of Yang in the famous Yin-Yang principle.)

“This Bai Hang is at the peak of Zhenling second layer, and even the strength contained in his casual sword strike is stronger than my own strength.”

Long Yu calmly thought in his heart!

Another person, clad in a red robe with flame patterns on it, was impressively

Hua Fu, a core disciple of Zang fire temple.

(NT: Since Tibet shouldn't exist in a different world, I am gonna have to replace it with the original name, Zang fire temple.)

At this time, a brutal look appeared in Hua Fu's eyes, and his whole stature, as if wrapped in flames, rushed towards the dark green wolves like a blazing fireball.

The restraining effect of the roaring flames on these wolves and their congealed Yinqi was quite obvious.

(NT: Yinqi = Negative energy. Fire = Positive energy

Hence the restraining effect.)

He just waved his hands and the roaring flames exploded with a bang and killed several dark green wolves, in a neater manner than Long Yu.

"The explosive might of the explosion of raging flames, which Hua Fu displayed just now, was much more tyrannical than that of Xiahou Tianjie."

Long Yu saw this scene and analyzed the facts: "If initially, I had fought with Hua Fu instead of Xiahou Tianjie, then perhaps he only needed to use this move to seriously injure me."

After stepping into the Zhenling realm, the gap of strength between Zhenling first layer and Zhenling second layer used to be too big, and in a fight, at least three Zhenling first layer experts couldn't face a single Zhenling second layer

expert.

However in the field, the most dazzling was neither Bai Hang nor Hua Fu, although, their speed of slaughtering these dark green wolves was extremely fast, but there was another person who was faster than these two.

That was a seemingly 20 years old beautiful girl, dressed in a black brilliant clothing that marvelously sketched out her intoxicating curves.

Her white soft hands were holding two red-handled swords flashing out beautiful rays of white light whenever they danced gracefully in her hands.

Her graceful movements in the field appeared very captivating, and with each and every move she made, she cut down several wolves!

Her whole stature as if flickered swiftly in the field, and soon, she completely annihilated the pack of dark green wolves. The Yinqi began to spread out in the surroundings from their corpses.

In this dusky and gloomy atmosphere, the partly visible black figure of this woman looked wonderful. Even Bai Hang's eyes were continually focused on her.

“This is Liu Yuan.”

Ling Han saw that Long Yu was observing that beautiful young girl, and at the right moment, he interrupted Long Yu's thoughts to introduce her: “Liu Yuan is one of the core disciples of Allure Sect, and like Bai Hang, she is also at the peak of Zhenling second layer. She is also known as the rising hope of Imperial city's Liu clan, since she is the strongest person of Liu clan.”

“Liu Yuan!”

Long Yu slightly frowned.

Seriously, the members of Liu clan were present in all of the seven sects of Tang State. Hanbing Sect had Liu Mingcheng, then Knife Cut Sect had Liu Ye, and now, Liu Yuan turned out to belong to Allure Sect.

Not to forget, this Liu Yuan actually turned out to be the strongest of Liu clan!

“I remember that Feng Yao was so infatuated with practicing because she was being bullied by a person in her childhood. Could it be that this bully was Liu Yuan?”

Long Yu thought to himself, and then shifted his attention towards the last Zhenling second layer expert.

This expert was wearing a red robe, had a thin physique and pretty face. At first glance, one couldn't tell whether this person was a male or female!

However, their strength was extremely terrifying.

With a casual flick of hands, flying leaves and flowers emerged out of thin air, with each flower and leaf being sharp like lethal blades, which instantly cut through the Yinqi defenses of dark green wolves and chopped them down like vegetables.

Long Yu seemed to have seen this martial skill before!

“Hua Buxie.”

Long Yu narrowed his eyes and suddenly remembered that in Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, he killed a brother and sister duo of Wudao eighth layer, named Hua Yun and Hua Qing.

And back then, the martial skill named ‘flying leaves picking flowers’ was used by the skinny sister. So, it was not a martial skill of Hanbing Sect, but it was actually a martial skill of their clan.

At that time, Feng Yao had warned Long Yu that Hua Buxie, the elder brother of Hua Yun and Hua Qing, certainly wouldn’t let him off for killing his siblings.

It now appeared that this pretty faced skinny person was undoubtedly Hua Buxie!

“Finally turns out to be a man, huh.”

Long Yu suddenly felt enlightened.

If earlier, Feng Yao had not said that Hua Buxie was the elder brother of Hua Yun and Hua Qing, then it would have been very difficult for Long Yu to figure out the gender of Hua Buxie!

Of course, now was not the time to determine genders.

The key point was the strength of Hua Buxie. Indeed, it was on par with the other three experts.

Whether it was Bai hang, Hua Fu, Liu Yuan or Hua Buxie, at present, Long Yu was not the opponent of any one of these four experts!

“It seems like it’s going to be too difficult to snatch lunar debris.”

Long Yu thought to himself, but it was basically impossible to make him back down once he set his eyes on something.

No matter whether he would be able to obtain it or not, he must first give it a good try!

As far as Hua Buxie was concerned, Long Yu didn’t fear him particularly. Although he was not a match of Hua Buxie right now, but at his current strength, saving his own life in critical situations shouldn’t be an issue.

The four great masters shot together and almost instantly defeated a hundred of dark green wolves.

Just in a few breaths time, 30 to 40 dark green wolves were cut down and the entire air was filled with the Yinqi released by the slaughtered wolves.

The few surviving dark green wolves obviously sensed threat from the four great masters and fled in all directions.

The four great masters didn’t waste even a second and immediately chased

after the wolves respectively in all directions and quickly vanished from the scene.

“Hurry up, we will move quickly.”

Long Yu waved his hand, and immediately, Ling Han, Ling Yiyue and Lu Guanming prepared themselves to break through the front of that area.

When dark green wolves were dispersed by the four great masters, the resting place of lunar debris should not be very far.

It was actually a gulf surrounded by mountains, there are several paths that led directly to it, and right now, Long Yu’s team was moving on the shortest path.

After a while, the four people finally approached the gulf that was surrounded by mountains. They could clearly feel gusts of dense Yinqi blowing against their faces, as if trying to corrode their very souls.

“This is lunarqi!”

Long Yu thought in his heart. This dense Yinqi was blowing out from the gulf and spreading across the mountains. It seemed to be ten times denser in comparison to the Yinqi present in the mineral lode area.

However, Long Yu could feel that the nature of the denser Yinqi was the same as that of the Yinqi he felt in mineral lode area. So, he could make a guess that lunar debris was actually formed as a result of endless condensation of lunarqi.

Of course, now Long Yu wouldn't focus much on the formation process of lunar debris.

The most important thing for him was to figure out, how to seize the lunar debris!

The four people continued down the shortcut and finally arrived at the entrance of the gulf.

From the entrance, one could see the entire gulf. Long Yu took a broad view of the gulf and saw that it was of the same size as Feng clan mansion or Ling clan mansion.

In the gulf, there were no dark green wolves, only rich and dense Yinqi was unceasingly gushing out from the pit, making it practically impossible to see what was present on the other side.

"Some people are already present inside the gulf!"

Ling Han frowned and said: "I have grown up here since childhood and have a unique perception ability which helps me see inside Yinqi. Right now, there are three groups in the gulf."

"Can you see who they are?"

Long Yu asked.

It was good news that Ling Han had a keen Yinqi perception ability. At least it would give them an edge over other teams while competing for the lunar debris.

“It’s not good, I can only feel a total of five people that are standing separately in three directions in the gulf.”

Ling Han said.

Five people, divided into three groups?

Long Yu frowned because he couldn’t correctly guess about the identities of the enemies.

“You all stay here and I will go inside and have a look. If anything happens to me there, then you all will be on your own.”

Long Yu said and didn’t wait for Ling Han and the others to respond. He took a step forward and jumped into the gulf!

His whole stature was instantaneously covered by the dark Yinqi and vanished from their sights. This made those three have a somewhat hateful feeling in their hearts.

This guy actually left them behind and went alone!

Of course, they couldn’t understand Long Yu’s strategy. After all, several Zhenling realm powerhouses were in the competition to seize the lunar debris, including people like Bai Hang and Liu Yuan.

In Long Yu's group, two were only at Wudao eighth layer, and one was merely at Wudao sixth layer. If there was a conflict between Long Yu's team and those powerhouses then they would surely perish!

However, even if Long Yu went alone and considering the fact that he was at Wudao ninth layer, but still, was there really a chance that Long Yu would be able to deal with these powerhouses and seize the lunar debris on his own?

Lu Guanming usually showed confidence in Long Yu, but this time, even he didn't have a point of assurance!

.....

Long Yu jumped into the gulf and an awe-inspiring Yinqi immediately enveloped him.

Layer after layer of dark and dusky Yinqi was clouding his vision and his eyes could barely see up to ten feet or so.

Suddenly, he heard the sound of footsteps and he quickly moved towards the place from where the sound was coming.

"Duanmu Conglong, Yang Tiancuo!"

Soon, two figures appeared in front of him. Long Yu immediately recognized the guy in white clothes. It was Yang Tiancuo, the same guy who once threatened Long Yu not to go to Ling clan villa. How could Long Yu forget his

face?

As for the tall guy who was clad in black clothes, he was named Duanmu Conglong and was actually the 4th ranked core disciple of Zhentian Sect. He was at the peak of Zhenling first layer!

Long Yu caught a glimpse of these two, and they certainly also immediately saw Long Yu, and their eyes shone brightly.

“Ha ha, it turned out to be this boy, and he is all alone. What a pleasant surprise!”

Duanmu Conglong laughed at Long Yu: “Yang Tiancuo, what do you say, should we kill him now? Or since he is a disciple of our sect, should we let him go?”

“He is competing for lunar debris. Since we met him here, might as well just get rid of him.”

Yang Tiancuo solemnly said as he simply didn't care about Long Yu belonging to the same sect!

“Well said.”

Duanmu Conglong looked at Long Yu with a disdainful look in his eyes: “A trivial Wudao ninth layer guy like you dares to compete for lunar debris. You have brought this upon yourself, so you must not blame your fellow apprentices for this.”

As his voice fell, without the slightest hesitation, he stepped forward and rushed towards Long Yu.

“Soul moving fist!”

Duanmu Conglong shouted loudly and swept his fist towards Long Yu!

When Long Yu saw that these two were mentally prepared to get rid of him, he also didn't want to lag behind.

“Duanmu Conglong, we are the disciples of the same sect, but it is you who started this conflict, so you better not blame me when it brings about your demise!”

Long Yu grasped his Nine Hidden Dragon Spear, instantly integrating it with Zhentian world influence, and swept away numerous spear shadows towards Duanmu Conglong!

Since Duanmu Conglong was a heartless man, so Long Yu also didn't need to show mercy to him.

He wanted to kill Long Yu, so he would not hesitate to kill either. So what if he was an expert at the peak Zhenling first layer? Long Yu had already killed more than one of such experts!

Volume II: Chapter-101 Domain control

Without wasting any time on superfluous words, Duanmu Conglong swept away his soul moving fist towards Long Yu.

Long Yu grasped his Nine Hidden Dragon Spear and instantly condensed Zhentian world influence on its tip and swept away numerous spear shadows towards Duanmu Conglong.

“Soul moving fist, if it hit me even once then I will not be able to display any martial skill.”

Long Yu thought: “At my current level of martial art, if I can’t display any martial skill then that will be the end of me.”

Now, it was very important for Long Yu to dodge this soul moving fist.

At this time, the numerous spear shadows were approaching towards Duanmu Conglong. Meanwhile, Long Yu swiftly cast out ghost flash and his whole stature instantaneously transformed into that of a ghost incarnation and easily dissipated in the dense Yinqi.

“Hm?”

Duanmu Conglong had used soul moving fist to deter Long Yu’s soul, but soon, the numerous spear shadows collided with it, and with a bang, these spear shadows suddenly disintegrated and turned into the air current.

However, by this time, Long Yu had already vanished from his sight.

“Nine Hidden Dragon Fist!”

Long Yu suddenly appeared above him and unleashed Intoxicated Hell, thereby releasing strange black Dragon qi which completely enveloped Duanmu.

The strange black nine hidden Dragon qi instantly enveloped Duanmu Conglong completely and made his mind go blank all of a sudden, and his body felt sluggish on the spot.

Nine Hidden Dragon fist was a best grade martial skill and its power was more effective than some of the spiritual level martial skills.

Using this move, Long Yu had killed several enemies, and now, Duanmu was going to be the latest victim of this dreadful attack!

“Brother Duanmu!

From the side, Yang Tiancuo shouted loudly. He was surprised to see why Duanmu wasn't trying to evade Long Yu's attack?

He had no time to ponder about it, he immediately cast out a super grade martial skill, and a white colored corrugated qi instantly rushed towards Long Yu.

“Ha ha!”

Seeing this, Long Yu laughed in an uncontrolled manner: “I never thought that Brother Duanmu would be so timid, that even dealing with a trivial expert of Wudao ninth layer, he would need help from others!”

As his voice fell, he once again took out the Nine Hidden Dragon spear from behind and immediately swept away numerous spear shadows towards Yang Tiancuo. These spear shadows completely and effortlessly routed the corrugated white Qi.

Then, all of a sudden, his blizzard boots flashed, a layer of snow and ice rolled out immediately and entangled the whole body of Yang Tiancuo, slowing down the circulation of Xuan qi in his meridians!

Long Yu didn't need to pay any attention to Yang Tiancuo, because his main target was actually Duanmu Conglong.

Unfortunately, because of the interruption of Yang Tiancuo, Duanmu had recovered from his absent-minded state, and found that Long Yu was right above his head.

“Zhentian charm! Soul moving fist!”

Duanmu shouted loudly and a Zhenling dragon's ghostly figure appeared behind him. It roared loudly, and while carrying a terrifying repression, it flew towards Long Yu!

“A Zhenling dragon?”

Long Yu thought then immediately released Zhentian world influence, and along with his Nine Hidden Dragon fist aimed at Duanmu, he continued to descend.

Long Yu had released Zhentian world influence, but because of the gap between their levels, the intensity of coercion of his Zhentian world influence and that of the Zhentian charm of Duanmu was about the same.

(Mystique-Zhentian world influence is the next level of Zhentian charm)

Both sides cancelled each other repressions. However, it was yet to be seen that which was more powerful, whether the Nine Hidden Dragon fist wrapped in Dragon Qi or Duanmu's Zhenling dragon ghost.

"Let me see whether a mere Zhenling dragon is a match of my Nine Hidden Dragon fist!"

Long Yu's stature flashed. He immediately activated his Nine Hidden Dragon Mark, and instantaneously, the black Dragon Qi wrapped his whole body.

Then, he threw his fist towards Duanmu!

With a bang, Long Yu's Dragon fist collided with Duanmu's Zhenling dragon and as a result of this clash, Long Yu was sent flying.

"This Zhenling dragon is really something."

Long Yu thought to himself, but at this moment, he suddenly had one type of

enlightenment.

Before going to Ling clan's villa, he had practiced in the sect valley for three days and had made a good progress in comprehending Zhentian world influence. But, he wasn't able to comprehend 'Zhentian Domain'.

But, now after a series of fierce fighting, he finally broke through the bottleneck and finally seized the opportunity!

"Zhentian domain!"

Long Yu instantly cast out Zhentian domain and an extremely powerful burst of coercion rushed towards Duanmu. Long Yu had never released such a type of coercion before.

Zhentian domain!

The terrific coercion of Zhentian domain suppressed the Zhenling dragon.

Wudao masters practiced different types of martial skills to borrow power from the rules of heaven and earth.

While practicing the core law, the state was divided into four levels, the first was mood, followed by charm, then came world influence and the last was domain.

If a Wudao master comprehended domain, then he was able to borrow tremendous power from laws of heaven and earth, and there would be a

qualitative leap in the level of his cultivation as well!

As Long Yu released Zhentian domain, a surrounding area of 200 feet in radius would become a part of his domain!

“Zhentian domain, I finally broke through!”

Long Yu stood firmly on the ground then looked at Duanmu Conglong.

Domain and world influence, although had a difference of one level, but when comparing their coercive powers, it was like the difference between the heaven and the earth.

Not to mention, the gap between the domain and the charm was also the same!

Duanmu Conglong suddenly felt himself being enveloped in a terrific pressure of suppression, making the flow of Xuan qi in his meridians almost stagnant. Now, even just moving about would require enormous strength.

Duanmu’s complexion suddenly paled.

“Domain, unexpectedly this is Zhentian domain! How is this possible?”

Duanmu’s eyes were filled with horror!

Zhentian domain, how could a trivial Wudao ninth layer person comprehend

it?

Even Zhenling realm experts had to spend a long time to comprehend Zhentian domain and still weren't able to control it properly.

But this Long Yu, how could he control the domain so well!

However, the terrific suppression that came from Long Yu clearly indicated that Duanmu was now in the domain of Long Yu.

Even the possibility of displaying Zhenling power by Duanmu was completely suppressed by Long Yu's domain, and the Zhenling dragon had also dispirited to a great extent.

Not to mention, the terrible repression of Zhentian domain suppressed Yang Tiancuo, and that too so intensely that he immediately fell on his knees and cold sweat appeared on his face. There was a look of disbelief in his eyes.

What kind of a freak was this Long Yu?

"Zhentian domain is the suppression of the world itself. No wonder everyone in the range has to be suppressed by my domain."

Long Yu could even feel all of the details in the surrounding area of 200 feet in his domain. In fact, even the flow of Yinqi had now come under his possession.

He stepped towards Duanmu, and the intensity of suppression accordingly continued to increase on Duanmu, making his whole body tremble a bit.

“Nine Hidden Dragon burst stream!”

Long Yu’s fierce eyes flashed with a cold light apparent in them. He was certainly not going to show mercy to Duanmu. He suddenly pounded his fist on the ground.

A loud “Bang” shook the entire ground, and it seemed as if the entire gulf was trembling due the tremendous strength present in this attack!

Then, a stream of nine hidden dragon qi instantly gushed out from beneath Duanmu and enveloped his whole body.

“You are a disciple of the same sect so I didn’t want to kill you, but since you wanted to kill me, then you should be prepared to be killed instead!”

Long Yu got up and stood still, there was a calm expression on his face as he withdrew Zhentian domain.

After all, he followed the principle of tit for tat.

Duanmu screamed along with the eruption of Dragon qi then immediately went silent.

After being shrouded by Long Yu’s Zhentian domain, Duanmu couldn’t even display a single move and was directly killed by the eruption of Dragon qi.

Although there was no coercion of Zhentian domain, but Yang Tiancuo was still

on his knees and shivering with fear.

He looked towards Duanmu, but when the Dragon qi dissipated, the shriveled corpse of Duanmu appeared in front of his eyes. He couldn't help but cry out loud.

“You are a devil, you are a devil!”

Yang Tiancuo was looked at the dark figure of Long Yu and shouted out of panic.

“How long-winded.”

Long Yu moved his steps, his whole stature suddenly flashed and also swept out his Nine Hidden dragon spear.

Numerous spear shadows!

These spear shadows instantly stabbed into Yang Tiancuo's body and killed him on the spot. His eyes were opened wide with bewilderment as his body fell to the ground.

Long Yu was never a good man, and this time, the enemy actually committed a fatal mistake of threatening his life.

He was just at Wudao ninth layer but had already killed several experts of higher level, and each time, he killed them to ensure his own safety.

As the nine hidden dragon qi dispersed, a strong Yinqi filled the air.

Now, a complete silence spread in the surroundings and Long Yu was the only man present on the scene.

However, Long Yu was not the only one who witnessed the whole thing!

“Splendid, Splendid!”

An androgynous laughter, as if coming from all directions, fell into Long Yu’s ears, inducing a cold feeling in his heart.

Was this Hua Buxie?

This made Long Yu’s mind suddenly tense up. Hua Buxie was a Zhenling second layer expert, and his strength was many times stronger than Duanmu Conglong.

Most importantly, a strong killing intention was coming towards him from all over.

Now, it was clear to him that Hua Buxie definitely knew that he had killed his siblings in Royal Ancient Ginseng forest.

And about this, Feng Yao must have told him after returning to her sect, otherwise, how could he possibly find out about it?

“Feng Yao”.

Long Yu narrowed his eyes, suddenly the hatred for Feng Yao increased in his heart!

Long Yu initially thought that if he encountered Hua Buxie and suffered at his hand, then he would rely on Nine Hidden Dragon prance to escape and Hua Buxie would not be able to catch up with him.

However, now that he was able to comprehend Zhentian domain, he would like to test Hua Buxie's strength.

However, the enemy's strength was very high.

Zhenling second layer granted terrifying strength, but the strength of Zhentian domain was also no joke!

With Zhentian domain, Long Yu believed that he would not be instantly defeated by an expert of Zhenling second layer, and at least, he could test the extent of such an expert's strength.

While he was still thinking about this, he heard sharp piercing sounds coming from all directions.

Shua! Shua! Shua! Shua!

A large number of leaf and flower blades came rushing towards him from everywhere!

At this moment, in front of Long Yu, rear, left, right, above, basically from all directions, these leaf and flower blades came darting towards him.

Hua Buxie had not yet appeared, but had already launched a terrifying barrage of attacks on Long Yu!

Chapter 102 Yinqi dispersed

‘Flying leaves picking flowers’ was a martial skill of Hua Buxie’s clan, and it was a top grade martial skill.

Long Yu had not heard of Hua clan before. Perhaps, it was settled in one of the major cities of Tang state, just like the Feng clan of Yu Guan city.

Although ‘Flying leaves picking flowers’ was only a top grade martial skill, but at this time, it had been cast out by an expert of Zhenling second layer, so its power was far beyond Long Yu’s imagination!

“Zhentian domain, activate!”

Long Yu could use Nine Hidden Dragon prance to jump far away from the gulf, but right now, he had made up his mind to determine the gap between him and Hua Buxie, therefore he chose to display Zhentian domain and tried to suppress those sharp blade-like flowers and leaves!

When Long Yu released Zhentian domain, the surrounding area in a radius of 200 feet around him came under his domain control.

Those leaf and flower blades, which came inside the domain area, were immediately suppressed and their speed was slowed down by more than half.

Then, immediately, Long Yu displayed Zhentian spear tactics and as a result of that, all of these lethal leaf and flower blades instantly withered and fell piece by piece on the ground!

The tyrannical attack of Hua Buxie, a Zhenling second layer expert, was completely rendered useless by Long Yu!

“Where is he?”

Long Yu’s hastily looked around.

A thick mist had blocked his line of sight, making him unable to see the location of Hua Buxie.

Long Yu wanted to track his location on the basis of his breath killing intention, but Hua Buxie’s killing intention was coming from all directions, therefore, Long Yu was not able to pin point his location.

“He is too fast!”

Long Yu was a little perplexed.

If the opposite party wouldn’t appear in front of him and managed to walk outside his domain area, then it would be difficult for Long Yu to overpower him.

Otherwise, Long Yu wouldn’t be able to resist his attacks, not to mention beating him would be out of question.

Because he had released Zhentian domain, so the consumption of Xuan qi was too big!

Even if he had strengthened his Dantian, and at this time, it was beating constantly for recovering the consumed Xuan qi at more than double the speed of its consumption, but after releasing Zhentian domain, it wouldn't last for a long time!

Even at his current strength, in less than the burning time of an incense stick, his Xuan qi would be used up completely.

“It seems that condensation is not possible before Zhenling realm, and even after comprehending Zhentian domain, it is not suitable for a long time battle.”

Long Yu thought to himself, since Zhentian domain could only suppress the opposite party temporarily.

Presently, he had to fight a formidable expert of Zhenling second layer, Hua Buxie, and there was a little chance of winning. Of course, even by displaying his best grade martial skill, Nine Hidden Dragon Fist, it would be very difficult to injure him, but it was impossible to kill him.

The basic strength granted by Zhenling second layer was 7 or 8 times more than the strength granted by Wudao ninth layer.

Even for Long Yu, it was impossible to surmount this big gap in their strengths!

“Not bad, it's actually Zhentian sect's domain, and a lot stronger than I imagined. No wonder you could kill my beloved younger brother and sister.....”

Hua Buxie's androgynous voice echoed as if coming from all directions, making it difficult for Long Yu to ascertain his position.

Then, Long Yu heard the piercing sound of sharp weapons.

Once again numerous lethal leaf and flower blades rushed towards Long Yu like a rainstorm!

Hua Buxie had seen how Long Yu punched his fist to the ground and the burst of strange qi surged out of the ground and killed Duanmu, so he didn't want to act recklessly while dealing with Long Yu. His plan was to drag on the fight to fully deplete Long Yu's Xuan qi.

"Zhentian domain!"

Long Yu displayed Zhentian domain once again and swept away numerous spear shadows in all directions, which instantly defeated all of the lethal leaf and flower blades!

However, he still didn't know the enemy's location!

"Can I only passively resist like this? The remaining Xuan qi is quickly running out."

Long Yu's heart sank.

Undoubtedly, Hua Buxie was much stronger than him.

Moreover, the other three experts were also at Zhenling second layer and Long Yu didn't have a chance of winning against them.

"It's too difficult to overstep this gap."

Long Yu thought to himself and immediately used dragon prance. An air current rolled up beneath him, helping his whole stature to jump up 100 meters high towards the sky, and in an instant, he was out of the gulf's range!

He lowered his head to take a broad view of the gulf, but it was completely enveloped by strong Yinqi, so he couldn't see the people present there.

But he was keen to discover who all were present in the gulf, and soon, the dense Yinqi gradually began to disperse in all directions and the visibility improved a lot than before!

"Yinqi has started to disperse?"

Long Yu scowled, and suddenly, his whole stature fell like a meteor and landed in another location of the gulf.

The 100 meters high jump helped him in getting out of Hua Buxie's entanglement.

As the gulf was filled with dense Yinqi, so the opposite party also couldn't see his location!

If the noise produced from the clashes between Long Yu and Duanmu had not

spread in the gulf, perhaps, Hua Buxie would have not known Long Yu's location.

"I must take this opportunity to rest a bit."

Long Yu hid himself in the Yinqi and immediately sat leg-crossed on the ground. He immediately stimulated his Dantian, which began to beat in synch with his heart beats. As a result of that, the depleted Xuan qi began to replenish in his meridians at a fast speed.

The gulf area was vast and strong Yinqi was shrouding everything within a range of few hundred meters.

But, now, the strong Yinqi had begun to disperse gradually.

Occasionally, he heard footsteps nearby, but thanks to being vigilant all the time, he would immediately change locations.

Until the full restoration of Xuan qi in his body meridians, he didn't want to be discovered by anyone. He just wanted to secretly relax and recover.

He stood up, looked around and noticed that the strong Yinqi had dispersed to a great extent, and through the grey Yinqi, he could occasionally see hazy person's figure.

As he thought, he saw that most of the Yinqi was dispersing outside the gulf.

Almost half of it had already dispersed out!

At this time, he was a bit lucky because fortunately, the full dispersion of Yinqi would occur after the full restoration of his Xuan qi.

Although, he didn't fear Hua Buxie, but at this time, he was not at his full strength and didn't want to take risks.

Long Yu had to be careful, after all, you get life only once.

With the gradual dispersal of Yinqi, now, the other people and Long Yu caught up each other's eyes.

This was an abandoned gulf and the bottom of the gulf was bumpy, not smooth.

There were several pits in its bottom and an awe-inspiring Yinqi was gushing out of them unceasingly.

At this moment, however, the ever flowing Yinqi suddenly dispersed in all directions and nobody knew what exactly happened!

Long Yu looked around and found that a dozen of people had actually come inside the gulf!

By this time, these people were confronting each other, and even thought they noticed that Long Yu was standing on the side, no one bothered to pay too much attention to him.

A person at Wudao ninth layer, perhaps, had no worth in their eyes!

Only a person clad in red robe was paying attention to Long Yu, and it was none other than Hua Buxie.

Now, however, Hua Buxie didn't rush towards Long Yu to kill him, rather he was busy in discussing something with others.

In the field, four super experts of Zhenling second layer had gathered together.

Bai Hang, Hua Fu, Hua Buxie and Liu Yuan!

Among them, Hua Fu looked most excited from his face, Bai Hang had smile on his face, but there was an indifferent look in the eyes of Hua Buxie.

While clad in a brilliant black clothing, Liu Yuan looked extremely graceful and attractive. Her two red-handled swords were stuck in the ground.

The black silky long hair was hanging down to the waist and looked beautiful while being gently blown by the breeze. This scene was softly provoking the heart strings of the people, as if releasing an intoxicating charm on everyone.

Not only was Liu Yuan a tyrannical martial artist, even her beauty was far beyond the reach of other women.

Even Long Yu couldn't help but thought that the beauty of Feng Yao was nothing before Liu Yuan!

Besides these four super experts, Long Yu also saw a lot of other people in the

field.

The royal prince, Wang Tianzhuo, was standing with his attendant, Liu Mingcheng, two Zhenling first layer guards and Feng Yao.

When Yinqi thoroughly dispersed in the gulf, Feng Yao finally saw Long Yu.

A look of surprise flashed in her eyes, but she immediately returned to normal, as if she didn't see him at all.

Now, she knew well that Long Yu was no longer a waste, but had transformed into a highly talented expert!

However, she still didn't have a favorable impression of him because he was the reason behind the strained relationship between her father and mother.

Both Wang Tianzhuo and Liu Mingcheng looked towards Long Yu and sneered.

Right now, Long Yu was only at Wudao ninth layer, and Wang Tianzhuo, along with his two guards of Zhenling first layer, could easily kill him to exact revenge.

In addition to that, Yi Yan, Liu Shucheng and Huayi Lun; these three were also standing on one side.

The trio was quite surprised to see Long Yu alone. Where were Ling Han and the other two?

There were several corpses lying around on the ground, and it seemed like a lot of fighting had taken place before the dense Yinqi fully dispersed.

A total of ten corpses were lying around in the gulf.

Duanmu Conglong and Yang Tiancuo were lying dead on the ground, but no one actually bothered to know who killed them.

“Good, Ling Han and the others are not here, which means they are fine and still hiding somewhere.”

Long Yu analyzed the situation in the field and then quietly stepped back, because there were many people who wanted to take his life, and it was better for him to not appear in front of them.

Four great experts were discussing the matter about lunar debris among themselves.

Everyone was greatly attracted to the lunar debris and no one was actually willing to give in. The central point of their discussion was that who would fight with whom when the lunar debris would finally make an appearance.

When the discussion came to an end, Hua Buxie made it clear that he would be the one to kill Long Yu. He looked around but Long Yu had long disappeared from there and was perhaps hiding in one of the corners in the gulf.

“Wang Tianzhuo, didn’t you say you will deal with Liu Yuan for me?”

The beautiful and graceful looking Feng Yao was occasionally glancing towards Liu Yuan and suddenly reminded Wang Tianzhuo about what he said earlier.

Wang Tianzhuo had uttered fine words at that time, but now when he saw Liu Yuan with his own eyes, he was stunned all of a sudden!

Of course, he realized that Liu Yuan was way more attractive than Feng Yao. So, how could he possibly teach her a lesson just because Feng Yao despised her?

Chapter-103- The Wolf King

Feng Yao saw that Wang Tianzhuo's gaze was as if glued to Liu Yuan and immediately knew what was going on in his mind.

Although she did not have anything to do with Wang Tianzhuo, but still had a grudge against Liu Yuan.

Wang Tianzhuo was very much attracted to the beauty of Liu Yuan and this obviously made Feng Yao extremely angry!

“Wang Tianzhuo, so in the end, all those big words you said earlier were nothing but empty words.”

Feng Yao said in a sarcastic manner,

“Sister Feng Yao, don't misunderstand me.”

Wang Tianzhuo immediately turned his head towards her and laughed: “Right now, lunar debris is the most important thing. We will think about other matters in the future.”

He was certainly aware of Liu Yuan's strength and knew that it would be absolutely impossible to deal with her on his own.

He belonged to a branch of royal clan and planned to marry Feng Yao when she would step into Zhenling realm.

Someday, when Feng Yao would condense Zhenling, he would immediately marry her and this should considerably improve his position in the royal clan.

Even in Imperial city, experts of Zhenling realm were considered very strong. The royal clan was very large, but the experts of Zhenling realm held high status.

So, he obviously couldn't let go of Feng Yao.

"Humph."

Feng Yao snorted, but did not say anything.

However, after hearing what he said just now, if she still believed in Wang Tianzhuo then she would literally be the world's biggest moron!

"Cousin."

At this time, Liu Yuan's beautiful eyes looked at Feng Yao, and with a light smile on her face, she said: "It was a childhood matter, why have you kept it recorded in your mind? I have apologized several times for this."

"Indeed, junior sister apprentice Feng Yao, since senior sister apprentice Liu Yuan has apologized so many times, you should also let go of this childish grudge."

Wang Tianzhuo said in a joyful manner.

“Who do you think you are, casually referring to them as junior sister apprentice, senior sister apprentice. It seems a trash like you is really overstepping his limits.”

At this time, a girl standing beside Liu Yuan sneered and said. Her name was Xin Yueya and she was a beautiful disciple of Allure sect.

She actually couldn't understand why Wang Tianzhuo was addressing to Liu Yuan as 'senior sister apprentice'.

Wang Tianzhuo's face sank at this. He then looked at Xin Yueya and said: “Girl, you will pay the price for what you said!”

“Do you think you can make me pay the price?”

Xin Yueya said in a contemptuous manner.

“Well, Xi Yueya, you don't need to be wordy with the people we have nothing to do with.”

Liu Yuan said in a soft voice. This also stopped Xin Yueya from continuing.

Lunar debris was soon to appear on the earth, and even Liu Yuan didn't want to cause complications, in any event she only wanted to concentrate on obtaining it!

However, in the very next moment, suddenly, a deafening wolf howl came

from outside the gulf!

Then, a giant dark green wolf, congealed from the Yinqi, suddenly dropped from the sky, and instantly jumped from the surface and landed in the center of the gulf. His sudden arrival shocked everyone in the gulf!

“This is the Wolf King!”

In the field, the people called out in alarm, including two Wudao ninth layer experts, who were instantaneously crushed to death by this giant Wolf King.

They didn’t even get time to scream and lost their lives on the spot!

“Sure enough, this Wolf King is at Zhenling third layer!”

Liu Yuan’s eyes shone brightly. She had already speculated that there might be such a Wolf King lurking somewhere, and now, it seemed like he finally decided to make an appearance.

Before making its appearance on the earth, lunar debris would congeal a Wolf King of Zhenling third layer to prevent people from robbing the lunar debris.

Five years ago, when Mo Fengming of Mo clan captured the lunar debris, the Wolf King had appeared to guard it.

On that occasion, many people had lost their lives at the claws of the Wolf King.

And this time, the Wolf King just appeared and killed two ninth layer experts!

“Huo Fu, Liu Yuan, Hua Buxie!”

Bai Hang saw this and immediately shouted loudly. He instantly grasped his long sword, a spiritual level battle weapon, and rushed towards the Wolf King!

The Wolf King was at Zhenling third layer, and besides these four super experts of Zhenling second layer, no one else had the power to resist him.

If the four super experts didn't join forces, then everyone would ultimately be torn into pieces by the Wolf King!

The four super experts had just discussed that if a stronger enemy was to make an appearance, then they would collaborate to fight him and ensure that lunar debris should not fall into the hand of other unrelated person.

For example, regarding the stronger enemy, a Wolf King had appeared five years ago, and so on.

And this time also, a Wolf King appeared, generating a cold feeling in the hearts of the four super experts. Bai Hang led the attack against it and the other three also besieged him from all directions.

Before, the four super experts could respond, two more died. They were actually smashed to meat patties by its claws.

Bai Hang, armed with his long sword, led the way and cast out Tianwei sword

tactics to resist the Wolf King's tyrannical attacks.

However, alone, he was simply not the opponent of the Wolf King.

Fortunately, right then, Liu Yuan's stature flashed, and grasping two red handled swords in her both hands, while disseminating white sword light, she arrived beside the Wolf King in a blink of an eye.

"Flowing light sword shadow!"

Liu Yuan shouted loudly. She was clad in black clothes and her slim figure, as if wrapped in white sword light, instantly bombarded on the side of the Wolf King.

Not only the speed of this move was extremely fast, but its might was also equally terrifying!

Hidden in a nearby dark corner, Long Yu was observing the situation in the field, and secretly thought that if he was to face this move, then he would have no other means but to use the suppression of Zhentian domain.

He wouldn't even get enough time to cast out Nine Hidden Dragon prance!

Unfortunately, the Wolf King had the strength of Zhenling third layer. It immediately congealed Zhenling wolf claw which easily blocked her move.

"Roaring flames explosion!"

Suddenly, Huo Fu's body was enveloped in a burst of flames and the surging flames rushed towards the Wolf King and completely covered its body.

Then, however, the Zhenling wolf claw swept through the raging flames, and all of a sudden, Huo Fu was sent flying out of the surging flames.

The power of the flames had really irritated the Wolf King and it made Huo Fu its main target to kill.

The Wolf King was about to move towards Huo Fu to kill him, but right then, Hua Buxie, as a core disciple of Hanbing sect, instantaneously cast out a best grade martial skill of Hanbing sect.

Earlier, he had used 'Flying leaves picking flowers' skill just to tease Long Yu!

"Hanbing world influence!"

Hua Buxie shouted lightly. Suddenly there was burst of ice and snow that rumbled towards the Wolf King, as if to freeze him on the spot.

Hua Buxie, while practicing the core law of Hanbing sect, had comprehended the skill of terrible repression of 'Hanbing world influence'.

At this time, his display of the terrifying repression of Hanbing world influence immediately caused wonder by making the whole stature of the Wolf King stagnant, and prevented him from chasing down Huo Fu.

Moreover, at the same time, the attacks of Bai Hang and Liu Yuan also caused

serious injuries to it.

“Zhentian world influence!”

Bai Hang waved sword in his hand and released an enormous suppression of Zhentian world influence towards the Wolf King.

Under dual suppression, the Wolf King was dispirited all of a sudden.

However, the four super experts didn't get time to relax, and soon a terrible Yinqi burst out of its body and shattered the suppressions of Zhentian world influence and Hanbing world influence.

“Be careful, this beast is very strong!”

Bai Hang's complexion changed. He never thought that the terrifying impact of dual suppression wouldn't cause the slightest impact on the Wolf King. .

Liu Yuan's complexion also paled. She knew that if the Wolf King was not killed then it was absolutely impossible to obtain the lunar debris!

While the four super experts were fighting with the Wolf King, Long Yu was secretly watching from one corner and planning his next course of action.

“So the strong and rich Yinqi dispersed from the entire gulf and actually congealed this Wolf King of Zhenling third layer.”

Long Yu was quickly thinking up: “Looking at the strength of this Wolf King, the Yin Dan present in his body should be the source of its inherent strength. If I can capture it and absorb its Yin Dan then there is a big possibility that I may be able to step into Zhenling realm!”

Moreover, the four super experts had teamed up against the Wolf King, so if the lunar debris just appeared at this time, then Long Yu would get a good chance to snatch it.

Mindful of these facts, Long Yu carefully observed the situation in the field.

There were a total of twenty-one people in the field, and just now, four of them had been killed by the Wolf King. So, now only seventeen remained in the field.

Excluding the four super experts, altogether there were thirteen people!

Long Yu analyzed them one by one. Among the remaining thirteen people, Wang Tianzhuo’s group had five people. Moreover, there was a group of three people consisting of Yi Yan, Liu Shucheng and Huayi Lun.

Now, among the remaining five people, one was Xin Yueya.

And the remaining four people included four core disciples of Knife Cut Sect, two of whom were at Zhenling first layer experts and the other two were at Wudao ninth layer.

“In terms of strength, Wang Tianzhuo seems like the strongest. I must act now and weaken him.”

Long Yu came up with a strategy and quietly went into action.

He intentionally revealed his face from the hiding place, and it worked, since Wang Tianzhuo had been looking for Long Yu!

“This kid definitely wants to cause trouble. Brother Lu, Brother Luo, let’s hurry up and kill that guy.”

Wang Tianzhuo called out and his two bodyguards, Lu Taoguo and Luo Liangfu, who were standing behind him, immediately came forward and rushed towards Long Yu.

“That boy should be dead.”

Liu Mingcheng didn’t follow them, just remained at his place and sneered.

Relying on his strength, he could only stand on the side and observe. He was not even strong enough to face Long Yu.

When Feng Yao saw that Wang Tianzhuo’s men were going to attack and kill Long Yu, her face didn’t show any expression or emotion.

Now, she was not harboring any killing intention for Long Yu, but she wouldn’t help him either.

The very existence of Long Yu was the reason behind the stiffening of relationship between her parents, since her father would give most of attention

to Long Yu.

This was the reason why Feng Yao didn't have a favorable impression of Long Yu.

However, Long Yu also didn't care about the presence of Feng Yao in the field.

He just revealed his face and saw that Wang Tianzhuo, along with his two bodyguards, fiercely rushed towards him.

"These three Zhenling layer experts really think highly of me, but, too bad they want my life."

Long Yu's eyes shone brightly and a strange smile appeared on his face.

He was planning to deal with Wang Tianzhuo, and irony of the fact was that the other party actually took the initiative to find him, so what could be better than this!

Chapter 104 – Defeat the enemy by capturing their chief

Seeing Wang Tianzhuo and his two bodyguards rushing towards Long Yu, many people raised their eyebrows in the field.

And, an ominous look revealed on the beautiful face of Hua Buxie, then engaged in confrontation with the Wolf King.

“Although, I can’t kill you personally, but seeing you die in front of me will also be a matter of great enjoyment!”

Huo Fu looked towards Long Yu with a cruel look in his eyes, as if he was looking forward to see how Long Yu would be killed by Wang Tianzhuo!

“Originally, I personally wanted to take revenge for Xiahou, it seems now I will not get that opportunity!”

Huo Fu said as he narrowed his eyes to look at Long Yu with his one eye. At that time, there was a hint of regret in his eyes.

It was really a pity he couldn’t butcher this boy!

Hua Buxie and Huo Fu actually wanted to deal with Long Yu, but when they noticed that three experts of Zhenling first layer were already aiming for his life so there was no need for them to dirty their own hands. At least, this was what they assumed for now.

Although, Hua Buxie knew that Long Yu had comprehended Zhentian domain

and had killed Duanmu Conglong, a Zhenling first layer expert, but it should be much more difficult for Long Yu to face three Zhenling first layer experts at once!

While confronting the Wolf King, Bai Hang and Liu Yuan discovered the killing intentions of Hua Buxie and Huo Fu, directed towards Long Yu.

Liu Yuan had nothing to do with this matter, so she continued to focus on the Wolf King!

But after seeing this, Bai Hang's complexion changed.

"Stop!"

Bai Hang suddenly refused to contain the Wolf King, and then he actually wanted to rush towards Long Yu, as if to save him.

"We four have a certain goal, and that is the Wolf King, Bai Hang, where are you going?"

Hua Buxie and Huo Fu simultaneously snorted, because Bai Hang had actually stopped fighting with the Wolf King.

However, under the ongoing effects of 'Flying leaves picking flowers' and 'flame burst' in the field, Bai Hang didn't have a chance to withdraw and help Long Yu!

Here, Long Yu was certainly observing the situation. He saw that Bai Hang actually wanted to save him and this somewhat touched his heart.

“Perhaps, he wants to set an example.”

Long Yu still didn't know what Bai Hang was thinking in his heart. This man was really too unpredictable!

But even without Bai Hang's help, there should be no problem for Long Yu alone in dealing with Wang Tianzhuo and his bodyguards!

The two bodyguards, Lu Taoguo and Luo Liangfu, were running in front of Wang Tianzhuo and rushed towards Long Yu!

Long Yu pretended to have a panicked look on his face and turned around to run, but depending on the speed granted by Wudao ninth layer, how could he possibly escape from them?

At that time, a cruel look could be seen on the faces of the two bodyguards.

“A trivial Wudao ninth layer waste boy dares to offend our lord. You are really courting death!”

“Bold, doesn't know the immensity of the heaven and the earth, this will be the last mistake of your life!”

Each of them shouted loudly and respectively congealed a Zhenling tiger behind them. As these Zhenling tigers roared, their speed increased tremendously and they soon reached within a range of 100 feet of Long Yu!

“Good opportunity!”

Long Yu intentionally pretended to run away to cause this effect.

Ghost flash!

The next moment, Long Yu’s body turned hollow and disappeared in front of the two bodyguards, followed by a burst of Nine Hidden Dragon Qi that completely enveloped both of them.

“Zhentian domain!”

A terrific coercion suddenly fell from the sky and the complexions of the two bodyguards paled.

They only felt that their own body movement was completely suppressed. Now, they were unable to use Xuan Qi to display any martial skill.

“It turned out to be Zhentian domain, be careful!”

The square faced Lu Taoguo shouted loudly.

But the next moment, Long Yu took advantage of the terrain and suddenly appeared on their side and punched on the ground!

“Nine Hidden Dragon Qi, burst stream!”

Long Yu's eyes flashed like a sharp sword. They wanted to kill him, so he first pretended to run away, then suddenly turned back to catch them off guard!

Suddenly, a stream of Nine Hidden Dragon Qi gushed out from the ground beneath Luo Liangfu and instantly enveloped his whole body. Moreover, the Dragon qi rapidly began to erode his body.

"Aaaaah!"

A sad and shrill pitiful yell spread from the column of Nine Hidden Dragon stream, terrifying enough to scare anyone!

Luo Liangfu was now dead!

Cold sweat appeared on the square face of Luo Taoguo. He scowled, and when the Nine Hidden Dragon Qi dissipated, he saw the dried up corpse of Luo Liangfu lying in front of him.

The Nine Hidden Dragon Qi was dark, strange and awe-inspiring. It made Lu Taoguo's whole body shiver with terror.

An expert of Zhenling first layer had been killed by a boy of Wudao ninth layer, who would believe that it was true?

Luo Taoguo immediately reacted, but he was still under the suppression of Zhentian domain.

Domain, who could fight it!

Under the suppression of domain, his face turned red. However, he applied his full strength to stimulate the flow of Xuan Qi in his meridians!

“Zhentian domain, Nine Hidden Dragon Mark activate, numerous spear shadows!”

Long Yu grasped the Nine Hidden Dragon Spear and swept it towards him. Suddenly, numerous spear shadows rumbled towards him as if all prepared to take his life.

However, by this time, Lu Taoguo had adapted to the coercion of Zhentian domain and was able to carry out some movements reluctantly.

“Zhenling tiger, come forth!”

A Zhenling tiger instantly emerged behind him and rushed towards the numerous spear shadows.

The claws of this Zhenling tiger were extremely sharp, and collided with the numerous spear shadows, thereby shattering them completely!

“This is more like the real strength of a Zhenling first layer expert.”

Long Yu chuckled, but simply did not care about his failed attack. One could actually see his figure suddenly flash and surprisingly rush towards Wang Tianzhuo.

From his initiative, it seemed that he wanted to kill Wang Tianzhuo!

Wang Tianzhuo, once in Yu Guan city, had put Long Yu under his Zhenling control, just to demonstrate his strength in front of Feng Longsong.

Now, he brought two Zhenling first layer bodyguards to cope with him!

“If I let him go, will he not be more troublesome in the future?”

Long Yu thought and then his eyes shone brightly. He planned a long-range raid on Wang Tianzhuo.

“Zhenling tiger, come forth!”

Seeing this, Wang Tianzhuo’s complexion immediately changed. He released his Zhenling instantaneously and a Zhenling tiger suddenly appeared behind him!

He never thought that one of his bodyguards would be killed by Long Yu.

Then, perhaps, even he was not an opponent of Long Yu!

“To defeat the enemy, you must capture their chief. So, I must capture you, Wang Tianzhuo!”

Long Yu laughed, then grasped his spear and it seemed that he would stab it into Wang Tianzhuo, but he actually waved it to cast dragon prance, and instantly, an air current curled up beneath him and threw him 100 meters into

the sky!

“Nine Hidden Dragon Fist, Intoxicated Hell, kill!”

Long Yu appeared just like a falling meteor, while the nine hidden dragon qi spread out in the sky.

The dark and strange Dragon qi, as if coming straight from the hell, directly advanced towards Wang Tianzhuo and completely enveloped him, making his mind go blank.

Even the summoned Zhenling was dispirited to a great extent.

Wang Tianzhuo knew that Long Yu was fierce, and had already guarded himself against his attack. But he never thought that Long Yu would jump so high into the sky and would actually aim his attack from above!

His preparedness failed the very moment Long Yu used an unexpected move like Nine Hidden Dragon prance!

“Kill!”

Long Yu’s whole stature fell on the Zhenling tiger and directly punched it.

Under the terrible suppression of Zhentian domain, the Zhenling tiger was instantly routed by Long Yu.

This time, the routing of the Zhenling tiger was complete, and even if Wang Tianzhuo woke up from his trance-like mental state, he would not be able to summon Zhenling tiger again. He would have to rest for a long time to be able to return to the original condition.

The Nine Hidden Dragon Qi that erupted instantaneously not only routed the Zhenling tiger but also enveloped the whole body of Wang Tianzhuo.

“Demon vajra seal!”

Long Yu displayed Demon vajra seal and shot his palm on Wang Tianzhuo’s chest. The attack sent him flying and he severely fell on the ground.

Wang Tianzhuo didn’t die from this attack, after all, the main target of Long Yu was his Zhenling spirit.

However, at this time, Wang Tianzhuo was sent flying by Long Yu’s palm attack. Moreover, his meridians were corroded by the endless amount of dragon qi. One could see black lines spreading on his face, so it was obvious that the dragon qi was wreaking havoc in his meridians.

Wang Tianzhuo didn’t die but was crippled!

Within no time, Long Yu killed a bodyguard and the ringleader was crippled. Now, the number of opponents was reduced to one only.

Lu Taoguo, at this time, was not under the suppression of domain, because Long Yu was not near him.

Lu Taoguo turned around to look and his complexion immediately changed.

He saw that Wang Tianzhuo's whole face had grown dark and his meridians were being corroded. Not only that, even his Zhenling tiger had been completely routed.

What kind of a freak was this Long Yu, was he really at Wudao ninth layer?

How could he so easily defeat two experts of Zhenling first layer!

Not only Lu Taoguo, but other people present in the field were also shocked.

Initially, they thought that Long Yu wanted to escape and considered him a fool who was trying to run away from so many enemies.

Now, they finally came to understand his actual plan!

"Ha ha, Brother Long Yu is so fierce!"

Bai Hang laughed. Now, he was not at all worried for Long Yu.

He had seen how Long Yu had killed Xiahou Tianjie, and he knew that while using his full strength, Long Yu could deal with a Zhenling first layer expert, but he didn't know that Long Yu could simultaneously cope with three experts of Zhenling first layer!

“Three idiots, couldn’t kill one guy.”

“It seems like I will have to personally do this job, and take revenge for my siblings.”

Hua Buxie and Huo Fu simultaneously decided to kill Long Yu, but Hua Buxie looked more impatient, since an ominous light was flashing in his eyes. It seemed like he immediately wanted to attack Long Yu.

However, at this time, Bai Hang suddenly cast out Tianwei sword tactics to contain Hua Buxie!

“Right now, your opponent is the Wolf King!

Bai Hang followed the principle of tit for tat, by stopping Hua Buxie from attacking Long Yu!

“Die!”

Huo Fu saw it, and suddenly, his whole stature turned in to an incarnation of flames and rushed towards Long Yu!

“Be careful!”

Bai Hang saw it and was startled in his heart.

He was blocking Hua Buxie’s way and simultaneously dealing with the Wolf

King, this was his limit.

Now when Huo Fu shot his martial skill towards Long Yu, Bai Hang had no way of stopping him!

“Huo Fu, you are one of the four experts in the agreement, where are you trying to go?”

At this time, the beautiful Liu Yuan actually chuckled loudly. Her reductive curves under black brilliant clothing suddenly flashed, and with the two red handled swords in her both hands, she immediately released streams of white sword light towards Huo Fu and blocked his attack!

Chapter-105 Seize the treasure out of Wolf's mouth

Long Yu was carefully paying attention to the movements of Huo Fu and Hua Buxie in the field.

For him, the biggest threat was not Wang Tianzhuo and his two bodyguards, but Huo Fu and Hua Buxie, who were right now engaged in confronting the Wolf King!

If any one of these two attacked Long Yu, there was every possibility that he would be cut to pieces.

However, Long Yu had planned that as soon as any of the two would try anything, he would immediately use Nine Hidden Dragon prance to jump far away from there and directly escape.

But, now it seemed like Bai Hang and Liu Yuan had actually helped by blocking Hua Buxie and Huo Fu from attacking him.

Long Yu looked at Liu Yuan. He actually didn't understand why this beautiful girl suddenly helped him.

"Such being the case, I owe you one and will surely repay someday."

Long Yu thought then looked at Lu Taoguo, the remaining bodyguard of Wang Tianzhuo. The other bodyguard, Luo Liangfu, had already been killed by him.

Lu Taoguo was extremely frightened. Right in front of his eyes, his master was

seriously injured and Luo Liangfu was killed by Long Yu. He had already given up in his heart and no longer wanted to fight.

“If you kill a royal bodyguard, you will die!

Lu Taoguo got angry and said fiercely.

“It doesn’t matter whether I will die or not. But rest assured, you will die before I die.”

Long Yu sneered and simply didn’t care about the threat. Step by step, he gradually walked towards Lu Taoguo.

Lu Taoguo’s whole body was deterred by the imposing aura of Long Yu. He immediately turned around to escape!

“Zhentian domain!”

Long Yu activated the domain.

The terrible repression of Zhentian domain instantaneously covered the whole body Lu Taoguo, making him unable to use agility type martial skill. He could only move reluctantly since his speed was extremely slow. Now it was basically impossible to escape from Long Yu!

“Lamella touch, even a touch of this attack can kill! Now prepare yourself to die.”

Long Yu shouted loudly, nipped his finger and sprayed his blood on Nine Hidden Dragon spear and stabbed it towards Lu Taoguo.

Nine Hidden Dragon Qi condensed on the tip of the spear and went towards Lu Taoguo!

“Tiger Zhenling, defend me!”

Lu Taoguo’s eyes flashed fiercely and instantly a Zhenling tiger appeared behind him and seemed all ready to resist the spear attack.

The Nine Hidden Dragon Qi soon collided with the Zhenling tiger and resulted in an explosion, blowing out smoke and dust in the air.

“Blocked?”

Lu Taoguo was delighted in his heart when he saw that his Zhenling tiger had not been routed by Long Yu’s attack, unlike last time when it had routed Wang Tianzhuo’s Zhenling tiger!

However, he didn’t know that Long Yu had used this spear attack to confuse him.

Then, suddenly, Nine Hidden Dragon Qi spread out behind Lu Taoguo, as if coming straight from hell, and it instantly enveloped his whole body, making his mind go blank!

“Nine Hidden Dragon First, death!

Long Yu moved sideways, came directly behind him and while avoiding his Zhenling tiger, pounded his fist on Lu Taoguo's back!

The strength of over a thousand fierce horses seeped into his body, reaching all the way into his bones and sent him flying far away from there. He heavily fell to the ground and never got up again.

The Nine Hidden Dragon Qi had already started to erode his meridians.

The death soon embraced him!

Everyone present in the surroundings was shocked to see this scene.

Even the four super experts were looking at Long Yu, but this time, they saw him in a different light.

Even Bai Hang and Huo Fu would have not felt so relaxed while dealing with three experts of Zhenling first layer!

Then, didn't this mean that Long Yu had enough strength to contend with them?

However, this Long Yu was certainly at Wudao ninth layer!

Soon, they realized that Long Yu's strength was much more what they imagined earlier.

Long Yu very easily killed two experts of Zhenling first layer and seriously injured Wang Tianzhuo. It was a one-sided battle and Long Yu had the upper hand all along.

If Wang Tianzhuo had brought three bodyguards of Zhenling first layer experts then might have had a better chance of winning.

However, the kind of amazing battle tactics and outstanding fighting skill demonstrated by Long Yu, made everyone to remember his name. They would never ever forget this black-clothed youth named Long Yu!

Ling Han, Ling Yiyue and Lu Guan were hidden in a nearby corner. And right now, there were completely shocked by Long Yu's supernatural braveness. He single-handedly killed two experts of Zhenling first layer and seriously injured one.

Earlier, Long Yu had killed Xiahou Tianjie and made them feel weird, but now, he insta-killed two royal bodyguards and injured Wang Tianzhuo. This was simply beyond their expectations.

“Originally, I wanted to make a sneak attack on those three. Now, it looks like Brother Long Yu doesn't need our help.”

Ling Han forced a smile and said.

He remembered that when he first saw Long Yu, he was mere an expert of Wudao sixth layer, same as his sister.

But in such a short time, Long Yu grew stronger very fast and too to such an extent that he managed to beat three experts of Zhenling first layer at once!

“By relying on Brother Long’s strength, I think we can seize the lunar debris.”

Lu Guanming’s eyes lit up with happiness.

“We must not disturb him, because it will just drag him down.”

Ling Yiyue said calmly.

Among the three, she had most clearly observed the situation in the field!

Although, she was the youngest, but her thoughts were actually most meticulous!

Ling Han and Lu Guanming nodded.

Taking their current level into account, their presence in the field was bound to cause distraction for Long Yu!

In the field, the four super experts were still fighting with the Wolf King.

Even in the presence of four enemies, the Wolf King did not fall under the wind!

Certainly, Long Yu was partly the reason behind. Due to his presence in the

field, these four super experts were engaged in containing each other and were distracted enough to launch a timed full-fledged group attack on the Wolf King.

“I will first kill this beast, as for this Long Yu, sooner or later will have the opportunity to tear him to shreds!”

Hua Buxie thought and his eyes flashed fiercely then he put his focus entirely on the Wolf King.

So long as he killed the Wolf King, Liu Yuan wouldn't have any reason to stop Huo Fu.

“Next time, I will not give you the opportunity to escape.”

Now was not the time to regret on something that had already happened. So, he concentrated on killing the Wolf King first.

He immediately cast his spiritual level martial skill called 'Flying ice' and the entire body of the Wolf King was frozen in a moment!

“A nice opportunity!”

Bai Hang saw that and instantly displayed Tianwei sword tactics. His stunning sword rushed out immediately and cut a large wound on the back of the Wolf King, revealing only rich Yinqi inside the wound!

The Wolf King's body had no blood, but only Yinqi, because it was entirely congealed from the Yinqi!

“Flowing light sword shadow!”

The two red handed swords danced in the two hands of Liu Yuan and her alluring figure flashed near the Wolf King.

Among the four super experts, Lin Yuan’s speed was the fastest. She had actually practiced a core law named ‘Phantom Allure’ of the Allure sect. The main features of this skill were speed and charm.

Against the Wolf King, the charm attribute was obviously useless, but the tremendous speed granted by it was always an important faction in a fight.

Long Yu began to rest on the side and simultaneously was observing the fight.

“Although, everyone has hidden skills, but they have their own distinct fighting styles, which are pretty obvious to notice.”

Long Yu was observing and was simultaneously pondering.

Liu Yuan was the fastest. Her sword tactics was perhaps a spiritual level martial skill and it had more destructive power than the martial skills of other big experts.

Hua Fu was expert in congealing flames, and just by waving his hand, he could call forth surging flames. It was best suited for long ranged attacks and wide range fighting style.

Bai Hang was using Tianwei sword tactics. Its speed was fast and the power was greatly strengthened, but was less powerful when compared with Liu Yuan. However, it was certainly not the strongest skill practiced by him.

Right now, Hua Buxie's whole body was releasing ice-cold aura. He could control the repression of cold ice, and when displayed, it could envelop the enemy and slow down his speed, thus giving the wielder a great advantage.

The four super experts, since belonged to different sects, had their own different fighting styles.

Long Yu secretly guessed that if he had to face one of these experts, what methods should he use?

Hua Buxie and Huo Fu were no longer thinking about revenge and were fully focusing on the Wolf King, and finally under back to back attacks of the four super experts, the Wolf King fell under the wind.

The Yinqi gushing out of its wound filled the air!

When it seemed like the Wolf King wouldn't last long, suddenly, an extremely rich Yinqi erupted from the center of the gulf.

The entire gulf shook, resembling an earthquake.

The ground beneath the Wolf King suddenly started to split and attracted everyone's attention.

The four super experts were somewhat surprised and each of them retreated several feet away from the Wolf King.

At this time, the Wolf King was roaring unceasingly. The Yinqi that was coming out its mouth filled the air in the gulf!

And under its foot, the ground cracked open and an extremely rich Yinqi began to erupt from there. And soon, a small gray stone flew up from that crack!

“Lunar debris!”

Almost everyone responded immediately!

However, they all looked tense because even if it finally made an appearance, it appeared under the Wolf King!

Moreover, they all saw that it was slowly merging with the Wolf King!

If the lunar debris and the Wolf King successfully merged together, then one could guess the terrifying rise in its strength!

Not to mention, their main aim to come here was to take the lunar debris. If it fused with the Wolf King, then this whole trip would be in vain.

While everyone was busy thinking of a way to obtain the lunar debris, a choroid figure was the first to act and was faster than all of them. He moved quickly and arrived under the belly of the Wolf King.

“Long Yu!”

Bai Hang was startled. This Long Yu was actually so bold that he was all ready to go into the Wolf’s mouth to size the treasure!

When the lunar debris appeared, everyone was afraid of facing the danger and actually retreated.

Only Long Yu dared to take the risk and moved towards the Wolf King.

And at this moment, Long Yu was very close to the lunar debris. So long as he stretched out his hand, he would be able to grab it!

However, would he dare to do it?

If right now, any of the four super experts was put in Long Yu’s shoes then they wouldn’t dare to do such a thing, and in comparison, Long Yu was only at Wudao ninth layer.

The Wolf King was at Zhenling third layer and could easily trample Long Yu to death!

Chapter-106 Swallows Yin Dan

When the mine gulf vibrated, Long Yu was suddenly tensed up, but soon saw that other people were far away from the Wolf King, so he instead clenched his teeth and rushed towards it!

Sure enough, a small grey stone which was exuding out a strong Yinqi appeared under the Wolf King.

Long Yu was betting his life on it!

His hollow body moved sideways then slid under the Wolf King from one side, immediately put out his hand and tightly gripped that small stone, then came out from the other side!

A seemingly endless amount of lunar qi immediately permeated inside his body and seeped into his meridians!

If it was an ordinary person then this lunar qi might have corroded their meridians and frozen their blood. Their whole body would have frozen to death by now.

However, Long Yu had activated 'Nine Hidden Dragon Mark' and it immediately drove out the strong lunar qi from the meridians.

"That went well."

Long Yu smirked, but then he saw that everybody was coming after him. He simply didn't have time to celebrate.

He could only escape at the maximum speed!

In the field, except the four super experts, there were many experts of Zhenling first layer like Liu Yuan's fellow female disciple, Xin Yueya, and two core disciples of Knife Cut sect and so on. Long Yu simply didn't stand a chance against so many Zhenling level experts.

"Flickering wind step!"

"Dragon prance!"

Long Yu immediately used 'flickering wind step' to move near the Wolf King for an instant then instantly used 'Dragon prance' and directly jumped out of the gulf.

Long Yu jumped 100 meters into the sky and came out of the gulf in one fell swoop.

From such a height, Long Yu began to fall down like a meteor, and at the same time, he finally saw Ling Han and the others hiding in a small gap of the valley.

"Dragon prance!"

"Catch it!"

Long Yu landed on the ground at the maximum speed and once again used dragon prance to jump a distance of 100 meters while simultaneously took the opportunity to throw the lunar debris in the direction of Ling Han.

The continuous surge of Yinqi from the lunar debris had been thoroughly suppressed by the 'Nine Hidden Dragon mark'. Now, it would never affect anyone holding it.

He displayed two successive dragon prances and completely vanished from there. No one was able to track the direction in which he fled. Meanwhile, he quietly threw the lunar debris towards Ling Han.

Since Ling Han was familiar with this Yinqi rich area, so taking out lunar debris from here should not be a problem for him.

As for Long Yu, he would have to take one more risk of going back and killing the Wolf King for its Yin Dan.

"If I can obtain the Wolf King's Yin Dan, the source of its power, then it can help me in congealing Zhenling."

Long Yu thought and when he used dragon prance, he actually jumped in the opposite direction towards the gulf, and went far away from Ling Han and the others.

"Big brother, we should leave quickly."

Once the lunar debris fell in Ling Han's hands, Ling Yiyue said hastily: "Now Brother Long Yu is being chased down, so the best we can do in this situation is

to get out here with the lunar debris and wait for him outside the mine area.”

“Brother Long Yu is too fast, I think he won’t be caught, but we can’t be too sure…….”

Lu Guanming said in a worried voice.

“Even if he is caught, we won’t be able to help him. Our presence will only cause more trouble for him. So, its better we get out of here as soon as possible.”

Ling Han said and hid the lunar debris in his bosom: “When we are out of danger then we will give this lunar debris to Brother Long Yu.”

Needless to say, Ling Han had always thought of Long Yu as his younger brother.

Long Yu seized this lunar debris at the risk of his life so how could Ling Han possibly snatch it away from him?

Ling Han and the other two used the narrow paths among the small massifs to rush out of the mineral lode area.

But at this moment, Bai Hang used ‘horizon is close’ and quickly arrived at the place where Long Yu was just now.

“He arrived here for sure, but which way did he go?”

Bai Hang racked his brain.

He was standing atop the tallest massif, looked around in all directions, but didn't see Long Yu.

After thinking for a moment, he rushed in a random direction and vanished from there.

He never imagined that Long Yu would actually go back in the direction of the Wolf King!

In the other three directions, Huo Fu, Liu Yuan and Huo Buxie also could not find Long Yu.

Bai hang's 'horizon is close' was the quickest agility type martial skill, but it couldn't be compared with Long Yu's 'Dragon prance'. Obviously, even in chasing, Long Yu's skill was the most superior.

There were solemn looks on the faces of these four super experts of Zhenling second layer, after all an expert of Wudao ninth layer took away the lunar debris from right under their noses. If the news about this incident spread out, it would undoubtedly bring great shame on them!

The hatred for Long Yu deepened in the hearts of Huo Fu and Hua Buxie. It seemed as if their heads would explode with bulging anger.

They were searching for Long Yu in all directions in the mineral lode area, but they had actually made a blunder. They never thought that Long Yu would actually dare to return to the gulf, where Wolf King was still running amuck.

Liu Yuan was the only one who was thinking calmly.

“If I was Long Yu then where will I go after seizing the lunar debris?”

Liu Yuan was standing on the top of a small massif and thinking by putting herself in Long Yu’s shoes.

“An expert of Wudao ninth layer like him should be eager for stepping into Zhenling realm by congealing his own Zhenling rather than risking life for lunar debris. And for that, he needs the Yin Dan of the Wolf King!”

Her black hair was being gently blown by the wind and a pair of nimble and beautiful pupils was constantly reviewing the dark gulf where Wolf King was rampaging right now.

Immediately, her curvy exquisite physique once again moved. Her figure flashed and she leapt several massifs advancing towards the gulf.

.....

At this time, Long Yu didn’t know that Liu Yuan had seen through his plan.

He returned to the gulf from the other direction and quietly approached the Wolf King. He found out that after losing the lunar debris, the Wolf King had become extremely angry and was actually taking it out on the people who were unable to escape in time.

Yi Yan, Lin Shucheng and Huayi Lun had used agility type martial skills respectively to escape from the gulf.

But, the four core disciples of Knife cut sect were actually deterred by the terrible repression of the Wolf King, and even after using 'knife cut charm' and 'knife cut world influence', they weren't able to suppress the extremely fast speed of the Wolf King, and due to that, they couldn't escape from the gulf. Now, they could only engage in a life-and-death fight with the Wolf King.

Luckily, the severe attacks of the four super experts had seriously injured the Wolf King, and now, it only had 50% of its original power remaining.

The Yinqi was spread in the entire gulf and was leaking out from its body, indicating that it was seriously injured.

However, the Wolf King was a formidable existence of Zhenling third layer!

So, how could just two experts of Zhenling first layer and two experts of Wudao ninth layer possibly kill it?

The Zhenling claw of the Wolf King eventually killed all of the four disciples of Knife Cut sect, and a river of blood appeared in the gulf!

However, from the desperate attacks of these dying disciples, its wounds deepened considerably.

The Wolf King was seriously injured and was roaring unceasingly. It actually wanted to retrieve the lunar debris to complete the transformation, but unfortunately, it simply did not have a chance to achieve that.

“Zhentian domain, nine hidden dragon stream burst!”

Long Yu pounded his fist on the ground, and immediately, the black dragon qi gushed out from beneath the Wolf King and instantly penetrated its gigantic stature!

“Roar!”

The Wolf King turned its head and saw the guy who had stolen the lunar debris and immediately became furious.

However, the dragon qi had already seeped into its body and had begun to corrode its body. So, even if it wanted to tear Long Yu to shreds, it simply lacked the ability to do that.

“Dragon qi is restraining the Yinqi in this gulf and even the Wolf King of Zhenling third layer seemed to have lost its battle efficiency after being attacked by it!”

Long Yu was holding Qian dragon spear in his hand and his eyes were shining brightly.

At this time, the gigantic body of the Wolf King was swaying and it tried to rush towards Long Yu, but failed to do so.

One could clearly see that its body was actually made up of congealed dense Yinqi, and right now, already half of its body had been corroded by the black

dragon qi.

This Wolf King was on the verge of death!

Certainly, this ominous beast was congealed of strong Yinqi and wasn't alive. However, it still held spiritual wisdom.

But it was no different from a normal beast.

Whenever it was angry, it would attack and kill people, and held strong desire to compete for the lunar debris!

Could this type of existence be considered alive?

Long Yu was now bored thinking about this issue and swept his spear towards the Wolf King.

“Numerous spear shadows!”

Numerous spear shadows, wrapped with Dragon qi and integrated with Zhentian domain, hit the Wolf King causing innumerable holes in its body. Dense fluid-like Yinqi began to leak out from its body and it seemed as if a beast was bleeding!

“It doesn't matter whether you are alive or not. I am going to take your Yin Dan.”

An indifferent look flashed in Long Yu's eyes. After being hit by numerous spear shadows, it fell on the ground. The Yinqi in its body was completely corroded and dispersed out by the Dragon qi.

And the Wolf King's body could no longer hold its shape and dissipated into Yinqi.

Only a Yin Dan remained on the ground where the Wolf King had fallen.

"Yin Dan."

Long Yu took two steps forward, picked up the Yin Dan, looked at it and could feel the strong essence of Yinqi accumulated in it. This Yin Dan could be directly absorbed by a martial artist.

The feature of a Yin Dan was to help in promotion of the cultivation of an expert, just like a Dan retrieved from the body of a beast of Zhenling third layer.

"Are you sure you want to swallow this Yin Dan?"

A crisp and pleasant female voice passed over from one side.

Long Yu turned his head and saw a graceful figure wearing brilliant black tight clothing. An incredibly beautiful face appeared in front of him and there was a sweet smile hanging on her it. It was none other than a core disciple of Allure sect, Liu Yuan!

"If a person, who has not congealed Zhenling, swallows a Zhenling level Dan

and tries to congeal a Zhenling beast, then it is very difficult to withstand the energy released from the Dan. Your meridians may rupture, crippling you in the process.”

Liu Yuan’s black hair was hanging down to her waist and she was relishing while looking at Long Yu with interest: “You are talented and a skilled fighter. I think it’s such a pity if you end up being a waste.”

Long Yu looked at her with his one eye, and without wasting any time, he suddenly put the Yin Dan into his mouth and swallowed it!

His action stunned Liu Yuan.

This Long Yu really dared to.....

She noticed that even after listening to her warning, he didn’t hesitate one bit before swallowing the Yin Dan.

“Well, what you do with this Yin Dan is none of my business.”

Liu Yuan’s tone suddenly turned indifferent: “Now hurry up, hand over the lunar debris. Then I will give you time to peacefully absorb the Yin Dan! Otherwise, you know the consequences.”

Chapter-107 Zhentian Sun

Long Yu certainly knew that Liu Yuan had come back to rob his lunar debris.

“You can give it a try if you think you have the skill.”

The corners of his mouth slightly curled up as if he simply did not care about Liu Yuan’s threat.

“I know that you are very courageous.”

Lin Yuan’s beautiful eyes twinkled elegantly: “But, don’t you think that you are being somewhat over-confident?”

“You think so? Then why don’t you try and prove me wrong?”

Long Yu smirked.

He was keeping her busy in talk and took this opportunity to absorb the Yin Dan with the help of ‘Nine Hidden Dragon Mark’.

The Yin Dan was releasing rich Yinqi into his meridians. Yin Dan was similar to a beast’s neidan contained its spirit energy. As it was being absorbed into his body, it was gradually transforming into Xuan qi in the meridians.

With the help of ‘Nine Hidden Dragon mark’, Long Yu quickly absorbed the Yin

Dan at a superhuman speed and stored up in the mark.

While he had few exchanges with Liu Yuan, the Yin Dan had been thoroughly digested in his body!

Of course, the Yin Dan which was stored up in the mark and had not yet been absorbed by him. So, it would not affect his battle efficiency!

Shua!

Liu Yuan couldn't bear anymore and her graceful body leapt forward and came rushing towards Long Yu with two red-handled swords dancing in her hand and releasing white streaming light.

She took out her red handled swords which displayed a streamer of white sword light!

"Wait, I will hand over the lunar debris!"

Long Yu shouted loudly and suddenly put his hand in the bosom.

"Don't try to play tricks on me. You know that you are not my opponent."

Liu Yuan's slender legs stopped about 100 feet away from Long Yu.

"Obviously, I won't."

Long Yu nodded then seemed to pull something out from his bosom.

“Nine Hidden Dragon prance!”

At this time, Liu Yuan’s attention was focused on Long Yu’s hands, when Long Yu suddenly swept his spear and used dragon prance. He leapt 100 meters towards the rear area and landed at the edge of the gulf in an instant!

“You want to run away?”

Liu Yuan had actually guessed right about Long Yu’s intention and sneered when she was it becoming a reality in front of her eyes. She immediately moved forward and began to pursue him. At this time, she appeared like the incarnation of a sword as she was speeding towards Long Yu at an incredibly fast speed!

“She is fast!”

Long Yu thought and didn’t dare to stay idle. He immediately swept his spear and numerous spear shadows rushed out in the rear direction, towards Liu Yuan!

Then, he continued to shoot spear shadows again and again and once again displayed Dragon prance!

The consumption of Xuan qi was not small in displaying dragon prance, but Long Yu had quenched his Dantian so the recovery speed of Xuan Qi was faster than an ordinary martial artist. Hence, he was able to display dragon prance several times, one after another.

“Shatter!”

Lin Yuan’s sword incarnation mode was still active and her graceful figure suddenly flashed. The strokes from her twin swords swept a streamer of white sword light which completely routed the numerous spear shadows.

She was well prepared and considering her fast speed, it was almost impossible for Long Yu to escape from her!

“Nine Hidden Dragon prance!”

Long Yu took one step and used dragon prance to jump far away from the gulf, leaving several massifs behind, and landed in a small valley.

This valley was surrounded from all sides with each mountainside reaching up to 100 feet in height. If he didn’t use dragon prance, then he wouldn’t be able to get out of there.

However, at this time, the Xuan qi was almost depleted in his meridians!

“I never thought that she will be so fast, moreover her pursuit is tight. I don’t have sufficient Xuan qi to perform another dragon prance and now…….”

Long Yu frowned as he could feel that Liu Yuan was rapidly approaching from behind!

Only a moment later, she arrived near that valley but didn’t see Long Yu anywhere. She just felt that he must have come to this place.

“Did he cross this valley? I would like to see who has more Xuan qi. And once you have exhausted your Xuan qi, no one can save you from me!”

Liu Yuan snorted then her body transformed into a sword incarnation and leapt high!

Her leap was several dozen feet high and she instantly crossed this small valley and continued to chase forward!

When she left, Long Yu appeared in the valley!

He had enough Xuan Qi to use ‘ghost flash’ and thus managed to temporarily hide in this small valley.

Since the valley was filled with Yinqi, his hollow form didn’t attract the attention of Liu Yuan!

“I must make the best use of time and absorb Yin Dan!”

Long Yu quickly left the small valley, took the narrow ravine path and went to another ravine, then sat down in a dark corner!

Now, he must hurry up.

With the help of Yin Dan, if he managed to get his own Zhenling and stepped into Zhenling Realm, then he would have enough strength to deal with her!

The condensed Yinqi present in the Yin Dan was in its purest form and could be absorbed by a martial artist like any other neidan.

But in mineral lode area, the Yinqi present in the air was harmful to anyone and couldn't be absorbed.

“To congeal Zhenling, first, I need to link my heavenly arteries in order to thoroughly understand the world principles. But prior to it, I must break open the last checkpoint then I can congeal my own Zhenling and step into the Zhenling realm.”

Long Yu felt that Xuan qi was completely depleted in his meridians because of the overuse of dragon prance.

However, Long Yu was hopeful that after the gradual absorption of Yin Dan with the help of ‘Nine Hidden Dragon mark’ his meridians would be flooded with Xuan qi and then he would give successive shock to his meridians to link up the heavenly arteries thoroughly with the world principles.

The wolf emperor was at Zhenling third layer, so naturally, its Yin Dan would contain tyrannical energy.

An ordinary expert of Wudao ninth layer would never dare to consume it.

However, Long Yu's case was different because he possessed the ‘Nine hidden dragon mark’ which could store the Yin Dan for him. Then, he could slowly absorb it without being overwhelmed by the enormous amount of energy stored in it.

“Begin.”

The rich Yinqi began to sprint through the meridians and quickly reached towards the last check point!

Surging Yin qi was like the waves of the blue sea roaring crazily in his meridians, all set to break the checkpoint and establish the connection with the world principles!

However, despite his best effort, Long Yu must first congeal his Zhenling otherwise he would never be able to break the final checkpoint.

“I reached the limits of Wudao ninth layer, which means now it’s time to congeal my own Zhenling.”

To congeal Zhenling, more importantly, to establish a connection with the world principles, one must find a conjunction point with the world.

And only after congealing the Zhenling, one could break through the final checkpoint and step into the Zhenling realm.

And achieving this was very difficult for the experts with limited talent.

For example, Tan clan’s ancestor, who was killed earlier by Long Yu in Yu Guan city, was stuck on ninth layer for decades but wasn’t able to develop even a tiny bit of understanding about the world principles.

How difficult could it be to find a conjunction point with the world?

For Long Yu, this was never a problem.

“Since, I have already comprehended Zhentian domain so I should take the Zhentian principle as the conjunction point to congeal Zhenling!”

Long Yu’s eyes lit up.

He had mainly comprehended the suppression principle contained in Zhentian tactics.

As for the suppression principle of that strange grass, his comprehension was still shallow and could not be used properly in the fight, so it was impossible to use it in congealing a Zhenling.

Then, the next essential step was the congealment of Zhenling!

Before starting with the congealment process, it was essential to have a prior image of how the Zhenling should be, for example, Elder Yu had a big hand of suppression, Wang Tianzhuo and his family bodyguards had tiger, whereas Bu Xing had an eagle and so on.

This Zhenling image would represent the world principle used in its congealment.

But if the image was compatible with the world principle used for it, then it would be able to display a greater power.

Of course, for most experts as long as they could congeal a Zhenling, that was enough. They simply didn't have an opportunity to choose an appropriate image.

However, this was not true for Long Yu!

He had already comprehended Zhentian domain, and at this moment, he could display the suppression world principle in any form.

After taking the dose of Yin Dan, the congealment of Zhenling was no longer a problem for him.

The key question was, in what form should he manifest the world prince of suppression?

"Nine Hidden Dragon?"

Long Yu suddenly thought of the mark on his chest, but actually felt an intense contradiction from the side of 'Nine Hidden Dragon mark'.

The Nine Hidden Dragon was an ancient tyrannical existence and radically disdained being coupled with the trivial suppression principle.

"This Nine Hidden Dragon is actually losing his temper?"

Long Yu wondered but since he couldn't display the suppression principle by using the image of Nine Hidden Dragon, so he would have think of something else.

There was a myriad of things in the world but what was most compatible with the suppression principle of the world?

Long Yu thought then looked up.

Suddenly, he looked towards the hot sun in the sky. The sunshine made him aware of it.

“The sun shines on myriad things and is like the absolute existence that everyone respects. If I congeal the Zhenling of the sun, won’t it be just perfect as the source of suppression?”

Long Yu thought and smiled.

He had had seen various Zhenling images but never saw someone using the image of the sun.

Long Yu also realized that the absolute dominant existence of the sun in everyone’s life and the suppression principle of the world were a perfect match for each other.

Although the sunlight had been weakened by the thick layer of Yinqi in the ravine, but he could still feel the heat spreading over his body.

He attempted to combine the suppression principles with the sunlight.

In the mineral lode area, the sunlight began to shine fiercely on his body!

Who would think that someone would actually choose to congeal the sun Zhenling in such a gloomy place!

For experts, the congealment of Zhenling was once in a lifetime event and they would never choose to carry it out in such a dangerous environment.

However, Long Yu had actually made such choice!

Moreover, in a while, he successfully integrated Zhentian domain with the sunlight and congealed the round image of the sun in his Dantian.

He actually congealed the sun Zhenling!

“I will call you Zhentian sun.”

Long Yu seemed satisfied and thought.

Along with the congealment of Zhentian sun, Long Yu felt that that the last checkpoint of heavenly artiest finally appeared somewhat loose.

Then under the impact of rich Yinqi, wave after wave, and finally the last checkpoint opened and his body finally established connection with the world.

Zhenling realm!

Long Yu opened his eyes and there was the solar brilliance in his eyes.

Chapter 108 – Second Zhenling

After stepping into Zhenling realm, Long Yu clearly felt a complete change in his whole being.

This congealment actually opened a new door to the vast world of martial arts.

“My Zhentian Sun is really something.”

Now, with the help of Zhentian Sun, Long Yu could form a connection with the world, and now if he released Zhentian domain then its power would be two times the initial coercion!

Moreover, his basic strength also increased significantly.

The first layer of Zhenling layer granted the basic strength of 1000 fierce horses, which was four times the strength granted by Wudao ninth layer!

This grade of strength was called ‘Junli’

(Mystique-I will do the math now.

1 Junli = 1000 fierce horses

1 fierce horse = 1000 Jin

1 Jin = 1 lb

Therefore, 1 Junli = 1000000 lb)

After stepping into Zhenling second layer, one would attain the basic strength of 2 Junli. Each promotion in level would double the basic strength.

Thus, it could be seen that there was a large gap between the strengths granted by two different layers, almost unsurpassable gap.

Moreover, this gap in strength would be enormous when there was a difference of two or more levels!

“Now I can feel the thrilling strength of Zhenling first layer.”

Long Yu’s eyes shone brightly: “At present, if I face an opponent of Zhenling first layer then I should be able to defeat them in one shot. Even those four super experts of Zhenling second layer are no longer my opponents!”

Now, his entrance into the Zhenling realm not only increased his basic strength but also strengthened the intensity of suppression caused by Zhentian domain.

“Nine Hidden Dragon mark, activate!

Long Yu condensed Xuan Qi in his chest and immediately activated the Nine Hidden Dragon mark. A boiling hot aura spread all over his body, and at the same time, his strength actually increased by 1000000 Jin. So, now his total strength was 2000000 Jin.

Once activated, the Nine Hidden Dragon mark actually doubled his basic strength!

The mark finally had the third transformation and gave a solid boost to Long Yu's strength.

“So the Zhenling realm not only doubled my basic strength but also gifted me the second dragon technique, the practice method of ‘awakening palm samsara’.”

(Mystique-<https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sa%E1%B9%83s%C4%81ra>)

Long Yu's eyes shone with anticipation.

‘Awakening palm samsara’ was a spiritual level best grade martial skill. It was the same as the intoxicated hell technique, and its might surpassed all other spiritual level martial skills.

Earlier, if he used intoxicated hell against an expert of Zhenling second layer then might not be able to kill the opponent, because the basic strength of the opponent was too strong and had practiced spiritual level martial skill.

But now, after the activation of Nine Hidden Dragon mark, when combined with the effect of Demon tyrant form, his basic strength would reach up to 2500000 Jin, which was equal to the strength of 2500 fierce horses, much more than the strength of an expert of Zhenling second layer!

If Long Yu practiced this move successfully then killing experts of Zhenling second layer like Hua Buxie or Huo Fu would be a child's play for Long Yu.

Of course, right now he certainly had no time to practice 'awakening palm samsara', because it usually needed a long time to successfully practice a spiritual level martial skill.

On the contrary, right after he had stepped into Zhenling realm, he felt a burst of ideas transmitting from the Qian Dragon spear and it actually contained the practice method of a spear-based spiritual level martial skill.

"This is father's own spear skill, a top grade spiritual level martial skill called 'Kill ten thousand people'!"

Long Yu thought.

Now he knew that his father, a former general of Tang State, had developed his own spear skill and certainly would have killed thousands of enemies in the battlefield.

Killing ten thousand people with one spear attack was really an incomparably aggressive skill!

Moreover, this skill was actually a homemade martial skill of the Dragon clan and this made Long Yu feel somewhat happy.

Long Yu had heard about developing one's own martial skill before, but it was very difficult to do it.

A martial skill was actually displayed by the circulation of Xuan qi in the meridians, after releasing different pressure points to achieve different effects.

But there were innumerable pressure points in a human body, and if attempted to open them at random, it was easy to rupture meridians and even cause damage to the Dantian. Those without talent could never attempt to create their own martial skill.

Existing martial skill were actually created by predecessors after numerous trial and errors, and some tyrannical martial skill always remained in the hands of the strong and didn't spread out for others to learn.

“The skill of ‘Kill ten thousand people’ is quite terrifying! It's simply unimaginable that it has the potential to kill ten thousand people in one fell swoop in the battlefield.”

The spear as if danced in Long Yu's hands several times. He decided to first practice this spear skill then he would move on to practicing ‘awakening palm samsara’ since because the latter was too difficult and time-taking to practice.

“The image of Zhentian Sun is still only an empty shadow. If I am able to congeal the entity then its might will obviously be much stronger. But unfortunately, I am only at Zhenling first layer and the congealment of entity can be done only after stepping into Zhenling fourth layer, which is still far off in time.”

Long Yu somewhat regretted this but he was satisfied that he managed to integrate Zhentian domain and the congealed Sun.

In fight, so long as he released the image of Sun in his Dantian, then Zhentian domain would instantly suppress everyone in the surroundings. Of course, its range would no longer be limited to 200 feet only.

Although the effect of suppression would gradually decrease with increasing distance, but anything under the illumination of sunlight would immediately come under Long Yu's domain, enabling him to fully grasp every action of the enemy.

It was said that congealment process of Zhenling was a very complicated process, but Long Yu did it successfully within an hour.

When he decided to get up and get out of there, suddenly, he felt something wrong in the 'Nine Hidden Dragon Mark' on his chest.

"What's going on?"

He frowned when he felt that strong dragon qi was coming out of the mark and accumulating in his Dantian.

The accumulating dragon qi gradually congealed an image of 'Nine hidden dragon' in his Dantian!

The image of an Azure dragon appeared in a corner of his Dantian, a bit separated from the image of the sun.

However, the power of Zhentian domain remained affected even after the

unexpected appearance of 'Nine Hidden Dragon' in his Dantian.

Long Yu noticed that the image of 'Nine Hidden Dragon' was clearly a Zhenling!

"Second Zhenling?"

Long Yu couldn't believe what just happened.

This 'Nine Hidden Dragon' was initially reluctant to integrate with the world principle of suppression, but at this time, he actually congealed his own image by congealing nine hidden dragon qi on his own initiative!

It was said to be extremely tough and literally impossible to congeal a second Zhenling, especially at Zhenling first layer.

The difficulty of second congealment was approximately ten times more.

Also, only after getting stuck on a bottleneck in Zhenling realm, some experts considered congealing a second Zhenling.

But Long Yu didn't do anything. It seemed as if 'Nine hidden dragon' did it on a whim and there was no explanation available to this!

"Is this a good thing or a bad thing?"

Long Yu frowned while feeling two Zhenlings in his Dantian. If other people came across such a situation, they would definitely be going wild with joy right

now. Obtaining second Zhenling without putting any effort, not to mention this was an incredibly formidable Zhenling, who wouldn't want it?

However, Long Yu noticed that a strange transformation was taking place in Nine Hidden Dragon mark!

Unfortunately, he was unable to see the later parts of the memories of 'Dragon's descendants', otherwise, he would come to know about the later changes in the mark.

"It seems like nine hidden dragon Zhenling is more formidable than Zhentian Sun but is very strange. I shouldn't use it casually since it requires thorough research."

Long Yu stood up while thinking.

"Ha ha ha, finally found him!"

At this moment, a neuter laughter sounded in the valley and attracted Long Yu's attention.

This laughter was similar to that of Hua Buxie. Long Yu didn't expect to bump into him like this, but suddenly, a cold smile appeared on his face.

Long Yu looked up and saw the skinny looking man in red robe, standing not far away.

This was undoubtedly the third ranked core disciple of Hanbing Sect, Hua

Buxie!

Hua Buxie would certainly not give up on lunar fragment and neither would he give up on his obsession to kill Long Yu. He stopped laughing, but the desire of revenge could be seen floating in his eyes.

He searched for a long time in the mine lode area and finally thought of a round trip, but never thought that he would find Long Yu so quickly.

Long Yu was hiding in a corner, was he perhaps absorbing the lunar fragment?

Hua Buxie sneered and jumped down from the massif and paced towards Long Yu.

“You are quite good at running, what a pity that now you are in my grip. I won’t allow you to flee again!”

Hua Buxie didn’t waste time on idle chit-chat and immediately released the ice-cold world suppression.

Ice-cold world suppression congealed around him and also enveloped Long Yu instantly. He gradually walked towards Long Yu and an incorruptible image of a beautiful frosted flower appeared behind him.

Hua Buxie’s Zhenling was a frosted flower!

And after being enveloped by ice-cold world suppression, Long Yu felt his blood freezing and stagnating!

“Ice-cold world law is really uncommon.”

Long Yu quickly understood that Hua Buxie used this move to stop him from making an escape from there!

At this time, Long Yu felt as if he was falling in an infinite pit of ice and this was freezing his very being!

“I guess it’s time to use Zhentian Sun.”

Long Yu also wanted to test his newly obtained strength and an expert of Zhenling second layer would be the best lab.

However, since he was not familiar with his new powers so he must go all out from the get go!

“Come out, Zhenling Sun!”

Long Yu shouted, and in a flash, a huge round Sun appeared behind him and its bright sunlight sprinkled everywhere.

Hue Buxie never expected this and was suddenly suppressed by it!

“When did you congeal a Zhenling? Moreover it’s based on Zhentian domain!”

Hua Buxie’s complexion darkened with panic: “Such being the case, I cannot

let you live!”

Long Yu didn't care about this threat!

Even when he was at Wudao ninth layer, he was able to escape from him and also managed to snatch lunar fragment from the four super experts.

Now, he actually congealed a Zhenling and stepped into Zhenling realm. This progress speed was extremely unthinkable!

However, Zhentian domain and Ice-cold world suppression churned out intense breath which immediately spread in all directions and attracted the attention of other three super experts.

“There?”

Liu Yuan, Hua Fu and Bai Hang almost simultaneously looked towards the valley where Long Yu and Hua Buxie were engaged in battle!

Chapter – 109 The flower withers

Long Yu certainly knew that the aura of his Zhentian Sun was too strong.

If other three super experts were not far from there then surely must have noticed and would quickly arrive there.

So he must get rid of Hua Buxie prior to that!

“Zhentian domain, release!”

Long Yu shouted and the terrifying coercion of Zhentian domain spread everywhere and also fused thoroughly with the irradiation of sunlight.

Hua Buxie too was enveloped by Zhentian domain!

“Ice-cold influence!”

Hua Buxie snorted and continued to release ice-cold world suppression to confront Long Yu’s domain!

At the same time, the frosted flower Zhenling behind Hua Buxie also began to shoot ice towards Long Yu unceasingly, as if to freeze his whole body.

“Ice Shade!”

Hua Buxie shouted loudly and his androgynous appearance as if instantly transformed into an incarnation of incarnation ice, followed by the emergence of dozens of his ice clones in all directions!

“Ice banishment!”

Dozens of ice clones simultaneously lifted their hands and released a huge mass of cold ice directly towards Long Yu.

From the sky, the scene in the valley displayed dozens of ice clones reflecting sunlight which was radiating from the Zhenling Sun. At this time, Long Yu stood in the center and these crystal-like ice clones were advancing towards him as if to swallow him whole in a storm of ice flowers.

“Both ‘Ice Shade’ and ‘Ice banishment’ are spiritual level martial skills!”

Long Yu stood in the field grasping his spear. At this time, his mind was calm even though he was present in such a chaotic battlefield.

Ice Shadow kill when combined with Ice banishment skill could congeal dozens of ice clones and these clones could use the world principles of ice instantly. The combined attacks of so many ice clones could kill an expert of Zhenling first layer in one fell swoop!

“Even if I have Zhentian Sun, but this Buxie has also used his strongest skill to suppress the flow of Xuan qi in my meridians, making be unable to use any martial skill.”

Long Yu now had a deeper understanding of Zhenling second layer.

Although he could activate 'Nine Hidden Dragon Mark' to make up for the basic strength disparity, but in an actual fight, he simply didn't have the means to display 2 Junli all the time.

1 Junli was equal to the strength of 1000 fierce horses, so 2 Junli was equal to the strength of 2000 fierce horses!

Long Yu had just stepped into Zhenling first layer, and since he wasn't familiar with his own strength and power-ups, neither had he practiced the newly acquired skills, so how could he display such a large strength so easily?

"My only option is to go all out and practice my new skill simultaneously!"

Long Yu clenched his teeth and the Zhentian Sun began to radiate increasingly tyrannical coercion of Zhentian domain, which immediately reduced the speed of the raiding ice clones.

Shortly after, he grasped his spear and directly displayed 'kill ten thousand people' spear skill!

"Kill ten thousand people spear skill!"

This spear skill wasn't only meant to be used on the battlefield but could also be used against few enemies.

And if focused on killing only one person then it would release an extremely terrible and concentrated destructive power.

“Nine Hidden Dragon Mark, activate!”

The Qian Dragon spear instantly exuded strange black Dragon Qi which suddenly resulted in the eruption of horrifying imposing aura along with an ominous killing intention.

The destructive power of a spear skill mostly depended upon how much imposing aura it could induce.

Greater killing intention summoned bigger imposing aura from the spear.

In the battlefield, a general like his father would naturally not back down even a single step and must have followed his killing intention to kill all the enemies in his way one by one!

But Long Yu had also killed many enemies when considering the experiences from both lives! And he certainly didn't lack killing intention at this moment.

As the strong killing intention perforated towards the enemy, Long Yu finally seemed all prepared to display this spear skill and the ominous Dragon Qi immediately condensed on the spear tip.

“Kill ten thousand people!”

Long Yu swept out his spear to tackle Hua Buxie's ice banishment attack.

His killing intention spread almost instantaneously and enveloped the

surrounding area, and under the bright light of Zhenling Sun integrated with the terrible coercion of Zhentian domain, his spear attack shattered most of the ice clones.

Immediately, Long Yu's body seemed to merge with the spear and changed into a black streamer of light, and surrounded with overflowing killing intention, he once again swept his spear and crushed the remaining ice clones, making them change into ice dregs and falling to the ground.

"Ice banishment, chase!"

Long Yu moved swiftly and this attack was unable to hit him. But, Hua Buxie immediately used the same attack once more and dozens of ice-clones rushed towards Long Yu.

The cold currents of ice had interwoven to form a gigantic net of ice covering the entire field, and Long Yu quickly discovered that even if he used an agility type martial skill, he wouldn't be able to dodge this attack because not a single spot was outside its range.

The occurrence of cold currents of ice reduced the temperature of the environment in the entire valley.

An expert of Wudao realm would immediately freeze to death in this unbearably cold environment.

"Kill ten thousand people!"

Long Yu was in no hurry and was taking his time in familiarizing himself with

this new spear skill. He once again condensed killing intention on the spear tip and shattered the net of ice that was chasing him down.

“He is using a spiritual level high-grade spear skill!”

A vicious look flashed in Hua Buxie’s eyes when he saw Long Yu using a spiritual level spear skill!

Only powerhouses of Zhenling realm were able to practice spiritual level martial skills. Then how was this rookie able to display such a skill right after stepping into the Zhenling realm?

Also, it wasn’t just any martial skill but a spear skill, but how was this possible?

But he had to accept it anyway because it was the fact.

“After killing two people, I can reach the beginner level of this spear skill, but stepping further is actually quite difficult.”

“I must kill 10 people and accumulate the killing intentions in the spear in order to reach the Xiaocheng level of this spear skill!”

“100 people for Dacheng level.”

“1000 for peak level and 10,000 for perfection level!”

Long Yu thought that the beginner level of this spear skill wouldn’t grant him

enough strength to kill Hua Buxie, even thinking about this was unrealistic.

Such being the case, he could only use the method he didn't want to use.

"I wonder what will happen if I summoned the Zhenling image of Nine Hidden Dragon?"

Long Yu's eyes flashed like the cold sharp edge of a sword. He must quickly get rid of Hua Buxie before the arrival of other super experts.

"Nine Hidden Dragon Zhenling, come out!"

Long Yu used his intention to send Xuan qi into his Dantian to stimulate it, and suddenly, a huge black dragon appeared behind him out of thin air. It was exuding a very strong and terrifying black Dragon qi!

It seemed as if it came straight out from the hell. Hua Buxie failed to react in time and his mind suddenly slipped into a frightened state as he witnessed this dreadful scene!

At the same time, the crystal-like ice clones immediately shattered and crumbled in the almighty presence of Dragon qi which was as if surging straight from the hell. Hua Buxie's real body finally appeared in front of Long Yu when his clones were destroyed.

"My Nine Hidden Dragon fist can melt the road to hell and deters my opponents. I guess it's time for Buxie to disappear from this world!"

“I never thought that the hellish aura of Nine Hidden Dragon Zhenling can envelop anyone in the surroundings and deter them all on the spot. Damn, even the mere presence of this mighty being was enough to shatter all of the ice clones!”

But in this situation, how could he not seize the opportunity?

“Kill ten thousand people, die!”

The spear danced in his hands and the dreadful Dragon qi spread in all directions.

Since Hua Buxie had been thoroughly stunned and deterred by Nine Hidden Dragon’s presence, so he was unable to react in time. And in a blink of an eye, the spear pierced his chest and the bright red blood splashed everywhere.

“Two..... Zhenlings.....”

When the spear pierced his heart, he finally recovered his sanity and felt that his heart had been punctured by the spear and causing intense pain. His eyes were full of unwillingness to die.

Dual Zhenling!

He never expected that Long Yu would possess dual Zhenling, and one of them would be so terrifying that it could invoke terror in the minds of people in the surrounding region, rendering them unable to think.

Under the influence of such a terrifying existence, he was forced into a confused state and even his ice clones were shattered. He couldn't react in time and was instantly assassinated by Long Yu's spear!

In the end, Hua Buxie died because of the unexpected appearance of a Dragon Zhenling.

This was also the first time Long Yu summoned it.

"When Nine Hidden Dragon's Zhenling appeared, it seemed as if some hidden power was trying to take over my mind. What's going on....."

Long Yu had a lingering fear!

Although he used this strange power to instantly kill Hua Buxie but he didn't feel good about it!

"This Nine Hidden Dragon Mark definitely has a disadvantageous secret, but unfortunately, I do not know about it."

Long Yu secretly thought that he would not use Nine Hidden Dragon's Zhenling unless it was extremely necessary. He couldn't afford to lose control of his mind.

"Since he was at Zhenling second layer, the killing intention my spear acquired from him is almost equivalent to ten ordinary experts."

Long Yu was immediately distracted when he noticed that his new spear skill suddenly entered the Xiaocheng realm.

The accumulated killing intention actually amplified the might of the spear skill, so now even a simple move contained stronger power and wider range.

But, killing intention was not something one could acquire by practicing. Only a true killer was able to concise it!

“This spear skill is solely made for murder. I am afraid its effects won’t be great in a duel, but even Xiaocheng level of this skill has power comparable to Dacheng level of Zhentian spear tactics.”

While he was still thinking about all this stuff, both Zhenlings suddenly went back into his body and took shape inside his Dantian.

If others found out about his dual Zhenlings, it would make him the target of public envy and hatred. This secret would definitely attract countless troubles towards him.

Hua Buxie’s blood spread in the entire valley while Long Yu was standing in the stream of blood like a death god with a bloodstained spear in his hand.

The scene fell into the eyes of three super experts who arrived there only to be shocked like this!

“He killed Hua Buxie?”

Bai Hang, Huo Fu and Liu Yuan had appeared from three different directions and encircled Long Yu, who was standing in the center like a mountain!

All of a sudden, they realized what happened and panicked.

After seeing Hua Buxie's corpse lying on the ground, no one dared to take the lead!

Chapter – 110 Fierce combat with Liu Yuan

Long Yu was standing in the middle grasping Nine Hidden Dragon spear in his hand.

Of course, he knew that the three super experts had almost simultaneously arrived in the valley and he was surrounded.

And he didn't stand a chance while facing three experts of Zhenling second layer at once!

“Brother Long Yu, you are really lucky that you won, otherwise, our Zhentian sect may have lost a great master today.”

Bai Hang laughed and said: “Thankfully, Hua Buxie is dead, now you can come with me and we will together go back to Zhentian sect. I'd like to see who dares to stop us.”

If Hua Buxie was not Long Yu's match, this meant that Long Yu's battle strength was comparable to Zhenling second layer!

Bai Hang, Huo Fu, Liu Yuan, all guessed this correctly and now considered Long Yu as their equal.

However, how much credibility was present in Bai Hang's words?

Although Bai Hang and Long Yu were disciples of the same sect, but Long Yu had suffered a lot and that too because of the disciples of his own sect!

Long Yu laughed: “I was able to kill him only with the help of this lunar debris. However, I discovered that such a treasure cannot display its full might in my hands. Brother Bai Hang, I give this lunar debris to you.”

Afterward, Long Yu threw a stone towards Bai Hang!

This stone was covered with black Dragon qi and looked exactly like the lunar debris that Long Yu had recovered from under the wolf king!

Besides Long Yu, no one else had touched or even seen it properly since it had been snatched away by him right after it appeared.

When Long Yu threw the stone, suddenly, a look of joy and pleasant surprise appeared on Bai Hang’s face.

Did he just obtain the lunar debris?

“Not happening!”

Huo Fu’s body was instantly covered in flames, like a tornado of flames and his blazing figure rushed towards the stone that was still in midair!

“You want to snatch it from me?”

Bai Hang’s complexion changed and immediately used Tianwei sword tactics on Huo Fu!

“Brother Bai Hang, I am too weak, I am afraid may not be able to give you support. I will take my leave now, take care.”

Long Yu pretended to be timid and cowardly, then turned around to leave.

Nine Hidden Dragon prance!

Dragon qi curled up beneath him and he instantly jumped far away from the valley!

Bai Hang and Huo Fun were engaged in battle and it was basically impossible for them to chase after him.

Long Yu was only worried that Liu Yuan might come after him. This beautiful girl was meticulous and very smart. It was hard to deceive her!

Sure enough, Liu Yuan was carefully observing his actions and suddenly frowned. As soon as he escaped from the valley, her figure also flashed and turned into a streamer of light, chasing Long Yu at a breakneck speed!

“You are very crafty. Those two idiots have been fooled by you but it’s not so easy to deceive me.”

Liu Yuan’s cold voice sounded.

Obviously, she suspected that Long Yu would not hand over the lunar debris so easily!

Before, Long Yu had escaped from her hands and gave her a hard time. She knew that he was definitely a tough guy and was just pretending to be cowardly a moment ago.

Now that he actually stepped into the Zhenling first layer and also killed Hua Buxie. It was simply weird to think that he would willingly hand over the lunar debris!

Her guess was right but she did not know that Long Yu was not afraid to deal with only one expert of Zhenling first layer!

Unconsciously, Long Yu used two successive dragon prances and arrived at the gulf where the lunar debris had appeared.

He had already killed the Wolf King and there were some corpses in the gulf. Among these corpses, some belonged to the experts who couldn't escape from the Wolf King's clutches.

"You think you can escape from me by hiding in this gulf?"

Liu Yuan's cold voice sounded and her beautiful figure clad in black tight clothing gracefully appeared in front of Long Yu.

She had decided to overtake him and arrived here at an extremely frightening speed. Even if Long Yu used dragon prance, she still managed to catch up in a split second!

“Well, you are able to catch up with me, so there’s no point in running away.”

Long Yu laughed, pointed his spear at her and released Zhentian domain which instantly enveloped her.

“You want to fight? Good, I will gladly fulfill your wish!”

She sneered and took out her two red-handled swords. The white light flashed on the swords, accompanied by a burst of the world influence of attraction emitting from her body!

“En?”

Long Yu felt his mind trembling and actually attracted to her, making him have an intense impulse of taking her flirtatious body in his arms.

The kind of attraction a moth feels towards a flame!

This was Allure sect’s core law called Phantom Allure.

The comprehension of Phantom Allure granted two benefits to its practitioner. Firstly, it granted extremely high speed to her and secondly it allowed her body to become more attractive. Men would especially have a fatal attraction towards her!

In addition to that, her own near-perfect face gave her a devilish beauty and ultimate charm. So long as she was using Phantom Allure, men would not be able to resist the temptation and give themselves up to her!

Even Long Yu who held a strong immunity to sexual attractiveness was absent-minded for a moment!

“Streaming sword shadows, attack!”

She took this opportunity to activate the streamer sword incarnation and instantly arrived in front of Long Yu and attacked as if to cut off his head!

“Demon Vajra cover!”

Long Yu suddenly recovered but it was too late to dodge, only had time to congeal the formidable golden vajra layer to protect his body and simultaneously punched towards the sword shadow!

With a bang, Long Yu was sent flying and fell to the ground. He saw blood dripping down his injured fist!

Fortunately, the power of her attack had been considerably weakened by Zhentian domain, otherwise, his whole arm might have been chopped off!

“This Phantom Allure technique is quite dangerous.”

Long Yu considered himself as a guy who is mentally firm and has control over his desires and emotions. But even a guy like him suffered a loss under the influence of Phantom Allure. He suddenly realized that dealing with her would be more difficult than he initially thought!

“Is that all you got?”

Liu Yuan walked step by step towards him while looking down at Long Yu who was still lying on the ground. There was a look of contempt in her eyes.

This contempt was not because she underestimated his strength. She was actually taunting him since he, like all other ordinary men, fell for her charm and this clearly showed his psychological flaws.

But in reality, she was fully aware of the fact that Long Yu took the shortest time to break out of her temptation.

Other experts, even those who were on the same martial arts level as her, would stay bounded by her Phantom Allure temptation for a time equivalent to several breaths.

However, even if Long Yu was absent-minded for an instant but she still didn't have a favorable impression of him.

“All men are the same.”

A sneer was hanging on her beautiful face as her two swords flashed again and she immediately rushed forward to kill Long Yu.

Puff!

The white sword shadow instantly cut through his body, but it was only an afterimage!

“Kill ten thousand people!”

Killing intention suddenly condensed on the spear-tip and he instantly appeared behind her. Zhentian domain proliferated suddenly from his spear and completely enveloped her tender body!

“So you want to sneak attack? It won’t work that easily!”

She had already seen through his trick. The two red-handled swords danced in her hands and she turned around to block the spear at the exact accurate point.

The collision between the swords and a spear caused an explosion and gave rise to air currents rushing in all directions!

“Zhenling, appear!”

Before Long Yu could relax, she directly released her Zhenling. A black butterfly suddenly appeared behind her!

Accompanied by a burst of more tyrannical Phantom Allure world influence, her speed increased dramatically.

In a flash, her attractive body appeared in front of Long Yu and attacked with her swords!

“She is so fast!”

Long Yu thought coldly in his heart and immediately activated ghost flash to dodge past her attack.

At the same time, the image of Zhentian Sun appeared behind him and its fierce sunlight integrated with tyrannical suppression law shone on the black butterfly all of a sudden.

The blade butterfly simply couldn't hide from his Zhentian Sun!

“Kill ten thousand people!”

Long Yu stabbed his spear, along with a burst of tyrannical killing intention at its tip, towards her.

However, her speed was incredibly fast!

Even if she was shrouded by Long Yu domain, her figure was just like a specter of the night and suddenly disappeared without a trace.

One could simply not imagine the extent of her real speed if she was not suppressed by Long Yu's Zhentian domain.

“Disappear!”

A tender voice sounded above Long Yu's head and he suddenly felt a tremor in his own Dantian.

“Zhentian Sun!”

Liu Yuan had unexpectedly attacked his Zhenling Sun!

The streaming white sword attack rumbled on Zhentian Sun and it began to collapse from the corner, while at the same time, Long Yu’s Dantian trembled due to the impact.

She was undoubtedly forcing his Zhenling back into his body, otherwise, there was a possibility that she might be thoroughly routed in this battle.

However, if his Zhenling was sent back in then he would have no chance of winning!

As far as Nine Hidden Dragon’s Zhenling was concerned, in Long Yu’s eyes, it was tougher to deal with that scary dragon than to deal with Liu Yuan, so he decided not to release it unless there was an emergency.

“You attacked my Zhenling, so I guess I should also attack yours, correct?”

Long Yu smirked and pointed his spear at the black butterfly: “My spear skill, once used, can kill ten thousand people! Your trivial black butterfly doesn’t stand a chance. Be prepared to kiss it goodbye!”

A killing intention suddenly condensed at the tip of his spear and he mustered all his strength to fiercely stab the black butterfly with the spear!

“Stop!”

Liu Yuan’s Dantian trembled when her Zhenling was punctured by Long Yu’s dreadful spear. And she immediately attacked Long Yu with her twin swords to keep him away.

She didn’t want to see her Zhenling explode. Her black butterfly was much more powerful than this Long Yu’s Zhentian Sun and she wouldn’t accept the comparison between the two!

She was unable to defeat his Zhenling even though she did everything in her power. However, she believed that Long Yu would not be her opponent in close-quarter combat, all thanks to her superior speed.

Not to mention, Long Yu recently stepped into the Zhenling realm and was just a rookie!

Although she felt that Long Yu’s overall strength was not inferior to her own, but she had sufficient reasons to believe that when it came to the use of power and mastery of skill, she was definitely superior to him.

“You attacked my Zhenling first and now you tell me to stop? That’s amusing.”

Long Yu laughed and once again stabbed the black butterfly and made a hole in its wing, and at the same time, he shot numerous spear shadows towards Liu Yuan to resist her attack.

However, she was really too fast!

In a blink of an eye, she dodged past numerous spear shadows and her graceful figure, which could literally cause the downfall of a nation, suddenly appeared behind Long Yu!

Chapter 111 Trapped in a stone chamber

Liu Yuan was too fast and managed to dodge Long Yu's attack almost instantly.

But at this moment, she actually felt a strange entangling force impacting her and making her whole body stagnate as if trapped in the marsh.

At the critical moment, Long Yu had rather abruptly released the strange grass dry marsh mood, and suddenly, it miraculously helped in slowing down her next attack by half a beat!

“Flash!”

Long Yu immediately moved sideways and went not far away from the location where her attack was about to impact.

Bang!

Her sword attack bombarded on the ground and invoked tremors in the entire gulf causing numerous stones to roll down. Right then, both of them heard some strange sound.

“What happened?”

Their respective complexions changed when they realized that the situation seemed somewhat unusual!

Just the way lunar debris had appeared earlier, again, a seemingly huge fissure began to appear on the ground!

However, Long Yu simply refused to get distracted by this because, at present, his greatest enemy was Liu Yuan!

“Nine Hidden Dragon Fist, melt the road to hell!”

He blasted a punch, and suddenly, black dragon qi as if rose straight from the hell rushed toward Liu Yuan.

Unfortunately, Liu Yuan was too fast and even this attack was unable to touch her. She instantly dodged and moved to a farther place.

“Nine Hidden Dragon burst stream!”

Long Yu immediately punched the ground and a stream of dragon qi suddenly gushed out of the exact location where she moved to an instant ago! He was aiming for this all along and his plan worked.

This was his sure-shot killer move, and so far, no one had been able to escape from this attack.

Originally, she had almost no time to escape from this attack, but as soon as the column of dragon qi erupted, the gulf floor cracked open!

Her seductive tender body suddenly fell into the fissure that appeared all of a sudden and as if swallowed her whole body. This actually saved her from getting

enveloped by the dragon qi.

Long Yu also did not get time to think and the fissure spread throughout the gulf, almost appeared under his feet, making him stagger all of a sudden.

“Damn it, Nine Hidden Dragon Prance!”

He responded quickly and was all set to get out of there.

However, as soon as the air current curled up below his spear, a boulder fell from above and pounded on the ground where he was standing. This caused him to lose balance and the spear suddenly launched him into the pit!

He found himself surrounded by darkness as he was falling deeper into the pit. He only felt a terrifying Yinqi emerging from the depths of this pit and soon it covered him completely.

His stature bumped on the surrounding walls a few time as he continued to fall deeper and deeper until the dizziness overcame his mind and he finally crashed heavily into the ground.

“Damn, my bad luck cannot be any worse. I actually fell all the way to the bottom of this pit.”

He thought while enduring the dizziness.

This place was rich in lunar qi and seemed like the source of that lunar debris.

In a place like this, it was simply unpredictable to predict what might happen next!

He found out that the concentration level of lunar qi in this pit was already off the charts. He could not understand what in the world happened to cause such a thing.

Soon, he discovered that whenever the lunar qi approached his chest region, it would become even more violent!

“Is the nine hidden dragon qi provoking the lunar qi? Is that also the reason behind the collapse?”

He thought then immediately summoned Zhentian Sun behind him which suddenly illuminated the surroundings.

In this pitch-black underground place, this was the only means to see properly.

However, what he saw suddenly left him stunned.

He was not in some ground fissure but in a completely sealed ancient stone chamber!

This stone chamber was very small and Long Yu was surrounded by four gray walls. He could not figure out the composition of the material used in these walls.

Long Yu was shocked because he couldn't understand how he fell inside this

stone chamber because there was not a single opening anywhere.

This stone chamber was completely closed from all sides, making it seem like the place a hermit would choose before sacrificing himself!

But besides him, there was one more person in this stone chamber and was lying unconscious on the ground. This person was none other than Liu Yuan!

She had also fallen together with Long Yu into this stone chamber.

Seeing her unconscious, Long Yu didn't seem to bother much about her condition and started to examine the stone chamber.

“Shatter!”

Long Yu condensed his entire strength in his fist and punched the gray wall. He soon found out that the wall was extremely solid and rendered his punch useless!

“So it's impossible to break this strange looking gray wall.”

His complexion faded.

How should he leave this sealed stone chamber?

This was the so-called case of ‘fear of the unknown’!

Right now, he did not know who built this stone chamber, what was the purpose behind building it. He also did not know what might happen next.

There were a lot of mysterious places like this in this world, and most of them were extremely dangerous. Once entered, one would never be able to come out.

If this sealed stone chamber was one of such dangerous places then what should he do?

He was extremely cautious and began to examine closely, trying to find something special or strange that might become a valuable clue for getting out of there.

As he expected, he soon discovered four small gray stones, each embedded in the four walls of the chamber. These gray stones were constantly emitting strong lunar qi.

“These are lunar debris!”

Long Yu was shocked when he saw four lunar fragments.

The appearance of a ‘lunar debris’ was enough to cause fierce competition among the four super experts of Zhenling second layer!

However, right now, a total of four of them appeared in front of his eyes!

Long Yu was shocked for a moment then finally decided to examine them.

From the observation, he immediately understood why it was called lunar debris because these four gray stones looked like pieces from the debris of a stone tablet.

These four stones were cut sharp at angles and were definitely built by someone.

“Lunar debris turned out to be a man-made thing, but, who can create something like this? And where is the rest of the stone tablet?”

He thought then began to study one of the lunar debris embedded in the wall.

He stroked it with his hand and found out that he could move it. So long as the Xuan qi was injected into it, followed by applying force from outside, it could be pressed into the wall!

“What will happen if it’s pressed down?”

Long Yu thought then turned his face to look at unconscious Liu Yuan.

No matter what, there was no other way. It was better to give it a try!

He was determined and abruptly pressed the lunar debris into the wall.

He was fully vigilant, expecting the appearance of some kind of trap that might finish him off, or bury him alive in this pit, but he soon found out that even after he pressed the lunar debris, there was no response from the stone chamber.

Only the lunar qi became more and more agitated and rushed towards his chest.

Unfortunately, the lunar qi was completely suppressed because the dragon qi was much more formidable than the attacking lunar qi.

When he released the lunar debris, he noticed that it was protruding out of the wall.

“This stone chamber has four stones. What if they are pressed simultaneously?”

But, how to press four stones simultaneously!

Being an expert of Zhenling first layer, he could certainly shoot Xuan qi to simultaneously press the other three stones.

However, he discovered that his Xuan qi began to corrode the moment it came in contact with this stone chamber’s high concentrate lunar qi and was completely devoured. So it was impossible to press three stone from so far.

When Xuan qi was devoured, he also tried to use Qian spear shadows to press the stones but it didn’t work.

“Will dragon qi work on the stones?”

Long Yu tried to condense nine hidden dragon qi on one stone and shot the same towards the other three stones.

As expected, dragon qi was not devoured by lunar qi!

“What happened?”

Long Yu tried again and again but soon discovered that at his current level, he could release only two streams of dragon qi, strong enough to press the stones but the third one failed.

Now, he had no way to press the last lunar debris!

As soon as he spent some of his dragon qi, he was quickly surrounded by lunar qi and it began to consume his inner strength.

“Not good

Long Yu frowned and temporarily gave up on the idea of pressing the four lunar fragments.

He relaxed a bit then tilted his head and looked towards Liu Yuan who was still lying unconscious on the ground.

“It seems I will have to wake her up.....”

Just when he thought this, her whole body began to tremble.

Long Yu used nine hidden dragon qi to shield himself from this stone

chamber's lunar qi, but she simply did not have a way to resist the invasion of lunar qi.

When he was not paying attention, her body had been invaded by lunar qi!

"First, I need to save her."

He frowned and somewhat reluctantly made the decision of saving her.

If he was unable to leave this damned place then he would surely die within few days!

Even if this did not work, he could surely use her wisdom to figure a way out of this place, after all, two minds would produce better results.

He must hurry up.

In two or three steps, he arrived beside her and hugged her soft tender body. At present, she was trembling in his bosom.

Immediately, he activated the nine hidden dragon qi and made it invade her Dantian and meridians.

He could only think of this method of using his dragon qi to invade her body and drive out the lunar qi!

This was an extremely complex process and it was possible to accidentally

destroy her cultivation. If she was not unconscious right now then it would have been impossible for Long Yu to maintain this method.

However, his speed seemed a bit slow.

At this moment, her meridians were being corroded by the lunar qi. Her black eyebrows changed color and turned white like the snow. Even her beautiful black hair slowly turned white.

In a while, her beautiful body was entire covered with frost!

Chapter – 112 Heavenly Lunar Stone Tablet

The invasion of Nine Hidden Dragon qi could actually turn a living being into a dried up corpse from inside.

But lunar qi was no less dangerous and freezing Liu Yuan from inside.

However, regardless of which method was used, the final outcome was death.

“Get out of her body!”

Long Yu clenched his teeth and stimulated the movement of dragon qi inside her meridians.

At this time, he could not also worry about the corrosion of her meridians due to the injection of dragon qi. This method was crude and only the circulation of dragon qi could drive out lunar qi from her body.

Fortunately, he was quick in making this decision and acted immediately. Her breathing was getting weaker, heartbeats slower, but before reaching a fatal state, the lunar qi was finally fully dispelled from her body.

Then, he immediately withdrew dragon qi from her meridians and formed a barrier of the same around her body to protect her from further invasion of lunar qi.

In order to leave this stone chamber, he didn't restrain himself and went all out.

When the dragon qi barrier was set up to protect her, her internal energy slowly began to restore back to normal!

However, he could only clench his teeth and wait for her to wake up while constantly maintaining the barrier. If she did not wake up before the dissolution of dragon qi barrier, then she would once again the lunar qi invasion.

In that case, even the gods might not be able to save her!

Time passed second by second.

Long Yu was suffering all the time, felt as if all his strength would soon be drained, making his mind hit by the waves of dizziness!

If it weren't for his strong willpower and stubborn will to survive, then staying conscious in his current state would have been impossible for other experts.

"Come on Liu Yuan, wake up already!"

He hugged her body and tried to give her his own warmth.

At this moment, her ice-cold body gradually began to gain temperature gradually in his bosom.

Her consciousness gradually returned along with the warmth of her body.

However, the color of her eyebrows and hair that had turned snow-white due to the lunar qi invasion wasn't restored to black, indicating that this change in color was irreversible.

At this time, she was dressed in black seductive attire, her beautiful white hair hanging to her waist. Even her eyebrows gained the color of snow and became more attractive.

The lunar qi invasion greatly changed her appearance.

As a result, now she looked even colder than before. The charm she possessed to seduce men did not diminish, instead it strengthened several times!

Her new appearance gave her the kind of sacred aura which gave rise to an indescribable feeling in men. To describe in simple words – the one that must not be touched.

This scared aura gave her a unique charm and appeal!

As her body temperature gradually rose again, she finally opened her eyes and saw herself gently held in the arms of Long Yu!

Her complexion changed, but she felt very weak and could not shove him away even if she wanted to.

Her body faced corrosion from both lunar qi and small portions of dragon qi, making her very vulnerable right now.

“You where are we?”

Her eyebrows wrinkled. A woman’s intuition made her feel inexplicably strange in this weird atmosphere.

This was a completely sealed stone chamber.

Long Yu was hugging her tightly and her body was covered in a layer of dragon qi, separating her from the lunar qi filled in this stone chamber.

She was a smart woman and her keen senses soon informed her that Long Yu was in a very bad shape right now. Perhaps, even a random attack of hers would kill him on the spot.

However, if she did that then she would also die!

She was not stupid, of course, would not do so.

She knew that there was definitely a certain reason why he saved her by pushing himself to such limits. Otherwise, why would he go to such limits to save her when killing her was an easier choice?

“Do not move and listen to what I am going to say.”

He said in a very low and deep voice because he really did not want to waste the little remaining strength he had.

“We are trapped in a fully enclosed stone chamber, the walls are very strong and I cannot find a way out. There are four lunar debris embedded in the four walls and Xuan qi can be used to press them into the wall. I cannot press all four of them, I need you to press one. When these stones are pressed simultaneously, we may find a way out.”

“I have tried everything and this is the only idea I am left with. We have not more than 1 hour left.”

He then waited for her answer.

His explanation was brief but this place spoke for itself and she was not like other stupid girls he had met so far in this world!

“There’s no time to waste, let’s begin.”

She said with some difficulty but immediately made the decision.

She believed that Long Yu was not deceiving her.

After all, she had been unconscious for quite some time. If he wanted to do something to her then he would have already done it by now.

And seeing him in such a dire state, she certainly did not want to waste time!

“Well, you’re in charge of pressing this lunar debris. You will have to use your Xuan qi to activate it then press it into the wall.”

He pointed to the lunar debris closest to her and said in a solemn manner.

“Ok.”

She nodded, had some difficulty standing up and her white hair drifted down to her waist. The inverted image of her own hair in her starry eyes stunned her.

Did her hair turn into a full-white?

Now, however, it was not the time to think about it!

She recovered from the shock and began to wonder. If she was in charge of pressing one stone, how would Long Yu press the other three simultaneously?

She quietly tried once and discovered that as soon as Xuan qi left her body, it was immediately devoured by lunar qi before it could activate the lunar debris!

She soon knew the answer.

“You are being hasty, wait.”

Long Yu said and suddenly removed the protective cover of dragon qi from her body, jumped towards the opposite wall and pressed the lunar debris.

Without the protective cover of dragon qi, lunar qi once again began to invade her body.

However, this time she was not unconscious and used her entire strength to resist the invasion!

At the same time, she condensed Xuan qi on her slender fingers and pressed the lunar debris into the wall.

Then, she turned her face to carefully observe Long Yu.

She saw him putting one hand on the wall, then he lifted the other hand and stretched out two fingers and emit strange dark ripples of light towards the others two walls!

Immediately, the two jet black ripples crashed into the two stones and pressed them while Long Yu simultaneously pressed the one under his hand!

“This strange dark energy that he had, I have never seen something like this before. It’s hard to guess what kind of energy is this, but I know this much, it makes me feel as if it’s coming straight from the hell.....”

She was thinking and was also wary of what might happen at any time.

As soon as the four stones were pressed, the entire stone chamber began to tremble!

Suddenly, the rich lunar qi began to revolve and was attracted towards the center, thereby condensing vigorously.

“Something happened.”

Long Yu was happy that at least something happened, but his strength was depleted. He did not seem in a good condition!

Fortunately, he knew that Liu Yuan did not have the slightest battle strength left to become a possible threat to his life.

They were standing near the opposite walls of the stone chamber and looked towards the center .

The lunar qi gradually converged in the center and formed an entity!

“What can it be?”

Long Yu was maintaining a careful observation.

They saw how the entire lunar qi contained in this stone chamber condensed together to form a stone!

“It’s a stone!”

They simultaneously gawked.

This stone was shorter than the one he seized earlier. It was lying in the center of the stone chamber and was exuding dense lunar qi.

Once the formation was complete, the four stones embedded in the walls

transformed into lunar qi and instantly condensed on this stone to form its four edges.

“This is the complete lunar debris? If succeeded in harnessing its power, I can obtain great strength!”

Long Yu thought so in his heart and looked at the beautiful Liu Yuan, who was also looking at him.

Obviously, the same thought was revolving in their hearts!

However, they did not dare to take any action because of lack of strength. Both of them were vigilant!

Although he saved her just now but it was hard to assume that she acknowledged his efforts, after all, it was for his own survival as well.

Liu Yuan thought that he saved her just for the task of pressing the lunar debris, and facing the temptation of this precious treasure, he was very likely to attack her if she interfered!

Moreover, in addition to the threat caused by the other party, there was the threat of the treasure itself because they did not know what kind of stone it was. What if it was a trap?

The two continued to wait while also keeping an eye on each other!

However, suddenly, the stone split into two parts and flew respectively

towards the two, one for each!

“It split!”

They exclaimed simultaneously!

Long Yu was the braver one and immediately jumped to catch the half stone that flew towards him!

“Heavenly Lunar Stone Tablet!”

As soon as he touched it, these four words resounded in his mind.

Heavenly Lunar Stone Tablet?

He frowned as he heard this name.

He knew the significance of the term lunar in this name, probably because it was condensed out of lunar qi, but he did not know why name it ‘Heavenly Tablet’.

Could it be that the so-called Heavenly Tablet was a treasure that naturally did not occur in this world?

“This carved piece of stone, though does not have anything engraved on it, but is obviously made with chisels, how is it a naturally occurring treasure?”

Long Yu suddenly thought but could not come up with an answer.

However, he immediately thought that in this world, even the battle weapon could evolve self-awareness and even those wolves, congealed out of lunar qi, possessed consciousness. Perhaps, this was the answer to his question.

According to this logic, what if this world itself had its own consciousness and created such a treasure?

Although it somewhat difficult to accept this conjecture, but in his opinion, it was still a more reasonable explanation!

Chapter 113 Forgets honor at the sight of profits

After seizing the half part of Heavenly Lunar Tablet, Long Yu looked up and saw that Liu Yuan had also seized the other half.

They looked at each other with a somewhat doubtful look in their eyes.

They succeeded in obtaining such a precious treasure, but now what? How to leave this place?

Moreover, how to hide from others after getting out of here? Both halves of Heavenly Lunar Tablet were releasing an endless amount of Lunarqi. Taking them outside was no different than announcing about their existence to the whole world.

Although Liu Yuan was an expert of Zhenling second layer but she was still nothing in front of the peerless powerhouses present in the vast Tang State.

They were just two young experts and could not possibly deal with the powerhouses of older generation!

These chunks of Heavenly Lunar Tablet might attract the attention of some really strong experts, for example, sovereigns of the seven great sects.

If they came into the picture and showed their desire for the chunks then they would have no chance of winning, and would have to hand over this rare treasure!

However, while they were still thinking about this problem, suddenly, the chunks began to reduce in size and shrunk to the size of a palm.

After the shrinking process was complete, the chunks now looked like small pieces of jade tablets. It would be very easy to carry them now because even the Lunarqi was restrained inside these small tablets and no one would be able to sense their preciousness anymore!

A color of surprise flashed in their eyes as they looked at each other.

Immediately, they felt a strange power enveloping them and the whole stone chamber suddenly turned white in front of their eyes.

The next time they opened their eyes, they found themselves in the gulf that

had collapsed earlier!

Long Yu's choroid figure appeared on the eastern mountainside.

And Liu Yuan's graceful figure appeared on the western mountainside. Her snow-white hair was hung to her waist and looked very beautiful while floating in the air.

They looked towards the central part of the gulf that was supposed to have collapsed earlier but there wasn't the slightest trace of any collapse. They did not even see the corpses of the experts who died in this gulf. It seemed as if everything vanished from here without a trace.

This gulf was restored to its original appearance, but the Yinqi began to disperse rapidly.

Under the fierce sunshine, the Yinqi quickly began to evaporate, and it seemed like soon, this place would become a normal gulf without any traces of Yinqi or Lunarqi.

In other words, perhaps, this place would no longer remain as a mineral lode area!

This might be a big loss for whole Tang State, but was certainly a huge gain for both Long Yu and Liu Yuan!

Although each of them received only a half chunk of the Heavenly Lunar Tablet, but even this chunk was sure to contain tyrannical energy and would definitely enhance their strengths to the much higher levels.

Of course, none of them was stupid enough to publicize this matter. They must keep this a secret for the sake of their own safety and benefit.

Liu Yuan turned around and her tender body transformed into a white streamer of light and quickly vanished without a trace.

Long Yu looked at her seductive graceful back and secretly thought: "I owed her for stopping the attacks aimed at me in the gulf, but I rescued her life in the stone chamber. That means now we are even..... "

Not to mention, by allowing each other to keep a chunk of Heavenly Lunar Tablet, they certainly were even now.

Needless to say, both Long Yu and Liu Yuan wanted to monopolize the treasure but they were exhausted right now and did not want to start a fight.

What if they were discovered by others? Starting a fight for getting more and losing whatever they already had was a big gamble and none of them wanted to be a part of it.

After she left, Long Yu put the lunar jade tablet in his bosom and turned around to leave.

He was naturally headed in the direction of Ling Clan's Villa.

Earlier, he made Ling Han and the others run away with the lunar debris. But he did not know what happened after that.

Long Yu was a bit anxious.

Moreover, he used an ordinary stone integrated with nine hidden dragon qi to deceive Bai Hang.

He also did not know what happened between Bai Hang and Hua Fu?

Long Yu rushed forward but did not use the dragon prance skill because he could not use it due to the depleted reserves of Xuan qi in his body. He could only display the agility type martial skills that consumed less Xuan qi such as 'flickering wind step' or 'ghost flash'.

On the way to Ling Clan's Villa, he was constantly stimulating his Dantian for the rapid recovery of Xuan qi in his body.

At last, he saw the huge building of Ling Clan's Villa from afar.

However at this moment, he suddenly sensed a fight going on not far from there. He also sensed the aura of a Zhenling arising from the same place!

"What's happening over there?"

Long Yu thought and immediately rushed towards that place.

Soon, he arrived at the place and quietly hid behind a small hill.

He took a glance and what he saw suddenly gave rise to an endless anger in his heart.

In the field, Lu Guanming and Ling Han were supporting each other to stand

properly. There were a lot of scars on their bodies and Lu Guanming's arm was bleeding unceasingly.

And their opponent was actually Yao Yan, the fifth-ranked core disciple of their own sect!

Yao Yan had retreated with Xiahou Tianjie back then, but it seemed like he stopped at Ling Clan's Villa on his way back and bumped into Ling Han and the others!

At this time, Ling Yiyue was standing behind the two, holding lunar debris in her trembling hands and her face looked pale.

She was no match of Yao Yan and could only hide behind her brother and Lu Guanming, and watch them getting injured. One simply could not imagine the kind of pain she was feeling in her heart!

"Why don't you quickly hand over the treasure? I may consider sparing your lives since you are also the disciples of Zhentian sect. But if the two of you continue to resist then I will not show mercy!"

Yao Yan gave a threatening look to Ling Han and Lu Guanming!

"You think we will listen to your crap?"

Lu Guanming disdainfully said: "Brother Long risked his life to obtain this treasure. We will also risk our lives to protect it from the likes of you!"

"Die!"

Ling Han wasn't interested in wasting time on idle talk rather he suddenly released his 'black lock' battle weapon and instantly wrapped Yao Yan.

He had obtained this battle weapon from the body of Liu Mingxuan in Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest.

(Mystique-You can check chapter 36 for details)

Ling Han noticed that Yao Yan was not paying attention and used this opportunity to bind him!

"Mere insects like you think they can take me on? Dream on!"

Yao Yan sneered: "I will let you know that the gap between Wudao realm and

Zhenling realm is insurmountable!”

Suddenly, the image of a huge round shield appeared behind him, followed by the emergence of a terrifying suppression force that immediately shattered the black lock into pieces!

Ling Han’s complexion suddenly changed.

Even his black lock was shattered, now how would he deal with a Zhenling realm expert!

Ling Han could not help but think of Long Yu. How did that guy, in spite of being at Wudao ninth layer, actually managed to kill powerhouses of Zhenling first layer?

This was simply incredible!

However, just then, a much stronger suppression force instantly descended from the sky.

And a familiar figure appeared in front of everyone.

It was a choroid figure and holding a dragon spear in his hand.

Long Yu!

Long Yu’s Zhentian domain instantly enveloped Yao Yan and the terrifying coercion as if suppressed his whole being. At this time, a look of disbelief appeared in his bloodshot eyes.

“Long Yu! You actually -”

He actually congealed Zhenling!

Yao Yan wanted to say these words but Long Yu did not give him a chance.

“You tried to kill the disciples of the same sect and you forgot your honor at the sight of profits! You are doomed!”

Long Yu shouted then swept his dragon spear and a vicious killing intention accumulated on its tip: “Kill Ten Thousand People!”

The power of the Xiaocheng level of this spear skill was truly deadly when it was cast out by Long Yu.

Yao Yan's eyes revealed a cold look but he was shrouded by Zhentian domain and did not have the slightest capacity to resist. His chest was directly pierced by the spear, puncturing his heart almost instantly.

Yao Yan died on the spot!

With just a move, Long Yu killed the 5th ranked core disciple of Zhentian sect.

Now, Long Yu was able to kill opponents of Zhenling first layer with just one move!

It took only a moment in which Long Yu appeared and killed Yao Yan.

And in this moment, Yao Yan fell from the heaven to hell. He was already dreaming about snatching the lunar debris from these three and becoming the biggest winner.

But in the end, he lost his life!

However, in this moment, Ling Han, Ling Yiyue and Lu Guanming were directly pulled out from the hell to heaven!

"Brother Long, you are back!"

Lu Guanming's black face shone brightly with excitement.

When the three of them escaped with the lunar debris, they were worried for Long Yu because they certainly knew that he would be hunted down by the scary powerhouses of Zhenling realm.

So now that they saw him again in good condition, how could they not be happy?

Moreover, they clearly sensed that Long Yu had already stepped into Zhenling realm!

There was a time when Long Yu's cultivation level used to be lower than Ling Han.

Now, however, it was far beyond the level of Ling Han, making it almost impossible for Ling Han to catch up!

"I am back, is everyone alright?"

Long Yu retrieved his dragon spear and said with a smile.

Yao Yan's eyes were wide open and staring blankly as his corpse was lying on the ground, covered with dust and mud, but no one cared about him.

He forgot his honor at the sight of profits and deserved to die like this.

"Fortunately, we are safe but Brother Lu....."

Ling Han frowned and quickly supported Lu Guanming who lost his balance and was about to fall down.

"Ha ha, you people do not start treating me like a burden. I possess the resilience of a beast, and this level of internal injury is nothing. Let me rest for a while and I will be alright."

Lu Guanming laughed.

However, his eyes immediately closed and he fell unconscious!

Long Yu's complexion changed. He quickly stepped forward to inspect his body and immediately said: "He doesn't have superficial internal injuries. We need to hurry and quickly bring him back to the sect. I will ask Old White to lend us a healing immortality pill."

Chapter 114 The girl's thoughts

The immortality pills in Ling Clan's Villa were not good enough to heal Lu Guanming.

Now, the only way to save him was to return to Zhentian sect as soon as possible.

Ling Han picked up the unconscious Lu Guanming and headed in the direction of Ling Clan's Villa along with Long Yu and Ling Yiyue to get three fierce horses.

Although their cultivation levels were not low, but there was a long distance to cover, and it would be more appropriate and much efficient to travel on horses.

"Your lunar debris"

Ling Yiyue was walking with Long Yu and stretched her hand to return the lunar debris to him.

"Since I already gave it you and your brother, there's no need to return it to me. It's all yours now."

Long Yu smiled and said in a calm voice.

He already had half chunk of Heavenly Lunar Tablet that was probably thousands of times more precious than this lunar debris.

In that case, why would he want it?

Of course, he would keep the whole incident about Heavenly Lunar Tablet a secret from others. He could not even share it with Ling Han, considering the calamity it might bring upon anyone related to it!

A look of surprise flashed in the beautiful eyes of Ling Yiyue when she heard his words.

This lunar debris was so precious that even the experts of Zhenling second layer were willing to go to any extent to obtain it, and Long Yu actually did not want it?

"Brother Long, this lunar debris is yours. You risked your life to obtain it. We just took care of it in your absence, how can we claim it for ourselves?"

Ling Han seriously looked at Long Yu and said: "Brother Long, you are the most

talented among us. This lunar debris should rightfully be yours. It is going to be much useful in your hands compared to ours.”

“Don’t indulge in needless reasoning. I gave it you so it’s yours now.”

Long Yu smiled: “No need to be so formal with a brother. And to me, this lunar debris is not bigger than the benefit it will provide to a fellow brother.”

Even if he had not obtained the half chunk of Heavenly Lunar Tablet, he had planned to gift this lunar debris to Ling Han. Long Yu was a cold and ruthless man but was not the same for his friends.

In fact, he was never interested in lunar debris. Just because Ling Han invited him on this trip, he decided to help his friend in obtaining a treasure. However, he never expected that he would end up stepping into the Zhenling realm during this trip and he also luckily obtained a rare treasure.

After hearing Long Yu’s words, a solemn look appeared on Ling Han’s face as he said: “Brother Long, I will never forget this favor. If there’s anything you ever need me for, you will find me standing beside you. ”

Although a bit reluctantly, but he decided to accept this gift. He would certainly not forget this favor.

However, Ling Han also understood the hidden meaning in Long Yu’s words. Although Long Yu did not say this out loud but Ling Han could make a guess that he had a bigger harvest this time.

Perhaps, this harvest was stepping into the Zhenling realm!

Ling Han wanted to recapture the Ling Clan’s Villa that originally belonged to his father, but how would he achieve that at his current strength? Even dreaming about recapturing Ling Clan’s Villa at his current cultivation level was no different than wishful thinking.

But if he had the lunar debris, then it would be a lot simpler.

He made a vow ten years ago after his father’s death, and now, with this lunar debris in his possession, it seemed very close to being a reality.

And the fact was that Long Yu actually gifted the lunar debris to him so that he could quickly complete the oath!

“It goes without saying. And if there is any problem, as a brother, I shall also come to your rescue.”

Long Yu said: “Moreover, I still haven’t forgotten the favor that Brother Ling Han did by giving me a top-grade ginseng in Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest.”

Ling Han heard this and felt the sincerity in Long Yu’s words. In that case, he would gladly accept this gift as a sincere repayment!

“Well, you two can stop this nonsensical talk. We need to reach the Ling Clan’s Villa as fast as possible to get the fierce horses.”

Ling Yiyue apparently did not understand the sentiments of these two men and ended up destroying the whole brotherly mood.

Long Yu and Ling Han laughed and immediately sped towards the villa.

Soon, they arrived at the Ling Clan’s Villa.

Ling Yiyue ran to the stables but soon came out carrying a look of despair on her face: “All the horses are gone, not a single one left in the stables. Perhaps Yi Yan and Liu Shucheng stole the last two horses.”

Long Yu frowned.

The impact of the whole lunar debris matter was not small on Ling Clan’s Villa. Moreover, soon, the impact would definitely be greater even though the whole mineral lode area was now practically useless.

If one wanted to escape with the lunar debris, they would undoubtedly need to steal fierce horses from Ling Clan’s Villa before getting surrounded by the enemies. No wonder all of the fierce horses were gone.

“Go, go to other places and look for fierce horses.”

Long Yu made a fast decision and turned to leave.

If they wasted too much time looking for horses then Lu Guanming’s injuries might become serious and prove fatal!

However, when he turned around, he immediately heard a familiar female voice that transmitted from a distant place.

“Long Yu, we have two horses, since you are in a hurry, you can take our

horses and leave immediately.”

A crisp and pleasant voice of a girl sounded.

Everyone looked towards the source of this voice and saw a beautiful girl riding a white fierce horse. Her white long hair was hanging down to her waist and she seemed to be passing by.

Liu Yuan!

They immediately recognized who she was.

There was a young girl with her and she was also riding a horse. This girl was none other than Xin Yueya, a junior sister apprentice of Liu Yuan.

Each of these two girls rode a horse all the way from Allure Sect to come here.

“Liu Yuan? Her hair and eyebrows have turned white?”

Ling Han and Ling Yiyue were suddenly surprised. Moreover, why was she being so friendly with Long Yu? She even willingly offered her horses to him!

Could it be that something happened between Long Yu and Liu Yuan after Ling Han and the others ran away with the lunar debris?

Ling Han looked at Liu Yuan with a hint of vigilance emerging in his eyes!

“Senior sister apprentice, you are not kidding are you?”

Xin Yueya looked bitterly at Long Yu and said: “This guy snatched the lunar debris and you are actually willing to give our horses to him?!”

Long Yu now knew that Liu Yuan hadn’t told Xin Yueya about the whole Heavenly Lunar Tablet thing.

Liu Yuan did not answer anything and just kept an indifferent smile on her face as she dismounted her white horse.

She gently stroked the supple fur of her white horse and softly said: “Deliver him to Zhentian sect then come back to me, do not forget.”

She had herself raised this white horse since childhood, but even so, she was willing to lend it to Long Yu!

This scene baffled Ling Han, Ling Yiyue and Xin Yueya.

Exactly what happened between these two?

In fact, when Xin Yueya had seen her white hair and eyebrows, she immediately raised the question but unfortunately did not get a reply from her.

The present situation completely left Xin Yueya in a puzzled state!

However, since she had seen Liu Yuan blocking the attack aimed at Long Yu in the gulf, at this time, she somewhat suspected that perhaps her senior sister apprentice had some special feelings for Long Yu?

Otherwise, she would never have lent her favorite horse to others.

“But, she even decisively rejected the invitation of Tang State’s Dragon Major General. Can it be that this Long Yu is much more splendid than the Major General?”

Xin Yueya was baffled!

However, she had always been following Liu Yuan and without her help, she would have never stepped into Zhenling realm.

So if Liu Yuan was not willing to tell her something, she did not have the qualifications to pry anymore.

“Since senior sister apprentice has made her decision, then so be it, but we only have two horses and they are four. How will they ride?”

Xin Yueya also dismounted her horse and looked at Long Yu and the others.

“I do not care.”

Liu Yuan’s star-like beautiful eyes flashed with a trace of indifference: “Well, let’s go elsewhere to find a horse. If we take our time, there’s always a hope of finding one.”

After saying that, she walked away with Xin Yueya.

From the beginning to end, Long Yu did not say a word because even for him, it was very difficult to understand why Liu Yuan was willing to lend him her horse.

But there was no time to think about all that.

“So, I owe you again.”

Long Yu chuckled as he watched her going out of sight. Afterward, he focused his gaze on her white fierce horse.

The white fierce horse obviously obeyed its master's command.

Although it looked somewhat reluctant, but after she left, it actively walked towards Long Yu.

Xin Yueya's horse was not so obedient but Ling Han did not care either. He put Lu Guanming on its back and hopped on.

"Brother Long, you ride the white one with Ling Yiyue."

Ling Han laughed then rode the fierce horse in the direction of Zhentian sect!

He could not afford to delay too much.

Long Yu hopped on the white horse's back. Ling Yiyue sat on the front then they also followed after Ling Han.

"What is Ling Han trying to pull off?"

Holding the reins with one hand and hugging Ling Yiyue in his bosom, Long Yu tried to figure out the reason why Ling Han threw his sister into his arms.

Moreover, it seemed like Ling Han was not in a mood to wait!

As everyone knew that Ling Han had always appreciated Long Yu's friendship and treated him like a real brother. He always thought of Long Yu as someone he could share his secrets with. And now that he saw Long Yu's peerless talent, he naturally understood that Long Yu's future achievements were going to be extraordinary!

Ling Yiyue was his only sister and he would have to marry her off sooner or later.

How could he possibly let a great guy like Long Yu slip from his hands? Long Yu had all the qualities he would want in an ideal brother in law.

Originally, Ling Han was not very anxious about this matter, but Liu Yuan's appearance and the whole horse incident produced a sense of crisis in his heart.

If the opponent was Liu Yuan then his sister did not have the slightest chance of winning!

Because of this, he deliberately picked to ride with Lu Guanming to give his sister a chance to get close to Long Yu.

“Little sister, this is the best your big brother can do for you.....”

Ling Han thought and continued to ride forward.

Long Yu and Ling Yiyue were riding together and their bodies were tightly stuck with each other.

This white fierce horse was running at a very fast speed, so of course, their bodies would rub against each other. She blushed hard each time her body rubbed against Long Yu’s tough body.

“Big brother, I will kill you for doing this.”

Ling Yiyue certainly knew her brother’s plans and felt endlessly bitter in her heart!

In addition to her, there was another woman who was feeling similar in her heart.

At the top of Ling Clan’s Villa’s loft, the choroid figure of Liu Yuan could be seen. Her white hair was floating in the wind and her beautiful eyes were fixated on Long Yu and Ling Yiyue riding her white fierce horse.

A bitter look was spread all over her face.

“Well, Long Yu, it feels good right? It must feel good to ride my pet horse with another girl, humph!”

The thoughts of this young girl were difficult to understand for Long Yu. Of course, he did not even know that she was looking at him from afar, and neither did he know that she actually hated him!

Chapter 115 Life background exposed

The horses sped all the way.

It took two days for them to finally return to Zhentian sect. They dismounted the two horses at the entrance of Zhentian canyon.

Ling Yiyue jumped down from the white horse. She was blushing hard and immediately ran away. Long Yu also dismounted the white horse and felt somewhat awkward.

The white horse reminded him of Liu Yuan and how her hair had turned white in the stone chamber. This made him have a strange feeling in his heart.

Perhaps she lent her pet horse to express something but he was not sure what.

But at this time, he was not in a mood to think more about this matter because according to him, it was basically a waste of time and effort!

The white fierce horse did not stay there and turned around to rush back to the Allure sect.

“Let’s look for Old White. Brother Lu has not woken up in the last two days. I am afraid his injuries are more severe than we thought.”

Long Yu arrived next to Ling Han and said.

“En, Brother Long, since you are on friendly terms with Old White, I leave this matter to you.”

Ling Han said solemnly.

“I will try my best.”

Long Yu said, however, himself was not sure whether he would certainly obtain a healing type immortality pill from the Old White or not.

After all, he was only a junior and although it seemed as if Old White favored him a lot, but appreciation was one thing and lending a precious immortality pill to save a friend was another matter!

Long Yu looked at the unconscious Lu Guanming, then held him and embarked on the steps to the canyon peak. Ling Han and Ling Yiyue were looking at his

broad back profile as he continued to climb up.

“Sis, how do you feel about Brother Long? Over the two days on the horseback, he didn’t grope you did he?”

Ling Han inquired impatiently.

“Elder Brother, what the hell are you thinking? Why did you do this?”

Ling Yiyue bitterly glared at him: “I am your little sister, how can you throw me into the arms of some guy?”

“Brother Long is not some guy. I actually think of him.....Yes, I want him as a brother-in-law.”

Ling Han said with a satisfied look on his face.

“You!”

Ling Yiyue’s face flushed with anger, clenched her fist but did not know what to say. She ultimately turned around and walked away!

“Hey, Yiyue, I am doing this for your own good! Did you not see that Liu Yuan of Allure sect even lent her pet horse to Brother Long? If we do not take the initiative then there’s a possibility that he will be snatched away by other people!”

Ling Han quickly shouted and tried to relay the reason behind his actions.

“If you are afraid that he will be snatched away then why don’t you go with him? Go and keep him safe!”

Ling Yiyue blushed as she said these words, but did not look back and continued to walk away.

Ling Han immediately staggered. Could this mean that his younger sister actually agreed.....?

.....

Long Yu quickly reached the canyon peak with Lu Guanming.

Old Black and Old White were still indulged in playing the game of chess. They sensed Long Yu and glanced at him.

Pretty Liao Lele, clad in a blue dress, welcomed him in a somewhat depressed manner: “Long Yu, master has told me to give you this immortality pill to save this fellow apprentice’s life.”

Liao Lele threw a small porcelain bottle towards Long Yu.

Long Yu caught it and respectfully said: “Thank you, Senior White.”

“Master has said that there’s no need to thank him. For this favor, he will naturally go to Elder Yu to fetch the payoff.”

Liao Lele said blankly.

“.....”

Long Yu thought that Old White and Elder Yu had always been good friends. No wonder Old White so easily gave an immortality pill to save Elder Yu’s disciple!

However, he felt somewhat strange actually.

Liao Lele used to be a happy go lucky girl. What exactly happened to make her appear so heartless? Could it be that something bad happened to her?

“Liao Lele, what’s wrong, has someone bullied you?”

Long Yu asked but felt strange because she was a direct disciple of Old White and practiced here, at the peak of Zhentian canyon and in the presence of both Old White and Old Black. Who would dare to bully her?

“No, no one’s bullied me.”

Liao Lele curled her lips: “It seems you have hooked up a chick on this trip, so typical and unrestrained like a wild bull.”

Hooked up a chick?

Long Yu gawked for a moment. What was she talking about?

This Liao Lele, she was not jealous was she? But why did she say that he hooked up a chick!

“Great, now you try to feign ignorance?”

Liao Lele looked at his facial expression and immediately scowled: “Master said

that you came back riding a white horse that is a unique species of horses bred only in Allure Sect. This species is said to have high intelligence and can even practice Xuan qi. It can also congeal Zhenling. Everyone knows that Allure Sect is an all women sect, so that means that you hooked up a beautiful girl of Allure Sect, otherwise, why will she lend such a precious horse to you?”

Long Yu was actually surprised when he heard this.

Liu Yuan’s white fierce horse was not an ordinary fierce horse?

Although Xin Yueya was also an expert of Zhenling realm and must be a high ranked core disciple of Allure Sect but her horse was an ordinary fierce horse. So, this meant that it was a special breed kept by extremely important women in Allure Sect!

Long Yu did not give a reply because he did not know how to explain, and why should he give an explanation in the first place?

“In a matter of few days, you have actually managed to step into Zhenling realm. Indeed, one can’t judge a book by its cover.”

Liao Lele also did not dwell on this issue and carefully looked at Long Yu: “Gee, fierce, fierce!”

One can’t judge a book by its cover? What was she implying?

Long Yu thought: “Do I look like someone who cannot congeal Zhenling?”

These words could affect the conscience of normal people, but not Long Yu. His control over his own mental state was extraordinary and wouldn’t be affected so easily.

Anyways, now was not the time to gossip with a jealous girl.

Long Yu put down Lu Guanming’s body on the ground, opened the porcelain bottle and poured the pills into a glass of water brought over by Liao Lele. After thoroughly mixing the pills in water, he slowly fed the solution to Lu Guanming.

Lu Guanming had suffered internal injuries. Without the help of immortality pills, the injuries would have definitely gotten more and more serious.

But now after receiving a dose of immortality pills, he just needed to rest for some time to get better.

Then, he said goodbye to Liao Lele and the two elders and left along with Lu Guanming.

He must first bring Lu Guanming to Elder Yu then look for Sovereign Baiyun Zong.

Because on the way, Ling Han had told him that a disciple's stepping into Zhenling realm was an event worth celebrating.

Firstly, the sect would reward a top grade battle weapon to him. Secondly, he would get an additional incentive of getting the permission to practice for one-month in the Sect Valley!

Most importantly, he would get the status token of a Zhenling level disciple and that would allow him to enter the second floor of Elder Court to select a spiritual level martial skill.

Each and every Zhenling realm expert was extremely valuable for Tang State.

The sects usually spent most of their resources in nurturing their Zhenling realm disciples.

Of course, in addition, the most important thing was an opportunity to be personally guided by the Sovereign.

Long Yu was most interested in getting guidance from the Sovereign since the way of martial arts was no smooth and finding out the correct path was always quite difficult.

The experience of seniors was very important!

When Long Yu returned to the Elder Court and was still looking for Elder Yu and Sovereign Baiyun Zong, thousands of miles away in Tang State's capital city, something related to him was going on.

Liu Mingcheng returned to the imperial capital with crippled Wang Tianzhuo and informed the royal clan about this incident!

Since two royal guards of Zhenling realm had also been killed, Gu Hebo personally took control over the inquiry about this matter!

Gu Hebo was one of the influential personalities of the royal clan.

Gu Hebo held a major authority in the entire Wang Clan and it could be said that once if he got angry, it would set off a big wave in the entire imperial capital!

Gu Hebo was no ordinary guy and dispatched people who were much stronger than Liu Mingcheng.

He immediately ordered a thorough investigation of Long Yu's detailed identity. He not only sent people to Ling Clan's Villa but also to Yu Guan City as informed by Wang Tianzhuo.

The results came out very quickly.

Ling Clan's butler did not dare to lie and immediately revealed that Long Yu did not grow up in Ling Clan's Villa.

And things went more smoothly in Yu Guan City.

Not long ago, the four clans were in turmoil because of Long Yu, and he had also single-handedly stopped the collapse of Feng Clan.

Gu Hebo personally went to Yu Guan City, snooped around a bit and easily discovered that Long Yu was the name of the adopted son of Feng Clan's head, Feng Longsong!

And this so-called adopted son was originally considered a waste by everyone since he was unable to cultivate.

However, not long ago, Long Yu had a strong rise and he even defeated the three clan heads in the Feng Clan's family meeting!

After obtaining all these clues, Gu Hebo immediately began to speculate!

"The rumors are consistent about a young man named Long Yu, aged about 18, and his appearance, as described by several sources, is also the same."

"This guy is certainly from the Long Clan, the same kid who was thrown out of his own clan ten years ago."

Long Yu, the only son of Long Zaitian.

This news was quickly spread out by Gu Hebo.

Although Long Yu crippled their prince and they wanted to take revenge, but

royal clan actually did not need to dirty its own hands.

As long as the news spread out, they believed that many people would definitely want to kill Long Yu!

Originally, Long Yu was safe since no one knew his real identity.

But now that his past was an open secret, finding and killing him should be very easy.

Suddenly, certain forces had begun to act in the imperial capital!

Gu Hebo not just revealed Long Yu's past but also publicized his current location and other vital information about him to make things easier for his enemies.

Three months ago, he was still a waste who could not practice. But within three months, he was able to step into Zhenling realm!

Gu Hebo deliberately put some exaggeration, after all, it took more than three months for Long Yu to reach the Zhenling realm from Wudao first layer.

However, exaggerated benefits were attached to this exaggeration.

Gu Hebo wanted Long Yu's enemies to pay more attention to him!

The news spread throughout the city in less than a day.

This was something that not only attracted the attention of some of the state's elite forces but even ordinary people.

Because many people still remembered that 18 years ago in the battle, the Dragon General of Tang State eventually colluded with the foreign enemy forces and was expelled from the Tang State!

Long Yu was not aware that he had suddenly become a hot topic of discussion in the imperial capital.

Chapter 116 Zhenling Realm of the three transformations

When the news about Long Yu was spreading throughout the imperial capital, Long Yu was in Zhentian Sect and looking for Sovereign Baiyun Zong.

Lu Guanming handed over Lu Guanming to Elder Yu and was happy to find out from him that this black faced boy would soon be better.

Then, he came to the main hall and saw Bu Xing chatting with Baiyun Zong.

“Haha, Young Long, I heard you stepped into Zhenling realm. You look stronger now, very good!”

Bu Xing saw Long Yu and stubbornly smiled. He felt as if he was not looking at Long Yu but a monster: “I stepped into Zhenling realm when I was 20 years old. It’s hard to believe that you are just 18 years old and still managed to do it.”

“Sovereign.”

Long Yu cupped his fists and offered a salute to the sovereign then looked at Bu Xing and said with a smile: “Brother Bu if you had my luck then you certainly must have congealed your Zhenling faster than me.”

“Luck?”

Bu Xing shook his head: “No matter how much luck you have, without talent and hard work, it is impossible to step into Zhenling realm. Well, since you’re here, I’ll go to practice. Master has something to say to you.”

“En.”

Long Yu nodded then saw Bu Xing’s figure vanish without a trace.

Baiyun Zong took a good look at Long Yu and a satisfied look appeared on his face: “You really did not let me down, indeed worthy of being the flesh and blood of Long Zaitian and Bei Yuyao..... Now tell me, what kind of fortuitous encounter you had on your trip to Ling Clan’s Villa?”

Long Yu felt nostalgic when he heard this name because it was the same name transmitted to his mind through Nine Hidden Dragon Spear.

However, he felt a bit strange when he heard it today.

The name belonged to his mother but he had never seen her. In fact, he never heard this name from anyone else except Baiyun Zong.

Bei Yuyao, exactly what kind of a woman was she?

Long Yu clenched his fist. He deeply felt that his present strength was not enough. He was not yet qualified enough to search for his mother!

Then, he roughly narrated what all things happened on the trip. Of course, he omitted that part where he fell in the stone chamber with Liu Yuan.

“Since sovereign is so experienced, does he know what Heavenly Tablet means?”

Long Yu suddenly asked.

“Heavenly Tablet?”

Baiyun Zong was stunned and never expected to hear this from Long Yu’s mouth!

“Where did you come to know about Heavenly Tablet?”

Baiyun Zong responded while casting aside his small beard and revealing a strange color in his eyes: “This is something that only the powerhouses of general level seek. It is a necessary item for stepping into the Realm of Man-Heaven Unity. Perhaps, even I may not be able to set foot into that realm in this lifetime. ”

Realm of Man-Heaven Unity!

Long Yu’s complexion slightly changed. This was the second time he heard this.

He heard about this realm earlier from Elder Yu on the way to Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest. According to what Elder Yu said, after stepping into this realm, one could fly in the air and there were only a handful of such people in the entire Tang State!

Unexpectedly, even Baiyun Zong felt that he could not set foot into this realm.

What kind of a realm was it?

Heavenly Tablet was sought only by high-level powerhouses. This was an indication that it contained a tremendous power to enhance someone’s

potential.

No wonder one trivial lunar fragment was able to make Mo Fengming the third-ranked expert among the nine strongest young experts of the Tang State!

Nine strongest young experts were powerhouses under the age of 25 years and were considered the strongest youth present in the entire Tang State.

Among the nine strongest young experts, Bu Xing was ranked eighth while Mo Fengming was ranked third.

In a fight, Bu Xing might not be able to block a single attack from Mo Fengming!

“Heavenly Lunar Tablet is an incredible item and even half of it should be more than enough.”

Long Yu thought and his expectations from this item increased dramatically.

“It seems like you are very lucky to have obtained a Heavenly Tablet.”

Baiyun Zong smiled and seemed to have seen through Long Yu, but did not stretch this matter anymore.

If Long Yu got a Heavenly Tablet this it was a wonderful thing for Zhentian Sect!

With the help of a Heavenly Tablet, Long Yu’s future prospects would be profound, perhaps even more than Baiyun Zong’s, which was a very good outcome for Zhentian Sect!

“Since you have stepped into Zhenling realm, I will tell you the details regarding the practice method in this realm.”

Baiyun Zong bypassed the Heavenly Tablet’s topic, stroked his mustache, said: “The nine layers of Wudao are actually divided into three stage of quenching body. The first stage involves aggregating Xuan qi, the second stage involves generating inner Xuan qi, and the third stage involves assigning away Xuan qi from one’s body. Each stage is divided into three layers, in total nine layers of Wudao realm.”

“And Zhenling, in fact, is referred to as ‘Zhenling realm of the Three Transformations’! The first transformation involves the congealment of spirit

image, the second transformation involves the aggregation of spiritual entity, and the third transformation involves uniting with the spiritual entity! The three transformations are each divided into three layers, in total nine layers of Zhenling realm.”

“The first three layers are dedicated to the congealment and enhancement of spirit image. Fourth, fifth and sixth layers are dedicated to aggregation of spiritual entity. The strength of a spiritual entity is ten times more than a spirit image. Finally, seventh, eighth and ninth layers are dedicated to the attainment of unity with the spiritual entity.”

“Attaining unity with the Zhenling is a prelude to the realm of Man-Heaven unity. But about that realm, I cannot tell you much. Just know that you need to combine with your spiritual entity and with its help, you will be able to borrow the power of the world principles. This is analogous to the soul-level transformation of a martial artist.”

Long Yu finally had a comprehensive understanding of the entire Zhenling realm.

Spirit image, spiritual entity, and unity with spiritual entity!

And only after stepping into the Zhenling ninth layer, he could start attaining unity with the heaven!

Not to forget, the realm of Man-Heaven Unity was considered a legendary realm in Tang State.

Of course, right now, he was too far away from the realm of Man-Heaven Unity.

“Sovereign, what is your present cultivation level?”

Long Yu could not help but ask.

“If you really want to know then aggregate your spiritual entity first, then come and ask again.”

Baiyun Zong stroked his beard and faintly smiled.

Long Yu could guess that Baiyun Zong had already aggregated his spiritual entity, but it was hard to guess whether he had reached unity with it.

In this regard, if Baiyun Zong would not tell then Long Yu could not know!

An expert at a higher level could easily see through the cultivation level of an expert at a lower level.

However, a lower level expert could only make a general speculation about the cultivation of an expert at a higher level.

If Long Yu was in Zhenling second layer or third layer then he could have easily inferred Baiyun Zong's level, however, the gap between the two was really too big.

"Well, if you have any doubts regarding the cultivation process, you can ask me freely."

Baiyun Zong smiled and said: "For now, this is Zhenling disciple's identity token, take it! Now you are eligible to enter the second floor of Elders Court and choose a spiritual level martial skill."

Long Yu caught a jade tablet thrown by Baiyun Zong and nodded once.

"Also, you can choose a top grade battle weapon, but since you have a dragon spear, I recommend you choose a defense type battle weapon."

Baiyun Zong explained: "A top grade defense type battle weapon may not work against a powerhouse of Zhenling realm, but the experts of Wudao realm will never be able to hurt you."

At this time, Long Yu shook his head.

Because after stepping into Zhenling realm, even the defensive strength of his Demon Tyrant Form had increased by leaps and bounds.

So, he did not need a top grade defense type battle weapon to protect him from Wudao level experts, after all, his Demon Vajra cover was enough to block the attacks from Zhenling realm experts.

Choosing a defense type battle weapon was simply unnecessary.

Moreover, a mere top grade battle weapon was too low for his level!

His dragon spear was a spiritual level battle weapon, and after integrating nine hidden dragon qi with it, it became a spiritual level best quality battle weapon!

“You are being awarded one month’s cultivation time in the Sect Valley.”

Baiyun Zong looked at Long Yu and helplessly shook his said: “But you have already comprehended Zhentian domain so there’s no longer any need to cultivate in the Sect Valley. Give up on this offer and receive a spiritual level battle weapon instead. What do you think?”

“Zhentian domain is the limit of core law practice?”

Long Yu frowned and asked.

“Not really, there’s principle above the domain. But you will have to comprehend the Zhentian principle to reach a thorough understanding of Zhentian tactics.”

Baiyun Zong stroked his mustache: “But, it is very difficult to transform Zhentian domain into Zhentian principle and you certainly cannot do that in Sect Valley. You need to explore it yourself, after all, it’s the world principle we are talking about. Gaining full grasp over world principle is similar to achieving unity with the heaven.”

Realm of the Man-Heaven Unity!

Long Yu nodded and said: “Then I will choose a spiritual level battle weapon.”

“There are not many spiritual level battle weapons in the inventory of Zhentian Sect.”

Baiyun Zong further said: “There is only Old White in our sect who knows how to concoct immortality pills, whereas, there is not a single elder in our sect who knows how to smelt battle weapons. So, our sect exchanges spiritual level immortality pills refined by Old White for spiritual level battle weapons, in the imperial capital.”

There was not a single elder in Zhentian Sect who could smelt battle weapons!

“So that’s how it is.”

Long Yu was stunned.

In such a huge Sect, there was only one alchemy expert and he knew only to refine immortality pills, not to smelt battle weapons!

Just from this, one could see the importance of Alchemy experts in Tianyu continent!

Both immortality pills and battle weapons were essential items for martial artists, but the alchemy experts were actually very few and extremely honorable!

Chapter 117 Demon wings

Old White was an alchemy master and had taken a fancy to Liao Lele then he would surely teach her alchemy skills to concoct immortality pills.

So to say, did she have a talent for alchemy?

Long Yu thought for a moment but did not think too much.

The difficulty associated with concocting immortality pills or smelting battle weapons was very high. You must spend a lot of thoughts on it and dedication in learning was a must as well.

Right now, Long Yu was not going to let his mind go astray. He must focus all his mental and physical energy on cultivation; this was the only way to continuously enhance his cultivation level, in order to ensure his own safety in this vicious world!

Long Yu was temporarily not going to invest his precious time in learning alchemy.

He came out of the sovereign's main shrine. He was now headed in the direction of the Elders Court to see if there were any good spirit level martial skills on its second floor. Anyway, he was also allowed to choose a spirit level battle weapon.

Although there were not many spirit level battle weapons in the Zhentian sect, he still got a chance to pick one for himself.

Since Wu Jianxin had been crippled by the sovereign and kicked out of Zhentian Sect, the control of Elders Court was handed over to Elder Yu.

Long Yu arrived at the Elders Court and saw Elder Yu sitting cross-legged with his eyes closed. Lu Guanming was unconscious and lying next to him.

"Long Yu, I was waiting for you."

Elder Yu opened his eyes that contained a hint of appreciation: "Come with me, just now sovereign has explained everything to me."

With that, he led Long Yu all the way to the second floor.

Spirit level battle weapons and spirit level martial skills were stored on the second floor and in extremely tight security!

A disciple who had not yet stepped into the Zhenling realm was absolutely not allowed to set foot on the second floor of Elders Court.

Long Yu discovered that although Elder Court was only a large bamboo house, it was protected by a barrier based on the suppression principle of the world.

It could easily withstand the vigorous attacks from a powerhouse of Zhenling realm.

Elder Yu manipulated the coercion of Zhentian world influence and put his hand on the gate leading to the second floor. This neutralized the barrier on the gate and it opened on its own.

It was necessary to at least comprehend the world influence of Zhentian tactics to enter the second floor!

“You will find spirit level martial skills kept on the left side and spirit level battle weapons on the right side of the room. I’ll go now, select the ones you like the most.”

Elder Yu pointed to the left and right side of the room then smiled gently and immediately turned around to depart.

Long Yu looked towards the left and saw many stone tablets that were arranged neatly. There were martial skills engraved on each of the stone tablets.

Similarly, he saw a stock of battle weapons on the right side.

Since Elder Yu immediately left and left him alone here, it was apparent that now he held the maximum jurisdiction and could pick his favorite skill or battle weapon!

Certainly, the quantity was limited.

Long Yu was slightly more interested in battle weapons.

He took one step towards the stock of battle weapons and suddenly felt a burst of strong aura being released by the battle weapons.

“These are spirit level battle weapons, some are low-grade ones but some are

of top grade as well.”

Long Yu glanced at the weapons. He saw more than 10 spirit level battle weapons in the stock, and among them, only two were of top grade.

One of these two top grade spirit level battle weapons was actually a sparkling white robe and seemed to have been woven using the feather of some beast. It also seemed like it would not only improve defense but could also enhance the speed of its owner.

A unique matrix law was usually carved on spirit level battle weapons and provided a special ability to the user.

For example, a matrix law to enhance speed was carved on this ‘White feather robe’ that was originally a defense type battle weapon.

Another top grade spirit level battle weapon was a sword.

Long Yu already had Nine Hidden Dragon Spear, so he was not at all interested in this sword.

“It seems like the only one I can choose is this white feather robe.”

Long Yu thought and walked toward it.

At present, his most lacking attribute was speed because his ‘dragon prance’ skill was not a suitable skill for combat. But, this white feather robe should enhance his speed considerably.

However, when he was about to pick it up, his vision suddenly fell upon a battle weapon adjacent to it!

This battle weapon was also made up from the feathers of some kind of demon beast, but it was actually a pair of wings covered with white feathers.

Wings?

Long Yu picked it up and noticed that this battle weapon fully extended up to thirty feet, but its matrix law engraving was destroyed, making it look like it was not a spirit level product at all.

The label marked on it said “Broken Demon Wings, spirit level battle weapon, best-grade”

Demon Wings?

Broken?

However, this was actually a best grade spirit level battle weapon!

He tried to communicate with it using his Xuan qi and discovered that its basic functionality was still working, but the matrix law engraving on it had been destroyed.

However, since it was a best grade spirit level battle weapon, its basic functionality was definitely going to be tyrannical!

“I should try its functions.”

Long Yu used his intention and stimulated the circulation of his Xuan qi into the wings. Suddenly, the white wings completely spread out and connected to his back using Xuan qi as a link.

“Flash move!”

Long Yu thought to test the extent of the upgrade in his speed and his figure suddenly blurred. The white wings moved and as a result of that, his speed increased to 3-4 times all of a sudden!

“Damn, its speed upgrade effect is something!”

Long Yu’s eyes shined.

In spite of being a damaged product, its effect was quite awesome.

This battle weapon could increase his speed 3-4 times. It was certainly a life-saver stuff!

Most importantly, there was a huge difference in consumption of Xuan qi in an agility type martial skill and in using a battle weapon. A small amount of Xuan qi was required to use a battle weapon, so choosing these demon wings was a wise decision over an agility type martial skill.

In a long term chasing process, these demon wings would last longer when compared to an agility type spirit level martial skill!

And since white feather robe was only a top grade spirit level battle weapon, with its functions mainly focused on defense, when it came to enhancement in

speed, demon wings were certainly a better choice.

“Alright, Demon Wings, I choose you.”

Long Yu made the decision. He certainly wanted to take both Demon Wings and White feather robe, but he did not want to break the trust of Elder Yu.

Long Yu retracted his Xuan qi and the demon wings fell on his hands. Its structure was very soft and the basic idea of the manufacturer was to make it less cumbersome to carry around. It could be easily folded and concealed in one's bosom.

Whenever there was a need to use it, he would simply need to stimulate it using Xuan qi and the white wings would automatically extend on both sides, while being simultaneously attached to his back using Xuan qi as a link.

“Time to choose a spirit level martial skill.”

Long Yu thought then went to the other side of the room.

He was a total of 22 stone tablets in the stock. Long Yu glanced at all of them and found that the worthwhile spirit level skills were at most of the top grade.

There wasn't a single best grade spirit level martial skill among them.

Long Yu saw stone tablets of Tianwei sword tactics, the soul fist, but these were low grade spirit level skills. In fact, there were altogether 18 low grade spirit level skills in stock.

With only 4 middle grade spirit level skills and 2 top grade spirit level skills.

From the annotations on the stone tablets, it could be seen that practicing even a low grade spirit level martial skill was very difficult. A cultivator would have to go through countless suffering and hardships to reach even its Xiaocheng level!

(Mystique – Beginner level<Xiaocheng level<Dacheng level<Peak level<Perfection level)

“No wonder Brother Zong and other senior disciples have mostly practiced low-grade spirit level skills.”

Long Yu wasn't particularly interested in any of the spirit level skills.

He originally wanted to select an agility type spirit level skill, but now he had demon wings. So temporarily, he was not in a rush to get one.

Practicing any skill required time and Long Yu precisely lacked time the most!

He also needed to spend a lot of time to master 'Awakening Palm Samsara', the second skill of Nine Hidden Dragon Fist. By mastering this skill, his strength would increase by leaps and bounds.

And in order to master the spear skill 'kill then thousand people' he needed to kill people and accumulate killing intention.

"It is more difficult to practice Awakening palm samsara than any other skill."

Long Yu was mentally prepared and decided that other martial skills were really not necessary.

Then he carefully observed the respective functionalities of those martial skills as explained on the tablets. His motive was to remember these effects and devise counter strategies for future battles.

He spent an afternoon on this.

In the evening, he came down and met Elder Yu. He cupped his fists and said: "Elder Yu, I want to practice in a peaceful place, where should I go to find such a place?"

"Old White's place is not good enough?"

Elder Yu asked in a surprised manner.

"Well....."

Long Yu scratched his head and did not know what to say.

He really did not want to go back to Old White's place. One reason was that he did not want to bother Old White, and secondly, Liao Lele seemed in quite a bad mood and he did not want any trouble, so it was better to stay away from her or the time being!

Elder Yu did not pursue this matter. He gently smiled and said: "Then go to the bamboo grove. It's located to the back side of Elder Court, right behind the mountain. Your Brother Bu is also practicing there."

“Thanks a lot, Elder Yu.”

Long Yu nodded then turned around and left. He was headed towards the bamboo grove behind the mountain.

The bamboo grove was actually situated in a fairly open place and was surrounded by high cliffs. At first glance, it seemed like an imitation of a fairyland.

This bamboo grove was actually a practice ground for Zhenling realm experts! He several bamboo huts located on the sides and they gave temporary residence to Zhenling level disciples and elders who would often come here to practice.

When Long Yu arrived here, he felt a strong presence of Zhenling aura.

He heard a sound of battle that was going on not far from the bamboo grove!

Chapter 118 Bamboo forest

Long Yu was suddenly curious to find out about the people who were involved in fighting.

This bamboo forest was used as practice ground by elders and Zhenling level disciples, but there weren't many Zhenling level disciples in Zhentian Sect.

In other words, the people who were battling right now were most likely the elders!

There were 13 elders in Elder Court and Wu Jianxin had been crippled and expelled from the sect, leaving only 12 elders and each was an expert of at least Zhenling third layer.

It could be said that Long Yu was the weakest person to enter this place.

After entering into the Zhenling realm, now he could finally interact with the strongest figures of Zhentian Sect.

“Demon Wings!”

Long Yu stimulated the circulation of Xuan qi and two white wings appeared on his back and spread up to 10 feet on both sides. And he suddenly felt his whole body become extremely light.

“Let's go demon wings!”

Long Yu's body floated in the air and as he flapped the wings, he began to fly forward while simultaneously maneuvering through the bamboo forest!

His present speed was several times more than the speed granted by 'flickering wing step' or blizzard boots individually.

Long Yu displayed excellent maneuvering skills and soon arrived at the place from where the battle noise was being transmitted!

Afterward, he put away the demon wings and stood calmly in the shade of bamboo groves. He actually saw few people gathered in the field surrounded by bamboo groves from all sides.

In the field, there was a middle-aged man in white clothing fighting with a

noble woman in black dress. It seemed like these two were involved in a practice match.

Long Yu had seen them in Elder Court once before. They were one of the strongest elders of Zhentian Sect.

“Haha, Brother Long, I didn’t expect to see you here.”

With an uninhibited loud laugh, a black-robed figure arrived next to Long Yu.

Long Yu turned his head and saw Bu Xing standing beside him.

“Brother Bu, you are also watching this battle?”

Long Yu was somewhat surprised but it actually made him feel relieved. It was good that there was a mutual understanding among the people here, or else things could get really embarrassing at times.

“Yes, I am learning a lot from this practice match between Elder Yu and Elder Yan. These two have already congealed Zhenling entities and I am profiting a lot by observing this battle.”

Bu Xing laughed.

The white clothed middle-aged man was named Yu Shengshi and the noble woman in white was called Yan Huanmo. Both of them were at Zhenling fourth layer.

But, Long Yu was obviously a bit late because this battle had already reached its end.

“Sister Yan is really so fierce. I feel ashamed to have lost yet again, ha ha.”

The middle-aged man gently smiled and put away his sword.

“I will go now.”

Yan Huanmo indifferently said and turned around to leave. She appeared very cold and desolate from her demeanor.

But before leaving, she glanced at Long Yu and seemed somewhat surprised.

A new face.

Yan Huanmo thought then vanished from there.

Long Yu looked at her from behind and could not help but secretly admire her. She looked about 25 or 26 years old but was already at Zhenling fourth layer.

It seemed like there were a lot of talented people in Zhentian Sect.

When Yan Huanmo was gone, Yu Shengshi arrived beside Long Yu and said.

“Young Long Yu, I thought you would stay at Wudao ninth layer for quite a while, but you have shocked me by stepping into Zhenling realm so soon.”

Yu Shengshi took a good look at Long Yu from up to down and a satisfied smile spread on his face.

“Honorable elder, the credit goes to the valuable cultivation time I spent in Zhentian Sect.”

Long Yu politely said.

“Oh come on, cultivation time my ass. In the world of martial arts, success total depends on your own abilities and hard work.”

Yu Shengshi laughed and patted Long Yu’ shoulder: “The sect indeed gives you a calm and stable cultivation environment, but making its good use is something only a few can do.”

Long Yu was surprised to see this middle-aged elder openly using foul language.

Long Yu was quite impressed to see that Elder Yu Shengshi did not adhere to convention and was quite a friendly elder.

Unfortunately, he did not get a chance to see the practice match between these two elders!

“Well, if you cultivate here for a long time, you get to see these practice matches from time to time.”

Bu Xing smiled: “Now come with me, we will first find a bamboo room for you to rest. On the way to leading a pious life and cultivation, it all comes down to simplicity. As for breakfast, lunch, and dinner, we’ll send someone over.”

“En.”

Long Yu nodded then followed after Bu Xing.

The elders of Zhentian Sect got a new topic to chat on, yes, a new Zhenling disciple called Long Yu!

Only a few months had passed since Long Yu joined Zhentian Sect, but his cultivation level increased at a sky-rocketing speed. Now, the elders had no choice but to pay attention to him.

Long Yu causally looked at this simple looking bamboo house and proceeded to take rest.

The bamboo furnishings inside the bamboo house looked very simple with a small bamboo couch, a bamboo table, a bamboo chair, but nothing else was there in the room.

The dinner was also simple and delivered especially by a law-enforcement elder.

A law-enforcement elder was like a hard-and-fast existence for ordinary disciples.

However, for core disciples, Zhenling disciples and the elders of Elder Court, these so-called law-enforcement elders were basically nothing!

After dinner, a moonlit night greeted the bamboo forest.

Everyone preferred staying in their bamboo house to either rest or cultivate, so there was silence in the bamboo forest.

At night, the temperature went below freezing point in the bamboo forest, enough to freeze ordinary people to death.

However, that didn't affect experts of Zhenling realm.

"It was tough to practice intoxicated hell but once practiced to the peak level, its power is now enough to kill enemies almost instantly."

"The practice method is similar for Awakening Palm samsara and only a Zhenling realm expert can practice it. And it's hard to believe that by using this move, I can actually impact and infiltrate the reincarnations of an opponent."

The explanation regarding the impact on an opponent's reincarnations was engraved in the memories of Nine Hidden Dragon Mark, but Long Yu did not know this move's specific effects.

“Perhaps, I must find a test subject in order to learn its effects..... Of course, that will have to wait till I successfully practice awakening palm samsara.”

Long Yu thought and started following the steps recorded in Nine Hidden Dragon Mark’s memories, he began to circulate Xuan qi within his body in a certain route in order to invoke awakening palm samsara.

As soon as Xuan qi began to circulate in his meridians, he felt a very strange power surging within his body.

“Is this the intended path of reincarnation forces? But how can I infiltrate an opponent’s reincarnation and what would happen if I actually succeed in doing so?”

Long Yu was quite curious to know the exact impact of this technique on an opponent.

But now was not the time to be curious. He must first reach the beginner level of this technique and then he would need to find a test subject!

However, Long Yu soon realized that he had underestimated the difficulty of practicing this technique.

It was actually a best-grade spirit level martial skill!

One must know that there wasn’t a single best-grade spirit level skill in the entire Zhentian Sect, and to be honest, there were extremely few skills like that in the entire Tang State!

So one could imagine the might of this technique as well as the difficulty it would pose in front of a practitioner.

Long Yu practiced all night and continued until sunrise. He stopped when he heard someone knocking on the door.

“Come in.”

Long Yu said.

The bamboo door was pushed open and a tender figure clad in a blue robe appeared in Long Yu’s sight.

Liao Lele!

Long Yu was surprised to see her. How did she find out about his whereabouts?

Liao Lele leaned against the door, curled her lips and asked: “What happened, you don’t seem particularly happy to see me?”

“Skip that and come to the point, what brings you here?”

Long Yu asked directly.

Disciples who had not yet stepped into Zhenling realm were not allowed to enter this bamboo grove. Then how did she manage to come here? Did she get a special permit from Old White?

“I have come to deliver food. What? You don’t want?”

Liao Lele laughed loudly: “Oh right, my teacher has sent this for you, here take it.”

She placed a tray filled with dumplings on the bamboo table then took out a porcelain bottle which seemed to contain immortality pills and tossed it toward him.

“What is this?”

Long Yu pointed to that small porcelain bottle and asked.

“You will find out once you open it.”

Liao Lele placed it on the bamboo table, turned around and waved her hand: “I will leave now. You will see me again at noon.”

“Again?”

Long Yu seemed somewhat shocked.

“I am going to deliver three meals to you every day. Get mentally prepared for that.”

Liao Lele proudly smiled, then closed the door abruptly and bounced away.

“.....”

Long Yu wondered; didn’t he choose to practice here because his intention was to stay away from this energetic girl.

He never expected her to find him here!

But, he did not know that just when she turned around, a sad look had appeared in her beautiful eyes.

She was not a fool. How could she not know that Long Yu came to this bamboo forest to stay away from her?

At this time, she did not know what to do. She did not want him to get away from her, rather she wanted to get close to Long Yu, a little closer, a little closer, a little closer again until these distances between the two vanished forever....

(Mystique – Reminds me of the song ‘These distances a.k.a Yeh Doorian’)

Long Yu looked at the dumplings for a moment. Then, he picked up the small bottle, opened the lid and a strong fragrance of medicine immediately spread throughout the room.

“This is a spiritual level immortality pill!”

Long Yu raised his eyebrows.

He originally speculated that this small bottle contained immortality pills, but he never expected to find a spiritual level immortality pill inside it!

He knew that a spiritual level immortality pill’s value was equivalent to the value of a spiritual level battle weapon.

“It is actually a top-grade spiritual level immortality pill.”

A hesitant look invaded his face when he poured out the pill on his palm.

He was well aware of this pill being priceless.

It was certainly going to have a strong effect on the cultivation level of a cultivator.

But, why would Old White give him such a priceless item without any explanation whatsoever?

Wait, did Old White really order this happy-go-lucky girl to come here?

Long Yu did not know!

He continued to ponder while grasping a round shape pill in his palm. Although

it was not heavy, its true significance was quite heavy.

Chapter 119 Assassination attempt at night

After thinking about it for some time, Long Yu eventually decided to consume this immortality pill.

In spite of his initial bitter experiences in Zhentian Sect, he had come to accept the new turn of events that had turned into a valuable resource for the sect. Not to mention, he deeply trusted Old White and Liao Lele!

Thinking of this, he took out another small porcelain bottle from his bosom.

“This condensate panacea can improve the success rate of a breakthrough by 10% while stepping into Zhenling realm.”

Long Yu looked at the immortality pill contained in a small porcelain bottle which he got as a reward from Baiyun Zong for saving Elder Yu’s life.

He did not feel a need to use panacea while congealing Zhenling.

“When the next time she comes over, I will give this condensate panacea to her.”

Long Yu made up his mind then swallowed the spirit level immortality pill. The name inscribed on the bottle said ‘Snow Pill’

A Snow pill was refined by adding a variety of herbs to the essence and blood of northern snow demon beast.

During the refining of this pill, the blood and essence of snow demon beast would fully convert into Lingqi and combine with a variety of herbs, allowing maximization of drug’s efficacy.

Certainly, a warrior’s absorption capability naturally depended on his own talent.

For example, Long Yu’s absorption capability without the help of Nine Hidden Dragon Mark should be around 30%. Not to mention it usually rose up to 100% with the help of the mark, helping him in fully absorbing the essence of immortality pills! In fact, talking in terms of his original absorption capability, he would need 3 spirit level immortality pills to absorb the amount of essence that he would otherwise absorb from just 1 spirit level immortality pill with the help

of the mark!

Now, one could imagine the enormous significance of Nine Hidden Dragon Mark.

The essence of Snow Pill transformed into Lingqi and quickly spread throughout his meridians, a large part of which was then absorbed and stored in Nine Hidden Dragon Mark.

However, even by completely absorbing the essence of Snow Pill, it should be impossible for Long Yu to step into Zhenling second layer.

Therefore, he decided to absorb only a small part and store the major part of Snow Pill's essence. He basically wanted to save it for future and once he would get his hands on more immortality pills, he would use them all at once for a sure-shot breakthrough.

“Zhenling first layer's strength limit is up to the strength of 1200 fierce horses, but it seems like the present rise in my strength is not enough for a breakthrough to the next layer. Fortunately, I can reach the limit of Zhenling first layer.”

After meditating for a long time, Long Yu finally finished the absorption process and managed to reach the limit of Zhenling first layer.

Afterward, he continued to practice the best-grade spirit level martial skill, awakening palm samsara.

During last night's practice, he was not able to comprehend much about this skill. This indicated that he would have to spend a lot of time to master it.

At noon, Liao Lele visited him again.

Long Yu did not say anything. He just tossed the panacea towards her and continued to practice.

Liao Lele noticed how he ignored her and could only leave with a depressed look on her face.

“He is such a cultivation lunatic.”

Liao Lele thought and closed her eyes as if to engrave his image in her mind.

.....

The practice continued for seven days time and Long Yu was finally able to circulate Xuan qi in his meridians in a certain predefined path in accordance with the cultivation method for awakening palm samsara. It was tough to achieve this and it took time but he finally did it!

This also represented that Long Yu successfully reached the beginner level of this skill!

In order to practice a complex martial skill like this one, it was usually needed to first familiarize oneself with circulation routes of Xuan qi inside the meridians.

When the basic circulation route was established, one would then need to focus on the main circulation route which was certainly much more complex than the basic one. Only after this step, one would grasp the main power of this skill by thoroughly mastering it.

Awakening palm samsara needed to be practiced like this and its practice method was extremely difficult, being much above other martial skills.

Luckily, he had the help of Nine Hidden Dragon Mark since the skill belonged to the mark itself, making things easier for him. This was the reason why he was able to reach the beginner level within 7 days, otherwise, it should have taken much longer.

“Intoxicated hell and Awakening palm samsara, these two skills, when used one after another, can first invade an opponent’s body and consciousness then further infiltrate their reincarnation cycle. When displayed at their best, these two skills can be extremely horrifying.”

(Mystique – Samsara is basically a representation of reincarnation cycle)

Even if he was still at the beginner level of Awakening palm samsara, he could easily try a few moves. He actually felt the power of samsara circulating within his body and if this strange power was used on an opponent, Long Yu did not know what might happen afterward or what would be its effect.

He looked out of the window, it was already dark outside. He decided to stop practicing and go out for a walk.

Obviously, walking was not like practicing and since it was already this late at night, disturbing other people did not seem like a good idea.

“I have been practicing for seven days straight. In that case, I should focus on taking rest tonight and sleep well.”

Long Yu made his decision and lay down on the bamboo bed.

He had only rested for one or two hours in the last 7 days so he immediately entered the dream world.

There was a reign of silence in the bamboo forest which was only being greeted by the moonlight from above and faint cries of insects from below. There was a sense of deep loneliness throughout the bamboo forest.

Suddenly, a shadow flash appeared out of the bamboo forest and went toward Long Yu's bamboo house!

Spear of tornado!

A tornado condensed at the spear tip and went toward Long Yu's bamboo house. The bamboo structure was instantly struck by the concentrated tornado and drilled its way inside, revealing the resting figure of Long Yu to the shadow.

It was certainly now impossible for Long Yu to continue to sleep after such a big noise!

“Who is there!”

Long Yu boldly jumped down from the bed and his gaze fell upon a shadow standing outside. But, a hint of strange color appeared in his eyes.

This shadow seemed to have come to assassinate him then why did he use an attack to destroy the bamboo house, as if to deliberately awaken him.

And, most importantly, Long Yu did not sense any killing intention from this shadow!

“He has not come here to kill me.”

Long Yu momentarily made a judgment.

“Such being the case, I will treat you as a test subject for my new skill.”

The corners of his mouth slightly curled upwards as he suddenly jumped toward the shadow.

Although the martial arts level of the assassin was at Zhenling third layer, there

was no sign of killing intention. Hence, Long Yu dared to fight with this assassin!

Long Yu immediately summoned his Zhentian Sun.

As the rays of Zhentian Sun illuminated the surrounding area, Long Yu was surprised to see a masked man standing in front of him. But right at this moment, the assassin released a tornado from his spear that went toward Long Yu at a breakneck speed!

“Zhentian Sun, repression!”

Long Yu shouted and used the repression of Zhentian domain via sunlight to shatter the tornado in midair!

“Demon Wings!”

Long Yu stimulated the circulation of Xuan qi into the demon wings and two white wings appeared on his back. His whole body instantly blurred, leaving behind an afterimage, as he suddenly appeared behind that masked shadow.

“Awakening palm samsara, transmigration of the proposed road, a fist that infiltrates the reincarnation cycle!”

At a lightning speed, Long Yu’s fist released the power of samsara toward that masked assassin.

Although his fist was blocked by the assassin, but the power of samsara still invaded the assassin’s body.

Buzz!

Long Yu heard the buzzing sound and saw the masked assassin as if stagnate all of a sudden. His martial arts level also dropped down from the third layer to the second layer almost instantly!

Long Yu was stunned when he saw what happened. Awakening palm samsara really went against heaven’s will. How was it possible for such a bizarre skill to exist?

This martial skill could instantly bring Long Yu from a disadvantageous to an advantageous situation.

“The depreciation in opponent’s level is not an illusion, it really happened, now

this assassin at only at Zhenling second layer. But, his level seems to be recovering quickly. So, this phenomenon of depreciation in level can only be maintained for some time..... ”

Long Yu continued to carefully observe the effect of his new skill and soon discovered the limitations of this phenomenon.

But the effect of this skill mainly caused the opponent’s level to fall backward. Was this really the power of reincarnation/samsara?

One could imagine, if the beginner level of skill could cause such an effect then perhaps the perfection level could infiltrate the enemy’s samsara to a greater extent, depreciating their level to such a large extent that they even cease to exist. And then, they might never be able to come back to life!

Of course, this was just a speculation on his part.

Perhaps even after reaching the Realm of Man-Heaven Unity, he might not attain such a power.

“Ha ha! Brother Long Yu, I always knew that you are extremely powerful. What kind of skill is this? It’s too awesome!”

A bold laughter sounded in the area as the masked assassin removed the black cloth from his face, revealing a bright smile on his insolent face!

“It is really you, Brother Bu.”

Long Yu was not at all surprised, smiled and put away the demon wings. He also withdrew the power of samsara.

“How did you know it was me?”

Bu Xing was surprised and could not help but ask.

“First, this bamboo forest is a strictly forbidden area in Zhentian Sect and it’s directly behind Elders Court. It should be nearly impossible for an assassin to silently approach the Elders Court, let alone this place.”

Long Yu explained with a smile: “Second, I did not sense any malice or killing intention from you, meaning that you did not come here to kill me. Finally, even though our fight caused so much noise, none of the elders residing in the nearby bamboo houses came out to examine what was wrong. This indicated that they

already knew about this matter. Now, the identity of the masked man comes down to someone from this sect who knows me and where I live and is also at Zhenling third stage. All these things point at you Brother Bu, our sect's strongest Zhenling disciple."

After explaining things to Bu Xing, Long Yu further said: "Brother Bu, if you wanted to test my strength, we could have openly fought. There was no need to attack like this and you also blew up my shelter, so troublesome."

"Troublesome? In that case, this fellow brother will give his own bamboo house to you."

Bu Xing's face revealed a straightforward smile: "Elders were quite curious to know the extent of your strength so they sent me to test you. Brother Long Yu, I hope you did not mind."

"Rest assured, I'm not so narrow-minded. Moreover, I also used this as an opportunity to test my new skill. And I am quite satisfied from the outcome."

Long Yu said with a smile.

Bu Xing's body shivered when he remembered that scary fist. He could not help but hammer at Long Yu's shoulder with his hand and said: "You boy, that really scared me to death you know. My martial arts level fell down by one level, I was so scared thinking that it was a permanent effect. Thankfully, it only lasted for a short time."

"I did not know about its effects either, actually, you are the first person I used this skill on. Moreover, I have never seen anyone use a skill like this before."

Long Yu said awkwardly.

"Damn, this skill is indeed way too bizarre."

Bu Xing spoke with a dignified look on his face: "Brother Long, you must be sure to never expose this martial skill no matter what, otherwise, it will unnecessarily invite trouble for you. At least until the day you have enough to strength to wipe out all possible dangers."

"En, I know."

Long Yu nodded solemnly.

To be able to temporarily reduce the opponent's cultivation level, this technique was really insane and terrifying. If the rumor about such a type of best-grade spirit level martial skill spread out, it would definitely attract the attention of various forces and bring serious dangers for Long Yu!

Chapter – 120 Withering Yu Guan

The formidable core laws of various sects were considered the foothold of practice for all practitioners.

But powerful martial skills were simply used by various factions and groups to expand their influence. The news about the appearance of such a terrifying martial skill that could reduce the cultivation level of an opponent would definitely make entire Tang State go crazy!

Long Yu's vision was sweeping in all directions. Bu Xing saw this and whispered with a smile: "Do not worry Brother Long, elders will not find out about this trick of yours."

"En."

Long Yu nodded and felt relieved.

Although elders were mostly on his side, but no one could predict the rise of yet another evil guy like Wu Jianxin.

"Yes, since you already are so strong, now I kind of feel relieved in taking you with me."

Bu Xing changed the subject and said.

"Take me with you?"

Long Yu gawked for a moment, did not know what Bu Xing was talking about.

"Ancient Mongolian State has intruded into our Tang State's northern border. Several troops are stationed at the border and many young experts went to the battlefield in order to achieve an establishment of merit by killing the enemy soldiers."

Bu Xing frowned and said: "Moreover, a rumor reached us in the evening that Yu Guan City's Feng Longsong has been captured by Mongolian State some time ago."

Originally, Long Yu wouldn't care much about the Mongolian invasion.

But after hearing this news, his complexion suddenly changed: "Foster father has been captured by Mongolian State?"

“My master, our head, conveyed this message to me, so I am going to have a look. Brother Long, do you want to come with me?”

Bu Xing asked.

“You bet I am.”

Long Yu firmly said.

He initially wanted to practice awakening palm samsara up to Dacheng realm, and in addition, he had also planned to perform a research on Heavenly Lunar Tablet.

But since Feng Longsong was in danger, he certainly wouldn't sit back and do nothing!

“How is Tang State dealing with this situation? What have we done so far in response to the invasion?”

Long Yu inquired.

“Major General Long Ji of the Long clan has led 100,000 experts to the border. It should be easy for them to handle the veterans of Mongolian State army.”

Bu Xing said: “But, Mongolian assassins crossed the border and sneaked inside Yu Guan City to capture your foster father. Yu Guan City is about a thousand miles away from the border, but for them, it is still a vital strategic spot behind the enemy lines. We also found the trail of Mongolian assassin so many experts are now gathered in Yu Guan City.”

“I must immediately go to Yu Guan City.”

Long Yu made the decision.

“This is what I intend to do.”

Bu Xing smiled but then immediately cautioned him: “However, you have to be careful because the details about your past and background have spread everywhere. You may have to face dangers after leaving the premises of Zhentian Sect.”

“No problem, I don't care. Since my foster father is in danger, I am going to save him at any cost.”

Long Yu said with firm determination.

He had already expected that his past would be exposed sooner or later but did not expect it to happen so fast.

There were a lot of people in the top three clans of Tang State, namely Long Clan, Mo Clan and Royal Clan, who wanted him dead!

“Good.”

Bu Xing nodded and said: “Although there is a danger to your life, the point is that you can rest assured because your grandfather is constantly suppressing this matter. Even if someone plans to kill you, they will not dare to do it openly.”

My grandfather?

Long Yu immediately linked several facts in his mind.

His father was born in Long clan and was considered a great figure, then his grandfather was naturally going to be a senior member of the clan!

Long Yu did not know much about Long clan. So far, he had only met one person from his clan; the young royal guard in shining armor whom he saw in Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest.

He was qualified enough to hold the position of a royal princess's personal bodyguard. And his cultivation was comparable to the cultivation of Bu Xing.

Thus, it could be seen that Long clan was a huge and influential clan.

“It doesn't matter who it is, because if they want to deal with me, they will have to answer to Nine Hidden Dragon Mark.”

Long Yu thought as his eyes flashed like a cold sword.

If he really ran into an opponent he could not resist, he would still have Nine Hidden Dragon Mark as his final card. It was something he had inherited from his predecessors and its ancient mysteries were not something he could comprehend by just reaching the first layer of Zhenling realm.

As far as experts of Man-Heaven Unity realm were concerned, they would not even bother to personally come to kill a newbie expert of Zhenling realm like Long Yu.

.....

Next day, early morning.

It was very early in the morning when Liao Lele came to Long Yu's house to deliver dumplings but saw that it was already collapsed and empty with no trace of Long Yu anywhere.

She inquired around only to find out that he was seen going out of Zhentian Sect with Bu Xing.

She stood for a long time beside the collapsed bamboo house.

Her blue robe was floating in the wind while her face revealed an expression which clearly showed that she was overwhelmed by loneliness.....

At this time, Long Yu and Bu Xing were rushing in the direction of Yu Guan City.

They were not riding horses but each was displaying excellent agility and going at an extremely fast speed.

Bu Xing was displaying 'horizon is close' skill and his speed was several times more than the speed of a fierce horse.

Long Yu was simultaneously using Demon Wings and ghost flash to move at a speed which was a bit faster than Bu Xing's!

"Demon Wings is also called Wings of Demon Valley. It is made from the wings of a formidable demon beast that was killed by a human powerhouse. This is the reason why this pair of white wings is called a best-grade spiritual level skill. And once stimulated, it will not just increase your speed but can also allow you to perform short distance glides."

Bu Xing gave some information about this battle weapon to Long Yu on the way: "Unfortunately, the martial array that is engraved on it is damaged, such a pity."

"Is that really the real reason behind its name?"

Long Yu was a bit skeptical about it.

This name didn't sound like the name of a demon beast rather it seemed to belong to a sect's Buddhist law or something.

“Yes, the wings belong to a kind of beast that lives in Heavenly soul demon valley. This beast is said to possess the strength of Zhenling seventh layer.”

Bu Xing further explained with a somewhat dignified look on his face: “Heavenly soul demon valley is situated at the intersection point of three states, namely our Tang State, Ancient Mongolian State and Eastern State. It is ruled by local demon beasts and is home to a variety of indigenous species. Its overall strength and influence are on par with our Tang State.”

Three-state intersection point, Heavenly soul demon valley!

Long Yu silently made a mental note, but just from listening to the information provided by Bu Xing, he had come to know that he was not strong enough to set foot in this so-called valley of death.

However, Long Yu’s heart was more startled by knowing about an expert who was able to kill the owner of these white wings.

They continued to use their respective speed boosting means to rush towards Yu Guan City.

They only spent half-a-day to arrive at Yu Guan City. In fact, this journey should have lasted for at least three days if they rode fierce horses!

They left Zhentian Sect at the time of sunrise and reached Yu Guan City during sunset.

“Let’s go inside and see what’s going on.”

Both Long Yu and Bu Xing simultaneously rushed towards the main gate of Yu Guan City. Long Yu was not tired even while moving as fast as an expert of Zhenling third layer because consumption of Xuan qi was considerably less on his part.

Both of them stopped at the city’s main gate. Long Yu put away the demon wings and concealed it properly.

The duo calmed down for a moment and while maintaining a normal mood, without showing any hesitation or emotion, they entered the city.

Usually, one would find a very lively and peaceful scene in this city, but this time, it was shrouded in a burst of chill and gloomy atmosphere!

In the city, many inns, pubs, and other places were fully occupied by numerous warriors and there were some powerhouses of Zhenling realm among them.

Yu Guan City was not the nearest city from the border, but since the appearance of a Mongolian assassin in the city, it attracted the attention of many warriors. Moreover, the city was said to lie at a key communication center of many cities in the region.

Therefore, warriors from various nearby regions had gathered here to fight with Mongolian intruders. They had already started to form parties to go on missions.

In Tang State, a law stated that whenever a war broke out with a foreign country, anyone, regardless of their status, would receive rich rewards for killing enemy soldiers.

Even if Tang State had already dispatched Major General, Long Ji, and his 100,000 warriors to resist against the Mongolian invasion, these warriors had assembled here in search of rogue enemy soldiers in the nearby regions!

“It will be difficult to find a place to stay.”

Bu Xing looked all around and said with an indifferent smile.

It was already late and even if they wanted to rush to the front lines, tonight they must rest in Yu Guan City. Not to mention, Long Yu would certainly go and inspect the present situation of Feng Clan.

“I suggest, we both go to Feng Clan’s villa. We will certainly find a place to spend the night there.”

Long Yu said and slightly frowned.

Since Feng Longsong was no longer present to defend the members of Feng Clan, it would be a huge tragedy if a conflict occurred between Feng Clan and the newly arrived warriors!

Long Yu could not help but be somewhat anxious. He wanted to go and confirm the safety of his fellow clan members as soon as possible.

“We must hurry up, right now Yu Guan City is in a very volatile and turbulent state and there’s no one to guard Feng Clan.”

Bu Xing narrowed his eyes and looked towards Feng Clan's villa.

He had been to Feng Clan's villa once before and naturally knew its exact location.

Both of them rushed towards the villa, quickly bypassing several streets and houses.

"You two, stop right there!"

Suddenly, Long Yu and Bu Xing heard a loud shout that came from the front and two soldiers, who were dressed in battle armors, blocked their path!

This scene induced a cold feeling in Long Yu's heart.

These two soldiers seemed to be guarding the road leading to Feng Clan's Villa. This was most likely a sign of something bad happening to Feng Clan!

"You two punks dare to stop us?"

Long Yu saw through their cultivations and noticed that they were only at Wudao sixth layer.

In fact, the disparity in levels was so high that the two soldiers were unable to sense the cultivation levels of Long Yu and Bu Xing.

They only knew that their boss was a powerful warrior of Zhenling realm, then there was no need to be scared of these two young guys.

Chapter 121 Feng clan rounded out

Long Yu halted his footsteps and glanced at the two warriors with a fierce look in his eyes.

They were at Wudao sixth layer and were clad in low-grade battle armors. In other words, in a fight with Long Yu, they would not be able to block a single move.

“Stop right there!”

One of the warriors got a bit nervous and shouted to appear fierce while hiding the fear in his heart: “This mansion has been occupied by our boss. He is an expert of Zhenling realm, you two should hurry up and get out of here if you don’t want to die a pitiful death.”

“Bullshit, Demon wings!”

Long Yu’s eyes flashed like a sword and a pair of white wings appeared behind him. His whole body suddenly turned into a streamer of light and rushed forward.

The two warriors did not see what happened. First, their armors were shattered and then both of them were sent flying far away from where they were standing and fell to the ground, each vomiting blood and seemed severely injured!

“Dragon Prance!”

Long Yu did not waste any time and used dragon prance to directly jump into the sky. He was headed towards the Feng clan’s mansion.

He instantly landed at the entrance to the main hall of the mansion!

Bu Xing was far behind but he did not seem in a hurry. He knew that mere country warriors did not pose a threat to a veteran expert like Long Yu.

Bu Xing was more interested in the guy that was secretly hiding in a dark corner not far away from him.

“This guy is staring at Feng mansion, could it be that he has been waiting all along for Long Yu’s arrival?”

Bu Xing narrowed his eyes and went toward that guy!

He had already guessed, now that Long Yu's life background and his past had been exposed, although his grandfather was a big shot and must be pulling strings to keep his grandson safe, however, there were certainly some people who would send assassins to get rid of Long Yu in secret.

Now, he ran into one such assassin.

.....

Inside the Feng mansion, a middle-aged man was sitting on the clan head's seat. He was clad in white clothes and looked like a mild-mannered man. Right now, he was enjoying tea and fruits which were being fed to him by a young guy sitting next to him.

Qiu Jinyou was a fairly famous warrior in the surrounding region and usually concentrated on cultivation, but when he heard about the invasion of Mongolian State, he also rushed to this area to kill enemies and earn rewards in the form of practice resources.

With his strength of Zhenling first layer, he easily gathered hundreds of local warriors and arrived in this city to rest for a few days. This was also a convenient place to teach coordination and teamwork to the warriors.

However, after arriving in Yu Guan City, they could not find an appropriate place to make their foothold!

Just at this time, they heard the news that Feng Clan's head had been kidnapped by a Mongolian assassin and this gave them a very nice opportunity to occupy Feng mansion.

After all, if Feng Longsong was still there then Qiu Jinyou would not dare to occupy Feng mansion, after all, Tang State's national law stipulated that in all of the cities, the clan mansions only belonged to respective clan heads and no one else could occupy them.

But since Feng Longsong was out of the picture, they used the reason of 'protecting Feng Clan mansion in head's absence' to occupy the mansion!

At first, the members of Feng Clan naturally showed a strong resistance but

how could they deal with an expert of Zhenling realm?

Experts of Wudao sixth layer or seventh layer did not stand a chance against an expert of Zhenling realm!

Qiu Jinyou captured the Feng mansion two days ago, and in just two days, he came to appreciate the Quiet practice environment and convenience offered by this mansion.

The members of Feng Clan had been imprisoned in Feng Clan's Martial Court. They were not allowed to go out and were being kept under strict surveillance.

At this time, Qiu Jinyou looked at the young guy sitting next to him and asked: "Oh, I forgot to ask, did our men found the beautiful girl from Feng Clan?"

"We sent more than a dozen men, but until now, we have been unable to find that girl. Perhaps she has already left Yu Guan City."

The young guy said in a somewhat awkward manner.

"What a bunch of losers."

Qiu Jinyou's face sank instantly: "I told you to find her and you were unable to achieve such an easy task, then how will you find Mongolian scouts?"

"Boss, please appease your anger."

The young guy's face was covered in cold sweat. He immediately said: "There are several other beautiful girls in Feng Clan. I will go and pick the best one for you."

Qiu Jinyou snorted loudly: "Fine, pick the most beautiful girl for me, remember, she must be young as it suits my taste."

"Yes, boss."

The young guy turned around to leave.

However, at this moment, a loud earth shaking noise echoed in the hall, followed by everyone seeing a young man dropping from the sky at the entrance of the main hall!

Long Yu finally made an entrance.

"Who are you, kid?"

The warriors standing in the vicinity could not see through his cultivation level and immediately understood that this youth in choroid clothes was very strong, but since their boss was also present there, what was there to be scared of?

“I am your death.”

Long Yu swept a glance and revealed a cold look in his eyes!

“Haha, our death, don’t you see our boss is here? He is an expert of Zhenling realm.”

A warrior began to laugh like a madman, but suddenly, his laughter stopped and his eyeballs stared out in disbelief.

Long Yu used his spear skill, Kill Ten Thousand People, and stabbed right through that warrior’s chest!

“You want to pick a young girl for your boss?”

Long Yu step by step walked toward that young guy who was about to go to Feng Clan’s Martial Court!

Long Yu’s body was exuding a strong killing intention. The warriors felt terror bulging up in their hearts, but then they looked at their boss and found him very calm!

“A brat who has congealed Zhenling, thinks he can do whatever he wants?”

Qiu Jinyou said and looked at Long Yu as if looking at a dead person. He pounded the table and stood up!

Long Yu was too fast and had instantly killed a warrior of Wudao eighth layer. This made the boss very angry!

Although he could sense that this youth, like himself, was also at Zhenling first layer, but he naturally did not expect such a young expert to be a threat for an experienced veteran like himself.

After all, he was 40 years old, and no matter which aspect was taken into considerable, whether it was cultivation time, combat experience and so on, he was obviously going to be better than a youngster!

Long Yu simply did not pay any attention to Qiu Jinyou’s word and glared at

the young guy.

“Prepare yourself!”

Long Yu lifted his spear and killing intention began to condense at its tip!

“Boss, save me!”

The young guy was stunned and tried to quickly step back, but the next moment, he felt a severe pain in his chest.

In an instant, Long Yu arrived in front of him and thrust the spear into his chest, puncturing his heart.

His eyes were wide open and staring in disbelief as he never expected to die like this.

“Bold!”

Qiu Jinyou got much angrier than before!

He did not think that Long Yu would ignore his presence and kill his loyal brother who was at Wudao ninth layer!

“Originally, I was planning to consider giving you a chance and make you follow me as a loyal friend. But now, you have killed my two loyal subordinates. If I do not take your life then how will I show my face to my other subordinates?”

Qiu Jinyou thundered then pulled out a sword and ran toward Long Yu!

“Boss, kill him, show him how powerful we are!”

“This brat has dared to kill our men. Our Boss will certainly give him a brutal death.”

The warriors were cheering for their boss and were eagerly waiting for Long Yu’s brutal death!

However, while facing an attack from Qiu Jinyou, Long Yu did not take any action at all.

Long Yu pointed his spear at him and said: “I throw the same question back at you. Do you think you can do whatever you want just because you have congealed Zhenling?”

As his voice fell down, numerous spear shadows appeared in front of him along with the appearance of Zhentian domain which enveloped everyone in the vicinity.

Everyone present in the hall felt as if a mountain was put on their heads. Warriors of lower level could not hand the insane pressure and kneeled down on the ground, while some lost consciousness!

Even Qiu Jinyou staggered for a second and almost fell to the ground.

“Snake Zhenling!”

Qiu Jinyou shouted and a snake suddenly emerged behind him.

“Flying Snake sword!”

The sword in his hand looked just like a creeping snake as it bypassed the numerous spear shadows and went toward Long Yu.

After setting out his snake spirit, he somehow managed to find a slight crevice in the Zhentian domain, and from this crevice, he directed his flexible sword attack toward Long Yu.

“Kill Ten Thousand People! The concentrated attack on one person is deadly. I would like to see how you stop this attack!”

Long Yu looked like the god of war as he aimed his spear at the incoming attack.

At this moment, the spear contained endless killing intention!

Even if Long Yu had practiced it up to Xiaocheng level, it was still a spiritual level martial skill and could not be taken lightly!

In contrast, Flying snake sword was only a top grade martial skill.

Ordinary country warriors could obtain top grade martial skills at best. They simply had no access to spiritual level martial skills.

This was because they often did not pass the entrance test of major sects at a young age. So they had to practice on their own in silence.

Without the resources, their cultivation speed was relatively slow, not to mention it was hard for them to obtain good battle weapons and martial skills!

Hence, this Mongolian invasion was a nice opportunity for them to obtain rare items, battle weapons, and martial skills as rewards from the state.

The outcome of a clash between spiritual level martial skill and top grade martial skill was not unexpected.

When all of the warriors were waiting to see how Long Yu would be defeated by their boss, they could not trust their eyes when they saw Long Yu's attack broke Qiu Jinyou's sword, and the very next moment, the heavenly coercion of Zhentian domain completely suppressed him.

"Die!"

Long Yu stabbed with his spear that pierced his lower abdomen instantly, shattering his Dantian in a blink of an eye!

Chapter 122 Withstands great pressure

Long Yu put away his dragon spear.

Qiu Jinyou's white clothes were stained with blood while a fountain of blood was gushing out of his punctured abdomen. He was staring at Long Yu in disbelief.

“Spiritual level.....”

His face contorted in pain as he whispered these two words by putting a lot of effort, but lacked enough strength to speak further.

Long Yu didn't just have a spiritual level battle weapon but also used a spiritual level martial skill on him.

He put so much effort and went through so much pain just to utter these two words, perhaps, because just these two words could define his lifelong dream.

However, instead of coming into his possession as he always dreamt of, these two things became the reason for his death.

As soon as he fell on the ground, all of the warriors were stunned and just could not believe what they just saw.

Only an instant ago, they were booing and cursing Long Yu, but now, there was a pin drop silence in the hall. No one expected to see their boss getting killed like this.

Qiu Jinyou lost his vitality after falling on the ground and soon his snake spirit also dissipated into the air.

Finally, some warriors responded and quickly knelt down on the ground, crying and shouting: “Oh hero, have mercy, please forgive us. We are not friends with Qiu Jinyou. We have nothing to do with him. Please forgive us!”

The sounds of weeping and wailing continued to echo in the hall, the cries for mercy got louder and louder. They knew that if Long Yu decided to not show mercy then they would be massacred without a doubt.

They were scared and uncertain about what might happen, and in the current situation, Long Yu was the actual boss!

However, Long Yu simply did not care about them and turned around to walk toward the Martial Court.

Right now, these weaklings were not a big deal. He was more concerned about confirming the well-being of the members of Feng Clan!

“If I found even a single of my clan members dead then I will certainly slaughter each and every one of you.”

Long Yu thought while exuding terrifying killing intention from his body as he continued to walk toward Feng Clan’s Martial Court!

.....

At this time, four warriors were guarding the entrance to the Martial Court.

However, in the open area situated in front of Martial Court, a young boy of Feng Clan was sitting on the ground with his hands and feet tied up. He was suppressed firmly by two warriors.

He had a tender face and appeared like a 16 years old teenager. He only had cultivation level of Wudao fourth layer.

At this time, those two warriors were firmly holding him tightly, plus a fat man was holding a machete and waiting on one side.

“You three little bastards try to be over smart!”

The fat man waved his machete like a butcher, looked all around, then said: “If you do not come out then I will sever this kid’s head at the count of three. I’d like to see what your decision will be, whether to save this kid or to save yourselves.”

Along with these words, he looked towards the teenager with a firm and resolute look on his face.

“Hao Feng, Xiao Fei, Yu Xin, you guys do not worry about me. Just go, escape from here. Do not even think about coming out, only death awaits us here. At least save your lives!”

The teenager shouted in a determined voice!

Although he was young, his body still contained the hot-blood of Feng Clan. Instead of four people losing their lives meaninglessly, he would prefer sacrificing

his life for the sake of the other three clan members.

In fact, all of the people, who stayed back to form the new Feng Clan with Feng Longsong, were brave warriors and held love and respect for their clan!

Loud shouts and curses sounded from inside the Martial Court. The imprisoned members of Feng Clan were witnessing this horrifying scene and could not help but show their resentments.

“You bandits, let him go!”

“Beasts! Let us out and fight!”

“Everybody, rest assured, Brother Hao Feng will go to Zhentian Sect to inform Brother Long Yu about all this. He will soon come to rescue us all.”

A total of 39 clan members were imprisoned inside the Martial Court but the guarding warriors were all of Wudao ninth layer.

Even the combined strength of all clan members was not enough to deal with these guards!

They were peeking through the windows of Martial Court and were watching the soon to come beheading of the youngest clan member. They could not control the bursts of indignation and uncontrollable anger in their hearts.

“Look at that, so many idiots shouting at the same time.....such a nuisance.”

The fat man spat on the teenager and said: “So you are a righteous kid who would prefer dying but won’t let others save you? Kid, I must say that you are stupid, utterly stupid! Fine then, I will start counting now.....Three!.....Two!”

Just at this time, two boys appeared from behind the Martial Court’s side wall. Both of them were clad in gray robes.

One boy had a grandiose stature and had an appearance of 18 years old. His facial features made him look firm and resolute and also had fierce looking eyes!

The other boy had a thin stature like a monkey. He was extremely agile and there was an inexplicable shine in his eyes, which indicated him being a wise and resourceful guy.

“Stop, we have come out!”

Two teenagers said in unison. Their sudden appearance startled everyone!

“Hao Feng, Xiao Fei!”

A color of surprise appeared on the face of that teenager who looked more worried for his brothers than himself!

However, it was obvious that this was purely a suicidal move!

Both these boys were at Wudao seventh layer and did not stand a chance while facing these heinous warriors!

“They really came out, I must say that you really do have a sense of obligation, or should I say that you two are nothing but morons?”

The fat man smiled cruelly: “You two little punks finally decided to come out but do you actually think that you can save this kid’s life?”

“You’re going back on your words!”

Hao Feng shouted angrily and glared at the fat man: “We have come out so let our little brother go.”

“I said all three of you to come out, where is the third one?”

The fat man smiled and disdainfully looked at the two boys: “Where did that girl go? Our boss has been looking for her.”

“That Qiu Jinyou wants to have our Yu Xin? Well, he can go to hell for all I care!”

Xiao Fei’s eyes revealed a disgusted look as he further said: “Our brave Yu Xin is going to Zhentian Sect to call back our Brother Long Yu. When he comes back, he will teach your boss a lesson. I dare you to hurt any one of us and you will see the consequences. Say, do you accept the dare or not?”

“Brats, do you think you can fool me?”

The fat butcher said in a vicious manner: “It doesn’t matter whether you call Long Yu (Royal Dragon) or She Yu (Royal Snake), I will chop them into pieces like I am going to chop you brats.”

The two boys’ complexions suddenly paled.

They never planned to fight with these warriors, their plan was to escape and

bring help to save the other clan members. Such a turn of events was unexpected and basically caught them off guard. The new Feng Clan lacked enough strength to show resistance to these guys, especially in the absence of Feng Longsong and Long Yu.

That fateful day when Long Yu had single-handedly defeated the head of three strongest clans of Yu Guan City, they had taken a vow to put their lives on the line to establish a new Feng Clan.

They just could not forget how big of an inspiration Long Yu was for them!

However, when they sent Yu Xin to Zhentian Sect to inform Long Yu about this incident, they actually lacked confidence whether Long Yu would be able to deal with an expert of Zhenling realm.

Anyway, both of them seemed prepared and knew that they wouldn't be alive to once again witness Long Yu in battle!

The determination was clearly apparent in their eyes.

No matter what, they had decided that as long as there was life in their bodies, they would not allow anyone from their clan to die!

“Let's kill them!”

The two boys immediately condensed Xuan qi in their meridians and attacked the fat man from two different directions!

“Overconfidence is a bitch, don't you know that?”

The fat butcher's face revealed a hideous look as Xuan qi instantly condensed at the tip of his machete.

He was at Wudao ninth layer so why would he be afraid of two brats of Wudao seventh layer?

However, while he was about to attack with his machete, suddenly, a scary suppression force dropped down from the sky and stunned him.

“Zhentian domain, suppression!”

Long Yu's voice sounded from a fairly nearby place. His choroid figure suddenly appeared not far from there and could be seen gradually stepping toward the

Martial Court.

He was naturally furious when he saw this dramatic scene happening to his people.

However, he did not immediately behead the enemies and decided to wait and see how these young boys would act in a critical situation. He wanted to see what was hidden deep inside their hearts. Was it courage or cowardice?

He wanted to see whether they would really risk their lives for the clan?

It turned out that these boys were very brave and held strong moral values and love for their clan!

This did not let him down.

The new Feng Clan was nothing like the previous one. The new Feng Clan was made up of budding good talents who knew righteousness!

Just when the fat man was about to attack with his machete, Long Yu used Zhentian domain to envelop all of the enemies in the area.

The warriors suddenly felt helpless as they were completely paralyzed!

“What happened?”

Their faces were covered in cold sweat as they could not withstand the powerful coercion. This was really a scary feeling of being helpless and defenseless.

They turned their heads only to see Long Yu coming toward them. He was at the center of this domain of coercion and everything within this domain was in his control.

Long Yu’s voice was like beautiful music for the members of Feng Clan. It took only a moment to spread happiness among the clan members. Yes, Long Yu was here to save them.

This was like the homecoming of their hero!

“There are so many warriors of Wudao ninth layer, even Brother Long Yu may face trouble dealing with all of them at once. Xiao Fei, let’s pin down this fatty.”

Hao Feng said in a low voice and looked into Xiao Fei’s eyes only to confirm

that he was also thinking the same thing.

Such being the case, there was no stopping them!

Hao Feng did not show any sign of hesitation and used a top grade martial skill to launch a kick on the fat man!

Both of them worked as a team to perform this attack. Hao Feng launched a kick on the fat man, but when the fat man would try to block or evade the kick then Xiao Fei would use this opportunity to look for an opening and give a fatal blow.

But, Hao Feng discovered that the fat man was actually motionless and his face was covered in sweat. There was also a clear look of panic and terror on his face.

What happened?

The two boys did not know that Long Yu had already cast out Zhentian domain. And it was so terrifying that no warrior in his domain could move even a bit unless Long Yu allowed them to!

Their attacks bombardment heavily on the fat man's body and the overall strength contained in this joint attack reached up to 100,000 Jin. The fat man spouted a mouthful of blood and was sent flying high into the sky!

The circulation of Xuan qi had already stopped in the fat man's meridians under the effect of suppression, so there was no way he could protect himself from the serious damages done by the attacks performed by the two boys!

Chapter 123 Feng Clan's three heroes

Hao Feng and Xiao Fei's joint attack defeated the fat butcher in one fell swoop. The scene stunned everyone present there! This was simply unexpected.

Two teenagers of Wudao seventh layer were able to beat a veteran expert of Wudao ninth layer?

This was just incredible!

They, of course, did not know that the fat man had already been rendered powerless by Long Yu. He had no strength left in his body to show resistance or defend himself.

Moreover, the other warriors were also in a similar state!

"I am back, you are all safe now."

Long Yu entered the field with a burning sun behind him. In an instant, all members of Feng Clan were dumbfounded and could not believe what they just saw!

Zhenling, this was Zhenling!

This was enough to send a wave of excitement among the clan members.

Brother Long Yu was an expert of Zhenling realm then could it be that the fat butcher was actually suppressed by him?

"These warriors are under my suppression effect. You all are free to decide their fates."

Long Yu's Zhentian Sun was a bigger shock for those warriors. They knew that something was wrong when they suddenly experienced mighty suppression, but now they knew what exactly happened and who did it.

They immediately wanted to beg for mercy, but under coercion of Zhentian Sun, they could not even open their mouths to beg!

"Kill them."

The thin and astute teenager was the first to shout, took one step forward and picked up the fat man's machete and used it to cut off the ropes!

Although he was young, his rage and decisive killing intention was visible to all. He was smart enough to know that they could not forgive these people no matter what.

Like Hao Feng and Xiao Fei, he acted without any hesitation.

He approached the two warriors who had tied him down and kicked them in the lower abdomen one by one. The several thousand Jin of strength present in his kicks were enough to shatter their Dantians.

As far as the guards were concerned, they were crippled by the other clan members then tied them up together and thrown in the open field that was situated in front of the Martial Court.

It took Long Yu just an instant to reverse the situation in favor of Feng Clan!

The cruelest among these warriors was the fat man so they beheaded him and the remaining warriors were just crippled and tied up.

After confirming that the situation was under control, Long Yu called back Zhentian Sun inside his Dantian.

Now he was able to precisely control the scope of Zhentian domain by manipulating the sunlight of Zhentian Sun. That was how it only affected the enemies and not his own people.

However, the manipulation of sunlight required more consumption of Xuan qi, but since he was at Zhenling first layer, the amount of Xuan qi in his meridians was several times more than that of an expert of Wudao ninth layer.

“Brother Long Yu, their boss is called Qiu Jinyou and he is also an expert of Zhenling realm.”

Hao Feng hastily arrived in front of Long Yu and said.

“His Zhenling is a serpent! Brother Long Yu, please be careful when you fight with him.”

A look of worry and concern appeared in his eyes.

“Ha ha, relax.”

Long Yu felt warm in his heart when he saw them so concerned about him. He

could not help laughing out loud: “I have already taken care of him. He is dead, which means Feng mansion is ours again.”

As his voice fell, a joyful expression spread across their faces.

Qiu Jinyou had been killed by Brother Long Yu! This came as a pleasant surprise for the members of Feng Clan.

They felt that Long Yu was really worthy of being a genius of Zhentian Sect. He not only killed an expert of Zhenling first layer but also performed a flawless sneak attack on the warriors. All this was proof of his talent as a martial artist who was not only skilled in the art of assassination but also possessed incredible strength!

“Xiao Fei, you will tell me what all things happened in Feng mansion before and after the arrival of Qiu Jinyou and his men.”

Now that the crisis was lifted, Long Yu impatiently wanted to confirm that news that he received about Feng Longsong’s kidnapping.

Xiao Fei nodded and quickly explaining everything from beginning to end.

In the beginning, the new Feng Clan was leading a prosperous life under the leadership of Feng Longsong. The clan had a total of 42 juniors and they were progressing very fast since there were a lot of immortality pills and battle weapons stored in the stock of Feng Clan, and Feng Longsong distributed them among these 42 juniors for their fast growth.

As a result, Hao Feng, Xiao Fei and Yu Xin, the three most talented juniors were finally able to step into Wudao seventh layer and became the three heroes of Feng Clan.

Moreover, the remaining juniors also had successive breakthroughs and the overall strength of Feng Clan soon increased.

Unfortunately, the happy days did not last long.

Three days ago, a Mongolian assassin broke into the room of Feng Longsong and kidnapped him. Even if Hao Feng and the two heroes saw it happening, they simply did not have the ability to stop it!

Xiao Fei was the only one who exchanged blows with the assassin but was not

strong enough to win. According to Xiao Fei, the assassin was probably at a level higher than Zhenling first layer.

After Feng Longsong was taken away, the three heroes discussed what measures they must take to safeguard the clan. They also decided to send a message to Zhentian Sect to inform Long Yu about this incident.

But before they could send the message, Qiu Jinyou led a large group of warriors and broke into the Feng Clan's residence!

The members of Feng Clan certainly did not stand a chance against an expert of Zhenling realm. Soon, all of them were captured and imprisoned inside the Martial Court.

During this period, Qiu Jinyou spotted a cute girl named Yu Xin and wanted to defile her but Hao Feng and Xiao Fei naturally did not let that happen.

The three heroes of the Feng Clan waited for an opportunity and escaped. Afterward, the three of them mutually decided to send Yu Xin to Zhentian Sect.

Unfortunately, Long Yu did not remember seeing any young girl along the way. Anyway, he did not remember her appearance.....

Hao Feng and Xiao Fei decided to stay hidden in the vicinity of Feng mansion and wait for an opportunity to rescue other clan members.

Unfortunately, Yu Xin did not know that her clan had already been rescued by Long Yu.

"Everybody, stay calm, Yu Xin'll be fine."

Long Yu attempted to calm them down.

These days, Tang State was calm and steady due to the mobilization of state soldiers against Mongolian intrusion. The appearance of a rogue group of warriors could be called a rare and exceptional case.

Since there was no enmity between Zhentian Sect and Feng Clan, so she should not be in any danger.

So long as she managed to safely reach Zhentian Sect; Old White and Old Black would surely step forward to protect her once she would reveal that she came looking for Long Yu.

It usually took nearly three days to reach Zhentian Sect from Yu Guan City. Since three days had already passed since she escaped from Feng Clan, she should probably have already reached there.

“May I go with Xiao Fei to look for her and confirm her safety?”

Hao Feng looked at Long Yu asked in a respectful manner.

“En.”

Long Yu nodded. Even he himself thought that confirming her safety was a top priority, otherwise, everyone would remain worried and distracted. However, suddenly, the sound of a strange laughter sounded and caught everyone’s attention.

“Haha, no need to go looking for her, this letter has all the answers.”

Long Yu heard Bu Xing’s voice and turned back.

He saw Bu Xing holding a letter in his hand while there was a strange smile hanging on his face.

“Brother Bu, where were you all this time?”

Long Yu asked.

“Dealing with a messenger, well it does not matter, forget that and listen to this. This letter is addressed to you, it seems like the pigeon must have dropped it near the entrance to the main hall. I found it lying there and got it for you.”

Bu Xing said and tossed it toward Long Yu.

Long Yu caught it and saw the sender’s name. It was actually sent by Yu Xin!

The letter was addressed to his name as ‘Brother Long Yu’.

Long Yu was now relieved as this was a clear indication that she had already reached Zhentian Sect, otherwise, how else would she come to know that Long Yu was in Feng Clan’s mansion.

He opened the letter and quickly skimmed through the contents.

It turned out that she reached Zhentian Sect in the afternoon and since she said that she was looking for Long Yu, therefore she was allowed to meet Old Black, Old White as well as Liao Lele.

Of course, they already knew that Long Yu left for Yu Guan City and told her about it, which came as an instant relief for her.

If Long Yu had gone to Yu Guan City then he would definitely resolve Feng Clan's crisis.

Then, Old White actually saw the alchemical talent of Yu Xin and offered her to become his disciple!

She was hesitant and did not know what to do, so she wrote this letter and sent it to Long Yu, requesting him to help her make a decision.

"Yu Xin."

Long Yu began to assess her talent, though he was not much impressed. She was 16 years old but was only at Wudao seventh layer. She was talented but obviously not comparable to a rare genius like Feng Yao.

But, since Old White was impressed by her talent for alchemy, this meant that she could suddenly become extraordinary.

"If the new Feng Clan really wants to grow strong and self-sufficient in the future then they would need a good alchemy master. Under Old White's guidance, she would definitely become an extraordinary alchemical master."

Long Yu made the decision, prepared a reply in writing and suggested her to take Old White as her mentor.

"Brother Long Yu, is this Yu Xin's letter?"

Hao Feng was eagerly waiting for Long Yu to open up the envelope and could not help but ask anxiously.

"Yes."

Long Yu nodded with a smile: "She has safely reached Zhentian Sect. An elder thinks that she has a talent for alchemy and would like to receive her as a disciple."

"What?"

Hao Feng slightly curled up his lips and said: "What if this elder has ulterior motives? What if he is taking her in as a disciple because he is up to no good?"

“Nonsense, don’t be stupid.”

Long Yu glared at him: “Old White is a senior elder and I respect him very much. He is the only alchemy master in Zhentian Sect.”

“Well, since Brother Long Yu says so, now I feel relieved.”

Xiao Fei put on a long face and said: “But as the matter stands, when can we see her again?”

Although Hao Feng did not say anything, the expression on his face revealed the sense of loss that he was experiencing right now.

The three of them were always together as the three heroes of Feng Clan. So, of course, they would feel a bit lonely without her, especially because they did not get a proper chance to say goodbye.

“As long as you all are alive and kicking, you will always get an opportunity to say goodbye.”

Long Yu said with a smile.

Bu Xing looked around, trying to assess the members of new Feng Clan, then turned toward Long Yu and suggested: “All these juniors are talented martial artists. Their qualifications are more than enough to help them enter Zhentian Sect. Since staying in Yu Guan City can be extremely dangerous because we cannot stay here for long to protect them. Why don’t we send them to Zhentian Sect? Then their security is guaranteed.”

This guy really came up with a smart plan to obtain such a powerful group of talented teenagers. Their contribution to Zhentian Sect would be tremendous in the future, especially since they were related to Long Yu, a very loyal disciple of Zhentian Sect!

Chapter 124 Snow Tang Mountain Pass

In order to join Zhentian Sect, the entrance test required an examinee to successfully climb the Zhentian Canyon, with a condition that their age must be no more than 18.

Almost all of the 42 junior members of new Feng Clan could achieve this condition, except two members who were already more than 18 years old and did not seem to qualify to take the entrance test.

However, these two youngsters had already reached Wudao sixth layer. It was also clear that these two must have at least reached Wudao fourth layer when they were still under 18.

In this respect, all juniors of new Feng Clan were eligible to join Zhentian Sect!

There used to be some juniors at Wudao third layer but with the help of Feng Longsong and the clan resources, they had now reached Wudao fourth layer and could easily pass the entrance test of Zhentian Sect.

“Brother Bu said well.”

Long Yu had seen through Bu Xing’s motive but knew that this was the best possible course of action at the moment: “I cannot always stay here. Since my foster father has been captured by a Mongolian assassin, I must act as soon as possible.”

“En, sending them to Zhentian Sect is the best we can do to ensure their safety.”

Hao Feng calmly said: “But there are so many of us. What if we end up causing a nuisance to other disciples of Zhentian Sect by joining in bulk?”

“Don’t worry, I will write a letter of recommendation. Take this letter with you and show it to the senior elders of Zhentian Sect.”

Bu Xing said with a smile: “Also if you do not want to join Zhentian Sect, it does not matter. You can at least temporarily live in Zhentian Sect and continue to cultivate. This way, you can escape this period of turmoil days.”

“Many thanks to senior brother apprentice. I think, temporarily taking shelter

is more than enough.”

Hao Feng gave an earnest nod.

By collectively joining Zhentian Sect, they would certainly have to be bound by the rules and might face restraint. As a result, the new Feng Clan would survive in name only and Hao Feng did not want to see the rise of an identity crisis among his clan members.

However, if they could take shelter in Zhentian Sect for some time, then that would be extremely good.

“En, the final decision lies in your hands.”

Bu Xing smiled.

“I forgot to introduce him. You all can call him Brother Bu.”

Long Yu introduced Bu Xing: “Brother Bu is going to write a letter of recommendation for all of you so that you don’t feel embarrassed in Zhentian Sect. Not to mention, no one will bully you there.”

“Thank you, Brother Bu.”

Xiao Fei and other juniors expressed gratitude towards Bu Xing.

All these juniors wanted to save Feng Longsong but they simply did not have enough strength for the job, so they were going to rely on Long Yu!

Bu Xing’s letter of recommendation was going to make things easier for them in Zhentian Sect. Staying in Yu Guan City was not at all safe for them, plus they wanted to meet Yu Xin as well.

In their hearts, they felt that Brother Bu was definitely a great persona in Zhentian Sect, otherwise, how could he have the right to write a letter of recommendation?

Since the decision was already made, Hao Feng and Xiao Fei decided to hit the road with everyone else immediately.

Bu Xing wrote a letter of recommendation and handed it over to Hao Feng. Afterward, Long Yu said farewell to the young members of Feng Clan and left with Bu Xing.

“Brother Bu, since things are all right here, let’s not rest tonight and head toward Mongolian State now itself. What do you say?”

Long Yu said to Bu Xing.

“En, we should leave immediately without further ado.”

Bu Xing nodded with a dignified look on his face.

“And, I thank you for writing the letter of recommendation for my people.”

Long Yu felt grateful.

“That’s no big deal.”

Bu Xing grinned and said: “By helping them, I am helping Zhentian Sect. I saw a thorough display of righteousness by these juniors. Your juniors are nothing like those typical selfish and greedy disciples we have in our sect. In the future, if Zhentian Sect was in danger then these juniors will not think twice before rushing to help.”

Bu Xing also had ulterior motives behind this. Plus, he was surprised to see how these juniors were willing to sacrifice their own lives for their fellow brothers. It was hard to find such righteous and compassionate martial artists in this world. Bu Xing wanted to befriend these talented and good-hearted youngsters, and if possible, he wanted them to join Zhentian Sect.

“I believe that they will not disappoint you.”

Long Yu also smiled.

They did not stay in Feng mansion and used their respective speed-incrementing means to rush toward the northern front line.

Hanbing Sect was situated thousands of miles away from there while heading north of Yu Guan City.

Hanbing Sect was located in the north and was located closest to Tang mountain pass.

Tang mountain pass connected seven Grand Canyons and was the only gateway to access Ancient Mongolian State.

Ancient Mongolian State would have to mobilize its troops through the seven

Grand Canyons to attack Tang State. So, Major General Long Ji brought a team of warriors to defend the canyons.

Long Yu and Bu Xing continued to travel throughout the night, and along the way, they saw a lot of country warriors who were also headed in the direction of Tang mountain pass. Their motive was to kill enemy soldiers and earn rewards in return.

Long Yu was not at all paying attention to these warriors.

He was most concerned about the safety of his foster father!

Feng Longsong was a former lieutenant in Tang State's army and had killed many soldiers of Mongolian State. So, things could be a lot more intense than expected.

Of course, instead of assassinating him right on the spot, the enemy preferred to capture him alive. This showed that he still had some value in their eyes and this should temporarily ensure his safety.

But that did not mean that he would not suffer intense torture. That was why Long Yu wanted to rescue him as soon as possible!

"Foster father, if they hurt you then your Long Yu is gonna behead each and every one of them."

A vicious look appeared in his eyes along with determination!

Late at night, they marched into a land covered in snow and ice. Hanbing Sect was located in a valley not far from there.

"I heard that you killed a Zhenling disciple of Hanbing Sect during your trip to Ling Clan's villa. Is that true?"

Bu Xing suddenly remembered this rumor he had heard earlier and asked to confirm.

"It's true."

Long Yu did not deny.

"It seems like, at your present strength, you can even deal with experts of Zhenling third layer."

Bu Xing jokingly said.

“Brother Bu is extremely good at cracking jokes. Don’t forget that the gap between us is not small. If we fight then I will absolutely have no chance of winning.”

Long Yu shook his head.

“However, you have that strange technique which temporarily reduces the level of your opponent by one. With the help of this technique, you should be able to beat opponents of Zhenling third layer.”

Bu Xing laughed and said: “Young Long, Major General Long Ji has been put in charge of guarding Tang mountain pass. This man is your cousin and is already at Zhenling fourth layer. And, he has also congealed a spirit entity.”

Major General Long Ji, Zhenling fourth layer!

“I see.”

Long Yu replied but wasn’t affected by this news.

“When we arrive at Tang mountain pass and if he tries to make things difficult for you. You’d better not say anything.”

Bu Xing persuaded him: “We will follow his commands and that’s how we will get a chance to fight and kill the enemy, meanwhile, we will also look for the whereabouts of your foster father.”

“Seems like a nice plan to me.”

Long Yu nodded but also thought in his heart; would this Long Ji really create obstacles for him?

He suddenly remembered the youth in metal armor whom he met in Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest.

That guy’s attitude was not all friendly and this kind of indicated that perhaps the members of Long Clan would never accept him as their own!

Perhaps, only his grandfather was willing to protect him.

All in all, he just needed to wait until they would reach Tang mountain pass, then things would eventually become clear!

Long Yu did not ponder much on this topic and stimulated his Demon Wings to accelerate. At the same time, he also felt the power of half chunk of Heavenly Lunar Tablet.

“Lunar qi seems to represent some kind of world law which is similar to the world law of suppression. And perhaps it’s much more potent than Zhentian tactics.”

Long Yu thought, but unfortunately, he had not yet gotten a chance to comprehend the lunar tablet to get to know more about it.

On the way, Long Yu began to hear wails of some kind of demon bird being transmitting from the wings. He could sense that the demon bird was not willing to cooperate with him as he was trying to push the wings to its limits in order to accelerate. These wailing sounds were making it difficult for him to concentrate.

“If battle weapons develop resonance with you then you can bring out their best potential. But unfortunately, the situation is quite opposite in the case of these wings.”

Long Yu was quite disappointed because these wings were made from the feathers of a demon beast that contained hatred for human beings.

This was going to make it almost impossible for Long Yu to set up a resonance with his Demon Wings!

They were going deeper into this snowy land.

Ancient Mongolian State was located in the northern parts of Tang State and this region was covered in snow and ice all year round. That was why Mongolian State always sent its troops to invade Tang State in order to occupy its fertile land.

Finally, snow covered mountains welcomed the two and Tang mountain pass appeared in front of them.

This was like an endless continuation of city walls, with hills on both sides and the valley eventually leading to the seven Grand Canyons towards the Ancient Mongolian State. Major General Long Ji and his 100,000 men were stationed in the Tang mountain pass!

Tang State's military force consisted of martial artists who were at least at Wudao fifth layer. However, soldiers of fifth and sixth level could only act as part of investigation teams or advance teams.

The real main force consisted of only those soldiers who were capable of assigning away Xuan qi.

Soldiers of Wudao seventh layer formed the backbone of military force. Those at Wudao eighth layer were made platoon leaders, and those at Wudao ninth layer were made team captains.

As far as Zhenling level soldiers were concerned, their status was equivalent to that of generals.

A soldier at Zhenling first layer was called Junior General; a soldier at Zhenling second layer was called Deputy General; a soldier at Zhenling third layer was called Senior General.

Long Ji was at Zhenling fourth layer but consider his young age, he was therefore titled as 'Major General'!

Long Yu and Bu Xing joined Major General Long Ji's troops as reinforcements. They portrayed themselves as one of the several warriors who had come to participate in this war. Of course, they also saw Long Ji standing on the frontline.

In this bright world full of ice and snow, they suddenly saw several hundred feet tall gates. These gates were called Tang Mountain Pass Gates.

At this time, hundreds of thousands of warriors were standing near these gates, all eager to enter the Tang mountain pass and slaughter enemies.

However, these people were actually blocked outside Tang mountain pass!

"They are here to help then why not let them go in?"

Long Yu looked at these warriors gathered near the Tang Mountain Pass gate and could not help but wonder.

"Perhaps Long Ji is afraid that so many warriors might disrupt military discipline. As we can see now that the war is not yet intense, otherwise, they would have opened the door a long time ago and must have used these country warriors as cannon fodder."

Bu Xing narrowed his eyes and said.

Walking in the snow, they soon arrived near the Tang Mountain Pass Gates.

The warriors noticed that these two youngsters were at Zhenling realm and as Long Yu and Bu Xing approached the group of warriors, they dispersed and made way for them. No one dared to stop them or stand in their way.

This was indeed the world where only strong were respected and feared!

Chapter 125 Major General Long Ji

As Long Yu and Bu Xing approached the group of warriors standing outside the gate, they dispersed and made way for the two. No one dared to stop them or stand in their way.

However, a middle-aged man dressed in fur coat stepped forward and arrived next to Long Yu and Bu Xing.

“You two gentlemen want to enter Tang Mountain Pass to fight the Mongolian invaders?”

That middle-aged man’s voice contained a trace of dignity, coupled with his eyes which revealed perseverance. One could see that he was a tough guy.

“You are?”

Bu Xing stopped and asked aloud.

“My name is Pond Snow.”

The middle-aged man smiled and replied: “Everybody here has elected me as their temporary leader, but it is such a pity that Major General won’t let us participate in war. It looks like you two little brothers have extraordinary cultivation. Are you core disciples of some major sect? I do not know whether that dragon general will listen, but can you two try and talk to him to allow these passionate men to fight with the enemy?”

(Mystique: Long = Dragon)

“Well, I’m afraid we cannot help you with that.”

Bu Xing shook his head.

Major General Long Ji would never take them seriously.

Long Ji had a valid strategic reason to prevent these warriors from going on the frontlines, so Bu Xing did not have the slightest chance of convincing him otherwise.

In fact, if the sovereign of Zhentian Sect was to come and talk to him, even he would be unable to change Long Ji’s mind.

“Such being the case, pardon me for disturbing you two.”

Pond Snow’s face revealed a disappointed look as he stepped aside and made way for Long Yu and Bu Xing.

Long Yu was carefully observing that middle-aged man. Even though his name was very feminine, but his prestige was obvious from his abilities.

All the warriors, who had gathered there, listened to his orders because he was the strongest among them, being a warrior of Zhenling second layer!

Unfortunately, Tang Mountain Pass gates did not open to let them through and their only option was to wait. Although their cultivation level was enough to protect them from extreme cold weather in the region, such meaningless waiting was making them uncomfortable.

The displeased looks on their faces clearly indicated that they were unhappy and angry. If Pond Snow was not there to manage them then the crowd would have erupted by now.

These people wanted to fight with the enemy, though their main motive was focused on getting rewards, but in the end, they loved their nation and had a strong sense of nationalism!

However, Long Ji did not let them go on battle stage, making it unable for them to vent their anger and strong feelings.

“Brother Long, let’s go.”

Bu Xing continued to walk forward, and after reaching the gate, he shouted: “Zhentian disciples have come to help out!”

As his voice sounded, the gates finally opened a bit.

A small gap opened up between the two gates, apparently only for accommodating Long Yu and Bu Xing. Other warriors were not eligible to enter.

The two passed through the gap between the gates and entered Tang Mountain Pass. The entire crowd of warriors was angry as they desperately wanted to serve their nation but Long Ji was being an obstacle in their path.

“This Major General Long Ji clearly does not want us to snatch the merit. That is why he is not allowing us to enter.”

“Not only that, you see, they opened the gates only for Zhentian Sect’s core disciples. This is truly infuriating!”

“If this continues, we will not need the enemy to attack and capture our nation because Long Ji’s actions will surely start a civil strife in Tang State.”

Warriors were whispering among themselves because no one would dare to speak loudly under the control of Pond Snow.

After all, these words could easily cause a great deal of trouble for all!

.....

“Is this Long Ji trying to demonstrate his authority to these men?”

Long Yu narrowed his eyes and asked.

The gates opened for only two people when others were eagerly waiting for a long time. It was absolutely an insult!

“Perhaps he is.”

Bu Xing replied. Being the strongest disciple of Zhentian Sect, he was naturally unhappy about Long Ji’s rude actions!

However, one must not forget that Long Ji was the commander of 100,000 soldiers and also a descendant of famous Dragon Clan. Not to mention, he was an expert of Zhenling fourth layer and had already congealed a spirit entity!

No matter from which perspective one would look at Long Ji, Bu Xing was not his match at all.

From birth itself, Long Ji had enjoyed best cultivation conditions and held a much greater advantage over both Bu Xing and Long Yu, especially because Long Yu started cultivating late!

Bu Xing was pissed at Long Ji but could not be disrespectful to him.

There had been three respected and influential clans in Tang State and Dragon Clan had always been in complete control of the military authority. For example, if Dragon Clan issued an order, it could trample flat the entire Zhentian Sect.

After going further into the Tang Mountain Pass, Long Yu looked around and started observing the area.

A long and narrow city was located in the mountain pass, covered in snow and ice. All kinds of defense and offense type equipments were piled up everywhere. This small city was built specially for the army in the time of an attack and had a bleak and chilly atmosphere.

Commander's palace was located near the city gate.

Long Ji was inside the palace and was most likely strategizing to draw out plans for next set of military actions, to be followed by one hundred thousand soldiers.

Now, however, several soldier formations were stationed in the city, indicating that war had not yet begun.

"Come on, let's go meet Long Ji."

Bu Xing moved toward commander's palace.

Long Yu followed after him. On the way, they saw soldiers patrolling the area surrounding the palace with vigilant looks on their faces.

However, after seeing the identity tokens of Zhentian Sect on their waists, they eventually relaxed and stepped aside.

They went straight to the commander's palace and no one stopped them along the way.

Soon, they arrived in the main hall of the commander's palace.

Long Yu took a look inside the hall and saw a youth clad in a golden armor, shouldering a long spear, and chatting with a few military generals, drinking and laughing together, enjoying leisure in the best way possible!

The face of the youth in golden armor looked somewhat similar to Long Yu and naturally was Long Ji!

Long Yu entered the hall and his figure fell into the visions of all military generals, including Long Ji!

"Look, we have got some honored guests here."

Long Ji's proud face revealed a touch of ridicule. It was very obvious that he had figured out Long Yu's identity in one glance!

The three military generals, sitting beside Long Ji, were the experts of Zhenling

third layer and immediately smiled at Long Ji's comment.

“Honored guest? Not necessarily right, I say. More like the child of a traitor.”

A bald general said with disgust and clear disdain spread all over his face. It was apparent that he said so to please Long Ji.

Who would not want to flatter a youth who belonged to the famous Dragon Clan and was the commander of 100,000 soldiers at such a young age? Not to mention, he was a level above all these generals.

In the future, Long Ji was definitely going to become Tang State's top level powerhouse!

“Yes, his father committed treason in the past by collaborating with the enemy and was expelled from Tang State. I am afraid that even his son is up to no good, in my opinion, we must keep an eye on him.”

Another general with fox-like shrewd eyes looked at Long Yu and sneered aloud.

“I never imagined that I would see the great generals of Tang State passing sarcastic comments on a citizen of Tang State. It has really disappointed me as a fellow citizen and true patriot of Tang State.”

At this time, Bu Xing suddenly said as he glared at the three generals.

He really never expected to see the three generals of Tang State sucking up to Long Ji like this.

“Who are you, insolent brat?”

The bald general suddenly got angry, pounded loudly on the table and stood up. He noticed the identity token on Bu Xing's waist and disdainfully said: “What has made the core disciples of Zhentian Sect become so rampant?”

“Rampant? Since when has stating the truth become analogous to being rampant?”

Bu Xing sneered: “It seemed we have disturbed our honorable generals from enjoying their aesthetic pleasure time. Brother Long, let's leave and let them enjoy in peace.”

Then, Bu Xing turned around to leave!

“Wait.”

Long Ji stood up and looked at Bu Xing with great interest: “You are the strongest disciple of Zhentian Sect, Bu Xing. Although you are at Zhenling third layer but you don’t seem far off from congealing your spirit entity.”

Bu Xing glanced at him from the corners of his eyes but did not reply.

He always got annoyed when someone called his full name, even Major General Long Ji was not an exception! Only right now, he lacked strength so his only option was to bear patiently!

“Long Yu, you’re still my younger cousin so let me tell you something.”

Long Ji’s gaze shifted to Long Yu’s body and a faint smile appeared on his face: “In Dragon Clan, an eighteen-year-old boy, who has recently congealed Zhenling, is considered a waste.”

This was Long Ji’s way to bitterly humiliate Long Yu in front of everyone!

But considering Long Yu’s character, he would naturally not remain silent.

“Dragon clan, you say? You see, I do not remember that I am a member of your Dragon clan.”

Long Yu grinned and said: “Since your clan has already expelled me, I, Long Yu, will never have any relationship with your clan in the future. The very idea is ridiculous and out of the question.”

“I am meeting you for the first time and it is intriguing because no one ever has made such a statement about Dragon Clan, interesting, very interesting.”

Long Ji was smiling but was giving a scornful look to Long Yu at the same time.

Long Ji thought, who did this boy think he was? People would laugh if they heard that he did not want to have a relationship with Dragon Clan!

“Interesting, indeed, it has to be interesting.”

Long Yu indifferently said: “This world is extremely big and interesting, but I presume that you have never been out of Tang State to see for yourself, that’s why you are short-sighted and think that everyone should honor Dragon clan

and keep ties with it.”

Long Yu’s reply was brutal in a way and basically placed the truth in front of Long Ji!

For Long Yu, it went without saying that the origin of Nine Hidden Dragon Mark was absolutely beyond the level of Tang State. Even his mother belonged to an unmatched powerful clan that was supposed to be beyond the scope of Tang State, let alone Dragon clan.

Trivial clans of Tang State, including Dragon clan, were nothing in Long Yu’s eyes!

He just needed time to grow and surpass Long Ji and other powerhouses of Tang State.

“You!”

Long Ji was furious at this as he did not expect to hear things against himself!

Of course, he also knew that Long Yu’s mother belonged to a tyrannical clan, far beyond the level of Dragon clan.

However, Long Ji did not think that his mother’s clan would ever recognize him!

The anger that had suddenly appeared in his eyes immediately restored to normal.

Although he hated Long Yu, but on the surface, he wanted to maintain a cool attitude, after all, he was the commander of 100,000 soldiers. He couldn’t possibly kill a person who had willingly come to serve the nation? Any unjust act on his part could hurt his reputation.

He must get rid of Long Yu in secret!

Long Ji decided to not let this mess escalate and changed the topic!

“Well, since the two of you have come to defend Tang State, you will temporarily act as my soldiers.”

Long Ji waved his hand in a commanding manner: “If war breaks out, I expect you two to obey my orders!”

“That is natural, but in the meantime, I would like to ask a question.”

Long Yu stared at Long Ji and asked: “Major General, you are so busy drinking and enjoying with your generals as if there are no urgent things to do. Such being the case, I want to ask you, have you even tried to find the whereabouts of Feng Longsong, a citizen of this nation who has been kidnapped by the enemy? Don’t you realize that it brings shame upon us and our entire Tang State that the enemy got away after kidnapping an ex-general of Tang State? What if they succeed in extracting vital information about our nation from him? You should understand the gravity of situation and act as soon as possible, not for me, not for Dragon clan but for Tang State’s honor and security.”

Long Ji was left stunned because he really hadn’t sent people to rescue Feng Longsong!

Chapter – 126 Enters the battlefield

Just from one look, Long Yu could tell that Long Ji did not care about Feng Longsong's safety!

"Three days ago, my foster father, Feng Longsong, was seized by a Mongolian assassin. Does our Major General not know about this?"

Long Yu further interrogated.

"I naturally know what happened."

Long Ji gawked for a moment and immediately responded but then a disdainful look appeared in his eyes: "But, Feng Longsong was the vice general of a past rebel. Even if he has been captured by Mongolian State, it's not an important matter."

"Really?"

Long Yu sneered: "Do you know his present cultivation level?"

"That guy's cultivation is not worth mentioning. His strength, at most, is comparable to an expert of Wudao eighth layer."

The bald senior general disdainfully said in a loud voice.

"Then I presume you also know that he was seriously injured while resisting against the allied forces of Mongolian State and Eastern State?"

Long Yu further asked with a cold look in his eyes: "He put his life on the line for the sake of our country and killed enemies. He not only got seriously injured and lost most of his strength but also contracted enmity with foreign enemies, which is probably the reason why he has been kidnapped! But you, the Major General of Tang State, actually say that this is not an important matter?"

Everyone was left speechless by Long Yu's questions!

Both Long Ji and that bald senior general narrowed their eyes as they did not know how to refute Long Yu. Even that fox-eyed senior was in a similarly dumbfounded state!

Because what Long Yu said was an absolute fact!

"Since you do not want to find him, I will go."

Long Yu sneered and was quite astonished by the scene in front of his eyes. These generals of Tang State had really disappointed him.

Initially, he did not have any opinion about Long Ji, after all, he had not yet seen or met the so-called Major General of Tang State and there was a possibility of him being an extremely patriotic and capable soldier of the state.

But now it seemed like besides having a high cultivation level and belonging to the famous Dragon Clan, Long Ji did not have any worth whatsoever. Of course, he was not suitable to be a Major General because he lacked motivation and dedication towards his country and only focused on showing off his spoon-fed strength!

Long Yu turned around and left the hall.

“Brother Long, I will also go with you.”

Bu Xing was also incomparably disappointed in these generals and immediately turned around to follow Long Yu.

“Major General, these two boys are really too presumptuous. They are clearly trying to look down on you!”

The bald senior general furiously said.

“Senior General Yan Shan.”

Long Ji narrowed his eyes while his golden armor was glowing gloriously: “There is no need for us to get angry because that boy has lost his cool and will surely die on the battlefield!”

“Well, what Major general says is totally correct.”

The bald senior general was suddenly relieved as he quickly understood that Long Ji had already made a plan to deal with Long Yu.

Otherwise, even after being humiliated by Long Yu in front of his generals, how could he possibly let him walk away like this?

Since this boy was going to die anyway, there was no point in being angry at a dead person!

.....

Long Yu and Bu Xing walked out of the commander's palace and heard from the patrolling soldiers that enemy scouts had been spotted in the first canyon. It seemed like an invasion of Ancient Mongolia State had already begun.

In city's training ground, two responsible generals had been alerted and each of them immediately led thousands of soldiers respectively and marched forward to stop the invasion.

Bu Xing turned his head and looked at the commander's palace, only to see that Long Ji was glaring at them. There was anger burning in his eyes.

Two countries were at war, this was a military emergency situation but Long Ji was not at all paying attention to intelligence reports and battle strategies!

"General, we also want to go with your troops."

Bu Xing arrived in front of the two generals and said. The two generals nodded to authorize Bu Xing and Long Yu to be a part of their troops.

The two generals were naturally overjoyed that two Zhenling realm experts were willing to help them in battle.

"Brother, your cultivation level is highest among us. When a senior general blocks our path, I will look forward to having your assistance in dealing with them."

A general respectfully said to Bu Xing.

These two generals were actually assistant generals and their cultivation level was at Zhenling second layer. If they bumped into a senior general, a terrifying existence of Zhenling third layer, then things could turn tragic for them, but fortunately, now they had Bu Xing to take care of this problem.

As far as Long Yu was concerned, they were not attaching too much importance to him, after all, there were several young soldiers of Zhenling first layer who were working under them.

"No problem, let's go."

Bu Xing nodded as he would naturally do his utmost to fight against Mongolian State.

Under the command of these two generals, thousands of trained and capable

soldiers, who had originally been trained in Tang Mountain Pass city itself, advanced toward the front lines for the first time.

Within no time, 2000 soldiers were assembled and reorganized to form the vanguard.

Long Yu and Bu Xing also entered the vanguard troops along with the two generals. 2000 horse-riding soldiers advanced toward the first canyon like a storm!

“I will have to catch enemy generals and obtain information about foster father’s whereabouts.”

Long Yu made a firm decision in his heart to take advantage of this situation.

The way these two countries suddenly engaged in war, it was easy to guess that the reason hidden behind this was a big one and was being purposely kept a secret by the authorities.

Or perhaps, this was just a usual skirmish and this whole intrusion story was just a regular routine, no big deal.

Otherwise, considering Long Ji’s laid back attitude, it was possible that the entire Tang Mountain Pass would fall into enemy’s hands in one fell swoop.

And if this was really going to be large-scale war then it was almost impossible to win with just 100,000 soldiers and that too with Long Ji as their commander.

“Perhaps there is an active conspiracy behind this war, a trick of some sort.”

Long Yu tried to reach a conclusion but could not make a solid guess.

Right now, he was fully focused on grabbing an enemy general in battle. After that, he would ask that general to vomit each and every bit of information regarding Feng Longsong.

The vanguard army was slowly approaching the first canyon.

There was an extremely tall sierra to the north and acted as a natural border between Tang State and Mongolian State.

And among them, only Tang Mountain Pass was linked to the seven Grand Canyons which connected the two countries.

The first canyon was smallest among the seven canyons and was also extremely narrow, could only accommodate not more than ten people at a time. It was easy to arrange an ambush in the first canyon.

Long Yu and Bu Xing were somewhere in the crowd of warhorses and were the only two people who were not riding warhorses.

Considering their cultivation levels, keeping up with these warhorses was like taking a stroll in general. They were not even using agility type martial skills or agility type battle weapons right now.

Right after arriving at the first canyon's entrance, a scout in the front quickly shouted to relay the information to the two assistant generals: "Honorable Assistant Generals! The enemy side is being led by a Senior General, along with five assistant generals and a total of 5000 soldiers."

The two generals could not stop their complexions from turning pale.

They were not only outnumbered, the enemy army also had a Senior General and three extra Assistant Generals!

"We have no choice but to call for reinforcements."

An assistant general rapidly made the decision then looked at Bu Xing: "Brother, I leave the enemy senior general to you! Do you need others to support you?"

"There's no need for that. I can handle him on my own."

Bu Xing was certainly very much confident in his own strength.

Even if he wasn't able to kill that senior general, he would still be able to give him a tough fight between equals.

In fact, the strongest core disciple of each major sect in Tang State was usually at Zhenling third layer, however, Bu Xing was the best among them as well!

This was because just like Long Yu, even Bu Xing's battle efficiency was much higher than those at the same level as him!

"Good, but you have to be careful at all times. There is a great difference between battlefields and arenas used for duels. Here, the situation can turn bad any moment, and if and when that happens, remember that safety comes first."

The assistant general saw the confident look on Bu Xing's face and thought that it was better to caution him now itself, before it was too late: "If you experience an ambush, be sure to give priority to your own life!"

"En."

Bu Xing was the type of guy who would always take a senior's advice seriously. Confidence was a good trait but over-confidence was no one's friend.

Although Bu Xing was very powerful and had never been on a battlefield, at this time when he heard the battle cries of 2000 soldiers, he sensed a sudden boost in his morale. He also felt as if his blood was boiling due to the excitement.

In comparison, Long Yu was much calmer and focused.

It was hard to say what kind of situation he had not seen in his past life? His experience, especially when it came to war and murder, was so rich that this scene was not enough to affect him in any way.

He was quite surprised to see that the first canyon was very narrow and there were towering snow-covered mountains on both sides. These mountains were so tall that it seemed like they were touching the sky. The narrow canyon could only accommodate at most ten people at a time and others would have to follow from behind in rows!

This was a snow valley and there was gleaming snow and ice everywhere. These Seven Grand Canyons had existed for innumerable years.

"Kill!"

Suddenly a barrage of roars thundered one after another and echoed throughout the canyon, followed by Mongolian army advancing toward them. A bearded expert of Zhenling third layer was leading this army.

"I will deal with him."

A cold look flashed in Bu Xing's eyes as he instantly activated 'horizon is close' skill and rushed toward that bearded man.

"Oh, what do we have here? A disciple from some major sect."

The bearded man was slightly surprised for a moment then immediately laughed: "It seems like Tang State does not have capable soldiers who can take

me on, so they allowed a sect genius to participate in war.”

It could be said that sect geniuses were the foundation of a country and proved vital in giving support to a country after fully growing up.

If such a young genius died on the battlefield, it would be considered a big loss for any country!

“Attack!”

Tang State army also responded with thundering battle cries and the two assistant generals, along with their troops, rushed forward to stop the approaching army!

However, this canyon was too narrow for a large scale battle to take place.

“Do you want to kill the enemy?”

In such a scenario, Long Yu suddenly felt his dragon spear trembling in his hand.

The Nine Hidden Dragon Spear was used to being used in battles, and at this moment, a familiar scene of battle made it shiver with excitement!

“Alright then, such being the case, I will use these Mongolian soldiers’ lives to practice my spear skill, Kill Ten Thousand People!”

A vicious look appeared in his eyes as Xuan qi began to circulate within his meridians and immediately stimulated the Demon Wings to open up. His figure left an afterimage as it suddenly turned into a streamer of light and rushed toward the front line!

Both assistant generals were stunned by this scene.

“That disciple, how can he move so fast? Damn, he is courting death!”

“He is so arrogant and does not know the horror of war.”

“That boy is very fast and coming this way, let’s kill him first!”

Tang soldiers were shocked by this scene but Mongolian army grabbed this opportunity and sent out two of its assistant generals to slaughter this brave young genius. Their main motive was to lower the morale of the Tang army by killing their young genius!

“Eagle Zhenling, suppression!”

At this moment, Bu Xing had already clashed with the senior general and an explosive battle was going on between them. The explosions caused by their attacks were producing painful echoes and the snow and ice debris was also blurring the vision of the soldiers.

Long Yu was facing two assistant generals, each at Zhenling second layer, but was not at all scared rather he finally got the opportunity he was waiting for!

“Little brother, come back quickly!”

The two assistant generals of Tang army shouted out of worry as they could not allow a sect genius to die on the battlefield and that too in their presence. If Long Yu died here then they would forever be treated as good for nothings!

However, Long Yu simply did not care because as long as Bu Xing was keeping that senior general busy, no one else in the Mongolian army posed a threat to him.

Chapter – 127 Breaks the lineup

Long Yu was holding his dragon spear and simultaneously facing two assistant generals, but in spite of that, he was not showing any signs of retreat.

“Kill Ten Thousand People!”

Long Yu stimulated the Nine Hidden Dragon Mark and raised his internal power base to make it equivalent to Zhenling second layer. Then, he swept the dragon spear and shot spear shadows at the two enemy assistant generals.

“Isn’t this spear skill the same....”

The two assistant generals were suddenly stunned by this. Their complexions paled when they saw this spear skill. They could not help but think of a general of Tang State from a long time ago!

Both of them were old and were soon going to reach the age of retirement.

However, they never expected to see this spear skill again in their lifetime!

This spear skill was the reason why Mongolians soldiers were afraid of the Dragon clan of Tang State. Although Long Yu was just an expert of Zhenling first layer, the two assistant generals were still taken over by panic and unrest.

They were more shocked by the fact that Long Yu was displaying the power level of Zhenling second layer which should have been out of his reach.

In reality, they had not been able to determine whether this terrifying and deadly spear skill was one of the skills from Dragon clan’s arsenal or self-created by a particular individual!

One of the assistant generals was named Ge Cheng and he summoned his Zhenling spirit in the form of a stone pillar that emerged behind him and instantly released a cold and murderous aura.

This stone pillar spirit was huge and seemed to have a strong defense. In his career spanning 30 years, he had killed countless enemies with his stone pillar. This stone pillar had absorbed their hatred and killing intentions which were being released by it right now.

Most of the killed people were from Tang army!

The other assistant general was named Lucci Wind and his Zhenling emerged out behind him in the form of a hurricane, also exuding a fierce murderous aura that instantaneously spread a chill in the battlefield.

Even while facing a youngster who was one level below them, they still resorted to using their full powers against him. And this was because both of them knew that they could not underestimate this youngster, they just could not afford to do so!

As war veterans, they knew the rules of battle. Never underestimate your enemy and use full force to suppress them without giving them any chance to fight back.

“Die!”

Ge Cheng roared like a wild beast. The stone pillar spirit flew toward Long Yu and smashed down!

Zhentian Sun!

Long Yu naturally wouldn't face a Zhenling himself since he was facing two veterans, each being a level above him, so he decided to summon his own Zhenling just to be on a safe side. Underestimating your enemy was the worst mistake one could make on the battlefield and he was aware of that.

Zhentian Sun appeared behind him and along with a sudden burst of coercion, invoked by Long Yu's very own Zhentian domain. Both Ge Cheng and Lucci Wind were within the domain and came under its suppression!

Bang!

The spear shadow that had been shot earlier by Long Yu pounded on the stone pillar and shattered it into pieces. The stone pillar dissipated and dispersed in front of Ge Cheng's eyes and he could not do anything because both assistant generals were under the coercion of Zhentian domain.

Their complexions turned pale when they realized that they were inside the domain, belonging to the world law of suppression!

Ge Cheng and Lucci Wing looked at each other like two confused morons. There was also a deep color of shock and dismay in their eyes.

After all, a boy, who seemed to be only 18 or 19 years old, was able to comprehend domain of a world law. How could they not be envious of this rare genius with god-given wisdom!

In comparison, they themselves were only able to comprehend up to world influence.

(Mystique – World influence < Domain)

They were never able to comprehend the domain of a world law!

“This child is extremely gifted. Also, judging from his appearance and that spear in his hand, he looks somewhat similar to that Dragon general from twenty years ago..... We cannot let him live, otherwise, in the future he would certainly become a dangerous enemy of our Mongolian State.”

It seemed like both Ge Cheng and Lucci Wind were on the same page and both of them simultaneously released the world influences of their own respective world laws.

Ge Cheng’s whole body sent out a calm imposing aura as if his body was made up of stone and he was suddenly able to withstand the coercion put upon him by Long Yu’s Zhentian domain!

But Lucci Wind did not try to resist Long Yu’s domain rather he used world influence to power up his hurricane spirit and pushed it toward Long Yu.

If Long Yu was trapped in this hurricane then it could paralyze him, and not only that, it could also greatly hinder the circulation of Xuan qi in his meridians.

If his Xuan qi circulation was hindered on the battlefield and things could get really ugly for him!

“Suppression, destroy!”

Long Yu’s eyes flashed like a sharp knife. The sun began to radiate dazzling rays of light and a horrifying coercion fell down upon the swiftly moving hurricane and fully dispersed it in an instant!

Long Yu had single-handedly stopped two assistant generals at once!

This scene came as a big pleasant surprise for the two assistant generals of Tang army.

They had initially thought that Long Yu was just a hot-blooded youngster of Zhenling first layer, and the way he had dashed toward the front line, it seemed like he was going to face a tragic death, but he turned out to be an extraordinary sect genius and shocked everyone!

Long Yu just used Zhentian domain in coordination with Zhentian Sun to defeat two war veterans with a higher level of cultivation.

And the truth was that Long Yu was not going all out!

“Zhentian spear tactics, attack of numerous spear shadows!”

The dragon spear in Long Yu’s hands instantly released black light that swept out in the form of numerous black spear shadows, all headed toward those two assistant generals.

“Retreat!”

When Lucci Wind saw his hurricane spirit being eradicated by Long Yu, his complexion changed drastically.

This was a battlefield, not a duel. He did not care about losing face in front of everyone.

If there was anything that might put a person in a dangerous situation, that person must directly get away from there so as to maximize the life security!

Ge Cheng also followed the same course of action and escaped from there. After losing their Zhenlings, they did not stand a chance against Long Yu, in fact, even with their Zhenlings they were not going to last long in front of Long Yu.

The two assistant generals quickly and cleverly sneaked into the lineup of Mongolian soldiers.

“You cannot escape from me!”

Long Yu saw them running away but did not stay there. He immediately dashed into the crowd of Mongolian soldiers!

He thought that now was the right time to practice his spear skill by killing enemy soldiers, meanwhile, he was also looking for a chance to catch a general, even one assistant general was enough to give him the information he was looking for.

But in order to catch a general, he must first break the enemy lineup!

He immediately cast out 'Kill Ten Thousand People' and unleashed this deadly spear attack on Mongolian soldiers!

With the help of Zhentian domain's coercion that was suppressing the enemy soldiers around Long Yu, he quickly broke their lineup and even killed several soldiers at once, opening a big gap in the enemy lineup.

The enormous coercion of Zhentian domain was enough to immobilize Mongolian soldiers on a large scale!

"I'll fight with you!"

There came a roar from the other side of the lineup and yet another assistant general rushed toward Long Yu.

"I will be your opponent!"

At this moment, the two assistant generals of Tang army were finally able to arrive at the place where Long Yu was fighting a while ago.

The two assistant generals of Tang army were confronting two assistant generals of Mongolian army before. All four of them had already summoned their own Zhenlings simultaneously and were thoroughly engaged in battle.

Mongolian State had sent a total of 5 assistant generals and 1 senior general.

The senior general had already summoned his rock hammer spirit and was using its terrifying might to fight against Bu Xing's equally mighty Eagle spirit.

Out of the 5 assistant generals, Ge Cheng and Lucci Wind had already retreated, and out of the remaining three, two were being confronted by the two Tang generals.

The fifth assistant general was closing in on Long Yu and suddenly attacked with his knife!

However, Long Yu had long been aware of his killing intention. Even though he was on a battlefield filled with killing intention, he was still able to differentiate the killing intention that was aimed at him.

"Nine Hidden Dragon Fist, Intoxicated Hell!"

Long Yu had already prepared this attack and suddenly turned around to land a solid punch on his face!

Immediately, that assistant general's body was invaded by nine hidden dragon qi that had come straight from hell and paralyzed him on the spot!

"Kill Ten Thousand People, now die!"

Long Yu thrust his spear all the way through his chest!

The assistant general suddenly discovered that his heart had been punctured and a shocked expression dominated his face. He fell down on his back with his face upwards. He died on the spot with his eyes opened wide in disbelief.

In a blink of an eye, Long Yu killed an assistant general who was at Zhenling second layer!

His death suddenly caused chaos and panic among the Mongolian soldiers.

"Retreat! Retreat!"

Ancient Mongolian State Army spread announced evacuation orders again and again and even the bearded senior general slowly began to retreat while still battling with Bu Xing.

"So, now the entire army wants to run away?"

Long Yu scowled but the situation was still within his grasp.

This was no time to stop because this was actually the best time to kill more and more of these retreating soldiers!

Long Yu was using a deadly combo of Zhentian domain and 'Kill Ten Thousand People' to first paralyze big groups of soldiers at once and then butcher them in one fell swoop!

Killing intention was condensing at the tip of his dragon spear, and in a while, he had already killed more than 100 enemy soldiers.

He finally entered Dacheng level of 'Kill Ten Thousand People' and the power of his spear attack was now more than twice its previous power!

Moreover, now by using this spear skill, he would be able to hinder the opponent's moves as well!

Long Yu swept his dragon spear and beheaded a soldier of Wudao ninth layer. At this time, he discovered that Mongolian army's lineup had been fully defeated and dispersed with most soldiers always running back home through the canyon.

"Haha, what a bunch of losers!"

Bu Xing did a good job in keeping the bearded senior general busy all this time.

Long Yu continued to attack enemy soldiers, and in a while, hundreds of soldiers had been killed by him.

Mongolian army escape through the canyon as fast as it could, leaving behind only corpses!

"Should we go after them?"

The two assistant generals of Tang army looked at each other. There was hesitation apparent in their eyes.

"I think we should not do that as there is a possibility of falling into their ambush."

They quickly agreed on it.

However, Long Yu tried to break up their lineup not to see this outcome. He must capture an enemy assistant general and ask him about the whereabouts of Feng Longsong!

Going after them was his only option!

Long Yu instantly made a decision, and even if there was an ambush, he was capable enough to protect himself.

He had to find the whereabouts of Feng Longsong, no matter what!

Long Yu was now all alone in the canyon. He was even separated from the Tang army lineup!

"Little brother!"

Tang army's two assistant generals were shocked when they saw him going after the Mongolian army. They just couldn't understand what was going on in this boy's mind. His actions totally defied common sense. And the main question was – Why did he have so much hatred toward Mongolian State?

Chapter 128 Flaming jade talisman

Long Yu was pacing through the canyon. He looked ahead and saw a snow covered white forest, stretched everywhere beyond limits.

Mongolian soldiers were fleeing into the forest and the panic had given rise to chaos and stampede.

“Just because one of the five assistant generals died and two of them retreated, they decided to retreat in such a hurry? I don’t buy that. There’s still a possibility of ambush

Long Yu was vigilant while he continued to pursue the escaping Mongolian army. He soon found Ge Cheng and Lucci Wind who were escaping together.

“These two are old veterans of assistant general rank. They definitely know the whereabouts of foster father.”

Long Yu stimulated the circulation of Xuan qi in the Demon Wings and instantly turned into a streamer of white light, quickly approaching Ge Cheng and Lucci Wind!

The two enemy assistant generals saw Long Yu closing in and their own soldiers running around in circles due to the terror and confusion created by Long Yu’s scary demeanor. Both Ge Cheng and Lucci Wind changed their course of escape and ran towards a remote region, separating from the main army formation.

This scene made Long Yu more vigilant than before.

He could tell that something was fishy!

Even so, Long Yu would not miss this good opportunity to catch them. And even if he encountered a dangerous situation in which he was unable to resist, he still had an excellent escape method!

“If you want me to follow, I will gladly fulfill your last wish.”

Long Yu further extended his white wings and flew through the snow white mountain woods, quickly closing in on the two assistant generals.

The two men were fleeing more rapidly, and in a blink of an eye, they turned

sideways to the side of a small valley and went in.

The small snow valley was hosting a mountain forest that was full of bare tree trunks. The whole atmosphere looked extremely lonesome and cold.

“Oh, is this the so-called ambush in the valley? I am not impressed gentlemen.”

Long Yu was ready to have fun with those two. He flapped his wings and glided into that small valley!

As soon as he entered the valley, immediately, a burst of flames welcomed him with open arms and his whole body was almost swallowed by the sea of flames.

“This is flame type Zhenling!”

Long Yu said in his heart and instantly swept the dragon spear, thereby invoking the fierce coercion of Zhentian domain that created a path through the sea of flames!

“Ha ha ha, I finally caught you.”

An arrogant but familiar laughter entered Long Yu’s ears and he immediately came to know whom it belonged to.

This was none other than Hua Fu, the son of Zang Fire Temple’s lord!

When Long Yu used to be at Wudao ninth layer, he had once killed a disciple of Zang Fire Temple named Xiahou Tianjie who was at Zhenling first layer at the time of his death.

Most importantly, Long Yu seized the lunar debris and also got away from under his nose!

That was why Huo Fu held a grudge against him.

His attack coincided with Mongolian State’s invasion because he had also come here to kill enemies and earn merits but he heard that Long Yu had also come here. He immediately had an idea of setting up a trap for Long Yu!

“Huo Fu, I never thought that the son of dignified Zang Fire Temple’s lord will go so far as to collude with Mongolian State. I truly admire and respect you.”

Long Yu’s mocking smile was quite splendid but his smirk revealed a deep disdain for Huo Fu.

The enmity between him and Huo Fu could at best be regarded as an enmity between two disciples of rival sects, however, Huo Fu actually colluded with Mongolian generals to ambush him. This could even be considered as treason!

He looked around and found out that several other fire traps were hidden in the valley. It must have taken a lot of time to prepare such an extravagant ambush.

Long Yu's mocking smile acted as a spark to ignite Huo Fu's anger. His whole body suddenly began to burn with hot flames jumping and dancing around him. A flagitious cruel look was visible in his eyes and he was looking at Long Yu as if looking at a dead man.

"In order to become a king, sometimes you need the help from enemy. It has been like this since ancient times! Today you will die and I will be the biggest winner. And who would even bother investigating how you got killed on a battlefield?"

Huo Fu sneered and his bloodthirsty eyes flashed maliciously: "Now, time for you to say goodbye to this world."

As his voice fell down, the two assistant generals also arrived on the scene with cruel smiles spread across their faces.

Long Yu was right about three of them being together in this!

Three experts of Zhenling second layer had suddenly besieged Long Yu, increasing the pressure on him all of a sudden.

Although Long Yu killed an assistant general some time ago but only by taking advantage of his confusion and using nine hidden dragon fist to finish him off in one fell swoop.

Now, however, three experts of Zhenling second layer had joined forces against him. One must know that together they could actually contend with an expert of Zhenling third layer!

Even Long Yu did not dare to ignore the gravity of this situation because now the other side had the ability to kill him, unless he decided to use his hidden trump card, Nine Hidden Dragon's Zhenling.

But the two armies were not far from here and what if someone was peeping when Long Yu exposed his secret of having dual Zhenling?

If news about it spread then a lot of people would want him dead!

“Anyway, I cannot risk exposing my secret so better use what is available

Long Yu thought and looked at them with his eyes full of dignified color.

“Good, let’s finish this quickly. Three of us together can kill this boy very easily.”

A sinister smile appeared on Lucci Wind’s face and a hurricane spirit appeared behind him. Since his Zhenling had already been defeated once by Long Yu a while ago, this hurricane spirit was not as potent as it was earlier.

“How dare you gang up on my junior!”

A sudden unruly laughter sounded accompanied by an eagle cry which echoed in the valley.

An enormous coercion descended from the sky and enveloped both Ge Cheng and Lucci Wind!

“Brother Bu!”

Long Yu was quite delighted to see him here!

Although he should have been able to handle the situation without Bu Xing’s help, now the whole thing became much more convenient.

“Yup, I am here, little brother.”

Long Yu turned his head and saw Bu Xing pacing toward him from behind.

Eagle spirit was flying behind Bu Xing, and as soon as the coercion of Zhentian influence enveloped Ge Cheng and Lucci Wind, their complexions changed all of a sudden.

They were no match for an expert of Zhenling third layer!

“Brother Bu, where is the senior general of Mongolian army?”

Long Yu asked Bu Xing.

“He ran away and since I was worried about you, so I followed you here. I

never expected to see such a trap prepared for you though.”

Bu Xing’s sharp eyes were fixed on Huo Fu as he said: “Huo Fu, you are the young lord of Zang Fire Temple and you actually colluded with Mongolian State to kill Brother Long. This is treason, a crime punishable by death!”

“Cut the crap, today I will burn this boy to crisp.”

There was a cruel look on Huo Fu’s face and he did not care about what Bu Xing just said. He just glared at Long Yu and said: “Brat, you should be honored to know that in order to deal with you, I requested father to let me borrow a spiritual level top-grade battle weapon, Flaming jade talisman. You have the honor of being killed by a spiritual level top-grade weapon, be proud of yourself.”

After that he shook his hands a little, the talisman exploded into flames and began to burn violently.

Spiritual level top-grade battle weapon!

Long Yu narrowed his eyes and thought that this talisman was on the same level as his dragon spear used to be earlier. So, its might was naturally going to be extraordinary.

Not to mention, Huo Fu was at Zhenling second layer and obviously possessed larger basic strength and also had a bigger stock of Xuan qi than Long Yu, so a spiritual level top-grade weapon was going to increase his overall might drastically!

“Die, you brat!”

Flaming jade talisman sent a burst of flames toward Long Yu!

Bu Xing saw the intensity of this flame attack and frowned. He just wanted to get rid of those two assistant generals who were trying their best to pin him down.

“Hurricane rampage!”

Lucci Wind shouted and the hurricane spirit went against the coercion of Zhentian influence and curled upon Bu Xing.

“Stone Pillar, attack!”

Ge Cheng also sent his stone pillar spirit in the direction of Bu Xing!

Their basic strengths, when put together, were still slightly lower than Bu Xing's strength but while facing their converging well-timed attacks, he really couldn't ignore them or take them lightly.

"Eagle, suppression!"

Bu Xing snorted and sent his eagle spirit to tackle the other two Zhenling spirits coming at him. Meanwhile, he also used soul moving fist, a spiritual level skill, and threw his fist at the approaching hurricane.

The battle between three Zhenlings was soul-stirring and even Bu Xing's power was tyrannical, but at the same time, Ge Cheng and Lucci Wind were war veterans and could not be underestimated.

On the other side, Huo Fu and Long Yu were battling!

"Flaming jade talisman, three-way heavenly fire explosion!"

The Flaming jade talisman hurled a large mass of fire along with the flames that exploded out of Huo Fu's body and the coercion flames of his Zhenling. Three groups of terrifying flames assaulted Long Yu from three different directions and exploded in mid-air.

"This is a spiritual level skill from Fire Temple!"

Long Yu was truly impressed by this martial skill.

Considering his present strength and defense, he simply could not sustain this attack!

"Demon Wings!"

Long Yu used his white wings and ghost flash at the same time to enhance his speed dramatically!

Long Yu's figure blurred and he turned into a streamer of light and easily escaped from this fire explosion.

"So fast."

Huo Fu looked at the white wings and felt that this battle weapon was definitely not inferior to his own, otherwise, it should have been impossible for

Long Yu to escape from his fire blast attack.

However, having such a lighting fast speed was not a final solution to the problem called fire explosion.

“Your speed is lightning fast, but so what? I’ll just set the entire world on fire and see where you will try to hide.”

Huo Fu’s eyes flashed with a ruthless color and he stimulated the Flaming jade talisman. Long Yu saw countless string-like flames rapidly emerging from it and proliferating in all directions.

These firewires were actually like a spider web, spreading all over the sky and suddenly crawled toward Long Yu to entrap him!

“This martial skill is considered the best in the arsenal of Fire Temple. It is called Spider’s Fire Web.”

Huo Fu made this move with full confidence. Now, Long Yu had nowhere to hide!

So long as he managed to kill Long Yu, he was not afraid of Bu Xing because he had actually received orders to kill Long Yu directly from Tang State’s Major General, Long Ji!

Chapter 129 Counterattack

The spider's fire silk spread in the sky and rolled toward Long Yu. He could clearly feel the intensity of flames and the violent force contained in this attack.

"This spider's fire silk attack can instantly turn people to ashes."

Long Yu had a cold feeling in his heart. He knew that this was a crucial moment of life and death and carelessness would end up being deadly for him!

The fire silk net occupied the entire sky and even if Long Yu used dragon prance right now, he would still be unable to escape from its range. Not to mention, the gaps in the fire net weren't wide enough to give him a way out.

His only option was to go all out!

"Zhentian Sun, suppression!"

Zhentian Sun emerged behind him and its sunlight shone all around and invoked enormous Zhentian coercion in the vicinity!

Long Yu saw that under the effect of enormous coercion, the wrapping speed of those silk flames decreased considerably.

"Nine Hidden Dragon Fist, Awakening palm samsara!"

Long Yu blasted his punch and a bright light flashed in his eyes!

The terrifying power of samsara (reincarnation) suddenly enveloped entire body of Huo Fu and infiltrated his samsara cycle, churning the flow of Xuan qi within his meridians.

"What is this?"

Huo Fu's complexion suddenly paled when he felt an incredible strength contained in Long Yu's punch. What kind of martial skill was this?

He felt his own cultivation level suddenly drop down from Zhenling second layer to the first layer!

His heart suddenly trembled when the circulation of Xuan qi was suddenly disrupted because of a sudden drop in his cultivation level, and as a result of that, he couldn't control the spider's fire silk attack properly, giving a golden

chance to Long Yu to counterattack.

“Kill Ten Thousand People!”

Long Yu swept his dragon spear and instantly released a rich killing intention that spread around and scattered the net of fire in all directions.

“Now you, like me, are just at Zhenling first layer.”

Long Yu’s eyes flashed like the edge of a sharp sword and he quickly went toward Huo Fu: “Being a shameless polemic soldier, you are inferior to me! Even as a martial artist, you are inferior to me! When it comes to the comprehension of world laws, you are inferior to me! Then how do you plan to kill me?!”

Nine Hidden Dragon Fist, Intoxicated Hell!

At this time when Huo Fu was panic-stricken after having lost one level in his cultivation, Long Yu took advantage of this opportunity to completely rout the spider’s fire silk attack by using the intoxicated hell attack to paralyze him and also to fully stop the circulation of Xuan qi.

“Nine Hidden Dragon stream burst, now die!”

Long Yu pounded his fist on the snow-covered ground, and suddenly, a fountain of nine hidden dragon qi gushed out of the ground and enveloped Huo Fu.

Huo Fu, a powerhouse of Zhenling second layer, instantly died a brutal death!

Long Yu only used three successive attacks, all linked with nine hidden dragon, to kill Huo Fu without putting much effort.

Long Yu was only at the beginner level of Awakening Palm Samsara, but even so, its effect was astonishing and very effective to catch an opponent off guard!

Even at the point of death, Huo Fu was confused as to how did his cultivation decrease by one level? Long Yu was truly practicing a rather dreadful martial skill!

However, before he could reach a conclusion, the nine hidden dragon qi invaded his body and corroded him from outside and within, turning him into a dried-up corpse!

Huo Fu never thought that in just an instant, the situation would reverse so drastically and against him.

Both Ge Cheng and Lucci Wind saw this horrible scene and were terrified.

This Long Yu was obviously at Zhenling first layer then how could he so easily kill an expert who was one level above him?

Moreover, Huo Fu obviously used spider's fire silk that was supposed to be a spiritual level top grade martial skill but even that failed to overpower Long Yu!

This totally demoralized Ge Cheng and Lucci Wind as none of them seemed to have a fighting spirit left inside of them.

"Brother Long, good job."

Bu Xing laughed. He really was not mistaken about Long Yu being capable enough to deal with Huo Fu!

That being the case, he could not fall behind and must kill his enemies as soon as possible to save his face in front of Long Yu.

"Kill them!"

Bu Xing's eagle spirit gave out a sharp cry, followed by a burst of Zhentian influence that suddenly dropped coercion upon Ge Cheng and Lucci Wind and put them under a suppression effect.

"Hurry up, let's get out of here!"

Ge Cheng and Lucci Wind looked at each other and knew that they did not have enough time to escape from there.

Both of them displayed their full might to resist the coercion from Zhentian influence and immediately ran out of the small snow valley.

However, at this time, a large number of troops appeared at the entrance of the small snow valley.

"Kill those two assistant generals of Mongolia army!"

A cold voice sounded all of a sudden like an absolute command, followed by a burst of killing intention that instantly enveloped Ge Cheng and Lucci Wind.

They wanted to escape but never thought that so many people would suddenly

appear at the entrance of the small valley and block their path.

In a blink of an eye, the two assistant generals were butchered and the snow-covered ground was dyed red by their blood!

In the small valley, both Long Yu and Bu Xing turned their heads at the same time and were surprised to find out that the man who gave the order just now was none other than Major General Long Ji!

At this time, Long Ji was wearing a golden armor and his whole body was exuding a very cold yet invincible aura as he was standing near the corpses of Ge Cheng and Lucci Wind.

His eyes swept through the entire valley and first stopped at Long Yu then at Huo Fu's corpse that was lying on the ground, not far from Long Yu.

"Long Yu, you colluded with Mongolian assistant generals and killed the heir of Fire Temple. It's a punishable crime and you better trust me on this that there will be no amnesty for you."

Long Ji snorted and made his judgment openly in front of everyone!

Bu Xing's complexion changed when he heard this. However, Long Yu was unaffected by this and seemed to have already known that this was going to happen.

"Major General, it is actually Huo Fu who colluded with Mongolian State!"

Bu Xing stood in front of Long Yu to defend him and said in a stern voice.

He knew that Long Ji was trying to frame Long Yu and would use this opportunity to attack and kill Long Yu!

There was a big chance that this whole series of events was part of a plot to get rid of Long Yu!

A conspiracy to kill Long Yu!

"Who is the commander here, you or me?"

Long Ji looked coldly at Bu Xing and said while waving his hand: "Senior General Yan Shan, what do you think? Don't you feel that this is truly outrageous? Long Yu has followed the footsteps of his father who was also a

traitor despite being a general of Tang State. I feel the need to behead this traitor and do justice to the people of our country who lost a genius like Huo Fu, today.”

“I totally agree with you, Major General! This Long Yu must be executed.”

The bald senior general replied in a respectful manner! The fox-eyed senior general also nodded to show that he was in support of this verdict.

The two senior generals were the ones who killed the two assistant generals of Mongolian army! The bald one was named Yan Shan and the fox-eyed was named Ma Shili.

“You have committed treason, so death is the only valid punishment for you.”

Long Ji sneered and looked viciously at Long Yu. His golden armor was reflecting a beautiful golden shadow on white snow, making him seem very powerful and extraordinary.

He took one step toward Long Yu when Bu Xing suddenly reacted.

“Major General, I have evidence to prove that Huo Fu is the one who colluded with Mongolian State, not Long Yu.”

Bu Xing said in a cold voice.

When he first arrived in this small valley, he had sensed that something was fishy so he had quietly pinched Zhenling imprinting skill to record the entire scene for future use. This was enough to prove that Huo Fu was the traitor who colluded with Mongolian State.

“I see.”

Long Ji’s face revealed a malicious smile: “So are you trying to say that you are also involved in this matter? You are trying to support a traitor like Long Yu and perhaps you are also a traitor like him.”

“Major General, leave this guy to us.”

At this time, both Yan Shan and Ma Shili stepped forward and tried to surround Bu Xing, who then noticed a mocking look in their eyes.

They were looking down on Bu Xing since he was daring to defy Long Ji, who

was one layer above him.

This was really a wishful thinking!

The stance of these two senior generals was apparent. If Bu Xing tried to save Long Yu then they would not hesitate to attack him!

Long Ji was slowly approaching Long Yu and a golden lightning-like aura was dancing around him!

Long Yu knew that he could not involve Bu Xing in this mess and made up his mind.

“Long Ji, since you want to kill me so badly, I dare you to give it a try.”

Long Yu grinned and a sharp look appeared in his eyes. He immediately swept the dragon spear around himself and instantly condensed a violent airflow below his feet.

Nine Hidden Dragon Prance!

His whole body was launched high into the sky, and all of a sudden, he was out of that small valley. And the very moment he landed on the ground, he once again used dragon prance to escape from there!

Long Yu had fallen into Long Ji's trap and his only option was to get out of there!

With the help of two successive dragon prances, Long Yu had a very good head start and also helped him in escaping from this full-scale trap!

“You cannot escape from me!”

Long Ji's eyes flashed with killing intention. His golden figure suddenly flashed yellow and immediately rushed in the direction of Long Yu.

Since he had already congealed spirit entity, his speed was bound to be much faster than Long Yu's speed!

In a while, Long Ji followed him outside that snow-covered small valley and noticed that Long Yu was very far away from him. Not to mention, Long Yu was fleeing deeper into the territory of Mongolian State.

“I would like to see how far you can run!”

Long Ji's body exuded a deep killing intention and he immediately rushed toward the fleeing Long Yu.

Long Yu was rapidly fleeing into the deeper regions of Mongolian State and Long Ji continued to pursue him.

.....

Bu Xing found it impossible to help Long Yu because two senior generals were blocking his path. If he tried to go after Long Yu to help him, these two would also follow him and make things more difficult for Long Yu.

He was anxious in his heart and never expected to see such a turn of events where Long Ji seemed to be using all sorts of dirty means to get rid of Long Yu.

In accordance with the current situation in Long Clan, there should be no hatred between these two men, right?

Of course, Long Yu's grandfather had made it clear that Long clan shouldn't create problems for Long Yu and naturally wanted him back in the clan, but some people did not want that to happen.

However, Bu Xing was surprised to see that Long Ji would so openly plot against Long Yu!

Bu Xing considered Long clan as an elite clan that supported justice over personal grudges, but the present situation really worked toward shattering his trust in Long clan. He was completely disappointed not just by Long Ji but by the entire Long clan.

"Long clan, you have really done it."

Bu Xing's complexion turned dark with anger.

Long Ji not just used Mongolian assistant generals to lure Long Yu to this small valley, also used Huo Fu to set up an ambush to get rid of Long Yu. And when the plan didn't work out well, Long Ji used Huo Fu's death as a premise to frame Long Yu as a traitor.

This was a brilliant plan because even if Long Yu was to die, the whole Tang State would treat it as the death of a traitor! And if Long Yu managed to survive, it would then be impossible for him, as a branded traitor, to return to Tang

State.

However, Bu Xing knew that Long Yu wasn't the type of guy who would so easily throw in the towel.

He knew that Long Yu was a smart guy with enough confidence and courage to survive through such type of situation. Bu Xing had been watching the growth of Long Yu for a long time and knew that his growth speed was truly astonishing.

A lot of people tried to kill Long Yu in the past several months but none of them was successful. In fact, Long Yu managed to step into Zhenling realm from Wudao third layer at a breakneck speed!

Even if he was being chased down right now, somehow, Bu Xing was confident that he would not die so easily and might even reverse the course of events in his own favor.

“Brother Long, I have evidence that will prove your innocence, so whenever you return to Tang State, I will take this evidence to the public and wash off the accusation from your nationality.”

A firm look appeared in Bu Xing eyes!

Chapter 130 Blood dragon and wild ax

In a stretch of boundless snowy area, Long Yu was leaving no footprints while escaping from Long Ji.

A pair of white wings was constantly flapping behind him as he was leaving afterimages behind and floated forward, faster and further into the Mongolian State.

However, a golden figure was chasing him down at a very fast speed. Long Ji had a large amount of energy leaking from his body, and wherever he went, the white snow began to melt all of a sudden.

“If this continues, sooner or later, he will overtake me.”

Long Yu had a cold feeling in his heart and as the enemy was getting closer, he began to think that only if he was in good terms with Demon Wings.

Earlier, he once succeeded in forming a conjunction with his Blizzard boots but it was just a low-grade battle weapon and its speed-boosting effect could hardly do anything to help him in this dire situation.

But if he could be on good terms with the Demon Wings, he would certainly be able to enhance his own speed to another level!

However, Demon Wings were made up from the feathers of a demon beast that despised human beings.

In this case, Long Yu found it impossible to find any conjunction point with the Demon Wings.

As he was busy thinking to find a solution, suddenly, the heavenly lunar tablet flew out of his bosom and discharged rich lunar qi that completely enveloped his Demon Wings.

“What is going on?”

Long Yu’s complexion slightly changed because he had never seen Heavenly Lunar Tablet behaving like this.

And now, it acted on its own and emitted lunar qi that suddenly enveloped the two white wings!

A pair of white wings was dyed gray and hence turned gray in color. The two gray wings no longer looked beautiful due to a sudden change in color from pure white to gray but this was necessary.

However, as a result of that, the very nature of Demon wings also completely changed.

Originally, these Demon Wings used to be a spiritual level best grade battle weapon with a damaged matrix method engraved upon it. It was very difficult to form a conjunction with it due its hatred toward human beings.

Now, the name of these wings should actually be changed to 'Lunar wings' since the demon beast's hatred toward human beings was completely obliterated by the lunar qi invasion.

At this moment, the lunar wings had become a spiritual level best quality battle weapon with traces of black lines engraved on its surface.

"Black lines? Nine Hidden Dragon qi!"

Long Yu saw this and immediately understood what happened just now.

The sudden activation of the Heavenly lunar tablet was not its own decision, it was just incited by the nine hidden dragon mark on his chest!

Nine hidden dragon qi stimulated the circulation of lunar qi within the tablet and this pushed lunar qi out of the tablet and some of it led to the transformation of lunar wings.

These black lines on his Demon Wings were identical to the ones engraved on the dragon spear!

"Nine hidden dragon lines, stimulated activation!"

Long Yu, without any hesitation, poured his own Xuan qi into the lunar wings and suddenly activated the black lines.

The lunar wings had a sudden burst of tyrannical power that instantly made Long Yu very light and lithe.

Although he was still not on good terms with the lunar wings, they still managed to give him a great boost in speed!

The gray wings began to exude strange nine hidden dragon qi, and gradually, his entire body turned gray with traces of black lines appearing all over his body. Now, the appearance of black lines made him look like a vicious demon, not to mention his speed increased drastically and he instantly disappeared from Long Ji's line of sight.

Long Ji was stunned by this scene and gawked.

He was happy in his heart that soon he was going to catch Long Yu and put him to death for 'treason', but in a blink of an eye, he saw a sudden burst of some kind of strange black aura and the boy's speed became a lot faster than his own speed!

"How is this possible? This boy is just a newbie in Zhenling realm whereas I have already congealed spirit entity. How can he be faster than me?"

Long Ji's eyes opened wide in shock and disbelief!

However, it took a lot of planning and risk to come to this situation so he certainly would not let Long Yu escape that easily.

"Blood Dragon Zhenling, appear now!"

Long Ji shouted, followed by the appearance of a blood red dragon spirit behind him.

The blood dragon was not just a spirit image. It was actually a congealed spirit entity with actual mass as if an evil blood dragon had really appeared in flesh and blood and was roaring constantly.

Blood Dragon tactics, being a core law of Long clan, was practiced by the juniors of Long clan.

Long clan was able to become one of the top three clans in Tang State just because it possessed Blood Dragon tactics!

After practicing Blood Dragon tactics, one would be able to comprehend the law of killing, and because of this, juniors of Long clan were mostly rich in murderous rage and decisiveness on the battlefield, making them most efficient soldiers without any noticeable drawbacks.

When the Blood Dragon emerged behind Long Ji, his speed suddenly increased.

Also, snow began to melt in abundance, changing into blood red water, in the presence of the Blood Dragon!

Long Yu heard Blood Dragon's roars but wasn't surprised as he had already anticipated this outcome!

"So, this is his spirit entity? Not bad."

Long Yu felt a heavy coercion of killing intention, influencing him from behind. He sensed Long Ji and his Blood Dragon getting closer and could not stop a strange rogue smile appearing on his face.

It seemed like he might have to summon Nine Hidden Dragon Spirit to face this Blood Dragon!

Although the Blood Dragon was releasing an endless amount of murderous aura, about one level higher than the other spirits he had seen so far, however, it was still nowhere near Nine Hidden Dragon Spirit.

This comparison was not based on the strengths of these spirits but their grades.

Just like there was a division of grade among battle weapons and martial skills, Zhenlings also had a similar grading system.

So far, Long Yu had mostly seen ordinary level spirits, including his own Zhentian Sun, Bu Xing's eagle spirit and so on. These spirits were all on the same level.

(Mystique: Zhenling = True spirit or spirit)

However, Blood Dragon was a level above those other spirits.

As far as his second Zhenling, Nine Hidden Dragon Spirit, was concerned, according to his estimate, it was several levels above all these spirits. It was hard to determine the exact difference in levels between Nine Hidden Dragon Spirit and those other spirits.

Long Yu knew that his Nine Hidden Dragon Spirit was a foreign existence on this continent, and simply beyond the scope of other spirits!

Regarding the exact division of Zhenling grades, he was still unable to reach the final analysis since his present cultivation level and martial strength was too

weak and most Zhenling experts also did not have any knowledge about this.

After all, excluding the top three clans of Tang State, all other experts possessed most basic grade spirits so there was no particular need to identify the grades.

Could it be that the royal clan and the top three clans of Tang State were able to hold such positions because of having high-level spirits?

Suddenly, the question flashed in his mind but Long Yu suppressed all distracting thoughts and focused on dealing with Long Ji and his spirit entity.

Long Ji and Blood Dragon were not far away from Long Yu and as soon as he decided to summon Nine Hidden Dragon Spirit, suddenly, he heard a loud shout that came from the front.

“Well, well, what do we have here?”

Long Yu immediately looked toward the front.

There was a snow valley in front of him, and right at the end of this snow valley, there was a huge crowd of Mongolian soldiers, apparently waiting for them!

They were being led by a savage looking man who was clad in a thick animal skin coat. He was also releasing a very tyrannical breath. He was actually a powerhouse of Zhenling fourth layer!

He had cleverly prepared an ambush on the other side of the snow valley, which was the reason why neither Long Yu nor Long Ji was able to detect the presence of an entire army that was waiting to ambush them. Mongolian commander saw Long Ji and said with a bright smile on his face.

“It really is Tang State’s Major General Long Ji, ha ha. I have been waiting for you for quite a long time!”

He laughed like a madman: “I must say that I am quite confused. You see, I hear rumors of Long Ji being a capable commander, but the present situation compels me to think otherwise. To me, you seem like an incompetent coward who is using his spirit entity against a boy, who has barely stepped into Zhenling realm. This is truly laughable, ridiculous, ha ha!”

As he was done ridiculing Long Ji, a crazily surging aura erupted from his body and spread in all directions.

All of a sudden, a wild ax spirit entity appeared behind him!

However, Long Yu sensed that this wild ax was just an ordinary grade Zhenling and not as strong as the Blood Dragon.

In other words, in a one on one battle, he most probably wouldn't be able to defeat Long Ji.

"Man Xin."

Long Ji recognized Man Xin and could not stop his complexion from changing.

He was not afraid of Man Xin, but the huge crowd of Mongolian soldiers was a big threat to him!

While facing several thousand soldiers at once, even he couldn't kill them all.

"Since Long Ji likes the game of chase and kill, we would also like to give it a try."

Man Xin laughed wildly while the wild ax spirit suddenly rotated at a very high speed and emitted strong winds which brushed past Long Yu and went in the direction of Long Ji!

"Everyone, besiege Long Ji!"

Man Xin issued the order, and within an instant, several senior generals and assistant generals immediately rushed toward Long Ji.

One of the senior generals was actually that bearded guy who fought with Bu Xing earlier. He summoned his stone hammer spirit and rushed toward Long Ji.

It seemed like this bearded senior general was the one who passed on all important information to Man Xin and hence they prepared an ambush here.

And many Mongolian soldiers, who were at Wudao ninth layer, immediately left the snow valley and took detours from all directions to besiege Long Ji.

Long Yu was actually surprised when he saw Mongolian senior generals brushing past him.

Could it be that these Mongolian soldiers did not consider him an enemy?

So this was an example of the so-called saying – enemy’s enemy is a friend.

Anyway, he was not planning to participate in this battle.

The lunar wings delimited a black streamer behind him and shot his body forward, toward the snow valley, while he conveniently used dragon prance to leap high into the sky and landed on the other side of the snow valley, bypassing the entire Mongolian army formation in one leap.

He was planning to head deeper into the bordering areas of Mongolian State!

Since now he was burdened with the charge of treason, he absolutely had no option of going back to Tang State.

“First, I must find my foster father and then find a way to go back safely with him.”

Long Yu had not forgotten his real motive. From the very beginning, his plan was to use the battle between these two armies as a way to sneak into Mongolian State to rescue Feng Longsong!

He was indeed framed for treason but he did not mind that, to be honest.

As long as he had Nine Hidden Dragon Mark, no matter where he was, he would be able to enhance his cultivation very quickly.

Even if he could not return to Tang State right now, one day he would come back. Then, he would find Long Ji and return the favor with interest!

Chapter 131 Sneaks into a camp

Long Yu continued to venture into the depths of Mongolian State and soon arrived in front of a Great Snow Mountain.

“There should be at least 100,000 soldiers stationed in this Great Snow Mountain. If I can catch a young soldier then that should help me in sneaking into their camp.”

Long Yu made a rough plan, not to mention he was already familiar with this method and had used it hundreds of times in the previous life.

There were a lot of patrol teams near the army camp, and for him, the first thing to do was finding a suitable patrol team.

Long Yu quietly entered the snow-capped mountain and while going through a narrow pass, he noticed some movement around the corner and saw a small group of Mongolian soldiers patrolling the area.

There was a total of eight soldiers in this team but no one was yet in Zhenling realm.

“This group does not seem appropriate. I cannot pretend to be one of them, they are too weak.....”

Long Yu thought and turned around to leave without alarming that group.

After searching for a long time, he finally found a patrolling team that was being led by a young soldier of Zhenling first layer. There was a total of 12 soldiers in this team, also including the young leader in the count. But, the other soldiers were either at Wudao eighth layer or Wudao ninth layer.

All of them were dressed in leather jackets which seemed like armor type battle weapons, though only low-grade ones and couldn't really block Long Yu's attacks.

Long Yu carefully surveyed the terrain to make sure that no other patrol team was in vicinity then decided to start the plan.

For any other expert, it would be impossible to silently get rid of 12 soldiers.

However, it was an easy task for Long Yu.

“Nine Hidden Dragon Fist, intoxicated hell!”

Long Yu silently condensed nine hidden dragon qi in his fists and blasted them simultaneously toward the team of soldiers, enveloping all of them almost instantaneously.

All of the soldiers were stunned on the spot as soon as the erosion of their meridians started!

“Kill Ten Thousand People!”

Killing intention began to crawl over the dragon spear in his hands and as soon as he thrust it forward, numerous spear shadows went toward the paralyzed soldiers and pierced their bodies.

In a flash, 12 soldiers died without being able to do anything in response! This was a perfect display of silent kill.

Even the team leader was killed along with his team members without getting a chance to fight back.

Then, he lifted the dragon spear and thrust it into the snow-covered ground, creating a small crater all of a sudden.

Afterward, he put the corpses of 11 soldiers in the pit. Then, he took off his clothes and threw them into the snow pit. Further, he stripped the team leader, took his identity badge as well and then threw his corpse into the pit and covered it with lots of snow from all around. He also made sure that the blood-stained snow was also buried under the clean white snow.

“Now, I have this guy’s identity badge and attire. This should be enough for the time being. It’s time to sneak into the enemy camp.”

Long Yu was headed toward the central area of the Great Snow Mountain.

Mongolian military barracks were located not far away in the snowy mountain valley. The tall mountain was used as a blockade to resist cold and windy weather from the other side, so that military personnel could rest well in the barracks.

Long Yu was now dressed as a young soldier and moving toward the central part of the valley. On the way, a lot of people saw him but did not pay much

attention to him.

Since there were tens of thousands of soldiers in the army, in one glance, he looked just like any other young soldier from the army!

Soon, he arrived at the mouth of central valley.

Mongolian army had constructed two sentry post towers near the mouth of valley. There was a solid wooden blockade at the valley's entrance whereas the camp was naturally protected by towering mountains on remaining sides.

This valley was a natural fortress of Mongolian army, just like Tang Guan city was for Tang army!

Long Yu was wearing a poker face as he approached the blockade and continued to pass through the door.

"Stop, show your identity badge."

On both sides of the blockade, two rows of Wudao ninth layer guards were stationed. In total, there were over a hundred soldiers stationed behind the blockade to guard the camp.

This battalion of guards was being led by a senior general of Zhenling third layer!

Such an important place could obviously not be left unguarded, especially when this entrance was the only way to enter the camp. No wonder they placed a senior general to lead a battalion of guards.

When the senior general asked Long Yu to show his identity badge in a strict manner, Long Yu did not panic.

Long Yu had already made an observation a moment ago and knew the rule that all people must show their identity badges before entering the camp.

"Sir, I was ordered to lead a patrolling and there has been an abnormal situation. I must hurry and report this incident to senior officers."

Long Yu deliberately let his voice become hoarse, desirably majestic but also with a hint of distress in it.

Then he showed his identity badge.

Long Yu's tactic worked as the senior general was more engrossed in the background setting portrayed by him and subconsciously assumed him to be one of his own soldiers.

"Ok, you can go inside."

The senior general just took a look at him then gestured with his hand, allowing Long Yu to go inside.

Patrol and report was a normal procedure, a regular thing, so the senior general did not pay much attention.

Sometimes, patrolling teams reported seeing flagitious demon beasts in the Great Snow Mountain. The senior general saw light traces of blood on Long Yu's armor and assumed that there must have an attack of some wild demon beast and this young soldier had come back to report about casualties.

Regarding this matter, the senior general at most could assume a peremptory contemptuous attitude because the soldiers in patrol squads were really getting weaker with the entry of new generations in the army.

However, he did not say anything to show his contempt.

After all, his job was just gate keeping and nothing else!

The matter about such casualties was not under his control so he was not at all bothered to pay attention to details.

Since Long Yu was a youth of Zhenling first layer, he was able to trick this senior general so easily. If he was at Zhenling second layer then things wouldn't go so smoothly.

Because soldiers of Zhenling second layer did not go to conduct patrols, not to mention there weren't many assistant generals in the Mongolian army and being a gatekeeper, he knew all of them by faces.

Anyway, Long Yu finally got into the camp of Mongolian army.

"This camp is huge, from where should I start looking for foster father?"

Long Yu was calmly looking around then he immediately ran toward the central parts of the camp, in order to quickly get away from the eyes of that senior general.

The entire valley area of Great Snow Mountain was bigger than Tang Guan City and there were no less than a thousand tents in the camp. Checking them one by one was definitely a waste of time.

Long Yu was not in a mood to waste time because he did not know Feng Longsong's physical and mental condition if he was tortured by the enemy. Waiting any longer could be a big mistake!

He found a dark corner between two tents and caught a passing by soldier of Wudao eighth layer, then covered his mouth and dragged him back to the pile of trash.

"You better not try to do something smart or I'll kill you!"

Long Yu gave a direct warning and a frightened look appeared on that soldier's face.

He could feel that the guy holding him down was actually an expert of Zhenling realm!

Although he did not know why exactly he was caught like this, he still did not dare to shout for help or struggle.

"I am going to ask you a question, answer honestly or say goodbye to your poor life."

Long Yu warned again then asked immediately: "Where is Feng Longsong?"

The soldier was slightly surprised for a moment then held out his hand and pointed toward the biggest tent in the entire camp!

"You mean Feng Longsong is in that big tent?"

Long Yu firmly pinched his neck and fiercely inquired.

"Ooo, ooo!"

The man hurriedly nodded.

"Goodbye."

Long Yu's eyes revealed a cold light as he wrenched apart that soldier's neck!

A look of disbelief appeared in that man's eyes as his lifeless body fell to the ground.

Long Yu tossed his corpse in the trash pile then walked away.

He was not afraid of this corpse being discovered because even if someone was to find it, they wouldn't know who did it? Several young and incompetent soldiers were killed by superior officers and no one bothered to inquire about them.

Soon, he arrived near that big tent and began to patrol the area around it.

He had seen several young soldiers patrolling throughout the camp so he did the same to make sure that he did not stand out.

Then, he began to concentrate on how to explore within the tent.

"It's the biggest tent and should belong to the army commander, but I don't know his cultivation level."

Long Yu thought and soon discovered that there were only two people in the tent right now.

In addition, two assistant generals were stationed at the entrance to the tent, so Long Yu did not dare to casually walk inside. He continued to pretend as a young soldier patrolling the area behind the tent.

He heard the two people talking and discovered that one of them was really his foster father, Feng Longsong!

"Longsong, although it has been so long since that incident occurred, I still feel somewhat guilty in my heart. If I had not sent my messenger pigeon to bring a letter to Brother Long then he would have never been caught. It's my fault that the crime of treason was put on him and he was expelled from Tang State, alas!"

An energetic but hoarse voice entered Long Yu's ears, though the sound was relatively low but he clearly heard what was said.

This was enough to startle Long Yu.

His foster father was actually having a calm discussion with Mongolian army commander?

And was the commander talking about his father when he mentioned Brother Long?

Long Yu immediately focused all his attention on hearing the conversation!

“General Man Yi, you are not to blame for this matter.”

Feng Longsong sighed then said:. “Even without you signaling the General Long, they would still have found some other reasons to expel him from Tang State because they were envious of him to the point of hatred. The people of Holy Institute were also aiming for him and I do not know where he is right now..... ”

Holy Institute?

Long Yu heard this term for the first time but he was more surprised to find out that this Holy Institute was actually aiming for his own father.

“Can it be that Holy Institute is the name of the powerful force to which my mother, Bei Yuyao, belongs to?”

Long Yu sensed a cold feeling arising in his heart.

From the discussion, he could tell that this Mongolian general used to have a good relationship with his father back in the days!

Long Yu wanted to continue to listen when he suddenly sensed some kind of commotion in the camp!

From the direction of camp’s entrance, loud warnings and announcements were being made and the whole was suddenly engulfed in chaos.

“Assassin! An assassin has infiltrated our camp, protect the general!”

Loud shouts began to spread throughout the camp to alert the soldiers!

Suddenly, a beautiful figure of a woman appeared in Long Yu’s sight, and with a causal flick of hand, she beheaded the two assistant generals who were guarding the entrance to the commander’s tent.

“So it’s you – Yu Qianning!”

Long Yu recognized who this beautiful woman was and smirked.

She was none other than the daughter of all-women Qiansi Sect’s sovereign, famously known as Qiansi princess. And it seemed like she had come to this foreign land to assassinate Mongolian army’s top general!

Chapter – 132 Old General Man Yi

When Long Yu saw Yu Qianning, he immediately hid in the corner of that big tent and prevented himself from getting discovered.

At this time, he was wearing a young Mongolian soldier's uniform and even if she was to see him, she wouldn't bother knowing his identity because of her one and only focus being Mongolian State's Old General!

"This Yu Qianning has reached Zhenling fourth layer already?"

Long Yu could clearly sense that her cultivation level was on par with Long Ji!

However, he also clearly remembered that when he had first seen her in Royal Ancient Ginseng Forest, she used to be at Wudao eighth layer. Within such a short period of time, how did she manage to enhance her level so fast, in fact even faster than Long Yu?

Could it be that she had been hiding her real strength from the very beginning?

No one could stop such an intrepid expert who had come rushing to the big tent. Even the two assistant generals, acting as the gatekeepers of the big tent, were beheaded in one hit.

"Old General Man Yi, your son is fighting with Long Ji as we speak. I'd like to see who will come to protect you from me!"

Yu Qianning said viciously and immediately entered the tent!

The Old General uttered a loud and painful cry and was sent flying inside the tent after sustaining a heavy blow from her palm!

The Old General's body crashed into the tent's wall and collapsed on the ground, while at the same time, Feng Longsong stood up and there was a shocked expression on his face.

"Stop!"

Feng Longsong shouted in a loud voice.

"Ha ha!"

Yu Qianning's insidious laughter broke the silence all of a sudden: "Feng Longsong, why were you having a nice and cozy conversation with an enemy

general? It seems that you are also a traitor like your friend Long Zaitian!”

“Well, whatever, I have made my decision to punish you for the sin of treason, right here right now.”

As her voice fell down, there appeared a sudden gust of whirlwind in the tent. It was obviously summoned by her to attack Feng Longsong.

But, how could Long Yu just wait outside and let this happen?

He did not care what happened to the Old General but it was impossible for him to not act when his foster father’s life was in danger!

“Nine Hidden Dragon Fist, intoxicated hell, melting the road to hell!”

Long Yu was outside the tent, but instead of wasting time on rushing inside, he immediately blasted a punch from outside while aiming at her!

Immediately, a burst of nine hidden dragon qi penetrated through the tent’s walls and filled the internal area of the tent. It seemed as if black flames had directly surged out from hell and invaded the tent!

Feng Longsong suddenly gawked as soon as he witnessed this scene.

“Small Yu!”

Feng Longsong could not help but cry out loud since he recognized the strange dragon qi and immediately knew that it could only belong to his adopted son, also the son of General Long, Long Yu!

However, Long Yu’s appearance had occurred at the most inopportune moment!

Yu Qianning was at Zhenling fourth layer and if she released her spirit entity then Long Yu would be unable to block even a single of her attacks!

“Foster father, I have come to save you.”

At this time, Long Yu finally entered the tent with a determined look flashing in his eyes. He did not waste a single moment and immediately punched the ground.

A column of nine hidden dragon qi erupted from the ground and enveloped a portion of Yu Qianning’s body, but at this moment, she actually sobered up all of

a sudden.

The gap between their cultivation levels was big so even if she was enveloped by nine hidden dragon qi that had erupted straight from hell, it did not have a fatal effect on her unlike previous times and she managed to sustain the attack of dragon qi to a large extent.

It took her only an instant to jump out of that column of nine hidden dragon qi.

“Oh, so it’s you.”

Yu Qianning finally turned back to look at the person who attacked her and immediately recognized Long Yu. There was an unconcealed disdainful look in her eyes right now: “I’d really like to see what you can do, but remember, you are nothing more than an ant in front of me, just like Feng Longsong.”

She raised her hand and Xuan qi began to condense in her palm while an imperial aura filled the entire tent.

“This is the coercion of an emperor, what’s going on here?”

Long Yu could not stop his heart from getting gripped by a strong cold feeling when an imperial level aura filled the tent all of a sudden.

At this moment, he did not have time to think in order to prepare a strategy to deal with her. His only option was to act instinctively. He instantly released Zhentian Sun spirit that appeared behind him and emitted Zhentian domain to tackle the fierce imperial coercion.

“Nine Hidden Dragon Fist, Awakening Palm Samsara!”

Long Yu managed to temporarily resist her imperial coercion and blasted his fist at her!

The fist invoked an endless cycle of rebirth and instantly enveloped her, making her complexion change all of a sudden.

What is this strange power?

She suddenly felt her own cultivation level falling down to a level below!

This kind of thing was simply unheard of!

Her cultivation level right now was only at Zhenling third layer, and although dealing with Long Yu and Feng Longsong should still not be a problem for her, there were quite a few senior generals outside the tent and getting surrounded by them was definitely not what she wanted right now!

She bit her lower lip, bitterly stared at Long Yu for a moment then turned around and ran outside.

It was always most important to keep one's own life safe no matter what. She was not a fool who would knowingly risk her own life for the sake of a mission!

Although she left for good and Long Yu should feel a lot less pressured all of a sudden, he did not let his guard down.

Because now he was in the enemy camp!

He turned back and saw Feng Longsong tending to the Old General who was lying down on the ground and appeared seriously injured.

Long Yu carefully took an observation and noticed that the Old General was wearing a plain gray-colored cotton robe and didn't seem like a general at all from his attire.

However, in his eyes, there was a bright essence pertaining to a typical war-veteran, also indicating that he had experienced a lot of hardships and vicissitudes in his life!

Even if he had been beaten down by a young girl and seemed seriously injured at the moment, still, the fierce and firm look had not died down in his eyes.

"Longsong, that young girl, is she Chu Chao Sheng's daughter?"

Old General Man Yi's eyes revealed a determined flash of curiosity and fierceness as he inquired in a mild voice.

"Yes, she is called Yu Qianning. She is the daughter of Yu Ruyan and Chu Chao Sheng."

Feng Longsong replied in a sinking voice: "Old General, how do you feel now? Are you okay? Should I call the medics?"

"I will not survive."

The Old General sighed and shook his head: “Longsong, you and I are enemies and that’s a fact not for us but for everyone else. If you want to leave the camp with this kid, your only option is to take me as a hostage. And you must leave as soon as possible because I will be worthless as a hostage if I die before your escape is successful.”

“What are you saying? I cannot do such a thing.”

Feng Longsong’s complexion changed.

“Longsong, you once used to be a war-veteran just like me, we old timers should not dawdle before making tough decisions. You know as well that I am the one who brought you here and only I can be your way out of here.”

Old General Man Yi categorically said with a firm look in his eyes!

“But, this is.....fine.”

Feng Longsong thought for a moment and could only nod in a response. In the present situation, escaping with Long Yu would truly be impossible if they did not take the Old General as a hostage!

“Foster father, how was the Old General injured so badly?”

Long Yu arrived next to Feng Longsong and asked.

“Old General Man Yu and your father used to be friends back in the days. Back then, Old General used to be at Zhenling sixth layer, but unfortunately, like me, he was seriously injured on the battlefield and can now only display the battle efficiency equivalent to Wudao eighth-ninth layer.”

Feng Longsong gave a brief introduction to him then pulled out his copper sword, a top grade battle weapon, and suddenly put it horizontally across the Old General’s neck!

Although Feng Longsong retired long ago, but at this moment, there was a hint of rage and killing intention lingering around his body.

This was something a battle-hardened veteran could never lose no matter what!

“Old general, excuse me for this.”

Feng Longsong spoke these words and an aggressive look suddenly appeared on his face!

He tightly gripped his sword and walked out of the tent, dragging the injured body of Old General along the way.

Long Yu also followed after them and also seemed somewhat lost in thoughts.

“I will ask foster father to tell me everything in detail about my father, but first we must get out of this mess..... how is all of this related to Yu Qianning, Chu Chao Sheng and Yu Ruyan?”

Long Yu’s heart was full of doubts but he knew that now was not the time to inquire about all these things.

He tightly gripped the dragon spear and went ahead of Feng Longsong and the Old General.

“I will lead the way.”

Long Yu said firmly.

Feng Longsong’s battle efficiency was only at the level of any other expert of Wudao eighth layer, so it was understandable that Long Yu, being the strongest person in the team, was going to lead the way!

After coming out of the big tent, they found the whole camp in chaos and confusion.

Many powerhouses had gone to chase down Yu Qianning, leaving the remaining soldiers to rescue the Old General Man Yu, but they actually met with a scene they didn’t expect to witness at all!

“Get out of the way, all of you, otherwise, you will lose your Old General!”

Long Yu said in a harsh tone and swept the dragon spear, shooting numerous spear shadows at several Zhenlings standing in the way and pushing them away.

No one dared to act rashly as they very much valued the Old General’s safety.

“Let go of Old General, otherwise, we will kill you mercilessly like a dog!”

A loud shout came from the crowd and it seemed as if this guy very much respected the Old General.

Old General Man Yi's prestige was not small in the Mongolian Army!

And because of this, no one was daring to block their path.

Long Yu and Feng Longsong quite easily reached the entrance door of the camp without getting resistance in the way.

"Step aside!"

This time, the Old General himself ordered the guards to step aside. Not to mention, this came as a shock to the soldiers as they had to step aside and make way for Long Yu and Feng Longsong.

They easily went out of the camp, just because this hostage-plan was successful.

Neither assistant generals, nor senior generals dared to block their path!

"Listen you all, do not even think about stepping out of the camp, otherwise, you will lose your commander!"

Long Yu gave a final warning to the soldiers of Mongolian Army then fled with Feng Longsong and the Old General into the snowy mountains, disappearing in the white barren land.

Mongolian soldiers continued to watch them disappear from their sights but there was nothing they could do right now.

The strongest soldiers had already gone out to chase Yu Qianning.

Now, they did not want to mess up and lose their valuable commander!

"Go, quickly notify admiral about this incident. Tell him to come back as fast as possible."

A senior general immediately ordered his men: "Recovery of the Old General is more important than catching an assassin!"

Chapter – 133 Past events

Long Yu was leading the way while both Feng Longsong and Old General followed him out of the observable area of Mongolian army outpost. They went further into the snow covered regions in the secluded hills.

The Old General had sustained several internal injuries and was about to die.

“Old General, how is your condition? Are you ok?”

Feng Longsong gently placed the Old General on the snow field and asked.

“I don’t think I will make it.....”

The Old General coughed out blood but his eyes shone resolutely as he looked at Long Yu: “Longsong, you said this boy is Long Yu, son of Long Zaitian.....”

“Yes, he is.”

Feng Longsong said in a sinking voice.

“Long Yu.”

The Old General once again coughed out blood then looked at Long Yu with some expectations in his eyes: “Judging from your talent, it would not be an overstatement to say that you are going to surpass your father in the future. You will certainly become an extraordinary expert..... I am willing to give my own head to you so that you can return to Tang State and wash off the charge of treason from your head, but you must do something for me in return..... ”

“Eh?”

Long Yu frowned and was still unclear as to what exactly was his relationship with the Old General.

He certainly did not dare to promise carelessly.

“You just promise the Old General, I’ll explain everything to you later on.”

Feng Longsong appeared quite dignified and serious as he said these words to Long Yu.

Yu Qianning had already seen Long Yu and Feng Longsong in the Mongolian army base, having a friendly chat with enemy commander. She would definitely

publicize this matter and both of them would then be charged with treason.

Taking the Old General's head back to Tang State was the easiest possible way to wash off treason charges!

Although Feng Longsong was a bit sad but even he could see it clearly that the Old General was on the verge of death.

Even the best alchemy teachers of Tang State wouldn't be able to save his life! And if he was going to die no matter what, it was better to let him trade his own head to Long Yu for whatever he desired, after all, it was no different than having a last wish.

Most importantly, the Old General still had an unfinished wish and he wanted Long Yu to fulfill it for him.

"Alright, Old General, I promise you."

Long Yu said to the Old General while nodding respectfully.

"Good, now I feel relieved. After I die, you can cut off my head and take it back to Tang State. That should be enough to wash off the sin of treason from not just your but your foster father's head as well....."

The Old General looked pleased and further said: "In return, I want you to kill someone for me.....Kill Chu Chao Sheng!"

Chu Chao Sheng!

Long Yu's heart thumped for an instant.

This was not the first time he heard this name. He had heard this name coming up in the conversation of Feng Longsong with the Old General in the tent a while ago. From that conversation, he had come to know that Chu Chao Sheng was Yu Qianning's father.

So, basically, he was supposed to kill Yu Qianning's father!

However, before Long Yu could confirm his promise, the Old General's body slumped down onto the snow-covered ground.

There was a high-rising look of expectation in his eyes, along with an unwilling look as well.

He was certainly looking forward to the death of Chu Chao Sheng. Long Yu was going to take revenge for him! But he was also unwilling to die as he couldn't live to see the death of Chu Chao Sheng!

“Old General?”

Feng Longsong's face turned pale as he immediately extended his hand to check the Old General's pulse while his other hand tried its best to sense any hint of breath coming out from the nose.

Unfortunately, the Old General was really dead and nothing could be done now!

“Small Yu, we must hurry up and escape right now. Staying here any longer isn't safe, let's go.”

Feng Longsong stood up, and without showing even a hint of hesitation, he severed the Old General's head with his copper sword and carried it in his hand.

Immediately, another sword strike dug a pit in the snow, spacious enough to bury the corpse inside.

His action was so decisive that it actually somewhat impressed Long Yu.

Although he did not know the specific relationship between Feng Longsong and the Old General, it was at least not a hostile one for sure. At this moment, Feng Longsong appeared like a real veteran who knew what to do. Not to mention, he was fairly decisive in his approach and didn't succumb to his emotions!

“Small Yu, we must leave before Mongolian army catches up.”

Feng Longsong raised the severed head and turned around to leave.

Long Yu also did not hesitate and immediately used lunar wings that spread out with a layer of strange black ripples reappearing on them. His figure turned into a gray streamer of light and disappeared from there along with Feng Longsong. They were moving at the maximum speed possible in the direction of Tang State.

Meanwhile, Long Yu got to hear the full story about his father!

.....

About twenty years ago.

Mongolian State and the United States of Japan joined forces to attack Tang State.

All three states were almost equal in strength and the alliance of these two states was trying to seize Tang State's rich resources and treasure troves and divide them among themselves, however, never thought that their plans would be single-handedly ruined by a brave general of Tang State!

This general was Long Zaitian, the father of Long Yu.

Long Zaitian was able to resist against the persistent attacks, strategically planned by the commanding generals of the coalition forces of Mongolian state and the United States of Japan. His self-made Qian spear skill was more than enough to slaughter enemy soldiers, to an extent of making the allied forces tremble with fear.

(Mystique: Yes, he made the spear skill 'Kill 10k people')

Yu Ruyan, the current sovereign of Qiansi sect used to be a beautiful young girl in those days, beautiful enough to cause the downfall of a nation.

She, like countless other young girls of Tang State, was deeply in love with Long Zaitian, who was considered a national hero back then and was also considered quite a splendid figure by all. Long Zaitian possessed unparalleled martial talent, and due to that, the best experts of Tang State had volunteered to become his vice generals.

Long Zaitian continued to go on expeditions in all directions for several years and Yu Ruyan also accompanied him for all those years, however, he never developed any feelings for her as she had expected.

He did not fall for her no matter how much she tried to impress him!

Old General Man Yi was 30 years old when he led the Mongolian army into battle against Tang State. He was full of vitality like a veteran predator and was also the natural enemy of Long Zaitian on battlefields.

During an accidental confrontation, he was baffled to see a heavenly beauty like Yu Ruyan who was not just beautiful but had already reached Zhenling sixth

layer. This was the encounter that gave birth to his love for her.

Depending on his own martial realm, it was possible for him to have more than one opportunity to abduct her and hold her forcefully, however, he did not want it to be that way. He didn't want to forcibly occupy her, instead, he wanted to try out all sort of pursuits to gain her love.

Plus on the battlefield, he was always evenly matched against Long Zaitian, not to mention Mongolian army also had unmatched military talent.

This made him develop a form of freemasonry with Long Zaitian and they began to exchange letters, discussing personal matters and other informal stuff.

Their relationship was purely based on rivalry and respect for each other and they would always muster their full strengths on the battlefield while battling each other to death.

After all, they belonged to opposing camps and were duty-bound to give all they got for their respective motherland!

However, one fateful day, Long Zaitian met a woman of Holy Saint Institute, Yu Yao and was instantly attracted to her fairy-like beauty.

Soon, the two fell in love with each other and Yu Ruyan was heartbroken.

"You will regret this!"

Yu Ruyan said these words before leaving Long Zaitian's camp and began to look for Chu Chao Sheng.

Chu Chao Sheng came from the imperial clan of Tang State, the Chu clan. He was a prince at that time but was only beginning to display his talent in a branch clan.

However, when Chu Chao Sheng demonstrated a strong talent in martial arts, it took only a bit of trickery and political strategy for him to obtain fame in the imperial city!

After the appearance of Yu Yao in Long Zaitian's life, the three-nation war continued for several years and finally began to transform.

Long Zaitian wanted to spend his life peacefully and affectionately with Yu Yan. He wanted this war to end as soon as possible, and hence, his killings became

more decisive on the battlefield. In the final phase of war, he managed to successfully expel the coalition forces out of Tang State.

The war saw numerous casualties on both sides, not to mention Long Zaitian himself massacred tens of thousands of enemy soldiers, which became the main reason behind spreading panic among the enemy soldiers and their eventual retreat!

However, General Man Yi did not participate in the final battle, making Long Zaitian somewhat confused.

Later on, he found out that Yu Ruyan had teamed up with Chu Chao Sheng to ambush Man Yi, injuring him severely in the process. This caused his cultivation to drop down to Wudao eighth layer!

Moreover, Chu Chao Sheng seized this chance to get his hands on the letters exchanged between Long Zaitian and Man Yi, thereby putting treason charges on Long Zaitian.

Plus at that time, the powerful forces of Holy Saint Institute were mobilized in abundance against Long Zaitian.

Of course, Holy Saint Institute's dislike for Long Zaitian was deeply rooted in the fact that a native and lowly country bumpkin like him didn't deserve a noble lady like Yu Yao.

After many days of continuous chasing, the powerhouses of Holy Saint Institute and the men sent by Chu Chao Sheng experienced heavy losses at the hands of Long Zaitian but still somehow managed to expel him out of Tang State. Yu Yao was captured by Holy Saint Institute and disappeared without a trace, never to be seen again.

Now, it was naturally impossible for people to know the whereabouts of Long Zaitian. Perhaps, only the people of Holy Saint Institute and Chu Chao Sheng would know his whereabouts or what happened to him.

After Long Zaitian was expelled from Tang State, Long Yu's grandpa sent him away from Long clan to take asylum in Feng Clan, under the guardianship of Feng Longsong.

In the entire Long clan, only Long Yu's grandfather cared about him, but

unfortunately, the whole matter regarding Long Zaitian was out of his control.

Holy Saint Institute's influence was extremely tyrannical. In fact, even the imperial clan of Tang State was bound to follow their orders, let alone a trivial military clan like Long clan.

From then on, Chu Chao Sheng became the crown prince of Tang State and soon spread his power and influence throughout the Tang State.

Yu Ruyan, later on, fell for Chu Chao Sheng's conspiratorial means and succumbed to him, thereby getting pregnant by him.

However, she still couldn't forget the love of her life, Long Zaitian. And that was why she was unwilling to marry Chu Chao Sheng.

Later, she went on to become the sovereign of Qiansi Sect and gave birth to a daughter named Yu Qianning.

"Yu Qianning turned out to be a real royal heir, no wonder she dares to call herself 'Qiansi Princess' and no one dares to refute."

Long Yu felt a chill in his heart after learning the truth!

Could it be that Baiyun Zong went to Qiansi Sect in order to seek an explanation regarding the attack on Elder Yu because the attack was ordered by Chu Chao Sheng!

Then, at that time, the person who was being referred to by Baiyun Zong in his conversation with Elder Yu was none other than Chu Chao Sheng!

In those days, Baiyun Zong also used to be a popular commander like Long Zaitian and the two used to have very good relations. In that case, perhaps Chu Chao Sheng could not get used to seeing him in power and took him down. In the end, Baiyun Zong stepped down from his military status of a general and became the sovereign of Zhentian Sect.

"No wonder, Chu Chao Sheng started a dialogue with the sovereigns of the 7 great sects and strategically forced them to agree upon submitting the core laws of the seven sects under the control of imperial clan....."

A cold light flashed in Long Yu's eyes.

2 decades had already passed since his father was expelled out of Tang State

and Chu Chao Sheng was once again trying to make a big move, that was, to weaken the influence of the seven great sects in Tang State.

It was an obvious attempt to dilute the power of the seven great sects while simultaneously increasing the dominance of the imperial clan.

“Yu Qianning’s strength is already at Zhenling fourth layer, which means she has certainly received some kind of secret training from Chu Chao Sheng. No wonder she is so confident of winning the seven sect competition.....”

Long Yu felt the pressure doubling all of a sudden.

He was not a match of an expert at Zhenling fourth layer.

Whether it was her or her father, right now, he was not an opponent of any of the two!

Chapter 134 Hidden Heavenly Thunder Reservoir

However, Long Yu did not lose heart.

In the seven sect competition, scheduled four months from now, he also had the chance to attain victory. Of course, without the help of legendary Nine Hidden Dragon Mark, he would certainly be unable to defeat Yu Qianning in the competition.

(Mystique: From here onwards, I will be using the term 'kingdom' instead of 'state' to refer to the three countries namely 'Tang Kingdom', 'Mongolian Kingdom' and 'United Kingdom of Japan'. The presence of monarchy in each of these countries has forced me to make this change.)

“Oh right, I forgot to tell you something. Actually, Old General Yi never planned to invade our Tang Kingdom. He had some other goals from the beginning.”

Feng Longsong said while looking far into the distance, toward the East!

“Other goals?”

Long Yu frowned while simultaneously decreasing his own pace to match with the pace of Feng Longsong in order to arrive next to him.

“Yes.”

Feng Longsong nodded: “Old General Yi told me that he was ordered to blockade Tang Guan to attract the attention of Tang Army and then simultaneously block the majority of Tang soldiers. However, their real goal was Hidden Heavenly Thunder Reservoir.”

Hidden Heavenly Thunder Reservoir!

What is this?

Long Yu had never heard of it, so he could not help but ask out loud.

Feng Longsong further continued the explanation: “At the border of two countries, there is a place called Hidden Heavenly Thunder Reservoir. Loud thundering sounds keep coming from there as if it is a place where thunders are born and come crashing down every now and then. In recent days, these thunderclaps have increased and prolonged at an alarming rate. It seems like a

treasure is about to take birth. A Mongolian Prince heard about this and ordered Old General Man Yi to take his son Man Xin and stop the people of Tang Kingdom from getting close to the Hidden Heavenly Thunder Reservoir. The prince basically wants to monopolize this treasure.”

Although this method was not effective enough to stop the powerhouses, it was good enough to stop most assorted people.

In every treasure hunt, one must always stay away from confusion chaos.

Even a prince of Mongolian Kingdom, who was said to hold dreadful power and influence, was not willing to let anyone win it away from him!

“In order to obtain a treasure, this so-called Mongolian Prince is actually willing to sacrifice the lives of so many of his soldiers while blockading Tang Guan. He is really cruel and ruthless!”

Long Yu frowned while saying.

“Yes, this Mongolian prince’s martial talent is outstanding. I think he should be on the same level as the nine young experts of our Tang Kingdom.”

Feng Longsong sighed and said: “With his father being a Mongolian King, his future is likely to be set as a king of Mongolian kingdom. He is definitely a formidable enemy of my Tang Kingdom.”

The ancient kingdom of Mongolia was not the same as the Tang Kingdom.

Tang Kingdom was dominated by the ruling power of Chu Clan, the military power of Long Clan and the ministerial power of Mo Clan. These three top clans controlled vast majority of resources in Tang Kingdom.

But in the Mongolian Kingdom, there were 18 Kings in total who together governed the ‘King Hall’ to rule Mongolian Kingdom.

He was a well-known young prince of Mongolia since his father was one of the 18 Kings and was also ranked in the top three, based on strength!

This prince could be said to do anything he wanted within the bounds of Mongolian Kingdom.

He actually sent more than 100,000 soldiers to monopolize the treasure. This obviously showed his truly monstrous power and influence!

“Father, how much do you know about this Hidden Heavenly Thunder Reservoir?”

Long Yu inquired about the treasure spot.

Hidden Heavenly Thunder Reservoir was a reservoir that was soon going to give birth to a treasure. Long Yu was getting more and more interested in knowing more about it.

At present, he was very eager to enhance his strength!

“I only know that Hidden Heavenly Thunder Reservoir is a place that experiences thunderclaps and lightning bolts all day long. And this phenomenon gets especially intense before the birth of a treasure. Anyone who dares to step into this place is struck by thunderbolts.

Feng Longsong explained: “This treasure spot is located right at the border of two countries and produces a treasure once in every few years. If not, perhaps no one would bother going to check it out.”

Produces treasure every few years!

Hidden Heavenly Thunder Reservoir!

Long Yu heard about this treasure spot and could not help but think of the lunar mineral lode region from before. Even that place had a history of producing treasures every few years, until he and Liu Yuan seized Heavenly Lunar Tablet from there and rendered that place barren forever.

So, this Hidden Heavenly Thunder Reservoir is also like that?

Until now, he had yet to figure out the role of that monument, but at least, with the help of Nine Hidden Dragon Mark, his demon wings transformed into lunar wings and also got promoted to become a spiritual level battle weapon.

Moreover, this was definitely not the real extent of the tablet’s real power!

“Sovereign Baiyun has said that the Heavenly Lunar Tablet can only be used after stepping into the realm of Man-Heaven unity. Since I already have a magnificent treasure, I don’t need to worry about getting my hands on another one right now.”

Long Yu thought so, however, if he had the opportunity to get another

magnificent treasure, of course, he would certainly not hesitate.

This Hidden Heavenly Thunder Reservoir most likely had a piece of Heavenly Tablet buried in it like the Heavenly Lunar Tablet!

...

While carrying the head of Old General Man Yi, both Long Yu and Feng Longsong took a detour in the direction of Tang Guan.

A barbarian, wearing animal skin, leading several Mongolian generals and soldiers, returned to the camp.

This barbaric looking person was Man Xin, son of Old General Man Yi!

After getting the news about his father getting abducted, he stayed silent for a moment while standing at the main gate of the camp gate, without uttering a word.

Other generals were standing on his side, also silent and were not daring to say a word to interrupt the silence.

“Status Report for commander!”

Suddenly, a scout’s voice passed over from afar: “I found the Old General... ..”

Man Xin’s wild gaze shifted in the direction of the voice, only to witness his father’s headless body being carried on a wooden stretcher!

“Yu Qianning, you have earned yourself a mortal enemy. This hatred is irreconcilable!”

A light of hatred flashed in his eyes!

“Major General, our Old General was not killed by that woman, but”

An arbitrary senior general, standing next to him, could not help but said aloud to remind Man Xin.

“Shut up, no one knows my father better than I do.”

Man Xin snorted loudly then said: “Call everyone back, you lot cannot kill that Yu Qianning. There’s no need for you people to die in vain! As for that Long YuHe is the only son of my father’s old friend. You must never cause any trouble for him in the future, understood?!”

As his voice fell, a look of remorse appeared in his eyes.

He hated himself for leaving his father and going out to intercept Long Ji!

This battle between two countries was simply sparked by a Mongolian prince, not the other way round. There was never a need to focus more on killing Long Ji in the first place.

Although his decision to intercept Long Ji came out fruitful because now the Major General of enemy troops was seriously injured, however, at what cost? Yes, at the cost of letting a female assassin approaching his father and ultimately causing his death!

He knew his own father's past very well and was confident in his guess about what exactly happened.

It was that man's doing. That Chu Chao Sheng, he sent his daughter to assassinate my father!

"It's a newfound hatred and I am going to pursue it. One day, I will avenge my father!"

There was a confident look in his eyes, along with an ominous flash of hatred.

Then he waved and shouted: "Everyone, strengthen the security, no one shall leave the Great Snow Mountain range! If you find any Tang people trying to cross the Great Snow Mountain, immediately inform me."

Then, he picked up his father's corpse and step by step went inside the camp.

Indeed, he appeared wild and barbaric but was actually a reasonable person with an inquisitive thought process. He was not a fool and clearly knew who his real enemy was!

.....

The sun was setting in the western sky. Long Yu and Feng Longsong travelled all the way back to the border areas but noticed that Mongolian forces were not chasing them, making them feel somewhat strange.

"I have heard that Old General's son is a highly talented Major General and quite smart as well."

Feng Longsong made a speculation: “Perhaps he has figured out something and order his soldiers to not chase us.”

“I believe I’ve seen him earlier in the battlefield.”

Long Yu searched his recent memories and remembered the barbaric looking man. Long Yu never imagined that he would end up having such an indirect relationship with that savage looking man.

Both of their fathers used to great generals, enemies in duty and friends in personal life. What an ironical relationship he had with Man Xin!

In other words, Long Yu’s identity had long been known to Man Xin, which was the reason why Long Yu was ignored by Mongolian soldiers in the battlefield.

Not to mention, both of them had a common enemy and that was Chu Chao Sheng, the current emperor of Tang Kingdom!

“Although I have not yet met him properly, I still am looking forward to meet him in the future.....”

Long Yu thought that perhaps in the future, Man Xin would lend him a helping hand while dealing with Chu Chao Sheng!

Of course, this was something that was way too far in the future.

Even his daughter was too powerful to deal with, right now!

In fact even Baiyun Zong was not an opponent of Chu Chao Sheng which also indicated that he was much stronger Long Yu.

“I forgot to ask, how is this copper sword in your possession?”

They were about to reach Tang Guan and he finally remembered something, could not help but ask.

He remembered clearly that this copper sword was handed over to Feng Yao by Feng Longsong.

Feng Longsong sighed then said: “Small Yao came to Yu Guan City to bid farewell and left this sword with me. I think she has ventured out of Tang Kingdom.”

“She left Tang Kingdom? Where is she headed?”

Long Yu frowned.

His never had any special feelings for her, but whatever might be the case, she was still the daughter of his foster father. He naturally got a bit curious when he heard about her going out of Tang Kingdom.

Feng Yao had considered Liu Yuan as her goal from infancy to maturity. Was she perhaps instigated by what happened in the Ling Clan's Villa?

Liu Yuan was already a powerhouse of Zhenling second layer and she was still at Wudao eighth layer at the time! Perhaps the shock caused by this disparity was enough to set her in motion.

“Wang Tianzhuo's cultivation has been destroyed by you, so naturally he won't cause any trouble for her anymore, but she wants to surpass Liu Yuan and doesn't want to stay in Tang Kingdom until that happens.”

Feng Longsong sighed again: “Now, I do not know where she is and this worries me..... Small Yu, I know that she is somewhat excessive and has never treated you well but if you meet her in the future, please remember the poor face of your foster father and go easy on her.”

“.....”

Long Yu did not speak.

Feng Yao is somewhat excessive? She sent her servants to kill him! If Nine Hidden Dragon Mark has not activated back then, he would be dead right now!

According to his personality and individuality, he would never have let her live after what she did.

However, thanks to her, he realized that this world was only made for winners!

With the help of Nine Hidden Dragon Mark, he got stronger and triumphed over those who looked down on him. She would find it absolutely impossible to surpass him. Indeed, she would never be a threat to him.

That being the case, he would undoubtedly give face to his foster father and go easy on her.

But, of course, Feng Yao had stopped provoking him so there was no issue in the first place.

“Father, I promise you.”

Long Yu solemnly nodded, followed by raising his head and saw the Grand Canyon appearing in sight.

He and Feng Longsong were going to return with Old General Man Yi’s head. Now, he was curious to see how they would arrange enough evidence to put the charge of ‘treason’ upon them!

Chapter – 135 Innocence achieved

Tang Guan, Seven Grand Canyons.

This place had already become a resting place for several fallen soldiers from both the Mongolian Kingdom and the Tang Kingdom. The smallest first canyon was riddled with countless corpses and appeared like an open mass grave.

Long Yu and Feng Longsong were pacing in this snow-covered land, carrying the Old General's severed head toward its intended fate.

Although Old General Man Yi had been killed by Yu Qianning, now his severed head was in their hands.

According to the regulations of Tang Kingdom, now this credit fully went to Feng Longsong and Long Yu.

"I don't sense anyone in the canyon."

Long Yu sensed that the canyon felt very cold and bleak. He did not sense the aura of any living creature in the surrounding area, making him have some doubts.

The Tang Kingdom would usually send some patrolling teams in the canyon, but there was no one to be seen.

"As you say, Man Xin's troops had surrounded Long Ji, right? What happened after that?"

Feng Longsong frowned and tried to make a speculation.

"Anyway, we will eventually find out about all that."

Long Yu was carefully observing the surrounding area, after all, they were passing the canyons, among which the third canyon was the least dangerous one because the terrain was smooth. If there was an ambush, then he could easily discover it.

Soon, the Tang Guan Fort city appeared in sight but the city gate was shut tight. Only on the top of the city wall, several sentry post towers could be seen well constructed in a sequential manner and many Tang soldiers were on lookout duty.

The guards were alarmed the moment they saw Long Yu and Feng Longsong.

Long Yu was a wanted man with the charge of treason upon him, moreover, he was wearing a battle armor of Mongolian army!

“Get ready! Prepare your bows and arrows!”

A military chief immediately clamored out loud with a fanatical look flashing in his eyes.

Not long ago, Major General Long Ji returned to Tang Guan Fort and declared Long Yu a traitor. He also gave the order of kill on sight!

This military chief was considering himself lucky because he never imagined that a traitor would appear like this right in front of his eyes.

If he was able to kill Long Yu then wouldn't that be wonderful for his military career and also increase his chances of becoming familiar with Major General Long Ji?

However, just when the soldiers were preparing to shoot the arrows, Long Yu snorted loudly.

He raised the severed head of the Old General and shouted aloud: “Listen all of you, keep your eyes open to see clearly. This is the severed head of Mongolian Army's Old General Man Yi. Now, hurry up and open the gate!”

As soon as he said that, the chief was startled all of a sudden.

Mongolian Kingdom's Old General Man Yu!

Who would not know the name of such a war veteran from the decade-old war of Three Kingdoms?

Although later on his cultivation was injured by Chu Chao Sheng, he still continued to give nightmares to his enemies.

Several guards had their parents massacred by Man Yi in the last war!

It could be said that Old General was considered quite a frightening enemy big shot in the Tang Kingdom, and Long Yu had appeared in front of their eyes with his severed head!

“Shouldn't we open the gate?”

The guards were confused as to what they must do now.

An accused traitor was carrying the enemy commander's head. This was really a bizarre scene.

Could it be that Long Yu was disguising as a traitor in order to get close to the enemy?

"Go and report this to the Major General."

The chief guard knew that he was not competent enough to take a decision in this situation. It was now necessary to report this matter to the Major General Long Ji.

Although Long Ji was seriously injured and had ordered not to allow anyone to disturb him, but this was a serious matter and Major General might actually care to find out more about it.

"It's a command from Major General Long Ji, open the gate!"

Soon, the messenger came back with a message.

"Open the gate."

Of course, the guards did not dare to go against Long Ji's order and opened the gate.

Tang Guan Fort's tightly closed gate finally opened.

Long Yu saw a familiar figure as soon as the gate opened. It was a man in tight black clothes, waiting on the other side of the gate to greet him!

"Nice to see you, Brother Bu!"

Long Yu greeted.

"Haha, you are back, brother."

Bu Xing laughed and said: "Even though I know you will not let me down, but did not think that you would actually bring the enemy commander's head back. You have really surprised me."

Long Yu did not say anything and went inside with Feng Longsong.

Long Yu greeted Bu Xing and noticed that there a somewhat bleak atmosphere

spread in the entire Tang Guan.

Long Yu arrived next to Bu Xing and asked in a low voice: “Brother Bu, what has happened here in my absence? How is Long Ji?”

Bu Xing smiled and said: “Long Ji was seriously injured in the enemy seize and is undergoing closed door recuperation. Under the prohibition rule, no one is allowed to go out.”

I see, so Long Ji was seriously injured!

Long Yu’s complexion changed for good when he heard this news.

So it seemed like Major General Man Xin indeed had extraordinary talent, not just as a commander of troops, but also as a martial artist, perhaps even higher than Long Ji.

It was only a pity that even after all that, he was unable to stop his father’s assassination!

“What’s his condition? Is his cultivation intact?”

Long Yu showed a faint smile and asked.

If he lost his cultivation, it would naturally be a good news for Long Yu!

“His cultivation was not affected but his Zhenling blood dragon was defeat. In fact, he would have lost his own life there if Pond Snow (Chi Xue) had not arrived in time with backup.”

Bu Xing shook his head and said.

Pond Snow?

Long Yu heard the name and could not help but think of the middle-aged leader of country warriors that were stopped near the Tang Guan’s gate and weren’t allowed to participate in war!

Long Yu never thought that Pond Snow would mobilize his men to rescue Long Ji. Perhaps, even Long Ji never would have imagined that something like this could happen!

“Long Ji is not dead and that’s a good thing for me, his life is for me to take it personally.”

Long Yu thought.

He was not the type of person who would depend on other people to take down his opponents. In order to defeat formidable opponents, he just needed to level up and reach higher layers of Zhenling!

He would set up goals and beat them one at a time then his heart would be more stable to give full focus on martial arts practice!

“Right, Brother Bu, I wonder if you have seen Yu Qianning?”

Long Yu thought of something, suddenly asked.

“She came to Tang Guan.”

Bu Xing said in a stern voice: “However, she just said that you are a traitor then left. I do not know where she went.”

“Brother Bu, did you notice that she is already at Zhenling fourth layer?”

Long Yu frowned and asked.

“What?”

Bu Xing gawked for a moment.

Zhenling fourth layer?

How could this be possible!

“Has she not recently entered the Zhenling first layer?”

Bu Xing subconsciously asked.

Long Yu immediately knew that she had a certain method to hide her own level!

Then, Long Yu briefly explained what had happened in Mongolian army camp.

Of course, he didn't mention anything about his parents because there was no need for that.

“So, she turned out to be the one who assassinated Old General Man Yi..... However, since his head is in your possession then you will get the credit for the assassination, in accordance with the national law of Tang Kingdom.”

Bu Xing further said: “Having said that, in the seven sect competition, she will

be my biggest opponent.”

Long Yu did not tell about the hidden treasure trove to Bu Xing.

He was prepared to go alone to that place because it was too dangerous, even for Bu Xing, to go there. Falling into the hands of that Mongolian prince was a dead end!

“Since the war has ended, I will return to Yu Guan City with my foster father.”

Long Yu said.

“Do not be in such a rush.”

Bu Xing smiled and said: “You have done a great deed and deserve an equally great reward. Pond Snow is also getting rewarded three days from now.”

Pond Snow obviously did a great job of saving the Major General.

Similarly, Long Yu had also done a great job by bringing the head of the enemy commander!

Originally, Long Yu had also planned how to beat Yu Qianning in an argument over who assassinated the Old General after meeting her here, but she did not stay in Tang Guan, making things easier for him.

“Isn’t this the best time to seize Hidden Heavenly Thunder Reservoir?”

Long Yu thought and was quite optimistic about it!

However, he did not hit the road immediately and decided to rest for three days to check out the military award he was going to get.

.....

For the next three days spent in Tang Guan, Long Yu focused entirely on practice the best grade spiritual level skill, Awakening Palm Samsara while simultaneously familiarizing with the perception and sensibility of the half chunk of Heavenly Lunar Tablet.

And during this time, the news about Long Yu bringing back Man Yi’s head spread throughout Tang Guan, reaching the ears of 100,000 soldiers.

In this way, no matter what, no one could now dare to treat him like a traitor!

And the initial charge of treason put on him by Long Ji for colluding with enemy generals, was also washed off when Bu Xing publicly released the recorded Zhenling imprint of that battle scene to everyone.

The entire Tang Guan army had come regard Long Yu as a hero!

The injured Long Ji could not stop this perception about Long Yu from escalating!

He just issued an order to give a reward to Long Yu according to his merit.

This not just proved his innocence in front of everyone, but also turned him into a heroic figure for countless soldiers!

The far-reaching effects of this were more than enough to make Long Yu feel somewhat grateful toward the Old General.

“Old General Man Yi, I assure you, not just for you but also for myself, someday I will kill that Chu Chao Sheng!”

Long Yu made this resolution in his heart!

And three days later, a General Assembly took place to reward the meritorious people.

Major General Long Ji was seriously injured and was unable to attend the reward ceremony. So the bald senior general took the chair instead.

In the biggest square of Tang Guan Fort City, Old General Man Yi’s head was hung on the highest point to show the entire army, and to several people concentrated in the square to receive rewards according to their respective merits!

The war temporarily came to an end, and the greatest merit went to Pond Snow for saving Long Ji and to Long Yu for bringing back the enemy commander’s head.

Everyone was discussing among themselves and was curious to know the rewards that were prepared for the two?

“Old General, please bear this humiliation for a while. I will take you away from here and return you to your homeland.”

Long Yu was standing in front of the crowd, as he raised his head and looked at the Old General's head with a burning look in his eyes, brimming with confidence!

Yes, Man Yi had already won the respect of Long Yu!

Right now, his focus was not at all on the reward he was going to get soon, but on the treasure hidden in Hidden Heavenly Thunder Reservoir, as well as on the Old General's head that kept reminding him of the promise he made to him!

Chapter – 136 Long Yue Jindan

Inside the Tang Guan fortress, thousands of soldiers had gathered at the public square.

Although this time the war between the Mongolian Kingdom and the Tang Kingdom had been short-lived, many soldiers did great service for the state and the most commendable ones among them were Long Yu and Pond Snow.

In spite of being just an ordinary expert of Zhenling second layer, Pond Snow had displayed exceptional keenness on the battlefield, and at a critical point, he even managed to rescue Major General Long Ji back to safety!

However, Long Yu had to bite the bullet and after being misunderstood as a traitor, he went ahead to infiltrate into the Mongolian army camp and beheaded the enemy commander, Old General Man Yi!

These two people truly deserved to be rewarded.

Major General Long Ji did not show up for the reward ceremony due to the severe injuries he had received.

In his place sat the bald headed Senior General Yan Shan, who was a subordinate of Long Ji and was now gnashing his teeth with contempt as the glorious achievements of Long Yu were being announced before finally rewarding him.

“Major General Long Ji is severely injured, while this Long Yu is being rewarded!”

This naturally made Yan Shan uncomfortable. In spite of Long Ji proclaiming Long Yu to be a traitor, all the soldiers were now idolizing him as their hero. After all, he had evidence supporting his claim of innocence.

100,000 soldiers were not blind!

If Long Ji tried to deal with Long Yu once again, it would have a great impact on his reputation as well as on his military career. He would surely not commit such a silly mistake. Moreover, the matter had already been reported to the Imperial family and Long Ji simply could not go against the decision of the Imperial family!

As for Long Yu, he did not have to worry about dealing with Long Ji because there were more important things for him to be taken care of.

“Core disciple of Zhentian Sect, Long Yu, has brought the severed head of the enemy veteran general Man Yi and we have sent this information to the Imperial City.” Yan Shan announced in the assembly: “His Majesty, Chu Chao Sheng has ordered the boy to be rewarded with a best quality spiritual level immortality pill, Long Yue Jindan.”

Long Yue Jindan!

The mere utterance of these four words stirred up commotion in the whole Tang Guan.

Long Yue Jindan was one of the highest rewards that were bestowed upon the soldiers of the Tang army. It not only contained rich amount of Lingqi but also represented martial glory.

Since the ancient times, whoever got rewarded with Long Yue Jindan later went on to attain enormous power and glory and became the most powerful martial artists of the Tang Kingdom.

“Little Yu, this.....”

Feng Longsong was stunned as he stood beside Long Yu.

Long Yue Jindan was the highest grade immortality pill in the whole Tang Kingdom!

How could Chu Chao Sheng bestow such a precious reward upon Long Yu?

The pill was so powerful that once absorbed, it could not only enable a martial artist to condense their Zhenling but would also promote them directly to the next layer!

“It unexpectedly turned out to be Long Yue Jindan.”

Long Yu heard the announcement while walking to the other side and was startled.

“Highest reward of the Tang state just for beheading the Old General Man Yin?”

Bu Xing thought as he was also aware of the enmity between Chu Chao Sheng and Long Yu's father. He himself held great contempt for Chu Chao Sheng as he had attacked and injured his teacher, Baiyun Zong.

(TL: He got to know about Long Yu's father and other things that happened in the past from his teacher Baiyun Zong, the sect head of Zhentian Sect and also a good friend of Long Yu's father.)

"This Chu Chao Sheng is an abnormal devil and is definitely planning something."

With this thought, Long Yu's eyes flashed.

Although the whole Tang army envied him for his reward, Long Yu was as careful as ever.

He had never actually met the left prince, Chu Chao Sheng. Was his service of bringing the head of the old general really eligible for being rewarded with the greatest reward in the Tang Kingdom?

Long Yu was absolutely unconvinced with this generosity!

"I'm afraid there is something hidden in this Long Yue Jindan....."

Long Yu thought to himself while narrowing his eyes and then he walked towards the stage.

With hate and envy flashing in his eyes, the Senior General Yan Shan handed over a stylish mahogany box to Long Yu, in which was placed the best quality immortality pill of the Tang Kingdom – Long Yue Jindan!

Throughout the Tang kingdom, there was only one alchemist who could concoct this powerful immortality pill and he worked only for the Imperial Chu family.

Long Yu stood there on the stage, holding the mahogany box. Although he now had the worthiest reward which made everyone jealous of him, he did not show any signs of pride.

This was not the right time to examine the Long Yue Jindan.

"Expert Pond Snow led his troops to rescue Major General Long Jin back to safety and was very active in the battlefield. Therefore, he shall be rewarded

with a top grade spiritual level immortality pill, the Iris snow Dan; a top grade spiritual level battle armor, the Dragon Prisoner armor! In addition, the land surrounding the Ling Clan villa in the radius of 500 miles shall also belong to him!”

The bald senior general kept announcing the rewards for Pond Snow.

So many rewards for Pond Snow! He certainly has established great credibility in front of the Major General as well as the imperial clan.

Long Yu stood there, utterly surprised.

Imperial family rewarded Ling Clan villa to Pond Snow!

“Many many thanks to the Imperial family for bestowing these rewards upon me.”

Pond Snow, dressed in a brown fur jacket, steadily approached toward the stage and collected his rewards from Senior General Yan Shan.

“I have heard that the Ling Clan villa is situated at a very gloomy and barren place which is of no practical use to the Imperial family.”

Bu Xing narrowed his eyes and continued, “A piece of waste land in exchange of a brave heart – the Imperial family has really played well!”

Long Yu said nothing but couldn’t stop himself from thinking about Ling Han.

If this Pond Snow took the Ling Clan villa, what would become of Ling Han and Ling Yiyue?

In any case, Long Yu planned of contacting Pond Snow regarding this matter!

Afterward, Senior General Yan Shan praised and rewarded some more soldiers and ordinary experts who had killed the Mongolian soldiers. The more the number of killings, the more was the reward.

Among them, those who had followed Pond Snow to rescue Major General Long Ji were rewarded more and better than the others. These rewards would certainly help them in raising their cultivation levels to become stronger than ever.

However, they deserved these rewards because Pond Snow had taken with

him a large number of armed men to rescue Long Ji and hundreds of men had died in the battle that ensued.

Therefore, though Pond Snow had a dignified look on his face while accepting the reward but there was no sign of happiness in it.

This made Long Yu see him in high regard, this Pond Snow being a righteous man must be having a heavy heart.

The reward ceremony continued for the rest of the day. By the time the ceremony ended, almost every soldier had some reward, more or less. However, Bu Xing and Feng Longsong were not among the people who were rewarded that day.

“Since he had been severely injured and you, Long Yu, have rewarded with the Long Yue Jindan, the Major General must certainly be unhappy.”

Bu Xing smiled as he did not care for the reward, “You have been rewarded by Chu Chao Sheng himself. As for me and your foster father, Long Ji is not so generous to reward us.”

“At this age, I don’t mind being not rewarded.”

Feng Longsong said lightly.

“Foster father, you were injured too. Will you be able to recover soon?”

Long Yu asked, looking at Feng Longsong.

“Yes I was injured, my meridians are damaged just like the old general. I will only be able to recover with an immortality pill of a level higher than the spirit level.”

Feng Longsong shook his head and said, “Little Yu, the Lon Yue Jindan is the highest level immortality pill available in the Tang kingdom. Trying to find an immortality pill better than that would basically be useless. My meridians are blocked. Please don’t put any efforts into finding a cure, rather dedicate yourself to your practice.”

“As you command, foster father.”

Long Yu nodded his head.

Although finding an immortality pill of a level higher than the spirit level was almost impossible right now, this did not mean that Long Yu would give up.

If he could successfully cure Feng Longsong, this would not only heal his injuries but would also restore him to his former glory as a great martial artist!

In this world of Wudao where only the strong had a worth, Feng Longsong had suffered in silence for twenty years. But perhaps Long Yu would restore him to his former glory in this year itself.

Even the Old General Man Yi, who was admired by thousands of people all over the Mongolian Kingdom, could not recover his cultivation level after all those years. That pretty much explained how difficult it must be to get an immortality pill of such a high caliber which could successfully heal Feng Longsong.

“For now, I have to go back.”

After the crowd dispersed, Feng Longsong mounted a war horse and prepared to leave.

“Won’t the people of the Mongolian Kingdom try to avenge the murder of their beloved Old General?”

Bu Xing asked, narrowing his eyes.

“They will not attack us again.”

Long Yu said, shaking his head in negation. “The war has caused casualties on both the sides. Even if the Mongolian army dares to attack us, they will not be able to break through the Tang Guan fortress. All they will get is more casualties. I don’t think they would be that stupid.”

“Such being the case, I should also head back.”

Bu Xing said as his eyes shone brightly. “After fighting with the enemy Generals, I expect I will be able to break through the bottleneck and enter into the 4th layer of Zhenling. By the time I reach the sect, I may be able to congeal a solidified Hawk Zhenling.”

“Please protect my foster father on your way, Brother Bu.”

Long Yu said. “As for me, I think I should go and have a chat with Pond Snow.”

“Are we not leaving together?”

Bu Xing was extremely surprised.

“No, Brother Bu. You should head back to the sect soon as your break through the bottleneck is extremely important for defeating Yu Qianning in the seven sects competition.”

Long Yu said, shaking his head.

Bu Xing nodded and solemnly said, “Such being the case, I shall take your leave. But you should stay vigil, Brother Long. Although Long Ji is severely injured, he has so many pet dogs here in Tan Guan. Be careful and try not being framed again.”

“Rest assured, Brother Bu. I will be extremely careful.”

Long Yu nodded.

Bu Xing and Feng Longsong mounted their respective horses to depart from Tang Guan and rode in the direction of the Zhentian Sect.

After their departure, Long Yu turned around and walked towards the Tang Guan fortress where Pond Snow was temporarily residing.

He had to sort the matter about the Ling Clan Villa and the only way to do so was to have a chat with Pond Snow.

As he reached the soldiers’ residence, he asked one of the soldiers “Is Brother Pond inside?”

The man was surprised to see Long Yu there so he quickly stood up. “General Pond is resting inside. However, our general said that should General Long come here looking for him he should immediately be allowed to see him.”

General Long?

Long Yu was somewhat puzzled on being called a General but then he realized that many soldiers in Tang Guan already called him so, perhaps because of his father’s influence.

But as a matter of fact, Long Yu was no soldier in the Tang army. He was just a core disciple of the Zhentian sect.

Long Yu was also surprised by the fact that Pond Snow had been waiting for him, and this relieved him of half of the stress.

He paced forward along with the soldier and reached a cabin. Inside, Pond Snow was sitting at a wooden table and his eyes were closed.

Sensing someone just entered the cabin, Pond Snow immediately opened his eyes only to see Long Yu standing right in front of him. He laughed loudly and exclaimed, "So I have not guessed wrong. It is really you, Brother Long Yu!"

Chapter – 137 Absorbs the heart grass

Long Yu had seen Pond Snow resting and was about to leave the room when Pond Snow suddenly opened his eyes.

“Elder brother, how do you know I’m coming?”

Long Yu asked, still surprised.

“Brother Long Yu, I know you come from Zhentian Sect. I also know that you want me to return the Ling clan villa and that you are good friends with Ling Han who is the heir to that villa.”

Pond Snow stood up and smiled, “We martial artists have to stay aware of each and everything that is happening. I am also aware that the Ling clan villa is now free of the gloomy energy that previously surrounded it, and I’m afraid it has something to do with you.”

“Elder brother Pond is indeed powerful.”

Long Yu narrowed his eyes.

“Brother Long Yu, please be at ease. I, Pond Snow, bear no ill will for you.”

Pond Snow waved his hands and said, “I know that you and Major General Long Ji do not get along well. But ordinary experts like me had to seize the opportunity of rescuing Major General back to safety otherwise there are no means left to replenish our resources. I request Brother Long Yu to understand the situation.”

“It’s alright, I don’t mind.” Long Yu said shaking his head. He did not really care about it.

“Elder brother Pond Snow, do you have any plans for Ling Clan Villa?”

“No plans at all.”

Pond Snow laughed and said, “I don’t like to stay at one place for a long time. So I ought to give the Ling Clan Villa to someone else.”

“So it is.”

Long Yu thought, “It seems that this Pond Snow is accustomed of wandering and feels that staying at one single place for a long time will choke him to

death.”

“Younger brother Long Yu, rest assured. Your friend Ling Han will not be troubled.”

Pond Snow continued with a composed look on his face, “However, if you consume the Long Yue Jindan, you might end up in trouble.”

Long Yu’s expression changed as he heard these words.

Unexpectedly, Pond Snow had a clue about Long Yue Jindan!

“What do you mean, Brother Pond? Please speak clearly.”

Long Yu lightly said.

“I don’t have the exact information, but.....”

Pond Snow narrowed his eyes and said, “I have heard that His Majesty Prince Chu Chao Sheng is known for controlling people and using them as his puppets. What secret is behind this Long Yue Jindan, I don’t exactly know. But you must stay careful at all times, Brother Long Yu.”

“Thanks a lot, Elder brother Pond Snow. I will be extremely careful.”

Long Yu nodded.

Regardless of any secret, the Long Yue Jindan contained rich Ling qi and this was extremely important for Long Yu. It was so powerful that it would help him reach Zhenling 2nd layer with ease.

As a result, his basic strength would get doubled, his ability to use spirit level battle weapons and awakening palm samsara will also increase to such an extent that he will be able to compete with an expert of Zhenling 4th layer!

An ordinary expert of Zhenling 3rd layer wouldn’t be his opponent then!

As for the issue with Long Yue Jindan, Long Yu didn’t know. All he knew was that he was different from the ordinary people – he had nine hidden dragon mark on his chest.

He can let the nine hidden dragon mark absorb the Long Yue Jindan and store the Ling qi. He can later absorb this Ling qi slowly when he is sure it is safe.

Absorbing Ling qi wouldn’t be a problem for Long Yu.

After finishing the chat with Pond Snow, Long Yu took his leave and immediately returned to his shelter to take rest for three days in order to absorb the Long Yue Jindan.

In Tang Guan fortress, there were residential facilities not only for high rank military officers but also for ordinary experts. Long Yu was residing among them.

“Long Yue Jindan, a spiritual level immortality pill, I would like to check what Chu Chao Sheng has in store for me.”

Long Yu’s eyes shone brightly.

The nine hidden dragon mark on his chest would only allow the Ling qi to seep through his meridians, preventing any mishap.

He quickly activated the nine hidden dragon mark while holding the Long Yue Jindan to start absorbing Ling qi from the immortality pill.

Only rich Ling qi was being absorbed by the nine hidden dragon mark!

“The immortality pill that was awarded to Pond Snow is a very effective spiritual level immortality pill. However, since Old White has already given me the same one, the next time I use it, I will only be able to absorb half of its efficacy.”

Long Yu was pondering if he would like to exchange a top grade spiritual level soldier with Pond Snow’s Iris Snow Dan.

Earlier, Long Yu had used his nine hidden dragon fist to kill Hua Fu and obtained his battle weapon – the flaming jade talisman.

The value of that top grade spirit level battle weapon was not low. In fact, it was enough to be exchanged with a top grade spirit level immortality pill!

Long Yu wanted to enhance his cultivation and the most crucial point was lack of Yao dan or neidan of a beast in order to be able to break through the bottleneck.

However, the flaming jade talisman was more useful to experts who practiced fire control type martial skills and Pond Snow would most likely not exchange Iris Snow Dan for flaming jade talisman.

This was one of the reasons why Long Yu did not propose exchange.

As the nine hidden dragon mark was absorbing rich ling qi from the Long Yue Jindan, Long Yu began utilizing this Ling qi for a breakthrough.

In addition to the previous gift of Old White – a top grade spirit level immortality pill, Iris Snow Dan, there shall be no problem for Long Yu to have a breakthrough and reach the second layer of Zhenling realm.

Strong Ling qi entered the nine hidden dragon mark which stored it and released a great amount of Xuan qi which flowed through Long Yu's body and reached his Dantian.

The Xuan qi filled all his meridians with mysterious energy as he was about to enter the next layer of Zhenling realm.

His heart began thumping more and more fiercely as he neared the breakthrough.

As the Xuan qi completely enveloped Long Yu, he began to feel the resonance between heaven and earth.

More and more Xuan qi seeped through his meridians and completely filled his Dantian, the influence of heaven and earth resonance grew simultaneously

If an expert quenches his body with heaven and earth resonance, he can eventually achieve the world influence and enter into the realm of heaven and earth unity.

Long Yu had now quenched his heavenly arteries and was now prepared for the actual task!

As the Iris Snow Dan was completely absorbed by the nine hidden dragon mark, his heavenly arteries were now quenched and more concise.

Next, he would absorb Lon Yue Jindan to refine his Dantian. With its help, he would ultimately be able to congeal the true spirit of Zhenling. These two processes needed very rich Ling qi.

Without the help of any immortality pill or neidan of some beast, this process should take three to five years for an ordinary martial expert.

Moreover, if an ordinary expert wanted to breakthrough a Zhenling layer, he would encounter a major bottleneck.

“I have two Zhenlings in my Dantian – the sun Zhenling and the nine hidden dragon Zhenling. To be able to use them in a more accurate manner, all I need is to step into Zhenling second layer!”

Long Yu thought.

To make it happen, he had to break through the bottleneck by using the Ling qi and that too more efficiently than any ordinary martial expert!

If he wanted to know the extent of the power of the nine hidden dragon mark, he had to complete quenching his meridians and refine them. This was going to consume a huge amount of Ling qi.

If there was no Long Yue Jindan, it would have been impossible for Long Yu to step into Zhenling second layer.

“Sun Zhenling! Condensate!”

Long Yu started absorbing Ling qi from the Long Yue Jindan while carefully began to refine the Sun Zhenling. This process needed utmost care because even a slight slip of concentration could cause great damage to him.

Wastage of Ling qi could cause breakthrough failure and more Ling qi would be needed for a second attempt which would definitely be harder than the first attempt!

One whole day passed as Long Yu sat in the cottage absorbing immortality pills.

During this time, no one was supposed to disturb him.

One thought that kept troubling Long Yu during this time was that in spite of wanting to kill him, why did Long Ji not attack him now? Why did he let such a golden opportunity slip away so easily?

However, as soon as the absorption of Long Yue Jindan by the nine hidden dragon mark finished, Long Yu felt something.

There was something really nasty about this Long Yue Jindan!

“It seems that Chu Chao Sheng deliberately added some kind of strange herb in the composition of Long Yue Jindan. As I have absorbed only pure Ling qi, naturally there is some weird residue left.”

Long Yu glared at the residue of Long Yue Jindan in his hands and sneered.

Judging by the appearance of the residue, he immediately got to know what it was. He remembered seeing this strange herb while he was living in the Feng clan mansion. This herb was called “Heart Grass.”

As the name suggests, the chief function of this herb was to captivate someone’s mind.

If any ordinary person had been rewarded with Long Yue Jindan, he would’ve eagerly swallowed the Long Yue Jindan and would’ve also turned into a mindless puppet of Chu Chao Sheng!

“I must admit it was a brilliant trap but it won’t work on me since I have nine hidden dragon mark!”

Long Yu sneered.

He did not expect that within a few days of his identity being exposed, Chu Chao Sheng would pose a threat to him.

If Chu Chao Sheng had succeeded in his plan, he would’ve proudly flaunted his power by keeping the son of the former Major General Long Zaitian as his pet dog!

Unfortunately for him, his first shot at Long Yu was completely miscalculated!

Without any hesitation, Long Yu discarded the residue and began his final sprint.

All the Ling qi present in the Long Yue Jindan was completely absorbed by him.

Around 30% of the Ling qi was required to condensate and refine the Sun Zhenling while simultaneously stepping into the second layer of the Zhenling realm.

The remaining 70% ling qi would be used to refine the nine hidden dragon Zhenling!

Obviously, an ordinary Zhenling expert would need around 2-3 times more Ling qi than Long Yu would need to break through and step into the second layer!

“Chu Chao Sheng, I must thank you for this Long Yue Jindan!”

Long Yu sneered as he began to quench the nine hidden dragon Zhenling by completely filling it with Ling qi.

Zhentian sun, after being quenched, started to emit more powerful Zhentian world influence.

Nine hidden dragon mark, too, was more powerful than ever, and if released at this time, would help Long Yu in easily defeating an expert of Zhenling fourth layer!

Obviously, Long Yu wouldn't activate the nine hidden dragon mark until and unless there was no other way out because the nine hidden dragon Zhenling was scary and would certainly go berserk and wreak great havoc after coming out.

Finally, after one day and one night, Long Yu was done with the absorption of the immortality pills.

His strength was more formidable now.

He had emerged as a Zhenling expert of second layer!

Chapter – 138 Mo Fengming

Finally, Long Yu stepped into 2nd layer of Zhenling realm.

Long Yu stood up, his eyes revealing a meditating look.

“Chu Chao Sheng planned to control me with the heart grass. Since I was not fooled, it will make him alert. I’m afraid a new round of action will now unfold.....”

“Four months from now, the seven sects competition will begin. I should better stay out of Chu Chao Sheng’s sight. I should now head back to the Sect so as not to be late for the competition.”

In the seven sects competition, the whole Tang kingdom would focus on the martial prowess of various Wudao experts. At such a time, Chu Chao Sheng would certainly not be able to make any move, not to mention that there would be a lot of security as various sovereigns and elders would also be present there.

In the seven sects competition, the seven major sects of Tang kingdom participated. A participant must belong to any of the seven major sects, else he was not allowed to participate.

The participant must also be less than 30 years of age and at least be at Wudao 8th layer.

Some time ago, Bu Xing had told Long Yu that there were nine young masters in the Tang kingdom. Among them, he himself ranked eighth while the disciple from knife cut sect ranked ninth.

But the top seven masters belonged to influential families of the Tang kingdom and were not a part of any sect.

The seven sects were known for producing great Wudao experts, so when the participants clashed with each other, no one knew who was going to win.

Now it seemed that Yu Qianning had actually been concealing her actual strength.

“In order to win against Yu Qianning in the seven sects competition, I must upgrade my strength by at least one level during the next four months.”

“By the time the competition starts, Yu Qianning may already have reached Zhenling 5th layer. I should be prepared for that.....”

“To achieve my goal, I will have to practice incessantly for the next four months.”

Long Yu reminisced about some things Feng Longsong told him a long time ago.

Between the Tang kingdom, the Mongolian kingdom and the United Kingdom of Japan, there lies the Demon valley. In spite of being a highly dangerous place, it remains one of the favorite practice grounds for Wudao masters. Experts who want to rapidly increase their cultivation go there to face new challenges.

Hunting a demon beast was the main method!

Hunting a demon beast, seizing its neidan and absorbing rich Yao qi from it could boost the cultivation manifold.

If an expert kills two beasts of the exact same type then the second neidan will benefit him significantly less than the first one and hence would not be suitable for consumption. However, he can use the second neidan to exchange it with some other expert.

Neidans, immortality pills, and battle weapons were chief resources to enhance one's cultivation and many people were interested in exchanging equivalents.

For example, Zhentian sect compounded Yao dan and exchanged it with battle weapons from the Imperial city.

One could choose from a lot of places to hunt a beast as Tang kingdom had hundreds of such places, just like the Teng snake abyss in the Zhentian Mountains.

Long Yu did not want to go back to the Tang kingdom in order to avoid getting attacked by Chu Chao Sheng.

Moreover, the hunting places in the Tang kingdom did not have many beasts of Zhenling realm and killing a beast of lower cultivation level would practically be of no use to Long Yu.

“Depending upon my present strength, hunting a Zhenling beast in the Demon valley won’t land me in some major trouble. Such being the case, I should sneak out and head towards the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir before daybreak.”

Long Yu made a quick decision and silently leaped out of his cabin.

At this time of night, the weather was cloudy, moonlight was vague and the stars were dim. Most of the people in the Tang Guan were resting.

A handful of soldiers were out on patrol, prepared against any sneak attack from the Mongolian army.

In the darkness of the dim-lit night, Long Yu grabbed his Qian dragon spear and quietly took a dragon prance. As he reached the maximum height of his jump, he immediately used ghost flash technique and disappeared into thin air.

The next moment he appeared in the seven grand canyons of Tang Guan.

Long Yu thought to follow Feng Longsong in order to inquire him about the exact location of the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir so as to not get lost. As far as he knew, in order to sneak his way to the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir, he would have to pass through the Great Snow Mountains belonging to the Mongolian kingdom.

For an ordinary martial expert, sneaking through the Mongolian mountains would be an extremely difficult task.

But for Long Yu, it was no big deal.

Moreover, martial experts with high cultivation levels just could not be stopped by the Great Snow Mountains and the Mongolian army, for example Yu Qianning!

If a Zhenling fourth layer expert like Yu Qianning decided to go to the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir, naturally no one could stop such an expert.

However, if ordinary martial experts tried to go to the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir, their path would surely be blocked by the Mongolian Prince.

It was known that the Mongolian Prince not only was a fierce Zhenling expert but also led a number of powerful soldiers to the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir!

A pair of gray wings emitting black ripples flashed behind Long Yu and his

whole body darted through the snow.

All the way long, the snow was gleaming under the moonlight, Long Yu kept changing his path so that no one could track him down.

The Lunar qi from the lunar tablet was seeping through the wings and hence the power of the lunar wings was increased at this time.

In this dim lit night, Long Yu paced forward like a shadow.

When he reached the Great Snow Mountains, instead of advancing towards the camp, he directly entered the mountain range.

The Heavenly Thunder Reservoir was located deep inside the Great Snow Mountains of Mongolia!

Suddenly, Long Yu sensed the aura of someone approaching him at a great pace.

“Who is it?”

Long Yu said in a cold voice and immediately became vigilant.

However, the speed of the other party was much faster than he had imagined and was about to catch up with him.

As Long Yu looked on, he saw a young man dressed in black clothes, hands crossed behind his back, a scabbard hanging on his waist, was approaching him making his way through the blizzard.

From that scabbard, rich lunar qi was emitting, similar to that coming from the lunar tablet!

“This man’s cultivation is even higher than Long Ji and Yu Qianning. He must at least be at 5th layer of Zhenling realm.”

Long Yu quickly judged the person approaching him, “In addition to such a high cultivation level, the scabbard he is carrying is emitting Lunar qi just like my lunar tablet does, and this person appears to be less than 30 years of age. No doubt about it, he is Mo Fengming!”

Mo Fengming had obtained lunar debris five years ago and had forged a scabbard using it. Hence he rose in the Tang kingdom, entering the elite group of

the nine 30-year-old experts, ranking third among them.

His cultivation was much higher than Bu Xing, and if the two of them ever competed against each other, he would need perhaps only one move to defeat Bu Xing!

Mo Fengming, who was in a hurry and was moving at a great speed through the snow, paid no attention towards Long Yu as he passed by and soon disappeared from Long Yu's sight.

"So this is Mo Fengming!" Long Yu thought to himself.

Obviously, Mo Fengming had easily recognized Long Yu.

"However both Mo clan and Long clan are among the most prestigious families of the Tang kingdom and they mutually dislike each other."

Long Yu sneered, narrowing his eyes.

Mo Fengming had no hostility towards Long Yu. Rather, he wanted to use Long Yu to drain out the power of the Long clan and also to cause trouble for Chu clan!

"While I face the Long clan and the Chu Chao Sheng on my own, I will certainly pay no attention towards Mo clan, and this way, Mo clan will reap the profits from the clash."

"But how can this Mo Fengming be so assured that I will bring great trouble upon the Long clan and Chu Chao Sheng?"

Long Yu had come across a lot of information while learning about Mo Fengming.

Although most of the information he got was speculation, but it was not far from the facts.

With the black-clad figure of Mo Fengming disappearing from his sight, Long Yu heard the sound of thunderclaps coming from the direction in which Mo Fengming went away.

A faint flash of lightning blazed far away and the clouds, surrounding that area, appeared transparent.

“There lies the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir!”

Long Yu felt a chill running down his spine.

He could feel the horrors that were hidden in the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir by just having a look at the lightening that was blazing there. The lightening was so fierce that it felt to him that its power might crush him in a single second!

At this time, Long Yu suddenly sensed a familiar aura being emitted by the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir.

“This is the aura of a Heavenly Tablet!”

Long Yu soon realized that the thunder and lightning surrounding the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir were actually a result of Heavenly Tablet’s power.

The Heavenly Tablet’s aura was produced from the resonance between heaven and earth, and Long Yu was quite familiar with it.

It seemed to him as if the nine hidden dragon mark was trying to convey the location of the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir to him even though he was very far from the place, and this was making him more and more interested in Heavenly Thunder Reservoir.

The speed of his lunar wings increased, thereby decreasing the distance between him and Heavenly Thunder Reservoir.

In front of him, Great Snow Mountains stretched up to miles, capped with snow, gleaming in the moonlight. Because of the stretch of the mountains, his vision was obscured.

Long Yu roughly estimated that he was now at a distance of less than hundred miles from the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir.

From this point onwards, he became more vigilant. Since the Mongolian Prince wanted to seize the treasure from this reservoir, he must have sent his troops on patrol near this sierra.

Though he wanted to sneak away quietly, suddenly a sneer passed from his side.

“So finally you came! I have been waiting for you for a long time!”

As this cold female voice reached Long Yu, a shadow leaped behind him and launched a sudden attack on him!

“Yu Qianning!”

Long Yu’s heart made a sudden jump.

He had not expected that Yu Qianning would also come to Heavenly Thunder Reservoir, moreover, would correctly guess that he would also be coming there and prepare an ambush!

Chapter – 139 The elder killed

If Long Yu had to face a sneak attack from Yu Qianning while he was still at the 1st layer of Zhenling realm, he would have suffered defeat.

However, at the present, Long Yu was a Zhenling 2nd layer expert.

“Zhentian domain!”

Immediately, Long Yu released Zhentian domain, and in a blink of an eye, the Sun Zhenling appeared behind him. Yu Qianning’s sneak attack was stagnated by this and rendered ineffective.

Long Yu then silently took a dragon prance, and in a single jump, he covered a distance of 1000 feet!

The sneak attack launched by Yu Qianning failed immediately.

“Long Yu, you have stepped into the 2nd layer of Zhenling realm in such a short period of time. If I let you go today, you will pose a great threat to me in future!”

Yu Qianning’s cold voice could be heard echoing from all the directions and hence it was impossible to find out her exact location.

The shadow that she had congealed using the Qiansi shadow manipulation technique slowly disappeared under the moonlit peak.

The next moment, Long Yu found himself caught under the immense pressure of Imperial domain.

“Imperial domain!”

Yu Qianning had actually comprehended a core law and she used it on Long Yu!

The core law of the imperial Chu clan was called ‘Spring and Autumn Emperor Law’. This core law along with the core laws of Long clan and Mo clan formed three strongest core laws of the Tang kingdom.

The cultivation of Spring and Autumn Emperor facilitated the comprehension of Heaven and earth resonance and hence its Imperial domain was more powerful than Zhentian domain!

As Yu Qianning used Imperial domain technique, the whole body of Long Yu

was enveloped in strong pressure exerted by the Imperial domain and all his movements came to a halt immediately.

Yu Qianning had entered into the 4th layer of Zhenling realm and hence her basic strength was four times more than that of Long Yu. Moreover, Spring and autumn core law was stronger than Zhentian tactics.

In this double clash, Long Yu was suddenly in a disadvantageous position.

“Not good.”

Long Yu’s heart throbbed. He knew that if Yu Qianning launched an attack at this time, he would neither be able to move nor be able to resist!

“Nine Hidden Dragon Mark! Activate!”

Long Yu activated his nine hidden dragon mark and dense Xuan qi rushed toward his lunar wings. At the same time, using the lunar qi, he started comprehending the lunar law.

Since the day he had obtained the lunar tablet, he had waited for some leisure time to comprehend the heavenly influence of lunar qi.

Now at this critical moment, while facing Yu Qianning, Long Yu suddenly saw a bright flash of powerful lunar qi.

“The first layer of Lunar qi comprehension is actually called lunar mood!”

Long Yu felt the strength of the lunar mood seeping through his heart.

Moreover, the inherent core law contained the Heavenly Lunar Tablet was actually even more powerful than the Imperial core law.

“I should leave comprehending the core law and heavenly influence for later, because right now, I don’t have time to waste thinking about all that.....”

As Long Yu was pondering, immediately, the lunar mood burst out of his body!

Clearly, even after congealing the lunar mood, Long Yu was still not an opponent of Yu Qianning.

But as soon as he congealed the lunar mood, he formed an unexpected resonance with his lunar wings!

The nine hidden dragon qi transformed the lunar wings to a top-grade spiritual

level battle weapon and this decreased his difficulty significantly.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!”

Long Yu was surprised with his new found strength as the lunar wings flapped in rhythm with his heartbeat.

A beam of tyrannical lunar qi burst out of the lunar wings and completely enveloped Long Yu’s body, slowly decreasing the heavy pressure exerted by the Imperial domain.

“Lunar explosion!”

As this energy seeped through the body of Long Yu, it helped him a lot to regain his state of freedom.

Although this would last only one or two breaths, this little time was enough for Long Yu to break free!

“Ghost flash!”

Long Yu’s body started fading and soon disappeared into thin air. The next moment he appeared 100 feet away from his previous position. He swept his Qian dragon spear and further leaped a hundred feet into the sky!

“How can this be?”

Yu Qianning, wearing a yellow dress, was suppressing Long Yu with the pressure of the imperial domain but he still managed to leap away in a blink of an eye!

Only the lunar qi contained in a lunar tablet could display the power comparable to the imperial domain.

Since Yu Qianning had trained with Chu Chao Sheng right from her childhood, she certainly knew about the existence of lunar tablets.

“This Long Yu must have found a lunar tablet while he was hunting for treasure in the Ling Clan villa.”

Yu Qianning was full of greed now, “Over the years I have known the existence of heavenly lunar tablets but I could never get one for myself. That Mo Fengming got just a fragment of it and with its help he enhanced his cultivation so much

that now he is one of the top young experts of Tang kingdom. If I seize the lunar tablet from this Long Yu then.....”

This thought filled Yu Qianning with extreme excitement.

She had come to the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir to enhance her strength and this seemed like a great opportunity. Even a small fragment of this lunar tablet would be more than enough for her!

Since the lunar tablet was with Long Yu now, how could she be at ease?

To seize the lunar tablet, she had to kill Long Yu!

Obviously, Long Yu didn't know that Yu Qianning had understood the reason behind this sudden burst of energy, so he kept hiding while gradually moving towards the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir.

As he resonated with the lunar wings, his speed increased to a terrifying extent and he was moving like a flash of light in the snow capped mountains.

“Heavenly Thunder Reservoir has been attracting the nine hidden dragon mark for quite some time.”

At this moment, it was extremely difficult for Long Yu to face Yu Qianning who was chasing him with an intention to kill. The only way to escape from her was to head toward the territory dominated by the Mongolian Prince. This might land him in more trouble but he didn't have any other options either.

Moreover, since there might be a heavenly tablet buried in this Heavenly Thunder Reservoir, he didn't want to miss this golden opportunity.

Moving forward, Long Yu brushed past a number of Mongolian soldiers who were patrolling there. Even they wondered who had just run past them.

They merely saw a shadow passing by and hence they could not chase him down.

All they could do was to inform the Mongolian Prince about this trespasser so that more patrolling troops could arrive.

That night, the sound of thunderclaps coming from the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir was increasing and so was the number of people approaching Heavenly Thunder Reservoir.

As seen by the patrol troops, a total of about ten people had arrived there and each one of them had high cultivation like Mo Fengming, Yu Qianning *etc.*

After resonating with the Lunar wings, the speed of Long Yu was just as much as Mo Fengming and therefore the patrol troop was unable to identify him or track him.

However, while advancing towards the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir, Long Yu saw the number of patrol troops was increasing and it obviously meant that they would try to stand in his way.

“Yu Qianning is fiercely chasing me, so even if I come across more patrol troops on my way ahead, I can’t go backward.”

While he rushed forward, Long Yu’s Dantian began throbbing in sync with his heart and released Xuan qi constantly to maintain his speed. However, this was going to make him vulnerable as all the stored Xuan qi would be exhausted eventually.

Yu Qianning, who was still chasing Long Yu, was somewhat shocked.

No matter what, Long Yu’s speed should not have surpassed her speed as she was at the 4th layer of Zhenling realm!

Having missed an opportunity of finishing him, it had become extremely difficult for Yu Qianning to catch Long Yu. Only if there was a powerhouse who could stop Long Yu!

Long Yu rushed forward with his lunar wings turning his figure into a streamer across the gleaming white snow.

While he wanted to rush headlong into the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir, suddenly a body covered with blazing flames appeared right in front of him and blocked his path!

“Someone from Tibetan Fire Temple?”

Long Yu coldly said in his heart and immediately speculated about the identity of the person.

Earlier, he had killed Hua Fu who was the son of the head of Tibetan Fire Temple. He used to be the second ranked core disciple of the sect with a

cultivation of Zhenling second layer.

But the person in the red robe, who was standing in front of Long Yu, appeared to be an elder with a cultivation of Zhenling third layer!

As this old man looked towards Long Yu, his eyes flashed with colors of contempt.

Once he killed Long Yu, he would go back to the Tibetan Fire Temple and receive rewards from the sovereign for avenging the death of his son.

As the old man stood facing his palm towards Long Yu, numerous flames erupted from his palm that burnt a large area of land in front of Long Yu.

“Exploding earth inflammation!”

This martial skill, although, was only a low-level skill but since it was displayed by an expert of Zhenling 3rd layer, it might cause great damage to Long Yu, ruining his appearance!

“Yu Qianning is chasing me. Although this old man is a Zhenling 3rd layer expert, my only option is to face him!”

With this thought, Long Yu’s eyes flashed with a killing intention.

“My turn!”

Long Yu jumped in the air, leaping past the flames gushing towards him from beneath!

He bit his finger and sprinkled his blood on the Qian dragon spear, activating the black lines on the spear and then displayed ‘Lamella touch’.

Although the cultivation of this Tibetan Fire Temple elder was more, the Lamella touch attack changed his complexion.

If he was unable to resist this move, it would kill him immediately!

“Three ways heavenly fire explosion!”

As the Tibetan Fire Elder’s palms met, flames gushed forward from three directions and rushed towards Long Yu. At the same time, a three-flame Zhenling appeared behind him. It spread an aura of destruction in the surroundings.

Under the sudden impact of infinitely high temperature, the snow in the

surrounding area began to melt rapidly and attracted the attention of a patrol troop of Mongolian soldiers.

While the Tibetan Fire Elder was busy defending himself, Long Yu launched his fist.

“Nine hidden dragon fist, awakening palm samsara!”

The massive strength of the samsara enveloped the elder completely, and within a few breaths’ time, his cultivation dropped to Zhenling 2nd layer.

“What just happened?”

The complexion of the elder turned pale.

“Nine hidden dragon fist, intoxicated hell!”

Long Yu did not give the elder any time to think. While the elder was engaged in resisting Long Yu’s previous attack, Long Yu hit his fist on the ground with a bang!

Nine hidden dragon qi accumulated under the foot of the elder and suddenly exploded!

Nine hidden dragon qi entered the elder’s body and began to erode him internally. The elder was immediately killed by it and his dried up corpse collapsed on the ground!

Although it took some time to explain the entire scene, Long Yu actually killed the elder in a matter of seconds!

Chapter – 140 Jumped into the reservoir

This elder wanted to kill Long Yu to avenge the death of Hua Fu, the son of the sovereign of Tibetan Fire Temple, so that he could go back and receive rewards.

However, he never imagined that Long Yu, who was at the 2nd layer of Zhenling realm, would kill him so easily!

“Go!”

Long Yu picked up his nine hidden dragon spear without any hesitation, flapped his lunar wings and continued his journey towards the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir.

After the delay caused by the interruption of this elder, Yu Qianning managed to get close to Long Yu.

However, Long Yu was still beyond the reach of her Imperial domain.

“This boy!”

Yu Qianning clenched her teeth and a cold look flashed in her eyes.

She thought that the interruption caused by a powerful expert would slow Long Yu down and she would be able to catch him then seize the Heavenly lunar tablet from him.

However, she could not imagine that Long Yu would be able to kill an elder of Zhenling 3rd layer and that too in such a short time.

For Yu Qianning, it was no less getting struck by a thunderbolt dropping from clear sky!

All along, she thought of her talent to be extraordinary, but now when compared to Long Yu, she felt inferior.

Long Yu was able to surpass the barrier of one layer and killed his opponent instantly!

She would never be able to do such a thing!

“Die!”

With this thought, Yu Qianning covered her body with a murderous aura and

her yellow robed body passed through the sea of fire unharmed, chasing Long Yu.

In the moonlit night under the snow capped mountains, both of them were running as fast as two meteors playing the game of tag.

Long Yu, after dodging numerous Mongolian patrol troops, finally arrived at the central region of the mountains. He could see that not far away there was a long and dense row of tents.

The Prince of the Mongolian kingdom along with his army had stationed his encampment over there.

And on the other side of the camp was an electro-optical masterpiece – the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir!

Since Yu Qianning was chasing him fiercely, Long Yu didn't dare to stop there.

To the utter disbelief of Yu Qianning, Long Yu went straight towards the camp and stirred a commotion which prompted numerous soldiers to step out of their tents!

A warning horn sounded loudly and alarmed all about an intruder.

Immediately, numerous Mongolian soldiers emerged from the tents, encircled Long Yu and started moving towards him with killing intention. This scene was spectacular.

“Heavenly Thunder Reservoir! No doubt, whoever enters it will die immediately. But the nine hidden dragon mark is instigating me to enter it. Such being the case, I will enter the reservoir regardless of the consequences that may follow.”

Long Yu's eyes shone with the colors of firm resolution. Even the mightiest of the forces could not stop Long Yu now!

However, Yu Qianning stopped her chase and was now hiding not far away.

If she got trapped in the encirclement of Mongolian troops, she would be doomed to die!

Was Long Yu out of his mind? Why would he dare to go straight into the enemy camp?

Right from the start, Yu Qianning used to think that Long Yu had colluded with the Mongolian kingdom, but now she was quick to notice that the Mongolian soldiers were approaching him, showing no leniency.

“Interesting!”

Mo Fengming, who was standing atop a mountain peak nearby, pondered as he looked at this scene: “This Long Yu entered the Mongolian encampment right in front of the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir – something which even I, Mo Fengming, cannot dare to do. I would like to see what he intends to do next.”

At this moment, anyone – be it Mo Fengming or Yu Qianning or the Mongolian troops – had not even imagined that Long Yu’s goal was to actually enter the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir!

“Forward!”

Long Yu’s footsteps did not dare to stop because if stopped even for a moment, he would be completely surrounded by the Mongolian troops.

Even if he was able to kill many people, he would finally be exhausted and captured.

Moreover, killing so many people here held no significance.

He swept his spear and a burst of air emerged which took him 100 feet into the sky toward a nearby mountain peak.

That mountain peak was a desolated peak and beyond it was the dangerous Heavenly Thunder Reservoir. If he slipped from the peak he would end up falling into the reservoir and die immediately!

Seeing his goal to be that desolate mountain peak, everyone was confused.

“Is this guy out of his mind?”

First he rushed through the Mongolian lands, then he rushed towards the desolate peak and now he was ready to jump into the deadly reservoir!

This boy was courting death!

Just then, from the largest central tent of the Mongolian camp, a 20 year-old boy stepped out, holding his head high.

The young man was wearing a shining armor and his stature was grandiose. His head was adorned with a purple crown on which two pheasant feathers were attached – he looked just like General Lu Bu from the three kingdom era.

“Young Prince, why are your orders?”

One of the senior generals bowed down to him and politely asked.

“Chase him. I want to see him run for his life.”

The young man with the purple crown was the Mongolian prince. His eyes showed that he was interested in observing Long Yu’s escape.

The Mongolian prince had certainly heard about Long Yu previously, and now he stood there, watching Long Yu run off to the desolate peak, courting his own death. Of course, he would not personally come into action and pursue Long Yu.

Such a boy didn’t deserve a Mongolian prince’s attention!

While Long Yu rushed towards the desolate peak, he noticed the purple crowned Mongolian prince watching him and was quite surprised to see that the opposite party had not launched any fatal attack against him.

Perhaps in the eyes of the Mongolian prince, the gap between the two sides was too big as he watched Long Yu with disdainful eyes.

Long Yu in a mad stimulation of movement rushed towards the peak as more and more soldiers approached him from behind. He did not dare to stop and kept on moving forward.

His speed surpassed that of the Mongolian soldiers by a large margin!

From the others’ point of view, Long Yu’s move of heading towards the desolate peak was simply a dead end which might even lead him to his death.

But only Long Yu knew that heading towards the peak might give him a slim chance of survival!

Long Yu released Xuan qi and rushed as fast as he could and was soon at a cliff on the desolate peak. This place was just 120 feet away from the Heavenly Thunder reservoir.

And behind him, thousands of troops continued to encircle him so that he had

no chance of breaking the encirclement and running anywhere.

Unfortunately for them, they had never imagined that Long Yu had no plans of breaking the encirclement.

“Forward! Go!”

Long Yu stepped forward and his grey lunar wings flapped fiercely. His figure turned into a black streamer as he jumped directly into the Heavenly Thunder reservoir!

“This is insane!”

Yu Qianning was shocked to see Long Yu rush towards the reservoir.

Now, even if Long Yu died inside the reservoir, she would not be able to seize his lunar tablet. This was worse!

“What?”

Mo Fengming as well as the Mongolian prince watched Long Yu enter the reservoir wrinkling their eyebrows.

They all now clearly understood – right from the beginning, Long Yu had planned to jump off the cliff and enter the reservoir. And since this move was premeditated, there must be some hidden significance to it.

However, the Heavenly Thunder reservoir had an indomitable destructive power. Even if a Zhenling realm powerhouse entered it, he would die instantly!

Along with the Mongolian prince and Mo Fengming, the complexions of all the Mongolian generals and soldiers changed as well. Long Yu reached the desolate peak in one single step and then even dared to jump off to enter the Heavenly Thunder reservoir!

Almost immediately, several thunderbolts came out of the thunder mines. They were attracted by the nine hidden dragon mark and dived towards him.

“If I survive this, see you again.”

Long Yu clenched his teeth, and without stopping even for a moment, he activated his nine hidden dragon mark and covered his whole body with the nine hidden dragon qi.

“Bang!”

The thunderbolts with terrifying destructive power fell on the top of Long Yu’s head instantly!

However, the impact of his collision was immediately absorbed by the nine hidden dragon qi enveloping Long Yu’s body and hence Long Yu emerged out unharmed.

“That was a right bet!”

Long Yu happily chuckled, immediately moving towards the centre of the reservoir at a faster pace than ever.

The area surrounding the centre of the heavenly thunder reservoir was full of such thunder mines and Long Yu did not want to get injured by any of them.

As the Lunar wings resonated with Long Yu, he flashed past numerous thunder mines and soon disappeared into thin air.

“Even the thunder mines couldn’t kill him!”

Outside the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir, the Mongolian prince, Yu Qianning, Mo Fengming and several other people watched with great shock.

But soon after, they shook their heads in disappointment.

The power of the reservoir was so destructive that no Zhenling realm master would be able to survive once he entered it.

Even if Long Yu appeared to be alright after being struck by the thunder mines numerous times, he must be severely injured.

He was courting death!

“Such a suicidal fool!”

Almost everyone present there thought so and smiled with contempt.

For them, Long Yu was certainly going to die inside the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir.

Yu Qianning, who was hiding not far from the place where Mo Fengming was standing, continued to hide, waiting for an opportunity.

As for the thousands of Mongolian soldiers, they returned to their camps after attending the alert.

The news of Long Yu breaking into the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir spread like wild fire.

Though the news induced mocking smiles and nothing more!

However it was not known to them that amidst all the roaring thunder of the reservoir, Long Yu had finally stopped running.

A while ago, the nine hidden dragon mark conveyed him some information – this Heavenly Thunder Reservoir thunder mine had great power and this power could be used for refining flesh!

“I can refine my body with the power of thunder.”

Long Yu was shocked as he deciphered the information conveyed by the nine hidden dragon mark.

Initially he had thought that by trusting the nine hidden dragon mark he would find a way to escape by entering the heavenly thunder reservoir.

But now the nine hidden dragon mark was instigating him to refine his body by exploiting the power from the thunder mines.

No pain, no gain.

Soon after stepping into the world of Wudao, Long Yu had endured a lot of pain while refining his body using demon tyrant form.

Refining his flesh with the power of the thunder mines would cause him much more pain than he had ever been through, but this immense pain would also strengthen his body beyond imagination!

He would emerge out stronger than ever!

Long Yu's eyes gleamed.

Since the nine hidden dragon mark had provided him with this rare opportunity, Long Yu was eager to take the risk and was willing to give it a try!

Chapter 141 Heavenly Thunder refining body

Since the day Long Yu had stepped into the Zhenling realm, he had felt that the relationship between him and the nine hidden dragon mark was now growing stronger.

The nine hidden dragon mark worked on his Dantian and conveyed some blurry information to him every now and then – just like it conveyed the information about the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir and was now asking him to refine his flesh using the power from the thunder mines.

At this moment, Long Yu's ears were on the verge of getting deafened because of the roaring thunderclaps coming from the thunder mines. Apart from the thundering noise, there was no other sound that could be heard by Long Yu.

Countless thunder mines had illuminated the entire night sky and several thunder mines were interwoven to form a power grid like structure which closed in over Long Yu.

Although the northern lands were constantly covered with snow, not a single trace of snow could be found inside the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir.

It was a completely desolate place and due to constantly colliding thunderbolts, the rocks had become too hard and were even emitting some amount of electric charge and lightning sparks.

“Thunder mines can refine my body, but presently I am not strong enough to bear the direct bombardment of these thunderbolts. I have to store the power coming from these thunder mines in the nine hidden dragon mark so that I can use it later to refine my body.”

With this thought, Long Yu activated his nine hidden dragon mark to start absorbing the power of the thunder mines.

After the activation of the nine hidden dragon mark, the power of all the thunder mines that hit Long Yu's head would automatically be stored in the nine hidden dragon mark, leaving Long Yu unscathed. And this energy would simply be inexhaustible!

As Long Yu started absorbing the thunder energy, his body functions slowed

down almost immediately. His present cultivation level was not enough to bear the impact of the thunderbolts. As a result of that, his body was now incapacitated and severely aching.

Demon Tyrant form alone was not sufficient to defend his body from the adverse impacts of the exploding thunder mines!

However, Long Yu clenched his teeth to resist the destructive power of the thunder mines, letting it slowly seep through his body and flow into his meridians, finally integrating with the Xuan qi present in his body.

As the thunder power integrated with his Xuan qi, his body collapsed immediately, deprived of even slightest energy and fell limply on the rocks beneath him.

Since the nine hidden dragon mark was absorbing the power seeped into Long Yu's body, it could not grant him any protection against the bombardment of the thunderbolts that fell upon his body.

However, Long Yu absorbed the power of an entire thunder mine and collapsed to the ground.

Even though his willpower was strong, Long Yu's body was not strong enough to withstand the devastating power of these thunder mines exerted on his body. Even a slight trace of this thunder energy was capable of destroying his cultivation!

However, this did not stop him.

Long Yu activated his nine hidden dragon mark again and started absorbing another thunder mine. This thunder mine was like a silky ray of thunder and was thicker than the previous one and hence it could be imagined what enormous power it must be holding inside it. This was going to injure Long Yu's body even more severely.

However, if he truly wanted to refine his flesh using the thunder mines, he must withstand all the injuries caused by the bombardment of the thunder mines.

In order to achieve supreme strength, Long Yu had to bear all this pain!

As he began slowly absorbing the second thunder mine and quenching his meridians, he went through immense pain which he was only able to endure because of his unshakable willpower.

If a person decided to absorb the thunder mines, the pain resulted during the absorption of the first mine would be so immense that it would surely dissuade him from continuing further.

But Long Yu was as firm as ever and was resolutely absorbing the second thunder mine, not interrupting the process even for a single moment!

He stretched his limbs out as more and more thunder mines bombarded him and their energy was being absorbed by the nine hidden dragon mark.

A day and a night passed and Long Yu had completely absorbed one thin and one thick thunder mine as well as he withstood the bombardment of the other thunder mines. When he compared the strength of his meridians, he found out that his meridians were now ten times stronger than they earlier were!

However, at this moment, his body had reached its limit.

Just when he started absorbing another thunder mine, his vision blurred and he fainted immediately!

The nine hidden dragon mark forced him to take some rest.

Perhaps the nine hidden dragon mark had no idea that this absorption of thunder mines would hit Long Yu so hard.

Since Long Yu's body could no longer withstand the bombardment of the thunder mines, in order to prevent complete physical breakdown, the nine hidden dragon mark had induced a state of unconsciousness.

During this unconscious state, Long Yu felt as if he had come to a totally different place.

"It is a dream...a dream that follows my previous dream!"

Long Yu's heart jumped suddenly!

He opened his eyes, looked around, and found himself floating mid-air, overlooking the vast expanse of sky and earth.

In front of him, he saw what he had previously seen – “Descendents of the Dragon tribe!”

He took a broad view of the “Descendents of the Dragon” tribe and noticed that several masters of body refining type martial skills were constantly entering and exiting the village.

Moreover, the powerhouses of this tribe were walking as if they were flying in the air and appeared as if they were immortal gods!

“I remember seeing this tribe in my vision previously, but that vision was directed from earth and did not have any view of the sky. But now as I am watching from the sky, it appears that this tribe has many terrific powerhouses who can even fly in the air!”

Were these powerhouses in the fabled realm of heaven and man harmony?

Long Yu’s heart started beating fast.

In the entire Tang kingdom, there were merely a handful of people that had reached the realm of Man-Heaven harmony and they did not appear in front of other people.

And right now, right in front of him, were numerous powerhouses of the realm of Man-Heaven harmony and that too in a single tribe!

Then the scene changed immediately.

He saw the martial court of the tribe where several 15 years-old boys had released their Zhenlings and were indulged in practice fights. They were also using various kinds of high-level martial skills.

These young boys had cultivation levels comparable to the top martial experts of the Tang kingdom!

A 15-year-old boy was in the Zhenling realm he would certainly soon enter the realm of Man-Heaven harmony!

Perhaps in this tribe, the realm of Man-Heaven harmony was just an ordinary level.

The Zhenlings released by these boys were nine hidden dragon Zhenlings while their martial skills were nine hidden dragon fist, not to mention their battle

weapons were Qian dragon spears!

Long Yu preserved these scenes in his mind one by one.

He probably knew that these visions were not random visions but were meant to guide him to use his nine hidden dragon mark. In fact, by observing the young masters practising, he could also learn how to enhance the power of his nine hidden dragon mark.

The scene changed again.

Inside a thatched hut, a gentle-looking old man was teaching martial arts to a 5 or 6 years old boy.

“Our world contains 9000 principles. Those who control these laws control the heaven and earth and hence achieve provides unsurpassed martial power.”

“These principles are divided into four levels – the golden rock level, the mysterious jade level, the imperial seal level and the heavenly crystal level. The golden rock level is the weakest, but the heavenly crystal level is the strongest and grants formidable strength!”

“A martial expert begins with the mood, and then gradually comprehends the charm, the influence, the domain and finally comprehends the principle. After completely comprehending the principle, one can reach the realm of Man-Heaven harmony otherwise he will forever stay stuck with domain.”

“The heavenly tablet is of great importance to the experts at the imperial seal level. A person who is in the realm of Man-Heaven realm can use a heavenly tablet to absorb its Ling qi which will facilitate the fast comprehension of the imperial seal level of a principle and thus will grant great strength.”

“Moreover, the senior martial experts can integrate their comprehended core law with specific world principles to enhance its power. In fact, the comprehension of a core law also makes the comprehension of a world prince quite easy...”

Long Yu was on the other side, listening to whatever this old man was saying, and suddenly felt enlightened.

It turned out that the world laws really existed in this world in the form of

9000 principles!

The golden rock level, the mysterious jade level, the imperial seal level and the heavenly crystal level!

The four levels of world laws granted different strengths and the power contained in a heavenly tablet was of Imperial seal level.

Then, the Zhentian core law and the Knife-cut core law were only the weakest of the golden rock level principles.

But the core laws of the three most prestigious families of the Tang kingdom were of Mysterious jade level and this made these families invincible for generations.

“The Lunar tablet I have is of Imperial seal level and thus it is stronger than the blood dragon technique and the Spring and Autumn tactics.”

Long Yu’s heart contained no small excitement at the moment.

Unfortunately he had not yet achieved the realm of Man-Heaven harmony and hence could not comprehend a law completely. He could only comprehend a law up to its domain level.

Even in that case, Long Yu could comprehend the lunar principle to the domain level and it would make him invincible in the entire Tang kingdom!

Of course, the realm of martial arts premised everything!

However, even if a Zhenling realm expert comprehended the lunar principle to the domain level, he would still not be an opponent of a master from the realm above Zhenling realm.

Just when the scene in front of Long Yu was about to change, the old man spoke last few words.

“The martial experts of our nine hidden tribe are the descendents of the nine hidden dragon. Even a moderately talented expert from our tribe can comprehend the Nine Hidden Principle! The Nine Hidden Principle dominates over all of the 9000 principles and is the strongest principle in this world....”

The scene changed. However, these last few words of the old man kept reverberating in Long Yu’s mind.

Nine Hidden Principle!

The strongest principle in this world!

The nine hidden principle which dominated the 9000 principles actually originated from the nine hidden dragon mark!

These words had not made Long Yu happy but aggravated the innermost feelings of his heart.

How did he obtain this formidable strength which could dominate this whole world?

Long Yu could not believe he obtained it so effortlessly!

The Imperial Chu clan of the Tang kingdom had powerful ancestors who comprehended the core law to the Mysterious jade level, benefitting the future generations.

However, the descendents of the nine hidden tribes did not turn out to be so powerful for so long.

Long Yu merely knew that nine hidden dragon tribe lived in the mountain valley. Could the strength of the nine hidden dragon be inherited for so long?

For Long Yu, all these thoughts were still secondary.

The foremost question in his mind was the woman he had seen in his previous vision, Yu Fei, who wore a white gauge and looked like a noble woman, who was she?

Why did she carve the nine hidden dragon mark on Long Yu's chest?

The nine hidden tribe, and the descendents of the dragon, where were they now?

These questions still needed to be answered!

Suddenly, Long Yu regained his consciousness and could once again hear the endless thunderclaps.

He opened his eyes only to see countless thunder mines flashing before him.

He had finally recovered!

Chapter – 142 Holding Thunder principle

“I don’t have much time right now. As my strength will grow, I will be able to solve all these riddles...”

For Long Yu, what was more important right now was to refine his body with thunder mines and increase his strength.

As he regained his consciousness, he continued to draw out one mine after another from the nine hidden dragon mark while refining his body.

At that time, he practised Demon tyrant form, refining his meridians, followed by refining his bones, his flesh and later refining his Dantian as well as the five internal organs.

If he could quench his blood vessels too, the Demon tyrant form would reach transcendental realm.

Unfortunately, Long Yu did not have much spare time to promote his Demon tyrant form to the next level.

At this moment he was busy refining his body with the thunder mines and in this process even the slightest of negligence could cause great harm.

While quenching his meridians, he spent about one day and one night.

Afterward, for refining his bones, he had to spend three days and three nights, and finally integrated his bones with the strength of the thunder mines. His nine hidden dragon mark secretly told him that this powerful principle contained in these thunder mines was called “Holding thunder principle”.

This holding thunder principle belonged to the Imperial seal level, just like the lunar principle.

A heavenly tablet was the most precious object congealed solely out of world principle and hence it held more power in it than anything else. It was an extremely rare treasure.

But all the heavenly tablets were hidden in discreet locations and could not be tracked down so easily. Although the principles contained in them could produce various weather phenomena, like the mineral lode of the Ling clan villa or the heavenly thunder reservoir, still it was extremely difficult for someone to obtain

these heavenly tablets.

This was the main reason why the experts in the Tang kingdom felt themselves to be extremely lucky to have even a small fragment of these tablets – just like it happened in the case of lunar debris.

But now, Long Yu had the strength of two heavenly tablets.

The Lunar tablet made him comprehend the lunar principle and he was right now refining his body using the Holding thunder principle mines. In other words, he was directly absorbing the power of the thunder law present in a Heavenly thunder tablet.

Perhaps by the Long Yu would be done refining his whole body, not much strength would remain in the heavenly thunder tablet.

It took his seven days to refine his flesh.

As Long Yu moved step by step from one stage of refining his body to another, each stage took more time than the previous one.

.....

Two months later

The young prince of the Mongolian kingdom had sent numerous soldiers of his army to encircle the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir. However, no one had seen Long Yu coming out of the heavenly thunder reservoir.

This made him feel relaxed as it confirmed that Long Yu had died inside the Heavenly Thunder reservoir.

However, he was expecting the appearance of the holding thunder debris that should have appeared two months ago. And now, two months had passed and he still could not find any trace of the Holding thunder debris.

“What is going on, what happened?”

The young Mongolian prince thought to himself as the roar of the thunder mines continued to go weaker and weaker. This was something he had never expected to happen.

Because of the impact of the Holding thunder debris, the roar of the thunder

mines was so strong two months ago. But now that roar was gradually fading!

Many powerhouses like Mo Fengming and Yu Qianning who were hiding near the Heavenly Thunder reservoir had dispersed by now.

Since there was no hope of the appearance of Holding thunder debris anymore, waiting there was basically a waste of time. It was wise to go back to practise.

The Mongolian prince, who had resolutely stayed there for two months along with his army, finally ordered his people to evacuate the place.

However, before leaving, he left a force of ten thousand soldiers in the vicinity of the Heavenly thunder reservoir to keep patrolling as he always felt something unusual about this unexpected decline in the amount of thunderclaps.

As the Mongolian prince departed with the rest of his army of 100,000 soldiers, the place soon appeared to be vacant.

Even after waiting for one hour or so, one could only hear the thunderclaps a few times. But the frequency of the lightning flashes had remained the same.

However, no one had noticed that the frequency of the flashes was also decreasing now!

After a month had passed, the lightning flashes and the thunderclaps almost stopped and this left the patrol teams in great surprise. They conveyed this news to the Mongolian prince.

At this moment, a man wearing bronze Mongolian armour, with his whole body flashing as if emitting lightening, emerged out of the Heavenly Thunder reservoir.

This man was Long Yu!

After spending three months in the Heavenly thunder reservoir, refining his whole body with the power of the thunder mines, achieving the brand-new 'thunder tyrant form', now he could an expert of Zhenling realm with a flick of his finger!

Even the fiercest attacks of a fellow Zhenling 2nd layer expert could not cause much harm to him now.

Since he fed on the power of the thunder mines for three months, the power of the thunder principle was now part of his own comprehension, helping him quickly comprehend the 'Holding thunder mood'.

At this moment, he was able to comprehend the 'Holding thunder charm' and would grant him such a strong protection that even the strongest of the enemy's attacks would rebound!

He had still not reached the Zhenling 4th layer and hence fighting against the Zhenling entity of a Zhenling 4th layer powerhouse might still be a bit difficult for him.

However, he felt that even if he had to face Yu Qianning now, it wouldn't be a much difficult task for him to do.

As long as he could pull her power down by one martial layer, he could easily compete with Yu Qianning.

Even if Yu Qianning congealed her Zhenling entity, she wouldn't be able to defeat him so easily.

And so, the direction in which Long Yu proceeded headed not to Tang kingdom but to the Demon valley situated at the intersection of the three great kingdoms!

Since there was only a month's time left for the seven sect competition to start, he must reach the Demon valley soon, hunt a power demon beast, procure its neidan and absorb it to enhance his strength. Before the seven sect competition starts, he must reach the 3rd layer of Zhenling realm at the least.

He came out of the Heavenly Thunder reservoir and paced fast into the direction of the Demon valley.

Finally he turned his head back to look at the Heavenly thunder reservoir one last time. There was no roar or no lightning flash coming from the reservoir now and Long Yu was completely aware of the reason – he had consumed all its energy to refine his body.

Now the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir was a barren land, just like the mineral lode near the Ling clan villa.

Although Long Yu never really managed to located the Holding Thunder tablet,

he had absorbed all its energy while he refined his body using the thunder mines and finally mastered the Holding Thunder principle.

He passed through the scattered Mongolian patrol troops and disappeared in the Great Snow Mountains soon.

.....

The next morning

Long Yu had left the Great Snow Mountains and now a vast expanse of grasslands stretched in front of him.

Here, at the border of the Mongolian kingdom, lied the Demon valley.

Long Yu could see a Mongolian village in the vicinity. The smoke curling out of their chimneys painted a gentle scene.

However, he knew that even in a small village like this, just like the rest of the Tianlu continent, every man and woman was a martial expert and practised martial arts!

Perhaps, the village of the nine hidden dragon tribe was hidden somewhere in the Tianlu continent?

Long Yu shook his head. He could find all the answers once he stepped into the realm Man-Heaven harmony.

He was fully aware of his present strength and his own limits.

Presently he was in the 2nd layer of Zhenling realm so his basic strength was 2 jun. Activating the nine hidden dragon mark granted him the strength of 1 Jun. In total, he had the strength of 3 Jun which was equivalent to the strength of 3000 fierce horses!

(Mystique: 1 fierce horse strength = 1000 lb)

His primary battle weapons were the Qian dragon spear and the lunar wings. Apart from these, he had three more battle weapons – blizzard boots, wandering soul gloves and flaming jade talisman.

The latter three were not of much use to him, but the flaming jade talisman was a top grade battle weapon and the blizzard boots granted great speed to the

practitioner so he could trade either of them for a Yao Dan.

Among his martial skills, the most powerful are the nine hidden dragon fist and his father's spear skill. The Zhentian tactics and the Qian dragon spear complemented each other. His other skills were nine hidden dragon prance, intoxicated hell and lamella touch.

His spirit level martial skill – ghost flash could be used to avoid the attacks of the enemies and escape for a short time. But his body refining type martial skill, Demon tyrant form, had transformed into Thunder tyrant form and was now more powerful than ever.

His first spirit level martial skill, the flickering wind step, was now not used much by him as he relied solely on the lunar wings for agility. The lunar wings had surpassed the efficiency of flickering wind step as well as the twinkling step.

In addition to his martial skills and battle weapons, he had two Zhenling spirits and world principles.

He had comprehended Zhentian domain (a golden stone level principle), the lunar charm (Imperial seal level principle) and the Holding thunder charm (Imperial seal level principle) as well as the dry marsh mood (a mysterious jade level principle) that he acquired in the Teng snake abyss.

At present, Long Yu had all his concentration directed towards strengthening his Zhenlings with the help of newly learned principles.

For example, his Zhentian Sun Zhenling was the condensation of Zhentian principle and when released, it made Zhentian domain's coercion much more powerful.

In a similar manner, the lunar principle, the Holding Thunder principle *etc.* could also be condensed to congeal Zhenlings which could further enhance their respective powers.

But after congealing second, third and more Zhenlings, the difficulty level for promoting to next layer of Zhenling realm would gradually increase as well.

The need to absorb Lingqi would be much more than that for an ordinary person.

Moreover, to be able to congeal more Zhenling entities, Long Yu must pass through several major bottlenecks.

Among the various principles Long Yu had comprehended till now, Zhentian principle had the strength to suppress, the dry marsh principle had the strength to entangle and trap someone, the lunar principle had an endless power of the frost while the most powerful was the Holding thunder principle that had terrifying destructive power.

Although he was still at the first level of comprehension of the Holding thunder principle, still it had a formidable strength which was far more than the strength of the Zhentian domain.

“If I practice a lightening based martial skill, it will definitely increase the impact of the Holding thunder principle. Unfortunately, such martial skills are not easy to find...”

Long Yu thought.

As it appeared, Long Yu wanted to promote his cultivation to the next layer of Zhenling realm and that too as soon as possible.

Any ordinary Zhenling 2nd layer expert would not have been able to achieve the domain level of a martial skill even if it was based on a golden stone level principle!

Long Yu’s body turned into a black streamer and rushed in the direction of the Demon valley from the vast grasslands.

Suddenly his vision fell on the figures of two experts standing in front of him. One of them was clad in a brown furry coat. This man turned out to be an expert of Zhenling 3rd layer – Pond Snow.

“Pond Snow, why is he here?”

Long Yu wrinkled his brows.

The last time he met Pond Snow, there was no close relationship between them, but still, he was the owner of the Ling clan villa after all.

Long Yu, pondering over the situation, moved forward to greet him.

He wanted to know the current situation of Ling clan villa after he had spent

three months in the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir.

Chapter – 143 Practitioners' currency

When Long Yu approached to greet Pond Snow, the other party certainly noticed him too.

“Is this Long Yu?”

Pond Snow turned his head to look at Long Yu and on seeing his appearance, he was a bit surprised.

The man standing beside him who was also his fellow traveller also looked at Long Yu and could not help but give a fierce flash.

“Does he belong to the Mongolian army?”

The man ruthlessly inquired.

“No, he does not.”

Pond Snow shook his head and this made the man calm down.

At this moment, Long Yu felt a very strong killing intention coming from the man standing beside Pond Snow and this compelled Long Yu to look at him.

From his appearance, it could be assessed that he was a tough guy. His chest was uncovered revealing the thick hair that covered it, his muscles were bulging and his face bore a cold and brutal look. Even when the killing intention dispersed, one could still feel its impact because of his strength.

He was at the 3rd layer of Zhenling realm!

Long Yu could assess the cultivation level of this man and was quite relaxed.

Even if an opponent of this cultivation level attacked him, he could get rid of him quite easily.

“Ha ha! Younger brother Long Yu, I didn't expect to see you here.”

Pond Snow flashed a friendly smile towards Long Yu and said: “Earlier I heard that you had entered the Heavenly Thunder reservoir and died there. But now I can see that these rumors were not true at all!”

“Brother Pond Snow!”

Long Yu greeted him with a smile. “What business drew you here? And who is

this fellow brother with you?”

Saying so, he looked into the eyes of the man with the hairy chest.

“This is Deng Shun, my friend.”

Pond Snow smiled and introduced him to this man.

“And you are Long Yu.”

Deng Shun looked into Long Yu’s eyes and said: “I have heard my master mention you earlier. You are a citizen of the Tang kingdom, then why are you wearing the armor of Mongolian army soldier?”

“Your master?”

Long Yu could still feel Deng Shun’s hostility and this made him frown.

“Younger brother Long Yu wore the enemy’s armor to infiltrate into their camp and he even managed to behead their Old General Man Yi.”

Pond Snow smiled and explained : “Brother Deng has some enmity with the Mongolian Kingdom so you must not be offended, brother Long Yu. The master of brother Deng Shun is one of the seven calamity stars on the Tian Yu continent, Xinghai Lun!”

Seven calamity stars, Xinghai Lun!

These words were quite unfamiliar to Long Yu as they were far away from Long Yu’s Tang kingdom.

However, even if he did not know about the seven calamity stars and Xinghai Lun, just by hearing these words he could sense that this man was scary.

Seven calamity stars were the top powerhouses of the Tian Yu continent.

Long Yu thought that even if this Xinghai Lun has not entered the realm of Man-Heaven harmony, he soon will.

However, what he could not understand was that why Xinghai Lun would mention him to Deng Shun. As far as he could deduce, there was no relationship between him and Xinghai Lun!

“Brother Pond Snow, what happened with the Ling clan villa?”

Since Deng Shun was still hostile towards him, he didn't speak to him and asked Pond Snow directly.

"I gave it to a friend of mine. I have told them not to cause any trouble to the people of the Ling clan villa."

Pond Snow answered with a smile.

"Thank you so much, brother Pond Snow. Such being the case, I should take my leave now."

Long Yu nodded, ready to depart.

"Don't you worry, younger brother Long Yu."

Pond Snow stopped him from leaving and asked: "Before you leave, I must ask you, are you going to the Demon valley?"

"En."

Long Yu asked: "Are you also going to the Demon valley, brother Pond Snow?"

"Yes."

Pond Snow chuckled and explained: "Some time back, I discovered the lair of dragon beasts near the Demon valley, including a huge Shoushou monster of Zhenling 4th layer. Therefore, I asked brother Deng Shun to gather some men to attack the lair. If we succeed, we can get at least 20 spirit level items, including the neidans of these beasts which can enhance our cultivation or can be exchanged for other valuable items."

The lair of dragon beasts!

Long Yu inquired Pond Snow: "In order to procure the neidans of these beasts, how do you plan to proceed?"

"We have decided to divide the rewards equally among the people who participate in the ambush. So far, we have seven men. Do you want to join us, brother Long Yu?"

Some excitement flashed through Pond Snow's eyes as he really wanted to use Long Yu's strength here.

"Forgive me, brother Pond Snow. I have come here to settle some other

business. I won't be able to join you."

Long Yu politely declined the proposal and then immediately asked: "You must be knowing this area pretty well, brother Pond Snow. Can you please guide me to the nearest trade city? I want to have a look at some goods first."

Pond Snow was a little disappointed with Long Yu's rejection but he did not care much about it.

He heard Long Yu's query and casually replied: "800 miles from here, at the border of the Demon valley, there is Hun Yin city. All the martial experts who wish to buy weapons and goods before entering the Demon valley usually stop there. The market of Hun Yin city is always busy."

"Hun Yin city – thank you so much brother Pond Snow."

Long Yu took leave from Pond Snow and flapped his lunar wings. Immediately, his whole body rushed forward like a jet streamer.

Soon, Long Yu disappeared from the line of sight of Pond Snow and Deng Shun.

"Pond Snow, you invited a boy of Zhenling 2nd layer and were even ready to share the reward with him. This was unfair to other brothers."

Deng Shun, on seeing Long Yu rush away, murmured calmly.

"Trust me, brother Deng Shun. Even if he is at 2nd layer of Zhenling realm, his strength exceeds that of any ordinary Zhenling 2nd layer expert."

Pond Snow replied, narrowing his eyes.

"This boy is a thorn in my master's way and he will get him killed. You should not form friendly relations with such boy."

Deng Shun said: "Let's go. The person my master has sent must be waiting for us at the Hun Yin city. We can attack the lair after meeting him."

Pond Snow nodded and then both of them moved in the direction of Hun Yin city.

However, deep in his heart, Pond Snow was interested in Long Yu!

Pond Snow was well aware of the fact that the Long Yue Jindan that the prince

Chu Chao Sheng had awarded to Long Yu definitely had something fishy about it.

He believed that even if Long Yu could escape Chu Chao Sheng's schemes, he would definitely die inside the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir.

Now as it appeared Long Yu was not only safe and sound but had also enhanced his cultivation, stepping into the 2nd layer of Zhenling realm!

Pond Snow certainly knew why Xinghai Lun wished to kill Long Yu. But he was also sure that Long Yu would escape any assassination attempt and would not die so easily!

.....

Long Yu sped away and soon noticed the outline of a large city emerging at the edge of the grasslands.

The Hun Yin city was situated at the border of the Demon valley. It attracted various powerhouses of the Tang kingdom, the Mongolian kingdom and the United kingdom of Japan. Most of the powerhouses that ventured into the Hun Yin city were already in the Zhenling realm.

Because of the access to the Demon valley, most of them could congeal formidable Zhenlings. Should a weak person enter the Demon valley, there was no way for him to come back alive!

This city did not fell under the jurisdiction of any of the three great kingdoms.

The Tang kingdom, the Mongolian kingdom and the United kingdom of Japan – none of them dared to control the Hun Yin city because even the most ordinary martial experts of this city possessed terrifying strength.

If any of these kingdoms tried to control the Hun Yin city, it would cost them a great price, not to mention the other two kingdoms would not be spared either.

Since this city fell under the jurisdiction of no kingdom, it became a hub for the three kingdoms and the martial experts of this city enjoyed their freedom and were not bullied by anyone due to their powerful Zhenling cultivation.

Because of this, when Long Yu saw the outline of the city, he found a number of Zhenlings congealed by the practitioners.

This Hun Yin city was ten times busier than the Xi Guan city of the Tang

kingdom!

Long Yu sighed. Even if the seven sects of the Tang kingdom attacked this city, even if Baiyun Zhong and other sovereigns were there to lead the attack, it would be impossible to seize this city.

Even though the Hun Yin city was ruled by no kingdom, the city had its own administration and several martial experts stood at the city gates to toll.

To enter the city, pay the toll!

To trade in the city, pay the toll!

The currency in the Tian Yu continent was divided into two categories.

One was the survival currency which included coins made of gold, silver and other metals.

This currency was only survival currency as its value was very low. Most of the Zhenling realm experts didn't even bother about it.

For example, when Feng Lonsong bought a low-grade spiritual level Xuan Dan, he had to sell a lot of Feng clan's property. That was just survival currency with low value.

While the other was the practitioners' currency.

The practitioners' currency usually contained traces of some heavenly tablet or some world law. For example, the mineral lode near the Ling clan villa could be dug up and the ore thus found could be used as the practitioners' currency.

If accumulated, practitioners' currency could allow an expert to comprehend any world law to the Imperial seal level.

Forging practitioners' currency was an extremely difficult task. For example, a single lunar crystal coin would use up a lot of mineral lode ore and would contain only a small trace of Lunar qi.

Only the materials that had been under the impact of heavenly tablets could be used to forge practitioners' currency.

Since the thunder mines of the Heavenly Thunder reservoir were absorbed by Long Yu, it was now a wasteland. The rocks that were continuously bombarded

by the thunder mines could now be used to forge practitioners' currency. The currency so forged could be called Heavenly Thunder crystal coins.

In this world of martial arts, there were 9000 world laws, so naturally, the types of practitioners' currency were beyond count.

However, practitioners' currency of any type could be called 'crystal coin'.

A single crystal coin could buy a bucket full of low grade immortality pills or other goods of equivalent importance.

Different levels of immortality pills indicated their efficiency in promoting the cultivation of a martial expert. Low-grade immortality pills were not of much use to Zhenling realm experts.

Only the immortality pills and battle weapons of spirit level or higher were allowed to be sold in the Hun Yin city!

An immortality pill or battle weapon of low-grade spirit level would cost a martial artist around ten crystal coins.

To enter the Hun yin city, one must pay the toll of one crystal coin and this crystal coin was the minimum currency a martial expert would keep.

When Long Yu arrived at the toll gate of Hun Yin city, he had no crystal coins at all!

Chapter – 144 Seven Calamity Stars

In order to enter the Hun Yin city, one must have a crystal coin.

Long Yu stood there for a moment and thought: “It seems like the only way to enter this Hun Yin city is to exchange the extra battle weapons I have for crystal coins.”

Wandering soul glove was a low-grade battle weapon, so it certainly wasn’t worth the money.

Although the Blizzard boots had formed resonance with Long Yu and granted him great speed, they still were a low-grade battle weapon.

Even though the Blizzard boots held slightly more value than the wandering soul glove, they were as unworthy of a crystal coin as the wandering soul gloves. In fact, exchanging both these weapons wouldn’t fetch him even a single crystal coin.

“It seems that the only battle weapon I can exchange here is the Flaming Jade Talisman.”

He had seized this top grade sprit level battle weapon from Hua Fu, the son of the sovereign of Tibetan Fire Temple. The number of such top grade battle weapons was not high, even in the Hun Yin city.

Unfortunately, the use of the Flaming Jade Talisman was limited to the fire type martial experts and hence ordinary martial experts could not use it.

Considering this, Long Yu must reduce the price considerably.

“You, boy, have you come from the Mongolian kingdom?”

Standing at the city toll gate were two Zhenling realm experts. As soon as they noticed Long Yu wandering near the city gate, one of them walked towards him with a look of great despise in his eyes.

“In order to enter the Hun Yin city, one must pay a crystal coin. Those who can not pay are not allowed to enter!”

The guard was wearing a sprit level battle armor.

“If you do not have a crystal coin, just go away from my sight!”

Long Yu looked at the opposite party. Even if the tone of his voice seemed harsh, he was simply stating the rules of Hun Yin city.

The opposite party definitely belonged to one of the biggest groups in Hun Yin city, so if Long Yu messed with him, more trouble might follow.

“I do not have a crystal coin. But I have a top grade spirit level battle weapon which I wish to exchange for some crystal coins. Once I get the crystal coins I will pay you.”

Long Yu said calmly.

“Boy, do you have a top grade spirit level battle weapon?”

The man with a logical-minded persona asked, with a touch of greed in his eyes: “Hand me that battle weapon. I’m ready to buy it for 100 crystal coins!”

“If I remember correctly, the value of a top grade spirit level battle weapon is at least a hundred times higher than a low-grade spirit level battle weapon.”

Long Yu argued: “A low grade spirit level battle weapon can easily fetch me at least 10 crystal coins. You are paying me 100 crystal coins for a top grade spirit level battle weapon. This is far less than it should be.”

“Shut up! Take 100 crystal coins and hand us the battle weapon. Otherwise, we will seize it after breaking your bones!”

A guard with a vicious looking face threatened Long Yu.

He glanced at this man from top to bottom and was quite surprised.

This guard was only at the 1st layer of Zhenling realm while Long Yu was at the 2nd layer of Zhenling realm. How did he dare to threaten Long Yu?

It was quite evident now that there various groups in the city that held great influence.

Even if these men could not cause much damage to Long Yu, they dared to threaten him because they could always shout for help and their group members would surely swarm in immediately!

Therefore, even if Long Yu was at the 2nd layer of Zhenling realm and was wearing the armor of a Mongolian General, these men were not at all scared of

him.

Of course, if Long Yu was at the 4th layer of Zhenling realm, he could have been exempted from paying the toll price and would have been allowed to enter the city, as per the rules.

Although almost every person in the Hun Yin city was of Zhenling realm, those who could congeal a Zhenling entity and had stepped into the 4th layer of Zhenling realm were considerably few and also enjoyed special privileges.

Most of the experts weren't able to break from the 3rd layer of Zhenling realm and were stuck at this bottleneck for the rest of their lives.

“What are you staring at?”

The vicious looking man shouted: “Hand over the battle weapon or I will call others!”

This aggression made Long Yu aggressive too.

This gatekeeper was being so rampant. Staying silent during such situations was simply not Long Yu's style!

He was supposed to be wary of Chu Chao Sheng, but was he supposed to be wary of some city guards city?

Any city guard, no matter how powerful, was not powerfullerful than the Prince of the Tang kingdom!

Noticing the signs of an imminent conflict, several martial experts from Hun Yin city rushed towards the city gate.

However, as these two were about to start fighting, a noble figure clad in a black robe appeared and stopped them right away.

“Here, take this crystal coin and let him enter the city.”

A female voice said and threw a Lunar crystal coin towards the gatekeeper.

Long Yu gawked as he noticed that this woman in the black robe, quite unexpectedly, was an elder of the Zhentian sect, Yan Huanmo!

He had earlier seen her indulged in a practice with Elder Yu Shengshi, in the bamboo grove which was located in the restricted zone of Zhentian sect.

Unfortunately, by the time he had arrived, the duel between Elder Yan Huanmo and Elder Yu Shengshi had ended.

Long Yu had not expected to come across a Zhentian elder outside the Tang kingdom.

Yan Huanmo had a cultivation level of Zhenling 4th layer.

When she appeared and threw a crystal coin towards the gatekeeper, his eyes showed a look of regret.

He could not challenge an expert of Zhenling 4th layer!

“You can pass.”

On some other occasion this guard might have shown the audacity of messing with a Zhenling 4th layer expert, relying on his team mates, but now a look of fear floated over his face.

Dealing with two experts of Zhenling 4th layer and 3rd layer respectively was something they could not handle.

“Let’s go!”

Yan Huanmo didn’t respond but started walking towards the Hun Yin city.

Long Yu immediately followed her: “Thank you, Elder Yan Huanmo.”

“How did you come here?”

Yan Huanmo asked without turning her head towards Long Yu.

Just like other people, Yan Huanmo had also heard that Long Yu entered the Heavenly Thunder reservoir and had died there. This news had spread everywhere and the people at Zhentian sect were in great disbelief.

However, as three months passed by, even the sovereign had to believe in these rumors.

Long Yu, with some discretion, told his story to her

As Yan Huanmo and Long Yu entered the Hun Yin city, it left many of the experts standing nearby disappointed as they were waiting to see a good fight between Long Yu and the gatekeepers. However, they had not expected that a woman would appear out of nowhere and stop the fight!

.....

Soon afterwards, Yan Huanmo arrived at an eatery along with Long Yu and the two went in. From that place, one could easily see all the hustle and bustle going on in the Hun Yin city.

This eatery charged the customers in accordance with their cultivation levels. The higher the cultivation level was, the more number of crystal coins one had to pay for food.

Long Yu had not eaten proper food in a very long time.

Any ordinary martial expert would certainly have died if they had to live without food for three months. However, Long Yu depended on his nine hidden dragon mark which supported his body's need for energy by drawing power from the thunder mines.

Yan Huanmo was quietly watching the bustling city and was not worried at all.

"You look pretty alive and kicking."

Yan Huanmo smiled and said: "There are some things which one has to grasp himself. No one, not even me, can help you achieve those things. Judging the speed with which you are enhancing your cultivation level, I must say, you will soon exceed me."

"Thank you Elder Yan Huanmo, for the praise you have bestowed upon me, but I don't think I would be able to reach the 4th layer of Zhenling realm anytime soon. Zhenling 3rd layer is a major bottleneck which will keep me trapped for a long time."

Long Yu shook his head.

"Maybe for others it might be a problem. But for you, Long Yu, I believe there shall not be any major problem in shattering this bottleneck."

Elder Yan Huanmo smiled gently.

An awkward silence followed this brief conversation, as both of them did not know what to say next.

While dining with Yan Huanmo, Long Yu was extremely cautious because she was an elder of Zhentian sect. Moreover, he did not know much about her.

At this time, Yan Huanmo was clad in black dress and her long hair hanging down to her waist looked extremely attractive, just like a tender and beautiful black rose. Almost every person present at the second floor of the eatery had their eyes glued to her figure.

However, no one dared to strike a conversation with her.

She was an expert of Zhenling 4th layer and her cultivation level scared everyone off.

This made many people to look at Long Yu with envious eyes.

A trivial boy of Zhenling 2nd layer was sharing the table with a gorgeous woman of Zhenling 4th layer! This invoked great jealousy in the hearts of many people.

Suddenly, Long Yu moved as he had finally figured out what to talk about with Yan Huanmo.

“So, Elder Yan, what do you know about the seven calamity stars?”

Long Yu frowned slightly while he popped the question.

Earlier on his way to Hun Yin city, Long Yu had met Pond Snow and Deng Shun. Deng Shun’s master, Xinghai Lun, was one of the seven calamity stars. But Long Yu had no idea who the seven calamity stars were!

Since Long Yu did not know whether Xinghai Lun was a friend or a foe, he seized the opportunity to know more about him and the rest calamity stars.

“Seven calamity stars....”

As Yan Huanmo heard these words, her beautiful pupils flashed with a colour of horror flashing in them. “I see, it seems you have heard about the seven calamity stars from somewhere. The seven calamity stars are the strongest and most notorious martial experts of the Tian Yu continent. It is said that each one of them has stepped into the realm of Man and Heaven.”

The realm of Man and Heaven!

Long Yu’s blood turned cold.

Most of the top ranked martial experts in the Tian Yu continent had reached

Zhenling realm at the most.

Even the strongest of the Zhenling realm experts wouldn't be able to face an expert of Man and Heaven realm!

"What about Xinghai Lun?"

Long Yu continued asking.

"Xinghai Lun!"

Yan Huanmo narrowed her eyes and said: "He is the last of the seven calamity stars. His name is Lun, Xinghai is his honorary title. I do not know much about him as I have not reached such a high level, but all I know is that he is someone very young who has risen to power quite recently."

Lun!

Long Yu wrinkled his brows but even after thinking for a long time he could not understand what connection might lie between him and this Lun guy.

Was he related to his father or his mother?

Long Zaitian was banished from the Tang kingdom 10 years ago, and since then, no one had heard anything about him. No one knew whether he died or was still alive.

But Yu Yao, Long Yu's mother, hailed from the Holy Saint Institute, about which Long Yu did not know much. All he knew was that the Holy Saint Institute had a strong dominance over the Tang kingdom and also had a strong political influence.

If there was any relation between Xinghai Lun and him, Long Yu could guess, it was only because of his father or his mother.

However, it was impossible for him to know about it right now.

He only knew that he should stay wary of a lot of people, including Xinghai Lun!

"There seems to be an acquaintance downstairs."

Suddenly, Yan Huanmo noticed someone in the street and her deep red lips moved lightly.

As Long Yu turned his head to see who it was, he noticed more than one

acquaintances entering the city gate and approaching the eatery next door.

There were a total of seven people.

Pond Snow, Deng Shun, four other strangers, plus one more whom he knew for sure – Feng Yao!

Chapter – 145 Mysterious Level Immortality Pill

When Long Yu saw Feng Yao out in the street, his face suddenly changed.

“What is she doing here?”

Originally, when Feng Longsong had informed him that Feng Yao had left the Feng clan villa, he did not care much about her. But now, quite unexpectedly, she appeared along with Pond Snow and Deng Shun.

Had Feng Yao also joined Xinghai Lun, just like Deng Shun?

“Zhenling second layer.”

As Long Yu assessed the cultivation level of Feng Yao, his pupils contracted.

“This Feng Yao has enhanced her cultivation level quite fast. She probably has consumed numerous immortality pills or she could have absorbed the neidans of some beasts!”

From where could she get so many immortality pills or neidans?

Long Yu soon noticed a long sword hanging from Feng Yao’s waist – this sword was a top grade spirit level battle weapon!

“Has she found a patron?”

Long Yu narrowed his eyes as he noticed to what extent Feng Yao had changed during such a short period of time.

Earlier, in spite of her continuous efforts, there was an enormous disparity between the cultivation levels of Feng Yao and Liu Yuan.

(Mystique: Liu Yuan is the girl whom MC met during the lunar debris arc. She is the cousin of Feng Yao and likes MC. Also, Feng Long used to be bullied by Liu Yuan in her childhood and holds grudge against her.)

However, now this gap had been bridged as Feng Yao had enhanced her cultivation to the same level as that of Liu Yuan!

Of course this had nothing to do with her talent; she was only able to achieve it by going through some adventures of her own.

Long Yu was willing to believe that she had found a patron, but as he further

noticed, he found out that she carried herself with the stance of a leader.

Those four strangers along with Pond Snow and Deng Shun seemed to be paying respect to her.

And these four strangers were probably the subordinates of the calamity star – Xinghai Lun!

“Is she associated with Xinghai Lun.....?”

Long Yu could not help but guess!

Long Yu turned away quickly because presently he was sitting on the second floor of an eatery with Elder Yan Huanmo. Pond Snow, Feng Yao and their party had not noticed him yet.

Soon afterwards, Pond Snow and his party of seven people departed from the street and gradually disappeared. They were headed probably towards the lair of the dragon beast.

“I didn’t expect that among the seven people that Pond Snow had mentioned, one would turn out to be Feng Yao.....”

Long Yu thought to himself, but soon put all these thoughts aside. He had promised Feng Longsong that he would never initiate any attack on Feng Yao, and he would certainly keep his promise.

Did Xinghai Lun come to know about Long Yu from Feng Yao?

“It seems that you know these people.”

Yan Huanmo said to Long Yu, smiling lightly.

“Probably.”

Long Yu replied in a soft voice.

.....

After eating till they were full, Yan Huanmo and Long Yu walked towards the largest marketplace of Hun Yin city.

To enter the marketplace, everyone must pay a crystal coin and even Yan Huanmo, with a cultivation of Zhenling realm 4th layer, was no exception.

After paying two crystal coins, Yan Huanmo and Long Yu entered the marketplace only to find a sea of people ahead!

“What type is your top grade spirit level battle weapon? I’ll give you an estimated price first.”

Yan Huanmo asked Long Yu while she walked in the front.

Long Yu decided to answer honestly. If he did not depend on Yan Huanmo’s experience, he would certainly be fooled by various martial experts in the marketplace.

“Actually, it is a flaming jade talisman.....”

Yan Huanmo was stunned: “This may not be much valuable, Long Yu. Usually, top grade spirit level battle weapons can fetch around 800 to 1000 crystal coins. But I’m afraid that this flaming jade talisman would only fetch you 700 crystal coins at most, or maybe even less.”

“It’s alright. I’m ready to sell it.”

Although Long Yu was a little disappointed, still he thought that 700 crystal coins for the flaming jade talisman was not a bad deal either.

Hun Yin city had three great kingdoms as its neighbors, so naturally numerous martial experts from all the three kingdoms had gathered at the marketplace.

Just like in the Tibetan Fire temple, the number of practitioners of fire type martial skills was not less in the Hun Yin city.

However, the number of practitioners who could afford to buy a top grade spirit level battle weapon was very less.

Along the way, Long Yu came across several martial experts who were practicing fire type martial skills, but when he inquired if they would like to buy the flaming jade talisman, he found out that they simply couldn’t afford it!

Let alone 700 crystal coins, they didn’t even have 70 crystal coins with them.

Crystal coins contained traces of power of the immortality pills or neidans or heavenly tablet from which they were procured. Unless it was a hugely profitable deal, most of the martial experts used these crystal coins for their cultivation.

“Long Yu, the seven sects competition is approaching. Do you wish to participate?”

After a series of inquiries from several people, Yan Huanmo suddenly asked Long Yu.

“Of course, I wish to participate.”

Long Yu calmly replied.

“Such being the case, you should not waste time.”

Yan Huanmo hesitatingly said: “I will buy this flaming jade talisman from you. In exchange for it, I will buy you five immortality pills or neidans and will also give you 200 crystal coins which should help you in your practice and enhance your cultivation quickly. As for me, I will stay here in Hun Yin city and will sell this flaming jade talisman to some other individual who can afford it.”

“Elder Yan, are you fine with that?”

Long Yu gawked. This suggestion suited his purpose perfectly, but Elder Yan might suffer some loss as she would have to stay in Hun Yin city till she finds someone who could afford to buy the flaming jade talisman from her.

Long Yu had no worries of being settled for less by Yan Huanmo as he was well aware that the neidans, immortality pills and 200 crystal coins would be approximately of the same value as of 700 crystal coins.

“What is inappropriate about it?”

Yan Huanmo smiled lightly and said: “I will buy you five immortality pills or neidans first. Then I will give you 200 crystal coins. After that you won’t have to stay here in Hun Yin city so you can continue with your practice.”

Hearing these words, Long Yu felt a little embarrassed, but since Yan Huanmo’s proposal perfectly suited his needs, he readily accepted it.

Soon afterwards, Yan Huanmo found a stall that was selling immortality pills and neidans. She bargained there for a long time and finally settled the price to get six neidans of different spiritual level beasts at the price of 540 crystal coins.

The stall master himself had a cultivation level of Zhenling 4th layer, otherwise it would have been extremely difficult for someone to obtain so many neidans

and immortality pills.

It should be noted that after plundering the lair of the dragon beast, Pond Snow and his party would get at most one top grade spiritual level neidan, the rest would be low grade spiritual level neidans.

Yan Huanmo handed the six neidans along with 160 crystal coins to Long Yu who in turn handed her the flaming jade talisman.

Long Yu, after receiving the neidans from Yan Huanmo, was now thinking about their names.

Weeping tarantula, megalith scorpion, earth goblin, cannibal python, bayonet wolf, bloodthirsty leopard!

The neidans of these six beasts clearly conveyed that all these beasts had been at the 4th layer of Zhenling realm!

In the Demon valley, the number of such beasts was very high but since the situations kept changing over there, it was a dangerous place too.

If a team of Zhenling 3rd layer experts tried to kill a beast of Zhenling 4th layer then with some luck they could achieve their goal with no major problems.

But to kill six or more beasts of Zhenling 4th layer was a task next to impossible. An expert could not do it relying on his luck and there were chances that he might accidentally die!

After all, the Demon valley was a haven of demon beasts.

Even if numerous human martial experts entered the Demon valley on a daily basis in order to hunt the beasts, still the number of beasts in the valley was far more than that of the humans.

Grabbing the six neidans of different beasts in his hands, Long Yu suddenly thought of something.

“Elder Yan, do you know about the immortality pills that can repair the blocked meridians and cultivation? It is said that such immortality pills are beyond spiritual level. If I want to buy one, how many crystal coins will it cost me?”

Long Yu asked Yan Huanmo.

“It seems that your foster father’s heavenly arteries are blocked leading his cultivation to be suppressed below the Zhenling realm.....”

Yan Huanmo wrinkled her eyebrows: “The immortality pills above the spiritual level belong to the mysterious level. Mysterious level immortality pills are extremely rare. Even in this Hun Yin city, the number of mysterious level immortality pills is very low. However, if you were to buy one, it will cost you at least one hundred thousand crystal coins!”

One hundred thousand crystal coins!

Long Yu wrinkled his eyebrows. However, he was half expecting the cost to be this high.

If these immortality pills had not been so rare, Feng Longsong and the Mongolian Old General would have cured themselves long ago.

“I understand that. Thank you so much, Elder Yan.”

Long Yu nodded.

“There is no need to be so formal.”

Yan Huanmo smiled and said: “Now I must set up a stall here to sell this flaming jade talisman. If I don’t get any suitable buyers for it here, I shall take it to the auction house of Hun Yin city.”

Yan Huanmo continued, reminding Long Yu: “Since you are about to enter the Demon valley to hunt beasts, let me remind you once more, make sure that you do not cross the Butterfly mountain or else you will land up in extreme danger.”

“En, I will remember it.”

Long Yu nodded his head solemnly.

The Demon valley was an extremely broad mountain valley region and its area was just as much as that of the whole Tang kingdom!

As for Butterfly mountain, it was a checkpoint inside the Demon valley, beyond which lived the most gruesome beasts. If an ordinary human martial expert ever dared to venture beyond the Butterfly mountain, it was impossible for him to come back alive.

Only if one had stepped into the realm of Man-Heaven harmony, he was qualified enough to cross the Butterfly mountain.

Long Yu had engraved this information in his mind. Even if he had his nine hidden dragon mark, he simply could not joke around with his own life!

Yan Huanmo then started looking for a suitable place to set up her stall to sell the flaming jade talisman.

She was wearing a black skirt and her hair was tied in a high bun. Her whole persona looked noble which attracted many people to her stall.

As for Long Yu, he had received his payment of 160 crystal coins along with six neidans of Zhenling beasts, so now he departed from the marketplace and was about to exit the Hun Yin city from one of its exit gates in order to enter the Demon valley.

Since he wanted to enhance his cultivation level to the 3rd layer of Zhenling realm, relying solely on the six neidans he had just received was insufficient.

The rich ling qi contained in a single Long Yue Jindan was equivalent to the ling qi contained in over hundred spiritual level immortality pills. If Long Yu wanted to step into Zhenling 3rd layer, he must unceasingly hunt the devil beasts and seize their neidans.

However, as he approached the city exit gate, he sensed that some martial experts had been following him right from the marketplace, carrying ulterior evil intentions.

“Are they planning to rob me? It is not quite clear from what I can sense.....”

Long Yu maintained his composure and quietly assessed their martial cultivation levels. Apart from one martial expert with a cultivation of Zhenling 3rd layer, there were four more people each with a cultivation of Zhenling 2nd layer.

Although there were five people, even if they all attacked Long Yu at once, he would easily fend them off!

As Long Yu exited the Hun Yin city and entered the woods that led to the Demon valley, the pursuers seemed prepared to set their plan into motion!

Chapter – 146 Qiu Zhenlao

As Long Yu left the Hun Yin city, he quietly activated his nine hidden dragon mark, ready to absorb the six neidans of different beasts he had just received from Yan Huanmo.

The ling qi stored in the nine hidden dragon mark, no matter how strong, was not sufficient to promote him to the 3rd layer of Zhenling realm.

Outside the eastern gate of the Hun Yin city stretched a vast and dense forest, called the Heavenly Spirit forest. This Heavenly Spirit forest was the only way that led to the Demon valley.

As Long Yu entered the Heavenly Spirit forest, the five people who had been following him right from the marketplace of Hun Yin city did not stop pursuing him.

The person with the cultivation of Zhenling 3rd layer ran around Long Yu at an incredibly fast speed, overtook him and now stood before him with a proud stance, blocking his path.

“You, boy, stop right there!”

The man had a disdainful look in his eyes, and his appearance gave Long Yu a feeling of familiarity.

Had he encountered this guy earlier?

Long Yu was in deep thoughts, trying to recognize this fellow, while on the outside he maintained his great poise and calmly said: “What is it that you want?”

“Without further ado....”

The man’s eyes flashed with anger: “...you are going to die anyway. I will instantly turn you into a dried corpse! But before killing you, I will remind you of the one you offended. Long Yu, you remember the city of Yu Guan where you mercilessly killed a man named Qiu Jinyou? He was my younger brother!”

“Yes, you killed the younger brother of Qiu Zhenlao, now you die!”

“We will take all your belongings once you are dead!”

With these words, the other four Zhenling experts laughed and mocked Long Yu as they encircled him.

“Now I see, so you are the elder brother of that fellow.”

Long Yu chuckled: “Before you start, allow me to educate you first. Your younger brother Qiu Jinyou not only forcefully occupied the Feng clan mansion but also bullied the juniors of the Feng clan. Now you tell me, didn’t he deserve to die?”

“Ha ha ha, what nonsense!”

Qiu Zhenlao, who wearing a white robe, gave Long Yu a sinister smile and said: “Boy, you are about to die but still try to reason with me? You are really so naive, just die already!”

As soon as he spoke these words, the four Zhenling experts who were surrounding Long Yu immediately launched their attacks simultaneously on Long Yu!

In their eyes, Long Yu was just an ordinary youngster of Zhenling 2nd layer.

But these four people were also at Zhenling 2nd layer, not to mention their leader was already at Zhenling 3rd layer, so for them, this battle was already in their favor!

They had no doubts at all regarding their chances of winning. Each one of them thought of killing Long Yu and seizing his top grade spiritual level battle weapon – the nine hidden dragon spear!

Although they had noticed the six top grade neidans that Long Yu had just received, in comparison to his battle weapon, they held no value at all. The value of his nine hidden dragon spear was approximately one hundred thousand crystal coins!

This was the question of getting their hands on an enormous sum of money, so even if Qiu Zhenlao had no enmity with Long Yu, they would have been ready to kill him to seize not just money but also his spear!

While he was encircled by the four Zhenling experts, Long Yu’s complexion didn’t change a bit. He continued to carry himself with the same poise as earlier,

and with a slight smile decorating his face, he activated the nine hidden dragon mark.

“Zhentian Sun, come forth Zhentian domain!”

The Zhentian Sun appeared behind him, integrating its fierce sunlight with the enormous pressure exerted by the Zhentian domain, which enveloped those four people almost immediately!

The terrifying pressure that suddenly enveloped them changed their complexions.

The domain...it indeed was the domain!

They had not expected that a young boy like Long Yu would have been able to comprehend the domain level of a world principle!

Among these four men, the strongest of them could only comprehend the mood level of a world principle. The sudden enormous pressure that was exerted upon them from the heaven stagnated their movements immediately as they gawked helplessly.

“Kill ten thousand people!”

As Long Yu tightened his grip over his Qian dragon spear, the fine lines on the tip of the spear got activated. A ferocious burst of nine hidden dragon qi rushed towards the four men at a tremendous speed.

It was unstoppable!

Their hearts throbbed fiercely as they saw this burst of energy approaching them. They wanted to retreat but could not move as they were under the influence of the Zhentian domain. Suddenly one of them jumped in the air. Though he jumped with his full might, the impact was stagnated because of the pressure that had enveloped him.

“Leopard, block the attack!”

The man clenched his teeth and congealed a leopard Zhenling which immediately pranced in front of him to block the attack directed at him.

However, the power of the nine hidden Qian dragon spear was far more than the leopard Zhenling.

“So he wants to block my attack, huh?”

Long Yu welcomed this leopard Zhenling instead of being afraid of it.

He thrust his nine hidden dragon spear with all his might towards the leopard Zhenling in order to hit it. The power of the spear was so enormous that it left a big hole in the leopard’s body, followed by the tyrannical coercion that would easily annihilated it!

“Time to die!”

Hearing Long Yu’s words, the spear did not reduce its speed at all and pierced through the chest of the first man.

The first man died immediately!

This replaced the previously fierce facial expressions of the other three men into that of terror. How could a boy of Zhenling 2nd layer kill a much older powerhouse of Zhenling 2nd layer so effortlessly?

The same thought went for the nine hidden dragon spear. How could a battered looking spear hold such a tyrannical strength?

Long Yu’s power came from two main sources – one of them was the Zhentian domain, while the other one was this old spear!

This made the glances of the three men as well as that of Qiu Zhenlao fiercer than ever.

This top grade spiritual level battle spear was truly outstanding!

If any of them could seize it from him, their strength would grow enormously!

“Die!”

In order to prevent Long Yu from killing more of his companions, Qiu Zhenlao launched an attack on him before he could attack anyone else. He congealed a snake Zhenling and was carrying a flying snake sword, just like his younger brother Qiu Jinyou had, and he rushed towards Long Yu.

“Naive.”

Long Yu sneered with disdain as a burst of dense xuan qi was released from his flapping lunar wings.

Immediately, Long Yu's appearance began to fade away and he gradually disappeared into the thin air!

The very next moment, he appeared behind one of the three men and launched an attack.

"Kill ten thousand people!"

As the xuan qi enveloped his body, Long Yu rushed towards another side after assassinating the man. Since the nine hidden dragon spear had pierced his dantian, the man could not even respond or react and died immediately!

Depending on his current strength, Long Yu could easily defeat an expert of the same cultivation level. In fact, it was as easy for him as chopping vegetables!

"It is a top grade spiritual level battle weapon!"

The only man present there that could be a bit an opponent of Long Yu was Qiu Zhenlao since he was at Zhenling 3rd layer and was far more powerful than his men.

As soon as he saw the lunar wings flapping behind Long Yu, he rushed towards him with a look of greed flashing in his eyes.

This Long Yu had another top grade spiritual level battle weapon. If he could get hold of it, wouldn't he become enormously wealthy?

Although Long Yu had shown unparalleled battle efficiency as he killed two of his companions and proved that he was not an ordinary Zhenling 2nd layer martial expert, Qiu Zhenlao still didn't think that Long Yu was his opponent.

After all, he was an entire layer above Long Yu!

As Qiu Zhenlao rushed towards Long Yu, he could think of nothing else except the two top grade spiritual level battle weapons which were currently in the possession of Long Yu. His whole mind was focused on seizing these battle weapons from Long Yu at all costs.

The spear and the wings!

However, if he had pondered carefully, he would have known that he was not an opponent of Long Yu!

If it wasn't so, Long Yu would not have been able to kill two of his companions instantly!

Needless to say, after deciding to fight Long Yu, there was now no escape for Qiu Zhenlao.

"Flying snake sword!"

Qiu Zhenlao grasped his sword firmly and rushed forward. Even under the influence of Zhentian domain, he darted forward at a great speed along with his snake Zhenling.

"Numerous spear shadows!"

Long Yu was not taking him seriously. He just turned his spear towards Qiu Zhenlao and swayed it to release numerous spear shadows.

Qiu Zhenlao swept his sword to sweep away the spear shadows darting towards him. As the sword collided with the spear shadows, a loud blast could be heard.

However, this did not stop Long Yu as his lunar wings flapped behind him and he turned into a jet black streamer, rushing into another direction.

"Die!"

"Kill ten thousand people!"

Long Yu swept his nine hidden dragon spear towards a man of Zhenling 2nd layer who was now trying to escape by running away from the scene. As the spear pierced him, he fell on the ground spitting blood from his mouth and died soon after.

Under the suppression of Zhentian domain, these Zhenling 2nd layer experts had no chance of resisting Long Yu's attacks!

"Don't run away you coward! Kill him!"

Qiu Zhenlao scolded his companion as soon as he noticed him running away. Since he could not rely on his companions now, he rushed towards Long Yu with a strong killing intention!

"How pitiful!"

Long Yu's eyes flashed with indifference as he had no mercy for Qiu Zhenlao and his companions.

Indeed, desiring for revenge was not Qiu Zhenlao's fault.

Pining for Long Yu's battle weapons was not his fault either.

But even after witnessing the real extent of Long Yu's strength, Qiu Zhenlao was still hell bent on killing him and seizing his battle weapons, this was the biggest mistake of Qiu Zhenlao.

When it came to dealing with his enemies, Long Yu never showed mercy.

"Where do you intend to run?"

Long Yu first pursued the fellow who was trying to escape then he rushed sideways. The Zhentian domain enveloped him once more, causing the stagnation of all his movements.

Long Yu took his nine hidden dragon spear and thrust it directly into his chest, piercing his heart, causing him to die instantly.

"You!"

Qiu Zhenlao found an opportunity to kill Long Yu in the death of his companion, so he seized it and launched an attack on Long Yu.

With all his companions already killed by Long Yu, if he managed to kill Long Yu, he could keep all his battle weapons to himself!

It was only a pity that such frenzied thoughts could not help him in a battle against Long Yu.

Long Yu calmly turned to his side in order to dodge the sudden attack launched at him. His eyes were filled with a strong killing intention.

"Now, it's time for you to die."

Long Yu said calmly as he began to comprehend the dry marsh mood.

Immediately, Qiu Zhenlao felt himself trapped in a swamp as he could not move. He was utterly shocked!

Twin moods!

Qiu Zhenlao had earlier congealed his snake Zhenling which was actually so efficient that even the Zhentian domain had no influence over it.

However, at this time, his snake Zhenling was being blocked by Long Yu's Zhentian Sun, and just then Long Yu displayed dry marsh mood out of the blue which slowed down his movements with great ease.

"Nine hidden dragon fist, intoxicated hell!"

Long Yu activated his nine hidden dragon mark and launched his fist towards Qiu Zhenlao, which was containing a great amount of nine hidden dragon qi.

As his fist hit the ground, Qiu Zhenlao's whole body was enveloped by a stream of black qi that gushed out of the ground and started to erode his meridians, leaving him dumbstruck!

(Mystique: Intoxicated hell is enough to kill a lower level opponent, but for a higher level opponent, Long Yu uses this skill to stupefy them and then launches the final killer move.)

Finally, Long Yu pounded his fist on Qiu Zhenlao's chest, crushing his heart and heavenly arteries, instantly killing him in the process!

Long Yu killed all five of his enemies in a matter of seconds and that too so effortlessly!

Chapter – 147 Entered the Demon Valley

The corpses of the five martial experts rested unnoticed in the Heavenly soul forest that stretched ahead of the eastern gate of Hun Yin city.

After killing Qiu Zhenlao's party of five people, Long Yu searched their corpses for battle weapons. Soon afterwards, he found a middle-grade spiritual level sword with Qiu Zhenlao.

The other four people also had some low-grade spiritual level battle weapons with them, but Long Yu was disinclined towards collecting these weapons because travelling with so many weapons could be highly inconvenient for him.

"I have heard that there exists a battle weapon, named space battle weapon, which can contain numerous battle weapons inside it and is portable. Unfortunately, such battle weapons are precious and their cost must not be less than that of a mysterious level immortality pill."

Long Yu felt some pity, but on thinking deeply he realised that even if he carried these low-grade battle weapons with him to sell them off, they could not fetch him any more than forty or fifty crystal coins. Therefore it was wise to leave them here.

As Long Yu was still thinking about what to do with the medium grade spiritual level sword, suddenly he felt his nine hidden dragon mark heating up.

"Well?"

Long Yu was left in more surprise as dense xuan qi released from the nine hidden dragon mark!

And now he could see that there was a storage space of about one room inside the nine hidden dragon mark!

This discovery left Long Yu overjoyed. He at once placed the four low-grade spiritual level battle weapons inside the mark, and then he placed the medium grade spiritual level sword and also the nine hidden Qian dragon spear inside the nine hidden dragon mark.

Since the combat ended in a short period of time, no one had passed through that way till then. As soon as Long Yu was done with searching the battle

weapons, he flapped his lunar wings changing his whole persona into a jet black streamer and without wasting any more time, headed east towards the Demon valley.

“It seems that this nine hidden mark has many other useful functions, which will not be revealed until I enhance my cultivation.....”

Long Yu rushed away, thinking to himself.

He was reminded of the Royal Ancient Ginseng forest. When he had stolen the top grade ginseng, the nine hidden dragon mark had covered up the aura of its rich ling qi completely.

It was the same even now.

Whenever Long Yu was stuck between carrying something with him or leaving it there, the nine hidden dragon mark made space for those things.

However, he still did not know whether this nine hidden dragon mark possessed some other features.

“When I run into some trouble the next time, I will remember to try the nine hidden dragon mark to solve it first.”

Although Long Yu did not want to totally rely upon the nine hidden dragon mark for his strength, these small features were really handy when in some major problem. Moreover, there was no harm in using these features.

When he had released the nine hidden dragon Zhenling from his Dantian, even he felt a tinge of terror.

His body still turned into a jet-black streamer, darted forward in the direction of the Demon valley.

In a while, he had travelled a distance of around one hundred miles and could now distinctly see a mountain valley filled with dense Demonqi (Yaoqi), it indeed was the Demon valley!

The chief entrance to the Demon valley was Taniguchi plain, which was as vast as an entire city. On its both sides were mountain peaks which towered to the sky. No matter how far one could see, one could simply not find the ending.

For ordinary martial experts, Taniguchi plain was the only way to enter the

Demon valley.

Only when a martial expert had stepped into the realm of Heaven and man, he was allowed to enter the Demon valley from whichever way he wished – the Taniguchi plain or either of the two mountain peaks that surrounded the Taniguchi plain.

Quickly, Long Yu arrived near the entrance of the Demon valley. There, he took off his Lunar wings and placed them inside the nine hidden dragon mark in order to avoid getting attacked because of his battle weapons again.

As Long Yu looked on, he could see that several martial experts had gathered at the entrance of the Demon valley. Perhaps they were looking for suitable partners to hunt the evil beasts before entering the valley.

After all, the Demon valley was full of deadly beasts and therefore entering the valley alone was highly dangerous!

Only if one had attained a cultivation level of Zhenling 4th layer, they could dare to enter the Demon valley all on their own because even in the exterior areas of the valley, it was probable that some beasts of Zhenling 4th layer might be lurking.

The beasts that inhabited the depths of Demon valley specially sent out patrol troops of other beasts in order to ward off the humans that had entered the valley.

However, if victorious, these beasts wouldn't mind taking these humans as their next meal.

"Pond Snow and Feng Yao are not here. They should probably have gone inside already...."

Long Yu thought to himself.

As he gradually moved towards the entrance of the Demon valley, nobody paid any special attention towards him because Zhenling 2nd layer was nothing special.

Since he had placed all his battle weapons inside the nine hidden dragon mark, his mere body would be of no special interest to the other martial experts.

However, as he neared the Taniguchi plain, he noticed some martial experts staring at him.

“Hey, look at that kid, isn’t he a total waste? Humph, a brat of Zhenling 2nd layer thinks he can enter the Demon valley?”

“In that case, he is a big fool. He is playing with his own life!”

“He is such a fool! He thinks he can breakthrough very easily by coming to this place.”

One group of martial experts was talking among themselves while looking at Long Yu. From their appearance, one could easily deduce that this was a hostile lot who didn’t care about anyone’s life or death.

Each one of them cared only about their own life!

Long Yu surely didn’t pay any attention toward them.

He decided to enter the Demon valley all on his own to hunt the demon beasts. Even if there were chances that he would encounter a Zhenling 4th layer beast, he was not afraid at all.

Just now he had killed opponents of Zhenling 2nd layer and 3rd layer and that too with so ease!

Even while killing all of the five-member party led by Qiu Zhenlao, he had not displayed his full strength yet.

Even if he just displayed the strength of ‘Holding Thunder Charm’, he could have instantly killed Qiu Zhenlao and his four companions.

Moreover, since he had now achieved the enormous strength from Heavenly thunder tablet, there would be no effect on his body from the attacks of the likes of Qiu Zhenlao. He could easily dodge them off and cause great devastation to the opposite party with his powerful counterattacks.

Long Yu finally entered the Demon valley. He felt a cold and gloomy aura coming from inside but still went forward.

The entire Demon valley was filled with dense Demonqi. There was not a single corner left where this cold and spooky aura was not present. If an ordinary martial expert was to enter the Demon valley, his body would soon be corroded

by the dense Demonqi.

Only the martial experts who had stepped into the Zhenling realm could resist the Demonqi of this density.

Apart from the deadly beasts whose neidans were the chief object of interest for all the martial experts, this dense Demonqi was another lethal thing present in the Demon valley.

“Chirrrp!”

Long Yu heard a distinct sound and saw something moving near the bushes in front of him, but the thing soon disappeared as if it had never been seen by Long Yu in the first place.

“What kind of beast was that...?”

Long Yu did not know. The opposite party seemed to be a bit timid, so just when it sensed that Long Yu was approaching, it escaped from the place.

As soon as that little beast disappeared, Long Yu could not feel the slight breath of the opposite party, which made him more vigilant.

The Demon valley was the haven for numerous devil beasts, and any of these monsters could hide really well in their own home!

More importantly, the prototype of a demon beast was a wild animal, and these wild animals could hide anywhere and launch a sneak attack all of a sudden!

Luckily enough, Long Yu now had the defensive power of ‘Holding Thunder Charm’ otherwise it could have been fatal for him to venture alone in the Demon valley.

“Is someone approaching?”

Long Yu soon noticed that a team of around five people was approaching him.

Their arrival might prove dangerous to him!

Although there was much danger ahead of them in the Demon valley, still they thought it better to get rid of Long Yu first. According to them, this would not only ensure their safety but would also reap them great profits as they could

seize his hidden battle weapons and neidans.

“Their planning is not bad, but unfortunately they are messing up with the wrong person.....”

Long Yu thought to himself. He released xuan qi and flapped his lunar wings, turning himself into a jet black streamer, and rushed forward.

This move immediately startled the team of five people.

“Look, that boy has wings! No doubt he is a transformed demon beast!”

“No! These wings must be some battle weapon. Look at his speed. I’m sure he could rush away so fast only because of these wings.”

“Such being the case, we should pursue him and catch him quickly!”

The five people immediately darted forward in order to catch Long Yu but soon realised that their speeds were nothing compared to the speed with which Long Yu was moving.

A few minutes later, Long Yu had covered a great distance and had completely disappeared from their sight!

By this time, they had travelled a distance of around twelve miles into the Demon valley and now were surrounded by lush green grooves and thick-trunked trees. At any time, they could fall prey to immense danger.

“Do not pursue him! Stay close and be careful, mate!”

The five-member team quickly adjusted themselves to a new formation, since they had entered the Demon valley for the first time.

For hunting in the Demon valley, strength held no importance. What held the real importance was the experience!

Without any proper combat experience, even a Zhenling 4th layer expert would surely die inside the Demon valley.

Since this team of martial experts was composed only of Zhenling 3rd layer experts and were on their first venture inside the Demon valley, what they feared the most was the appearance of a Goblin Snake.

If the Goblin Snake made an upright appearance, there was nothing for them

to fear. After all, how could a single Goblin Snake win against five Zhenling experts?

But that was not what these Goblin Snakes were feared the most for.

The Goblin Snakes had a great ability to hide in lush green surroundings such as bushes and marshes, and they were known for launching lethal sneak attacks!

Ordinary experts did not possess the ability to sense the presence of these Goblin Snakes, so when such a beast was to attack, it would immediately break their formation, and once that happened, the entire team would simply be trampled upon.

The five of them alertly moved ahead, totally unaware of the fact that the person whom they were following till now, was now following them!

Long Yu had rushed out of their sight only to follow a circular path and now he was following this team of five people!

Since the other party wanted to rob him, he followed the rule of tit for tat and was now following them with the same motive. Thanks to the terrific speed granted by the lunar wings, he could approach them or retreat from there at any time!

Chapter – 148 Goblin Snake Beast

In the dense Demonqi of the Demon valley, the team of those five people moved forward, with Long Yu following them from a fair distance away.

Since Long Yu was very skilled at hiding himself while following his enemies, it was almost impossible for them to have discovered his presence.

“Although this Demon valley is home to various vicious beasts, it is not so easy to find a beast for hunting.....”

While following the opposite party, Long Yu realized that the situation inside the Demon valley was far from what he had expected before entering the valley. Most of the beasts living here were keeping themselves hidden and could launch a sudden sneak attack at any point of time!

Since these beasts also had the ability to sense the martial cultivation level of other creatures, humans included, if a martial expert with a strong cultivation level was to approach them, they would simply hide themselves in the lush green surroundings.

As the human martial experts could absorb the neidan of a beast after killing it in order to enhance their cultivation with the rich demonqi, in a similar fashion the beasts could also kill the human martial experts and absorb rich xuan qi from their bodies in order to enhance their cultivation levels.

Therefore, it could be concluded that the Demon valley was not a place where human martial experts would come and kill the beasts. Rather, it was a place where the humans and the beasts slaughtered each other mutually for enhancing their respective cultivation levels!

A weak human martial expert could simply not survive inside the Demon valley.

If a strong martial expert could venture deep inside the Demon valley and could stay safe and sound, it might be because the other beasts were afraid of his cultivation level and simply did not want to mess with him.

“These devil beasts have some wisdom of their own. Therefore, in order to be able to kill at least one Zhenling realm beast, it will require not just strength but also some luck.....”

Long Yu thought to himself.

The beasts of the Demon valley could not be killed so easily by the human martial experts.

However, once killed, a devil beast could not only provide with a top grade spiritual level neidan but its whole body could be used by a martial expert in order to enhance his cultivation!

This made Long Yu think deeply about this matter. If he manages to kill a devil beast, he cannot let the carcass rot there because even the carcass could help him in achieving the much-needed breakthrough!

Each body part of a devil beast could be used to compound various immortality pills which had special value for the enhancement of the cultivation.

Regarding the compounding of immortality pills, Long Yu did not have much knowledge. If he manages to kill a devil beast, he cannot carry the carcass with him. The only safe place to hide the carcass was the nine hidden dragon mark.

The nine hidden dragon mark's storage space placed Long Yu in an advantageous position as compared to the other martial experts venturing into the Demon valley.

Preoccupied with these thoughts, Long Yu kept on following the team of five people, and now they had reached a special region inside the Demon valley. In this region, a great number of quarry stones were scattered, topped with overgrown weeds. It seemed like a complexly drawn labyrinth.

"Be careful!"

The five-member team stopped several feet away from the entrance of the stone labyrinth as if they discovered something.

"It appears to be the lair of the rock rhino beast. I cannot sense the presence of the Zhenling 4th layer leader of the rock rhino herd, but if their leader appears, we all should retreat immediately."

They had not realized that Long Yu had followed them all this way and was now hiding in the bushes only a hundred feet away from them.

As Long Yu heard their words, his heart throbbed fast. Had the time to kill a

devil beast finally arrived?

Just then he listened to a distinct loud roar which was coming from the rock labyrinth in front of them. This roar was actually containing the enormous strength of a world principle of domain level, which immediately suppressed all five people standing there!

Suddenly the beast made an appearance. It looked like a rhinoceros, but its body seemed to be made of rocks and his whole stature was bigger than the stature of two adult men combined together.

It was a fully grown adult rock rhino beast!

“It has a cultivation level of Zhenling 4th layer. It must be the leader of the herd!”

This made the eyes of those five people shine brightly with excitement!

They could clearly assess that this rock rhino beast was actually pregnant. Therefore, even though it was a Zhenling 4th layer beast, its battle efficiency was not high at that time.

On the forehead of this rock Rhino beast was a huge horn which was covered with granite-like scales. If one could kill this rock rhino, this horn would serve as a great battle weapon!

Fate had bestowed great favor upon them all!

The five people mustered their strength immediately and were ready to fight now. Although this rock rhino beast was carrying little rock rhino babies inside its belly, its battle efficiency could not be completely neglected!

Long Yu watched the happenings from his hiding place and noticed that even though those five people were ready to fight and were standing in their fighting positions, still none of them launched an attack on the rock rhino beast.

However, he soon understood the reason.

The rock rhino beast could have killed these five human martial experts with great ease by staying inside its labyrinth, but it had taken the initiative and jumped out of the labyrinth!

Long Yu just would not believe that the rock rhino had jumped out of its

habitat without having some secret cards in its hand!

Since the five-member team did not have much experience, they carried themselves with great alertness. However, the attraction of this rock rhino beast was so strong that they could not think of other possibilities.

No matter what danger they had to face, they were resolute about killing this rock rhino beast and seizing its neidan as well as the horn on its forehead!

Without any further hesitation, the five people launched their attacks on the rock rhino beast. Its whole body was attacked by Zhenlings, various martial skills and charm level world laws simultaneously.

But just then, the rock rhino beast congealed its own Zhenling entity which immediately defended the beast and smashed one of the Zhenlings!

An expert lost his Zhenling in an instant and his face turned red all of a sudden.

However, it was not his fault because his team was just not strong enough to combat with this rock rhino beast.

After all, the Zhenling entity congealed by the rock rhino beast was at least ten times more powerful than the Zhenlings congealed by those five men!

(Mystique: Zhenling entity is much refined and powerful compared to a normal Zhenling. One can congeal Zhenling entity after stepping into the fourth layer of Zhenling.)

However, even if the rock rhino beast seemed formidable now, with its megalith Zhenling entity fully defending it from all the attacks, its battle efficiency was still low.

Four people from that team made the best use of this time and launched their best martial skills to attack that rock rhino beast once more.

Boom!

The sudden impact of these terrific forces shook the legs of the rock rhino beast. However, these attacks couldn't cause any major damage to the beast as its skin was as hard as the granite rock!

Because of this hard granite skin, the body of the rock rhino beast didn't receive any injury at all!

This granite skin was actually a defence mechanism of this rock rhino!

But just then, a sudden mournful shout reached the ears of those four people.

They were shocked to see that the expert who just lost his Zhenling a moment ago was screaming pitifully. His agonising screams pierced their ears as his face started turning blue. He fell down to the ground, clutching his chest.

“It’s a sneak attack by a Goblin Snake!”

Immediately, the four people started panicking.

The favourite attack of Goblin Snakes was to crush a human’s body to break the bones inside and then bite it, pouring the deadly poison in the veins which would soon reach the victim’s heart and kill him.

The deadly poison killed that expert within a few seconds as his face turned completely blue!

They had not expected that while they would be dealing with a rock rhino beast, a Goblin Snake would attack them unexpectedly!

They should have thought about it earlier!

Otherwise, why would the rock rhino beast take such a bold step to jump out of its labyrinth?

“Run, let’s get out of here!”

The head of that small party had been killed by the Goblin Snake just now, and the other four people were only at Zhenling 3rd layer. It was impossible for them to deal with two Zhenling 4th layer beasts at once.

Moreover, Goblin Snake was the most feared of all the beasts that dwelled inside the Demon valley!

The four people, without uttering another word, immediately fled in four different directions in order to save their lives.

However, as soon as they turned to flee from the place, the black Goblin Snake nipped the arm of one of those four people and fiercely bit him.

“Brothers, save me!”

With this cry of merely three words, his body became limp and fell down. His

face started turning blue and before anyone could do something, he was dead.

Long Yu saw that the Goblin Snake had changed its direction now and was chasing the remaining three. Its speed was so high that if Long Yu had to escape from it, even the lunar wings couldn't have helped him!

It could be imagined that there was no chance of survival at all for those three people while the Goblin Snake was chasing them down.

But this gave Long Yu a golden opportunity!

As Long Yu saw the black poisonous Goblin Snake dart away behind the three people, he now eyed the staggering rock rhino beast.

Although the granite skin defence mechanism displayed by the rock rhino beast had protected him from any external injuries, the impact of the attacks made by the five member group had infiltrated through the granite skin and seeped into its body. As a result, the beast was not able to stand properly now.

So now, Long Yu's target was that rock rhino beast!

"Nine hidden dragon prance!"

With the nine hidden dragon prance, Long Yu covered a distance of 100 feet immediately!

Meanwhile, he bit his finger and sprinkled the blood on the tip of his Qian dragon spear, thus activating the black lines on the tip displaying Lamella touch.

The spear, containing a tyrannical strength, was now rushing towards the rock rhino monster at a tremendous speed.

The rock rhino beast responded to this attack immediately.

Although its outer appearance was gross and unwieldy, still it displayed great martial expertise. As soon as it detected the sneak attack directed towards it, it activated the granite skin defence mechanism once again.

It also congealed its megalith Zhenling entity and charged it towards the spear!

However, this reaction from the rock rhino beast was already anticipated by Long Yu.

"Now die!"

Long Yu immediately displayed his ghost flash technique. He disappeared into thin air and a moment later, re-appeared behind the rock rhino beast.

At this moment, the megalith Zhenling entity and the spear had collided with a booming sound.

The Qian dragon spear was worthy of being called a top-grade spiritual level battle weapon. Even after colliding with a strong Zhenling entity like the megalith, it wasn't damaged one bit!

If any ordinary battle weapon had collided with the megalith, it would surely have shattered into a hundred pieces.

At this moment, without the support of its Zhenling entity, the rock rhino beast could barely withstand the martial skill bombardment displayed by Long Yu.

“Nine hidden dragon fist, Awakening palm samsara! Intoxicated hell!”

The intoxicated hell and awakening palm samsara complimented each other and made the attack more ferocious, enveloping the whole body of the rock rhino beast immediately.

The rock rhino beast was not only shocked by this powerful attack, the nine hidden dragon fist also caused its cultivation level to drop down by one level, so now its cultivation level was merely Zhenling 3rd layer.

Long Yu pounded his fist to the ground.

“Nine hidden dragon fist, burst stream!”

Chapter – 149 Goblin Snake slaughtered

A terrific column of nine hidden dragon qi burst out of the ground below the rock rhino beast and instantly enveloped its whole body.

Cold and cloudy nine hidden dragon qi started seeping into its body, making the beast give away shrill cries as if the sky itself would fall down this day!

As Long Yu stood behind the body of the rock rhino beast after attacking it, the beast's body now started shriveling and shaking and was now disintegrating into rocks and boulders.

This rock rhino beast had suffered great injuries due to being hit by the nine hidden dragon fist, so basically there was no chance he could survive now.

The body of this beast was even bigger than two martial experts combined together and now this enormous body fell on the ground with a great thud. Fine black lines could be seen flowing under its skin, which clearly showed that his body was being corroded by the nine hidden dragon qi.

Long Yu, who was hiding at one side to protect himself if required, now came out and darted towards the beast. Killing the rock rhino beast had been a matter of a few seconds for him.

Even after seeing the rock rhino beast fall to the ground, Long Yu did not become carefree. Instead, he became more vigilant as he remembered the Goblin snake. The speed at which the Goblin snake had followed those three men – it was highly probable that the Goblin snake had already killed the three men and was now heading back towards the rock rhino beast's lair!

Just as he thought so, a black snake with strong killing intention rushed towards Long Yu.

The speed with which the snake launched this sneak attack, even Long Yu couldn't outrun it!

He only felt a slight pain of a snake biting him on his back.

"Holding the Thunder charm, explode!"

Long Yu had already been ready for this. Holding the Thunder charm that he had comprehended loudly exploded, covering his whole body with Heavenly

Thunder Lightning!

At this moment, his whole body was enveloped with radiant purple light, while the thunder charm worked upon countering the effect of the poison left in Long Yu's body by the snake bite.

The black snake was about to charge towards Long Yu again, but on seeing the radiant purple light, it changed its course and moved sideways.

Long Yu was simply not afraid of anything now.

Long Yu felt that the point at which the snake had bitten him in the back was close to his heart and this highly fatal poison was now moving towards his heart.

However, fortunately enough, he had refined his body after entering the Heavenly Thunder reservoir by using the thunder mines and had also comprehended the Holding the Thunder charm, so his high precision defense capability was much stronger now.

While the snake's poison moved towards his heart, the thunder charm integrated its power to stop the poison from reaching Long Yu's heart.

Although he could not completely stop the poison as he was just a Zhenling 2nd layer expert, the influence of the thunder charm gave him enough time to think of a solution.

He decisively took out the Flying Snakes sword he had earlier seized from Qiu Zhenlao, poured strong xuan qi into it and chopped off the spot where the snake had bitten him!

The lump of flesh that fell on the ground was completely corroded by the strong poison and had already turned dense black in color.

"If it not had been for Holding Thunder charm, I would certainly have died."

Although Long Yu was not afraid of anything, still he found it a bit awe-inspiring, because a sneak attack launched by Goblin Snake beast could not be dodged off by any martial expert, not even him!

After the opposite party had launched a sneak attack, fortunately enough, Long Yu had been able to survive it and now was protected against it.

He could now sense that somewhere in the lush green surroundings, a beast

was lurking with a strong killing intention directed towards him as if it was ready to strike him any time now. If the opposite party launched a sneak attack yet again, Long Yu would definitely be able to fend it off.

However, soon enough, his complexion changed.

“Are there two Goblin Snakes?”

Two black Goblin Snakes, all of a sudden, launched a sneak attack on Long Yu – one from the left and one from the right!

However, quickly Long Yu realized that there were not two Goblin snakes, but the second snake was just the Zhenling entity of the Goblin snake!

The Goblin Snake, being at 4th layer of the Zhenling realm, could naturally congeal a Zhenling entity.

Because of this, when the two snakes launched towards Long Yu, he simply could not figure out which one was the main body of the snake and which one was its Zhenling entity!

When a Goblin snake launched a sneak attack along with congealing its Zhenling entity, it also released an enormous pressure which was deadly and poisonous. Under this immense pressure, the body of an ordinary Zhenling realm martial expert would surely perish instantly.

Long Yu fearlessly congealed his Zhentian Sun Zhenling and also released Zhentian domain which countered the fatal pressure exerted by the Zhenling entity, while the thunder charm continued to protect his body from the attacks.

Soon afterward, Long Yu activated his lunar wings which released a great amount of lunar qi and turned his body into a jet black streamer, and he immediately escaped the attacks.

After being prepared in advance, there was no sneak attack that could harm him easily!

“It is not good!”

In spite of being able to escape the attacks of the Goblin snake, Long Yu was not much happy because even if he had escaped, the Goblin snake and its Zhenling entity had now directed their attacks towards the Zhentian Sun

Zhenling of Long Yu!

Although the Zhentian Sun was not a living creature, still it was being corroded badly by these attacks and under the influence of fatal poison, the Sun had started turning blue and black.

“Withdraw!”

Long Yu immediately returned the Zhentian Sun to his Dantian.

The power of the Zhenling entity was far more than that of the Sun Zhenling and there was no way it could withstand a double attack.

If it had not been for the great suppression power of the Zhentian domain, Long Yu’s Zhentian Sun would have been completely corroded by the poison, and in that case, he would have to wait for several months for its complete restoration.

While withdrawing the Zhentian Sun, Long Yu had taken his Qian dragon spear out and had contaminated the tip of the spear with the blood from the fresh wound at his back.

“Lamella touch, explode!”

Long Yu shot the spear towards the enemy with great killing intention, and it darted away as if it was ready to tear anyone or anything that came in its way!

Since Long Yu had been wounded by the Goblin Snake and the blood from the same wound was used by him to contaminate the tip of the spear, the magnitude of its power was much more – so much that even the Goblin Snake could not dodge it away with his great speed!

(Mystique: The severity of wound (from where the blood is taken to contaminate the spear-tip) increases the attack power of lamella touch.)

With a loud bang, the spear struck the Goblin snake and pierced through its body. As it fell to the ground along with the spear, it appeared as if someone had sewn its body to that of the rock rhino beast that was already lying there in parts.

However, soon enough, Long Yu found out that the snake that had been struck by the spear was actually the Zhenling entity of the Goblin Snake.

And the increased wrath of the Qian dragon spear along with lamella touch proved to be insufficient for completely destroying the Zhenling entity!

“If it was a Zhenling image, there was no chance it could have survived the Lamella touch attack. This means that Zhenling entity indeed is ten times more powerful than Zhenling image.....”

Long Yu thought to himself while grabbing his spear and now was more vigilant than ever.

All of a sudden, the main body of the Goblin snake shot out towards Long Yu in order to attack him. Fortunately, Long Yu had detected this move in time and launched a counter attack.

“Nine hidden dragon fist!”

Long Yu immediately condensed nine hidden dragon qi on his fist and shot it towards the Goblin Snake at once!

However, just when the nine hidden dragon qi was about to envelop the Goblin snake, it dodged to one side, as if it was already aware of the move that Long Yu would make.

Just now he had killed a fully grown rock rhino beast with the same technique but killing a Goblin Snake was a far-fetched dream. It seemed as if the Goblin Snake was naturally prepared against these attacks.

However, Long Yu’s power was not limited to Lamella touch only.

“Lunar Tablet!”

The nine hidden dragon mark changed itself to jade mark as he took out the Heavenly Lunar Tablet from his bosom, followed by the eruption of dense xuan qi. Long Yu was surprised to see that the jade mark had grown itself to be half the size of the tablet.

A spine-chilling, cold burst of lunar qi immediately erupted from the Heavenly Lunar tablet and scattered in the surroundings. If Long Yu could comprehend the lunar domain then this tablet could have exerted a tyrannical pressure on the opposite party.

This sudden eruption of lunar qi immediately turned the lush green

surroundings into a stretch of frost and snow, reducing the speed of the Goblin Snake to almost half!

Since the Heavenly Lunar tablet and the Lunar wings had already formed a resonance, the eruption speed of the Lunar qi was much more than it previously had been.

Moreover, as there were no other martial experts nearby, Long Yu could freely tap the potential of the Heavenly Lunar tablet without fearing for anyone to attack him midway to seize the tablet.

Under the influence of the Heavenly Lunar tablet, there was frost all around now!

The Goblin Snake was unable to respond to this sudden change of environment as his black body was now covered with white frost. As its movements were also slowed down, it appeared in its true colors for a faceoff with Long Yu.

The Goblin Snake had the appearance of a black snake. However, it had the head of a human. It looked so horrible as if it had come straight out of hell!

After discovering that all his attacks went in vain, the Goblin Snake once again charged towards Long Yu who was holding the tablet tightly.

Out of all the treasures of the world, only the Heavenly Lunar tablet had the power to sustain its attacks.

As the Goblin Snake struck the tablet with its venom, the tablet immediately warded it off and the snake went back flying in the direction from where it had come.

The next moment, Long Yu activated his nine hidden dragon mark.

“Awakening palm samsara!”

Long Yu charged his fist with the power of the samsara and shot it towards the beast.

As he launched this move, Long Yu knew that since he was facing a very powerful enemy, his comprehension of this martial skill that was actually at Xiao Cheng level was fast enough to hit the enemy!

This meant that the power of nine hidden dragon fist, although having a tyrannical power already, would be more powerful now. The same would also apply to the intoxicated hell skill and the awakening palm samsara skill!

If he had to contest with a martial expert of same cultivation level, then the nine hidden dragon fist would be quicker and stronger than ever in defeating the opponent.

But if the opponent was of a higher cultivation level, like the Goblin Snake which was two levels above him, in that case being able to successfully strike down the opponent was very difficult.

However, at this moment, his Awakening palm samsara skill did not have these shortcomings because its effects occurred in a larger range of area!

At Xiao Cheng level, the awakening palm samsara could shoot immense power towards the opponent in a wider range, completely enveloping it and seeping inside its body!

As Long Yu launched his fist, immediately the power of the samsara enveloped the body of the Goblin snake, taking it to the samsara realm, dropping its cultivation level by one layer instantly!

From Zhenling 4th layer, its cultivation fell to Zhenling 3rd layer!

If Long Yu ever had to fight an opponent whose cultivation level was two layers above his own cultivation, he could only rely upon the Awakening palm samsara martial skill!

The very next moment, nine hidden dragon qi exploded below the body of the Goblin snake, as it started giving away shrill cries, just like Long Yu's previous victim – the rock rhino beast.

The Zhenling 4th layer Goblin Snake howled on till it died!

Long Yu's clothes were completely drenched with sweat. Being just a Zhenling 2nd layer expert, he had to fight with two Zhenling 4th layer beasts. In order to survive, he had gone through a lot of hardships.

Fortunately, he had the Heavenly Lunar tablet which helped him by slowing down the speed of the Goblin snake and defending against its attacks.

Otherwise, it would have been impossible for him to kill this Goblin Snake.

Long Yu had finally emerged victorious!

Now it was time to collect the harvest.

Long Yu, still pondering, moved forward and grabbed his spear in order to seize the neidan of this Goblin Snake.

Chapter – 150 The command of execution

The corpse of a formidable beast was no less than a treasure for any martial expert.

And now, Long Yu had two of them!

The body of a Zhenling 4th layer beast could not only provide him with a neidan from which Yaoqi could be absorbed to enhance cultivation, but it could also provide him with a special thing from its Zhenling entity, called the “Demon Soul Essence”.

(Mystique: Yaoqi = Demonqi)

Strictly speaking, the entity congealed by a beast should not be called Zhenling entity. It should be called “Demon entity”.

However, there was a little difference between these two. Just the way a Zhenling entity could not operate itself but was dependent upon the human martial expert, who had congealed it. In the similar fashion, a Demon entity depended upon the beast that had congealed.

By consuming the Demon Soul essence, one could congeal his own Zhenling entity!

When a martial expert or a beast died, the Zhenling entity or the Demon entity dissipated into the environment soon after. So, there was not much time for someone to seize the Demon Soul Essence.

Moreover, Demon Soul Essence was a precious thing for any Zhenling realm martial expert.

One could simply not find anyone selling Demon Soul Essence in the market, because as soon as someone killed a beast, they needed to absorb it immediately.

Only the corpses of the beasts with a cultivation level of Zhenling 4th layer and above could produce Demon Soul Essence.

And Demon Soul Essence disappeared into the environment within one hour of the host's death.

At this moment, Long Yu had too much for a harvest.

Since he had killed two Zhenling 4th layer beasts on his own, the rock rhino beast and the Goblin Snake beast, he would get to absorb the Demon Soul Essence of both these beasts!

Soon afterwards, Long Yu started digging through the corpse of the Goblin Snake.

As the Goblin Snake's body was relatively small, Long Yu seized its neidan, absorbed its Demon Soul Essence immediately and placed the snake's corpse inside the nine hidden dragon mark.

Then, with the help of the power contained within the Demon Soul Essence, Long Yu started refining his Zhentian Sun!

In spite of the damage, caused by the venom of the Goblin Snake, being too high, the Zhentian Sun was soon restored to its former glory and was now more concise and potent than ever.

"The effect of a single Demon soul Essence is equivalent to the effect of three to five neidans of Zhenling beasts!"

Long Yu's face lit up.

Surely the decision of hunting the beasts on his own had reaped him great rewards. The effect of neidans that he had bought would have been nothing as compared to the effect of a single Demon Soul Essence.

Moreover, fighting such formidable beasts alone had greatly increased his battle efficiency and helped him test various battle tactics!

However, it was an extremely dangerous task for a martial expert to do. If someone did not have a sufficient cultivation level, messing up even with a single Zhenling 4th layer beast could result in their death!

If a martial expert of Zhenling 4th realm succeeded in slaying a beast of the same cultivation level, he could do it with relative ease, but for the purpose of enhancing their cultivation level, the Demon Soul Essence of the beast would not be enough. He would definitely need more.

Since absorbing the Demon Soul Essence of a beast of the same level would

obviously not reap any great benefits.

In case of Long Yu, since he was just a Zhenling 2nd layer expert, his needs for a breakthrough into the 3rd layer were not as high. As long as he had sufficient amount of Yaoqi, breakthrough was not an issue.

But if someone wished to enter into the Zhenling 4th layer and congeal a Zhenling entity, in that case, they would need much more resources. But this was something Long Yu was not concerned about right now.

After the corpse of the Goblin Snake being taken care of, Long Yu's primary concern was the corpse of the rock rhino beast.

The reason for his worry was the size of the beast's body which was an enormous heap of rocks!

Long Yu did not know exactly which body parts of this rock rhino beast were valuable, so he decided to simply take the large horn on its forehead. Afterwards, he absorbed the Demon Soul Essence and the neidan of the rock rhino beast.

As for the rest of its body, he had to leave it there.

"The skin of this rock rhino beast could be used to manufacture strong, spiritual level armor. It's such a pity that I have to leave it here because there are no means with which I can obtain it....."

The skin of the rock rhino beast was as hard as a granite rock, so if Long Yu was to take a chance of seizing it, it would cost him a lot of valuable time and storage space.

And this place, the Demon valley, was filled with numerous dangers!

He had to be satisfied with what he had seized and move on, or else he could be attacked by any other beast or human expert.

.....

Time flew by.

It had already been seven days since Long Yu had entered the Demon valley alone.

After killing a rock rhino beast and a Goblin Snake beast, Long Yu roamed in the Demon valley but could not find any more beasts to kill.

Even the Zhenling 4th layer beasts, as soon as they sensed Long Yu approaching, hid themselves away!

“Do these wicked beasts also have some form of communication among them? I wonder if they already know that I have killed the rock rhino beast and the Goblin Snake.”

Long Yu thought to himself. He was aware of the fact that these beasts took the initiative of attacking a human martial expert only when they were sure of their victory.

This made Long Yu feel that he was wasting his time.

It seemed to him that relying too much on the Demon valley in order to quickly enhance his cultivation was not a good idea.

Now Long Yu came to know that these wicked beasts could not be treated like wild animals. They were not mindless creatures; instead each demon beast had a very high intelligence quotient!

Since both the parties – the humans and the beasts were mutually killing each other inside the Demon valley; this prevented the complete domination of a single party.

If a human powerhouse entered the Demon valley, he would encounter an equally powerful beast inside the valley.

It was a territory of wicked beasts!

In comparison with the Tang kingdom, the Mongolian kingdom etc, the overall influence of the Demon valley was extremely formidable. Moreover, on an average, the individual strength of a demon beast also went beyond the strength of any human martial expert hailing from the three kingdoms.

However, the number of demon beasts present in the Demon valley was certainly not much more than that of the Tang kingdom.

If an ordinary person thought of entering the Demon valley to quickly enhance their cultivation, he should immediately drop the idea as it would certainly lead

to their demise!

Because of this, only the desperate martial experts with higher cultivation levels entered the Demon valley for enhancing their cultivation, as survival was almost impossible there!

The Tang kingdom had seven sects and many influential families but did anyone from these sects or families ever come to the Demon valley?

They were well provided with all the necessary resources one would need to break through the bottlenecks, so there was no need for them to enter the Demon valley, only to get killed!

Long Yu was ready to leave the Demon valley.

After all, staying there and waiting was only wasting his precious time. Moreover, staying vigilant at all times for seven days had caused great mental exhaustion to Long Yu.

He must take a break!

He activated his lunar wings which changed his figure into a jet black streamer and he rushed toward the western gate entrance of the Demon valley.

Halfway there, he saw a group of humans moving together. It was them!

Pond Snow, wearing a fur jacket, the bare-chested Deng Shun and a girl clad in pale green dress – Feng Yao.

The only change Long Yu could notice was that this team was short of one man. Pond Snow, Deng Shun, Feng Yao and three more – there were six people instead of seven.

“It seems that one of them died while they raided the dragon beast’s lair.....”

Long Yu watched from a distance, narrowing his eyes.

Pond Snow and others seemed to be very happy about the plunder. Pond Snow and Deng Shun were laughing with each dragging the corpse of a demon beast.

These two demon beasts were Zhenling 4th layer beasts!

Unfortunately, they had become more of a war trophy for Pond Snow and his

team.

The actions of Pond Snow were different from that of Long Yu. He had planned everything in advance. Perhaps that was the reason why all of the beasts in the Demon valley were afraid of him now.

Moreover, Pond Snow's goal was to plunder the lair of the dragon beast, so even if someone attacked them unexpectedly, they would only be courting.

Therefore, Pond Snow was easily able to successfully lead the team to achieve his goal and plunder the whole lair.

Long Yu was looking from afar.

The dragon beast looked pretty much like a white-haired monkey, but its wings were extremely long and the pair of fangs in his mouth gave him a sinister appearance.

Long Yu did not want to meet Pond Snow and his party so he decided to stay away and bypass them.

After all, Pond Snow and his team were dragging the corpses of two beasts. Naturally, their speed was slow.

However, if Long Yu appeared even in a range of hundred feet, the opposite party could sense his presence!

Since the people in Pond Snow's team were at Zhenling 3rd layer, naturally they were more vigilant than Long Yu.

Long Yu noticed that they were now disputing among themselves.

Immediately afterwards, Long Yu noticed that the six people were now approaching towards him.

"Hm?"

Long Yu narrowed his eyes as he was unable to figure out what exactly was the opposite party planning to do.

However, he did not flinch.

The only reason he was avoiding Pond Snow and his party was to save time. But if the opposite party attacked him, he would not be afraid and would surely

give it to them.

Although Pond Snow and Deng Shun were dragging the corpses of the beasts with them, still their speed was high that surprised Long Yu.

Long Yu was sure that these people had raided the lair of a dragon beast just by observing the differences in their previous and current martial techniques.

If Deng Shun and others had not increased their strength, it would have been impossible for them to kill two demon beasts of Zhenling 4th layer!

If Long Yu could not escape them, he could simply stay there for some more time to have a little chitchat.

What Long Yu was most interested in, was to see how Feng Yao was now.

The distance between Pond Snow's team and Long Yu decreased gradually and was now only a hundred feet and now Long Yu could clearly be seen by the opposite party.

"Younger brother Long Yu, run as fast as you can!"

He heard Pond Snow's loud voice and sensed a hint of anxiety in his voice.

However, at this moment, it was already too late.

"Men of Xinghai Lun, kill Long Yu on sight. Show no mercy!"

Deng Shun darted toward Long Yu, still dragging the corpse of the demon beast that he had killed. His eyes flashed with a strong killing intention.

The next moment, apart from the four people that accompanied Pond Snow and Feng Yao, several people, with their eyes flashing fiercely, came swarming to that place from all the directions, with Long Yu trapped in the middle!

Unexpectedly it was a command of execution!

Long Yu narrowed his eyes. He never imagined that so many people would swarm in out of nowhere just to kill him!

Feng Yao was standing nearby, her eyes flashing with astonishment just as Long Yu, clearly showing that even she was not aware of this.

However, Long Yu thought to himself, could it be that Feng Yao teamed up with Xinghai Lun knowing full well that he had ordered his men to kill Long Yu?

Since she had always despised Long Yu, the possibility was big!

With this thought, a cold look flashed in Long Yu's eyes.

Chapter – 151 Destruction by Thunder mines

In the Demon valley filled with dense Yaoqi, Long Yu was being pursued by Deng Shun and his four companions to execute the execution order given by Xinghai Lun of the Seven Calamity Stars.

Pond Snow was visibly anxious, but Feng Yao who was standing close to him bore an indifferent look on her face.

Even after seeing that Long Yu was about to face the four men, the expression on her face was still the same.

This gave Pond Snow a slight feeling of relief – didn't he know who would win under such circumstances?

Pond Snow's belief was cemented by the past incidents that he had witnessed. Long Yu had defied the heaven's will many times, so even if he was just a Zhenling 2nd layer expert, he could fight and defeat Deng Shun easily.

But it was not just Deng Shun whom he had to face. All four of these men were of Zhenling 3rd layer and were now approaching to kill him!

Pond Snow had recently experienced a breakthrough from Zhenling 2nd layer to Zhenling 3rd layer, so he could clearly understand the disparity in the strength levels of these two parties.

Even if Long Yu had more refined martial skills and battle weapons that added to his power, still it was impossible to beat four powerhouses of a higher cultivation level at once.

However, Pond Snow was not extremely anxious.

It was Long Yu who had infiltrated the enemy camp and beheaded the Old General Man Yi. Pond Snow believed that even in this adverse situation, Long Yu would come up with a way to escape.

He did not know that at this moment, Long Yu was not thinking of running away!

Long Yu was standing fixed to the place he had stopped at, his eyes showing calmness.

He was clear about the cultivation levels of the people approaching him – he was about to face four people with the same cultivation level as that of Elder Yu Shuiyun.

Earlier, he had always found the people with a cultivation of Zhenling 4th layer to be formidable, but not after he killed two Zhenling 4th layer beasts – the rock rhino beast and the goblin snake beast in the Demon valley, all on his own.

Each of these beasts had a power equivalent to the combined power of the four men who were approaching him.

This boosted Long Yu's confidence, and this confidence had stemmed from the increase in his internal energy (since he has absorbed the Zhenling entities of two beasts).

As the four men encircled Long Yu, he saw that the bare-chested Deng Shun was wearing a rock belt on his waist, which was a spiritual level battle weapon.

As for the other three people – one of them was holding a pair of hammers in his hands, while the other one had a broken arm and fiery red eyes which made him look sinister.

The third man was wearing a pointed paper hat and looked quite funny. However, Long Yu could sense that this man was far more dangerous than the others.

"These men are really strong." Long Yu thought to himself.

Deng Shun moved forward as if to speak something, but Long Yu had no interest in being engaged in some idle talk.

Since they had the orders to kill him, Long Yu decided to attack first!

The first one to attack always holds an upper hand in a combat – it was the most irrefutable truth of the martial world.

Long Yu gave a cold look to Deng Shun, and just when he was about to speak something, Long Yu launched numerous spear shadows towards him!

These numerous spear shadows, along with the tyrannical Zhentian domain pressure, traveled towards Deng shun at a tyrannical speed, making his complexion change.

This move made by Long Yu, along with the Zhentian domain, could easily shake even a powerhouse of Zhenling 4th layer!

Deng Sshun had not expected that Long Yu, without uttering a single word, would immediately launch an attack on him and that too with such a tyrannical strength!

This sudden attack stimulated the rock belt on Deng Shun's waist which made him fly and immediately congealed a rock boulder in front of him in order to protect him from the tremendous power of the spear shadows.

Since it was a spiritual level battle weapon and was owned by a Zhenling 3rd layer expert, its intelligence was very high. And due to this increased power, it successfully shielded him from the attacks of Long Yu!

The very next moment, without giving Long Yu any time to plan for the next attack, the man with the broken arm gave a bloodthirsty look to Long Yu from his fiery red eyes and waved his hands, drawing a blood cross and launching it at Long Yu.

“It is an attack of a Zhenling 3rd layer powerhouse, I must be careful!”

Long Yu's eyes twinkled as he moved forward to face the attack launched by the red-eyed man instead of dodging it or running away from it. He rushed forward to launch a counterattack, fuelling his martial skills with a strong killing intention!

This made all the people – Deng Shun and his men, Pond Snow and even Feng Yao startle with surprise.

None of them had expected that Long Yu would be able to launch a counterattack and that too so quickly! How could he be so calm while being so outnumbered?

“If I want to face a blood cross, I would need to pull in all my power and martial skills. But younger brother Long Yu intends to resist this blood cross by merely using his body.....”

Pond Snow was stunned!

Feng Yao, who was carrying a composed expression till now, was also left

surprised.

It was a long time since she last saw Long Yu displaying his strength. Since then, he had not only enhanced his cultivation level by leaps and bounds but was now far more courageous than ever!

Being just at Zhenling 2nd layer, he was facing the fatal blood cross attack by merely fuelling his body with killing intention – he was simply courting death!

“You want to resist my blood cross with just your body, seems like your life means nothing to you!”

The red eyed man shouted: “Since I have orders from Xinghai Lun, you are going to die anyway.”

As Long Yu heard these words, the blood cross, which was just like a sharp pointed knife, struck him hard and pierced his shoulder.

However, at this time, something happened that shocked everyone!

Just as the blood cross pierced Long Yu’s shoulder, it was destroyed with a loud sound of thunder, and immediately afterwards, it seemed as if a thunder mine erupted!

“Thunder tyrant form, explode!”

Long Yu summoned the Holding Thunder charm and directed it towards the red eyed man. He was soon surrounded by the power of the charm as well as hundreds of thunder mines erupting violently.

No matter which direction the red eyed man was trying to escape to, he would face a massive bombardment of thunder mines from that side. If he stood still where he was, the thunder mines would completely surround and destroy him!

In order to face a Zhenling 3rd layer powerhouse, Long Yu came up with this masterstroke – his thunder charm took care of everything!

“Save me!”

The red eyed man cried out with his heart racing like a fierce horse as he was subjected to the immense destructive power of the thunder mines.

The thunder mines had such a violent power that even a Zhenling 3rd layer

expert couldn't escape from being destroyed!

Although he was fighting against a mere Zhenling 2nd layer boy, still he was compelled to call out to seek help from his comrades.

"I'm coming to help you!"

The man with a pair of hammers darted forward and immediately lifted his hammer high to release a powerful world principle in order to resist Long Yu's thunder charm.

However, the disparity of the strengths of the charm and the principle was far too high!

The man with the hammers wasn't aware of the fact that the world principle that he had comprehended was only of Huangshi level which was the lowest power level, while the Holding Thunder charm that Long Yu had comprehended was of Imperial seal level which was two levels higher than Huangshi level!

In this way, the world principle released by the man with the hammers was two levels lower than Long Yu's.

With the difference of a single level, the strength of a charm was doubled, so naturally these two attacks had an irrecoverable difference between them.

Immediately after its release, not only the world principle was completely destroyed by the thunder charm, but the thunder mines also changed their direction. Now, the thunder mines not only surrounded the red eyed man, but were also directed towards the man who disturbed them – the man with the hammers!

The red eyed man and the man with the hammers completely lost their composure.

It was awful!

The strength of the Holding Thunder charm was so humungous that these two experts of Zhenling 3rd layer, even after combining their strengths, could not resist its attacks!

At some distance, Pond Snow and Feng Yao watched the combat with incredible looks in their eyes – none of them had expected Long Yu to be so

efficient in combat, not to mention he was using the power of thunder mines!

Long Yu had left no way for them to escape and was absolutely confident of his battle prowess.

At this moment, Long Yu had killed two people of Zhenling 3rd layer in one go as easily as one would crush an ant!

This phenomenal change in Long Yu's efficiency made Feng Yao's heart throb faster.

She realised that although Long Yu's talent had increased manifold, she still despised him and Long Yu's strength and potential were really shocking.

No matter what, Long Yu's efficiency in the combat had left a grave impression on Feng Yao's heart!

And if Long Yu didn't die today, this impression would linger on in her heart and prove to be a great hindrance in her path of excelling the world of martial arts!

"This Long Yu must die!"

Feng Yao's eyes twinkled with an ominous light.

Now that she finally had some hopes of rising in the world of martial arts, she could simply not allow Long Yu, who was once a waste, to surpass her!

With Feng Yao's eyes flashing fiercely, the man wearing a pointed paper hat suddenly disappeared from the field, and the very next moment, he appeared right behind Long Yu.

"Your heart will stop beating now!"

The hoarse voice of that mysterious man was heard by everyone. He had comprehended a principle, stronger than the conventional martial principles, called the "Magic Principle".

What was notable was that he had comprehended this Magic Principle to the domain level!

(Mystique: When it comes to the comprehension of world laws, the first level is Mood, the second level is Charm and the third level is Domain) Once an expert

used the Magic Domain, he attained complete control of that area and could even make the opponent's heart stop immediately!

“It is a principle of mysterious jade level – the magic principle!”

Immediately, Long Yu could feel a cold, mysterious energy seeping through his heart, making his whole body shake fiercely!

But as he had quenched his heart with the thunder mines, the impact of the magic principle was destroyed as soon as it seeped through his heart, which ended up in violent eruption of thunder mines!

Just then, all the movements of the body of the man with the pointed hat came to a sudden halt as he was completely enveloped by the Holding Thunder charm!

The power of the thunder principle was so ferocious that not only did it destroy the cultivation of a martial expert; it even posed a great threat to the soul of that person!

“Lunar mood!”

“Dry marsh mood!”

Long Yu did not display any movements. With all his enemies suppressed by the thunder charm, he released the lunar mood and the dry marsh mood one after another.

The power of endless frost enveloped them completely as they felt trapped in a swamp due to the impact of the dry marsh mood.

They were not even able to face the tyrannical strength of the thunder principle, so being subjected to three principles together made them collapse immediately.

Along with the Zhentian domain, he had used four different principles all at once, which was more than enough to suppress the four Zhenling 3rd layer experts.

(Mystique: 1.Zhentian domain 2. Lunar mood 3. Dry marsh mood 4. Thunder charm)

“Lamella touch, kill!”

Long Yu grabbed his Qian dragon spear and pierced Deng Shun's chest with it, crushing his heart almost immediately.

This bare-chested Deng Shun had taken the charge to lead an attack on Long Yu, but he was now dead with his heart pierced by the dragon spear.

Chapter – 152 Intimidating Valor

Deng Shun's heart was instantly crushed by the Qian dragon spear as his eyes stared in complete disbelief.

He had never expected such an outcome from the combat.

Originally he had thought that even if he couldn't execute the order of killing Long Yu issued by Xinghai Lun, he could at least show his heartfelt loyalty towards Xinghai Lun.

After all, when four Zhenling 3rd layer martial experts would combine their strengths, even a Zhenling 4th layer expert couldn't withstand the attack – this Long Yu was just a Zhenling 2nd layer expert.

They could simply not let him escape!

How could he know that Long Yu had already killed two Zhenling 4th layer beasts on his own?

And because of their underestimation of their enemy, in spite of the four of them displaying their best martial skills, Deng Shun had died!

With Deng Shun killed, Long Yu rolled up the devastating power of Thunder charm to the next level!

Long Yu swept his Qian dragon spear, with numerous thunder mines flashing, a burst of tremendous energy erupted and rushed towards the other three men who were already trapped and were showing no resistance.

Against this humungous force of Thunder charm, even the Zhenling entity of the Goblin Snake couldn't have survived, let alone these three Zhenling 3rd layer experts.

The red eyed man, the man with hammers and the man with the pointed hat – all of them were completely enveloped by this terrific energy at the same time.

The power of the Thunder charm crushed the meridians of those three men!

Under the great suppression power of the four principles released by Long Yu, a Zhenling 3rd layer expert simply couldn't exhibit any resistance. In fact, just

the release of Thunder charm was enough to kill a Zhenling 3rd layer expert.

“The power of this imperial seal level principle is outstanding!”

Long Yu’s eyes shone brightly.

Even if he had earlier killed the rock rhino and the goblin snake, they were wicked beasts of Zhenling 4th layer and Long Yu had not tested his power against some human martial expert of Zhenling 4th layer.

However, now Long Yu was sure that if under any circumstances he had to face a Zhenling 4th layer expert, he had enough strength to fend them off.

If not a perfect opponent, he could still be able to resist a Zhenling 4th layer expert. If he had had the same cultivation three months ago, he could surely have defeated Yu Qianning.

Certainly, just like Long Yu had enhanced his cultivation level in these three months, similarly Yu Qianning would also have enhanced her cultivation level.

At present, no one knew at what level Yu Qianning had reached and what merits she had achieved!

Long Yu grasped his spear and stood there proudly, looking around him, only to see the corpses of the three experts he just killed in one fell swoop.

However, his eyebrows wrinkled as he sensed something fishy in his surroundings.

Soon enough, he detected a strong killing intention directed towards him.

“A sneak attack?”

Long Yu’s heart sank as he further followed the direction of the killing intention and found out that it was actually Feng Yao who was secretly planning to kill him.

“Feng girl, stop!”

Pond Snow, who was wearing a brown fur coat, shouted and immediately rushed towards Long Yu.

Long Yu took a deep breath as Pond Snow left Feng Yao’s side and approached him.

Feng Yao wanted to seize this opportunity to kill Long Yu, but at a crucial moment, Pond Snow blocked her by rushing towards Long Yu and was now standing beside him, ready to face her.

Long Yu turned to see the big statured Pond Snow standing behind him, facing Feng Yao, who was clad in a pale green dress and was holding a sword which was probably a spiritual level battle weapon, her eyes flashing with dense killing intention.

“Feng girl, I am not a great man from some influential family, but I have heard that you and younger brother Long Yu have the same father.”

Pond Snow said indignantly: “Tell me, Feng girl, why is it that you want to kill him?”

These lines reached Long Yu’s heart and touched it deeply.

Long Yu could not remember even a single time he had offended Feng Yao – he certainly hadn’t. But still Feng Yao was always hell bent on getting him killed!

“Brother Pond Snow has raised a valid question, Feng Yao. Back in the Yu Guan city, you ordered your servant to kill me. I never asked you why you did so, but now I want to know.”

Long Yu lightly said: “I can understand that now you work for Xinghai Lun and want to execute his orders, but what enmity did you hold with me earlier?”

“You will never understand, Long Yu!”

Feng Yao retorted, still holding her spiritual level battle weapon: “If it wasn’t for you, my parents would have never been in a state they are today. They would have never resorted to a mutual separation!”

Long Yu frowned.

Feng Longsong and Liu Yu were separating?

But how was he responsible for that?

“Feng Yao, I never talk to your mother and neither did foster father tell me anything about it. How would I get to know that they are separating and that too because of me?”

Long Yu said in a sarcastic tone.

Just from looking at Feng Yao, Long Yu had deduced that Feng Yao and her mother Liu Yu were simply jealous of his increasing power.

“You dare say that?”

Feng Yao shouted with extreme anger.

“If it wasn’t for you, my father would have never showered all his love and care on you, alienating my mother and me in our own home. If it wasn’t for you, my father would have never left my mother the way he separated from her. It was all because of you!”

“Oh, really?”

Long Yu replied with a hint of taunt: “When did your father ever alienate you? When you came back from the Hanbing sect, you asked him for his copper sword and he straightaway gave it to you, without any hesitation. You are talking about alienation, then tell me, where were you when your father was injured by Feng Yun?”

Long Yu stepped forward and mercilessly said: “At that time, instead of backing your injured father, you were present at the celebration organised by the new head of the Feng clan to congratulate him!”

Hearing this, Feng Yao’s face reddened with shame, but she shouted back: “Feng Yun had already defeated my father at that time, so naturally he became the new head of the Feng clan and the owner of the Feng clan mansion!”

“Haven’t you still understood your follies?”

Long Yu sneered back: “Feng Yun was not the rightful head of the Feng clan, YOU were! Moreover, he had injured your father badly and you not only ignored your father but even joined the enemy in his celebrations. How ridiculous!”

This war of words between Feng Yao and Long Yu made Pond Snow know their story from the beginning till the end, and he was somewhat surprised now.

This Feng Yao and her mother had really wronged Feng Longsong!

“Even after all this, my righteous foster father gave you and your mother an opportunity.”

Long Yu continued: “He had said that those who wanted to stay can stay and fight for Feng clan as the new members of the clan. But you and your mother turned your backs on him and left the clan when it needed both of you. Now tell me, Feng Yao, was it you and your mother who alienated foster father or was it foster father who alienated you and your mother?”

Out of all the accusations, one accusation Feng Yao really wanted to refute. Didn't she come back and agreed to marry Wang Tianzhuo, only to save her father and the Feng clan from being destroyed?

However, these words froze on her tongue – she couldn't say anything!

She thought – even if she hadn't gone back that day, the first core disciple of the Zhentian sect had already reached there to help Long Yu in defeating Wang Tianzhuo, so in any case, they wouldn't have suffered some major loss, nor would her father have been harmed.

As Feng Yao was dumbfounded, Long Yu also lost his inclination to speak any further.

No matter what he spoke, he couldn't change what had happened earlier. All he could do was to teach Feng Yao a lesson.

“Feng Yao, once my foster father asked me to spare your life whenever I saw you. Keeping that promise, I am allowing you to leave.....”

Long Yu spoke with a tone of indifference: “But before you leave, you have to leave behind the battle weapon in your hand!”

Feng Yao had once again tried to kill him. He could not attack her first as he was bound by the promise he made to her father, but she could attack him any time even if he let her go for now.

Even though Long Yu was keeping the promise he made to Feng Longsong, he wouldn't put himself to any loss. It was a top grade spiritual level battle weapon which would certainly fetch him five thousand crystal coins if he ever was to sell it.

This was a huge amount of money!

When Feng Yao heard his words, her face turned pale.

Leave her top grade spiritual level battle weapon, her sword and go away?

She was now associated with Xinghai Lun and this boy of a mere Zhenling 2nd layer cultivation was threatening her and asking her to leave her weapon and go away!

Feng Yao subconsciously wanted to draw her sword out and fight Long Yu, but chose not to mess with him as she was still far from being an opponent of Long Yu.

Even if she had recently met Xinghai Lun and received his help, leapt up from Wudao eighth layer to Zhenling second layer, obtained her own top grade spiritual level battle weapon – Long Yu's progress was still more than her.

Long Yu was standing in front of her, holding his spear and full of anger, surrounded by the corpses of Deng Shun and his three men – it was a terrifying spectacle!

And it was just enough to deter Feng Yao.

“Alright.”

Feng Yao clenched her teeth, unclamped the sheath which held the sword and unwillingly threw it towards Long Yu.

Immediately afterwards, Feng Yao rushed towards the left entrance of the Demon valley.

“Younger brother Long Yu, you are really.....fierce!”

Pond Snow settled down in the snow, gave a wry smile as he could not figure out what to say to Long Yu. The only word he could think of was “fierce”.

“Brother Pond Snow, thank you so much for your help.”

Long Yu smiled.

“You should not thank me, brother Long Yu. Even if I had not stood up to help you, you have become so powerful now that you could've managed it on your own.”

Pond Snow laughed, shaking his head.

“No, I appreciate your help. If you had not intervened, I would have surely

killed Feng Yao and then would never be able to face my foster father again out of remorse.”

Long Yu said lightly: “But this was the last time I let her go. If she tries to attack me the next time, I will not spare her!”

“She is now backed by Xinghai Lun who is a powerful warrior himself. Perhaps she won’t stop pursuing you so easily.”

Pond Snow said with a severe look on his face.

“Then you just wait and watch.”

Long Yu chuckled – he couldn’t care any less.

“Such being the case, I, Pond Snow, take my leave. I hope to see you again, brother Long Yu.”

Pond Snow cupped his fists to salute Long Yu and turned around to leave empty handed.

Obviously, he had given all his harvest to Long Yu!

Naturally, this was good for Long Yu – the corpses of Deng Shun and his comrades and the corpse of the dragon beast were worth a great fortune!

Certainly, the most important thing was the top grade spiritual level battle weapon that Feng Yao had left behind – her sword!

Chapter – 153 Yuchi Clan

After Pond Snow left, Long Yu began cleaning up the mess that was left on the battlefield.

The spiritual level sword that Feng Yao had left there was a top grade weapon, more importantly it was a long sword type battle weapon. If he took it back to Hun Yin city, not only he could find a number of interested buyers, but it would fetch him a higher amount of money than some other spiritual level battle weapon.

For Long Yu, a sword type battle weapon was useless as he had not practiced any sword martial skill till now.

What he urgently needed was a boost in his cultivation level, so he would take all these goods to Hun Yin city and exchange them for some good immortality pills or neidans which would surely help him reach the Zhenling 3rd layer.

In addition to Feng Yao's sword, he also had some low grade spiritual level battle weapons that he had seized from the bodies of Deng Shun and his men, and ten neidans of dragon beasts that they had killed.

Although this harvest was not as good as the one he had when he killed rock rhino beast and goblin snake beast, but still, to have something was always better than to have nothing at all.

Moreover, Long Yu had already stored up two corpses of great beasts inside the nine hidden dragon mark so there was no more space left in it to store something else.

"I should head back now. It has been such a rewarding experience....."

Long Yu smiled faintly, satisfied with the harvest.

Although he had stayed in the Demon valley for seven days, still the harvest was not small. If he had been able to collect the same amount of harvest every day during these seven days, he would surely have stepped up to the Zhenling 3rd layer.

Since he only had less than a month's time left for the seven sects competition, he must hurry back to the Hun Yin city from where after travelling for some days

he would certainly reach the destination in advance.

After collecting all the things, he grabbed his qian dragon spear and was ready to leave the place.

His lunar wings flapped, turning him into a jet black streamer once again, as he sped off to the exit of the Demon valley.

However, he didn't know that soon after he had left, Deng Shun and his men, who he had thought to be dead, coughed up and simultaneously stood up one after another!

"That was a narrow escape from death. I never imagined this boy would be so strong....."

Deng Shun stood up and was still scared of Long Yu. Although all their harvest was seized by Long Yu, they had to let him go for now so that they could take revenge later.

"If it had not been for the magic domain of our brother, we could have never fooled the boy."

The red eyed man spoke, still trembling with fear.

The fiery red colour in his eyes had finally dissipated now. This man's name was Chi Xue!

[Chi Xue = Red Blood]

The mysterious man with the pointed paper hat who had released the magic domain also stood up and was deeply looking in the direction in which Long Yu had left.

"We have to report this matter to Xinghai Lun. This Long Yu has unusual strength!"

The man with the pointed hat, named Tu Yi, said in a hoarse voice as his black robe fluttered in the wind, making him look even more mysterious.

Lastly, the man with the hammers, named Kong Shenyong, stood up and bowed to Tu Yi showing his gratefulness: "Thank you so much Brother Tu for your generosity."

“I bid farewell, you all are on your own now. What is more important now is that Xinghai Lun must be reported about this matter.”

Deng Shun’s eyes flashed with a strong killing intention.

Long Yu, he will have to die!

Moreover, Pond Snow, in spite of being Deng Shun’s friend, alerted Long Yu and at a critical moment intervened in the combat between Long Yu and Feng Yao which could have killed Long Yu.

Pond Snow, from now on, was their enemy!

Long Yu could have never imagined that a mysterious world principle – the magic domain would be secretly protecting those men while he thought that they had died!

Even if these four men had died, the matter would certainly be reported to Xinghai Lun as Long Yu had let Feng Yao go alive.

Long Yu was already prepared to be targeted by Xinghai Lun again!

.....

In a while, the gate of the Demon valley appeared in front of Long Yu.

This place appeared the same even after seven days – several martial experts had gathered at the gate again, forming teams before entering the Demon valley to hunt some beasts.

These martial experts were risking their own lives to quickly boost their cultivation level!

If one was not strong enough, they would at some time be suppressed by some influential family or some great sect, so enhancing their cultivation way the only way out.

Long Yu didn’t pay any attention to anybody.

He darted out of the Demon valley. If he ever got an opportunity to visit this place again, he would choose the strongest of the beasts to fight with in order to reap a greater harvest.

As Long Yu exited the Demon valley alone, many people looked at him with

raised eyebrows. But more people were astonished when he had decided to enter the Demon valley alone.

Of all those who entered the Demon valley, very few people made it out alive. Most of the people who exited alone must have gone through some very bitter experiences – their team mates dead, and they themselves traumatised.

Long Yu without paying any attention to how people would react, made his way towards the Hun Yin city.

And now, there was a short distance left to the Hun Yin city.

Halfway there, he noticed that there had been a conflict among some people that had attracted a large crowd to that place.

Long Yu didn't prefer to intervene in other people's matters, so he decided to move on. As he was passing by, a girl among the crowd who was clad in a black dress caught his attention.

This girl was none other than Yan Huanmo!

Zhentian sect Elder Yan Huanmo had helped Long Yu a lot when he had first arrived at the Hun Yin city, but had never revealed her purpose behind visiting the city.

However, now Yan Huanmo was in a conflict with some people, and this had attracted an enormous crowd to that place!

Long Yu took a deep breath. This matter was related to Yan Huanmo, so he could simply not ignore it!

Although Yan Huanmo was much stronger than Long Yu, but since he had also increased his strength by now, he had the necessary qualifications to intervene!

Of course, only he was aware of his true strength.

In the eyes of any other person, including Yan Huanmo, he was only a Zhenling 2nd layer expert.

Long Yu didn't care about how people perceived him.

He rushed towards the crowd where Yan Huanmo was confronting the other gang.

The opposite party had three people!

One of them, clad in a Chinese brocade dress, was looking mockingly at Yan Huanmo's dress and was scheming something wicked in his mind.

This man had a cultivation of Zhenling 3rd layer and it seemed that he was the leader of these other two men.

One of the other two men was holding a fan in his hand and had a noble look, but his eyes were full of flattery and were revealing his true colours.

The other man was wearing a heavy stone pendant. A strong killing intent was flashing through his eyes.

"This person seems very dangerous!"

Long Yu gazed at the uncouthly man and quickly assessed that his killing intention was very strong, so he had certainly killed a lot of people earlier!

The man with the fan and the man wearing a pendant – both of them were at Zhenling 4th layer.

Perhaps Yan Huanmo was not an opponent of these men!

"Yan girl, you are the child of my clan's head. I definitely don't want to kill one of my own people."

That uncouthly man spoke in a sinking voice, his strong killing intention completely enveloping Yan Huanmo.

"Wen Ze, you have disappointed me a lot."

Yan Huanmo calmly said. Even in such an adverse situation, she had maintained her poise.

The more the danger is, the more there is the need of a calm mind. Long Yu knew this and was highly impressed by Yan Huanmo.

Yan Huanmo's clansman, Wen Ze, replied in a loud voice: "Disappointed or not, today you are Master Yuchi's opponent!"

The man with the fan came forward and flatteringly said: "Yan Huanmo, you can still escape this. Marry Master Yuchi and feel honoured."

The crowd began to whisper and Long Yu immediately understood what the

actual matter was.

Yan Huanmo had travelled to Hun Yin city because she was invited there by Wen Ze!

Hailing from the same clan, Yan Huanmo and Wen Ze obviously knew each other from a long time, so when Yan Huanmo accepted his invitation, she had no idea that Wen Ze had become a pet dog of Yuchi and had conspired with him to ambush her here and abduct her forcefully.

That young master Yuchi, who was clad in a Chinese brocade dress, hailed from one of the four most influential families of the Tang kingdom – he was the famous Master Yuchi Tao of Yuchi clan!

This master Yuchi Tao gave such a promiscuous look to Yao Huanmo as if this woman was laid before him on his bed!

“You have come here to fight, so fight now. Don’t waste time with these idle talks!”

Yao Huanmo looked towards Wen Ze and Yuchi Tao with great disappointment in her eyes. She never imagined that such disgusting people existed in this world!

“I am enough to fight you.”

The uncouthly man uttered these words and immediately shot his fist towards Yan Huanmo!

This fist was approaching her at a tremendous speed and almost immediately reached her.

“Zhentian Domain!”

Yan Huanmo withdrew her body quickly and released the tyrannical pressure of the Zhentian Domain, making the movements of the uncouthly man really very slow.

“You want to fight me with a trivial Huangshi level principle!”

The uncouthly man gave a smirk and released a mysterious domain of terrific strength, immediately crushing the Zhentian Domain pressure released by Yan Huanmo!

“Does this man also know the hierarchy of the world principles?”

Long Yu thought to himself, wrinkling his brows, but was soon at ease again.

The hierarchy of the world principles was not a secret – any martial expert could be aware of it.

Long Yu could simply not watch Yan Huanmo being bullied by these men.

He immediately flapped his lunar wings, changing himself into a jet black streamer, and flew sideways towards the uncouthly man at an incredibly fast speed.

“Qian dragon spear, lamella touch!”

Long Yu grasped his Qian dragon spear and increased its power by activating the thunder charm. Instantly, he reached behind that uncouthly man!

Long Yu didn’t warn his opponents, he chose to launch a sneak attack. Regardless of what way he had to choose, he aimed to defeat these men as quickly as possible.

Whether he should attack the opposite party after warning them, or should simply launch a sneak attack – none of it mattered right now!

Chapter – 154 Black Ink domain

When Long Yu launched a sneak attack with his spear, it startled the uncouthly man.

This man had previously experienced numerous combats and was fully prepared to face Yan Huanmo and her companions, if any.

What startled him was the fact that the boy who had launched the sneak attack was just a Zhenling 2nd layer expert!

“Is he really this courageous? It seems that the enticement of beauty is something that is simply irresistible.”

The uncouthly man sneered.

However, soon he realised that the spear was containing a terrifying destructive power and Long Yu was carrying it with an equally strong killing intention. He was unable to ignore the attack now!

He stopped being offensive towards Yan Huanmo and immediately threw his pendant into the direction of the attack, and the rock pendant immediately collided with the Qian dragon spear!

The collision created a loud blast, releasing a huge amount of energy and pushing both the parties several steps back.

The uncouthly man was pushed five steps back. He couldn't hide the colour of surprise in his eyes.

Although Long Yu was pushed ten steps back, he could easily cover the distance of five steps to make it even with the uncouthly man.

This boy of Zhenling 2nd layer was no ordinary expert, he thought!

Most of the martial experts of different cultivation levels that had gathered there to witness the commotion bore this thought in their minds.

But then, they concluded that no matter how strong this boy was, he was just at a trivial level of Zhenling 2nd layer.

Since the disparity between the basic strengths of the two parties was

insurmountable, Long Yu was forced to depend upon the sneak attacks as a method to fight the uncouthly man, which might put him at a slight advantage!

“You are just a Zhenling 2nd layer expert. How do you dare to meddle in a fight of much stronger powerhouses?”

After witnessing the sneak attack launched by Long Yu that repelled the uncouthly man five steps back, the flattering man Wen Ze immediately sneered, still holding a fan in his hand.

“Instead of Brother Lu, I will teach you a lesson today. I will show you what happens when trivial people like you meddle in the affairs of the powerful!”

His white robe fluttered in the wind as he rushed towards Long Yu. His steps were as light as a feather!

Soon afterwards, a very familiar suppression force fell upon him from the heavens.

“Zhentian Domain!”

Long Yu’s complexion changed as he realised that this flattering man Wen Ze who was still holding a fan in his hand, had unexpectedly released Zhentian Domain!

Is this Wen Ze also a Zhentian disciple?

“Long Yu, be careful!”

Yan Huanmo had begun to worry about Long Yu right from the moment he had launched a sneak attack on that uncouthly man. But now, seeing Wen Ze attack Long Yu, Yan Huanmo’s heart pounded fast!

Long Yu, a mere Zhenling 2nd layer expert, how could he dare to participate in her fight?

If Long Yu died here, all the hopes of Zhentian Sect winning the seven sects competition would die along with him!

Yan Huanmo had guessed that it would be very difficult for Bu Xing to compete with Yu Qianning. So all her hopes of defeating Yu Qianning now depended on Long Yu.

However, did the present Long Yu have enough strength to face a Zhenling 4th layer powerhouse?

Yan Huanmo wanted to rush towards Long Yu in order to help him fight Wen Ze, but just as she was about to move into action, the uncouthly man blocked her path as he laughed loudly.

“He is not your opponent, I am!”

The man laughed a wild laugh and launched his fist towards Yan Huanmo. His attack carried enormous domain strength!

It was certainly impossible for Yan Huanmo to ignore such a powerful attack!

At this moment, however, she could only stop there to face the uncouthly man. But her thoughts were still fixed upon Long Yu.

Seeing Long Yu completely suppressed by the Zhentian Domain, Wen Ze started juggling his sword and his fan, releasing a great amount of Tianwei sword qi.

It was a Tianwei sword attack!

Long Yu thought to himself: “This Wen Ze is certainly a disciple of Zhentian Sect but if it is really so, how have I never heard about him?”

Anyway, he must find a way to defeat this Wen Ze. Otherwise, not only him but Yan Huanmo also would end up being a toy of that spoilt brat – Yuchi Tao.

“Kill ten thousand people!”

Long Yu grabbed his Qian dragon spear and swayed it while condensing his killing intention at its tip in order to counter the Tianwei sword attack launched by Wen Ze.

“Nine hidden dragon prance!”

Long Yu did not pause even for a single moment. After using his spear to counter the attack, Long Yu now displayed nine hidden dragon prance to jump a hundred feet high in the air in order to escape from the suppression power of Zhentian domain. As he reached the pinnacle of his jump, he launched his body towards Wen Ze!

Unfortunately for Long Yu, Wen Ze was quite agile and as soon he detected Long Yu's attack, he moved sideways and successfully dodged the attack.

When Long Yu's spear pierced the ground with a bang, it released a lot of energy and clouds of dust formed which covered his whole body.

"This boy is so stupid!"

Wen Ze chuckled with disdain and congealed a black bear Zhenling entity behind him, brushing off the dust from his clothes with a sock wave.

But as soon as the clouds of dust disappeared, he realised that the Qian dragon spear was approaching him and he dodged it immediately.

"Naive!"

Wen Ze sneered as his black bear Zhenling entity rushed towards the Qian dragon spear, grabbed it in its palm and threw it aside.

However, the very next moment, Wen Ze found that a strange force was enveloping him from all the sides.

"Nine hidden dragon fist, awakening palm samsara!"

Long Yu's shot his fist towards Wen Ze, releasing the humungous power of samsara. As this strange force seeped into the body of Wen Ze, his cultivation level dropped by one layer. He was now at Zhenling 3rd layer!

This terrific phenomenon made Wen Ze change his complexion.

What exactly was this strange force?

His cultivation level had dropped by one layer all of a sudden!

He observed his black bear and noticed that it was still in entity form. It did not depreciate to some ordinary Zhenling. He was temporarily relieved by this.

This drop in cultivation level, was it an illusion?

If it was so, then why could he not feel any trace of his actual power? Why it felt to him that he was a Zhenling 3rd level expert now?

A number of thoughts flashed in Wen Ze's mind, and before he could react to anything, a dense black gas (qi) enveloped his whole body.

Under Wen Ze's feet, nine hidden dragon qi condensed and started immediate destruction!

Wen Ze, who was still holding his fan, was completely enveloped by the sudden burst of nine hidden dragon qi and was now giving away shrill cries!

Even a strong powerhouse like Wen Ze had no chance at all to survive the burst of nine hidden dragon qi.

Wen Ze was soon dead!

"Come back!"

Long Yu called his spear back and held it in his hand, his eyes flashing of strong killing intention.

Just with a few moves, taking advantage of the underestimation of his power by Wen Ze, Long Yu had been able to kill Wen Ze instantly!

Had Wen Ze not underestimated his power, it would have been almost impossible for Long Yu to defeat him.

But this series of events left each and every person witnessing the combat in great shock.

None of the people present there ever imagined that a Zhenling 2nd layer expert would ever be able to kill a Zhenling 4th layer expert in one go!

As nine hidden dragon qi completely corroded the body of Wen Ze, his dried up corpse fell down, leaving everyone scared of Long Yu.

Was he really just a Zhenling 2nd layer expert or a monster?

Not only did he kill Wen Ze and destroy his Zhenling entity, he even turned his body into a dried corpse!

This boy was such a freak!

Master Yuchi Tao, who had expected that with Wen Ze's help he would be easily able to take Yao Huanmo with him, was now watching the dried up corpse of Wen Ze in horror!

Wen Ze was a Zhenling 4th layer expert, then how could he be killed by a trivial Zhenling 2nd layer expert so easily?

This was just impossible!

Was this some kind of hallucination?

Yuchi Tao simply couldn't believe this unexpected turn of events and continued to stare dumbly at the corpse.

By this time, Yan Huanmo and the uncouthly man also realised what had happened and immediately stopped fighting.

They looked first at Long Yu, then at the corpse of Wen Ze and couldn't help expressing their great surprise.

Neither of them had expected that Long Yu would not only defeat Wen Ze in a matter of a few seconds, but would also kill him so mercilessly!

The uncouthly man assessed the situation and realised that although Long Yu's cultivation level was at Zhenling 2nd layer but his strength and battle efficiency was no less than an expert of Zhenling 3rd layer.

However, at this moment, Long Yu appeared to be pretty much at ease after destroying a Zhenling entity and killing Wen Ze who was a Zhenling 4th layer expert.

Although this feat could not have been achieved by him if Wen Ze hadn't underestimated him, but still, his battle efficiency also increased manifold, which also ensured his victory.

"I quit."

The uncouthly man immediately made a decision. If he had to face Yan Huanmo and Long Yu simultaneously, the chances of his defeat were certain.

"You think you can escape?"

Yan Huanmo immediately charged forward to block his path.

She had certainly not recovered from the shock that she received after she saw Long Yu killing Wen Ze – she still couldn't figure out how Long Yu accumulated such tyrannical strength. But what was more important right now was to settle the scores once and for all!

"Yao girl, I, Lu Mou, have no allegiance to anyone. I fight for money."

The uncouthly man laughed and said: “Since the man who hired me – Wen Ze is dead now, I am free of my commitment and have no desire to fight you. However, if you force me to stop, you will invite great trouble upon yourself!”

“You think we will let you go so easily?”

Long Yu charged forward, holding his Qian dragon spear, and blocked the uncouthly man along with Yan Huanmo.

Yan Huanmo did not say a word. Her noble persona floated in the air as dense black ink erupted from her long black skirt and rushed towards the uncouthly man.

“Black Ink domain!”

Yan Huanmo, without uttering a single word, had actually released a mysterious jade level world principle – the Black Ink domain!

At this moment, it appeared as if the dense black colour of the ink was the only colour between the heaven and the earth, and this made the complexion of the uncouthly man change.

Yan Huanmo was of the same cultivation level as him, and she had comprehended the domain of a mysterious jade level world principle!

“It indeed is ink!”

Yan Huanmo soon congealed her Zhenling entity of a writing brush behind her noble stature. Its tip was coloured with two inks – black and white.

“Now die!”

Yan Huanmo pulled out a special battle weapon which looked like an ordinary drawing sheet and stroked it with her writing brush Zhenling entity. The drawing sheet soon turned black as if it had been painted and tainted with ink!

The drawing sheet battle weapon immediately started exerting tremendous pressure upon the uncouthly man, who began to feel as if the weight of the whole world had come falling upon him from the heavens!

Chapter – 155 The ever-changing world of martial arts

As Long Yu watched Yao Huanmo's fighting technique, his heart began pounding fiercely.

Black ink domain, writing brush Zhenling entity, drawing sheet battle weapon – it all seemed like a dream. All this made Long Yu ponder – there are 9000 world principles in this world, does that mean there are 9000 fighting techniques too?

If Long Yu had been the one to face this skill of Yan Huanmo he probably wouldn't have been able to escape.

Since he did not know anything about this technique and didn't even know the main impact this technique would leave, he simply couldn't defend himself against it.

All Long Yu could have done was to avoid this move.

However, the uncouthly man didn't think like Long Yu while he was facing this attack.

He immediately pulled his stone pendant and released a mysterious jade level world principle to counter Yan Huanmo's attack.

"Meteorite principle, domain release!"

The uncouthly man roared as he was all ready to face the attack launched by Yan Huanmo!

Meteorite principle was another principle that contained massive destructive strength. The domain that the man had released had its source in the stone pendant.

This big stone was actually a piece of a meteorite that had fallen to the earth from outer space, so naturally it was extremely hard!

The meteorite domain along with the meteorite stone and the meteorite Zhenling entity that the uncouthly man had congealed, when combined together, released a great burst of energy which was more powerful than Yan Huanmo's technique.

"Destroy them!"

The tyrannical power of these three combined together and immediately penetrated through Yan Huanmo's drawing sheet battle weapon.

Although the drawing sheet battle weapon was at top-grade spiritual level, still it could not defend itself against such an intense attack and hence it was thoroughly damaged!

Both parties were displaying their fiercest combat techniques of Zhenling 4th layer, so it was impossible for Long Yu to intervene in the ongoing fight.

Otherwise, after assessing the powers of both the sides, Long Yu wouldn't have resisted himself.

"It seems that this uncouthly man has released a very strong world principle, so powerful that the drawing sheet battle weapon of Elder Yan is crumbling into fragments....."

Long Yu watched as the power of the meteorite domain completely disintegrated the drawing sheet battle weapon.

It was now clear that when this uncouthly man was leaving the place, he was not cowering but really had lost the interest in fighting Yan Huanmo since the person who had actually hired him, Wen Ze, was killed by Long Yu.

Unfortunately, Long Yu was the one who persisted on stopping the man, and now this man had completely destroyed Yan Huanmo's battle weapon, so Long Yu felt responsible for it.

"Since you had decided to help Elder Yan out, you must help her under any circumstances, even if it involves risking your own life."

Long Yu thought to himself. Since the uncouthly man was busy countering Yan Huanmo's attacks, he could use this situation to quietly launch a sneak attack on him using nine hidden dragon fist.

"Nine hidden dragon fist, awakening palm samsara!"

The mysterious power of samsara completely enveloped the uncouthly man immediately.

At this moment, the cultivation level of the uncouthly man dropped instantly by one layer!

The enormous strength of meteorite domain that had already destroyed the drawing sheet battle weapon of Yan Huanmo was now directed towards her writing brush Zhenling entity.

Both the parties were engaged in a rapid clash, erupting tremendous amounts of energy. However, at this moment, the uncouthly man's cultivation level dropped by one layer, bringing him down to Zhenling 3rd layer all of a sudden!

Originally, Yan Huanmo's writing brush Zhenling entity couldn't have withstood the attack of meteorite domain for too long, but now, she sensed that the opposite party's strength had weakened suddenly.

This was a golden opportunity which she certainly couldn't miss!

"Writing brush, destroy!"

As Yan Huanmo commanded her Zhenling entity, the writing brush waved and wrote the word "DESTROY" in the air.

This word, containing great destructive power, rushed towards the uncouthly man and struck him.

"Writing brush, protect!"

Immediately the writing brush waved again and wrote the word "PROTECT" in the air, which charged to defend her from the weakened meteorite domain attack.

"Writing brush, kill!"

The Zhenling entity waved again and wrote the word "KILL" in the air, which was full of killing intention. It instantly rushed towards the uncouthly man and enveloped him completely!

The "KILL" word arrived with the colour of ink swarming from all the directions, finally causing some panic to the uncouthly man.

The chief factor in play was that his cultivation level was now at Zhenling 3rd layer only!

Although he could feel that his cultivation level was restoring itself back to the 4th layer, the "KILL" word was going to arrive before it could be fully restored.

“Meteorite stone, go!”

The uncouthly man could not think of anything else to escape this attack, so he decided to throw the bulky meteorite stone towards the “KILL” word.

Both collided in the air with a loud bang sound and released a massive amount of energy which made all the surroundings tremble like a leaf in storm!

The uncouthly man waved his hand to launch a meteorite spear-shadow in the direction of the ink which created a narrow passage through which he intended to escape.

“You want to run away?”

Long Yu had already increased his speed and then pounded his fist on the ground.

Nine hidden dragon qi condensed beneath the feet of the uncouthly man and erupted suddenly, completely enveloping his body.

As the terrifying nine hidden dragon qi seeped through his body and started corroding it, the uncouthly man could do nothing but scream!

Although this uncouthly man was a mercenary for hire, this was a case of attempted abduction of a woman which was an act of hooliganism!

Moreover, his strong killing intent clearly showed that he had killed a number of people previously, perhaps much more than Long Yu had killed in this world.

So Long Yu killed him, without the slightest of guilt!

Two Zhenling 4th layer powerhouses were killed by Long Yu instantly using the burst of nine hidden dragon qi. The spectators couldn't believe their eyes!

However, at this time, Long Yu had consumed almost all of the xuan qi stored in his body. Although he had refined his Dantian with thunder mines so that his Dantian could now replenish the xuan qi faster than any ordinary expert, still at times he couldn't keep up with it.

“Run!”

By this time, Yuchi clan's young spoiled master Yuchi Tao had understood that depending upon his strength alone it was impossible to abduct Yan Huanmo.

Although he was not willing to withdraw his endeavours, it seemed like escaping the place was the only way left now!

Long Yu, bearing stern countenance, wanted to pursue him but just then he noticed that Yan Huanmo had likely been injured during the fight as her footsteps staggered and she fell down to the ground.

“Elder Yan!”

Long Yu could simply not leave her alone just to chase some insignificant brat, so he rushed towards her and held her: “Elder Yan, what happened to you?”

“My Zhenling entity is damaged.....”

Yan Huanmo whispered in a deep voice. Clearly, she had received heavy injuries.

Long Yu immediately figured out that when the uncouthly man had launched a meteorite spear attack towards the black ink that her Zhenling entity had released; it must be then that the Zhenling entity was damaged.

After a martial expert is able to congeal a Zhenling entity, not only the strength of the Zhenling increases ten times but it also develops a deeper relationship with its master.

When the Zhenling entity is damaged, the Dantian of the martial expert also receives injuries to a certain extent!

If Long Yu had not decreased the cultivation level of that man using his ‘awakening palm samsara’ technique, Yan Huanmo could have received irreparable injuries.

“Let’s go back to Hun Yin city first to have some rest and examine what exactly has happened.”

Long Yu was holding Yan Huanmo in his arms as his eyes flashed towards the crowd that had gathered there and roared: “What are you staring at?”

None of the numerous martial experts that had surrounded them was at Zhenling 4th layer, only lower.

Two Zhenling 4th layer powerhouses had been instantly killed by Long Yu right before them, so only a single roar from him was enough to make them all go

helter-skelter.

Long Yu thought a little, and then while still holding Yan Huanmo in his arms, he searched the corpses of Wen Ze and that uncouthly man.

Presently, Long Yu was in an urgent need of some powerful immortality pills or neidan to enhance his cultivation level, so he did not want to let go of any chance he got to obtain these.

Quickly, he seized the uncouthly man's meteorite stone that contained a mysterious jade level world principle, Wen Ze's top-grade spiritual level folding fan, as well as some other petty things that could fetch him up to hundred crystal coins.

Since both of them were Zhenling 4th layer powerhouses, they certainly carried many valuable things with them.

Wen Ze's top-grade spiritual level battle weapon – his folding fan could easily fetch Long Yu over a thousand crystal coins.

The meteorite stone of the uncouthly man was even more valuable as it was a battle weapon containing some kind of mysterious jade level world principle!

After collecting the harvest, Long Yu rapidly advanced towards the Hun Yin city while carrying Yan Huanmo in his arms.

This single combat gave him a clearer insight about the numerous fighting techniques that were prevalent among the martial experts all over the continent – Yan Huanmo's 'Black ink domain' and the uncouthly man's 'Meteorite domain' – it all was simply amazing!

If Long Yu knew that Deng Shun and his men whom he had killed recently were not actually dead, he would have had a more profound expression.

In Tian Yu continent, various principles emerged one after another and were now 9000 in number, representing 9000 different techniques of fighting. The world of martial arts was ever changing; its power was hard to estimate!

.....

The blue color of the sky faded gradually.

Long Yu and Yan Huanmo, were now staying at an inn in Hun Yin city.

On his way back, Long Yu had thoroughly understood why Yan Huanmo had come to the Hun Yin city.

Originally, that flattering man Wen Ze was a core disciple of Zhentian sect and the relationship between them seemed good as well.

However, five years ago, Wen Ze had disappeared under some mysterious circumstances which made many people upset about it since he was considered to be one of the most talented disciples of the Zhentian sect.

Yan Huanmo herself was puzzled with his sudden disappearance, so when Wen Ze invited her to meet him in Hun Yin city, she readily accepted the invitation and came over.

Yan Huanmo wanted to know why Wen Ze had disappeared so suddenly and where did he go after leaving Zhentian sect.

However, after her arrival, she realized that she was being cheated!

Wen Ze, who had already become a pet dog of Yuchi Tao, had actually wanted to entrap her there so that Yuchi Tao could abduct her.

After all, Hun Yin city didn't fall under the jurisdiction of the Tang kingdom, so there was no chance of Yan Huanmo being saved by Zhentian sect.

Although Yuchi Tao was not afraid of Zhentian sect because of his influential family, still he knew that if he had to face the whole sect, it would be a great problem for him.

In this case, Yan Huanmo actually fell in Wen Ze's trap while the uncouthly man was hired by him to make sure that Yan Huanmo couldn't escape.

If Long Yu hadn't arrived at the right time, Yan Huanmo would have surely ended up becoming a new toy for that spoiled young master Yuchi Tao!

Chapter – 156 Offended Feng Hai!

Leaving Yan Huanmo resting at the inn, Long Yu went out to have a look at the marketplace.

Now he not only had the neidans, the corpses of beasts and the battles weapons he harvested from the Demon valley to care for, he also had to look after Yan Huanmo since there was no specific cure for a damaged Zhenling entity.

In the marketplace of Hun Yin city, many alchemy experts of the alchemy and concocting field used to live and sell their immortality pills.

However, most of these alchemy experts did not have a good temperament as most of them hailed from other countries and sects who had exiled them because of their misdeeds.

Otherwise, they could have lived a settled life in their original countries, they had no need to settle down in Hun Yin city and sell stuff to sustain their own livelihood.

Long Yu wanted to sell the corpse of a beast to some alchemy expert who could utilise it in preparing immortality pills. He wanted to see if any one of them was willing to pay a high price for the corpse.

Soon, Long Yu found a luxurious garret which was said to be occupied by an alchemy expert.

Alchemy experts were usually rich fellows, so the luxurious appearance of this garret was nothing unusual.

Long Yu entered this luxurious garret. A middle aged man who was dressed up like a servant was standing at the door. He gave a slant look to Long Yu and said.

“Boy, it is the residence of alchemist Feng Hai, not a place to be visited by you.”

It seemed that this servant was looking down upon Long Yu.

Long Yu narrowed his eyes and looked towards the man, but soon he

discovered that this man was a Zhenling 4th layer powerhouse!

Alchemist Feng Hai must be a very powerful person given that his domestic servant was at Zhenling 4th layer!

Cultivation level of Feng Hai must be much higher, but this was not something to be pondered about because the alchemists were respected not according to their cultivation level but according to their expertise at preparing immortality pills.

“I am here to sell something.”

Long Yu stated his purpose for the visit. If the other party didn't seem to be interested, he would simply leave the place.

“What could a trivial boy Zhenling 2nd layer sell to an alchemist? Master Feng Hai has no spare time to waste upon people like you!”

The middle aged servant looked at Long Yu with such a disdain as if he was looking at some fly.

Seeing the opposite party behave in such a way, even Long Yu had no interest to stay there, so he turned around to leave with an indifferent expression.

It was the residence of a formidable alchemist and he surely didn't want to stir up trouble. So even if the opposite party looked down upon him, he did not need to say anything.

After all, he was just a Zhenling 2nd layer expert!

But as soon as he turned around to leave, the servant shouted at him: “Stop! You wanted to visit this place, and now you are leaving so easily?”

“What do you mean?”

Long Yu was standing before the entrance to the garret. He turned around and asked lightly.

“Leave something here and then you can go!”

The middle aged servant said fiercely: “Either it is the thing you wanted to sell or it is some part of you, but Master Feng Hai needed just this kind of material to refine a certain immortality pill.”

Ransom!

Long Yu immediately understood the meaning of the middle aged servant.

Could Master Feng Hai need a part of a martial expert to refine an immortality pill? If that was the case, what exactly did he need?

Hand? Foot? Heart? Dantian?

Long Yu did not know. All he knew was that this Feng Hai and his middle aged servant were not good people!

Perhaps there were a lot of truths yet to be uncovered about the treacheries of martial experts.

This made Long Yu's eyes flash fiercely.

If the opposite party had not provoked him, he would've walked out quietly. But now the opposite party wanted to seize him, and he simply couldn't just stay there and tolerate!

"Humph!"

Long Yu stepped out of the luxurious garret.

In reality, he didn't mean to leave. He only wanted to lure the middle aged servant out of the garret!

And as expected by Long Yu, the middle aged servant rushed towards him fiercely in order to chase him down.

"Since you have tried to run away, I have no option left but to forcefully seize your Dantian. I will give it to Master Feng Hai to refine immortality pills!"

The middle aged servant shouted loudly and immediately rushed towards Long Yu at the speed of wind in order to attack him.

Long Yu had already been expecting this, but his opponent of Zhenling 4th layer also had a very strong killing intention!

Certainly, the opposite party wanted to hit Long Yu hard.

"So the very task of this servant is killing people! I just wanted to go inside to sell the corpse of a demon beast but these people want to kill me and seize my Dantian? Now they have done it!"

As soon as Long Yu exited the luxurious garret, he shouted as loudly as he could to attract the attention of other people in the street.

At the same time, his shout caught the attention of several martial experts who were present in the marketplace and all of them were shocked to hear this.

Immediately, those martial experts began to talk about it among themselves.

“Alchemist Feng Hai’s domestic servant robs people?”

“This alchemist Feng Hai is a very arrogant and ruthless man. But sooner or later, his misdeeds will bring him to his demise.”

“This boy is really unfortunate. He entered the garret to sell things, and now he has to run for his life because he is just a Zhenling 2nd layer expert.....”

Nobody in the entire Hun Yin city dared to meddle in this matter!

Because Feng Hai worked as the chief alchemist for the biggest gang of Hun Yin city, and messing with him meant messing with the largest gang of the city!

The middle aged servant stood there with a look of pride on his face.

He was looking at the back profile of Long Yu as a butcher would look at a lamb.

This boy shouted for help. Now who’s going to help you, poor wretch!

“Little darling, here I come to seize your Dantian!”

The middle aged servant launched towards Long Yu to capture him.

However, what he had not expected was that Long Yu would actually counterattack!

Moreover, this counterattack contained the power of thunder!

Zhentian domain, dry marsh mood, Lunar mood and thunder charm, altogether the strength of four different world principles, erupted simultaneously, with Zhentian Sun appearing at Long Yu’s back, suppressing the opposite party with a massive suppression force.

The middle aged servant had never imagined that Long Yu had comprehended four different world principles. His complexion changed as soon as his movements slowed down.

However, a strange excited look reappeared in his eyes soon.

This boy had such an uncommon power within him, so his Dantian would help in refining a very powerful immortality pill. If he could seize this boy's Dantian and give it to Master Feng Hai, it would definitely fetch him great rewards!

With these thoughts, the middle aged servant went completely frantic.

"Die!"

He shouted loudly, full of fierce killing intention.

However, at this time, nine hidden dragon qi exploded beneath his feet and completely enveloped him immediately.

"Nine hidden dragon fist burst stream, awakening palm samsara!"

The two techniques, when used simultaneously by Long Yu, released a disastrous burst of the power of samsara and dragon qi!

Almost immediately afterwards, the whole body of that middle aged servant came under the influence of the power of samsara. This not only decreased his cultivation level by one layer, but also frightened him to such an extent that he completely lost his mind!

Long Yu had very tactfully played with the psychology of the middle aged servant. While he kept on shouting, asking for help, he had secretly launched his most powerful attacks on the servant. Obviously the man was negligent at that time because he thought Long Yu was running here and there trying to get someone to help him.

Long Yu very tactfully succeeded in catching the enemy off guard!

"Nine hidden dragon burst stream!"

Long Yu had already killed two Zhenling 4th layer powerhouses quite recently, so he was thoroughly familiar with the situation. He knew that the only technique he could use now was nine hidden dragon burst stream, and that no Zhenling 4th layer powerhouse was strong enough to survive the wrath of this attack.

He had to use his strongest attacks. After all, he was fighting an opponent with a cultivation level of two layers above him!

Without using his spiritual level battle weapon – the Qian dragon spear and his nine hidden dragon mark, there was no chance he could kill such a powerful opponent.

If the man was not suppressed at the right time, he could have proved to be very dangerous to Long Yu.

Since the suppression would stay only for a short period of time, Long Yu had to attack with all his might to kill this middle aged servant in one swoop!

The nine hidden dragon qi sprouted from the ground below the man's feet, completely enveloping him instantly and started corroding his body internally.

The middle aged servant was so frightened that he couldn't think straight anymore. He kept shouting for help as his body was soon completely corroded by the nine hidden dragon qi. The cries stopped soon and his dried up corpse fell to the ground!

"Time to leave."

Suddenly, he felt that a number of strong powerhouses were approaching him.

Although he had killed a Zhenling 4th layer powerhouse again, but this didn't mean that he had enough strength to face numerous Zhenling 4th layer powerhouses all at once!

As soon as he killed the middle aged servant, he hid himself in the crowd.

Next, he sped as fast as he could towards the inn where he had left Yan Huanmo resting, and found that she had already woken up.

"Elder Yan, I have killed a servant of alchemist Feng Hai, and it seems that we have to leave this place as soon as we can."

Long Yu said very calmly with a dignified look on his face.

"What?"

Yan Huanmo was sitting in her bed with closed eyes to heal her injuries by meditation, but as soon as she heard this, she immediately opened her eyes in bewilderment.

"Let's go!"

Yan Huanmo was ready to leave.

As soon as she heard that Long Yu had killed the servant of Feng Hai, she understood that staying in Hun Yin city was impossible for both of them now.

Yan Huanmo had no other business to be settled in Hun Yin city. Although her wounds had not yet healed completely, still she could leave with Long Yu.

Taking the advantage of the enemy not reacting quickly, Long Yu took off the Mongolian bronze armour that he had been wearing since the day he arrived in Hun Yin city, and put on grey commoner clothing.

He and Yan Huanmo rushed towards the western gate of Hun Yin city.

When the servant of alchemist Feng Hai was killed by Long Yu, the largest gang of the city had reacted immediately and sent its best detectives to assess the situation, who had ordered all of the city gates to be closed.

Although it was a trivial matter of the murder of a servant, it was a servant of Feng Hai, and everyone knew how dangerous it was to mess with Feng Hai!

When he would get to know that one of his servants was killed and the murderer had not been caught yet, it would drive him extremely angry and his wrath was something Hun Yin city couldn't afford.

However, while the city gates were being closed, Long Yu and Yan Huanmo slipped past the gates and were now travelling towards the direction of Tang kingdom.

Since Long Yu had changed his clothes, no one seemed to have recognised him.

Only after a series of investigations could they find out that it was Long Yu who had killed the servant.

He quickly informed Yan Huanmo about what had happened.

Although he couldn't sell the corpses of beasts and other battle weapons in Hun Yin city, saving his own life was the priority now!

Chapter – 157 Shadow Poison

Long Yu and Yan Huanmo fled away, leaving behind the chaos of Hun Yin city.

In the vast expanse of the grassland, their fast moving bodies looked like two streamers of black light.

Long Yu was surprised by the fact that even in such an injured state, Yan Huanmo had made a breakthrough and was now at Zhenling 5th layer!

The promotion to the next layer had increased her basic strength, which was now more than double of her previous strength.

If she were to face Wen Ze and that uncouthly man again, not only could she fight more efficiently, but could also suppress them both immediately!

Unfortunately her writing brush Zhenling entity was damaged by the meteorite pike of that uncouthly man, making her feel sad about it.

Certainly, the only perk of that intense combat was that Yan Huanmo managed to reach Zhenling 5th layer.

In the face of danger, it is the easiest to make a breakthrough to the next layer. And now, Yan Huanmo's heart was filled with a lot of thoughts now after breaking through.

It seemed to her that in future, she would have to go through much more difficult and dangerous situations to gain experience and enhance her power.

Just like in the case of Long Yu, who had to continuously fight people to save his life right from the day he entered the world of martial arts, and as a result, his cultivation had grown at a great speed!

Yan Huanmo, preoccupied with these thoughts, looked towards Long Yu, only to find that he had been paying no attention to her at all, but had actually been moving forward with his eyes closed!

At this time, Long Yu had achieved a resonance with his lunar wings – the wings were flapping completely in synchronisation with the rhythm of his heartbeat!

Since he had already attained the state of resonance with his battle weapon, he was now focusing on the rhythm it had developed by synchronising with his heartbeat.

At this moment, after narrowly escaping from the chaos of Hun Yin city and entering the Zhenling 5th layer, Yan Huanmo was now more powerful than ever and her speed matched the speed of Long Yu soon; that too without the help of lunar wings.

She had a formidable strength now!

Presently it could be said that the intelligence of the lunar wings depended upon the intelligence of Long Yu. However, if he went further and turned this resonance to revelation level, the battle weapon would develop an intelligence of its own.

But, attaining the revelation level was not an easy task.

Unlike the resonance of Long Yu and his Qian dragon spear, the flying snake sword hadn't formed any connection with him till now, so he had a fair idea of how difficult it was to attain the revelation level.

Making a battle weapon develop its own intelligence was a feat that couldn't be achieved in a short span of time.

Like the martial experts themselves, the battle weapons also had evolution levels for their intelligence. Starting from the resonance level, a battle weapon's intelligence evolved to psychic level and then finally reached the revelation level. Each stage was stronger than the previous one and enhanced the effect of the battle weapon manifold.

For example, when Long Yu reached the resonance level with his lunar wings, his speed was promoted to a whole new level all of a sudden!

"Good, now I am as fast as Mo Fengming."

Long Yu's confidence was boosted when he realized that his present speed was even slightly more than Yan Huanmo!

He could run faster than a martial expert with a cultivation level three layers above his own cultivation!

It was clear that if Hun Yin city wanted to capture him, they must send martial experts with a cultivation level of at least Zhenling 5th layer, otherwise it would be impossible for them to overtake Long Yu.

But would the biggest gang of Hun Yin city send its Zhenling 6th layer powerhouses to avenge the murder of a trivial servant?

Any Zhenling 6th layer expert's temperament wouldn't be good, let alone that of alchemist Feng Hai himself!

Still rushing forward like two parallel streamers, Long Yu and Yan Huanmo finally entered the boundary of the Tang kingdom as it grew dark.

This region was a continuous stretch of snowy mountains which served as the natural border of the Tang kingdom.

They entered the sierra swiftly and knew very well that from here onwards no one from Hun Yin city could trouble them.

This sierra was not only full of dangers but an ambush could easily be set for anyone who was following them. So, if anyone was blindly chasing them into the sierra, they would not be able to get out of there alive.

This was one of the main reasons why other countries never dared to attack the Tang kingdom from this direction.

"Long Yu, I am surprised to see that your speed has increased to this extent. I am no longer worried about you."

After entering the sierra, Yan Huanmo narrowed her eyebrows and said: "We should part ways now."

"Elder Yan, you have some other business to settle?"

Long Yu asked.

"My Zhenling entity has been damaged to a great extent. I need to go to the Tang Imperial city to buy some healing type immortality pills. In the entire Tang kingdom, there is no other place except the Imperial city where I can get such pills."

Yan Huanmo smiled and said: "Your real identity is known to the whole Tang kingdom now. If you come with me to the Imperial city, I won't be able to

protect you. The seven sects competition is about to start, so you should head straight towards the Sect. The Elders are waiting for you there, to give you a big pleasant surprise.”

A big pleasant surprise?

Long Yu was not at all interested in this ‘surprise’, but he understood that travelling to the Imperial city was not appropriate for him right now.

Chu Chao Sheng was an all-time threat to his life!

In the whole of Tang kingdom, perhaps the only safe place for him was Zhentian Sect, and if he approached towards the sect right from the sierra, Chu Chao Sheng would never get to know about his presence.

“Such being the case, I bid you farewell.”

The two were still running as they parted ways and went in different directions.

Yan Huanmo rushed in the direction of the Imperial city and soon disappeared from the sierra under the dim moonlight.

Long Yu too rushed in the direction of Zhentian Sect.

.....

As the day broke, Long Yu had already passed the sierra and now a large lake glittered in the sunlight before him.

Next to the lake was a large stretch of fertile land, planted with golden wheat.

“In the Tang kingdom, there are numerous such villages. The wheat that they grow here in plenty is their staple food.....”

Long Yu thought to himself as he rushed towards the lake and was now near the village.

The sun had risen and there was smoke rising from the chimneys of small houses. Obviously, each household was preparing the breakfast.

In such villages, a person with a cultivation of Wudao 3rd layer was considered to be good and as one passed the 3rd layer, he or she would join a sect to rise further in the world of martial arts.

“Hm?”

As Long Yu was passing by the village, he noticed a familiar figure in that village.

The girl was clad in a pretty blue robe and was standing with her back towards Long Yu, facing the cruel accusations of the villagers.

This girl was Liao Lele!

As Long Yu noticed that the situation was not quite favourable for her, he stopped right there.

He never expected to meet Liao Lele there, and now it seemed that the girl was stuck in some trouble!

“You witch! Your immortality pill has killed Uncle Li!”

“If you had not insisted Uncle Li to take the immortality pill, he would still be alive!”

“You killed him, you witch!”

A large group of villagers had encircled Liao Lele. They were accusing her while drawing closer and closer to her.

Long Yu discovered that Liao Lele had a cultivation of Wudao eighth layer, so if she wanted to escape, she could have easily done that but.....

At this moment, Liao Lele was trembling with fear and in front of her was the corpse of a man placed on a stretcher, which had turned black.

It seemed that Liao Lele had killed the middle aged man and since her heart was full of guilt, she didn't even utter a single word of rebuttal.

At Zhentian Sect, she was being trained by Old White in the art of alchemy. She never expected that when she would return to her village to treat Uncle Li, she would become the cause of his death!

Was the alchemical technique she used not efficient? Did she create a poison instead of creating an immortality pill?

She could not figure out what exactly went wrong, but at that time, Uncle Li's body was lying right in front of her and was turning darker with every passing

moment.

The fact was in front of her eyes and her frail mind was defeated in the war of logic and facts.

However by this time, Long Yu noticed what was wrong with the body.

He assessed that the middle aged man's body was showing signs of being poisoned by Shadow poison about which Elder Yu had told him earlier!

The shadow poison was deadlier than any ordinary poison and was predominantly used by Qiansi Sect. The higher one's cultivation would be, the longer he or she could resist its effects. But in any case, it eventually and completely damaged the victim's Dantian and meridians and as a result, they died with their bodies turning black.

"It is the deed of someone from Qiansi Sect."

Long Yu's eyes flashed as he knew he had to interfere in this matter!

Otherwise, Liao Lele would have to take the blow. Whenever she would compound an immortality pill, the ghost of this incident would haunt her and might hinder her progress.

The talent of this extremely talented girl would get extinguished!

"Everybody step aside!"

As Long Yu stepped forward with these thoughts, the villagers sensed the wave of Zhentian domain and immediately made way for him!

To everyone's surprise, Long Yu was gradually moving towards Liao Lele!

As soon as Liao Lele heard Long Yu's voice, she turned towards him and both of them looked at each other with their eyes glittering with mutual admiration.

She had heard that Long Yu had entered the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir and was killed there, and although she couldn't believe it, since Long Yu didn't show up, even she had accepted this 'fact'.

Disturbed by this news, she had decided to leave Zhentian Sect and visit her ancestral village for a while to move on.

Since now Long Yu was standing right in front of her, safe and sound, the

extent of her happiness could easily be imagined!

However, the very next moment she was reminded of Uncle Li whom she had ‘killed’ and this made her look gloomy all of a sudden.

What talent for alchemy did she possess when she couldn’t save a fellow villager’s life? What qualification did she have to practice alchemy after poisoning a man? Did she really deserve to be happy of meeting Long Yu now?

“Everybody listen to me. The reason for Uncle Li’s death is the Shadow poison which is used by Qiansi Sect!”

Long Yu said with a stern face: “Liao Lele belongs to the same sect as me and I completely trust her. The immortality pills that she concocts are not capable of killing people!”

Hearing this, every villager present there gawked.

Was this really a deed of someone from Qiansi Sect?

As Long Yu looked at the people present there, he realised that some people still didn’t believe him!

.....

Chapter – 158 Search by risking lives

For Liao Lele, this was the last straw that could save her.

“Long Yu, are you sure?”

Liao Lele stared at him with her eyes wide open.

“Yes, I’m sure.”

Long Yu said: “I cannot say for sure that someone from Qiansi Sect is present here. All I know is that by targeting you they have actually attacked at the core of your alchemy skills. Whoever did this wants you to doubt your skills in order to hinder your cultivation and alchemy training. Liao Lele, beware of this trap.....”

Liao Lele did not say anything as Long Yu did not have any solid evidence to prove that Uncle Li was really killed by the Shadow poison used by Qiansi Sect!

Because of this, more villagers had encircled them now with more intense indignant looks on their faces than earlier!

“You are from the same sect as this witch! Of course you will favour her. A man from our village being poisoned by Qiansi Sect, how is that possible?”

“Our righteous Uncle Li had no enmity with anyone from Qiansi Sect. Then why would they send their experts to brutally kill Uncle Li?”

“These people from martial sects have malignant hearts. After attaining power, they hold no worth of human life!”

The people started talking among themselves, making accusations, but Long Yu stayed unmoved.

He sneered: “If I really held no worth of human life, I would have killed all of you right now!”

Hearing this, the villagers immediately stopped talking. A silence prevailed as they withdrew several steps and were now vigilantly looking at Long Yu.

They had sensed by now that this young man clad in grey clothes had formidable power and could really kill them all if he wanted to!

Even Liao Lele had a cultivation of Wudao eighth layer and could easily confront all villagers, let alone Long Yu who was much more powerful than Liao Lele!

“Ha ha ha ha ha!”

The sound of laughter of a female was heard by all of them all of a sudden. It seemed that the sound was coming from all the directions.

Liao Lele and the villagers were shocked and scared at the same time. Was this the laughter of a girl or a ghost?

Except for Long Yu, everyone else was scared.

It was now clear that someone from Qiansi Sect was really present in the vicinity.

“Long Yu, you are late. I didn’t expect to see you here.....”

The girl continued giggling: “If you had not arrived here, Zhentian Sect would only have lost this doll of alchemy division. But now, Zhentian Sect will lose you too!”

If only Liao Lele had been present there, she would have easily accepted the death of Uncle Li as her fault and wouldn’t have reported the incident to Old White. Thus, no trouble would have befallen Qiansi Sect.

But now, Long Yu was there and correctly assessed the situation, so now it had become important to kill both of them!

Since Long Yu was a target of Prince Chu Chao Sheng, if she were to kill him, Chu Chao Sheng would definitely support her in case of any accusations directed her way from Zhentian sect. So, not only was her life out of any danger, but killing Long Yu might help her to develop better relations with Chu Chao Sheng!

As the sinister laughter could be heard by everyone, Long Yu’s eyes flashed with strong killing intention which alarmed Liao Lele.

Liao Lele trembled with fear as she could not understand what exactly was happening there.

Long Yu quickly reacted at this moment.

“Go!”

Long Yu grasped his Qian dragon spear and swayed it in the air!

The next moment, he held Liao Lele by her waist and took a high jump into the sky.

Puff! Puff! Puff!

At that time three shadows flashed from the shadow of a nearby house and pierced the place where Liao Lele had originally been standing.

If Long Yu hadn't reacted quickly enough, Liao Lele would be dead by now!

“Your reaction speed is not slow. But it's such a pity that you have to face me, so there is no escape for you.....”

A strange female voice continued to chuckle and manipulated the shadow of the clouds to completely envelope Long Yu and Liao Lele inside it.

“Die!”

The female voice shouted severely!

Soon, Long Yu found himself and Liao Lele trapped in the shadow threads as fine as spider web, hanging in the air!

This martial expert of Qiansi Sect had displayed Qiansi shadow tactics and had certainly comprehended the Qiansi Silk Law!

The term 'silk' didn't refer to the spider web; it referred to the technique of manipulating the shadows to form almost invisible threads. Only the powerhouses who had comprehended the Qiansi mood could use Qiansi Silk Law!

Qiansi Silk Law had a strong binding effect, so even if the opponent was of the same cultivation level, he would be immediately suppressed by the binding effect.

Needless to say, this martial expert of all-women Qiansi sect had a cultivation level of Zhenling 4th layer or above.

Long Yu could easily assess the cultivation level of his opponent by observing their techniques, except if the opponent was hiding their true strength.

“Zhentian domain, suppress!”

Long Yu shouted while holding Liao Lele’s slender waist with one hand and as he waved his other hand, Zhentian Sun appeared behind him!

Fierce illumination of Zhentian Sun and the tyrannical suppression of Zhentian domain made the shadows manipulated by the Qiansi girl crumble immediately!

The Qiansi girl had already assessed that Long Yu was just a Zhenling 2nd layer expert and made the same mistake as Wen Ze – underestimating Long Yu!

Long Yu fell to the ground; his heart throbbed fast as Liao Lele fell upon him.

Earlier, Long Yu had been able to kill two Zhenling 4th layer powerhouses not only because they had underestimated him, but also because they had exposed themselves to Long Yu.

But now in the case of this Qiansi girl, Long Yu had no idea of her whereabouts. She simply did not make any appearance and was launching powerful sneak attacks to harass Long Yu and Liao Lele!

“I must find where she is hiding. Without finding her, I cannot beat her.....”

Long Yu stood up and alertly looked all around him for her, clutching his Qian dragon spear.

This short confrontation had already made a lot of villagers tremble with fear.

None of them had imagined that Long Yu’s speculation would become a reality so quickly!

A Qiansi powerhouse was hiding in the vicinity of their village, so it was clear that Uncle Li was killed by the poison of the same Qiansi powerhouse!

Immediately, all of them felt strong guilt for wrongly accusing Liao Lele.

After absorbing the immortality pill concocted by Liao Lele, the condition of Uncle Li had immediately improved a lot. He had been bed-ridden for the past two or three months, but within two hours of consuming the immortality pill concocted by Liao Lele, he got out of his bed and had even started walking!

Although he was still weak, his condition had really improved.

Originally, Liao Lele was an orphan. After joining Zhentian Sect and learning

alchemy there, she strived to work for the needy villagers and was now the object of their respect and gratitude.

However, it was the same villagers who had been cursing her whole-heartedly a few minutes ago!

All the villagers now felt sorry for her. But now, since the Qiansi powerhouse was beyond their cultivation levels, they could not dare to interfere in the combat that was going on!

“I have heard that the Qiansi powerhouses are very good at hiding themselves. If her body is discovered, Liao Lele and her fellow disciple should be able to beat her, right?”

Immediately, a young villager came up with a solution.

For them, both Long Yu and the Qiansi powerhouse had indomitable strengths; they simply couldn't differentiate between the cultivation levels of these two.

They could only help Long Yu by finding the place where the Qiansi powerhouse was hiding, letting Long Yu avenge the death of Uncle Li!

Several villagers scattered in all directions immediately, though half scared to death all the while, in order to find the Qiansi powerhouse.

Long Yu thought that they were fleeing to save their lives; he preferred having no nuisances around him anyway.

Presently, all his thoughts were focussed on detecting the exact location of the Qiansi powerhouse.

“You want to find me? It's not that easy, Long Yu! Ha ha ha ha ha ha!”

The laughter of the Qiansi girl echoed from all directions as the shadow of the clouds were animated and launched towards Long Yu in order to entrap him.

“For now, I am unable to detect her location. I can only defend myself!”

Long Yu's heart turned cold. He didn't withdraw his Zhentian Sun and continued releasing the suppression of Zhentian domain.

Under the great suppression of Zhentian domain, the speed with which the shadows were moving toward him slowed down to a great extent, so now it was

impossible for them to entrap Long Yu!

“Hahahaha! The genius of Zhentian Sect, the descendant of the mighty Long clan, really lives up to his reputation! It is such a pity that you can only defend my attacks, but for how long?”

That sinister laughter echoed again and the girl said: “I really want to see for how long you can continue to release Zhentian domain for defence, being a trivial expert of Zhenling 2nd layer!”

The voice faded and continued to manipulate the shadows and launch them towards Long Yu, as he continued defending himself and Liao Lele.

Once Long Yu’s power exhausted, he would be entrapped by these shadows and then he would have no means of escaping!

If he continued releasing Zhentian domain like this, his body would use up all the stored xuanqi very soon.

Although after quenching his Dantian with the thunder mines, the xuanqi level of his body was being replenished faster than any ordinary martial expert but still it was not enough to fight with a Zhenling 4th layer powerhouse!

“Long Yu, be careful!”

Liao Lele, who was standing beside him, looked at him anxiously.

Since she had a cultivation level of Wudao eighth layer, she could sense that the Qiansi powerhouse was more powerful than Long Yu; her cultivation level was perhaps one layer above Long Yu’s cultivation level.

In such case, she could easily defeat Long Yu with her sneak attacks!

“Rest assured!”

Long Yu could feel his xuanqi level exhausting and was feeling uneasy. Was this the time to release Nine Hidden Dragon Zhenling?

If it was not absolutely necessary, Long Yu never wanted to congeal his second Zhenling.

However, if he did not release it now, he would most probably be killed by this Qiansi girl. After all, her strength was double the strength of Long Yu. Moreover,

she was hiding herself and was launching sneak attacks!

At this moment, some villagers screamed loudly from a spot not far away from Long Yu.

“Here, she is hiding here!”

The shouts of the villagers, one after another, reached Long Yu’s ears.

Long Yu heard the screams and a cold light flashed in his eyes. He could see that the villagers were roaming in groups as if to find something, and now one of these groups had started screaming as if something happened to them.

“These villagers actually.....This opportunity must not be lost!”

Long Yu’s heart skipped a beat.

While he thought that these villagers had been cowering and fleeing away, they had been risking their own lives, searching the exact location of the Qiansi powerhouse for him!

.....

Chapter – 159 Elder Ying Luo

When a group of villagers started screaming, Long Yu reacted immediately.

“So finally we know where you have been hiding.”

Long Yu’s eyes flashed as he flapped his lunar wings, which displayed their hidden power for the first time – flying!

The lunar wings flapped to lift his body in the air, changing it into a black streamer, and almost immediately transported him to the place where the screaming group of villagers had gathered.

As the lunar wings reached psychic level, their power increased and allowed him to fly like an eagle in the air. Although it wouldn’t enable him to fly as high as an eagle, his speed would still increase manifold.

Immediately afterward, Long Yu dropped from the clouds and could clearly see the Qiansi powerhouse that was hiding in a corner.

It was a middle-aged woman with freckled face and was wearing a black embroidered robe. Her eyes flashed with sinister light as she ruthlessly penetrated the chest of the villager, who was leading the group, with her battle weapon, immediately crushing his heart!

“Found you!”

Long Yu gave a cold look to the Qiansi powerhouse as he discreetly landed near her.

“How did you find me?”

The middle-aged Qiansi woman giggled as she looked at Long Yu with disdain: “You are a trivial Zhenling 2nd layer expert, while I am an Elder of the Qiansi Sect. Cannot you see that I am at Zhenling 4th layer with my own Zhenling entity? Do you really think you have the slightest chance of defeating me?”

Hearing this, the faces of all the villagers turned pale with fear!

They thought that the cultivation level of Long Yu was equal to that of the Qiansi powerhouse, and that was the reason why they had risked their own lives to find the whereabouts of the hiding Qiansi powerhouse, thinking that Long Yu

must be able to fend her off if they found her!

But as it turned out to be, this middle-aged Qiansi woman was a Zhenling 4th layer powerhouse while Long Yu was just a Zhenling 2nd layer expert!

This disappointed them all to a great extent!

Although the Qiansi Elder was now the object of every villager's hatred since she had killed Uncle Li, she was too powerful to be handled by any of the villagers. Now that the villagers had helped Long Yu in finding her, after killing Long Yu she might retaliate and wipe out the whole village!

Immediately, hundreds of villagers that had gathered there retreated with apparent fear on their faces.

For them, Zhenling realm was something unattainable, so they had not the least qualifications to fight a Zhenling 4th layer powerhouse. If any of them was to meddle, they would get killed immediately!

The eyes of some villagers flashed as they thought of escaping from the village.

Although it was hard for them to abandon the village they spent their childhood in, still, running away from the village was better than staying there and getting killed!

At this time, Liao Lele, while running out of her breath, shouted to the villagers: "Don't be afraid. Long Yu is a genius of Zhentian Sect. He won't let this vicious woman run away now!"

"Liao Lele, you are such a funny little girl."

The middle-aged woman laughed tenderly, flashing her eyes fiercely and said: "I will not run away, you stupid girl! You will have to run for your life! Remember my name – Ying Luo!"

This woman, named Ying Luo, was an Elder of Qiansi Sect!

And her strength was no less than that of Elder Yan Huanmo of Zhentian Sect!

Although this had increased the pressure on Long Yu, since he had found where exactly she was hiding, it was much easier for him to fight her now.

"Face me if you can!"

Long Yu's blood boiled. Regardless of this woman being an Elder of Qiansi Sect, he must kill her!

Whether it was because Qiansi Sect had injured Elder Yu Shuiyun, or because it wanted to gain control over Zhentian tactics – Long Yu had enough reasons to feel what he was doing was legit.

Regardless of the ways he would have to use, Long Yu was determined to kill this Qiansi Elder.

Elder Ying Luo had not only killed many innocent villagers, she also tried to make Liao Lele doubt her talent for alchemy.

If Long Yu had not arrived in the village and detected that Uncle Li was poisoned by someone from Qiansi Sect, this woman's schemes might have been successful and would surely have destroyed Liao Lele's life!

“Qiansi Silk Law!”

A tender smile floated on Ying Luo's lips as numerous silk threads, as fine as a spider's web, launched towards Long Yu and trapped him by forming a net-like structure around him.

“Qiansi Domain!”

As Ying Luo's eyes flashed fiercely, Long Yu could feel a strange and formidable binding strength enveloping him completely.

“Zhentian Sun, congeal!”

Long Yu, full of self-poise, released his Zhentian Sun. As the Zhentian Sun shone fiercely, a tyrannical pressure was released by the Zhentian Domain which resisted the Qiansi Domain attack.

However, the very next moment, even this brightly shining Zhentian Sun was enveloped by the dense silk threads which were damaging it by creating small holes in it.

“The source of Qiansi Silk Law is her hands, from where these threads are being released....”

As soon as Long Yu discovered the source of these silk threads, his whole body released a terrifying destructive strength, as if a thunder mine had erupted,

releasing lightning bolts around him!

These destructive thunder mines were a result of the Thunder charm that he had comprehended!

Completely under Long Yu's control, the thunder mines charged past the silk threads and traveled towards Ying Luo.

Since the thunder mines traveled at the speed of light, naturally Ying Luo wasn't able to dodge this attack and was soon struck by several thunder mines, making her whole body sparkle brilliantly!

"Qiansi defense!"

Ying Luo shouted as she withdrew all the silk threads to cover herself, forming a cemented shadow all around her. Surprisingly, even the thunder mines couldn't break through its defense and could only pace back and forth, stuck in the shadow!

"It's a good opportunity!"

Long Yu's eyes shone brightly as he condensed nine hidden dragon qi on his fist.

"Nine hidden dragon fist, awakening palm samsara!"

Immediately the humungous power of samsara was released!

As Long Yu launched his fist, the power of samsara completely surrounded the black-robed silhouette of Ying Luo and immediately seeped into her body!

And soon, under the influence of the power of samsara, her cultivation level dropped by one layer to Zhenling 3rd layer!

This phenomenon immediately changed Ying Luo's complexion!

What a strange martial technique it was that had decreased her cultivation level?

She soon realized that this depreciation in her strength was only temporary and it would soon be restored, but right now, she was still just an expert of Zhenling 3rd layer!

The disparity between the basic strength levels of Zhenling 4th layer and

Zhenling 3rd layer was enormous.

As her cultivation level dropped, Long Yu was now going to release his nine hidden dragon qi, burst stream.

But Ying Luo had not underestimated her enemy from the beginning till now, even though she knew she had a much higher cultivation than that of Long Yu!

Still, even while facing an expert two level below hers, she had preferred not to expose herself and stayed hidden until the villagers discovered her.

Clearly, she was being cautious!

At this moment, as she was guarding against Long Yu's surprise attack, she was certain that Long Yu certainly had some secrets of his own.

Otherwise, from where could he have learned such powerful martial techniques?

In this case, Ying Luo had to be extra vigilant at all times.

At this moment, as Ying Luo noticed that Long Yu was about to hit his fist on the ground, she immediately withdrew herself several feet away from the place she was standing.

However, while she thought she was safe, she felt that the ground under her feet was a bit unusual.

Suddenly, a huge column of nine hidden dragon qi erupted from under her feet.

"Nine hidden dragon burst stream!"

Long Yu had hit his fist on the ground, releasing a burst of nine hidden dragon qi, which could have killed Ying Luo instantly.

Ying Luo reacted too quickly, which was crucial at this point of time as this attack could have killed her. Just as the nine hidden dragon qi exploded under her feet, she immediately rolled sideways to save herself from any major injury.

Although she was thoroughly distressed, still she was able to dodge off Long Yu's attack!

Long Yu also realised that defeating Ying Luo wouldn't be as easy as it was to

fight with the two Zhenling 4th layer powerhouses whom he had killed previously.

Earlier, the biggest disparity between Long Yu and his enemies had been the state of mind.

Even for a single moment, Ying Luo had not underestimated his strength and was as vigilant as ever, and this was one of the biggest problems Long Yu was facing right now.

Long Yu had comprehended the awakening palm samsara to the Xiao Cheng level, otherwise, it would have had no effect on Ying Luo.

Fortunately for him, the samsara had worked and she was now at Zhenling 3rd layer.

The basic strength of Long Yu was now at par with Ying Luo's basic strength!

"Die!"

Long Yu was in no mood of sparing this woman. He immediately flapped his lunar wings, which instead of taking him towards her on the ground transported him just above her head in the air.

"Numerous spear shadows!"

Long Yu waved his Qian dragon spear in the air to release numerous spear shadows which darted towards Ying Luo, who was standing just below.

"Qiansi defence!"

Ying Luo was unable to understand what exactly had happened and how Long Yu had appeared just above her in a flash, so all she could do was to congeal a shadow barrier around her in order to defend herself.

Unfortunately for her, she was now just at Zhenling 3rd layer.

Her shadow barrier soon began to disintegrate under the continuous attack of Long Yu's numerous spear shadows!

This made her ruthless and sinister complexion even gloomier!

Long Yu was now being offensive and had numerous techniques that could be used. His 'Kill ten thousand people' technique and 'Thunder charm' had

enormous destructive powers and were enough to kill even the mightiest of the enemies!

Ying Luo tried to dodge the attack by rolling sideways once again.

She was just waiting for her cultivation level to be restored, and then she could easily kill Long Yu!

However at this time, Long Yu's speed was must faster than hers, so how could he let her escape so easily?

His Qian dragon spear was now more like a tyrannosaurus that had selected its target. Releasing the thunder charm, Long Yu followed Ying Luo and pierced her shoulder all of a sudden!

Immediately, the violent power of thunder charm broke her shoulder!

Bang!

Ying Luo fell down with bloodshot eyes.

At this moment, she finally realised that she might die there and that too at the hands of a trivial boy of Zhenling 2nd layer!

Chapter – 160 Bai Hang challenges!

As the Qiansi Elder Ying Luo fell to the ground with her shoulder pierced by the Qian dragon spear, blood sprung out from the wound she had received.

The villagers, who were now planning to escape, were shocked to see this.

Long Yu was just a Zhenling 2nd layer expert, while this Qiansi woman Ying Luo was a Zhenling 4th layer powerhouse!

In spite of the disparity of two layers, Long Yu had struck Ying Luo as if she was not powerful than him but at the same cultivation level as him. This was simply unbelievable!

Suddenly, several villagers started looking at Long Yu in a state of bewilderment.

They now had a premonition that this boy, clad in plain grey cotton robe, would someday be praised by the entire Tang kingdom. And that day would come soon!

It was known all over the Tang kingdom that the seven sects competition was about to begin in a month or so, and that this competition was a platform for youngsters to display their talent. Wouldn't Long Yu shine in this competition?

“Die!”

Long Yu had not paused even for a single moment as his eyes flashed with indifference.

The woman before him was just an enemy!

And since she was an enemy, she must die!

“Please spare me, I beg you, please!”

The hint of sinister and ruthless light soon disappeared from her eyes as she clenched her bleeding shoulder and began to cry for mercy.

Unfortunately for her, Long Yu turned a cold shoulder towards her!

“Long Yu!”

Liao Lele saw this and immediately called Long Yu.

She could see that Ying Luo was badly injured and appeared miserable. This gave birth to compassion in her heart as she decided to persuade Long Yu into not killing her.

However, could anyone really influence Long Yu once he had made up his mind?

“Lamella touch!”

Long Yu bit his finger and sprinkled some blood on the tip of his Qian dragon spear, activating the fine black lines on its tip and then launched the spear towards Ying Luo.

“Qiansi defense!”

Ying Luo sensed the burst of xuanqi that approached her so she tried to congeal a shadow barrier to defend herself from Long Yu’s spear.

At this time, the Zhentian Sun reappeared behind Long Yu and was shining as brightly as ever, releasing the tyrannical power of Zhentian domain.

The continuous attacks had now caused the shadow barrier congealed by Ying Luo to wither as several holes appeared in it.

Since Ying Luo’s cultivation was now at Zhenling 3rd layer, the situation had reversed instantly!

At this time, Ying Luo was already injured so severely that even if her cultivation level was restored, she wouldn’t be able to face Long Yu.

The power of the Lamellas touch had increased over time, so it penetrated the shadow barrier easily and made way for the Qian dragon spear to pierce Ying Luo’s heart. Since the spear was carrying the humungous strength of thunder charm, it instantly crushed Ying Luo’s heart.

Ying Luo was completely shocked and could not believe what had just happened. As she stared towards Long Yu in horror with her eyes wide open, she looked even more sinister than earlier.

Long Yu withdrew several steps by flapping his lunar wings and grabbing back his Qian dragon spear as he watched Ying Luo fall down to the ground.

As blood spurted out of her chest and her body lay there, motionless, Long Yu was finally relaxed.

This time, he had to face an Elder of Qiansi sect, so now he believed that he could defeat even the most formidable powerhouses of Zhenling 4th layer. Not to mention, she had never underestimated him like his previous opponents had done.

Nevertheless, he couldn't compare this woman's strength to that of Yu Qianning.

Because Yu Qianning had not only comprehended the Qiansi domain but had also been practising 'Spring and Autumn' core law and had also comprehended the Imperial domain, which was a principle of mysterious jade level!

Although Long Yu had the strength of two heavenly tablets – the Lunar tablet and the Thunder tablet, he had not comprehended their domains yet.

The Imperial domain that he would have to face eventually was one of the most powerful domains!

"I must enhance my cultivation level as fast as possible!"

Long Yu was suddenly reminded of the beast corpses and the neidans that he had stored inside his nine hidden dragon mark as he stood not far away from Liao Lele.

Could he hand them over to her and Old White? Perhaps they would be able to concoct some powerful immortality pills from them.

Regardless of the ways he had to follow, he was now focussed on enhancing his cultivation level.

If Long Yu reached Zhenling 3rd layer, then it would become much easier for him to face a Zhenling 4th layer powerhouse.

That way, even if Yu Qianning would have reached the peak of Zhenling 4th layer, he would be able to defeat her in the seven sects competition!

Long Yu rushed towards the corpse of Ying Luo in order to see if she had been carrying some valuable battle weapon or immortality pills with her.

The gentle Liao Lele couldn't tolerate watching this.

“Long Yu, you have just killed this woman. You cannot treat her corpse like this.....”

Liao Lele moved towards Long Yu.

“If I had died, she would have treated my corpse the same way, as she would have treated your corpse or someone else’s.”

Long Yu said in a low tone, without stopping to search the corpse for valuables.

Soon he found out that the woman had been concealing a bronze top grade spiritual level battle weapon in her bosom. Small characters were carved on it. It seemed that it was called “Qiansi copper needles”.

As the number of martial experts that could use this battle weapon was few, it couldn’t fetch Long Yu any large amount of money. In fact, even if Long Yu was to sell it, he would only get around 3500 crystal coins for it.

Ying Luo had definitely used these copper needles while she was attacking Long Yu as the copper needles were still warm from the circulation of xuanqi.

It was only a pity that she couldn’t defend herself from Long Yu even after using such a top grade spiritual level battle weapon, because Long Yu’s battle weapons as well as martial skills were of top grade spiritual level as well!

As Long Yu headed back towards Liao Lele, he could sense that she was angry with him although she tried to stay calm.

She was well aware of the fact that by killing Ying Luo, Long Yu had actually rescued not only her but the entire village!

No doubt, Ying Luo was an evil woman, but seeing her die like this made Liao Lele emotional.

What was the use of having a cultivation level of Zhenling 4th layer when she ended up dying in such a miserable way?

Perhaps someday, Long Yu would also face a similar fate! This made her even more anxious.

“Concocting life saving immortality pills is very important.....”

Liao Lele thought to herself. This whole incident had not only left a deep mark in her memory, but also encouraged her to pursue alchemy even more seriously!

She was good-hearted and could simply not see anyone dying, even if the person was her enemy. She could only practice her alchemy skills to perfection so that someday she might be able to save a dying person by concocting life-saving immortality pills!

But right now, she was too far away from her goal.

Even Old White, who was the sole alchemist in Zhentian Sect, did not possess such outstanding skills.

Liao Lele knew in her heart that she would have to travel a long way in order to become an ace alchemist!

The village crisis had been resolved.

Long Yu refused the warm invitation of the villagers and decided to head back to Zhentian Sect.

“Long Yu, I want to stay in the village for a few more days. I promise you that I will return to the Sect before the seven sect competition starts.”

Liao Lele looked on as she watched Long Yu depart.

She understood that she and Long Yu were not made for each other. There was a huge disparity in their basic natures which could not be ignored.

Long Yu could kill a person in cold blood, while she was a benevolent person.

She could be friends with him, but their relationship could go no further than friendship.

Two villagers and a Qiansi Elder had died in the village; she must stay to attend their funeral.

In order to avoid any further problems, the villagers decided to burn down the corpse of Ying Luo.

She realised that this incident could prove to be really helpful in promoting her alchemy skills, so she decided to continue her practice while staying in the village, hoping to break through the bottleneck she was stuck in.

.....

Long Yu flapped his lunar wings, which had attained the psychic level, and sped towards Zhentian Sect.

Only after a day of travelling, he had flown over a vast area of the Tang kingdom and could now see the Zhentian canyon!

His present speed was so high that even a Zhenling 5th layer powerhouse wouldn't be able to overtake him. At this speed, it would take him only two or three days to cross the entire Tang kingdom!

At dusk, he arrived at the Zhentian canyon.

The scene before him was just the same as it was the day he had first come to the Zhentian canyon. Several young Wudao experts had gathered there in order to climb up the canyon and enter the sect.

When they saw Long Yu coming from outside and climbing up the canyon effortlessly, they started envying him.

"Well, this Zhentian canyon is so hard to climb; I don't think I would be able to get admission in Zhentian Sect. Are there any other great sects beside Zhentian Sect?"

"I have heard that the Imperial Chu clan plans to open an institute inside the Royal Palace. Anyone who gets an admission there would be taught the core laws of all the seven sects, including the core law of Zhentian sect."

"If that happens, not only Zhentian sect but all the seven sects of the Tang kingdom will decline."

A group of people chattered among themselves loud enough to make Long Yu hear what they were talking about.

Long Yu wouldn't have cared about them, but hearing what they just said made him sneer.

He stepped down the canyon and walked towards them: "Even if Zhentian Sect declined, losers like you will never hold the qualifications to enter Zhentian sect."

They could never join Zhentian sect as this was no place for trivial people like them!

After venting out his anger, Long Yu climbed up the Zhentian canyon alone, leaving behind an infuriated crowd!

Through the Zhentian canyon, he finally reached the entrance of Zhentian sect, finally away from those irksome people.

As Long Yu lifted his eyes after standing up, he found Old White waiting for him, laughing.

“So you have finally come back to the sect! I was waiting here to inform you that Bai Hang has been looking for you everywhere. He intends to challenge you.”

Old White said with a smile, rubbing his beard.

Bai Hang?

Long Yu recalled. Wasn't this Bai Hang the second core disciple of Zhentian sect?

He had earlier encountered him in the Ling Clan villa!

Why did Bai Hang want to challenge him?

The last time he had seen him, Bai Hang was already at the peak of Zhenling 2nd layer. As three or four months had passed since then, he must have reached Zhenling 3rd layer!

But such a cultivation level held no place in Long Yu's eyes!

Chapter – 161 Crushed gently

Bai Hang, with a cultivation level of Zhenling 3rd layer, was the second core disciple of Zhentian Sect!

Although Long Yu was only at Zhenling 2nd layer and didn't even rank high among the core disciples, his strength had increased recently while everyone else believed that he was dead since he didn't come back to the sect for a long time.

It was only some time ago that everyone heard that Long Yu had died inside the Heavenly Thunder reservoir, but now he was standing before them, alive and kicking!

By challenging Long Yu, Bai Hang had become the centre of attention for all disciples.

Even though it was time for dinner, several disciples had preferred to skip their meal and had gathered around the 'Resort to Violence' field to watch Bai Hang and Long Yu fight!

Since it was a fight between two powerful core disciples, it had caught the attention of every single person present in Zhentian Sect.

.....

Zhentian Sect, Resort to Violence field.

Long Yu was standing inside the field, wearing a plain grey cotton robe, with his Qian dragon spear hung on his back. He looked calm and confident.

Opposite him, Bai Hang was standing, wearing a white robe. A low grade spiritual level battle weapon – a long sword hung from his waist. He was standing gracefully with a composed complexion on his face.

“Long Yu, I never expected that you would actually accept my challenge.”

Bai Hang said with a smile.

From the way he spoke, no one could say that he was bearing some malicious intentions.

“We, being fellow disciples, can learn a lot from each other. How could I refuse such an opportunity?”

Long Yu narrowed his eyes and continued: “But what I’m unable to understand is, Brother Bai Hang, why did you want to challenge me?”

Hearing these words, a fierce colour flashed through Bai Hang’s eyes for a moment but soon disappeared.

“Some time ago I heard that you obtained the most precious treasure when we all had visited the Ling Clan villa, and now I want to obtain that precious object from you for Brother Huayi Lun.....”

Bai Hang said with a smile.

He was talking about the lunar tablet!

Long Yu almost froze on the spot.

The very next moment he figured out how this Bai Hang knew about the lunar tablet – it must be Yu Qianning who had spread the news to everyone!

When he was travelling towards the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir, Yu Qianning must have discovered that he was using the power of lunar tablet and must have told all his rivals when she returned.

The news certainly had its consequences as Long Yu would have to face adverse situations now!

The challenge of Bai Hang was a small matter and could be resolved easily, but in the future, Long Yu would have to face such situations constantly because of the lunar tablet.

“Brother Long Yu, if I win the combat, do you agree upon handing your treasure to me?”

Bai Hang said lightly: “Brother Huayi Lun has always been so gracious to me. It’s the least I can do to repay the favours he has bestowed upon me.”

“If you win, I will give it to you.”

Long Yu chuckled, without looking towards Bai Hang.

This Bai Hang was always busy expressing his gratitude towards Huayi Lun, but Long Yu could easily detect the greed lurking in Bai Hang’s eyes.

If he obtained the lunar tablet, he would never give it to Huayi Lun!

After all, Huayi Lun would never care about Bai Hang even if he gifted him the lunar tablet.

Bai Hang was such a hypocrite!

Long Yu thought to himself after judging the whole situation as Bai Hang looked at him.

“It seems that Brother Long Yu is very confident of his strength.”

Bai Hang could see that Long Yu had not paid any special attention to him and for this he secretly hated him, but didn't show anything on his face: “As a fellow apprentice, I must take the advice of Brother Long Yu to enhance my strength like him.”

“You are always welcome.”

Long Yu said calmly: “I will attack first. Brother Bai Hang, are you ready?”

“Yes, I'm ready.”

Bai Hang, full of self-confidence, puffed his chest as he grabbed his long sword.

“Zhentian Sun!”

Behind Long Yu, the Zhentian Sun congealed immediately, releasing the tyrannical pressure of the Zhentian domain that had spread all over the ‘Resort to violence’ field.

This changed the complexion of Bai Hang immediately.

Zhentian Domain!

So tyrannical!

Bai Hang was looking at Long Yu as he realised that in spite of being at a lower cultivation level of Zhenling 2nd layer, Long Yu had comprehended Zhentian domain, and in this regard, he was stronger than Bai Hang!

As for Bai Hang, while he had a cultivation level of Zhenling 3rd layer, he had only been able to comprehend the Zhentian mood.

He congealed his sword Zhenling that was releasing the Zhentian mood, resisting Long Yu's Zhentian domain!

At this moment, a very strong burst of Zhentian domain erupted in the field suddenly.

If an ordinary person would have stepped inside the Resort to Violence field, they must have instantly been crushed by this extreme pressure, which was a result of the clash between Zhentian mood and Zhentian domain.

“Zhentian spear tactics, numerous spear shadows!”

Long Yu waved his Qian dragon spear and released numerous spear shadows that charged towards Bai Hang.

Bai Hang slashed his sword, releasing a great pressure from the heavens with which he intended to crush the spear shadows launched by Long Yu. His Tianwei sword tactics clashed with Long Yu’s Zhentian spear tactics and a great amount of energy erupted again!

“Kill ten thousand people!”

Long Yu grabbed his Qian dragon spear again and condensed his inexhaustible killing intention on it.

Bai Hang had not grabbed his sword again yet and just when he grabbed his sword, Long Yu attacked him!

Boom!

A loud explosion-like sound was heard by everyone as Long Yu launched his spear along with the hidden power of the Thunder charm. As his spear clashed with Bai Hang’s low grade spiritual level sword, it immediately broke into a hundred pieces!

“Lamella touch, even a touch can kill!”

Long Yu didn’t give him even the slightest chance to escape as he now launched his spear towards Bai Hang’s sword Zhenling.

The destructive strength of the Thunder charm was terrifying!

Bai Hang had not even recovered from the damage that had been inflicted by Long Yu upon his sword when Long Yu completely damaged his Zhenling too!

Since Bai Hang’s Zhenling was not an entity, an ordinary Zhenling like his was

easily damaged by Long Yu.

“You lost.”

Long Yu said lightly, walking step by step towards Bai Hang.

The tyrannical pressure of the Zhentian domain released by Long Yu’s Zhentian Sun had completely suppressed Bai Hang already!

Since Long Yu had already damaged his Sword Zhenling as well as broken his long sword, Bai Hang had no means to face Long Yu. The immense pressure that the Zhentian domain had exerted on him made him sweat heavily.

He knew that he lost to Long Yu.

He was defeated within a few moments!

This made it clear that Long Yu’s strength was much more than Bai Hang’s. Otherwise it would have been too difficult for Long Yu to face Bai Hang, let alone shatter his sword and damage his Zhenling.

Long Yu had finished the fight by using just three moves one after another in a matter of a few seconds, defeating Bai Hang with complete ease.

Each of the Zhentian sect disciples that had been surrounding the field didn’t know how to react now.

When Bai Hang had pulled out his long sword and congealed sword Zhenling, they were sure that victory was his. But Long Yu not only shattered his sword but also damaged his Zhenling and that too within a few moments.

How could he be so quick?

Originally, all of them had expected it to be a fierce combat among two equally powerful opponents but were sure that in the end, Bai Hang would emerge victorious. After all, Bai Hang had a higher cultivation level than Long Yu.

However, the present situation had overthrown their guess!

Long Yu’s strength was so terrifying that in spite of being at Zhenling 2nd layer, he thoroughly defeated an opponent who was a layer above!

“No wonder why none of the Elders had come to watch the fight.”

“Ah! The Elders were already aware of Long Yu’s increased strength and that’s

why they didn't show any interest in watching the fight."

"This Long Yu has grown so strong now that I believe he is as strong as Brother Bu Xing now!"

The other Zhentian disciples talked incessantly about Long Yu.

But Long Yu didn't pay any attention to them.

The main reason he had accepted Bai Hang's challenge was that he was already sure that this won't take up much of his time.

Old White had told him that all the Elders were waiting for him in the restricted area of bamboo grove to discuss with him the events of the past.

Long Yu also realised that all the Elders, including Old White, were well aware of his strength and thus had no interest in his fight with Bai Hang.

Yan Huanmo had informed everyone at the sect about Long Yu. Although she herself had gone to the Imperial city, she had sent a pigeon to the sect with her message.

It was a common practice to use pigeons to send messages.

Long Yu left the Resort to violence field and flapped his lunar wings to use the psychic level martial technique, lunar flight.

It was not that Long Yu was stuck in some problem, but still he chose to use Lunar flight in order to rush past the sierra at a great pace, saving his time. However, he must be careful while using this technique as even the slightest of carelessness could make him fall from a great height.

When he reached the bamboo grove, the sun had already hid itself behind the mountains and the night was fast approaching.

Long Yu was startled when he sensed that a number of people were waiting for him there!

Baiyun Zhong, Old White, Old Black, Yu Shuiyun, Bu Xing, Li Bufan, Yu Shengshi – more than twelve Elders, the Sovereign of the sect and the first core disciple were waiting for him inside the bamboo grove.

"Sovereign! The Elders! Brother Bu Xing!"

Long Yu greeted them all with a smile.

He could clearly sense that Baiyun Zhong, Old White, Bu Xing – all of them bore a warm feeling for him in their hearts. They truly cared for him!

“Welcome back, Long Yu!”

Old White curled his lips into a wide smile, still stroking his long white beard.

“Brother Long Yu, all the Elders received messages from the pigeons sent by Elder Yan Huanmo. She said that you have turned so strong that you can single-handedly beat a Zhenling 4th layer powerhouse! We all want to see that for ourselves!”

Bu Xing stepped forward, smiling.

As Bu Xing approached him, Long Yu sensed that he had entered the 4th layer of Zhenling realm and could now congeal his own Zhenling entity!

Chapter 162 Purple glass dan

“Brother Bu Xing, congratulations for stepping up into the next layer.”

Long Yu said with all his heart.

“What nonsense!”

Bu Xing waved his hands as he talked impatiently: “Brother Long Yu, you have enhanced your cultivation level at a great speed since the day I met you. You have gone all the way from Wudao 7th layer to your current cultivation level of Zhenling 2nd layer. But I have trotted at a slow pace, and when I compare myself to you, I feel ashamed of myself.”

“But not today. Today I will settle it, the result will show who’s better than whom!”

Bu Xing said, looking in a provocative manner at Long Yu!

“Ha ha! Long Yu, go ahead. Today, not only Bu Xing but all the Elders as well are curious to see how powerful you have become now.”

Baiyun Zhong chuckled: “So now, as long as Long Yu manages to defeat a person, that person has to gift him a battle weapon or some immortality pill as a reward. I invite everyone to challenge Long Yu!”

Long Yu listened to Baiyun Zhong and wondered to himself.

Why were these Elders treating him like some monster?

However, according to Yan Huanmo’s letters, Long Yu could easily kill Zhenling 4th layer powerhouses, so he in deed was a monster in their eyes!

“I want to go first!”

Bu Xing came forward, smiling wildly: “Brother Long Yu, please! If you defeat me, you can take the top grade spiritual level immortality that I have just obtained as the reward. Is that okay with you?”

“No problem at all.”

Long Yu narrowed his eyes. At one hand, he wanted to test the strength of Bu Xing after he had reached Zhenling 4th layer. On the other hand, he desperately

wanted a strong immortality pill in order to break through the next layer!

He needed to prepare himself for the seven sects competition. If Yu Qianning had reached Zhenling 5th layer, it would be impossible for Long Yu to beat her with his present cultivation level of Zhenling 2nd layer.

He should reach at least Zhenling 3rd layer!

As for congealing a Zhenling entity, it was not an easy feat and would require a lot of time and practice.

When Bu Xing challenged Long Yu, he readily accepted. Baiyun Zhong and the other Elders gathered around them at a distance, vacating the space in the middle for them to begin the fight.

Inside the bamboo grove, as both of the opponents stood facing each other, without showing any leniency towards Long Yu, Bu Xing congealed his black hawk Zhenling entity. The black hawk shrieked loudly and his shriek was reverberated throughout the valley.

“This black hawk Zhenling entity is really very fierce!”

Long Yu felt himself under the tyrannical pressure released by the Zhenling entity.

The black hawk Zhenling entity that was hovering in front of him was now ten times more powerful than it earlier was!

It now seemed to him as if congealing a Zhenling entity was a major checkpoint in enhancing one’s cultivation level. If one could successfully congeal a Zhenling entity, his or her strength increased manifold.

However, the power of this black hawk Zhenling entity was not completely unmatchable.

“Zhentian Sun!”

Long Yu congealed his Zhentian Sun Zhenling which immediately appeared behind him. It shone so brightly that even though it was night, it appeared as if it was day time.

The next moment, a wave of immense pressure of Zhentian domain travelled towards Bu Xing!

“Ah! Zhentian domain? I comprehended the Zhentian domain too sometime ago!”

Bu Xing laughed as he released the tyrannical pressure of Zhentian domain and launched his hawk Zhenling entity to contend with Long Yu’s Zhentian Sun.

“Awakening palm samsara!”

Long Yu blew a punch, releasing the immense power of the Awakening palm samsara, which darted in the forward direction.

But the target of this powerful attack was not Bu Xing but his black hawk Zhenling entity!

Earlier Long Yu had always launched this Awakening palm samsara attack directing towards his opponents. Since this was not a life-threatening situation and was meant only to test Long Yu’s powers, he directed this attack towards the Zhenling entity for the first time!

The power of samsara immediately enveloped the Zhenling entity completely, and to everyone’s surprise, changed it to an ordinary Zhenling!

Awakening palm samsara had done its work pretty well!

Even in the case of a Zhenling entity, its effect was the same!

This sudden transformation from a Zhenling entity to an ordinary Zhenling made the black hawk’s strength decrease by ten times!

“Fierce!”

All the Elders that were present there, including the sovereign of the sect Baiyun Zhong, gaped in awe.

This martial skill displayed by Long Yu was impossible to guard against. Moreover, its effect was so terrific that an opponent with the same cultivation as Long Yu didn’t stand any chance to win against him!

Bu Xing continued to fight Long Yu in a profound manner.

He could clearly sense that the Zhenling entity that he had congealed had now turned into an ordinary Zhenling, with its power reduced by ten times!

The next moment, Long Yu laughed as he grabbed his Qian dragon spear and

released numerous spear shadows towards Bu Xing.

“Tornado spear!”

Bu Xing waved his hands rapidly to congeal a spear which contained the strength of a tornado. The spear countered the spear shadows attack of Long Yu.

The spear shadows and the tornado spear collided with each other with a loud thumping sound.

The tornado spear was a spiritual level martial skill of the Zhentian sect. Although it was not a very powerful attack, the only advantage it had was that it consumed a very small amount of xuan qi as compared to other martial skills.

Depending upon the cultivation level of Bu Xing, his xuan qi level would be replenished very fast by his Dantian. Since he was displaying a martial skill which had low consumption of energy, his xuan qi stock would definitely not dry up.

Hence, the tornado spear was a very popular martial skill among the disciples of the Zhentian sect. It was generally used either to tire out the opponent or to test the opponent’s strength.

The energy consumption of the Zhentian spear tactic was far more than the tornado spear!

Moreover, being at a lower cultivation level, Long Yu’s xuan qi level would not be replenished as fast as Bu Xing’s xuan qi level.

Being the first core disciple of the Zhentian sect, Bu Xing had a lot of experience in combat. Not just Bu Xing, even his black hawk Zhenling entity, which had now degraded to a Zhenling under the effect of the samsara, was far more powerful than any ordinary Zhenling.

His display of talent was not subjected to any alteration even when he faced Long Yu.

“Tornado whirl spear!”

Bu Xing waved his hands and released a huge amount of xuan qi which instantly took the shape of a tornado and charged towards Long Yu!

The tornado soon reached above Long Yu’s head, transformed itself into a

giant spear and dropped from the above to hit Long Yu.

The strong wind caused by the tornado fluttered Long Yu's grey robe violently. However, Long Yu maintained his calm demeanour.

"Lunar wings, psychic level, fly!"

Long Yu immediately flapped his lunar wings and taking full advantage of the strong winds caused by the tornado, he fled out of the range of attack of the tornado whirl spear at an unusually fast speed.

Bu Xing could only see a dark figure flapping its wings and rising above. The very next moment, that dark figure was hovering above him.

"Kill ten thousand people, killing intention condensate!"

Long Yu shouted as he flapped his lunar wings, holding his Qian dragon spear and condensing his strong killing intention on its tip!

"This killing intention....."

Bu Xing's complexion changed as he realised that Long Yu's killing intention had grown stronger. Moreover, Long Yu's Qian dragon spear had condensed the killing intention on its tip, making it stronger!

"Horizon is close!"

Bu Xing moved his feet rapidly as he released 'Horizon is close' skill and retreated a hundred feet away immediately.

However, Long Yu was faster than him!

He flapped his lunar wings again and as it changed his whole body into a streamer, he immediately reached the place where Bu Xing was standing and attacked him with his spear!

"Horizon barrier!"

Bu Xing immediately congealed a horizon barrier to defend himself from the attack launched by Long Yu.

Since he had a cultivation level of Zhenling 4th layer, even though the horizon barrier was an ordinary martial skill, it had quite enhanced defensive abilities when used by Bu Xing.

Long Yu's spear collided with the horizon barrier with a bang, releasing a large amount of killing intention.

However, all of this killing intention was absorbed by the horizon barrier immediately, just like the sea absorbs a pebble without causing a single ripple.

But after absorbing all the killing intention, the horizon barrier reached its limit and crashed the moment Long Yu hit it again with his spear.

"Thunder charm! Lunar mood! Dry marsh mood!"

As Long Yu released the three other world principles that he had comprehended along with the Zhentian mood, Bu Xing was frightened to death.

Since the four world principles had a humungous strength when released together, Bu Xing couldn't think of any defensive technique to save himself from Long Yu's attack and looked helplessly as Long Yu charged with his spear.

"Four moods! It is really surprising! Two of them seem to be the moods of some heavenly tablets of imperial seal level...."

Baiyun Zhong looked serious as he stared at the boys fighting each other, assessing Long Yu's strength deeply.

The powers that Long Yu had displayed while fighting Bu Xing were indeed capable of killing Zhenling 4th layer powerhouse!

But since Bu Xing was the first core disciple of the Zhentian sect, it was impossible for Long Yu to defeat him so easily. The strength of Bu Xing as well as his Zhenling was far more than Long Yu since he was at Zhenling 4th layer.

Just when Long Yu thought he was about to win, Bu Xing dodged his attack as he disappeared from the spot just like a ghost.

"This is an agility type martial skill. It has broken the spell of the intense pressure that my four moods had created!"

Long Yu grabbed his spear and looked all around to find Bu Xing, but he simply couldn't find him.

Bu Xing had disappeared into thin air!

"Fierce, fierce! Brother Long Yu's strength is really extraordinary. I, Bu Xing, is

not an opponent of him.”

Along with these words, Bu Xing abandoned his disappearing act and reappeared in front of Long Yu. “This top grade spiritual level immortality pill, Purple glass dan, is yours now.”

With these words, Bu Xing threw towards Long Yu a small porcelain pot of the immortality pill.

Long Yu subconsciously caught it and said: “Brother Bu Xing, you have not lost the match to me. If you weren’t lenient towards me, I would have been a dead man by now!”

“What good would this pill do to me? The seven sects competition is about to commence, and even if I consumed this pill, I wouldn’t be able to break through the next layer.”

Bu Xing shook his head and said with a smile: “However, if you consume this pill, you can break through to the next layer and then your battle efficiency would match mine. You should not hesitate at all while taking this Purple glass dan.”

Chapter – 163 Lessons from the Elders

Long Yu ultimately accepted the reward of Purple glass Dan.

He could clearly feel that Bu Xing had bestowed upon him such a valuable reward not only to benefit him but to benefit the whole Zhentian sect!

Each seven sect competition had been important to all the seven major sects of the Tang kingdom, but the one which was to commence now was the most important of them all.

Rumour has it that the Prince of the Tang kingdom, Chu Chao Sheng and the sovereign of the Qiansi Sect, Yu Ruan had formed an alliance and had all the six sects in agreement.

If any disciple of the Qiansi Sect won the seven sects competition, all the other sects would have to surrender their core laws to Prince Chu Chao Sheng!

Such being the case, all the six major sects apart from the Qiansi sect had formed a secret alliance and were training their disciples to make them reach at least Zhenling 4th layer. They were also training them with the mysterious jade level Imperial 'Spring and autumn' core law to be at par with Yu Qianning.

In all the six sects, perhaps there was no one who could fight and defeat Yu Qianning!

In such a situation, all the six allied sects were now training their young disciples fiercely and were spending all their training resources on their best powerhouses.

If these sects failed at the seven sects competition, they would have to hand over their core laws to Chu Chao Sheng and this would cause all the six sects to decline.

Standing beside Bu Xing, Old White chuckled.

“Long Yu, your growth has surprised us all. In the upcoming seven sects' competition, only you and Bu Xing stand a chance to defeat Yu Qianning.”

Old White rubbed his beard and said with a kind smile: “My cultivation level is just Zhenling 4th layer, so I wouldn't be able to help you with martial skills. But if you have any questions regarding any immortality pill, feel free to come to me.

This old man knows all about immortality pills and will be happy to help you.”

“Thank you so much, Old White.”

Long Yu held his fist in the other hand to pay respect to Old White and then said: “Old White, I have some corpses of monster beasts. Please have a look at them; perhaps you can concoct some immortality pills with them.”

With these words, Long Yu took out the one corpse of goblin snake and two corpses of dragon monster beast which he had hidden inside his nine hidden dragon mark and threw them in the combat field of the bamboo grove.

Goblin snake!

Several Elders flashed their eyes. They immediately recognised the corpse of the goblin snake and were quite startled with it.

Earlier through the pigeon messengers of Yan Huanmo, they had only known that Long Yu had killed two Zhenling 4th layer powerhouses, including the absconding powerhouse of the Zhentian sect, Wen Ze.

However they did not know that Long Yu had ventured into the Demon valley and had also killed a goblin snake there!

All these Elders, at some point in their youth, had desperately wanted to enhance their cultivation level and hence were fully aware of the dangers one had to face in the Demon valley.

Since Long Yu had managed to kill a goblin snake, it was obvious that his strength was far more than any ordinary Zhenling 4th layer expert.

If Long Yu enhanced his cultivation level to Zhenling 3rd layer, then he stood a fair chance of defeating Yu Qianning!

“The only part of the goblin snake that can be used to concoct immortality pills is its bladder. However, its skin, its fangs etc can be used to manufacture battle weapons.”

Old White explained further: “As for the corpses of the dragon monster beasts, well, they do not hold any significant value since it’s only with their skin one can manufacture battle weapons, but the battle weapons so manufactured would not be too powerful.”

“So that’s how it is.”

Long Yu nodded and continued to inquire: “If I wish to sell the skin and fangs of the goblin snake, the skin of the dragon monster beasts along with the frontal horn of a rock rhino beast, how many crystal coins would these things fetch me?”

He had a big treasure with him. By selling these items, he could get a considerable amount of money which he could later use to buy immortality pills or neidans.

Because of this, he wanted to get an idea of the actual value of these things before he went out to sell them.

Old White would concoct immortality pills day and night and he also used to travel to the Imperial city to buy battle weapons in exchange of the immortality pills that he concocted. His knowledge about these immortality pills and corpses of beasts could be relied upon.

“The bladder of the goblin snake can fetch you a thousand crystal coins. One can concoct a top grade spiritual level immortality pill from it.”

Old White, rubbing his beard, continued to explain further: “The other parts of the goblin snake, like its fangs, can fetch you about five hundred crystal coins. The skin of the dragon monster beasts aren’t of much value – they can fetch you two hundred to three hundred crystal coins each. As for the frontal horn of a rock rhino beast that you just mentioned, well, that can fetch you the highest price of at least two thousand crystal coins!”

Long Yu made his calculations. The body parts of these beasts could fetch him around three thousand crystal coins!

“Old White, please keep this bladder of the goblin snake and concoct immortality pills out of it for me. When I will visit the Imperial city, I will sell them there.”

Long Yu took out the bladder and placed the rest of the corpses inside his nine hidden dragon mark.

Baiyun Zhong, who was watching Long Yu place the corpses inside his nine hidden dragon mark, at once came to know that Long Yu had some storage type

battle weapon with him.

While the other Elders couldn't figure out how Long Yu got one, Baiyun Zhong wondered whether it was a legacy of Long Zaitian that his son was carrying now.

He did not know the whereabouts of Long Zaitian, all he knew was that Long Yu was growing just like him.....

"I can concoct immortality pills from this bladder of goblin snake within three days time. I will give you the pills before you leave for the Imperial city."

Old White received the bladder of the goblin snake and turned around to stand aside.

The usually uncommunicative Old Black stepped forward.

"Martial skill, peaceful soul!"

After uttering these four words, Old Black shot a punch towards Long Yu!

Long Yu was anticipating that Old Black might attack him, but when he saw the fist approaching him, his complexion changed.

Although this punch was not a profound martial skill and was only a low grade fist skill of Zhentian sect, but when released by Old Black, it contained immense power!

Old Black had released the punch with all the might a Zhenling 2nd layer expert could put in his punch, still the force of the fist made Long Yu withdraw a few steps in order to dodge the attack.

"The grade of a martial skill, no doubt, is important. But it is the amount of practice for that skill that imparts the actual power to it."

Old White explained to Long Yu: "This move of Old Black, the crane dance fist, although is an ordinary low grade boxing technique, but Old Black has practised it to the perfection level!"

Comprehending a martial skill to the perfection level, be it an ordinary fist technique, imparted an abominable strength to the skill which made Long Yu to retreat and changed his complexion.

He considered himself to be quite strong as he had comprehended a variety of

martial skills.

However, now he realised that promoting the comprehension level of a martial skill was of no less importance than enhancing one's cultivation level.

The perfection level of an ordinary martial skill had forced Long Yu to retreat, then it could be easily imagined how formidable someone's strength could be if he comprehended the top grade martial skills to the perfection level!

Long Yu was immediately reminded of Elder Yu Shuiyun's disciple, Lu Guanming.

Lu Guanming had practised the Imperial rock martial skill to the perfection level. This dark faced boy had practised only two martial skills at that time – one was the Imperial rock and the other was the same as Long Yu – the demon tyrant form.

At that time, in spite of having a cultivation level of Wudao eighth layer, Lu Guanming could easily compete with a martial expert of Wudao ninth layer. Even in the Teng snake abyss, he had been able to successfully resist the law enforcement elder of Zhenling realm for some time without much difficulty!

This could only happen when a martial expert had comprehended a martial skill to the perfection level. Unfortunately, comprehending a martial skill to the perfection level was no easy feat; it needed much more effort and time.

Even Long Yu had wanted to comprehend his martial skills to the perfection level, but he never got enough time to achieve that.

Certainly, if someone wanted to promote his comprehension level of a skill, apart from isolating himself and practising, one could also contend with others to achieve it.

In fact, a martial expert's cultivation as well as comprehension level enhanced manifold during a life threatening situation. But who would prefer to endanger his life constantly just for the sake of enhancing his cultivation and comprehension levels?

Old Black, who usually didn't speak much, was one of the most powerful Elders of Zhentian sect. His strength was much more than that of a Zhenling 4th layer powerhouse like Old White.

But just like Long Yu, even Old White couldn't determine the exact cultivation level of Old Black.

They could sense that Old Black had cultivation level of Zhenling 6th layer or higher and that he could successfully congeal a Zhenling entity!

Old Black, undoubtedly, was the strongest Elder of Zhentian sect!

At this moment, Old Black continued to attack Long Yu without any pause.

Although he was displaying the strength of an ordinary Zhenling 2nd layer expert at the moment, since he had comprehended the martial skill to the perfection level, his incessant attacks spared no opportunity for Long Yu to counter the attacks.

He was a genuine master!

Long Yu realised that he would have to focus on enhancing his comprehension level during his future practice.

Old Black's initiative benefitted Long Yu greatly. It seemed as if he had opened the doors of some different world!

But just then, the Elder who had earlier been fighting Yan Huanmo, Elder Yu Shengshi, came forward.

Yu Shengshi was a middle aged man and was wearing a white robe. He grabbed his sword as he was a skilled swordsman.

"In this seven sects competition, the main competitor of Zhentian sect would be Yu Qianning. But we should not neglect the fact that there would be other disciples as well, hailing from the other five sects."

Yu Shengshi said with a kind smile: "Among the seven sects of the Tang kingdom, one is the 'Raining Sword' Sect. The strength of the Raining Sword sect is very high and we have to be canny of the disciples of this sect apart from focusing on Yu Qianning. When the time comes, they may not help us in defeating Yu Qianning....."

As he stopped talking, he aimed his sword at Long Yu and launched an attack!

Long Yu immediately grabbed his Qian dragon spear in order to resist the blow.

He observed Yu Shengshi and tried to learn from him. He had perhaps attacked Long Yu in order to familiarize him with the sword type martial skills.

When a person practises a sword type martial skill, he has to be highly agile and quick. Moreover, the sword type martial skills' power is usually far more than any other martial skill of the same level.

Yu Shengshi was followed by another disciple of Baiyun Zhong, Li Bufan.

.....

One after another, all the Elders attacked Long Yu and after teaching him some lesson, rewarded him some immortality pills or neidans. Long Yu was quite flattered with such a treatment.

No disciple in the history of Zhentian sect had received such type of special treatment!

Even Bu Xing had never been sought after by so many Elders.

However, that evening, Long Yu got to learn so much from all the Elders and discussed so much with them that it deepened his insight on the martial arts.

He had not broken through the bottleneck for quite some time and was now ready to breakthrough.

This breakthrough would take him to the next layer of Zhenling realm!

Chapter 164 – The next level of intoxicated hell

Later that night.

Long Yu was sitting in his bamboo hut, located inside the bamboo grove restricted area, and was ready to absorb the various immortality pills that the Elders had bestowed upon him.

Presently, all the sects of the Tang kingdom, apart from Qiansi Sect, had their hopes rested on Zhentian Sect and the Zhentian sect Elders had invested all their resources in Long Yu!

During the seven sects competition, if he wouldn't defeat Yu Qianning due to any reason, he would cause great disappointment to Zhentian sect as well as the other sects!

“Old Black has bestowed upon me a top-grade spiritual level immortality pill, Elder Yu Shengshi has gifted me four spiritual level immortality pills, Elder Li Bufan has rewarded me with a top-grade spiritual level immortality pill.....”

Long Yu was counting the immortality pills that he had received from the Elders and was quite content in his heart.

Long Yu couldn't afford to disappoint Zhentian sect during the upcoming seven sects competition. After all, he had always considered them as his family!

The immortality pills rewarded by the Elders, along with the neidans and immortality pills that he had brought from Hun Yin City and the Demon valley were more than sufficient for Long Yu to break through and enter the Zhenling third layer!

“While stepping up from Zhenling second layer into Zhenling third layer, one doesn't have to go through a bottleneck. As long as one can meet the need of the xuan qi, he can promote himself to the next layer. With this increased xuan qi level, one needs to quench his meridians as well as the Zhenling in his Dantian.....”

Long Yu wondered at the presence of the second nine hidden dragon Zhenling in his Dantian.

Long Yu refrained from using the powers imparted to him by the nine hidden

dragon mark and limited himself to only two techniques of the nine hidden dragon mark – intoxicated hell and the awakening palm samsara. He didn't dare to release the nine hidden dragon Zhenling as he was well aware of the tyrannical power that it contained.

Since he could not release the Zhenling but had to quench it in order to get promoted to the next layer, the process was going to be too painful for him.

Needless to say, the xuan qi needed to step into Zhenling fourth layer would be far more than the xuan qi needed to step into the third layer of Zhenling realm.

Quenching his Zhentian Sun wouldn't be an issue for Long Yu.

But quenching the nine hidden dragon Zhenling, without congealing it, would cause him a lot of trouble, more than he could ever imagine!

“Fortunately, I do not have to comprehend the Lunar domain and the Thunder charm to the spiritual level. Otherwise, promoting me to the next layer would've been even more difficult.”

Long Yu thought to himself as he began to absorb several immortality pills at once to quench his heavenly arteries as well as his Zhenlings.

Soon afterward, his heartbeat resonated with his meridians as he started quenching his body as well as his heavenly arteries and was now about to enter the third layer of Zhenling realm.

He could clearly feel that there was just one more hurdle to pass after which he would be able to comprehend the laws of heaven and earth which could boost his strength to a great extent!

After clearing this hurdle, he would enter Zhenling 4th layer!

However, he felt that he needed to focus on his present cultivation right now.

“Zhentian Sun, condense!”

Since Long Yu had consumed several immortality pills and neidans at once, this had increased his xuan qi level to a great extent. As he continued quenching his Zhentian Sun Zhenling with this rich xuan qi, he noticed that the Zhenling was now consolidating its form, gradually stepping towards becoming an entity.

As the Zhenling became more and more consolidated, not only its brightness

increased but its ability to release Zhentian domain pressure also increased manifold.

Finally, at the daybreak when Long Yu was done with quenching his Zhentian Sun to the level of Zhenling third layer, he prepared himself to start quenching his second Zhenling – the nine hidden dragon Zhenling.

He had half of the immortality pills and neidans left in his hand; these were going to help him in quenching his second Zhenling.

If he consumed the immortality pills under ordinary conditions, he would have been able to absorb only thirty percent of the xuan qi released by them. However, because of his nine hidden dragon mark, he could absorb these immortality pills and enhance his cultivation level at a faster rate than any ordinary martial expert.

Just like the Zhentian Sun, the nine hidden dragon Zhenling would also step towards becoming an entity by solidifying its figure. When Long Yu would be able to congeal Zhenling entities, his strength would grow by leaps and bounds!

“The enhancement of cultivation level and quenching the zhenlings to convert them into Zhenling entities would consume a great amount of xuan qi. Moreover, there is a bottleneck, which I wouldn’t be able to break through with my current strength... I have to resort to other methods to enhance my battle efficiency.”

As Long Yu recollected the lessons that had been imparted to him by the Elders last night, his eyes flashed fiercely.

It was just a month’s time that he had for practice before the seven sects competition commenced. During this time, he had to grasp as many martial skills as he could and comprehend them to perfection. He also had to enhance his comprehension of the Lunar mood and the Thunder charm.

Meanwhile, various Zhentian elders would also come and fight with him in order to simulate more practical knowledge of the seven sects competition, training him in choosing the right attacking technique at the right time during a combat.

So within three days, Long Yu had upgraded his first skill of the nine hidden

dragon mark – the intoxicated hell.

The intoxicated hell technique had originally been at peak level. Using this technique, Long Yu could release a burst of nine hidden dragon qi and hence this technique was very powerful!

After practicing incessantly for three days, Long Yu had finally managed to upgrade his skill, which meant that this technique was now even more formidable than ever!

Although there was still a gap of two levels between Long Yu's current comprehension level of this technique and the perfection level, but being a top grade martial skill, the skill imparted a terrific strength even if someone managed to comprehend it at the most basic level.

At this moment, Long Yu launched his fist and condensed nine hidden dragon qi, summoning the intoxicated hell!

The intoxicated hell technique condensed the nine hidden dragon qi in such a way that no one could detect it. The nine hidden dragon qi would then seep into the enemy's body, corroding all his meridians and incapacitating him.

Long Yu had just enhanced his comprehension of intoxicated hell technique, so he decided to use this new found strength during his combat with Elder Yu Shengshi. As soon as he released intoxicated hell, the nine hidden dragon qi seeped through Elder Yu Shengshi's body and started corroding his meridians, making him unable to launch any counterattack.

If Long Yu hadn't withdrawn the attack willingly, this technique could have killed Elder Yu Shengshi there and then!

He had just returned to the sect a few days ago, and within three to five days, his battle efficiency had increased by leaps and bounds and he was on his way to becoming a formidable powerhouse of the Zhentian sect.

It was evident that this wouldn't have been possible without the special attention and care that he had been receiving from the Elders of the sect.

After stepping into Zhenling third layer and enhancing his comprehension of the intoxicated hell skill, Long Yu's strength had indeed gone through a drastic change.

Defeating Long Yu was not an easy task for any of the Elders; even the strongest Elder of the Zhentian sect, Old Black, who had a cultivation level of Zhenling fifth layer, had a tough time fighting with Long Yu.

Clearly, if Long Yu ever had to face a Zhenling fifth layer powerhouse in a combat, it would not be an easy feat for the opponent.

Long Yu didn't regard a Zhenling fourth layer powerhouse to be his opponent now as there was no way a Zhenling 4th layer powerhouse could defeat him. Unless the person resorted to some evil techniques, Long Yu's victory was assured. Moreover, such people were very less in the entire Tang Kingdom.

"It's been almost five days since I returned to the Sect, I haven't visited the Feng Clan members yet..."

With this thought, Long Yu immediately opened his eyes, stood up and rushed towards the disciple's residence of the Zhentian sect.

He had just made a breakthrough in his comprehension of intoxicated hell technique which had consumed a lot of his energy. Due to this reason, it would have been impossible for him to enhance his comprehension of some other technique for now. He decided to utilize this spare time to visit the Feng Clan members who had joined the Zhentian sect.

Taking a break from the closed-door practice, Long Yu felt quite refreshed.

He had already inquired – most of the members of the Feng clan had returned back to Yu Guan city upon Feng Longsong's return to the Feng Clan mansion. After all, Feng Longsong was the head of the new Feng clan and could provide some security to its members.

However, three members of the new Feng clan had chosen to stay and were now disciples of the Zhentian sect.

One of them, Feng Yuxin, was now a disciple of Old White and was learning the art of alchemy from him.

Besides Feng Yuxin, two other members of the new Feng clan, named Feng Hao and Feng Xiaofei had also joined the Zhentian sect.

These two had joined the Zhentian sect to accompany Feng Yuxin.

Long Yu didn't know much about Feng Yuxin and Feng Hao, but he remembered Feng Xiaofei and was greatly touched by his compassion and righteousness.

Feng Hao had earlier been at Wudao eighth layer. However, Long Yu had no idea of his present cultivation level.

As for Feng Xiaofei, Long Yu was certain that he would have become a core disciple by now.

Long Yu thought to himself – it was not a difficult task for a Wudao eighth layer disciple to become a core disciple of Zhentian sect, and if the boys had really progressed in compliance with his expectations, then he could easily find them in the core disciples' residential area.

When Long Yu reached the core disciples' residential area, he couldn't find Feng Hao and Feng Xiaofei there!

But then someone told Long Yu about him.

“Brother Long Yu, not long ago, Feng Hao and Feng Xiaofei had planned to challenge a core disciple in order to defeat him and become core disciples themselves. But they ended up being provoked by a core disciple named Su Biaoxin.”

The disciple was a little nervous while talking to Long Yu and continued talking in a low tone: “Although they had already reached Wudao ninth layer, but how could they possibly defeat Su Biaoxin who was a Zhenling realm expert?”

“You mean to say that after getting provoked by Su Biaoxin, both of them chose to challenge him?”

Long Yu wrinkled his brows.

Feng Hao and Feng Xiaofei were quite intelligent boys; they could differentiate between what was right and what was wrong. But if they had really done anything like that, they had been too impulsive.

“Yes, Brother Long Yu. Therefore, Feng Hao and Feng Xiaofei must be residing at the outer disciples' residence. They do not reside here...”

The disciple continued informing Long Yu: “Moreover, before losing to Su

Biaoxin, they had made a bet with him and hence were forced to hand over their battle weapons as well as the rewards they had received from the sect during those three months to Su Biaoxin!”

“This is absurd!”

Long Yu said coldly.

Although he had not known Feng Hao and Feng Xiaofei too well, but he was sure that these boys wouldn’t do anything that would stir up some unnecessary trouble.

While provoking them, Su Biaoxin would definitely have used some evil technique which made them lose their minds!

Long Yu immediately rushed inside the core disciples’ residence without any hesitation.

He must clear the matter with Su Biaoxin.

No matter what had happened earlier, he couldn’t let any of the disciples from the Feng clan to suffer any injustice inside Zhentian sect!

Although Su Biaoxin had been able to provoke Feng Hao and Feng Xiaofie, Long Yu couldn’t be provoked by anyone so easily!

Chapter – 165 Feng Yuxin

Soon afterward, Long Yu arrived at the residence of the disciples.

A lot of people here knew about Feng Hao and Feng Xiaofei and kept praising them unceasingly.

Since the day they had joined the Zhentian sect three months ago, they had helped numerous disciples there and had even saved the lives of some disciples who ventured into the Teng snake's abyss.

At the mention of Su Biaoxin, all of the disciples expressed great hate!

"Brother Long Yu, it's good that you came back. Su Biaoxin is really hateful. You must teach him a lesson!"

One of the disciples led him to the cottage of Feng Hao and Feng Xiaofei, clenching his jaw: "Relying upon his cultivation level of Zhenling realm, he not only provoked Feng Hao and Feng Xiaofei, he also dared to provoke Sister Feng Yuxin! His behavior is unacceptable."

"Provoked Sister Feng Yuxin?"

Long Yu wrinkled his brows.

"Since Sister Feng Yuxin is a disciple of Old White, Feng Hao and Feng Xiaofei had to fight for her."

The disciple explained.

"Oh, I see."

Long Yu narrowed his eyes. He really wanted to see who this Su Biaoxin was and how powerful he was.

"Brother Long Yu, the cottage in front of you is the residence of Brother Feng Hao and Brother Feng Xiaofei. I take my leave now."

The disciple turned around after saying goodbye.

Long Yu looked on and found a small cottage in front of him. The size of the cottage somewhat surprised him because it had space sufficient only for a single person. However, now, both Feng Hao and Feng Xiaofei had to live there.

It was evident that inside Zhentian sect, the Law Enforcement Elders were trying to suppress Feng Hao and Feng Xiaofei!

“The residences of the disciples are governed by the Law Enforcement Elders. Is Su Biaoxin appointed by them as the prefect?”

Long Yu thought to himself as he walked towards the cottage.

He saw Feng Hao and Feng Xiaofei busy with their morning practice. Both of them really were Wudao ninth layer experts now and were just one step away from being able to congeal a Zhenling of their own.

But this one step was one of the most crucial events in the world of martial arts and most of the people were unable to break through this bottleneck!

Feng Hao and Feng Xiaofei were both seventeen years old and had already reached Wudao ninth layer. Long Yu believed that these two wouldn't face any problem in breaking through the bottleneck.

Long Yu watched on and noticed that both of them were learning from each other and had successfully comprehended various martial skills, including xuan wind destroyer and imperial rock technique.

Among them, Feng Hao had comprehended defensive type martial skills, while Feng Xiaofei had been practicing agility type martial skills.

Both of them had enhanced their proficiency of the skills by leaps and bounds. In fact, they both had comprehended various martial skills to the peak level.

Such proficiency was not found among the outer disciples, so in a way, they were already equal to the core disciples.

Because of Su Biaoxin's provocation they were still the outer disciples of Zhentian sect and were unable to practice in the martial pavilion behind the mountain.

“Feng Hao, Feng Xiaofei!”

Long Yu stepped inside the cottage and greeted them.

“Brother Long Yu!”

As soon as they saw Long Yu, they immediately stopped their practice and ran

towards him with happy faces.

“I knew you are not dead. How can a person of your talent die so easily?”

Feng Xiaofei chuckled and hugged Long Yu.

Feng Hao was calmer than Feng Xiaofei and approached Long Yu with slower steps as compared to Feng Xiaofei.

They both greeted Long Yu who in turn asked them both about Su Biaoxin.

Soon, Long Yu knew the whole matter.

Feng Hao and Feng Xiaofei had never known Su Biaoxin until the day Su Biaoxin, who was the 3rd core disciple of Zhentian sect, approached Feng Yuxin and tried to win her over using his evil techniques.

At that time, Feng Yuxin was not in Old White's pavilion but was present inside the martial pavilion with Feng Hao and Feng Xiaofei.

As soon as Su Biaoxin saw the beautiful Feng Yuxin, he tried to pursue her.

Unfortunately for him, Feng Yuxin held no regard for him and he was naturally rejected by her.

Left bitter with rejection, Su Biaoxin resorted to using his evil tricks inside the pavilion thinking that he would be able to manipulate and win over Feng Yuxin.

Naturally, Feng Hao and Feng Xiaofei blocked his attacks before he could harm Feng Yuxin.

Su Biaoxin wanted to overpower them and capture Feng Yuxin, but just then Elder Li Bufan, who governed the martial pavilion, arrived there and prevented the conflict.

Obviously, Su Biaoxin couldn't fight Elder Li Bufan. This forced him to be patient and he retreated, but still he held a grudge against all of them.

After this incident, Su Biaoxin created trouble for Feng Hao and Feng Xiaofei wherever they went and was successful in provoking them and making them to bet.

Unfortunately, Feng Hao and Feng Xiaofei were not Long Yu!

Although both of them were extremely talented, unlike Long Yu, they didn't

have the nine hidden dragon mark to help them achieve the impossible. Being just in Wudao 9th layer, they were defeated one after another by Su Biaoxin.

Fortunately, they both admitted their defeat after assessing the circumstances; otherwise, they might have lost their cultivation as well as their lives!

“So, has this Su Biaoxin troubled Feng Yuxin after you both lost to him?”

Long Yu asked.

Long Yu had to teach this Su Biaoxin a good lesson!

“Of course, he has.”

Feng Xiaofei replied bitterly: “That wicked Su Biaoxin always tries to trouble Feng Yuxin. Fortunately, she hadn’t left Old White’s pavilion since that day, so he never had an actual chance to harm her.”

“Call Feng Yuxin! We are going to meet that Su Biaoxin. It’s been three months since he seized your sect rewards. Now it’s time for him to return what is rightfully yours.”

Long Yu turned around to leave the cottage. Since the day he joined Zhentian sect, he had experienced bullying and didn’t want the same to happen to his junior clan members.

He never expected that Feng Yuxin would be the reason behind this conflict. He had never met her but was now certain that she was such a beauty that could cause the downfall of an entire nation!

As the saying goes – femme fatale!

While she was living in Yu Guan city, Feng Yuxin was admired by several martial experts of the other clans and here in Zhentian sect, she was admired by Su Biaoxin who had caused such an upheaval inside the sect for her.

Certainly, it was not at all Feng Yuxin’s fault.

Long Yu was in no mood to forgive anyone who tried to trouble Feng Yuxin.

Not only her, but anyone who troubled the members of Feng clan was now Long Yu’s enemy, and Long Yu never held any soft corner for his enemies,

especially bullies!

Even if he had to fight the whole Zhentian sect, he would happily do it for safeguarding the Feng clan members.

Su Biaoxin was nothing more than an ordinary martial expert in Long Yu's eyes!

Immediately, Feng Hao and Feng Xiaofei followed Long Yu's orders. One of them accompanied Long Yu, while the other hastily climbed up the Zhentian canyon, making his way to Old White's pavilion to call Feng Yuxin.

Having Long Yu by his side, Feng Xiaofei was highly excited. The oppression that he and Feng Hao had suffered at the hands of Su Biaoxin for three whole months had made him bitter. It surely was the payback time!

It was known to everyone at Zhentian sect that just a few days ago, Long Yu had defeated Bai Hang in the 'Resort to violence' field, so everyone had a fair idea of how powerful Long Yu was.

Needless to say, with Long Yu's aid, it would be extremely easy for Feng Xiaofei and Feng Hao to give Su Biaoxin a taste of his own medicine!

Soon afterward, Feng Xiaofei could be seen leading a girl down the Zhentian canyon.

That young girl, clad in a pale yellow dress, had immaculate facial features and her big eyes shone brightly.

Obviously, she was excited as she was about to meet Long Yu!

Feng Yuxin was just like a delicate, fragrant flower. Just a look at her could fill anyone's heart with happiness.

As soon as she saw Long Yu, her whole face lit up.

Long Yu was a remarkable name in the whole Feng clan. Since the day he had defeated Feng Yun and had prevented the clan heads of the three other major clans of Yu Guan city from taking hold of the Feng clan, Feng Yuxin had remembered his name.

Long Yu!

Unfortunately, she had never obtained a chance to catch even a single glimpse

of Long Yu.

Although Long Yu had visited Yu Guan city again after that incident, but at that time Feng Yuxin had already joined Zhentian sect and hence she missed the chance of meeting Long Yu.

But now, she was finally going to meet the fabled Long Yu!

“Wudao ninth layer? Good!”

Long Yu thought to himself, nodding his head. Upon seeing Feng Yuxin, Long Yu had quickly assessed her cultivation level.

Feng Yuxin was just sixteen years old and was subjected to ordinary resources. Still, she had managed to step into Wudao ninth layer. She had clearly surpassed her peers!

Even Feng Yao was not talented enough when compared to Feng Yuxin!

Feng Yuxin’s talent had always been buried deep inside her during her days at Feng clan mansion. But now, in Zhentian sect, she finally revealed her talent.

“Brother Long Yu!”

Feng Yuxin hurried towards Long Yu and greeted him.

“Feng Yuxin, since now you are here, we are ready to go.”

Long Yu nodded with a smile: “It’s been long enough since this Su Biaoxin has been rampaging inside Zhentian sect. Perhaps he has a powerful backer. But I don’t care! I want to see what makes this Su Biaoxin so arrogant.”

Long Yu’s self-confidence was so contagious that it immediately boosted the confidence of Feng Hao, Feng Xiaofei and Feng Yuxin simultaneously.

Brother Long Yu would easily defeat Su Biaoxin!

Feng Xiaofei recollected whatever had happened to them during the last three months – all the insults, getting bullied by Su Biaoxin, Su Biaoxin looking at Feng Yuxin in that disgusting way. All this angered him beyond any measure.

Finally, now was the time to let that anger erupt!

“Although Brother Long Yu is helping us this time, we should not depend upon him entirely. He may not be around the next time someone troubles us. To

defend ourselves from getting bullied, we have to enhance our own strength.”

Feng Hao and Feng Xiaofei had the same thought on their minds.

Because of her tranquil and gentle nature, this thought did not surface in Feng Yuxin’s mind. Moreover, she was far more talented than her peers and had actually surpassed Liao Lele in the art of alchemy.

The four of them marched towards the core disciples’ residence. Everyone was surprised to see Long Yu there, but as soon as they noticed Feng Hao, Feng Xiaofei and Feng Yuxin following him, they immediately understood that Long Yu was looking for Su Biaoxin.

As Long Yu and the three members of Feng clan entered the core disciples’ residence, a lot of people followed them like a troop to see what happens next.

They all knew in their hearts that Su Biaoxin was in big trouble now!

As they walked into the core disciples’ residence, everyone was shocked.

Su Biaoxin had already been informed about Long Yu arriving at the core disciples’ residence to settle the score with him. But instead of getting scared, he was standing there with a severe look on his face.

Su Biaoxin, clad in a blue robe, had a thin body and was of almost the same age as Long Yu. He was looking at Long Yu with great disdain.

But right in front of him, a famous Elder of Zhentian sect was standing.

Elder Yue Hangshan was the teacher of Su Biaoxin and the head of all the Law Enforcement Elders!

Chapter – 166 Combat with Zhenling 5th layer powerhouse

Yue Hangshan was wearing a long green robe. He appeared to be as rigid as a mountain!

At this moment, Yue Hangshan and Su Biaoxin were standing right in front of Long Yu and the three disciples from the Feng clan.

“Core disciple Long Yu!”

Yue Hangshan’s face was expressionless as he lightly greeted Long Yu.

“Elder Yue Hangshan!”

Long Yu greeted back to Elder Yue Hangshan who was standing between him and Su Biaoxin. Long Yu immediately understood the whole situation and looked contemptuously towards Su Biaoxin.

This fellow had the same arrogance of Yu Xin whom Long Yu had earlier met. He was being backed by an Elder, and that’s what made him rampant!

“Since you know I am an Elder, why didn’t you bow down to me to show respect?”

Yue Hangshan was greatly discontent and stared fiercely at Long Yu.

Bow down? To him?

Long Yu couldn’t stop himself from laughing.

All his life, Long Yu had only bowed down to the Elders who deserved to be respected, and Yue Hangshan certainly wasn’t one of them!

Long Yu had always considered Zhentian sect as his home. And this big family had several members – Baiyun Zhong, Yu Shuiyun, Old White, Yan Huanmo, Yu Shengshi, Bu Xing.....

All these people respected Long Yu for what he was, and Long Yu respected them back.

But what had this Yue Hangshan done to earn Long Yu’s respect?

Nothing at all!

Instead, he had backed a bully like Su Biaoxin who troubled Feng Yuxin and

denied justice to Feng Hao and Feng Xiaofei!

“I will bow down to Sovereign Baiyun Zhong, I will bow down to Old White, and I will also bow down to Brother Bu Xing.”

Long Yu said lightly: “But standing in front of you, I don’t see any reason to bow down to you.”

“Dissolute guy!”

Su Biaoxin immediately came forward and pointing his finger towards Long Yu, started cursing him angrily: “How dare you be so impolite in front of a respected Elder of Zhentian sect? Long Yu, don’t mistake yourself as the only hope of Zhentian sect in the seven sects competition!”

“If I’m not the only hope of the Zhentian sect, who is? Is it you?”

Long Yu asked him, revealing a colour of disdain in his voice as well as on his face.

Long Yu didn’t worry a bit about Su Biaoxin; he could easily defeat him in combat.

Even if he had to fight Elder Yue Hangshan, who had a cultivation level of Zhenling 5th layer, he need not worry, because he was capable of fending off anyone who was at most two layers above his cultivation level. However, he just wanted to have a look at the whole situation right now.

“You!”

Su Biaoxin was extremely angry. Although he was still pointing his finger at Long Yu, he couldn’t think of anything to speak.

After defeating Feng Hao and Feng Xiaofei and receiving the fiercest training from Elder Yue Hangshan, Su Biaoxin had managed to step into Zhenling 3rd layer, which was the same cultivation level as Long Yu.

However, Su Biaoxin knew in his heart that he was not an opponent of Long Yu.

Bai Hang, who had a cultivation level of Zhenling 3rd layer, was defeated within a few moves by Long Yu, who had a cultivation level of Zhenling 2nd layer at that time.

Since now Long Yu had stepped into Zhenling 3rd layer, obviously his strength would be much more than it earlier was!

Su Biaoxin didn't dare to fight Long Yu and could only reach out to his teacher, Elder Yue Hangshan, who had a cultivation level of Zhenling 5th layer, to help him out.

Just then, Yue Hangshan stepped forward.

"You seem to be quite confident about your strength."

Yue Hangshan said, his eyes flashing fiercely: "A young disciple, so arrogant that he claims to be the only hope of Zhentian sect – if anyone heard of it, they would certainly burst into laughter."

"Really?"

Long Yu chuckled and said: "Yue Hangshan, you are an Elder. And not just an Elder, you are the head of the Law Enforcement Elders. Still you let your disciple bully other disciples; you even back him when he harasses a female disciple of the sect. I don't know whether people would laugh on hearing about me or not, but if anyone heard about what you have been doing, they would certainly burst into laughter."

Long Yu's sarcastic comments made Yue Hangshan at loss of words. He was speechless but was staring angrily at Long Yu.

"You!"

Yue Hangshan couldn't control his anger anymore: "You, being a disciple of Zhentian sect, dare to insult an Elder of your sect. Then I, Yue Hangshan, being an Elder of Zhentian sect, must teach you today how to pay respect to your Elders!"

"Not all the Elders are worth respecting. At least you are not!"

Long Yu despised him more than ever now.

Their violent debate had shaken all the disciples that had surrounded them. Even Feng Hao, Feng Xiaofei and Feng Yuxin were stupefied on hearing Long Yu's words.

All the people present there were convinced of the fact that Long Yu could

easily beat Su Biaoxin, but no one had expected him to argue with Elder Yue Hangshan!

The disciples who were standing there as spectators didn't know the exact cultivation level of Elder Yue Hangshan, but assessing the aura that was being released by his body, they were certain that Yue Hangshan's cultivation level was higher than that of Long Yu.

In spite of all this, Long Yu had shown no respect to Elder Yue Hangshan and dared to argue with him – this had left everyone in utter disbelief!

Did Long Yu's confidence mean that he could resist Elder Yue Hangshan? Or was it just his over-confidence talking?

Many people were shaking their heads in discord. After all, Yue Hangshan was an Elder and was far more superior to any of the disciples in strength and position.

They were unable to imagine that Long Yu could ever be a match of Yue Hangshan, who was one of the thirteen chief Elders.

After all, Long Yu was just a core disciple!

"Yue Hangshan, even if you try to thrash me, I, Long Yu, would never be afraid of you!"

Long Yu smiled with disdain.

"Such arrogance! You are courting death, boy!"

Yue Hangshan shouted as he rushed towards Long Yu. He was unable to tolerate being insulted by a disciple.

"Brother Long Yu, be careful!"

Young Feng Yuxin couldn't help but shout to warn Long Yu of the attack. Her elegant and sweet voice echoed all over the arena.

"Don't worry."

Long Yu replied to her and rushed towards Yue Hangshan.

Although he was visibly confident about his powers, Long Yu didn't underestimate his enemy. It was the first time that he was going to face a

Zhenling 5th layer powerhouse!

After stepping into Zhenling 3rd layer, Long Yu's basic strength had grown to 4 Jun, which would further increase to 5 Jun upon the activation of nine hidden dragon mark.

However, the basic strength of a Zhenling 5th layer powerhouse was 16 Jun, which was more than three times of Long Yu's strength!

Certainly, if the basic strength was to be left aside, Long Yu had superiority for the other factors.

"Zhentian Sun, Zhentian Domain!"

As Long Yu shouted, his Zhentian Sun congealed behind him. It was so bright that its brightness almost blinded the people who were standing nearby. The rays that it emitted contained the immense pressure of Zhentian domain and this pressure immediately enveloped the whole body of Yue Hangshan.

"Zhentian Domain!"

Although Yue Hangshan didn't congeal his Zhenling entity, his mere stomping of his feet released a much more tyrannical pressure of Zhentian domain than Long Yu!

However, at this time Yue Hangshan was thinking to himself that having a cultivation level of two layers higher than Long Yu, if he depended wholly upon the Zhentian domain, he would soon be able to completely suppress Long Yu.

After all, he wasn't present inside the bamboo grove restricted area where Long Yu had had a combat with Bu Xing, so naturally he wasn't aware of Long Yu's capabilities.

Perhaps this Yue Hangshan was kept outside by Baiyun Zhong on purpose. Perhaps he wasn't trusted at all.

Otherwise, he would have definitely known about Long Yu's strength.

"Thunder charm, destroy him!"

Long Yu had sensed that Yue Hangshan's Zhentian domain was exerting far more pressure than his own, so he decided to incorporate thunder charm along with Zhentian domain.

The very next moment, numerous thunder mines blazed behind Long Yu and darted towards Yue Hangshan as if they were snakes made of electricity.

Yue Hangshan was unable to escape this attack as the thunder mines travelled at the speed of light.

Bang!

Yue Hangshan was struck by the thunder mines with a loud noise. His whole body was enveloped by the destructive power of the thunder mines!

Since he had a high cultivation level, Yue Hangshan released a great amount of xuan qi instantly, congealing a horizon barrier that resisted the enormous destructive strength of the thunder charm.

However, the horizon barrier that he had congealed in haste was soon destroyed by Long Yu's thunder charm.

"This boy has comprehended twin moods!"

Yue Hangshan thought to himself as he saw his horizon barrier being shattered by Long Yu's attack.

As he was enveloped by the destructive power of thunder charm, he was instantly reminded of the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir and he could not help but wonder whether Long Yu had entered the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir and grabbed a fragment of the heavenly tablet.

Otherwise, where did this enormous energy come from?

In addition to this, it was known all over the Tang kingdom that Long Yu had seized the lunar tablet from the Ling clan villa. No doubt, Long Yu had a lot of valuables with him.

With this thought, Yue Hangshan's eyes flashed with a different colour.

This was the colour of greed!

A heavenly tablet was precious for any martial expert as it helped the practitioner to reach the resonance of heaven and earth. Obviously, Yue Hangshan would pine for it.

Yue Hangshan was 50-year-old now, and if he didn't get hold of any precious

tablet, there were absolutely no chances for him to break through.

The heavenly tablet was a golden opportunity!

“Zhentian Mountain Zhenling!”

Yue Hangshan shouted loudly as a huge mountain appeared behind him, releasing a humungous amount of pressure all around!

This was his Zhenling entity – the Zhentian Mountain.

The pressure exerted by this enormous mountain increased with every passing second, terrifying the spectators.

“Destroy!”

Immediately after receiving the command from Yue Hangshan, the mountain started drifting towards Long Yu, enveloping him under immense pressure.

“Zhentian Mountain is a Zhenling entity of fifth layer....No wonder its pressure is really formidable!”

Long Yu was immediately suppressed to such an extent that he was unable to move at all. This made him remind of the Qiansi Elder that he had earlier killed – Ying Luo. Yue Hangshan’s battle efficiency was far more than her.

“Lunar burst!”

The grey lunar wings flapped immediately behind Long Yu, releasing a great amount of lunar qi.

When he was suppressed by Yu Qianning, he had used this move to escape the entrapment.

While being suppressed by Elder Yue Hangshan, he used the same move again!

The lunar qi that was released by the lunar wings soon scattered throughout the region of influence of the Zhentian domain. Soon afterwards the lunar wings changed Long Yu into a streamer, making him disappearing in a flash.

This made everyone gawk, including Yue Hangshan.

How did Long Yu manage to disappear while being enveloped by such a tyrannical suppression force?

“Teacher, he’s behind you!”

Su Biaoxin shouted immediately to warn Yue Hangshan.

“Naive!”

Just when Yue Hangshan was about to turn his head, he felt a burst of strange force seeping through his body, binding him on the spot!

Chapter – 167 Punishment of imprisonment

Long Yu appeared right behind Yue Hangshan and delivered a punch to him!

“Nine hidden dragon fist, intoxicated hell!”

The invisible burst of nine hidden dragon qi completely surrounded Yue Hangshan who was obviously unable to detect it.

Long Yu had used intoxicated hell technique for the first time since he had comprehended it to the perfection level, and the result that this technique had wielded now shocked both Long Yu and Yue Hangshan.

Before Yue Hangshan could react and defend himself, he was already enveloped by the sudden burst of invisible nine hidden dragon qi!

In spite of having a cultivation level of Zhenling 5th layer, Yue Hangshan was unable to resist the attack of a trivial Zhenling 3rd layer disciple and this paled his complexion.

“Awakening palm samsara!”

As Long Yu launched his fist, the power of samsara condensed on his fist and then seeped into the body of Yue Hangshan, causing his cultivation level to drop by one layer temporarily.

The very next moment, Long Yu grabbed his Qian dragon spear and pointed its tip at Yue Hangshan’s neck.

“You lost.”

Long Yu said in a carefree tone.

The martial skill, whose comprehension he had recently enhanced, the intoxicated hell had grown so strong now that even a Zhenling 5th layer powerhouse couldn’t resist it!

By this time, Yue Hangshan and his Zhentian Mountain Zhenling entity had crashed down with loud thump, making a huge pit in the ground. However, Long Yu wasn’t hurt even a little.

The tip of Qian dragon spear placed over the neck of Yue Hangshan was declaring the victory of Long Yu over him.

As Yue Hangshan finally got up, sweat dripped from all over his face and his eyes were flashing with a colour of terror. He had never imagined that Long Yu would turn out to be so powerful!

He escaped the heavy pressure exerted by his Zhentian mountain Zhenling entity, and this was a feat impossible to be achieved by a trivial Zhenling 3rd layer expert.

How did this Long Yu do it?

Anyway, his whole life was being ruined at the hands of Long Yu!

He wished Long Yu had killed him, because living like this was worse than dying a thousand times!

Yue Hangshan, who was one of the thirteen chief Elders of Zhentian sect, and was also the head of the Law Enforcement Elders, was defeated brutally by a mere Zhenling 3rd layer disciple!

If the news spread on, he would become a laughing stock!

However, several Zhentian sect disciples had witnessed the combat between Long Yu and Yue Hangshan that it was impossible for him to stop the news from being spread¹

All the disciples that had been the spectators were very excited now.

Long Yu had defeated Elder Yue Hangshan!

Everyone was aware of the fact that Long Yu had become very powerful. But no one had expected him to be so strong that he would defeat an Elder whose cultivation level was at Zhenling 5th layer!

“Long Yu.....”

Feng Yuxin was unable to hold her tears. Her eyes expressed her happiness, but there was something else that was lurking in her eyes.

She was overjoyed to see that Long Yu was a formidable powerhouse now, but this thought had given birth to another worry in her heart – Long Yu’s growing strength would increase the distance between them.

And Feng Yuxin never wanted that to happen!

Unfortunately, she could neither stop Long Yu from enhancing his power, nor could she rise to his level.

In this world of martial arts, where strength was everything, Feng Yuxin had no reason to hinder Long Yu's cultivation.

"Ha! Brother Long Yu has grown so powerful!"

Feng Xiaofei couldn't contain his happiness and was jumping excitedly.

Since Long Yu had intervened in the matter, everything had become so simple now.

Feng Hao and Feng Xiaofei lifted their heads to look towards Su Biaoxin who had bullied them earlier and saw that his face was as pale as a dead man with fear.

Su Biaoxin knew that when even his teacher couldn't defeat Long Yu, he certainly didn't stand a chance.

This incident had subverted him for his whole life regarding the use of martial arts!

At first, it all appeared to be a dream to him, but later he finally realised that his teacher was indeed defeated by Long Yu!

Besides these people, all the disciples were staring with their eyes wide open as they still couldn't believe what had just happened.

At this time, Long Yu sensed a strong killing intention directed towards him from Yue Hangshan.

"So now you want to kill me?"

Long Yu flashed his eyes and immediately grabbed his Qian dragon spear.

"Kill ten thousand people!"

Long Yu condensed his killing intention on the tip of his spear and pointed it towards Yue Hangshan. The killing intention immediately enveloped Yue Hangshan, incapacitating him!

Before Yue Hangshan could launch a sneak attack, Long Yu attacked him first, putting himself into an advantageous position. The next moment, the tip of his

spear was at the throat of Yue Hangshan!

Just then, Long Yu hit him with his spear which made him fly and land a hundred feet away from where Long Yu was standing.

Yue Hangshan's footsteps staggered; he looked distressed.

"Elder Yu Hangshan, I placed the tip of my spear on your throat. Still, instead of conceding defeat, you chose to launch a sneak attack on me!"

Long Yu sneered with disdain: "Is that what you want to teach the disciples of Zhentian sect? If anyone would hear of what you did here today, they would surely laugh at you."

These were the same words that Yue Hangshan had spoken to Long Yu before attacking him.

However, since Long Yu had used the same phrase again and again now, it was making Yue Hangshan even more shameful!

Long Yu's words made a huge uproar arise among the disciples.

"How shameless is this Yue Hangshan!"

"He lost to Long Yu; still he dares to launch a sneak attack on him!"

"Yue Hangshan is so despicable!"

Such behaviour was not expected even from the outer disciples of Zhentian sect, let alone from an Elder like Yue Hangshan!

Yue Hangshan's eyes flashed with eternal hatred for Long Yu. By this time, his previous cultivation had been restored and he walked towards Long Yu.

"Long Yu, as a disciple of Zhentian sect, your combat experience is too low."

Yue Hangshan said: "As an Elder, I will now show you what a real fight is like."

By now, he was well acquainted with Long Yu's martial techniques, and was determined not to let him overpower him this time!

Long Yu was wondering how shameless a person could be.

Yue Hangshan had been clearly defeated by Long Yu, but now he was shamelessly professing him that his combat experience was low and he didn't

know what a real fight was like?

It seemed that Long Yu was too naive.

He shouldn't have shown any mercy to Yue Hangshan. Rather, he should've killed him. That would've certainly put an end to all the problems!

However, regretting now was of no use. After all, who would've thought that this Yue Hangshan would turn out to be so shameless?

Although Long Yu had exhausted his skills while Yue Hangshan had his cultivation level restored, still no one could tell who would win and who would lose!

As they gazed at each other, suddenly a Zhenling entity of a giant spear appeared in the sky out of nowhere.

"Fall!"

As soon as the entity received the command, it fell to the ground from the sky and landed right in front of Yue Hangshan.

A burst of endless killing intention erupted from the spear Zhenling entity and immediately enveloped the whole body of Yue Hangshan!

Under the immense pressure of the killing intention, Yue Hangshan was so terrified that to him it felt that his slightest movement would make the giant spear kill him there and then.

He had certainly recognised that this spear was the Zhenling entity of the sovereign of Zhentian sect, Baiyun Zhong!

"Yue Hangshan, you have had enough!"

Everyone could hear Baiyun Zhong's voice.

Along with these words, a man with short hair, clad in a striped robe, paced forward. His movement was so smooth that while he was moving at a great speed, it appeared as if he was strolling slowly.

A few moments later, the man reached the place where Long Yu and Yue Hangshan were standing.

This man was the sovereign of Zhentian sect, Baiyun Zhong!

The spear Zhenling entity had completely suppressed Yue Hangshan. He was unable to move for several minutes since the pressure was immense.

“Baiyun Zhong must be in a much higher layer of Zhenling realm. Otherwise, how would he possibly suppress Yue Hangshan with such an ease?”

Long Yu thought to himself and was feeling relieved after seeing Baiyun Zhong intervene.

Although he never flinched at the thought of having a cut-throat fight with Yue Hangshan and would've fought with all his might, the arrival of Baiyun Zhong came as a secret blessing to him.

Since Baiyun Zhong did not greet Yue Hangshan, it was evident that Baiyun Zhong held no regard for this person.

“Sovereign, this Long Yu has no respect for the Sect and the Elders. He provoked me first. I was just following the rules of the sect....”

As soon as Yue Hangshan saw Baiyun Zhong approaching him, he tried to frame Long Yu for whatever had happened.

Unfortunately for him, Baiyun Zhong was already aware of the whole matter, right from the start till the end.

“Enough!”

Baiyun Zhong lifted his hand to stop Yue Hangshan from speaking any further.

Baiyun Zhong nodded his head while rubbing his light beard and said: “Yue Hangshan, if I am correct, you have been holding the position of the Head of Law Enforcement Elders for quite a long time now.”

“Yes, Sovereign! This year is the ninth year.....”

Yue Hangshan perceived that Baiyun Zhong was convinced by him, so he replied lightly.

“It's such a pity that you won't continue to be one in the tenth year.”

Baiyun Zhong said lightly: “The mannerisms of your disciple, Su Biaoxin have not been quite right. But since your own behaviour is so unacceptable, what else can I expect from the pupils that you teach.”

Hearing this, Su Biaoxin realized that he was not as wonderful as he thought himself to be.

Baiyun Zhong had come prepared to punish the teacher as well as his disciple!

“Elder Yue Hangshan, you wanted to create a fierce warrior out of Su Biaoxin. I understand that. But I must say that you have changed your ways after you accepted Su Biaoxin as your disciple.”

Baiyun Zhong’s face had a stern look now: “This Su Biaoxin had been rampaging all over the Zhentian sect and instead of teaching him the right conduct, you backed him and covered for his mistakes. The Yue Hangshan I knew would never do such a thing. I sentence you to the punishment of imprisonment!”

The punishment of imprisonment!

Long Yu’s complexion changed.

According to the rules of Zhentian sect, the punishment of imprisonment was the second most severe punishment after being expelled from the sect. The person who was to be punished was banned from practising martial arts and was held captive for a certain period of time that ranged from a few years to decades!

From whatever Baiyun Zhong had just said, it was clear that Yue Hangshan was once a righteous man and had changed only after meeting Su Biaoxin.

Long Yu’s complexion became pallid as he wondered how Baiyun Zhong would deal with this Su Biaoxin.

Chapter – 168 Prepared to set off

The gaze of all the people was now fixed on Su Biaoxin.

“As for you, Su Biaoxin.....”

Baiyun Zhong walked towards him and looked at him, shaking his head with regret: “I gave you many opportunities to correct your ways and never let your past affect your future. However, after getting admitted into Zhentian sect, you repeatedly ran amuck and bullied other disciples. As a punishment for your violent acts, I’m compelled to destroy your cultivation and expel you from the sect.”

Destruction of cultivation and expulsion from the sect!

This was the most severe punishment according to the laws of Zhentian sect, and was usually sentenced to those who dared to rebel against the sect, like at an earlier instance Elder Wu Jianxin did.

It was one of the most difficult decisions that the sovereign had to make.

After all, the people he had to punish were a part of Zhentian sect and had previously contributed a lot to the sect.

After hearing the sentence passed by Baiyun Zhong, Su Biaoxin turned as pale as a corpse.

Everything was over now!

His most powerful backer was his teacher, Elder Yue Hangshan. But now, even Yue Hangshan couldn’t save him from the wrath of Baiyun Zhong!

The giant spear Zhenling entity of Baiyun Zhong trembled as it released a great amount of killing intention and immediately smashed Su Biaoxin’s Dantian!

“Now go away!”

Baiyun Zhong said after calling his spear Zhenling entity back.

With his hand over his Dantian and his mouth dripping with blood, Su Biaoxin looked towards his teacher, Yue Hangshan.

The dark-faced Yue Hangshan waved his hand: “Go away!”

Su Biaoxin clenched his teeth and turned around to depart!

From now on, Su Biaoxin was a waste. He was expelled not only from Zhentian sect but also from the world of martial arts. He was an extremely wretched being now!

The days during which he had enjoyed his strength and was protected by Yue Hangshan flashed before his eyes.

Feng Hao and Feng Xiaofei were quite relieved after seeing Su Biaoxin expelled in such a miserable state.

Earlier, this Su Biaoxin had bullied both of them many a times. But when he got to face someone more powerful than him, he was easily subdued. Now he was a waste and was also expelled from the sect.

This had also imparted a great lesson to both Feng Hao and Feng Xiaofei.

They both made up their mind. No matter how strong they grow in the future, they would never act irresponsible and reckless. Even the strongest of the people met a dead end as soon as arrogance took over them!

“Long Yu, thank you so much.....”

Feng Yuxin, clad in a pale yellow dress, approached Long Yu and expressed her gratitude in a soft voice.

“You don’t have to thank me.”

Long Yu shook his head and said: “Back in Yu Guan city, you had a choice. You could’ve left the Feng clan and saved your life. But you chose to stay and follow my foster father. You chose to stand with me and fight. By helping a clansman of my foster father, I intend to help him.”

Long Yu’s words made Feng Yuxin a little sad.

Initially she had thought that just like any ordinary person, Long Yu might have been smitten by her beauty and hence had decided to seek revenge for her.

But now as it turned out to be, Long Yu had decided to help her only because she belonged to his foster father’s clan!

“Well, Feng Yuxin, don’t think too much.”

Long Yu smiled and looked at her: “At present, all three of you have more strength than my foster father. He would be pleased to see your progress. As for the wound that he received, I’ll find the cure as soon as possible.”

“Brother Long Yu, rest assured. I will catch up with Feng Hao and Feng Xiaofei and we all will protect our clan-head.”

Feng Yuxin replied.

“Feng Yuxin, you should carry on with your study of alchemy. Feng clan will be greatly benefitted by your alchemy skills.”

Long Yu nodded.

Baiyun Zhong himself arrested Yue Hangshan, who was to remain captive inside the Zhentian sect’s prison for three years as a punishment for his deeds. He was also banned from practising martial arts for this period.

This kind of life was indeed a torture for Yue Hangshan.

They all hoped that three years might be sufficient for him to realise his follies and he would never tolerate his disciples’ misdeeds again.

“If anyone misuses his powers inside Zhentian sect, he or she will be punished. Even the Elders can’t escape the punishment.”

Long Yu thought to himself.

Soon afterwards, he turned around and left for the bamboo grove in the restricted area to continue with his practice.

.....

Fifteen days later.

Just seven days were left for the Tang kingdom’s Seven Sects Competition to commence.

At this time, a young man clad in black robe was pacing from one cliff to another inside the bamboo grove.

A pair of lunar wings flapped behind him, making him move as fast as a falling meteor!

This fast-paced youth was Long Yu.

Within a period of two weeks, Long Yu had become aware of all the powers that he had gained as a Zhenling third layer expert.

Moreover, the biggest change had occurred with one of his martial skills – the next level of awakening palm samsara.

A few days earlier, after a vigorous practice session, Long Yu had finally been able to comprehend his awakening palm samsara technique from Xiao Cheng level to Da Cheng level.

At Xiao Cheng level, the awakening palm samsara would create a burst of the power of samsara which would infiltrate into the body of the enemy, causing his cultivation level to temporarily drop by one layer.

But the Da Cheng level of awakening palm samsara reduced the consumption of Xuan qi, enabling him to use this technique more often. Moreover, now this technique not only caused a drop in the enemy's cultivation level but also reduced the level of the enemy's martial skills!

During his practice, Long Yu had discovered that the awakening palm samsara was a terrifying technique when it caused the level of the opponent's martial skill to drop.

"The awakening palm samsara of Da Cheng level is the real form of the awakening palm samsara!"

Long Yu was extremely content at his battle efficiency taking this great leap.

If he could not defeat a Zhenling 5th layer powerhouse like Yue Hangshan by his usual techniques, he could now just wait to tire them down before launching his true attacks.

Even if Yue Hangshan's Zhentian Mountain Zhenling entity had tyrannical suppression power, Long Yu could've weakened it by using awakening palm samsara.

After practising it over a hundred times, Long Yu had become quite familiar with the usage of this technique and could easily use it to his advantage now.

Intoxicated hell, awakening palm samsara!

Just a single technique of nine hidden dragon fist was enough to overpower a

hundred of other techniques.

But only after Long Yu would enter the fourth layer of Zhenling realm and congealed Zhenling entity, the nine hidden dragon mark would transform itself and impart him a new set of martial skills.

What exactly these new martial skills would be, Long Yu was still unaware of it. But the terrifying strength of nine hidden dragon fist gave him an idea of the strength that these new skills might contain.

At this time, Long Yu was flapping his lunar wings and was casually hovering above a cliff like a hawk.

The reason being his ceaseless hovering was that it was enhancing the resonance that he had achieved with his lunar wings. With the help of the lunar tablet, he believed that he would soon be able to achieve complete resonance with his lunar wings.

“I have attained resonance with my Qian Dragon spear and have even comprehended a spiritual level martial skill – the lamella touch. However, I have not attained any resonance with the lunar tablet.”

Long Yu pondered over it and was quite puzzled.

He guessed that since the Qian Dragon spear was his father’s spear, it easily resonated with him.

As for the Lunar wings, instead of receiving energy from the nine hidden dragon mark, they received energy from the lunar tablet.

Long Yu was no longer puzzled now.

Long Yu continued hovering in the sky. He would occasionally land over a cliff to have some rest. While flying in the sky, he felt as if he had transformed into a Demon Hawk.

The demon hawk dwelled deep inside the Demon valley and had a tyrannical strength of at least Zhenling seventh layer!

The lunar wings had absorbed some traces of the aura of the beasts of the Demon valley and hence were causing Long Yu to have unrealistic thoughts.

“I think I should practice harder now.....”

Long Yu thought as the sun completely hid itself behind the mountains. Soon afterwards, he landed inside the bamboo grove restricted area and was slightly disappointed with himself.

Every time he would feel that he was about to attain complete resonance with the lunar wings as a little more effort was needed, and each time he was unable to break through.

It seemed to him that this little effort had become the most formidable task of his life!

“Tomorrow, the sovereign will lead the contingent to the Imperial city to participate in the seven sects competition.”

Long Yu made his calculations and decided to keep lunar wings aside for now.

He had been eagerly waiting to visit the Imperial city. After all, he had many precious things stored inside his nine hidden dragon mark – Feng Yao’s top grade spiritual level double-edged sword, Meteorite pendant as well as several corpses of beasts.

He could exchange all these articles for some good quality immortality pills or neidans!

Certainly, it was impossible for him to be able to congeal Zhenling entity and enter Zhenling fourth layer. After all, it not only required a magnanimous amount of xuan qi but also involved a bottleneck which was extremely difficult to break.

At nightfall, Long Yu decided to take complete rest.

The next morning, Bu Xing arrived and knocked on his door.

“Brother Long Yu, the Sovereign has ordered the whole contingent to gather in the main hall. Since we both are the biggest hopes of our sect in the Seven Sects Competition, we should hurry up.”

“Brother Bu Xing, you just don’t change.”

Long Yu came out of his cottage.

They both smiled and then turned around to leave for the main hall of Zhentian sect.

The sovereign Baiyun Zhong was addressing to the whole contingent inside the main hall.

As Long Yu reached the square in front of the main hall, he noticed a familiar figure standing there. Feng Hao, Feng Xiaofei and Feng Yuxin were waiting for him, along with Feng Longsong!

“Foster father!”

Long Yu’s face beamed at the sight of Feng Longsong.

Was Feng Longsong going to travel to the Imperial city with them?

“Little Long Yu!”

Feng Longsong looked at Long Yu and smiled: “I and Liu Yu have not seen each other for quite some time. With the Seven Sects Competition about to commence, I want to visit Liu clan palace.”

Imperial city’s Liu Clan!

These words made a lot of familiar images appear in front of Long Yu’s eyes.

Chapter – 169 Travel to the Imperial City

Right from his childhood days to adulthood, Long Yu had had encounters with a lot of people from the Liu clan.

Feng Longsong's wife and Feng Yao's mother, Liu Yu, belonged to the Liu clan. She had always treated Long Yu coldly. After the changes that took place in the Feng clan in Yu Guan city, Liu Yu left her husband's home and returned to her maternal home in the Imperial city.

Liu Mingxuan, Feng Yao's cousin and a disciple of the Hanbing sect, was killed by Long Yu in the Royal Ginseng Forest.

Liu Ye, the fifth core disciple of the Knife Cut sect, who had displayed the 'bury knife soul attack', was killed by Long Yu in the Teng snake's abyss.

Liu Mingcheng, the personal attendant of Wang Tianzhuo, had witnessed Long Yu destroying Wang Tianzhuo's cultivation and turning him to a waste!

The only person of the Liu clan that was able to impress Long Yu was Liu Yuan.

In the Ling clan village, they not only fell inside the hidden chamber together and received half of the heavenly tablet each, Liu Yuan also let Long Yu borrow her white horse later.

It was there that Liu Yuan's long, black hair had turned white. Oh, how they suited her!

But Long Yu didn't know how she was now.

"Foster father, I want to accompany you to the Imperial city."

Several images from the past flashed through Long Yu's mind, followed by a wide smile on Feng Longsong's face.

Liu clan was not an influential clan of the Imperial city. They were just a clan of merchants.

The people of the Liu clan left no stone unturned in order to gain favor from the influential families of the likes of Wang clan and Chu clan. Obviously, there was a big disparity among the statuses of Liu clan and Wang clan.

Long Yu believed that there must be no one in the Liu clan who could defeat

him, so his presence would impart some safety to Feng Longsong. For him, Feng Longsong's safety held top priority.

"That's great! It's always better to travel with a companion than to travel alone."

Feng Longsong smiled and nodded his head, but the next moment, he seemed to be pondering over something.

Long Yu wondered if he should tell him about what happened between him and Feng Yao.

But on pondering further, he realized that Feng Yao had joined Xinghai Lun who was one of the Seven Calamity stars would not be good news for Feng Longsong. So he decided not to talk to Feng Longsong about Feng Yao.

Moreover, if he told Feng Longsong about all this, he would definitely get more worried about Long Yu's safety.

Feng Longsong would be helpless as his current strength was no sufficient to protect Long Yu, and this would, in turn, make him utterly sad.

After thinking about all these things, Long Yu decided to keep this news buried inside his heart.

Long Yu looked on and found Baiyun Zhong calling the members of the contingent inside the main hall of Zhentian sect.

The seven sects competition this time was the most crucial one for the whole Zhentian sect. Naturally, each and every disciple of Zhentian sect wanted to participate and fight for their sect. However, it was impossible for the sect to let every disciple participate, and hence only the most talented disciples were selected for participation.

The disciples under the age of twenty-five years, with a cultivation level of at least Wudao eighth layer. were eligible to participate. They were going to represent Zhentian sect in this seven sects competition.

In addition to the contingent of the participants, the Sovereign of the sect, Baiyun Zhong, was leading the contingent himself in order to ensure the safety of the disciples, including the top two core disciples Long Yu and Bu Xing.

All the hopes of Zhentian sect now rested upon these disciples and Baiyun Zhong didn't want them to encounter any accident before they would participate in the seven sects competition.

Apart from Baiyun Zhong, three pavilion Elders – Old White, Yu Shengshi and Li Bufan were also accompanying the contingent to the Imperial city.

Moreover, Yan Huanmo, who was already there in the Imperial city, was waiting for the contingent to arrive and had already arranged for the lodging of the disciples and the elders.

Besides Baiyun Zhong and the three pavilion Elders, fifteen Law Enforcement Elders were also accompanying the contingent to the Imperial city.

Since only selected disciples could participate, those disciples who couldn't participate were not allowed to leave the premises of Zhentian sect during the one-month duration of the seven sects competition.

This was done in order to safeguard their lives.

After all, in the absence of the sovereign and the most powerful disciples and Elders, the defenses of the Zhentian sect would be weak and more prone to a sudden attack. It was essential for the disciples to stick together in case there was an attack on the sect.

With numerous disciples staying together, there were lesser chances of any enemy to infiltrate into the sect premises and harm the young disciples.

The contingent comprised of more than seventy members.

There were fifteen Law Enforcement Elders with a cultivation level of Zhenling first layer each, the Sovereign of the sect and three pavilion Elders. Besides these people, there were more than fifty disciples that were going to participate in the seven sect competition.

It was an honor for all the disciples to be allowed to participate in the competition. None of the disciples wanted to waste this opportunity to bring laurels for their Zhentian sect.

None, except Bai Hang!

After getting his long sword battle weapon shattered and this sword Zhenling

entity damaged by Long Yu, Bai Hang's self-confidence was shaken.

This had made him renounce his participation from the seven sect competition and torture himself with the ghosts of past by staying at Zhentian sect.

Long Yu didn't have the slightest of guilt in this regard.

Bai Hang himself had challenged Long Yu for a combat. One had to stay ready to face the consequences after challenging someone for a combat!

Long Yu looked all around.

He knew several disciples who were going to participate in the competition along with him.

Certainly, the most powerful competitors from the Zhentian sect were Long Yu and Bu Xing. However, since Bu Xing had conceded the fight with Long Yu, it was still unknown who was more formidable among these two.

Of course, Long Yu was fierce, but Bu Xing had been keeping secrets of his own and was not as simple as he appeared to be!

Apart from these two, three disciples among the participating forty core disciples had entered the Zhenling realm.

One of these three people was the eighth core disciple, Zhuge Jian, who preferred to keep a low profile.

Although Long Yu didn't know much about Zhuge Jian, Bu Xing once said that Zhuge Jian was a remarkable swordsman.

The last time Zhuge Jian was seen in the Zhentian sect was around two years ago.

At that time, Zhuge Jian had a cultivation level of Wudao ninth layer and was the eighth core disciple of the Zhentian sect.

As Long Yu looked at this young man clad in a purple robe, carrying a purple scabbard on his back, he observed that this young man had an air of indifference.

Zhenling third layer!

Long Yu immediately understood that since Zhuge Jian had been venturing out

of the sect for two whole years, his combat efficiency had increased very quickly and hence he had entered Zhenling third layer. This added to the advantage of Zhentian sect.

The other two disciples who had recently entered the Zhenling realm were acquaintances of Long Yu.

One of them was the disciple of Elder Yu Shuiyun – the dark-faced Lu Guanming and the other one was the master of the Ling clan villa – Ling Han!

Both Lu Guanming and Ling Han had been going through the ‘Congealment’ which is the process that prepares the disciples to break through, and that’s why Long Yu had been unable to meet them.

During their practice for the seven sect competition, none of the disciples had shown even the slightest of laxity!

As Long Yu looked towards them, he sensed that although the cultivation level of both Lu Guanming and Ling Han was Zhenling first layer, but their actual strength was much more than that.

Surprisingly, Lu Guanming, who could easily get agitated, was standing with great calm.

“What kind of martial skills has he been practicing?”

Long Yu couldn’t help but speculate about his martial skills since martial skills couldn’t be sensed like cultivation levels.

But the aura released by Ling Han’s body seemed familiar to Long Yu.

“This aura seems just like Lunar qi. Has Ling Han absorbed the piece of Lunar debris that he found in the Ling clan villa?”

Long Yu continued speculating and was really very happy for the enhancement of their cultivation levels.

Although they both were just Zhenling first layer experts, they had successfully broken through one of the most crucial bottlenecks, at which several people failed and were stuck for the rest of their lives.

A tremendous change had occurred among the top five core disciples of Zhentian sect since the last year!

The second core disciple, Bai Hang, in spite of having entered Zhenling third layer, was defeated by Long Yu when he challenged the latter. The combat not only left his sword shattered and his Zhenling damaged, it also shook his self-confidence, making him withdraw from the competition.

The third core disciple, Su Biaoxin, got his cultivation destroyed as a punishment for his recklessness some time ago and was expelled from the sect.

The fourth and fifth core disciples – Duanmu Conglong and Yao Yan were killed by Long Yu in the Ling clan village.

Among the top five core disciples, two were dead and one was turned to waste; the second core disciple Bai Hang was unworthy of his position after being defeated by Long Yu.

Lu Guanming, Ling Han and Zhuge Jian had recently entered the Zhenling realm, making them three of the most powerful disciples of the Zhentian sect.

Long Yu had many acquaintances among the Wudao ninth layer disciples too.

Feng Hao, Feng Xiaofei and Feng Yuxin had entered Wudao ninth layer and hence were also participating in the seven sect competition.

Liao Lele, who had returned to Zhentian sect the day before, had herself stepped into Wudao ninth layer. In addition to concocting life-saving pills, she could now concoct Zhenling promotion pills. This could facilitate her breaking through from Wudao ninth layer into the Zhenling realm.

At this time, Ling Yiyue, Ling Han's younger sister, was looking continuously towards Long Yu from the crowd.

By this time, she had also stepped into Wudao eighth layer. Although she was eligible to compete in the seven sect competition, but since she had recently entered the Wudao eighth layer, she lacked the necessary combat efficiency.

Moreover, the existence of Wudao eighth layer martial artists didn't mean much in the seven sect competition and didn't make any large difference in the position of the sect.

The martial artists under the age of twenty-five years were zealous and in the most productive phase of their lives. A tournament like the seven sect

competition provided a great platform for exhibiting their talents.

“Now that we have all come together, let’s set out.”

Baiyun Zhong looked happily at the disciples who had gathered inside the main hall of Zhentian sect. He rubbed his beard and said: “Old Black, I leave you in charge of the Zhentian sect. In case there is any mishap, send me your messenger pigeons immediately.”

“Yes, Sovereign.”

Old Black bowed down to Baiyun Zhong in obedience.

Old Black was the second most powerful in Zhentian sect after Baiyun Zhong, so the responsibility of protecting the disciples naturally befell upon him.

“Long Yu, come here.”

Baiyun Zhong nodded as he called Long Yu.

“Yes, Sovereign?”

Long Yu came forward and was clearly baffled.

“This battle weapon is made from the body of the same beast whose wings you profoundly use now. I believe it will be of some help to you.”

Baiyun Zhong gave a slight smile and threw a garment made of white feathers towards him.

Long Yu immediately recognized this garment. He had seen it before leaving for the Demon Valley!

.....

Chapter – 170 Awakening of Heavenly Resonance

Long Yu grabbed the feathered garment immediately.

Just then, he felt as if his lunar wings trembled a little. Clearly, this garment had some relation with his lunar wings.

“I have been missing just one small step in order to attain complete resonance with the lunar wings. Now that I have obtained this feathered garment, I might succeed!”

Long Yu’s eyes flashed with excitement.

This white feathered garment was a top grade spiritual level battle weapon. After being worn on body, it not only served as armour but also enhanced one’s speed.

More importantly, it could help Long Yu attain absolute resonance with the lunar wings!

“Thank you so much, Sovereign.”

Long Yu looked up.

“There is nothing to say thanks for. Your contribution to the sect in the seven sect competition would be enough.”

Baiyun Zhong stroked his beard and smiled: “It seems that you are our only hope to defend our Zhentian sect. Make sure you don’t disappoint us.”

“Yes, Sovereign.”

Long Yu said sincerely.

This exchange between them made the rest of the disciples gape in surprise.

All the hopes of the sect were invested in Long Yu and not Bu Xing!

All this, in spite of Bu Xing having a cultivation level of one layer higher than Long Yu!

They couldn’t figure out what this exactly meant and casted curious gazes on Long Yu, especially that swordsman Zhuge Jian.

This young man, clad in purple robe and carrying purple scabbard, looked contemptuously towards Long Yu as if he wanted to challenge him.

He and Long Yu had the same cultivation, but Baiyun Zhong's favour for Long Yu had certainly made him jealous.

Needless to say, Zhuge Jian had also ventured out in the Tang kingdom and had gained a lot of combat experience.

He believed that his combat experience was far more than Long Yu and hence in spite of sharing the same cultivation level, Long Yu was no match for him.

However, no one knew the real strength of Long Yu.

Soon afterwards, Long Yu wore the feathered garment that he had just received. His whole appearance changed after wearing that garment. He looked more heroic and attracted the attention of several female disciples.

Long Yu's temperament would never allow him to wear such conspicuous clothing, but since he wanted to utilize this garment in order to achieve absolute resonance with the lunar wings, there was no harm in wearing it for a while.

"You have never worn such garments earlier. But trust me, this feathered garment suits you."

Liao Lele came and stood by Long Yu's side and spoke to him in her usual soft voice.

"Liao Lele, if you start paying such attention to your own appearance, Brother Long Yu might develop a liking for you."

Feng Yuxin chuckled.

Feng Yuxin and Liao Lele, both had Old White as their teacher, and were well acquainted with each other. In fact, they had become good friends now and shared everything with each other.

These words struck Liao Lele like lightening.

Feng Yuxin was right!

She never cared about her appearance in front of Long Yu. Although every girl cared about her appearance and clothing, Liao Lele was not a girly girl!

What man would not like a beautiful and elegant woman?

Liao Lele felt ashamed of her appearance in front of Long Yu.

However, Long Yu immediately understood how she had been feeling and said: “Feng Yuxin, you should not talk so irresponsibly. Since no two humans are same, each and every person is beautiful in his or her own way.”

“Alright, alright. Let’s go now.”

Baiyun Zhong led the contingent while Elders Yu Shengshi and Li Bufan walked behind the whole contingent since they were responsible for the safety of the disciples.

All the other people walked in teams.

Soon afterwards, Liao Lele and Feng Yuxin went to another side and were evidently discussing the ways which could be used to attract Long Yu.

Since they didn’t know what kind of girls did Long Yu like, they were making vague guesses.

Long Yu looked towards them and wondered what the girls were talking about, but soon put this matter aside and moved forward.

Just then, he felt as if his lunar wings and the white feathered garment were fusing together.

“What is this?”

Long Yu’s complexion changed as he realized that some movement was happening in these two battle weapons.

He reacted immediately.

“Sovereign, I want to explore the way ahead.”

Long Yu took two or three steps and approached Baiyun Zhong.

Baiyun Zhong looked profoundly at him and smiled: “Alright, go on if you want to, but take good care of yourself and return to the contingent once you are done with your exploration.”

“Yes, Sovereign.”

Long Yu nodded and continued to stride forward. Soon afterwards, he disappeared completely from the sight of all the seventy people of the contingent.

He decided to abandon the contingent as he feared that the infusion of lunar wings and the feathered garment would create a strange sight.

He didn't want anyone to know about these changes. He wanted to keep it as a secret weapon to use in the seven sect competition.

If anyone knew about it beforehand, it wouldn't be of much use.

"This feeling is getting more and more intense....."

Long Yu felt his heart throbbing faster and faster along with the lunar wings. At the same time, the feathered garment started resonating with the lunar wings more and more with each passing moment.

Speed!

Defence!

These two powers of the feathered garment created two separate bursts of energy which integrated with the lunar wings.

To Long Yu, this process seemed similar to that of the transformation of the nine hidden dragon mark.

"I used to think that the nine hidden mark could only enhance my power and serve as a storage space. However, now it seems that it has much more powers.....!"

Long Yu thought to himself.

Under the influence of nine hidden dragon mark, not only the two powers but the feathered garment itself decomposed and started to integrate with the lunar wings.

After absorbing the powers and the garment itself, the lunar wings had transformed into a whole new battle weapon!

This battle weapon still had the shape of lunar wings and was still a top grade spiritual level battle weapon, but its speed had increased by leaps and bounds.

Moreover, it now displayed great defence abilities that it absorbed from the white feathered garment.

However, this was not good for the enhancement of Long Yu's strength as it would prevent Long Yu from facing life threatening situations which could hinder Long Yu's progress.

However, the most important thing was that at this moment, Long Yu felt that after absorbing the white feathered garment, the lunar wings had forged an even stronger connection with the lunar charm.

Heavenly resonance, awaken!

Long Yu's eyes flashed and he now had a vague idea about the transformation of the lunar wings.

The integration of demon wings with the lunar charm and the white feathered garment had formed a completely different consciousness!

"Lunar spirit!"

Long Yu felt that lunar wings now gave him a speed that was much faster than his earlier speed.

Even a Zhenling sixth layer powerhouse wouldn't be able to catch Long Yu – such was his speed now!

When a battle weapon achieves heavenly resonance with a martial artist, it attains its own intelligence and increases the martial artist's battle efficiency to a great extent.

Moreover, when a martial artist and his battle weapon enter into resonance with each other, the person no longer needs to be in a life endangering situation to stimulate the movement of the battle weapon.

The battle weapon's own intelligence would stimulate its movements on its own in order to save its master's life and assist him in combats.

"With this lunar spirit, I think my lunar wings would understand whatever I'm thinking. Such being the case, let's give it a try."

Long Yu mentally commanded the lunar wings to move, and the lunar wings immediately started flapping.

The lunar wings were imparted white colour by the white feathered garment and black colour by the nine hidden dragon mark. The black and white colours gave the lunar wings a mystical appearance.

The gigantic wings flapped at a great speed, leading Long Yu and changing him into a black and white streamer. His speed was much greater than it earlier was!

“The new speed is too fast!”

Long Yu was surprised.

At this moment, his speed was even more than a martial artist who would’ve practised ‘Horizon is Close’ martial skill to the perfection level.

The accordance of a battle weapon with a martial artist went step by step from resonance level to the psychic level and finally reached the heavenly resonance level.

When the battle weapon reaches the heavenly resonance level, it develops its own intelligence and spirit.

The lunar wings now had a lunar spirit, but this lunar spirit depended wholly upon Long Yu for its existence.

If Long Yu dies, the lunar spirit would wither away because it was Long Yu who had imparted this lunar spirit to his battle weapon.

Oh! No!

Long Yu stopped suddenly and realized that in this short time of half an hour, he had travelled a hundred miles away from his contingent! Long Yu was greatly shocked.

Only a Zhenling seventh layer powerhouse could’ve overtaken Long Yu at his current speed and that too by a slight margin.

“This lunar spirit contains traces of demon qi from the Demon valley as well as the strength of the lunar principle.”

Long Yu felt himself to be under the influence of some gloomy energy.

This gloomy energy was the result of the Demon qi of the Demon valley!

This newly transformed battle weapon was formed by the combination of

lunar wings and the white feathered garment, both of which were made from the body parts of a beast of the Demon valley. That's why this battle weapon contained some traces of Demon qi.

However, while the gloominess soon dissipated, the Demon qi seeped deep into Long Yu's body as if trying to convey some message to him.

"This gloomy energy wants to tell me something....."

Long Yu tried hard to grasp what exactly it wanted to convey, but was unable to understand since his level of heavenly resonance was insufficient.

He thought to himself: "If only I could get a step further, I might've understood what information it wants to convey to me."

It was a pity that moving to the next level of heavenly resonance couldn't be achieved in a short period of time!

Chapter – 171 Imperial Luo clan

Long Yu returned to the contingent soon. At this time, Long Yu was not wearing his white feathered garment. Instead, he was wearing the black robe that he had originally been wearing.

Many people were left wondering where Long Yu's feathered garment went.

However, Long Yu wouldn't tell anything to anyone. In fact, he didn't even tell Baiyun Zhong and Bu Xing as he didn't feel it to be necessary.

The Imperial City was situated around 2000 miles east of Zhentian sect.

Since most of the disciples hadn't entered the Zhenling realm yet, they had mounted upon horses for travelling. Only the disciples that had already entered the Zhenling realm could keep up with the pace of the horses.

The disciples kept themselves busy by discussing what situation they might face while competing in the seven sect competition.

The Tang kingdom had seven major sects – the Zhentian sect, the Knife Cut sect, the Hanbing sect, the Qiansi sect, the Fire Temple sect, the Allure sect and the Raining Sword sect.

However, Long Yu didn't have good relations with any of the six sects apart from his own.

Elder Wu Li and core disciple Liu Ye of the Knife Cut sect had died because of Long Yu, so it was impossible for the Knife cut sect to hold Long Yu in high regard.

As for the Fire Temple sect, Long Yu had not only killed the son of the head of the sect but had also killed a Zhenling 3rd layer Elder of the same sect near the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir!

Although Long Yu had never come across anyone from the Raining Sword sect, he had heard that its disciples were always supercilious and hence Long Yu had to be careful of them.

Regarding Qiansi sect, it was needless to say that the Qiansi princess, Yu Qianning, was going to be Long Yu's top competitor in the seven sect competition.

However, Long Yu thought that perhaps the Sovereign of Qiansi sect wouldn't be too hard on him since she liked his father.

Hanbing sect was Feng Yao's sect, but Feng Yao was not in the Tang kingdom. The sovereign of Hanbing sect perhaps had good relations with Baiyun Zhong as they had formed an alliance for the seven sect competition.

The Allure sect was an all-women sect. Although Long Yu didn't know much about this sect, it always reminded him of Liu Yuan, the beautiful girl whose long black hair had turned white in the Ling Clan village.

"Although all the six sects regard the Qiansi sect as their mutual enemy, for how long would these sects be able to ignore their personal grudges against the other sects?"

Long Yu clearly understood human nature.

In this critical situation, Zhentian sect couldn't trust the likes of Fire Temple sect and Knife Cut sect because in spite of entering the alliance, these sects might secretly try to overpower Zhentian sect. They had to be wary of them.

Long Yu needed to take extra care.

Fire Temple sect and Knife Cut sect might plan something sinister to take revenge for their deceased members!

.....

Three days later, at noon.

The contingent, led by Baiyun Zhong, had finally reached the Imperial city.

Long Yu saw as he walked on that there was a great stretch of grassland in front of them. At the other end of the grassland was the city wall which was around five hundred feet tall!

If one stood at the foot of the wall, it was impossible for anyone to be able to see the wall-top.

The height of the walls of the Imperial city did not surprise Long Yu, but to the others, this wall was extremely magnificent.

Such a high wall was impossible to be climbed upon for the disciples who

hadn't entered the Zhenling realm yet.

Moreover, anyone in the Tang kingdom wasn't allowed to climb up the Imperial city's wall. If anyone dared to violate the kingdom's regulations, he or she was to face severe consequences.

"You all must be very careful while entering the gates of the Imperial city. Make sure you don't casually offend anyone here."

Baiyun Zhong guided the contingent and continued rubbing his beard lightly: "Elder Yan has arranged for our lodging in the nearest inn. For the next one month, we all shall stay in the same inn."

Lodging in an inn of the Imperial city itself was an expensive affair and might have cost over a thousand crystal coins, which was enough to buy a top grade spiritual level battle weapon!

Yan Huanmo had naturally used the sect's resources to pay for the lodgings.

Zhentian sect, being one of the seven major sects of the Tang kingdom, was a rich sect so arranging for a thousand crystal coins or so wasn't a big deal for them.

Several disciples had already started talking amongst themselves regarding how the Imperial city was.

Long Yu, who was indifferent to the grandeur of the Imperial city, arrived by Feng Longsong's side.

"Foster father, shall we go to the Liu clan mansion right after entering the city?"

Long Yu asked Feng Longsong.

"No, we will first take some rest at the inn. We will go to the Liu clan mansion later."

Feng Longsong replied with a smile.

Although it had been six months since he last met Liu Yu, Feng Longsong wasn't too eager to meet her and kept his calm by deciding to rest at the inn first.

“Yes, foster father.”

Long Yu nodded in agreement.

Soon afterwards, the whole contingent, led by Baiyun Zhong, passed through the gates of the Imperial city!

“Look, here comes the contingent from Zhentian sect!”

“Ha ha! None of these is strong enough to compete with the Qiansi princess.”

“It seems that Chu Chao Sheng would certainly succeed in his scheme this time. After all, who can possibly defeat Qiansi princess? They all should obediently surrender their core laws.”

On the streets of the Imperial city, several ordinary martial experts as well as people from various influential families were talking amongst themselves as they saw Baiyun Zhong entering the city gates.

Baiyun Zhong kept his calm and acted as if he didn't hear anything at all.

But several young disciples felt offended by such talks. How dare these people say that Zhentian sect wasn't strong enough?

Their Brother Long Yu had easily defeated a Zhenling fifth layer Elder Yue Hangshan just a few days ago, so they were quite confident that he would be able to defeat that Qiansi princess too!

Although they felt highly offended, these disciples didn't lose their mind and continued to ignore such offensive remarks.

They decided to answer them with their martial skills rather than using their words. The seven sect competition was about to commence, and their performance in the competition would automatically shut these people's mouths.

The contingent took a right turn when they reached the crossroads and soon reached a quiet inn.

“Divine Valley inn.”

The name of this inn left the disciples baffled.

This inn was situated in the Imperial city, they why did they name it after the

Divine Valley? Was this inn different from the other inns?

The Divine Valley inn, selected by Elder Yan Huanmo, had approximately thirty rooms which were sufficient for the whole Zhentian sect contingent to settle in.

Moreover, although the inn was situated in the busy Imperial city, it had a serene and peaceful environment which would help the disciples to concentrate on their practice.

“Here we are! This is the inn we will stay in.”

Baiyun Zhong ordered everyone to stop at the front gate of the Divine Valley inn.

All the disciples followed Baiyun Zhong to the gate and were surprised to hear the sounds of some quarrel coming from the inn.

Long Yu heard the voice and immediately recognised that it was Yan Huanmo!

As Baiyun Zhong led all the disciples inside the Divine Valley inn, they all figured out exactly what was happening inside the inn. A beautiful woman, wearing a long black dress, her hair tied up in a bun and her face bearing a stern look, was confronting a group of some nobly dressed men which probably belonged to some influential family!

Naturally, that beautiful woman was Elder Yan Huanmo.

The men whom she was confronting were definitely the inhabitants of the Imperial city. The head of this group had a vicious look on his face while the other men were standing behind him and appeared as his followers.

“Elder Yan, what’s the matter?”

Baiyun Zhong spoke, wrinkling his eyebrows as he stepped inside the inn.

Seeing Baiyun Zhong, Yan Huanmo was somewhat relieved. But just when she was about to speak, the head of the group of men spoke up.

“Are you the people of Zhentian sect?”

The man sneered disdainfully: “Unfortunately for you, I want to lodge in this Divine Valley inn. You all, go and find some other place for yourselves.”

“Is this Your Excellency, Luo Zixing?”

Baiyun Zhong asked lightly. He perhaps had figured out who this man was.

Luo clan was one of the most influential families of the Tang kingdom!

In the Tang kingdom, the four aristocratic families stood like a tripod, balancing the rule mutually. The status of the seven major sects of the Tang kingdom was next to that of these four aristocratic families!

Luo clan was one of them.

One could assess from the silk robe that the man was wearing that he held a high status inside the Luo clan.

“Yes, I am.”

The man in the silk robe grew even more arrogant after realizing that the Zhentian sovereign had recognised him. He puffed his chest out and with a contemptuous look, said to Baiyun Zhong: “To qualify for getting lodging in the Divine Valley inn, one has to be able to congeal a Zhenling. Have all your disciples entered the Zhenling realm?”

“Regardless of the qualifications, our Zhentian sect had made reservations in advance of the Divine Valley inn.”

Baiyun Zhong continued to speak: “Your Excellency, you must search for some other place. And if you think that Zhentian sect is being unjust, send your Luo clan’s ancestor to me.”

Baiyun Zhong’s words were clear.

According to Luo Zixing, Baiyun Zhong didn’t hold any position to argue with him.

This made the complexion of the man in the silk robe change!

“Have you forgotten who I am? I am Luo Zixing, the heir of the Luo clan. No one has ever dared to speak to me like this!”

Luo Zixing was so angered that his face turned red!

He looked rapidly from one disciple to another and his gaze finally rested upon Long Yu who was standing right behind Baiyun Zhong. Luo Zixing pointed his finger towards Long Yu and said: “Your Zhentian sect is such a waste. You have

no powerful disciples! This boy is of the same cultivation level as me, Zhenling third layer. Send this boy forward to fight with me. If he wins, I, Luo Zixing, would immediately leave this place without uttering a single word. But if I win, you all will get the hell out of this inn!”

Then, Luo Zixing smiled sinisterly while looking at Yan Huanmo and said: “And this pretty woman can cheer for me.”

Yan Huanmo ignored his remarks and her lips curled in a secret smile as she looked at Long Yu.

She knew that Luo Zixing had made the greatest mistake of his life in choosing Long Yu as his opponent. He was simply courting death!

Long ago, Long Yu had defeated and killed a Zhenling fourth layer powerhouse while he was still in Zhenling 2nd layer. Would it be difficult for him to deal with Luo Zixing now while he himself had progressed to Zhenling 3rd layer?

Long Yu was surprised to have been challenged by this man.

The arrogant Luo Zixing didn’t know yet that he was not competent enough to face Long Yu.

Chapter – 172 Whipped Luo Zixin

When Luo Zixing pointed at Long Yu to fight with him, the people of Zhentian sect smiled.

This young man had presented them all with a comic situation upon their arrival in the Imperial city, without realising what a great folly he had committed by choosing Long Yu!

Only Baiyun Zhong's expressions had not changed.

“Such being the case, Long Yu will fight young master Luo Zixing on behalf of Zhentian sect.”

Baiyun Zhong said lightly.

He couldn't afford to attack Luo Zixing first, but since Luo Zixing had himself asked for a combat, he didn't oppose.

Certainly, Baiyun Zhong had to remain vigilant for the sake of his sect.

Although Luo Zixing appeared to be arrogant and foolish right now, perhaps he was hiding something. Baiyun Zhong had to be careful since being the sovereign of the sect he was responsible for everyone's safety.

If Baiyun Zhong meddled in a fight and got injured, the whole Zhentian sect would fall in a great problem!

After all, in this world of martial arts, strength was everything, and those who didn't possess it always ended up being bullied and humiliated.

“Yes, Sovereign.”

Long Yu bowed down to the sovereign and obediently moved forward while gazing at Luo Zixing.

Luo Zixing, apparently the heir to the Imperial Luo clan, was not weak at all; he had a cultivation level of Zhenling third layer.

At the age of twenty, he had made great progress. But unfortunately his talent wasn't sufficient to break through the bottleneck and enter the Zhenling fourth layer.

Long Yu had encountered a similar young master of Zhenling third layer in Hun

Yin city – Yuchi Tao of Yuchi clan.

Yuchi Tao, who had intended to abduct Yan Huanmo, had run away in distress after Long Yu and Yan Huanmo killed his two Zhenling fourth layer allies.

If Yan Huanmo's Zhenling entity had not been damaged in the fight, Long Yu would have certainly pursued him and killed him.

Now this Luo Zixing had the same cultivation level and temperament as Yuchi Tao, and hence it wouldn't be a difficult task for Long Yu to fight and defeat this guy.

"I should stay careful while fighting this Luo Zixing. Being the heir of the Luo clan, he must have comprehended the core laws of his family....."

Long Yu thought to himself as he looked at Luo Zixing.

"You're not powerful enough to defeat me, but you are courageous."

Luo Zixing narrowed his eyes, lifted his chin and said arrogantly: "If you surrender and beg for mercy, I will be generous enough to spare your life. Otherwise, my 'Soul Whip law' would surely kill you in a few moments."

"Since I have accepted your challenge, none of us can back down from the combat."

Long Yu chuckled: "Now come on, attack me."

"You look desperate to die quickly."

Luo Zixing contemptuously laughed: "Since we both have the same cultivation level of Zhenling third layer, how about placing a bet before beginning the fight? If you win, you will get to lodge in this Divine Valley inn along with your contingent. However, if you lose, this pretty Elder of your Zhentian sect would have to accompany me for the evening."

He spoke while pointing towards Yan Huanmo.

Obviously, Luo Zixing had developed a liking for Yan Huanmo!

Yan Huanmo didn't show any special expression and looked towards Long Yu as she quietly accepted herself to be a gambling stake. She was sure that Luo Zixing wasn't a match of Long Yu.

However, Long Yu had different opinion on this.

“I am merely a disciple of Zhentian sect. How can I take decisions for an Elder?”

Long Yu refused Luo Zixing without any hesitation.

“Long Yu, I trust you. You have my permission.”

Yan Huanmo said confidently.

“Elder Yan, trusting me and putting yourself at stake are two wholly different matters.”

Long Yu looked into her eyes and said: “I can’t do this even if you permit me.”

Long Yu’s words touched Yan Huanmo’s heart.

Women are not gambling stakes!

“And why can’t you do this? Your Elder has permitted you. You are such a coward!”

Luo Zixing sneered.

“This is a matter of principles!”

Long Yu said disdainfully: “Are you going to begin or not? If you don’t fight me after challenging me, you would be considered lost. Don’t you think it would be disgraceful to you, Your Highness?”

“Boy, you are so dead!”

Luo Zixing’s face grew redder with anger since he couldn’t get Long Yu to place the bet. Suddenly, two snake-like whips flung from Luo Zixing’s waist.

Whip Zhenling entity!

A burst of xuan qi emerged from Luo Zixing’s body as he congealed a Zhenling entity in spite of being in Zhenling third layer!

No doubt, Luo Zixing was confident about himself while challenging Long Yu as he was about to break through the Zhenling fourth layer!

It was such a pity that Long Yu was not afraid of him even now!

As Luo Zixing congealed his Zhenling entity, the whips camouflaged into deep

blue sky and darted towards Long Yu like poisonous snakes.

“How should I face these whips?”

Long Yu thought to himself. He hadn't released his own Zhenling yet.

Long Yu had thoroughly assessed Luo Zixing's strength as well as that of his Zhenling entity and was sure that he had no need to congeal his Zhenling at this point. He could easily suppress Luo Zixing just by releasing Zhentian domain.

“Zhentian Domain!”

Just as the whips wrapped around his body, Long Yu shouted and released the tyrannical pressure of Zhentian domain.

This tremendous pressure scattered the whips immediately!

“He can released domain?!”

Luo Zixing's complexion changed. He had heard that among all the Zhenling third layer disciples of the seven major sects of the Tang kingdom, only a few have comprehended the domain level of a core law. This had made him confident about his victory over Long Yu.

However, his calculations didn't turn out well.

“Such being the case, take this!”

Luo Zixing would never admit defeat so easily, so he took out a long whip which was a top grade spiritual level battle weapon and could have terrifying effects!

An ordinary Zhenling third layer expert would never have been able to bear even a single blow of his whip.

But unfortunately, he miscalculated his move once again!

Just as Long Yu saw him taking out his whip, he immediately took his Qian dragon spear out of the nine hidden dragon space.

When Luo Zixing saw Long Yu taking out some weapon, he thought he might just condense the Zhentian domain pressure on the tip of the weapon, but Long Yu released numerous spear shadows instead.

“This is impossible! It is a top grade spiritual level battle weapon!”

Luo Zixing was left in utter shock as he saw Long Yu flashing his spear. He was so shocked that he almost lost the grip of his whip.

While the numerous spear shadows blocked Luo Zixing's whip, Long Yu condensed nine hidden dragon qi at the tip of his spear and soon the spear was pointed at Luo Zixing's throat.

Luo Zixing wanted to compete with Long Yu using his Zhenling entity but was suppressed by Long Yu's Zhentian domain. He next tried to compete with him using a top grade spiritual level battle weapon and had failed again as Long Yu had a top grade spiritual level battle weapon of his own!

However, Luo Zixing had not given up yet.

"Face my martial skills now! Shadow wind!"

Luo Zixing clenched his teeth as he displayed a martial skill which belonged to the set of martial skills of his own Luo clan.

Immediately, his whole body started moving as swiftly as wind as he disarmed Long Yu by snatching his spear. However, he noticed that this hadn't startled Long Yu even a bit!

"Your are too slow!"

Long Yu flapped his lunar wings and just by using 30% of their power, he soon overtook Luo Zixing.

"Lamella touch!"

Long Yu swayed his spear as a tremendous burst of nine hidden dragon qi erupted from the tip of the spear and rushed towards Luo Zixing.

The next moment, Luo Zixing's cheek had been scarred by Long Yu's spear and the nine hidden dragon qi had seeped through his body, causing his cultivation level to drop by one layer!

"You lose."

Long Yu stood there holding his spear with an indifferent face.

All the people of Zhentian sect had expected the same outcome.

However, the seven or eight attendants that Luo Zixing had brought with him

had never expected that this black-robed boy would brutally defeat their master.

Long Yu's strength was so terrific that even Luo Zixing couldn't resist it!

Luo Zixing got up and tried to fight once more, but just then Long Yu grabbed his whip and hit him on his face with it!

Slap!

Long Yu's blow was so powerful that the whip left a deep mark on the otherwise charming face of Luo Zixing.

This Zhentian sect disciple dared to hit Luo Zixing with his own whip!

"You have lost the fight. Be honest and admit it."

Long Yu sneered: "This whip mark will always remind you that women are not gambling stakes. Now gather your attendants and leave this place immediately!"

Luo Zixing was stupefied!

"Are you going or should I whip you once more?"

This was a moment of great shame for Luo Zixing!

However, he now knew that Long Yu was too powerful for him. It was useless engaging him in another fight. Luo Zixing couldn't even ask for his whip back, so he decided to go back to his Luo clan and ask for help to seek revenge.

"Alright, we're leaving."

Luo Zixing stood up, gathered his attendants and left the Divine Valley inn to the contingent of Zhentian sect.

After Luo Zixing and his attendants left, the disciples of the Zhentian sect heaved a sigh of relief and started chatting among themselves about how Long Yu whipped Luo Zixing.

"Brother Long Yu, Luo Zixing wouldn't give up so easily."

Bu Xing walked towards him and patted his shoulder: "This whip has not just left a mark on Luo Zixing's face, it has struck the whole Luo clan, and they will not keep mum about it. We have to be careful."

"Brother Bu Xing, don't worry. I can handle this matter."

Long Yu smiled and looked towards Yan Huanmo who was standing nearby.

By whipping Luo Zixing, Long Yu had actually served some justice to Yan Huanmo, who had constantly been the target of insults by the men of influential families.

Long Yu couldn't have let those men go without teaching them a good lesson!

Soon afterwards, a trembling old man dressed in a steward's clothes approached them. He was probably the housekeeper of the Divine Valley inn.

This old man couldn't act till Luo Zixing and his attendants were there, so he came out only after they left.

"Oh! You have brought great trouble upon me!"

The old man shivered with fear as he spoke: "That Luo Zixing is the heir of the Luo clan and is everyone's favourite in his family. When his clansmen would see the whip mark on his face, they would surely inform the Luo clan's ancestor, who would never be at rest till he avenges Luo Zixing. At that time, this young man would lose his life."

He shook his head looking at long Yu and said: "In my opinion, you all should take the initiative on your own and visit Luo clan to apologise to him. This is the only way you all can save yourselves from his wrath."

Chapter – 173 Lu Auction House

Baiyun Zhong waved his hands as he replied indifferently to the old steward: “Zhentian sect has nothing to worry about. Neither me nor my disciples provoked Luo Zixing, then how can Luo clan blame us for whatever happened afterwards? If the Luo ancestor came to me, I would rather advise him to look at the nuisance his own clansmen have been creating first!”

Zhentian sect itself was almost as influential as any of the four aristocratic families!

Baiyun Zhong certainly didn’t fear the Luo ancestor at all. There was nothing that would make him apologize to the Luo clan ancestor.

Zhentian sect was not weak at all!

“Well.....”

The old man was still trembling and didn’t know what to say.

“Old friend, you don’t have to worry. The people of Luo clan can neither harm us nor the master of this Divine Valley inn. Rest assured.”

Baiyun Zhong said as he rubbed his beard lightly. Then with a gentle smile, he lightly patted the shoulder of the old steward.

These words obviously calmed the old man down.

This created some doubts in Long Yu’s heart. Who was the master of this Divine Valley inn?

After Luo Zixing and his attendants left, all the people of Zhentian sect quickly began to settle in the rooms allotted to them in the Divine Valley inn.

The reason why the Divine Valley inn was named so because although it was situated in the Imperial city, it was surrounded by mountains which were carried here by the owner of the Divine Valley inn!

Long Yu roamed in the corridors of the inn and observed that out of all the mountain peaks, four were several hundred feet high. Clearly, the owner of this inn was no ordinary martial expert.

Moving such massive mountains and carrying them to the Imperial city – even

Long Yu couldn't do that!

The Divine Valley inn consisted of thirty rooms; while the strength of Zhentian sect's contingent were sixty, so obviously two people had to share each room.

Feng Hao and Feng Xiaofei quickly decided to share a room, Feng Yuxin and Liao Lele lodged in another room. Ling Han and Lu Guanming also shared a room.

Long Yu and Bu Xing, too, selected a room and started unpacking their luggage.

"Brother Long Yu, are you going to the Liu clan mansion now?"

Bu Xing asked.

"Well, yes."

Long Yu nodded.

"You should stay vigil at all times now that you are here in the Imperial city. You know it better than me that how many people might want to kill you."

Bu Xing said in a grave tone.

"Thank you, Brother Bu Xing, for reminding me to be careful."

Long Yu smiled.

"You don't have to worry much as the Sovereign is accompanying us. However, if you find yourself in danger, use this."

Bu Xing took out a blazing stone from his bag: "This is called the 'signal flare stone'. Whenever in danger, you can reach out to us for help just by crushing it."

Long Yu took the blazing red stone from Bu Xing and felt its heat.

He had never imagined there was something like 'signal flare stone' in this world.

"Thank you so much, Brother Bu Xing. I should now go and find my foster father."

Long Yu said goodbye to Bu Xing and left the room.

.....

A street in the Imperial city.

Long Yu had placed the signal flare stone inside the nine hidden space. Whenever Long Yu might be in distress, he could immediately signal Baiyun Zhong by simply crushing the stone.

By this time, Long Yu hadn't bumped into any Zhenling realm martial expert, so there was no danger to him.

Only if Long Yu was bound to face a powerhouse with a cultivation level of Zhenling seventh layer or more, he would be in danger. But Baiyun Zhong could easily handle such situation.

"Now my cultivation level is Zhenling third layer. I doubt that someone from Man-Heaven unity realm would bother to attack me here....."

Long Yu thought to himself as he walked on.

The men that might be sent to kill Long Yu would have a cultivation level of Zhenling 5th layer or at most Zhenling 6th layer since their strength would be enough to overpower a Zhenling 3rd layer martial artist or the injured Feng Longsong. That's why Long Yu had decided to accompany Feng Longsong.

Accompanying Feng Longsong was important, but Long Yu was wise enough to not put his own life at some major risk.

"Lu auction house?"

Just as they were walking, they noticed a building with a large decorated gate at the roadside. The building was bustling with people and appeared like an accomplished business centre.

Lu clan was another of the four aristocratic families of the Tang kingdom along with Luo clan, Yuchi clan and Wang clan.

At that time, there was a great noise coming from the Lu auction house.

Not only the people of noble families were entering and exiting the Lu auction house, there were also some ordinary martial experts, some uncouthly men and some delicate women too. All in all, Lu auction house was a hub for people of all ages and social classes.

Any person could find things that suited his or her interests inside the Lu

auction house.

Needless to say, this auction house had a reputed name in the trading world.

“Foster father, I want to sell a few things in exchange of some immortality pills or neidans. Do you mind if I take a look inside this auction house?”

Long Yu spoke to Feng Longsong as he thought of the corpses of beasts that he had been storing inside his nine hidden dragon mark for quite some time.

“Of course, I won’t. After all, I’m in no hurry to visit Liu Yu.”

Feng Longsong smiled and nodded.

After taking his foster father’s permission, Long Yu entered the building and realised that the building was divided into various sections.

The most unfortunate thing was that the auction section was closed for now.

In addition to the auction section, there were various other sections that sold various immortality pills, neidans and battle weapons of all kinds. One could find almost anything related to martial practice at this place.

As long as one had enough crystal coins, this place was heaven for any martial artist.

The auction house depended on other martial artists for its business. They bought various articles from the martial artists at a lower price and later auctioned it at the first floor. The highest bidder could get the item.

After entering the auction house, Long Yu went straight to the second floor.

“I want to sell some articles. Is there some hidden place for that purpose?”

Long Yu inquired a girl after searching the whole second floor.

The girl looked at him angrily thinking he was fooling around, but soon she realized that Long Yu was a Zhenling third layer martial expert!

“This boy has reached Zhenling third layer at such a young age. I think he belongs to some influential family. Or has he come to the Imperial city to participate in the seven sects competition?”

The girl thought to herself as she looked towards Long Yu. It was clear to her that this boy was no ordinary person.

“Come with me.”

Perhaps she figured out that Long Yu didn't want to show the articles he wanted to sell to anyone, so the girl took him to a cabin at one side.

As Long Yu and Feng Longsong entered the cabin, they observed that the cabin was closed from all the sides and had no windows at all. No one could see from the outside what was going on inside the cabin.

“What price would you give me for this?”

Relieved that no one could see him, Long Yu took the corpse of the goblin snake from his nine hidden dragon space.

The immortality pill that Old White had concocted from the bladder of the goblin snake had already been consumed by Long Yu following which he had stepped into Zhenling third layer.

However, Old White had told him that the other parts of the goblin snake, like his skin, fangs etc could easily fetch him around five hundred crystal coins.

The corpse of the goblin snake, after being taken out by Long Yu, left the young girl in great shock.

Although the size of the corpse was not too big, since it was kept inside nine hidden dragon mark for such a long time, it had started stinking!

She hadn't smelled even the slightest of this stench earlier when she was talking to Long Yu. But now, the whole cabin was filled with this terrible stench.

“Does this boy have a storage item?”

The girl was wondering.

“This corpse of goblin snake is without the bladder. We can pay at most 490 crystal coins for this.”

The young girl inspected the corpse quickly and said.

Long Yu thought this price was quite fair. After all, the auction house would also earn from the margin.

In order to save some time, Long Yu decided to settle for this deal.

He then took out two corpses of Dragon monster beasts. Since the corpses

were well-preserved, Long Yu got 600 crystal coins for them.

“The horn of the rock rhino beast makes up a very good battle weapon and is so rare to find – 2200 crystal coins!”

“The neidans of 15 demon beasts along with these low grade spiritual level articles – 135 coins!”

“Top grade spiritual level neidan of dragon monster beast – 90 crystal coins!”

While the girl continued to quote the prices, Long Yu was quite surprised at the girl’s expertise at correctly estimating prices. No doubt she was a professional.

Moreover, the auction house bought all the articles at a price that was 10% less than the market price. For example, if the market price of some article was 100 crystal coins, the auction house would pay the seller 10 crystal coins less, that is, 90 crystal coins.

But the girl had paid Long Yu more than he expected for the horn of rock rhino beast and the corpses of dragon monster beast.

This made Long Yu have no objection at all in selling all the articles at this auction house.

“And what about this top grade spiritual level battle weapon?”

Long Yu took out the copper needles that he had seized from Qiansi Elder Ying Luo after killing her.

The girl was surprised and immediately recognised that it was a battle weapon of someone from Qiansi sect.

“I’m sorry, sir. We can’t buy such things.”

The young girl softly said.

“And what about this weapon?”

Long Yu took out the whip that he had seized from Luo Zixing.

The girl recognised that this battle weapon belonged to a member of the Imperial Luo clan and so she softly declined.

“No, sir. We can’t buy such things.”

“Alright, leave these two weapons.”

Long Yu didn't try to convince the girl harder. He understood the girl's situation. The people at the auction house had set this auction house up for the sole purpose of trade. They surely wouldn't want to buy anything that would land them in trouble with influential sects and clans like the Qiansi sect and the Luo clan.

Seeing Long Yu understand the situation, the girl was relieved since she had feared Long Yu might get upset and would leave.

“And what about this weapon?”

Long Yu took out the top grade spiritual level long sword that he had seized from Feng Yao.

The girl's face brightened up at the look of the sword.

Long Yu was certainly not an ordinary Zhenling third layer expert – he had so many valuable goods which were almost impossible for ordinary people to obtain.

Chapter – 174 Making allies

This top grade spiritual level sword of Feng Yao definitely had some connection with Xinghai Lun.

Its quality wasn't like the other weapons that were available in the market; it resembled the quality of Long Yu's Qian dragon spear.

The nine hidden dragon mark had a major role in the transformation of devil wings into lunar wings and dragon spear into Qian dragon spear.

Any ordinary martial expert would certainly not be able to get a top grade spiritual level battle weapon.

Feng Yao's sword, if auctioned, would attract a great number of people!

"Sir, I'm not sure of how much we can pay you for this sword, but I'm sure that it's worth over 5000 crystal coins."

The young girl's complexion changed and she said: "Sir, let me consult about it with the proprietor."

"Alright, go ahead."

Long Yu nodded.

After the girl gave him an estimate for the articles Long Yu wanted to sell, he developed some trust for this auction house of the Imperial Lu family. Long Yu wanted to see this proprietor if he was someone from the Imperial Lu family.

Soon afterwards the girl left, an old man clad in green robe came inside the cabin.

From the appearance, this old man looked very authoritative. He surely must be the proprietor of the auction house.

"Lu auction house is the best auction house you'll ever find."

The old man looked carefully at Long Yu and smiled: "So this young man belongs to the Zhentian sect!"

"My respects to you, sir! Yes, I belong to Zhentian sect."

Long Yu had no good reason to conceal his identity. Moreover, the old man

was a very keen observer and had already figured out which sect Long Yu belonged to.

Although this man was old, his cultivation level was very high. He was a Zhenling sixth layer powerhouse!

From his cultivation level, Long Yu deduced that this old man must be holding a very high status in the Imperial Lu family.

“Long Yu, Long Yu...”

The old man muttered his name and said: “Today, we discuss business and only business here, nothing else. This sword that you have brought here is extremely rare and if I’m not wrong, it even contains the strength of some heavenly tablet.”

Heavenly tablet!

Long Yu wrinkled his brows and looked at the sword that he had seized from Feng Yao.

He had never carefully observed this sword, but now when he did, he couldn’t find anything unusual about it.

But the old man was saying that this sword contained the strength of some heavenly tablet.

“Young Long Yu, let me have a look at it.”

The old man said to Long Yu.

“Yes, sir.”

Long Yu gave the sword to the old man.

The man held the sword by its hilt and whispered as he observed: “Xinghai, the seven calamity stars... The strength of Xinghai tablet... Although it’s weak, I can sense it... This sword is such a rare thing...”

The strength of Xinghai tablet?

Long Yu narrowed his eyes as he figured out what all this meant. Xinghai Lun of the seven calamity stars had comprehended the Xinghai tablet principle and had given this sword, which contained weak strength of the Xinghai tablet, to Feng

Yao.

“Three days later, before the seven sects’ competition starts, the Lu auction house will organise a grand auction.”

The old man grabbed the sword by the hilt and said: “Young Long Yu, I can pay you eight thousand crystal coins for this sword right now. At the auction, I will set the base price for this sword as eight thousand crystal coins. There will be several bidders who’ll pay us a grand sum for this sword. How about we divide the auction money equally among us?”

“I want 90%.”

Long Yu said.

50%?

This old man surely thought Long Yu to be a fool. If the sword fetched ten thousand crystal coins or even more, why would Long Yu be willing to lose such a huge sum?

“Are you out of your senses? 90%? No, I can’t accept that.”

The old man shook his head and said: “I’m offering a base price of eight thousand crystal coins to you. I’m ready to give you fifty percent of what I earn above these eight thousand coins. What else do you want? If you think I’m being unfair, go to another auction house and see for yourself. I can bet they will never pay you as much as I’m paying.”

“According to the rules of auction houses, the owner is eligible to collect 90 percent of the amount collected in the auction and can give 10 percent to the auction house”

Long Yu smiled and said: “Sir, I’m well aware of the rules auction houses work by. I don’t want any base price. You put this sword for auction. I want the 90 percent of the amount. You can keep the 10 percent.”

Long Yu had read this rule written on a wall when he had entered the second floor of the auction house.

The money obtained from the auction was to be divided among the owner and the auction house in ninety-ten.

For Long Yu, this was the fairest rule possible which took care of the interests of both the owner and the auction house.

“Since you don’t want a base price and want to go by the rules, the sword will be auctioned and the auction money would be divided into shares of ninety percent and ten percent.”

The old man said and smiled. He had understood that in spite of being young, Long Yu was not a fool.

The seven sects competition was about to begin and hence the best martial artists of all the sects had gathered in the Imperial city. This sword was surely going to attract a great number of people. The more the people present for the auction, the higher the bid would be.

It wouldn’t be unusual if this sword fetched twenty or even thirty thousand crystal coins!

“Long Yu, do you want to sell something else?”

The old man asked Long Yu after giving the sword to a girl to take inside.

“If you can’t buy copper needles of Qiansi sect and top grade spiritual level whip of Luo clan, then I have nothing else to sell.”

The reason why Long Yu had mentioned these weapons again was the mark that the whip had left on Luo Zixing’s face.

The old man was the proprietor of a well-established auction house. Maybe he had the guts to buy these weapons from him and sell them.

“A top grade spiritual level whip?”

The old man narrowed his eyes: “Long Yu, if I’m not wrong, this whip belongs to Luo Zixing.”

“You have a very keen eye, I must say.”

Long Yu was surprised.

“All the people of the Imperial Luo clan practice whip law and have whips as their battle weapons.”

The old man said with a smile: “However, no one in the entire Luo clan

possesses a top grade spiritual level whip except Luo Zixing and the Luo clan ancestor. I don't think you would have fought with Luo ancestor, so it is obvious that this whip belongs to none other than Luo Zixing."

"So, are you going to buy this whip?"

Long Yu asked the proprietor.

"Yes, but I will pay you five thousand crystal coins for this, not a single coin more."

The proprietor said decisively.

Although it was a top grade spiritual level battle weapon, the whip was completely different from Feng Yao's sword in more than one ways. Long Yu understood this. Moreover, if the battle weapon of the heir of Luo clan was auctioned at Lu clan's auction house, it would only increase the enmity between the two clans.

Unknown to Long Yu, Lu clan and Luo clan had a history of rivalry.

However, it was clear to Long Yu that no other auction house would dare to buy this whip from him.

"Alright, it's settled for five thousand crystal coins then."

Long Yu nodded and handed over the whip to the old man.

A moment later, Long Yu took out the meteorite pendant from his nine hidden storage space. He had obtained this meteorite pendant after killing the uncouthly man outside the Hun Yin city while helping Yan Huanmo. This pendant contained the power of mysterious jade level meteorite principle.

"How much money can you pay me for this pendant?"

As Long Yu dangled the pendant in front of the old man, he sensed the enormous strength of the meteorite principle that it contained and this made his complexion change.

This pendant was containing the terrifying power of mysterious jade level meteorite principle!

It was well known in the whole Tang kingdom that apart from lone

adventurers, only the three most influential families had the access to the principles of mysterious jade level.

The Chu clan, the Long clan and the Mo clan were the only families that could practice core laws of mysterious jade level.

The ordinary martial artists of the Tang kingdom could only learn the lower Huangshi level principles.

The difference between the powers of these two levels was humungous.

If Yan Huanmo and Long Yu had not fought together, it would have been impossible to defeat that uncouthly man. They were fortunate enough that Yan Huanmo had comprehended the ink law of mysterious jade level.

Since Yan Huanmo's battle weapon and Zhenling entity were severely damaged during the fight, it could be imagined how powerful this meteorite principle was!

"Two hundred thousand crystal coins!"

The old man said with great difficulty.

He has spent his whole life buying and selling battle weapons and other articles, but he had never seen anyone bring so many valuable articles at one time, let alone a battle weapon that contained the power of a principle of mysterious jade level.

He would never put such a weapon for auction. It would be the greatest treasure of the entire Lu clan!

If used properly, this weapon could help Lu clan rise and overpower even the three most influential families!

"Two hundred thousand crystal coins are just enough."

Long Yu didn't bargained this time and accepted the deal with a smile.

"Really?"

The proprietor was really surprised. He had expected Long Yu to ask for another huge amount for this weapon too.

But two hundred thousand crystal coins was no small amount. The entire auction house couldn't earn two hundred thousand crystal coins as profit in one

whole year!

However, the proprietor knew that he was making the right investment for his Lu clan.

The old man was hell bent on obtaining this weapon for his clan and would've been ready to pay any price for it, even if that would make the whole Lu clan go bankrupt!

However, he had not expected Long Yu to agree to the deal so easily.

“Yes, two hundred thousand crystal coins for this pendant. But, I have a condition.”

Long Yu said with a smile: “The Lu clan clearly owes me a favour. Don't you think so, sir?”

His words made his intentions very clear.

Whenever Long Yu was stuck in some trouble, he expected Lu clan to side with him and help him.

Long Yu had been thinking about all this for a long time now. Right after arriving in the Imperial city, Long Yu had offended Luo Zixing. Moreover, he already had quite influential enemies – the prince Chu Chao Sheng, his own Long clan as well as all the other aristocratic families.

He wanted to make Lu clan his ally!

If it had not been so, Long Yu would have never brought the meteorite pendant for selling at Lu auction house. He would've rather given it to Baiyun Zhong who would've used pendant as the sect's resource.

Long Yu was surrounded by enemies in the Imperial city.

The only way for him to safeguard himself was to make some allies in the Imperial city!

Chapter – 175 Butian Dan

Long Yu was surely a witty man in giving the meteorite pendant away in exchange for alliance.

Long Yu was sure of the uncouthly man that he had earlier killed having some powerful backers behind him. Otherwise, it would've been almost impossible for a person like him to get hold of that meteorite pendant.

“An alliance.....”

The complexion of the old man changed as he pondered over it. Soon afterwards, he said: “Alright. I have no problem with it. The Lu clan would help you with everything that we can do whenever you need us.”

With these words, he pulled out a jade card from his green silk robe.

“This is the jade privilege card of Lu auction house. Whenever you buy anything from our auction house, just show this card at the counter and you will get 20% discount.”

The old man handed the card over to Long Yu and continued speaking: “Moreover, the goods that you have sold to us make up 208,500 crystal coins. As a goodwill gesture, I will pay you an equivalent of 210,000 crystal coins, that is 21 nuclei!”

Obviously, it was impossible to transact such an enormous sum of money through crystal coins.

210,000 crystal coins piled up in a huge bag would definitely not be easy to carry.

For the convenience of the people, another form of currency was used in this continent, known as nucleus. A single nucleus was equivalent to 10,000 crystal coins!

Just like the crystal coins, the nuclei were also made out of heavenly tablets, but the heavenly tablets used in the formation of nuclei were far more powerful and rare than the ones that were used to create crystal coins.

Through these 21 nuclei, if Long Yu got enough spare time, he would be able to comprehend twenty-one different Huangshi level world principles.

Moreover, twenty-one nuclei were just enough to buy some top grade immortality pills!

Long Yu collected the nuclei from the old man and observed that each nucleus was glittering. Some edicts were carved on those translucent nuclei which perhaps indicated the world principles contained in them.

“Mister Lu, do you sell mysterious level immortality pills that cure damaged heavenly arteries?”

Long Yu had enough wealth and power now to be in a position to buy some mysterious level immortality pills.

Long Yu had been trying to find a cure for the injuries that Feng Longsong had received earlier for quite some time. At this time, he had all the resources that were necessary to begin Feng Longsong’s treatment.

Moreover, Feng Longsong was about to visit his wife Liu Yu in the Liu clan mansion. It would be a great thing for Feng Longsong to get cured before he visited his wife.

Until now, Feng Longsong had been watching Long Yu without saying a word.

But hearing Long Yu’s query, Feng Longsong’s complexion changed: “Young Long Yu, I’m afraid even ten nuclei won’t be enough to get you a single mysterious level immortality pill. Why don’t you utilize these nuclei to buy yourself some good immortality pills? I’m sure you would be able to enter Zhenling fourth layer with the help of some good immortality pills.”

“Foster father, rest assured. I know what I’m doing.”

Long Yu said with a faint smile and then looked towards the old proprietor eagerly.

The old Lu Fu certainly knew Feng Longsong. He still remembered the day he had seen Feng Longsong fight along with Long Zaitian and Yu Ruan in the battlefield during his adolescent years.

Lu Fu smiled and said: “Of course, we sell mysterious level immortality pills

here. But these pills are being auctioned by someone so we can't sell them like other trivial goods."

"At what price does the owner wants to sell those immortality pills?"

Long Yu wrinkled his eyebrows.

From Lu Fu's words, Long Yu immediately sensed that there was something wrong.

"Actually, damaged heavenly arteries are so hard to cure, and the mysterious level immortality pills are so precious since they couldn't be found easily."

Lu Fu continued with a faint smile: "The owner had asked for a base price of ten nuclei. When we will put the pills for auctions, I'm sure the price would go as high as fifty-five nuclei."

"What if I want to buy those pills right now?"

Long Yu narrowed his eyes.

"It will cost you fifteen nuclei."

Lu Fu said: "If you don't want to accept this price, then you can wait for three days when we put the pills for auction."

These words made Long Yu curl his lips.

The price of fifteen nuclei was quite high.

Even after putting the pills for auction, the Lu auction house wouldn't get fifteen nuclei from anyone since there would be only a few people who would actually be in need of such pills.

However, Lu Fu was very firm in his saying that if Long Yu couldn't accept this price, he would have to wait for three days when they organize an auction.

The time for the auction was set to be just before the commencement of seven sect competition, so it was obvious that several powerful and influential people might be present for the auction. It was possible that some people might intentionally raise the price of the pills, and if that happened, the price might go far higher than fifteen nuclei!

"So that's the price."

Long Yu thoughtfully said while waving the jade privilege card: "This card entitles me to get 20% discount, so that makes the price 12 nuclei for me."

Lu Fu shook his head and said: "You will surely get a 20% discount on all the other items that are being sold but not for the mysterious level immortality pills since it is set for auction."

"Really?"

Long Yu narrowed his eyes: "I thought three nuclei won't matter much to the Lu clan. Such being the case, I will not sell the meteorite pendant to your auction house. And I don't need you as my allies either."

These words put Lu Fu in an awkward position. He immediately said: "Forgive me, Long Yu. I'm growing old and my age makes me so preoccupied with all the formalities that I tend to forget about forging personal relations. Such being the case, I'll give you the mysterious level immortality pills for twelve nuclei!"

Twelve nuclei was no small amount, but it was acceptable.

For this, Long Yu appreciated Lu Fu.

People with a cultivation level of Zhenling sixth layer would think it would be easy to seize anything from Long Yu, who had a cultivation level of Zhenling third layer.

Although Long Yu might use his nine hidden dragon mark in order to fight with Lu Fu if that was needed, he was afraid what effect might the nine hidden dragon Zhenling would leave afterward.

Soon, Lu Fu sent a girl to fetch a jade box.

"This is the mysterious level immortality pill, Butian Dan."

Lu Fu handed the jade box over to Long Yu.

Long Yu opened the box to check the contents. A strong fragrance of pills filled his nostrils and made him feel refreshed.

Butian Dan could certainly treat Feng Longsong!

Long Yu happily paid twelve nuclei to Lu Fu. Although he was left with only nine nuclei now, these nuclei were equivalent of 90,000 crystal coins. This was

no small amount!

“Foster father, please take this.”

Long Yu gave the jade box to Feng Longsong.

Feng Longsong received the jade box from Long Yu without saying a word. He opened the jade box while he sat with his legs crossed.

“Foster father, as you already know, I bought these immortality pills for you.”

Long Yu said as he sat next to Feng Longsong.

As Feng Longsong began absorbing the immortality pills, Lu Fu left the cabin along with the young girl since he knew they were not needed there at that moment.

.....

At nightfall.

Inside the cabin of the auction house, it took Feng Longsong almost an entire day to completely absorb the immortality pills that Long Yu had bought for him.

The mysterious level immortality pill was repairing his damaged heavenly arteries, and gradually, his cultivation level was being restored.

Before getting injured, Feng Longsong had a cultivation of Zhenling fifth layer. Now, with the help of the mysterious level immortality pills, it wouldn't be long before Feng Longsong would be able to restore his cultivation level.

“Although the pills have repaired my heavenly arteries, the complete restoration of my cultivation level might take some more time.”

Feng Longsong said as he opened his eyes.

The effect of the immortality pills was clearly visible. Feng Longsong's whole appearance had changed. Before absorbing the pills, he looked like an ordinary martial artist, but now, a strong aura was being released from his body, as if he had returned back to the time before he got injured twenty years ago!

“Butian Dan is really amazing!”

Long Yu beamed with happiness as he could now feel that Feng Longsong was cured. Perhaps his cultivation level would get restored by the next day to

Zhenling fifth layer!

When his cultivation level is restored, perhaps he might stand a chance to enhance his cultivation further.

Feng Longsong didn't thank Long Yu for this gesture because he knew that the very sense of gratitude had no place between him and Long Yu.

"Foster father, let's go downstairs and buy some more immortality pills for ourselves."

Long Yu chuckled since he was extremely happy.

Feng Longsong had recovered from his injury and could now enhance his cultivation.

"Alright."

Feng Longsong nodded as they both headed downstairs.

Long Yu wanted to have a look at the immortality pills available in the Lu auction house in the hopes of breaking through into Zhenling fourth layer.

But just when they reached downstairs, Long Yu realized that everyone was busy rushing out of the auction house as if something interesting was happening outside on the street.

"Have you heard? Major General Long Ji of Long clan is going to Liu clan with a marriage proposal!"

"Liu clan? Which Liu clan?"

"Don't you know? The Liu clan of the golden Pavilion! I had never expected that the Liu clan would make such a great progress!"

"Do you know who has caught the interest of the Major General?"

"They say that he is going to propose marriage to the most talented girl of the Liu clan – Liu Yuan. For a long time, she had been ignoring the repeated proposals from the Major General, but this time he has arrived himself to discuss the marriage personally."

"Is that the same Liu Yuan whose hair turned white overnight? She indeed is a very stunning woman. She would be a perfect match for the mighty Major

General Long.”

Long Yu heard the people talking.

Major General Long Ji of Long clan was going to discuss marriage with Liu Yuan – this was really interesting!

Long Yu could buy immortality pills later, but couldn’t miss witnessing this unusual incident. Moreover, he and Feng Longsong were about to visit the Liu clan anyway.

“Foster father, I think we should go to the Liu mansion first.”

Long Yu suggested.

Feng Longsong looked at Long Yu and smiled: “As you wish, son.”

Not long ago, Feng Longsong used to be worried about protecting Long Yu since he couldn’t practice martial arts. But now, Long Yu had turned into a powerful warrior, so powerful that no one in the entire Imperial city would be able to bully him easily.

Long Yu was finally going to meet his Long clan now!

Chapter – 176 Bustling Liu Mansion

At nightfall, Liu clan of Imperial city.

While there were still four days left for the commencement of seven sect competition, that evening, Major General Long Ji of Long clan had unexpectedly arrived at the Liu clan mansion to discuss his marriage with Liu Yuan. The matter had caught the attention of several martial artists who were present in the Imperial city.

The streets near the Liu clan mansion were bustling with noises as the streets were packed with numerous people who had gathered outside the Liu clan mansion.

The Imperial Liu clan was primarily a clan of traders and businessmen. However, at present, their chief business was the ‘Golden Pavilion’ restaurant.

At the same time, Liu clan sent its young boys and girls for training at the best sects and projected them as suitable matches for the heirs of various other influential families. This was for the sole purpose of forging relationships with aristocratic families through marriage alliances.

This generation of Liu clan had Liu Yuan as the most eligible bride.

It was said that while Liu Yuan was skilled in the traditional arts of poetry and painting, she was also the most skilled warrior of the Liu clan as she had stepped into Zhenling fourth layer and could now congeal her own Zhenling entity!

No wonder, the heir of the Long clan, Major General Long Ji, was interested in marrying this girl.

Since the seven sect competition was about to commence, Liu Yuan had arrived in the Imperial city as a participant from the Allure sect and had decided to stay with her family at the Liu clan mansion in this duration. She had never expected that Long Ji would arrive while she was there.

Following the crowd, Long Yu and Feng Longsong also arrived near the Liu clan mansion.

“This Long Ji looks very high-spirited today.”

Long Yu saw a charming young man clad in golden armour and passing though

the crowd. This young man was the Major General of the Tang kingdom, Long Ji.

But Long Ji was not alone. He had brought three other generals with him – the bald Senior General Yan Shan, the small eyed general Yan Huli as well as the valorous General Ma Shili.

These three senior generals were more like Long Ji's personal servants in spite of having a cultivation level of Zhenling third layer!

Long Yu looked on and found that Long Ji had stepped into Zhenling fifth layer now!

Long Ji was the heir of the Long clan and obviously had access to plenty of resources like immortality pills, *neidan* etc. It was no big deal for him to enhance his cultivation. However, when stuck in a bottleneck, it would be only his own talent that could help him break through.

“Zhenling fifth layer! Long Yu, you should be careful.”

Feng Longsong lowered his voice while standing in the crowd and said: “The people of Long clan practice the mysterious jade level ‘blood dragon’ principle. Owing to this, their Zhenling entities are more powerful than any ordinary martial artist.”

“Rest assured, foster father. I will be careful if I had to fight him.”

Long Yu said calmly.

There was a huge disparity in the strengths of Mysterious Jade level principles that Long clan practised and Huangshi level principles that were practised by ordinary martial experts.

However, it appeared that Long Ji had just stepped into Zhenling fifth layer and had not got enough time to consolidate his cultivation since he immediately rushed to the Imperial city to discuss his marriage with Liu Yuan.

If a fight ensued between Long Ji and Long Yu, there were chances that Long Yu might emerge victorious.

As they moved further along with the crowd, Long Yu and Feng Longsong finally saw the huge gate of Liu clan mansion.

At this time, the Liu clan mansion was decorated with flowers and colourful

paper lanterns that hung from the walls. It was obvious that they had made these arrangements to welcome Major General Long Ji.

The Liu ancestor as well as some other important people of Liu clan was standing at the gate to greet Long Ji. However, Liu Yuan was nowhere to be seen.

“Major General Long Ji has bestowed upon us the favour of visiting Liu clan mansion. We are very grateful to you. Long live Major General! Long live Major General!”

The Liu ancestor, Liu Zeyan, wore a long robe. He was visibly delighted to welcome Long Ji.

“Senior Liu, there’s no need of such formalities.”

Long Ji, mounted on a war horse, said proudly.

“I believe the entire Liu clan is well aware of the purpose of my visit. I wish to know, where is Liu Yuan?”

“Major General Long, she.....”

Liu Zeyan politely said: “Liu Yuan is present in the mansion, but Major General must be aware of how shy young girls are when it comes to their marriage. She has retreated to her chamber.”

“I have come here to discuss my marriage with Liu Yuan. What does the Liu clan think of my proposal?”

Long Ji asked with a smile.

“Liu clan is honoured, Major General, and Liu Yuan would be the most fortunate girl ever to get married to you.”

Liu Zeyan was visibly impressed by Long Ji and was quite content because of the marriage proposal.

However, if it was the other way around, it wouldn’t have been a favourable situation for the Liu clan.

After all, there was not a single person in the entire Liu clan who was as strong as Long Ji.

Liu Zeyan himself had a cultivation level of Zhenling third layer and hence he

wouldn't have been able to fight Long Ji.

"That's great. Such being the case, let's settle a date for the wedding."

Long Ji displayed a wide smile and said: "Liu Zeyan, tell Liu Yuan that I will marry her just after the seven sect competition ends. Tell her to be ready....."

"Shut up!"

At this moment, a delicate female voice echoed through the corridors of the Liu clan mansion.

These two words startled everyone, including Long Ji. Who had dared to interrupt the Major General of the Tang army?

Soon afterwards, people came to know who this girl was.

There stood in the corridor a pretty young girl with white hair and delicate features, clad in a black dress. She was staring indifferently at Long Ji.

This girl was none other than Liu Yuan!

It seemed that she was not at all impressed by Long Ji!

All the people present there started whispering among themselves.

"Look! That's Liu Yuan! It seems that she doesn't want to marry Major General."

"What nonsense! Liu Zeyan has just agreed upon their marriage!"

"Does it matter whether Liu Zeyan has agreed or not? Liu Yuan is a Zhenling fourth layer martial expert; she doesn't need to listen to him. If it had not been for her father she would've never returned to the Liu mansion."

Soon, these whispers reached the ears of Liu Zeyan.

"Liu Yuan, Major General has personally visited us to discuss your marriage. Why are you being so rude?"

Liu Zeyan's complexion changed as soon as he saw Liu Yuan: "Come here, quick! Apologise to the Major General for your rude behaviour just now!"

"It's my wedding that you are talking about! You should let me decide."

Liu Yuan looked at Long Ji. Her eyes were filled with hatred.

“I, Liu Yuan, would prefer dying rather than marrying a monster like him!”

These words left everyone in great shock.

Liu Yuan had dared to call Major General Long Ji of Long clan a monster in front of so many people! Was she out of her senses?

Long Ji had always been polite to Liu Yuan; he never mistreated her. What made her call him a monster?

None of the people present there had any idea about what was going on between these two!

Long Yu didn't have a good experience with Long Ji, but he didn't know exactly what his nature was. But in the light of Long Ji's treatment of Liu Yuan, it was impossible to figure out what wrong did he ever do to her.

Why did Liu Yuan call him a monster?

Long Ji, who hadn't stepped down from his horse, said to Liu Yuan: “Liu Yuan, haven't your parents taught you to think before you speak?”

“Major General, please forgive her.”

Liu Zeyan immediately said: “Liu Yuan's mother died when she was very young, and her father is a fool. She never had anyone to look after her. It doesn't suit the Major General to stoop down to her level.....”

“Will you please shut up, Liu Zeyan?”

Liu Yuan was greatly angered and this anger released a cold breeze which had sprouted from the lunar principle.

Immediately, Liu Zeyan was swept away by the wind; his hair and beard were frozen as if he had fallen into some ice pit!

“It's the lunar principle!”

Long Yu hid himself in the crowd and continued to observe.

Liu Yuan had absorbed half of the lunar tablet just like Long Yu, which meant that Long Yu would also be able to release such an enormous amount of energy after comprehending the lunar charm.

No one had expected that Liu Yuan would not only argue with the Liu ancestor

but would also dare to strike him, injuring him severely.

This sudden eruption of tremendous energy had scared everyone and most of the people had retreated by now.

Within a few moments, all the streets which had earlier been packed with people had become empty, with only Long Ji and his three generals standing there.

Liu Yuan fearlessly stood before them.

After striking Liu Zeyan, Liu Yuan indifferently said to Long Ji: “Long Ji, have you heard that Xin Yueya has committed suicide by drowning herself in the lake?”

(TL: Xin Yueya was a junior from Allure sect and a friend of Liu Zeyan. She had lent her horse to Long Yu and his friends during the Lunar debris arc.)

“What does it have to do with me?”

Long Ji lightly asked.

“You are such a monster! Don’t say you don’t know what I’m talking about! She died because of you!”

Liu Yuan’s eyes flashed with intense hatred: “Today I will seek justice for her!”

“You alone?”

Long Ji smiled contemptuously at Liu Yuan.

He thought to himself if he really wanted to fight her or not.

Liu Yuan didn’t waste any more time in idle talk. She immediately pulled out two daggers and rushed towards Long Ji to attack him!

A marriage proposal had turned into a call for battle within a few moments!

Long Yu and Feng Longsong stood aside and looked at each other.

It turned out that Liu Yuan lost her parents to some accident that happened long ago. Her mother died, while her father turned into a fool who was constantly nagging about what the Gods had done to him.

Liu Yuan’s father, Liu Hongyan, was the brother of the Liu ancestor, Liu Zeyan.

After Liu Hongyan lost his mind, he suffered great humiliation at the hands of

the other clansmen, especially his own brother, Liu Zeyan. This was the main reason that the Liu clan as well as Liu Zeyan didn't have a favourable impression of Liu Yuan.

“Who is this Xin Yueya that Liu Yuan had been talking about?”

Feng Longsong wrinkled his eyebrows and asked Long Yu.

“She was a fellow apprentice of Liu Yuan in Allure sect. Long Ji must have done something really nasty to her that forced her to commit suicide.....”

Long Yu shook his head as he spoke.

He sighed as he saw Liu Yuan attacking Long Ji.

It seemed to him that he might have to help Liu Yuan.

He didn't know Liu Yuan properly, but she had helped him in escaping from the Ling clan villa by lending him her pet horse. Long Yu was bound to help her now that she was in trouble.

Moreover, he never got a chance to fight Long Ji. Now was a good time to test his strength.

If Long Ji was not strong enough, Long Yu wouldn't mind teaching him a lesson or two!

Chapter – 177 Pet dogs

Liu Yuan relied upon the strength of the imperial seal level ‘Lunar charm’ to have an upper hand in her fight with Long Ji.

However, this power couldn’t ensure her victory. Although Long Ji had comprehended only ‘Blood dragon’ principle, he had comprehended it up to the domain rank!

The mysterious jade level ‘blood dragon’ domain must be far more powerful than the ‘lunar charm’.

Moreover, Liu Yuan didn’t have leverage over Long Ji in other aspects.

Cultivation level, battle weapons, combat experience.....

Liu Yuan lagged far behind Long Ji.

Such being the case, no one could ever think that Liu Yuan could be a match of Long Ji.

It was a fact that no one could deny.

Liu Yuan grabbed her two daggers and rushed towards Long Ji like a streamer of white light.

“Blood dragon Zhenling!”

Long Ji, who was mounted on a horse, sneered with disdain as he released his ‘Blood Dragon Zhenling’.

Liu Yuan’s whole body was releasing a huge amount of murderous aura due to which no one dared to stop her.

“Liu Yuan, you have said enough. I will teach you a lesson today for your impertinent remarks so that you always remember that you hold no power to slander people with your words outside your clan or sect.”

Long Ji shouted with great disdain as he launched his blood dragon Zhenling towards Liu Yuan.

If Liu Yuan was struck by Long Ji’s blood dragon Zhenling, she would receive severe injuries. The blood dragon was approaching her at such a great speed that she didn’t have any time to release her own Zhenling entity.

Whether she used her 'phantom allure domain' or the 'lunar charm', she didn't stand a chance against Long Ji's blood dragon.

"So the mighty Major General Long Ji rampages in the Imperial city and bullies a woman. Such a majestic act on your part!"

A satirical voice sounded from the distant crowd.

Then, a young man dressed in black robe stepped forward and stood by Liu Yuan's side.

This young man was none other than Long Yu!

This turn of events surprised everyone who was present there.

"Who is this young boy? How did he dare to speak up in front of the Major General?"

"He's a mere Zhenling third layer expert. He's courting death!"

While all the other people were busy murmuring among themselves, Long Yu launched his fist charged with the power of 'awakening palm samsara'.

The strength of the samsara seeped through the blood dragon and immediately reduced its power by half!

Liu Yuan seized this opportunity and took no time in releasing her own black butterfly.

Earlier in the Ling clan village, Liu Yuan had released this black butterfly while it was still a Zhenling. But now, this black butterfly had transformed into a Zhenling entity and was surely more powerful than it earlier was.

Just after releasing her black butterfly Zhenling entity, Liu Yuan released 'phantom allure domain' in order to resist the advances of the blood dragon.

Long Yu jumped in and blocked the blood dragon from reaching Liu Yuan, giving her enough time launch the best of her attacks.

"It's you!"

Liu Yuan finally discovered that the young boy who had stepped out of the crowd to help her was actually Long Yu, and it seemed that she wasn't pleased by the sight of him.

This puzzled Long Yu. It was the same Liu Yuan who had lent him her own horse in order to escape from the Ling clan village, but now she reacted as if she was displeased by his presence.

He wasn't sure, but perhaps it was him and Ling Yi riding together on her horse that made her mad at him.

"So it's you!"

Long Ji smiled wryly and said: "Whether I bully Liu Yuan or not is none of your business, but I knew you would definitely be here to get killed because of this Liu Yuan."

Long Yu narrowed his eyes.

This Long Ji, how did he know that Long Yu would arrive at the Liu clan mansion? What did he mean when he said that Long Yu would get killed because of Liu Yuan?

"Xin Yueya told me."

Liu Yuan moved to Long Yu's side and spoke in a sinking voice: "Xin Yueya was my fellow apprentice as well as my best friend. This Long Ji deceived her. He abandoned her right after seducing her. That's what made her commit suicide by drowning herself in the Allure Lake."

"I see."

Long Yu wrinkled his eyebrows.

No wonder Liu Yuan called this man a monster. Long Ji was even worse than that. He had wronged an innocent girl by luring her first and then abandoning her!

Obviously Xin Yueya was emotionally shattered and thought it was better to resort to suicide rather than bringing disgrace to herself and her family.

Liu Yuan's voice was loud enough to be heard by the people who were present in the streets nearby. Her words made everyone gawk as they angrily looked at Long Ji.

Did Major General really seduce an innocent girl and then thoughtlessly abandoned her?

Now the people could clearly see why Liu Yuan hated this man.

“What you say is untrue.”

Long Ji, instead of being enraged, was calm and composed: “Your friend Xin Yueya had eyes for me for a very long time. She knew that I wanted to marry you and was also aware of the fact that she was not a suitable bride for me. It was she who seduced me and threatened me to kill herself if I didn’t marry her.”

Long Ji’s words made everyone silent.

People knew who was being truthful and who was lying, but they thought it was better not to offend Long Ji.

Not only was he the Major General of the Tang army, he was also the heir of the Long clan. Who would want to pick up enmity with the army as well as the Long clan?

Long Yu had judged people’s thoughts from their silence, but he didn’t care. What was important for him was that Long Ji’s true face had been exposed.

“You three, get rid of this boy!”

Long Ji didn’t pay any attention to Long Yu and commanded his three generals to charge forward.

The bald general Yan Shan, the small eyed general Yan Huli and the general Ma Shili were quite startled when they heard the command.

“As you command, Major General.”

The three generals immediately rushed towards Long Yu from three different directions.

They didn’t have to pay any attention towards Liu Yuan. Although she was on Long Yu’s side, she and her black butterfly were already busy defending themselves from the blood dragon, so obviously she couldn’t help in any way.

Long Yu had to face these three mighty generals on his own!

All the people in the crowd held their breath. Was it necessary for Long Ji to deploy all the three generals to kill this trivial Zhenling third layer boy?

This appeared to them as if Long Ji was making a mountain out of a molehill!

They knew that this boy who had jumped in to help Liu Yuan didn't stand a chance now and would soon be killed.

"This boy is Long Yu. He is the son of that traitor Long Zaitian."

"No wonder the Major General wanted him to show up."

"It seems that Long Yu has some good relationship with Liu Yuan. But unfortunately he has offended Major General Long Ji; he will have to pay for it with his life."

Several people whispered among themselves since no one of them thought that Long Yu might survive such a fierce attack.

Although they all admired Long Yu for his courage, but none of them could do anything except for watching him being killed by the three generals.

Yet another young man was going to die early.....

"Wait, what was that?"

All the people stood in awe with their eyes wide open. They couldn't believe what they just saw.

The bald general Han Shan hadn't even reached halfway when Long Yu blurred away in the air and appeared right behind the bald general the very next moment.

He had used his lunar wings!

The bald general had never expected Long Yu to move at such a great speed. He had no idea that it was due to the spiritual intelligence of the lunar wings.

"Qian dragon spear, kill ten thousand people!"

As Long Yu swayed his Qian dragon spear, bursts of murderous aura were released from it which soon enveloped the bald general thoroughly.

The other two generals didn't get enough time to rescue General Yan Shan.

As Yan Shan's whole body was enveloped with great murderous aura, he couldn't even think of launching a counter attack in order to save himself. He stood numbly, with his eyes wide open in terror.

'Kill ten thousand people' skill was used by an army general to kill several

enemy soldiers in one fell swoop. But now, Yan Shan was being subjected to the same martial skill by a citizen of the Tang kingdom!

Moreover, Yan Shan knew how powerful Long Yu's spear was.

Yan Shan trembled with fear. It was the fear of being struck by that spear. It was the fear of death!

However, Long Yu didn't kill him. He pierced his armour and arm with his spear and then kicked him off his horse.

"Pet dogs like you don't deserve to ride horses!"

Long Yu sneered before blurring away again to attack the other two generals.

Dealing with Zhenling third layer experts was not a difficult task for Long Yu.

Pet dog!

Long Yu's remark had left Yan Shan in great anger, but he had already been severely injured by Long Yu so it was impossible for him to enter the fight again.

Moreover, he knew that if he tried to attack Long Yu again, he wouldn't spare his life this time. Yan Shan was simply not in a position to defeat Long Yu.

"This rampant boy dared to offend the Major General. Kill him....."

The bald general clenched his teeth to withhold the pain and shouted to the other two generals.

What he didn't know was that neither Yan Huli nor Ma Shili was actually strong enough to kill Long Yu.

Long Yu swayed his spear once again and attacked the two generals at once. One of them was struck in the leg and he tumbled off while the other was kicked off his horse by Long Yu.

This scene left the whole crowd in utter disbelief.

Initially all of them had thought that Long Yu was going to get killed by the three senior generals, but now Long Yu had taken control of the whole situation and was literally treating the three generals like 'dogs'.

However, Long Ji didn't give Long Yu any chance to rest.

While Yan Huli was crawling on the ground after having his leg wasted by Long Yu, Long Ji launched his blood dragon towards Long Yu to kill him!

Chapter – 178 Long Ji busted

Fighting Long Ji and his three most powerful generals all at the same time – it was a completely different case. Long Yu had never been involved in such a fierce fight earlier.

Although Long Yu had easily struck the three generals, he was suppressed by Long Ji's attack.

Long Ji belonged to the Long clan and apart from the blood dragon Zhenling entity, he had also comprehended blood dragon domain!

The blood dragon, full of killing intention, rushed towards Long Yu and made him feel as if he was fighting in a real battlefield.

Had Long Yu not congealed his Zhentian sun, he would have died before he even knew. The blood dragon was too fierce. Moreover, there was a huge disparity between the strength levels of Long Yu and Long Ji.

However, Long Yu stayed calm even in this moment of adversity.

Long Yu had never fought any Zhenling fifth layer person, except for the combat training sessions with Elder Yue Hangshan.

“Ghost flash!”

Long Yu at once used his ‘ghost flash’ skill. Although he didn't use this skill frequently, it was important for him to save himself and this skill was his best shot.

Immediately, his body faded away in the air.

“Destroy him!”

Long Ji sneered with disdain as his blood dragon continued to dart towards the spot from where Long Yu had disappeared.

Although Long Yu had disappeared, his body must still be at the same place!

The blood dragon attacked with its full might and released such a strong murderous aura that stupefied everyone who was present there.

However, what Long Ji failed to figure out was that right after using his ‘ghost flash’ technique, Long Yu had also activated his lunar wings and had rushed to

another direction.

Just when the blood dragon crashed at Long Yu's initial position, Long Yu appeared right behind Long Ji.

Long Yu's eyes flashed as he saw Long Ji in golden armor, mounted on a horse. The next moment, he resolutely launched his fist.

"Intoxicated hell!"

Nine hidden dragon qi condensed out from the ground and rushed towards Long Ji.

Long Yu appearing mysteriously behind Long Ji within a few moments had already left everyone surprised.

The intoxicated hell martial skill was enough to incapacitate anyone. Moreover, this attack couldn't be easily detected.

However, this time, Long Yu had miscalculated his moves!

Just when the power of intoxicated hell was about to seep into Long Ji's body, he vanished into thin air.

Long Ji had detected Long Yu's attack and escaped it successfully!

Unfortunately, although Long Ji escaped the attack, the horse on which he had been mounted couldn't escape.

The nine hidden dragon qi released from Long Yu's fist quickly seeped into the horse body. The horse neighed fiercely before it fell to the ground and died.

Had it been a boisterous warhorse, perhaps it could've survived Long Yu's attack. Unfortunately, it was an ordinary horse which had no chance of survival under such a powerful attack.

As a result, the attack had zero impact upon Long Ji both physically and mentally.

"Long Yu....!"

Long Ji shouted loudly: "Although you bear the surname 'Long', you don't deserve to belong in Long clan. I'll show you what kind of power a true member of Long clan holds..."

Just as he ceased to shout, a loud roar of a dragon almost frightened Long Yu!

“The spiritual level martial skill of Long clan, blood dragon shock!”

“I have heard that this move releases shock waves which can stupefy anyone at any time. It’s a very powerful attack!”

“Long Yu’s cultivation level is two layers lower than Long Ji. Long Yu would surely get defeated by this move.”

The people who had been watching the fight murmured among themselves.

The martial skills of Long clan contained formidable power. Since the Long clan was a clan of warriors, they had created these martial skills especially to be used in a battlefield.

The ‘blood dragon shock’ martial skill was already quite famous all over the Tang kingdom. The warriors of the Long clan had used this martial skill in the battlefield to sweep out the whole army of the enemies, laying the foundation of the Tang Empire.

“Blood dragon shock!”

Long Yu was so frightened with this attack that his mind stopped working. He stood fixed at the same place; he was clearly unable to think or move.

However, at this time, his lunar wings acted voluntarily and released a huge amount of lunar qi.

This burst of lunar qi shocked everyone.

Long Yu immediately came out of his trance and immediately released the Zhentian Sun in order to defend himself from the great suppressive power of blood dragon shock.

The spiritual intelligence of the lunar wings saved Long Yu’s life at a critical moment.

Although the lunar spiritual intelligence wasn’t too high, it instinctively protected its master. That was why when Long Yu couldn’t think, the lunar wings released a burst of lunar qi and saved him.

Owing to the spiritual intelligence, the lunar wings could release a burst of

lunar qi in order to frighten and deter the opponent on its own.

Long Ji never expected that Long Yu would escape his attack by releasing a burst of lunar qi.

He aimed his blood dragon fist attack at Long Yu's back.

However, Long Yu dodged the attack once again as he flapped his lunar wings and rushed to another side at such a great speed that it appeared as if he disappeared in thin air once again.

Bang!

As Long Ji's fist hit the ground, strong tremors shook the ground, scaring the spectators even more.

Had Long Yu been fighting Long Ji without any battle weapon, there was no chance of his survival.

Long Ji wanted to kill Long Yu in front of the whole crowd!

Long Yu's eyes flashed at that moment.

"You want to kill me? You're dead now!" He thought to himself.

Long Yu wasn't exactly a person who believed in forgiving.

"Do you think I would spare your life just because you are the heir of the Long clan? Naive!"

Long Yu thought to himself as he launched his next attack.

"Awakening palm samsara!"

A strong burst of the power of samsara enveloped Long Ji's whole body and made his cultivation level drop to Zhenling fourth level!

It would take Long Ji some minutes to restore his cultivation level back to Zhenling fifth layer and Long Yu was in no mood of letting this opportunity slip by!

"Long Ji, it's time for you to die....!"

Long Yu's eyes flashed as he grabbed his Qian dragon spear and launched numerous spear shadows that darted towards Long Ji and surrounded him.

“You made my cultivation level drop! How is that possible?”

Long Ji narrowed his eyes. He knew it wasn't any coincidence.

As he saw Long Yu launching numerous spear shadows towards him, instead of flinching back, he once again resorted to using his blood dragon fist attack.

The fist he launched released a crimson light all over the field.

Long Yu's spear shadows, bundled with the thunder charm, collided with Long Ji's blood dragon fist and suppressed the attack.

Although Long Ji was still attacking Long Yu in spite of his dropped cultivation level, Long Yu didn't have to worry much about it now.

“Kill....!”

The blood dragon fist exploded with a great burst of energy as soon as it collided with Long Yu's spear shadows.

The blood dragon fist deserved to be called a spiritual level martial skill since it successfully stopped Long Yu's numerous spear shadows.

However, Long Yu released his fist once again condensing the power of samsara on it.

“The awakening palm samsara of Da Cheng level is enough to weaken any person or martial skill and works the same even for the so-called spiritual level martial skills. The power of any martial skill would get reduced considerably under the influence of awakening palm samsara.”

Long Yu immediately launched his fist to fight with the blood dragon fist, and soon as the two collided, the power of the blood dragon fist got reduced by half.

The numerous spear shadows rapidly destroyed the blood dragon fist this time.

“What martial skill is that?”

Long Ji frowned. He had never seen the martial skill that Long Yu used just now. It seemed to him that Long Yu had comprehended this martial skill quite recently.

Long Yu had never used the full power of awakening palm samsara in front of

anyone.

No matter how hard Long Ji tried, it was impossible for him to defend himself from this attack.

“Lunar charm, frost!”

Long Yu waved his hands to release the lunar charm. Soon, Long Ji was surrounded by thick frost.

Since Long Ji’s cultivation had dropped by one layer, he was immediately affected by the lunar charm which contained the tremendous strength of frost.

“Nine hidden dragon qi burst!”

Long Yu pounded his fist on the ground and released a burst of nine hidden dragon qi, which exploded out from the ground beneath Long Ji’s feet.

Long Yu had earlier killed several Zhenling fourth layer powerhouses using this move. Moreover, his cultivation level had enhanced by one layer since the time he was in the Hun Yin city.

“This is bad!”

Long Ji detected the danger that was approaching him.

His pupil contracted as he released blood dragon domain along with his blood dragon to hinder the influence of lunar charm that had been enveloping him.

Bang!

Just as he took a step in the other direction, the nine hidden dragon qi exploded at his feet and barely missed from killing him.

“So close.”

Long Ji flashed his eyes with strong killing intention. This Long Yu was a larger threat than he had imagined. He must be killed today at any cost!

No matter how confident Long Ji was about his own talent, Long Yu’s progress had made him his archenemy!

However, just then, his attention was captured by a beautifully swaying black figure.

Liu Yuan grabbed the opportunity and dodged to another side to release phantom domain which immediately enveloped Long Ji and lured him.

Long Ji was attracted immediately and gawked as he stared at the black figure.

Just then, Long Yu launched his fist condensing nine hidden dragon qi as well as intoxicated hell.

Long Ji was struck multiple times by Long Yu's fist, while the nine hidden dragon qi seeped through his body and corroded all his meridians!

Chapter – 179 Captain Long Ce

Long Yu and Liu Yuan coordinated with each other and finally managed to strike Long Ji.

Although Long Yu would've eventually defeated Long Ji even without Liu Yuan's help, it would've been far more difficult.

“Kill him!”

The same thought reverberated through Long Yu and Liu Yuan's mind.

However, at this time, a fierce suppression power of the blood dragon domain enveloped them. The attack was full of murderous aura which terrified the onlookers.

“Dodge!”

Long Yu's complexion changed as soon as he detected the attack. Without thinking about anything else, he held Liu Yuan and immediately flapped his lunar wings to dodge away.

This time, Long Yu had stimulated the lunar wings to flap at the fastest speed.

The blood dragon roared loudly once more and released a huge amount of murderous aura. No wonder it was the Zhenling of a sixth layer expert!

It was impossible for Long Yu and Liu Yuan to kill Long Ji right now. The only thing they could do was to run for their lives.

Luckily for Long Yu, he had achieved a state of resonance with his lunar wings. Due to this, his speed was so high that it was impossible for any Zhenling sixth layer expert to catch him.

A moment after Long Yu had taken Liu Yuan with him while dodging Long Ji's attack, he appeared right in front of the entrance to the Liu mansion.

Long Yu looked up and saw two familiar figures standing right behind the blood dragon.

“It's the princess and the knight in golden armour, I saw them in the Royal Ancient Ginseng forest!”

Long Yu's eyes flashed!

He saw Long Ji panting at one side. He immediately understood that this blood dragon was not released by Long Ji. The knight that accompanied the princess had released this Zhenling!

This blood dragon's attack was so fierce that it had caused Long Yu and Liu Yuan to draw back.

The two noble figures stood beside the distressed Long Ji.

The young girl was wearing a pure white silk dress with a beautiful garland attached to it. She had a gentle face and was smiling. This girl was the princess of Imperial Chu clan.

The young knight, wearing shiny golden armour, belonged to the Long clan.

When Long Yu had earlier seen this young knight in the Royal Ancient Ginseng forest, he was unable to assess his cultivation level. He only knew that this young man was just too powerful. However now, Long Yu knew that he had a cultivation level of Zhenling sixth layer!

"Look, isn't he the chief of the princess' bodyguards, Captain Long Ce?"

"He indeed is Long Ce! This Major General Long Ji is unworthy of his rank. First he got beaten up by a boy of Zhenling third layer and now it seems that Captain Long Ce isn't going to spare him either."

"Hahahaha"

"Doesn't the Zhenling third layer boy also belong to the Long clan? It seems like today is the day of Long clan's feuds!"

"Long Yu was expelled from the Long clan years ago. It would be highly inappropriate to consider him a member of Long clan."

The onlookers whispered among themselves. They didn't dare to speak loudly.

After all, the princess of Imperial Chu clan was present there.

The chief of the princess' bodyguards, Captain Long Ce!

Long Yu narrowed his eyes as he looked at the knight. Finally, he knew this young man's name!

Long Ce didn't look much older than Long Yu. Nobody could imagine by looking

at him that he might have stepped into the Zhenling sixth layer. Perhaps he was one of the nine young masters of the Tang kingdom.

“Mo Fengming of Mo clan must also have stepped into Zhenling sixth layer. He ranks third among the nine young masters of Tang kingdom. Long Ce seems stronger than Mo Fengming. He must be ranking second!”

Long Yu thought to himself as he assessed Long Ce’s strength.

At present, he wasn’t a match of Long Ce!

As Liu Yuan calmed down, the shadow floating in the air dissipated.

Although Long Yu had saved her life, she was not quite grateful to him since she just missed a chance of killing that hateful Long Ji. Hence, she was maintaining a distance from Long Yu.

She wanted to get revenge for Xin Yueya at any cost, even if killing Long Ji meant having to flee from the Tang kingdom and abandoning her sect.

Her white hair, waving in the light breeze, was attracting the attention of several people.

But the coldness of her facial expression was enough to make anyone tremble like a leaf.

“Don’t be impulsive.”

Long Yu said.

He was able to feel the intense murderous aura that she was releasing. With a Zhenling sixth layer master present at the scene, it was now impossible for them to kill Long Ji.

Rushing the matter would only lead them to their own death!

Liu Yuan didn’t reply to Long Yu. She continued staring at the distressed Long Ji, who was in immense pain due to being struck by Long Yu’s fist. The nine hidden dragon qi was still corroding his meridians.

This filled her with a little satisfaction. Even though she couldn’t kill Long Ji, he was still suffering.

Certainly, pain and death were two different things.

Had it been possible, Liu Yuan would have kicked Long Ji straight to hell in order to avenge the death of her best friend.

“Long Yu, long time no see!”

Long Ce, with a face full of arrogance, chuckled disdainfully as he looked at Long Yu.

His laughter seemed to be ominous.

Earlier at the Royal Ancient Ginseng forest, Long Yu told him that he had been brought up at the Ling clan villa. It was only after Wang Tianzhuo made inquiries, his real identity was exposed.

Long Ce had certainly not taken it well.

This Long Yu had been fooling him all the time in the Royal Ancient Ginseng forest!

Had he earlier known his true identity, he would’ve killed Long Yu right there. Long Yu wouldn’t have been able to resist by any means back then.

However, at this time, Long Yu could escape from Long Ce!

“It certainly has been a long time.”

Long Yu stood there, maintaining his poise. He was carefully assessing Long Ce’s strength.

If Long Ce tried to kill him, how would he defend himself?

Or should he turn around and escape?

If he was to escape, how would he compete in the seven sect competition? Who would save the integrity of the other six sects by defeating Yu Qianning?

“Since you also belong to my Long clan, as your cousin, I want to learn from you. Let’s see what all skills have you inherited from your father.”

Long Ce stepped forward and smiled viciously. A strong murderous aura was being released by his body.

Undoubtedly, Long Ce wanted to kill Long Yu.

There were many reasons behind this.

Most of the people of Long clan had always hated Long Yu. Moreover, since he injured Long Ji who was his clansman, Long Ce had all the more reason to kill Long Yu.

As the entire field was filled with Long Ce's murderous aura, the murmurs soon faded into a complete silence.

All the people stood there to witness a good fight. For them, this fight was going to be far more entertaining than any of the fights of the seven sect competition.

"Long Yu has gone against all odds to injure Long Ji. But I don't think he would be able to defeat Long Ce."

"You are right. He is just a Zhenling third layer expert, while Long Ce has a cultivation level of Zhenling sixth layer! The disparity between their cultivation levels is huge!"

"Long Ce ranks second among the nine young masters of the Tang kingdom. If the Chu clan has appointed him for killing someone like Long Yu, they are simply wasting his talent."

"Do you know why he wants to kill Long Yu? They say that Long Yu's rate of progress is far more than anyone else in the entire Tang kingdom. If he isn't killed right here right now, he would become a greater threat for the Long clan later on."

"A Zhenling third layer boy will be a threat for the mighty Long clan? Are you out of your mind?"

Everyone stared at the field without blinking even for once. They didn't want to miss a single moment of the fight.

However, just as Long Ce was about to launch his blood dragon towards Long Yu, a tall figure blocked his path.

"Foster father!"

It was Feng Longsong who had stepped forward and blocked Long Ce's path!

Long Yu felt that not only Feng Longsong's cultivation level had been fully restored to Zhenling fifth layer; he was also progressing towards breaking

through to the next layer!

Butian Dan had proved to be quite useful since it healed all the injuries that Feng Longsong had received in addition to unblocking all his meridians.

All the spiritual influence that was being accumulated inside his body for twenty years was now at work; it was enough to let him have a breakthrough to the next layer!

“Back off!”

Feng Longsong roared as he stood firmly ahead of Long Yu.

If anyone wanted to hurt Long Yu now, they must fight Feng Longsong first!

Feng Longsong definitely had a far better combat experience than any of the people present there, since he had spent a long time in the Tang army, battling with the Mongolian and the Japanese armies.

Feng Longsong was more like an impregnable fortress which was protecting Long Yu!

“What?”

Looking at Feng Longsong, Long Ce wrinkled his eyebrows.

He certainly recognized Feng Longsong the moment he saw him but never expected to see him in a restored state.

“How is this even possible?”

Long Ce thought to himself as he continued walking towards Feng Longsong and Long Yu.

To him, Feng Longsong, being at Zhenling fifth layer, was committing a huge folly in trying to stop him as he had a cultivation level of Zhenling sixth layer!

So, he continued moving forward fearlessly.

Just then, some people rushed out of the Liu clan mansion. Among these people was Feng Longsong’s wife, Liu Yu!

“Longsong!”

Liu Yu shouted as she anxiously pushed the people out of her way to reach her

husband.

Although she had left her husband spitefully, in some corner of her heart, she still loved her husband. Her life was incomplete without her husband, Feng Longsong and her daughter, Feng Yao.

Liu Yu saw her husband trying to block Long Ce's path in order to save Long Yu. She couldn't stop herself from shouting to stop her husband.

"Longsong, get away quickly. You can't defeat Long Ce. You can't match Long Ce's strength!"

Liu Yu shouted.

"Just shut up!"

Feng Longsong didn't move a bit. He was determined to stop Long Ce and protect Long Yu. He continued staring at Long Ce as he approached him.

"I owe my whole life to General Long. I will protect Long Yu even if I die protecting him!"

With these words, Feng Longsong slowly walked towards Long Ce.

At the same time, his body was gaining more and more power as the spiritual influence began its work by seeping through his heavenly arteries and finally congealing a Zhenling entity in his Dantian.

Feng Longsong was presently stepping into the Zhenling sixth layer!

All the people were dumbfounded by whatever was happening before their eyes.

Chapter – 180 Longsong has the last laugh

Clad in a pure white silk dress, the princess of the Imperial Chu clan was certainly taking interest in the events.

It was known to all that Feng Longsong had been injured severely twenty years ago. The injuries left his meridians blocked and damaged. No one expected him to have restored his cultivation.

This was obviously a great thing for the whole Tang kingdom.

In addition to having restored his cultivation, Feng Longsong was now utilising all the spiritual influence accumulated in his body for all those years to enhance his cultivation to Zhenling sixth layer!

The princess kept on looking at Feng Longsong with great interest but didn't say anything.

She wanted to have a look at Feng Longsong's restored strength.

"Is he breaking through to the next layer?"

With this thought, Long Ce's lips curled upwards. He was certainly not afraid of Feng Longsong.

"Even after he steps into Zhenling sixth layer, would he be able to defeat me? This trivial Feng Longsong can by no means match the fatal martial skills of my Long clan!"

Long Ce was quite confident of himself, and he had some valid reasons for that.

In the entire Tang kingdom, even the strongest of soldiers couldn't easily obtain an ultra spiritual level martial skill. On the other hand, the children of Long clan could choose an ultra spiritual level martial skill as soon as they attained a qualifying cultivation level.

Moreover, the blood dragon was a core law of mysterious jade level and the strength of blood dragon domain was ample to defeat any Zhenling sixth layer martial artist.

In addition to this, Feng Longsong had been a 'disabled man' for nearly twenty

years. Even though he had restored his cultivation, it wouldn't be easy for him to control the newfound momentum of his strength.

Long Ce sneered as he moved a step forward and immediately released his blood dragon which roared loudly as it rushed towards Feng Longsong, filling the whole field with a strong murderous aura!

At the same time, Feng Longsong had completed his breakthrough and now had a cultivation level of Zhenling sixth layer!

“The murderous aura....!”

The intense murderous aura that was being released by Feng Longsong's Scarlet Sword Zhenling entity made it very clear to Long Yu that it was far more powerful than Long Ce's blood dragon!

Feng Longsong had killed thousands of people while fighting at Long Zaitian's side.

In spite of being dormant for nearly two decades, Feng Longsong's aura had not lost its power and was certainly mightier than that of Long Ce.

The Scarlet Sword Zhenling entity hit the blood dragon on its head. An intense murderous aura exploded and quickly diffused into the air.

Feng Longsong's move matched the strength of Long Ce's attack!

This made Long Ce's complexion to change. He clenched his teeth as xuan qi surged through his body.

The blood dragon that was being blocked by the scarlet sword roared loudly as its tail swung like a pendulum and hit the scarlet sword the next moment.

The blood dragon continued to roar as it rushed towards its initial target – Feng Longsong!

“Killer sword domain!”

Feng Longsong's face brightened up. This was the moment he had been waiting for!

Dense xuan qi surged throughout his body as he released the terrifying strength of the killer sword domain. One by one, several scarlet sword shadows

appeared around his body. Each of the sword shadows contained the enormous strength of killer sword domain.

Feng Longsong had comprehended this killer sword domain while fighting on the battlefield. It turned out that this principle was actually a mysterious jade level principle!

This made Long Yu pleasantly surprised.

He had never thought that Feng Longsong might have comprehended a mysterious jade level principle before he was injured. With the Butian Dan restoring his cultivation level, Feng Longsong's strength was just irresistible!

The next moment, killer sword domain had enveloped the unsuspecting blood dragon.

"Kill...!"

The scarlet sword shadows attacked the blood dragon repeatedly, creating holes in its body.

"This is not good...! Blood dragon domain...!"

Long Ce realized that he had underestimated his opponent. His complexion changed as he released blood dragon domain, making the blood dragon roar again!

Both Long Ce and Feng Longsong were releasing such an intense murderous aura that it seemed to the onlookers as if they were witnessing a mega battle in a battlefield.

Most of the people were unable to figure out exactly how much strength each one of them held. All they could do was to gape and look on with their eyes wide open as they were surrounded by intense murderous aura.

"Blood dragon shock!"

As Long Ce shouted, he emitted shock waves of his ultra spiritual level martial skill.

However, Feng Longsong maintained his poise and had broken free of the suppression of Long Ce's blood dragon shockwaves relying solely upon his will power.

Feng Longsong had been caught up in life threatening situations all his life before he got severely injured, hence his combat experience as well as will power was far more than those of Long Ce.

Long Ce's blood dragon shockwaves, in spite of being an ultra spiritual level martial skill, was unable to cause any harm to Feng Longsong. It instead consumed up a major amount of his xuan qi.

"He has such a strong will power!"

All the people who were present at the scene looked at Feng Longsong with great admiration. No matter how powerful Long Ce's blood dragon domain had been, Feng Longsong successfully overcame it just with his willpower!

If such a powerful man hadn't been 'disabled' for nearly twenty years, he would have definitely grown to be the most powerful person in the entire Tang kingdom!

Unfortunately, twenty years ago, Prince Chu Chao Sheng had not only exiled Long Zaitian from the kingdom but had also decapitated all his accomplices.

Being close to Long Zaitian, Feng Longsong was among the first people who were attacked.

Even if Feng Longsong had restored his cultivation level, he would never be able to reach the heights that he would've otherwise achieved.

"Killer sword shadows!"

Feng Longsong resisted Long Ce's blood dragon domain quite effortlessly with his killer sword shadows which rushed with great murderous aura towards Long Ce.

Although it couldn't completely match Long clan's ultra spiritual level martial skills, it was a top grade spiritual level martial skill!

Feng Longsong must have obtained it during one of his ventures when he was young, just like Long Yu obtained the meteorite charm of mysterious jade level.

The whole field seemed like hell with Long Ce's powerful blood dragon roaring and Feng Longsong's scarlet sword slashing around.

Soon afterwards, numerous sword shadows attacked Long Ce at once!

By this time, Feng Longsong had warmed himself up fully. It was a difficult task – fighting a mighty opponent after twenty long years, but Feng Longsong carried it out quite effortlessly.

He was thankful to Long Yu for all that he had done for him.

Initially, Feng Longsong had been waiting for Long Yu to grow stronger so that he could teach him how to use scarlet sword domain, but now it seemed that there was no need for that.

Long Yu had already obtained a mysterious jade level principle – the meteorite charm. Since he hadn't used it and decided to sell it, it was clear that a mysterious jade level world principle wasn't as important for Long Yu as it would've been for any other martial artist.

After all, he already possessed a heavenly tablet!

At this moment, Feng Longsong gained complete consciousness and control over his power and had successfully been suppressing all the attacks launched by Long Ce.

Killer sword domain was releasing several sword shadows which constantly attacked Long Ce.

“Blood dragon fist!”

Long Ce clenched his teeth as he launched his fist to tackle the sword shadows that were now approaching him.

The collision of the fist with the sword shadows resulted in a terrifying explosion of intense murderous aura, making everything look fuzzy for a while.

Luckily, all the people were standing at a considerably far distance from these two people; otherwise this explosion could've killed anyone.

“General Feng, Long Ce, stop!”

At this moment, a delicate female voice floated over the field.

This made all the people gawk.

Imperial Chu clan's princess!

Long Yu looked on and found that the princess, clad in a beautiful white silk

robe, had blocked Long Ce's attacks before physically approaching him.

"Princess!"

Long Ce's complexion changed. He was the chief of the princess' bodyguards, that's why he was called 'Captain Long'.

Why did the princess intervene?

After thinking deeply, Long Ce figured out the reason.

He sneered at Feng Longsong and said: "You are in luck today. Since the princess asked me to stop, I will obey."

He had to comply with each and every word the princess said, even if he was aware of the princess' intention.

"Everyone knows who's been lucky today." Feng Longsong said.

Then, facing the princess, he bowed down and said: "This commoner Feng Longsong is privileged of your presence, princess!"

"General Feng doesn't need to be so courteous."

The Imperial Chu clan's princess waved her hands as she smiled: "Your cultivation has just been restored. You should go and take some rest. You need to take care of yourself."

Obviously, Feng Longsong wouldn't take any special care of himself.

In spite of all that happened, he and Long Yu were safe. He didn't see any reason to be worried about.

Long Ji, who had been struck by Long Yu's fist, had all his meridians corroded and was severely injured.

Long Ce, who wanted to hurt Long Yu, was also blocked by Feng Longsong.

He thought he would easily defeat Feng Longsong and kill Long Yu, but it was him who was in turn suppressed thoroughly by Feng Longsong. This was the greatest humiliation he had ever faced!

Feng Longsong was quite content watching him suffer.

Long Yu was also satisfied but he never imagined that the princess would

actually intervene and stop the fight.

“What a pity I couldn’t kill that monster!”

Liu Yuan thought as she stared bitterly at Long Ji and Long Ce.

However, she controlled her mood quickly.

Long Ce would never forget this humiliation. The next time he would see Long Yu, he would surely kill him.

Long Yu looked at Liu Yuan and noticed that her white hair that was floating in the wind was making her appear more beautiful and attractive.

“Long Yu, come with me.”

It seemed that Liu Yuan had sensed Long Yu was watching her. She turned around and walked towards the Liu clan mansion.

Long Yu was confused. Why was Liu Yuan asking him to follow her to the Liu clan mansion?

However, he didn’t think much about it and decided to follow her.

But just then, he thought of an issue.

The Imperial clan’s princess had left, so now was the most opportune moment to address this issue.

“Foster father, why did the princess stop the fight? Long Ce is her chief bodyguard, so shouldn’t she be siding with him?”

Long Yu raised a question.

Chapter – 181 Liu Yuan's father

Since the Imperial Chu clan had always been against Long Yu, the princess must have sided with Long Ce and let him kill Long Yu.

On the contrary, the princess intervened and stopped the fight. It seemed like she had some sort of truce with Feng Longsong.

Obviously, Long Ce wasn't quite happy with this 'truce'!

After the Imperial Chu clan's princess intervened, Long Ce dared not to fight again.

When Long Yu asked Feng Longsong about it, he smiled and said: "Young Long Yu, the Imperial city is not a simple place. Forging acquaintances here is a very complicated thing. Although Prince Chu Chao Sheng holds a grudge against me, there are a lot of people inside the Imperial Chu clan who don't like Chu Chao Sheng at all."

As Feng Longsong answered, Long Yu understood everything at once.

So that's how it was!

It meant that Long Ce and the Imperial princess were not the allies of Chu Chao Sheng. In fact, they might be sharing a strained relationship with Chu Chao Sheng!

Just like the Long clan expelled Long Zaitian and wanted to kill his son Long Yu, perhaps the Imperial Chu clan was no different at all.

Although both Chu Chao Sheng and Long Ce wanted to kill Long Yu, there still were some people in the Imperial city who would intervene and stop them!

This had a great connection to Long Yu's talent.

Originally, in the whole Tang kingdom, it was only Long Yu's grandfather who had been secretly protecting him while maintaining his pretense of hating him.

After Long Yu's talent became known to all, several people acknowledged his worth and decided to protect him.

Especially in the Imperial Chu clan, there were some people who opposed Chu Chao Sheng and wanted to save Long Yu from him for the time being, making it

possible for Long Yu to create troubles for Chu Chao Sheng and Long clan in the future.

All of it was a much larger game plan than anyone had ever imagined!

In such a large kingdom, any sect or clan which was at the top was usually considered to be balanced or conflict-free.

All the most influential families had thus allied with each other to maintain their 'balanced' image, helping themselves to retain their dominant positions.

Prince Chu Chao Sheng made some very rash decisions during the recent times, which might have irked his allies and clansmen. This was perhaps the chief reason behind the Princess' appearance with Long Ce in order to save Long Yu.

The princess solved the matter perfectly and even had Long Yu's back.

This way, even the Long clan wouldn't be able to directly take any action against Long Yu in case he killed or severely injured Long Ce because Long Yu never attacked him first!

Otherwise, Long Yu might have been caught up in great trouble for attacking Long Ji.

Long Yu was no fool. After Feng Longsong dropped some hints, he immediately understood all the complexities of what seemed more like a 'truce'.

"This Imperial Chu clan's princess looks like any ordinary fifteen or sixteen years old girl with a cultivation level of Wudao ninth layer..... Who's the man standing behind her and planning all this?"

Long Yu thought to himself but without any further delay, followed Li Yuan into the Liu clan mansion.

As for Feng Longsong, he slowly walked towards his wife Liu Yu to talk to her. After getting his cultivation restored and even enhanced by one layer, he would certainly pursue her to come back.

Long Yu didn't want to keep Feng Longsong from finally talking to his wife, so he thought it would be better to follow Li Yuan and listen to what she had to say.

Other people of the Liu clan who had cultivation level of Zhenling third layer

didn't dare to stop either of Long Yu or Liu Yuan.

The head of the Liu clan, Liu Zeyan, was struck by Liu Yuan so hard that he was sent flying several feet away. Luckily for him, no outsider had seen him in such a state.

Captain Long Ce's arrival and Feng Longsong's restoration of his cultivation and breaking through to the next layer was just too much for the townspeople to talk about for months. No one cared to know why the Liu clan chief had stayed away from everything that was happening.

Long Ji's marriage proposal to Liu Yuan naturally held no significance now.

Liu Zeyan had his bones fractured from the fall that followed after Liu Yuan hitting him.

As Liu Yuan took Long Yu along with her inside the Liu clan mansion, Liu Zeyan could do nothing but to watch helplessly in pain.

"Liu Yuan, where are you taking me?"

It was not Long Yu's suspicion for Liu Yuan but his sense of security that made him ask this question as he followed Liu Yuan to a secluded corner of the Liu clan mansion.

"To see my father."

Liu Yuan calmly said.

"To see your... father?"

Long Yu's complexion changed as he heard Liu Yuan's words.

He was not prepared to see her father yet.

"When I was too young, my parents went along with a group of other people to hunt for wild beasts. All the people that had gone for hunting died there, except for my father....."

Liu Yuan's eyes flashed with grief: "However, when my father returned, he acted unusually. My clansmen always said that he has lost his senses, but I couldn't believe them. I think he must have encountered something really strange but found no appropriate way of explaining what he really saw during

that hunting trip.”

Encountered something strange?

Long Yu was calm once again.

Perhaps Liu Yuan was right. Perhaps her father had really encountered something so strange that he couldn't find a way to express himself, leading others to think that he had gone insane.

He must have been panic-stricken with whatever he saw and greatly grieved at the death of his wife. Since none of his talks would be making any sense to the others, they all thought that he had turned into a fool.

However, no one knew what exactly happened during that hunting trip!

“Your foster father was severely injured. All his heavenly arteries had been damaged beyond any repair and his cultivation level was suppressed to Wudao realm....”

Liu Yuan continued speaking: “I hope that you might be able to cure my father, just the way you cured your foster father.”

“I don't have any skill of curing people.”

Long Yu replied to her: “My foster father owes the restoration of his cultivation to a mysterious level immortality pill.”

“Mysterious level immortality pill?”

Liu Yuan gawked with disappointment. She never imagined the reason behind Feng Longsong's unexpected cure to be some immortality pill!

“Alright, but since you have come this far, I think you should really meet my father once.”

Liu Yuan shook her head as she crossed a corridor to enter a quiet garden. At the innermost corner of the garden were two small huts with thatched roof. It was an isolated place.

However, as Long Yu advanced towards the huts, he found that his previous observations weren't true.

The two thatched huts were completely withered as if they were being

repeatedly attacked by something. Behind the huts, Long Yu finally saw a trembling and shouting fearful figure.

It was Liu Yuan's father!

"Don't come near me! Stay away from me! Hell! Storm! Devil! Hell! Storm! Devil!"

The madman got frightened and started shouting as soon as he noticed Long Yu and Liu Yuan approaching him. He was trembling like a leaf!

Devil? Storm?

Long Yu couldn't figure out what the man was trying to say, so he walked straight towards Liu Yuan.

Liu Yuan stood at the garden entrance. She didn't enter the garden. Staring at her father, she said: "It has been more than ten years since my father returned from that hunting trip. He hasn't let anyone come near him since then."

"He is repeatedly shouting about hell, storm and devil. What did he mean?"

Long Yu asked.

"I don't know."

Liu Yuan narrowed her eyes and said: "But I have always believed that whatever he says isn't some nonsense blabbering, it holds some meaning."

"For example?"

Long Yu inquired again.

"Hell, storm and devil might mean that some beast appeared during a storm and attacked my mother and all the other people."

Liu Yuan replied in a soft voice.

Some devil that appeared from the hell during a storm?

Long Yu wrinkled his eyebrows. In the whole continent, the words devil and hell were so rarely used. No one believed in anything except martial arts.

No one would've believed any word said about evil spirits, devils or ghosts!

That's why whatever Liu Yuan's father said seemed like a madman's useless

blabber to the others.

But Long Yu was moved!

He recollected from his nine hidden dragon mark that the place Liu Yuan's father had been talking about was actually Shen Wu continent and not Tian Yu continent. Moreover, he remembered that this Shen Wu continent was much larger than Tian Yu continent.

Initially, Long Yu always wondered whether there was some other continent apart from the Tian Yu continent.

Hearing Liu Yuan's father shouting gave Long Yu some new insights.

Perhaps the Tian Yu continent was just a small fragment of the Shen Wu continent.

The so-called 'devil that appeared from the hell during the storm' might have been some martial artist from the Shen Wu continent that might have entered the Tian Yu continent. Hailing from the Shen Wu continent, the person might have displayed some supernatural powers or would've at least been far more powerful than anyone else in the Tian Yu continent.

Long Yu remembered the nine hidden dragon tribe, whose members were called the descendants of the dragon, where even the youngest of the boys and girls had entered the realm of Man-heaven unity and were far more powerful than Long Yu.

Long Yu had never come across any martial artist belonging to the realm of Man-heaven unity in the whole of Tian Yu continent.

He knew only one man that belonged to the realm of Man-Heaven unity – Xinghai Lun of the seven calamity stars, but he hadn't met him yet.

Was there really some supernatural world outside of the Tian Yu continent?

If not, what possible relation was there between these two?

As these thoughts continued flashing through Long Yu's mind, he said to Liu Yuan: "Don't be disheartened, Liu Yuan. If your father is right, perhaps that beast might just have captured your mother. She might still be alive somewhere. We will soon find a way to get to the bottom of this mystery. Don't worry."

“I feel so bad for my father....”

Liu Yuan said sulkily.

“Feeling sad about what happened wouldn’t make things right.”

Long Yu firmly said: “In order to pull your father out of the trauma, we may have to put him as well as ourselves in the same situation that occurred years ago and to overcome that situation, we need to have extraordinary strength!”

“Yes, you are right.”

Liu Yuan nodded and said: “We both obtained one-half of the lunar tablet. Do you mind joining those two halves and meditating together?”

“I don’t have any problem with that.”

Long Yu wasn’t hesitant at all.

Joining the two halves of the lunar tablet would complete it, and a complete lunar tablet was far more powerful than the separate halves. This was surely going to benefit both Long Yu and Liu Yuan.

Seeing Long Yu accept her suggestion, Liu Yuan heaved a sigh of relief.

She found great comfort with Long Yu. Unlike other people, Long Yu didn’t think of her father as some lunatic. He even believed in the possibility of her mother being still alive. She was grateful to him for that.

However, Liu Yuan was completely unaware of all the thoughts that were floating in Long Yu’s mind.

Shen Wu continent, the nine hidden dragon tribe, realm of Man-Heaven unity – Liu Yuan was too far from having any idea about all these things.

Long Yu and Liu Yuan had bonded with each other while fighting Long Ji and now they were entrusting each other with their halves of the lunar tablet.

Suddenly, Long Yu noticed that his nine hidden dragon mark was getting more and more heated up since the moment he saw Liu Yuan’s father!

This made Long Yu wonder: “What exactly is the matter?”

Chapter – 182 Hell devil seeds

When Long Yu had entered the garden, he didn't pay any attention to his nine hidden dragon mark.

However, since now the mark was getting more and more heated up, it was impossible to ignore it.

What's more: it was getting heated up because of Liu Yuan's father!

"What's the matter?"

Long Yu thought to himself as he silently observed the connection between his nine hidden dragon mark and Liu Yuan's father.

Liu Yuan's father didn't have any notable cultivation level; he was as good as some crippled cultivator. Moreover, he was acting like a madman, blabbering incessantly.

However, there was something unusual that was hidden in his body.

"Hell... Devil seeds..."

The nine hidden dragon mark transmitted a fuzzy vision to Long Yu.

The three words that echoed through the vision – 'Hell devil seeds' changed Long Yu's complexion immediately.

Hell devil seeds was something that indeed belonged to the Shen Wu continent.

It was not some material thing; it was some sort of martial skill used by the martial experts of Shen Wu continent.

The chief effect of this martial skill was that some sort of terror got implanted inside the victim's mind. This provided the practitioner complete control over his opponent's mind.

The Hell devil seeds technique was quite dangerous and potentially fatal. Under some circumstances, the Hell devil seeds could even burst out of the targeted person and infect everyone in his surroundings!

First, if a martial artist of the Shen Wu continent exercised more control over the mind of his target, he could even propagate the Hell devil seeds and could

infect more people through that one person he initially targeted.

Secondly, if a person infected with the Hell devil seeds were to die.

For example, if Liu Yuan's father, who was infected with Hell devil seeds, died or was killed by someone, the Hell devil seeds would be released from his body into the atmosphere and could seep into the bodies of the other people, infecting them.

Liu Yuan and Long Yu stood no chance of escape if he died while they stood beside him. In fact, the eruption of the Hell devil seeds that would follow his death had the potential of infecting the entire Imperial city!

In other words, Liu Yuan's father was a living time bomb. If someone killed him, all the people of the Imperial city would have to suffer.

"These Hell devil seeds are actually just a set of terrifying thoughts that a martial expert of the Shen Wu continent would implant in the mind of a person!"

Although Long Yu was not a kind of person who could be easily deterred, the realization about the Hell devil seeds scared him.

The Hell devil seeds could instill fear in the mind of a person for a lifetime. No doubt Liu Yuan's father acted like a madman since his return from the hunting mishap.

Since he had been shouting the words hell, storm and devil when Long Yu approached him, these words gave Long Yu a more accurate picture of what might have happened to him.

While they were out for hunting the beasts, a strong martial expert of the Shen Wu continent might somehow have entered the Tian Yu continent. He must have attacked Liu Yuan's mother and the other people and held them captive.

Although he couldn't figure out why Liu Yuan's father was left behind in the Tian Yu continent by that martial expert from the Shen Wu continent, he was sure that the same martial artist must have implanted a gruesome fear in his mind using the Hell devil seeds, making him act like an insane man.

"Could it be that the martial expert from the Shen Wu continent has left him behind for some purpose?"

Long Yu thought deeply.

Since their opponent was so tyrannical, it was foolish to think that he would have left Liu Yuan's father behind just out of pity. This indicated towards one thing – the person had some ulterior motive behind leaving Liu Yuan's father in Tian Yu continent.

What motive could he have behind it?

Obviously, if Liu Yuan's father was killed by someone, the Hell devil seeds would erupt into the atmosphere and seep into the bodies of as many people as possible. Perhaps all the martial artists as well as the beasts would get infected by the Hell devil seeds if Liu Yuan's father died!

At that time, the martial artist from the Shen Wu continent might return to the Tian Yu continent to collect his harvest.

If that ever happened, all the martial artists of the Tin Yu continent would obey all his commands!

“Fortunately, there is something that's keeping this person away from the Tian Yu continent. Otherwise, he could've killed Liu Yuan's father right after he infected him with the Hell devil seeds, making it erupt immediately and infect people all over the Tang kingdom...”

Long Yu figured out that although the person behind such a condition of Liu Yuan's father was dangerous and tyrannical, it wasn't impossible to stop him since there was already something that was stopping him from carrying out his devious plans.

Although all this was a mere speculation, Long Yu's nine hidden dragon mark had at least provided him with some vague details that he didn't know earlier.

Tian Yu continent was not all what this world was made up of. There was a continent called Shen Wu continent which was full of mysterious and magical beings.

Tian Yu continent was just a small fragment of Shen Wu continent!

Long Yu wasn't sure of how many people in Tian Yu continent knew about Shen Wu continent. All he knew was that without entering the realm of the

resonance of heaven and man, it was impossible for anyone to even observe the expanse of Shen Wu continent.

“Tian Yu continent is in danger....!”

Long Yu believed the nine hidden mark completely. Just one question bothered him now: Were there any other people besides Liu Yuan’s father who were infected by the Hell devil seeds?

This was almost impossible for him to know.

At this time, he could only seek his nine hidden dragon mark to help him get some answers about whether there was a way to cure Liu Yuan’s father of the effects of Hell devil seeds.

A cure to her father’s illness would come as a great relief to Liu Yuan.

Only that Long Yu had no idea where to plant the Hell devil seeds should he find a cure and get it out of Liu Yuan’s father.

“Hell devil seeds is a mystical martial skill. To fight with a mystical martial skill, one either has to have an extraordinarily strong willpower or a similar mystical martial skill.”

Through his nine hidden dragon mark, Long Yu had come to know that it was almost impossible for him to obtain a mystical martial skill.

It seemed like the Shen Wu continent was far more formidable than the Tian Yu continent. Let alone the Tang kingdom, there wasn’t a single person in the entire Tian Yu continent who held the strength to defeat someone from Shen Wu continent!

Liu Yuan had been standing at a side all this time, observing Long Yu.

Long Yu maintained his composure as he kept staring at her father silently for a long time. No one could tell what exactly was going on his mind.

“Long Yu, what did you see? Did you figure out something?”

Liu Yuan asked him after some time.

Her clear voice pulled Long Yu back to the reality from his meditation-like state.

The situation about the Hell devil seeds and its cure was a different case altogether. What Long Yu could immediately do was to get Zhentian sect as well as Liu Yuan to his aid in safeguarding Liu Yuan's father from getting killed.

"Liu Yuan, I want to ask you a question. Can you think of anyone who might bear some enmity or grudge towards your father? Is there someone who wants him dead?"

Long Yu asked Liu Yuan.

"My father was a simple man even before he met with this accident. He was good to everyone."

Liu Yuan's eyes turned red as she reminisced about her childhood days when her father was a sane man.

"My father never had any enemies, and I don't think anyone would care to settle scores with a lunatic now!"

As she spoke, a miserable smile stretched across her lips.

Her father had been a madman for years. If anyone tried to kill a madman, what would that get them?

All these years, no one gave a damn about her father, as if he was dead already!

Had she not been paying for his caretakers; her father would've been left on the streets to die.

"That's good...."

Long Yu said after hesitating for a moment. He couldn't tell her about Hell devil seeds since it would be too shocking for her to believe.

Liu Yuan knew that there was some issue that Long Yu had been keeping from her, but she was aware of the fact that Long Yu was doing it without any malicious intentions.

The chief reason for Long Yu not telling Liu Yuan about everything was that Liu Yuan couldn't actually do anything about it.

Whether he told Liu Yuan or not, Hell devil seeds remained a threat to

everyone and hence Long Yu needed to find a cure for Liu Yuan's father by first finding the whereabouts of this strange martial skill.

Long Yu was doing it not only for Liu Yuan but for himself too.

If the Hell devil seeds ever erupted into the atmosphere, the entire Tang kingdom or perhaps the entire Tian Yu continent would be infected by it which would turn everyone into the playthings of a strange martial artist!

Long Yu had no other way out except to cure Liu Yuan's father.

Although he didn't care much about Liu Yuan or her father, he had to do it in order to ensure the safety of every unsuspecting person in the Tang kingdom, including his loved ones.

"There is a way through which we can save your father. We can treat your father, and this can happen if we practice a mystical martial skill."

Long Yu said with serenity.

Mystical martial skill?

Liu Yuan was stunned. Obviously, she had never heard about a 'mystical martial skill' until now from Long Yu.

"I will provide you with all the details later. First, I have to gather more information about the mystical martial skills. I want to be sure that learning a mystical martial skill can actually help us in treating your father."

Long Yu said.

"Sure! I will wait for you."

Liu Yuan nodded gently.

However, she was unable to figure out whether Long Yu was telling her the truth. Was there really something such as a mystical martial skill? Moreover, she didn't know how the unified pieces of the lunar tablet could help them in learning a mystical martial skill.

Was Long Yu making up this whole story in order to get hold of the other half of the lunar tablet?

The Imperial Chu clan had repeatedly been trying to find a lunar tablet, but

after searching over the years, they were unable to find it. All they had been able to find was the mineral lode near the Ling clan village which produced lunar debris every once in a while.

Liu Yuan never possessed any heavenly tablet earlier and she couldn't have found it had she not followed Long Yu and fallen in the underground chamber with him.

She owed it to Long Yu!

Since she couldn't find any other way to thank him at that time, she lent her horse to Long Yu to show her gratitude and to pave a way for maintaining good relations with him.

Now it seemed to her that her strategy had been quite fruitful.

Long Yu found a way to cure her father of his insanity!

Liu Yuan didn't ask any questions from Long Yu since she was aware that he had some secrets of his own. Pestering him about them was only going to irritate him.

So, she turned around and said to Long Yu: "I want to comprehend the lunar tablet first. In fact, I know of an amazing place where we can comprehend the lunar tablet together. It's the same place where I meditated to comprehend the lunar charm very quickly."

"Where is that place?"

Long Yu seemed interested.

If he could comprehend the lunar tablet quickly, it would be beneficial for him.

"You have to come with me if you want to know."

Liu Yuan smiled as she turned around to rush outside the Liu clan mansion.

The place that Liu Yuan was going to was not inside the Liu clan mansion. In fact, it was nowhere near the Imperial city. Long Yu had to follow her immediately so as to not lose track of her.

Long Yu had been so busy thinking about the Hell devil seeds again that he didn't notice that a group of people were following him as he left the Imperial

city.

The target of these people was obvious – Long Yu!

Chapter – 183 Hantan Snow Valley

These people who wanted to kill Long Yu were actually the members of Imperial Wang clan.

Leading this team was an old, white-haired man with long beard. Not only was this man a Zhenling fifth layer powerhouse, he was also an experienced warrior!

He had served as the chief bodyguard to more than ten princes of the Imperial Wang clan and was now out to chase down Long Yu and Liu Yuan.

Long Ji had recently entered Zhenling fifth layer. He never had had enough time to practice his newfound strength. Moreover, he was too young. Had he been fighting with the old bodyguard, he stood absolutely no chance of winning against him.

The old bodyguard was not alone. He had brought a team of Zhenling third layer and Zhenling fourth layer bodyguards along with him. These bodyguards were some of the most powerful people the Wang clan had.

The Imperial Wang clan was as influential as the Zhentian sect itself. Each member of the team of bodyguards that accompanied the old bodyguard was almost as strong as the pavilion elders of the Zhentian sect, like Old black and Yu Shuiyun.

To deal with a Zhenling third layer expert like Long Yu, the old bodyguard believed himself to be more than sufficient.

Apart from the old bodyguard, some other people in the team also had a cultivation level of Zhenling fifth layer.

Among these people was the eldest son of the Prince of the Imperial Wang clan, Wang Yuanchen.

“Wang Tianzhuo was a strong lad. I still can’t believe it was this Long Yu who crippled him...”

Wang Yuanchen and the old bodyguard were talking to each other. Their faces bore ruthless expressions.

“He was alone, but this time we will go together. We will capture that boy alive and seize his heavenly tablet.”

The old bodyguard said thoughtfully.

“Old bodyguard, do you know where this boy and Liu Yuan are headed to?”

Wang Yuanchen had recently returned to the Imperial city to participate in the seven sects’ competition after spending a long time venturing out and enhancing his cultivation.

He received the news of Long Yu’s presence in the Imperial city as soon as he returned home. He wanted to kill Long Yu before the commencement of the seven sects’ competition.

“They must be headed to Hantan snow valley.”

The old bodyguard said with great confidence: “Both of them possess one half of the lunar tablet. Since the effect of the lunar tablet has a striking similarity with the environment of the Hantan snow valley, that place would greatly facilitate the comprehension of lunar principle.”

“Hantan snow valley.”

A sinister smile swept over Wang Yuanchen’s face: “Alright then! This Hantan snow valley will be the grave of Long Yu!”

.....

Liu Yuan was leading the way while Long Yu followed her. Their destination really was Hantan snow valley.

The valley was surrounded by some low mountains. At the centre of the valley was situated the Hantan snow lake, which stayed frozen all around the year. This frozen lake made the surroundings even cooler.

The environment of the place was in fact quite similar to the effect of the lunar principle. Hence, the place would truly facilitate a quick comprehension of the lunar principle.

Although Liu Yuan was less talented than Long Yu, she had been successful in comprehending the lunar charm faster and better than Long Yu owing to this place.

There were no beasts in these mountains. The Tang kingdom was full of so many powerful martial artists that it was impossible for any beast to survive in

this part of the kingdom for long.

If any beast dared to enter these mountains, it would basically court death!

Soon afterwards, Long Yu entered the sierra along with Liu Yuan. A wave of spine-chilling air touched his face.

“Hantan snow valley’s environment seems quite familiar.”

The cold air pulled Long Yu back to the reality. He had been completely consumed in the thoughts of devil magical plant.

There was no specific cure for the devil magical plant. They could only make sure that Liu Yuan’s father, who was acting like a lunatic, didn’t end up in trouble with anyone.

Had someone been bearing grudges for him since the days prior to the accident, why would they be waiting till now to settle the scores?

Therefore, Long Yu wasn’t too worried about the safety of Liu Yuan’s father.

What was more important to them at that time was to promote their strength so that they would be well prepared till the next time they face Long Ji.

Long Ji was already at Zhenling fifth layer!

Now Long Yu was sure that Yu Qianning of Qiansi Sect must also have stepped into Zhenling fifth layer by now.

Chu Chao Sheng had been preparing his own daughter as the ultimate weapon against all the other sects. If Yu Qianning won the seven sects competition, all the other sects would have to surrender their core laws to the Qiansi sect!

To defeat Yu Qianning, Long Yu needed to be stronger than her!

Meditating in Hantan snow valley was a golden opportunity for Long Yu. If he succeeded to enhance his comprehension of the lunar charm even by one level, he could experience a considerable increase in his overall strength.

“Come with me.”

Liu Yuan rushed along with Long Yu down the slope of a mountain amidst the frigid breeze that was flowing.

“This is Hantan snow valley.”

Long Yu continued following Liu Yuan. What he saw next seemed to him as if he had entered a kingdom of snow!

The Imperial city's geographical location wasn't quite towards the north. That was why it was far away from any hills, let alone any ice-capped mountains. Surprisingly, a place like Hantan snow valley existed near the Imperial city.

At the centre of this valley was a small lake that had been frozen for ages. It was from this frozen lake that the cold breeze was originating.

Hantan snow valley was a dangerous place to be at. If any martial artist who hadn't stepped into the Zhenling realm yet tried to go inside the valley, he would surely die of the biting cold.

"The place where we are headed to is still far away."

Liu Yuan smiled as she informed Long Yu.

"It is still far?"

Long Yu was surprised.

Since the moment he entered the valley, he had been feeling a new surge of energy running through his body. He was sure that this place was perfect for comprehending lunar charm!

However, now, Liu Yuan informed him that they were not there yet.

Seeing the confused expression on Long Yu's face, Liu Yuan stepped forward and started walking on the surface of a frozen lake. Long Yu noticed that wherever she stepped, her steps created fissures on the surface of the lake!

"We have to enter this frozen lake and reach its bottom. The temperature is the lowest there, so that spot would be most suitable for comprehending the lunar principle."

Liu Yuan smiled as she explained to Long Yu.

"Oh! I see."

Long Yu was astonished. He realised that Liu Yuan's intelligence equalled her beauty.

It seemed that the martial artists of Tian Yu continent stopped at nothing to

enhance their strength.

As long as they could remain conscious, they could practice inside the frozen lake.

“Lunar tablet, take it out!”

Long Yu said as he took out his half of the lunar tablet and grabbed his Qian dragon spear in another hand to release numerous spear shadows. The frozen lake was soon split into several pieces and looked much like a spider web.

Long Yu’s Qian dragon spear had created a deep gulf at the centre of the lake.

Long Yu didn’t stop at this. He continued waving his spear and now displayed ‘kill ten thousand people’ skill to deepen the gulf further till it reached the bottom of the lake!

The gulf was as wide as needed to accommodate two people inside it.

At this moment, Liu Yuan also took out her half of the lunar tablet and was ready to slip inside the gulf with Long Yu.

Immediately, the two halves of the lunar tablet joined together, completing the lunar tablet.

As soon as the fusion of lunar tablet was completed, the tablet released a formidable amount of energy. Both Long Yu and Liu Yuan were extremely happy.

They were sure that comprehending the next level of lunar principle would enhance their strength manifold.

“I should be able to quickly comprehend the lunar principle here!”

Long Yu’s face beamed as he looked at Liu Yuan.

They both nodded and jumped inside the gulf at the centre of the lake together, along with the lunar tablet.

The fusion of the two halves of the lunar tablet had caused a sudden drop in the temperature.

The drop was so extensive that soon the gulf that Long Yu had created froze back into its original state, as if no human had ever entered the lake.

However, the temperature inside the lake hardly went through any change.

Long Yu and Liu Yuan were unable to move inside the gulf due to extremely low temperature.

Above Long Yu was a layer of ice almost eleven feet thick, so it was impossible for him to see anything. All he could see was a faint glow of the sun shining above them.

Such type of practice method was extremely dangerous!

Even the slightest negligence could exhaust their bodies of Xuan qi. If that happened, there would be no way out for them to break through the frozen lake and they might die while buried in ice.

Although Liu Yuan had had a prior experience with practicing at the bottom of the lake, the fusion of the two halves of the lunar tablet had increased the pressure being exerted upon her.

“I don’t think we will get a long time to practice here. But I’m sure that our practice would be more effective than ever.”

Liu Yuan thought to herself.

However, practising at the bottom of the frozen lake, these two people had no idea that they were being followed by another group of people who were there to kill them!

The old bodyguard and Wang Yuanchen were leading the team of other nine bodyguards and had now reached the Hantan snow valley.

“Where are they?”

The old bodyguard and Wang Yuanchen looked in all directions but couldn’t find a single sign of another human.

“The temperature is lower here. I’m sure they must be nearby. They can hide themselves but they cannot stop the influence of the lunar tablet from revealing itself.”

Wang Yuanchen’s complexion changed: “Search everywhere. If anyone finds their trail, immediately inform the others. Make sure they don’t escape.”

Each one of the nine bodyguards rushed in different directions to search for Long Yu and Liu Yuan.

None of them could ever imagine that Long Yu and Liu Yuan had entered the frozen lake and were now practising at the bottom of it!

Certainly, as the time would pass, they would realize where the two of them were hidden.

The clash of the two parties was inevitable!

Chapter – 184 Advantageous environment

A day and a night passed quickly.

The nine bodyguards of the princes of Imperial Wang clan had been searching thoroughly for Long Yu and Liu Yuan, but couldn't find any sign of them. The sudden drop in the temperature near the frozen lake caused them to tremble because of cold.

The core law that the Wang clan practiced was called 'Wang tiger law' and was originally comprehended from the tactics of the most ferocious tigers. However, in spite of being able to comprehend such a powerful core law, the bodyguards had become languid because of the biting cold and were unable to use the core law.

"Where did they go?"

Wang Yuanchen's complexion turned uglier. The fact that Long Yu and Liu Yuan had disappeared within a few minutes angered him.

Only the drop in the temperature affirmed that Long Yu and Liu Yuan were present nearby.

"Hantan snow valley is freezing. The breeze is getting colder and colder. They must be hiding someplace near the frozen lake..."

The old bodyguard was very experienced. He continued looking near the lake and finally a chiselled spot at the centre of the lake caught his attention.

"Are they at the bottom of the lake?"

The old bodyguard's heart jumped at the possibility. He was more shocked than surprised.

The Hantan snow valley had quite a low temperature throughout the year, keeping this lake frozen all the time. Moreover, the lunar tablet had decreased the temperature further, not to mention the bottom of the lake was even colder!

Why did Long Yu and Liu Yuan choose to enter the lake under such dangerous circumstances?

No doubt such a low temperature would facilitate the comprehension of lunar

tablet, but the stakes were very high to be taking such a risk.

“Break open this frozen lake. I think they might be hiding inside the lake.” The old bodyguard ordered the others.

All the other bodyguards were quite surprised.

Long Yu and Liu Yuan were hiding at the bottom of the frozen lake?

This was absolutely crazy!

However, this might explain why they couldn't find them in spite of continuously searching for a day and a night.

Immediately, an ominous look flashed in Wang Yuanchen's eyes.

“Let's see how long can they hide from us!”

As Wang Yuanchen waved his hands, the nine bodyguards of the Wang prince began digging the surface of the lake.

The ice shattered with a loud sound.

.....

At the bottom of the Hantan Lake—

Long Yu and Liu Yuan had been practising for an entire day and a night.

Long Yu didn't know about how much Liu Yuan was able to comprehend but he was sure that by night, he would enter the next stage of comprehension of the lunar charm.

Originally, Long Yu had comprehended the lunar charm but hadn't been able to comprehend the lunar domain.

However, practising at the bottom of the frozen Hantan Lake for just a day enabled him to comprehend lunar domain!

In order to enter the realm of Man-heaven unity, one had to practice beyond domain level.

The intensity of the lunar domain that Long Yu had comprehended was more than that of the Blood Dragon domain practised by the Long clan.

Although the Blood dragon domain was quite formidable, the lunar principle

was a law of imperial seal level and was a level above Blood dragon principle.

The disparity in the strength levels could actually make a Zhenling third layer expert like Long Yu much more powerful than the Zhenling fifth layer expert, Long Ji!

The lunar tablet indeed had a powerful presence.

“The effect of the lunar tablet has increased since I comprehended the lunar domain. The temperature has dropped further as well. Should we leave this place now?”

Long Yu was thinking when just then, he heard some noise coming from the surface of the lake, as if someone was trying to break the ice on the surface and enter the lake.

“Who’s that?”

Long Yu was surprised at the thought of someone else trying to enter the lake.

Did this person know that he and Liu Yuan were at the bottom of the lake?

Long Yu wanted to warn Liu Yuan, but he couldn’t move since he was trapped in the ice. He wasn’t sure whether Liu Yuan had discovered this or not.

Whatever might be the case, he knew that he had to be ready to fight.

The next moment, Long Yu activated his nine hidden dragon mark which released a great amount of heat.

“Nine hidden dragon fist!”

Long Yu released his fist towards the surface of the lake.

Since he was stuck in a crisis, he used all his might to launch the fist. The power of the fist made the people who were present at the surface of the pool gawk all of a sudden.

Long Yu jumped from within the lake and shot up in the sky, releasing a dense aura of nine hidden dragon qi.

A fist, merely a fist had shaken up the entire Hantan Lake. The humungous power of nine hidden dragon qi left everyone terrified, including the old bodyguard.

The old bodyguard was the chief bodyguard of the princes of Imperial Wang clan.

He never expected Long Yu to take the initiative of attacking them from the lake, let alone making him his primary target.

“Is this the Wang clan?”

Long Yu looked on to see a startled Wang Yuanchen.

His appearance was quite similar to Wang Tianzhuo, with whom Long Yu had already had an encounter before. This made it easy for Long Yu to guess this guy’s background.

Since he was facing the enemies, he needn’t hesitate while attacking them.

“Lunar domain!”

Long Yu didn’t waste a single moment and released the newly comprehended lunar domain, which soon enveloped all his enemies completely.

Although he was on his own facing ten of the strongest bodyguards of the Wang clan, he didn’t hesitate for a single second, for he knew that his hesitation would not only lead to Liu Yuan’s death but could also take the lunar tablet away from him.

Just as Long Yu released the lunar domain, the temperature of the Hantan Snow valley dropped once again.

The lunar domain completely enveloped everyone who was present there and caused an avalanche. Had any ordinary person been present there, he would have surely been frozen to death within a few seconds.

All the people of the Wang clan, including Wang Yuanchen, immediately stimulated their Xuan qi in an attempt to resist Long Yu’s lunar domain.

The cold environment of the Hantan snow valley was making Long Yu’s attack even fiercer. If the people of the Wang clan failed to resist the lunar domain, the freezing wind would enter their body and coagulate their blood, causing immediate death.

“Lunar wings, activate!”

Right after releasing the lunar domain, Long Yu flapped his lunar wings at the highest speed possible and reached the old bodyguard within a snap.

Since Long Yu had attained resonance with his lunar wings, even a Zhenling sixth layer powerhouse wouldn't be able to catch him if he escaped, let alone the old bodyguard and Wang Yuanchen, who were just Zhenling fifth layer experts.

All everyone saw was that Long Yu disappeared and then reappeared near the old bodyguard and launched his fist.

The strength of samsara seeped through his body immediately.

"Old bodyguard, be careful!"

Wang Yuanchen tried to warn him. His complexion changed as he watched Long Yu attacking the old bodyguard, frightening the others.

Wang Yuanchen was worthily a Zhenling fifth layer expert.

He responded to Long Yu's attack at once. Although it took him a great amount of strength to defend himself from the lunar domain, but that was not all.

Wang Yuanchen's eyes flashed as a Tiger Zhenling entity appeared behind him.

"Wang Tiger, suppress!"

As Wang Yuanchen shouted, the Wang Tiger Zhenling entity rushed forward and completely suppressed the lunar domain. The next moment, Wang Yuanchen darted towards Long Yu and arrived near him.

Had Wang Yuanchen been suppressing the lunar domain alone, it wouldn't have been possible for him to escape its suppression power.

However, at this moment, Long Yu's lunar domain was being suppressed by eleven people of the Wang clan simultaneously, so its suppression strength was dispersed and Wang Yuanchen broke through the suppression with the help of his Zhenling entity.

"Awakening palm samsara!"

Long Yu swayed his hands and continued to release the power of samsara.

The strength of the Wang Tiger Zhenling entity was making it difficult for Long

Yu to focus on the fight. So, he decided to use the samsara against that Zhenling entity so that its strength would drop instantly by one level.

“Zhentian domain!”

Long Yu’s strength of Zhentian domain of Zhenling third layer matched that of the weakened Tiger Zhenling entity perfectly!

Unfortunately, due to the interruption caused by Wang Yuanchen, the old bodyguard got enough time to regain his composure and broke through the suppression of the lunar domain.

“You are very strong, but today you are going to die!”

The old bodyguard came forward and released Wang Tiger Zhenling entity similar to that of Wang Yuanchen. He also released Wang tiger domain and directed his attack towards Long Yu.

Long Yu lost his breath under the suppression of two Wang Tiger Zhenling entities.

“Thunder charm, explode!”

Long Yu clenched his teeth as he condensed the terrifying power of the thunder charm on the tip of his Qian dragon spear and shot the spear towards the old bodyguard.

“Naïve!”

The old bodyguard launched a powerful punch towards Long Yu’s spear.

There was an enormous difference of two layers between the strength of Long Yu and the old bodyguard. Moreover, Wang Yuanchen was constantly distracting Long Yu with his set of martial skills.

Watching himself at the losing end, Long Yu thought of using the only thing the old bodyguard and Wang Yuanchen wouldn’t be able to overpower.

“Lunar wings!”

Long Yu knew that none of them would ever be able to catch up with his speed if he used his lunar wings, let alone the fact that they all were under the suppression of lunar domain, which was made even fiercer by the cold

environment of the Hantan snow valley.

“You don’t have a chance of winning!”

Long Yu’s eyes flashed.

“Really? How long do you think you can stand against us with your cultivation level of Zhenling third layer? Your Xuan qi would be exhausted soon, and once it’s exhausted we’ll kill you!”

The old bodyguard and Wang Yuanchen were blocking the two entrances of Hantan snow valley. With them blocking the exits, it would be impossible for Long Yu even at his highest speed to escape.

After all, only two sides of Hantan snow valley could permit entering and exiting. The other two sides were full of snow-capped mountains which were thousands of feet high.

Although Long Yu could fly, he couldn’t cover a long distance of thousands of feet!

“Hand over your lunar tablet and we may consider sparing your life.”

Wang Yuanchen said as he and the old bodyguard prepared to attack Long Yu.

Under their prying watch, Long Yu wouldn’t dare to make even a slight movement else they would immediately kill him.

Surrounded by the nine bodyguards of Wang clan, the old bodyguard and Wang Yuanchen, it seemed like Long Yu had no way left to escape!

Chapter – 185 Death of the bodyguards

Having his way blocked by two Zhenling fifth layer powerhouses – the old bodyguard and Wang Yuanchen, Long Yu didn't dare to make a move.

While he stood motionless at one place, the nine bodyguards of Wang clan closed in on him step by step.

Long Yu was surrounded by eleven powerhouses of Wang clan, no one of which had a lower cultivation than him. Being a Zhenling third layer expert, even if he dared to launch an attack against all of them at once, he wouldn't be able to escape.

However, just when Wang Yuanchen and the old bodyguard thought the victory was theirs, the situation took a turn.

A black swaying figure jumped out of the same ice hole from which Long Yu had jumped out, and started launching fierce attacks on the nine bodyguards.

The nine bodyguards had invested all their energy in resisting Long Yu's lunar domain, so they had no strength to spare in order to resist any other attack.

"Sword shade attack!"

Numerous sword shades were released from her red double-edged sword that killed a Zhenling fourth layer bodyguard.

While all the other people had focused all their attention towards Long Yu, Liu Yuan had jumped out from the ice hole and launched multiple attacks towards the bodyguards of Wang clan.

"Perfect timing!"

Long Yu laughed and was unaware of the attacks launched by the two Zhenling fifth layer powerhouses from both the sides.

"You're courting death!"

Wang Yuanchen flashed his eyes and immediately rushed towards Liu Yuan to kill her.

If he didn't get rid of Liu Yuan, she would kill all the bodyguards one by one, since all of them were busy resisting Long Yu's terrifying lunar domain.

This elite group of bodyguards comprised almost 50% of the strongest warriors of the Imperial Wang clan. Wang Yuanchen couldn't afford to lose them like this.

Watching one of his Zhenling bodyguards die in front of him had affected Wang Yuanchen pretty much. He didn't want any other bodyguard to be killed by Liu Yuan.

Initially, Wang Yuanchen and the old bodyguard had planned to encircle Long Yu and Liu Yuan to stop them from escaping. Next, they would've killed Long Yu and seized his lunar tablet.

What they never considered was that Long Yu might have comprehended the powerful lunar domain!

The domain level of any world principle of imperial seal level held a terrifying strength. Wang Yuanchen and the old bodyguard hadn't considered it.

They had never come across anyone who possessed a heavenly tablet, and that was why they wanted to kill Long Yu before he grew too strong for anyone to handle.

As Wang Yuanchen rushed towards Liu Yuan to kill her, Long Yu found an opportunity.

Time to kill the old bodyguard!

He didn't stand a chance against two Zhenling fifth layer powerhouses, but with Wang Yuanchen running out of his way to kill Liu Yuan, there was nothing that could stop him from killing the old bodyguard.

Still, he was worried about Liu Yuan.

He was consuming a great amount of Xuan qi in order to maintain the lunar domain. What if he exhausted all his stored Xuan qi before Liu Yuan could kill the other bodyguards?

Although the remaining eight bodyguards weren't much of a threat since they needed to invest all their strength in resisting the lunar domain, Wang Yuanchen could take advantage of the situation just like Liu Yuan.

However, Liu Yuan could defend herself from Wang Yuanchen since she had already comprehended lunar charm!

“Dantian!”

Long Yu quenched his Dantian to restore his level of Xuan qi rapidly.

After quenching his Dantian with the thunder charm and restoring his Xuan qi level, Long Yu’s speed became much faster than any ordinary martial expert.

“Kill!”

Long Yu stopped paying attention to Wang Yuanchen and Liu Yuan and focussed himself wholly on the old bodyguard. Without the necessary attentiveness, it was impossible to kill the old bodyguard.

After all, there was a huge disparity between their strength levels. Moreover, the old bodyguard had a Zhenling entity!

Long Yu wouldn’t dare to release his Zhentian Sun in such a condition, since the old bodyguard could easily damage his Zhenling thoroughly and cause him severe injuries.

“Awakening palm samsara!”

Long Yu condensed the power of samsara on his fist and flapped his lunar wings to rush towards the old bodyguard.

Within a moment, he was standing right next to the old bodyguard, ready to fight him!

“Now die!”

The old bodyguard noticed that Long Yu was about to attack him, so he rushed to the other side, thinking: “What does this boy think of himself? Does he really think that he can go against the heaven’s will and defeat a Zhenling fifth layer powerhouse while himself being only at Zhenling third layer?”

Although Long Yu could launch a sneak attack and use the element of surprise against the old bodyguard, it wasn’t going to be easy for him to overcome the resistance displayed by the old bodyguard.

“Wang Tiger fist!”

The old bodyguard condensed the terrifying power of Wang Tiger domain on his fist and launched it straight towards Long Yu.

The power of samsara immediately rescued Long Yu by weakening the old bodyguard's attack by almost 50%.

“Awakening palm samsara, infiltrate!”

Long Yu launched one fist after another which made the power of samsara seep through the body of the old bodyguard.

Just as the old bodyguard's fist hit Long Yu, his body reacted by releasing fierce thunder and lightning due to the thunder charm protecting Long Yu.

However, Long Yu's attack affected the old bodyguard.

His cultivation level dropped by one layer!

The old bodyguard's complexion changed as soon as he realised what just happened. Although he had heard a lot about Long Yu and his martial skills, he never heard of this technique and hence was completely unguarded against it.

“Wang Tiger roar!”

The old bodyguard stimulated his Xuan qi and made his Zhenling entity roar loudly.

It was a sound type martial skill!

The sound type martial skill and top grade spiritual level weapons were two of the Wang clan's prized possessions.

The Zhentian sect, too, possessed a few top grade spiritual level weapons. This was the best a clan or school could possess.

At this moment, the old bodyguard was using two of the most powerful things that belonged to the Wang clan.

“Lunar eruption!”

Long Yu didn't waste a single moment in activating his lunar wings which released a great amount of lunar qi. This prevented Long Yu from falling under the influence of the sound type martial skill used by the old bodyguard.

“Awakening palm samsara!”

Long Yu repeatedly used this technique to tire the old bodyguard off.

Under the influence of the power of samsara, the power of any attack he launched was diminished by half. Moreover, his cultivation level had also dropped by one layer, so it was impossible for him to severely injure Long Yu, let alone kill him.

Long Yu had lived without food or water for three months, and during this time, he fed only on the thunder mines and had quenched his entire body.

Had any ordinary martial expert been stuck in such a situation, he would've hardly been alive for two or three days.

However, Long Yu survived for three months!

Quenching his entire body with thunder mines was paying him off now.

After resisting the attacks of a Zhenling fifth layer powerhouse, he had been successful in overpowering him.

Fist after fist, carrying the power of samsara weakened the old bodyguard.

The inexhaustible release of lunar domain had made it even harder for the old bodyguard to display any other move.

"He's going to kill me... Yuanchen!"

The old bodyguard's complexion changed as he shouted out for help, but it was too late now.

"Nine hidden qi dragon burst stream!"

Long Yu pounded his fist on the surface of the frozen Hantan Lake, releasing the power of nine hidden qi as well as intoxicated hell.

Since the old bodyguard's cultivation level hadn't been restored yet. It was impossible for him to escape such a powerful attack.

The old bodyguard started screaming pitifully as the nine hidden dragon qi exploded.

The nine hidden dragon qi burst stream was the most powerful one-shot killing technique that Long Yu possessed until now. He hadn't seen a single person who could escape from this attack.

The old bodyguard was certainly going to die.

Long Yu flashed his eyes and turned his head, only to find that Wang Yuanchen was still chasing Liu Yuan while their Zhenling entities were clashing.

Wang Yuanchen's Wang Tiger Zhenling entity was constantly trying to overpower Liu Yuan's Black Butterfly Zhenling entity. Their clash was releasing a great amount of energy.

It was good that Liu Yuan had comprehended phantom domain, through which she could fill Wang Yuanchen's mind with illusion, thus being able to resist him longer.

The old bodyguard's cry for help caught Wang Yuanchen's attention, but soon he realised that it was already too late.

The old bodyguard was dead.

He had served three generations of Wang clan and was the strongest pillar of Wang clan's power. Losing him was the biggest loss for the Wang clan.

The four most influential families of the Tang kingdom constantly tried to overpower one another. The old bodyguard was one of the most powerful people that Wang clan had. The other influential families would definitely take advantage of his death.

The old bodyguard's death was a great blow to the Wang clan!

However, the fight in the Hantan snow valley had not ended yet.

"Kill ten thousand people!"

Long Yu swayed his Qian dragon spear and released a strong murderous aura that spread throughout the Hantan snow valley.

Under the strong suppressive power of the lunar domain, the remaining eight bodyguards were unable to display any martial skill and wanted to sneak away as soon as they got an opportunity.

But, could Long Yu possibly let them sneak away?

They were his enemies, and Long Yu never went soft when it came to his enemies.

"Die!"

He launched his spear and killed a Zhenling third layer bodyguard instantly.

“Kill him! He’s going to get exhausted soon!”

Wang Yuanchen shouted and launched his Wang Tiger Zhenling entity towards Long Yu.

His Wang Tiger roar technique wasn’t nearly as perfect as the old bodyguard’s. Moreover, he was standing only a few feet away from Long Yu, so his attack could cause harm to him.

“Die!”

Long Yu flapped his lunar wings and took a long leap. The next moment, he killed another bodyguard.

“Since you tried to kill me and seize my lunar tablet, I must stand up for myself. Do you really think it would be so easy to overpower me? Too naïve!”

Long Yu thought to himself.

He was in no mood of sparing anyone, even if it meant killing so many people!

However, at this moment, just as Wang Yuanchen had anticipated, Long Yu’s Xuan qi got exhausted.

Even though he could recover his Xuan qi faster than any other martial artist, prolonged release of lunar domain had caused his Xuan qi level to subside completely.

“Let’s work together!”

Liu Yuan shouted in a clear voice and released several sword shades towards Wang Yuanchen’s back.

Wang Yuanchen never thought that Liu Yuan might actually dare to attack him. He turned around and launched Wang Tiger roar along with Wang Tiger fist.

Liu Yuan wasn’t expecting these two attacks at once.

Chapter – 186 A difficult situation

Liu Yuan thought that all Wang Yuanchen wanted was to kill Long Yu. She never imagined that while she would launch a sneak attack on him, he would hit her back.

Wang Tiger fist!

At this moment, Wang Yuanchen's top grade spiritual level martial skill released a terrifying pressure of Wang Tiger domain that spread throughout the Hantan snow valley.

"Die!"

Wang Yuanchen shouted and flashed his eyes as his Wang Tiger fist closed in on Liu Yuan's face!

"Fight him!"

As Long Yu saw Wang Yuanchen attacking Liu Yuan, he shouted loudly and released his fist containing the power of samsara towards Wang Yuanchen. The next moment, the power of samsara seeped through Wang Yuanchen's body and caused his cultivation level to drop by one level to Zhenling fourth layer!

The power of his Wang Tiger attack was reduced greatly and his movements were stagnated.

When Liu Yuan heard Long Yu shout, she knew what she had to do.

Fight him!

Liu Yuan released her lunar charm and resisted the Wang Tiger fist.

The next moment, she swayed her red double-edged sword and released several sword shades towards Wang Yuanchen.

The clash of Liu Yuan's sword shades and Wang Yuanchen's Wang Tiger fist resulted in a great explosion of energy. However, this time, Liu Yuan didn't fall back as she was in no way inferior to Wang Yuanchen who had a cultivation level of Zhenling fourth layer.

Since Wang Yuanchen's cultivation level had dropped, now he was no match to Liu Yuan.

“Phantom allure!”

Liu Yuan didn't pause for a single moment and launched a top grade spiritual level attack of her Allure sect, phantom allure!

This suppression technique was unique to the disciples of the Allure sect. Although it was one of the most powerful techniques Liu Yuan had, it would fade away soon.

Liu Yuan must attack Wang Yuanchen fast!

Phantom allure attack allowed not only Liu Yuan but also her Black Butterfly (Zhenling entity) to move at a great speed.

Not only this, this attack could make any man fall prey to her attractiveness, and Wang Yuanchen was no different.

Just too tempting!

Liu Yuan, clad in a black dress, with her snow-white hair floating in the wind, was simply too irresistible. Her delicate figure made her seem like she was a dream altogether.

While Wang Yuanchen couldn't resist being tempted by Liu Yuan, the moment of his death arrived.

Liu Yuan wouldn't spare him any opportunity to save himself!

However, by that time, Long Yu had consumed all his Xuan qi and was now unable to continue releasing the lunar domain.

Soon afterward, the remaining six bodyguards sensed the pressure lifting up from their bodies.

The lunar domain was no longer there!

“Kill ten thousand people!”

Long Yu swayed his spear in the air, filling the surroundings with terrifying vibrations and managed to kill another bodyguard of Zhenling third layer almost instantly!

Now, only five of the bodyguards were left alive, all belonging to Zhenling third layer.

Watching him kill the old bodyguard and three other bodyguards had scared the remaining bodyguards to death.

“Run for your lives! If we don’t run now he’ll kill us all!”

The five bodyguards called out in alarm and turned around to flee out of the Hantan snow valley.

Had they been in the right state of mind, they would’ve stayed and collaborated against Long Yu, who was completely exhausted now.

However, watching Long Yu kill the most experienced and most powerful of the bodyguards of Wang clan had made them so scared that they thought it would be better to run away rather than facing Long Yu and trying to kill him.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

As the five remaining bodyguards fled the place, Wang Yuanchen, who remained in a kind of trance, was soon killed by Liu Yuan’s sword shade attack.

“I’m going to chase them down!”

Liu Yuan turned around immediately to chase the five bodyguards who had fled.

However, her eyebrows were curled from worry. All the five bodyguards had run into different directions, so it was going to be a difficult task for her to chase each one of them down.

“Go with her!”

Long Yu connected to the spiritual intelligence of his lunar wings and commanded it to carry Liu Yuan and chase the fleeing bodyguards.

With the speed of lightning, the wings flapped and carried Liu Yuan away.

“This is just...!”

Liu Yuan was shocked for a moment, but soon regained her composure and held her red double-edged sword in her hands. Within a few moments, she killed the first bodyguard.

The lunar wings continued to flap themselves and soon overtook the second bodyguard...

After some time, Liu Yuan had killed all the five bodyguards that had escaped with her red double-edged sword. Their blood dripping from the sword was making the red color of the sword seem even brighter.

Since all these people belonged to the Imperial Wang clan, Long Yu and Liu Yuan couldn't afford to leave any of them alive to run back to the Wang clan and tell the tale to the clansmen, else they would have to face strong retaliation from the entire Wang clan!

Although these people comprised around 50% of the Wang clan's most powerful warriors, the chief of the Wang clan, Wang Yuanchen's father, had already entered the realm of Zhenling unity!

(Note: The realm of Zhenling unity has been explained in the next chapter.)

Fuelling his anger would be unwise!

Luckily enough, Long Yu's lunar wings had developed spiritual intelligence and thus collaborated with Liu Yuan in order to kill the five fleeing bodyguards. This way, no one would find out that it was Long Yu and Liu Yuan who were responsible for the slaughter of so many powerhouses of the Wang clan!

No one would suspect them either since for everyone, they were not capable of killing such a powerful group of people at once.

Even the news of Long Yu comprehending the lunar domain wouldn't leave the bounds of Hantan valley, let alone the news of Long Yu and Liu Yuan killing the old bodyguard and Wang Yuanchen.

Long Yu's Dantian throbbed as his Xuan qi level was restored. Soon afterward, he and Liu Yuan began piling up the bodies of Wang Yuanchen, old bodyguard *etc.* to burn them down.

While dragging the bodies, Long Yu put several battle weapons inside his nine hidden storage space. These battle weapons were worth several thousand crystal coins.

The old bodyguard didn't possess any valuable weapon, so Long Yu felt a little bad about it.

Wang Yuanchen, on the other hand, did possess a spiritual level battle

weapon. However, since he died by getting his throat slit by Liu Yuan, it was clear that his spiritual level battle weapon didn't show any defensive qualities.

What kind of martial artist was he to get lured by Liu Yuan's beauty on the battlefield at his level?

He deserved to die like this!

Had Long Yu been in his place, the outcome would've been different.

(TL Note: Long Yu was once affected by her allure technique when he used to be at a much lower level than her but he had still managed to snap out of it. But Wang Yuanchen was at a higher level and still fell for the trap.)

Although Liu Yuan was extremely attractive, Long Yu wouldn't have gotten lured by her while fighting like Wang Yuanchen did.

Just as they gathered all the eleven corpses and put them on fire, clouds started roaring in the sky and a heavy downpour began which extinguished the fire completely.

The roar of the thunder was so fierce that it appeared to them as if the sky was being divided into two halves!

"What's happening?"

Liu Yuan knitted her eyebrows as she wondered how to get rid of the corpses in such a heavy rain.

The corpses couldn't be left there. If anyone found them, it would take them absolutely no time to find out who was behind the slaughter of these eleven people.

"I'll take care of them."

Long Yu knew what he had to do. The corpses couldn't be burnt due to the heavy rain. All he could do was to destroy them completely using his thunder charm.

However, there was a problem.

Although the thunder charm was more powerful than any ordinary flame, destroying eleven corpses at once was a tedious task.

Fortunately for him, his xuan qi level restored at a much quicker rate than any ordinary martial artist. By this time, he had accumulated enough xuan qi to release the thunder charm.

“Thunder charm, destroy!”

Long Yu waved his hands to release a tremendously destructive power of the thunder charm over the eleven corpses.

Liu Yuan was bedazzled as she watched Long Yu destroy the corpses. She observed his unique martial skill carefully and noticed that this martial skill was no less powerful than the lunar tablet. In fact, it was far more powerful than the lunar tablet!

Was it another heavenly tablet?

Liu Yuan was confused for a while, but finally, she deduced that the rumors about Long Yu were every bit true. He indeed had entered the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir, and while everyone thought him to be dead, he made out from the reservoir safe and sound.

The power that he displayed just now was undoubtedly the power of the thunder mines!

The thunder charm had destroyed all the eleven corpses in a while. Even the rain couldn't stop Long Yu from destroying the corpses.

“Such insane power!”

Liu Yuan couldn't help but exclaim in the appraisal.

Now she knew the extent of Long Yu's strength. This young man held such humungous amount of strength. Not only did he possess the power of two heavenly tablets, he also had with him a set of top grade spiritual level martial skills along with a top grade spiritual level battle weapon. With so much strength, he could easily kill a martial expert who had a cultivation level of two layers above him!

Long Yu turned his head and was somewhat smitten by Liu Yuan's graceful appearance.

As she stood with her whole body soaked in the rain, tiny droplets of water

dripped through her wet, white hair. For Long Yu, this sight was far more alluring than Liu Yuan's phantom allure martial skill.

"Let's get the lunar tablet quickly."

Liu Yuan didn't notice Long Yu staring at her as she walked towards the frozen Hantan Lake.

Their practice had abruptly ended while Wang Yuanchen attacked them. Since both of them were busy fighting, they hadn't taken the lunar tablet out of the frozen lake.

Long Yu snapped out to the reality and immediately followed her.

As they took the lunar tablet out of the frozen lake, to Long Yu's surprise, the tablet was now smaller in size than it originally had been.

"Why is it smaller in size?"

Long Yu frowned.

However, it was not the first time that he noticed this change. Earlier when he had comprehended the lunar charm, he noticed that his half of the tablet had grown a little smaller in size.

However, now, after comprehending the lunar domain, the lunar tablet had grown significantly smaller in size.

"Well, I have researched a bit about the heavenly tablets growing smaller. As a martial artist continues to comprehend the power of any heavenly tablet, it continues growing smaller and smaller. By the time a martial artist fully comprehends the principle inherent in the heavenly tablet, it completely disappears."

Liu Yuan nodded as she told Long Yu.

"If both of us try to comprehend the lunar principle simultaneously, the tablet would shrink and disappear before we get to completely comprehend the principle."

Long Yu continued to frown.

"Why are you never at ease? To comprehend the lunar principle, we would

have to enter the realm of unity of heaven and man. That's still a long way to go..."

Liu Yuan smiled calmly.

"We shouldn't stay at this place for too long. Let's get out of here first."

Long Yu was busy thinking of some way out of this crisis and even thought of taking his half of the lunar tablet and giving Liu Yuan her half so that they could comprehend the lunar principle separately, but the next moment he realized that it was easier said than done.

Since both the halves of the lunar tablet were now infused into one, there was no way to separate them now!

This was a difficult situation.

Who was going to get the lunar tablet?

Liu Yuan? Long Yu?

Chapter – 187 The Grand Auction

Since Long Yu and Liu Yuan couldn't decide which one of them should keep the lunar tablet and comprehend the lunar principle, they decided to stay together for the time being.

They soon left the Hantan snow valley in search of shelter from the heavy rain. After searching for some time, they finally found a cave where they could take rest and comprehend the lunar principle.

As they had been starving for two days, before entering the cave, Long Yu caught two hares and used the power of his thunder charm to roast them.

With their bodies completely drenched in the rain, Long Yu and Liu Yuan entered the cave and sat down to comprehend the lunar principle.

As immense cold and the sound of thunderclaps kept distracting Long Yu, he stood up and walked out of the cave for a while, leaving Liu Yuan practicing alone inside the cave.

“So many thunder mines...”

As Long Yu looked on, he found that the mountains had turned bluish while several thunder mines flashed violently above them.

“Shouldn't I quench my body with these thunder mines and try to comprehend the thunder domain?”

Long Yu knew what he had to do now.

He flapped his lunar wings and within a moment or two, he glided in the rainstorm to reach the highest mountain peak which happened to touch the layer of the clouds.

The layer of the clouds was full of thunder mines!

“Thunder charm!”

As Long Yu released his thunder charm, soon, all the thunder mines gathered around him and shot towards his body.

Although Long Yu had not activated his nine hidden dragon mark this time, he didn't receive any injuries while absorbing the thunder mines because these

thunder mines were far weaker in strength than the ones that were present in the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir.

After quenching his body with the thunder mines, Long Yu was ready to comprehend the next level of the thunder principle.

Just two or three days were left before the commencement of seven sects competition, and Long Yu wanted to enhance his strength as much as he could.

.....

Meanwhile, in the Imperial city.

Liu clan mansion.

Liu Yu and Feng Longsong had finished talking. Since it was clear to everyone that Long Yu was going to become a great warrior, there was no way Liu Yu could persuade her husband to stay with her at the Liu clan mansion. So, she reluctantly agreed to accompany her husband back to Yu Guan city.

However, both of them were still worried about their daughter, for they didn't know where Feng Yao was.

Although Feng Yao sent her messenger pigeons every once in a while to Liu Yu, that was enough to satisfy a mother's heart.

Feng Longsong was worried about his daughter's well-being, too.

Feng Longsong's cultivation had been restored and he had entered Zhenling sixth layer, which meant that he was among the strongest people in the entire Tang kingdom now. Not to mention, the energy that had been accumulating inside his blocked meridians for the last twenty years hadn't completely been consumed by him yet.

Feng Longsong returned to the Divine valley inn and started meditating to break through into the Zhenling seventh layer, which was also known as the Realm of Zhenling Unity!

If he entered the Zhenling seventh layer, Feng Longsong's strength might rival the strongest of the members of Zhentian sect or the four most influential families of the Tang kingdom.

Unfortunately for Feng Longsong, breaking into Zhenling seventh layer wasn't

an easy feat to achieve. All the energy that he had accumulated during the last twenty years might not suffice to help him enter the Realm of Zhenling Unity, since it involved crossing through a difficult bottleneck.

The seven sects' competition was to start soon, and Feng Longsong had a feeling that Prince Chu Chao Sheng would do everything in his power to help the Qiansi sect in winning the competition.

Even if Long Yu managed to defeat Yu Qianning in the competition, Chu Chao Sheng would stop at nothing to create trouble for Long Yu.

Chu Chao Sheng was an expert at making foolproof plans, otherwise, it would've been impossible for him to expel Long Zaitian from the Tang kingdom, given that he was the greatest warrior this land had seen.

"If I could somehow enter the Realm of Zhenling Unity before the seven sects' competition commences, I would surely be able to protect Long Yu."

Feng Longsong thought to himself as he sat quietly in his room.

He had seen Long Yu go inside the Liu clan mansion with Liu Yuan, and was aware of them going out together. However, he was not worried about them.

After all, when was it that some danger had deterred Long Yu?

Not only had he once dared to enter the Heavenly Thunder Reservoir to escape from his enemies, he had also quenched his body with the dangerous thunder mines and comprehended the thunder charm!

There was nothing to worry about Long Yu. In fact, Feng Longsong was quite interested in those two as he hoped that they might get along well together and could even form a great couple.

Feng Longsong smiled as he thought about the prospects of Long Yu and Liu Yuan together.

.....

Long Yu's temporary disappearance did not worry Feng Longsong or anyone from Zhentian sect since they all had complete trust in Long Yu's abilities.

However, the sudden disappearance of Wang Yuanchen and the old bodyguard caused a great upheaval in the Imperial Wang clan.

In spite of searching for them everywhere, no one had been able to find Wang Yuan or the old bodyguard or any of the nine Zhenling level bodyguards that they had taken with them.

Two days before the seven sects' competition, inside Wang Clan Palace.

The chief of the Imperial Wang clan was named Wang Jue, an expert who had already entered the Realm of Zhenling Unity.

He was a middle-aged man wearing a golden silk robe. His mountain-like stature and imposing manner made it impossible for anyone to dare to approach him.

At this time, he was sitting in the grand hall of the Wang Clan Palace with a stern face, listening to the servants reporting back to him.

"Master, I haven't found them."

"I haven't found them either, Master."

"I searched for them everywhere, but they were nowhere to be seen."

The seven sects' competition was about to start in two days, and Wang Yuanchen and the old bodyguard had gone missing all of a sudden!

Wang Jue was aware of Wang Yuanchen and the old bodyguard taking a team of nine other bodyguards to catch and kill Long Yu, but he was unable to figure out what might have happened to them which forced them to disappear.

The news that Long Yu and Liu Yuan had gone missing in a similar fashion prevented Wang Jue from thinking that Long Yu and Liu Yuan might have killed Wang Yuanchen and the old bodyguard.

He didn't underestimate Long Yu's strength. The news of Long Yu fighting Long Ji to protect Liu Yuan in front of the Liu clan mansion had spread all over the Imperial city like a wildfire.

However, no one knew how a Zhenling third layer martial artist like Long Yu could thrash a Zhenling fifth layer expert like Long Ji!

Wang Jue was lost in his thoughts when suddenly a spy came running to report him: "Master, I found Long Yu and Liu Yuan!"

“What? Where?”

Wang Jue frowned. Although it wasn't good news, he could still catch Long Yu and Liu Yuan and force them to tell the whereabouts of Wang Yuanchen and the old bodyguard!

“Some people recognized them inside the Lu Auction House!”

The spy respectfully said.

Lu Auction House!

Wang Jue's complexion changed. Had the largest auction house in the Imperial city organized an auction right before the commencement of the seven sects' competition?

As the chief of the Imperial Wang clan, he had never before felt the need to attend an auction.

However, since Long Yu and Liu Yuan were spotted inside the auction house, he knew that he now had to make a trip to the auction house in person.

He stood up, left the Wang Clan Palace alone and walked towards the Lu Action House.

The chief of the Imperial Wang Clan, Wang Jue, was respected everywhere.

No one could dare to disrespect him except for one person. Even the likes of the Imperial Princess greeted him with respect!

.....

Imperial City, Lu Auction House.

Long Yu and Liu Yuan made it back to the Imperial city in time. The grand auction at the Lu Auction House was about to get started.

The good news was that Liu Yuan had gotten a great insight into the general trend of the Lunar principle by now.

On the other hand, Long Yu had refined his body more using the thunder mines. Moreover, he had also used the energy of the thunder mines to enhance his comprehension of the thunder charm and found out that the thunder principle was actually a principle of the 'Realm of Man-Heaven Unity'.

The Lunar principle, The Thunder principle, and the Zhentian domain – Long Yu had comprehended them all.

These three powerful world principles were enough to kill a Zhenling fifth layer powerhouse.

He was probably the only person in the entire Tang kingdom who had been able to comprehend two world principles of the Realm of Man-Heaven Unity’.

However, Long Yu had not gone any further to enhance his comprehension of the marsh mood that he had comprehended in the Teng Snake abyss.

The marsh mood was a good technique to entangle and surprise the opponent, but being a mysterious jade level principle, it was useless without a corresponding Zhenling.

Since Long Yu had access to the Lunar tablet, he invested his time and energy in comprehending the lunar charm.

Inside the Lu Auction House, the proprietor Lu Fu approached Long Yu and Liu Yuan to personally welcome them. This left Liu Yuan in great surprise.

Lu Fu held a prestigious position inside the Lu clan and was far more influential than the old bodyguard was in the Wang clan. Since Lu Fu arrived to personally welcome Long Yu, it was evident that these two must have had a significant deal earlier!

Otherwise, Lu Fu would’ve never come forward to welcome someone personally, let alone a trivial boy of Zhenling third layer.

Had it not been for Long Yu’s talent, Lu Fu would never have been interested in Long Yu.

However, with the Imperial forces behind him, Lu Fu could clearly see that there was some extraordinary talent in this boy which kept him from getting killed all this time.

“Younger brother, it’s the grand auction today. Won’t you buy a thing or two for yourself?”

Lu Fu asked with a gentle smile.

“I want some immortality pills or neidans to enhance my cultivation.”

Long Yu was precise about what he wanted.

“Well, then have a look at the items for sale in the auction. You may find something that suits your interest.”

Lu Fu said in a mysterious tone: “For the auction will give you what you have been searching for all this time.”

What did he mean?

However, Long Yu smirked and nodded. He didn’t care about what mystery was hidden in Lu Fu’s words.

He and Liu Yuan had gone to the auction house for the sole purpose of participating in the auction.

Long Yu wanted to step into the Zhenling fourth layer, which wasn’t a task that some immortality pills could accomplice.

However, if he could find a mysterious level immortality pill; that could really help him out.

A mysterious level immortality pill contained a strong aura which was even stronger than any ordinary immortality pill, neidan or jindan (golden elixir).

Although it would cost him 100,000 crystal coins or even more, the effect would be highly desirable.

The only reason Long Yu decided to participate in the grand auction was to see whether there was some mysterious level immortality pill for sale. If he could find one there, he would definitely buy it without any delay.

“Let’s go inside.”

Long Yu said to Liu Yuan. They both paced towards a cabin for VIP, from where they could bid for anything without letting the others know who they were.

Soon, the auction began.

Sitting behind the curtains of the VIP cabin, Long Yu watched everyone who had come to attend the auction and found a few familiar faces in the crowd.

Feng Yang, Feng Luo and Feng Lin – three young masters of the previous Feng clan, were walking behind a young man dressed in a silk robe.

